THE ROGUE

OR THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE

WRITTEN IN SPANISH BY

MATHEO ALEMAN

AND DONE INTO ENGLISH BY

JAMES MABBE

ANNO 1623

With an Introduction by

JAMES FITZMAURICE-KELLY

JAMES FITZMAURICE-KELLY

THE Introduction to this reprint of Mabbe's translation of *Guzman de Alfarache* was the last work to which James Fitzmaurice-Kelly put his hand. For many years he stood in England for Spanish scholarship. His life is a record of sound research faithfully accomplished. He was born in 1857, the son of a soldier, Colonel Kelly Bey, of His Majesty's Fortieth Foot, who at one time served in the Egyptian police. At the age of nine he was sent back from India, alone, to St. Charles's College, Kensington, where he was educated. His father had designed him for the priesthood, for which he felt no vocation, and he began the study of medicine; but disliking it he gave himself to literature, which held him unto the end of his life. Searching for a subject which he should make his own, he hesitated between North and South, between Scandinavia and Spain; and though in Spain he found the country best suited to his temperament, he preserved always an interest in Scandinavia. In 1885 a tutorship took him to Xerez de la Frontera, whence, having successfully passed his pupil, Don Ventura Misa, through his examination, he betook himself to Madrid. There he made the acquaintance of Juan Valera and Núñez de Arce, and collected facts for his first book—*The Life of Cervantes*. This was published in 1892, and brought him the

131480

acquaintance, among others, of W. E. Henley, to whom he acknowledged 'a vast intellectual debt,' and with whom he preserved a constant friendship until Henley's death. Under Henley's auspices he contributed to *The National Observer* and *The New Review*, and wrote erudite introductions to the reprints of Mabbe's *Celestina* and Shelton's *Don Quixote*. Among the books which he has published are *The Life of Cervantes* (1892 and 1913), *A History of Spanish Literature* (translated into Spanish, 1901), *Chapters on Spanish Literature* (1908). He edited in 1898, with John Ormsby, the Spanish text of *Don Quixote* (Primera Edición del texto restituido con Notas y una Introducción), a masterpiece of scholarship and printing. Such honours as reward the erudite were not withheld from him. In 1905 he represented England at the Cervantes Tercentenary, and was made a Knight of the Order of Alfonso XII. A year later he was elected a Fellow of the British Academy. He held two professorships: in 1909 he was appointed to the Gilmour Chair of Spanish at Liverpool, and in 1916 to the Cervantes Chair at the University of London. He resigned the London Chair in 1920 with a profound sense of relief. He had a natural dislike of lecturing, he was always happier in pursuing his own researches than in instructing others, and after 1920 he was content to edit the Hispanic Notes and Monographs for the Hispanic Society of America. It remains to mention that he was a Corresponding Member of the Real Academia Española, as well as of Academies at Barcelona and Lisbon.

His name is familiar wherever Spanish literature and the Spanish tongue are prized and studied, and he was

fortunate in gaining during his lifetime the high appreciation of scholars whose opinion he valued. His was the true scholar's temperament, which follows learning for its own sake, and finds its reward in the act of discovery. His friends, of whom I was long privileged to be one, will remember his quiet manner, his soft voice, his eager thought. Throughout his life he guarded the loftiest standard of knowledge. For him to know a language was to speak it and write it as well as to read it. And he has left behind him not only a large body of work, but an example of scholarly probity and good taste which students will do well to follow.

C. W.

INTRODUCTION

IN one respect at least *Guzman de Alfarache* occupies an almost unique position in the history of Spanish literature. Within six years, it reached its thirtieth edition. Even *Don Quixote* had not as great and instant a popularity. This success was not altogether an ephemeral repute. In 1806 reference is made to *Guzman de Alfarache* in James Beresford's *The Miseries of Human Life*, where the following passage seems worth quoting: 'Pray, Master Ned, have you 'ever had wit enough to read a Spanish Novel called "The 'Adventures of Gusman d'Alfarache"?—Not you, I 'll be 'sworn;—and so, as nobody else reads it neither, and for 'the same reason because nobody knows what 's worth 'reading, I shall refer them to the "Rules, or Orders," 'there laid down for the Government of the "Hospital of '"Fools"' [Pt. II., Bk. III. Ch. i.]. To-day, the balance of appreciation is readjusted, and *Guzman de Alfarache*, whilst remaining an excellent example of the picaresque novel, ranks not higher than *Lazarillo de Tormes* and Quevedo's *Historia de la vida del Buscon* (1626). The Book

Indigenous to Spain and to its social and economic conditions in the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, the picaresque novel is the autobiography of a rogue, and,

INTRO-DUCTION

incidentally, a satire on the life of the day. It is the epic of hunger and, in a sense, the antithesis of the chivalresque novel: a harsh parody, where, instead of a succession of impossible romantic incidents, we have episodes of the crudest and barest actuality. The force of realism can no further go. It is realism of the Spanish variety quite unlike the modern French variety of naturalism: it is sometimes brutal, coarse, unrefined. But it is hardly ever pornographic in its inspiration. It aims at producing the impression of things as they are for the great portion of the human race—in Spain certainly, and possibly elsewhere. It does not aim at scandalising or shocking the reader. Perhaps its main interest for students of to-day lies in the forcible representation of existence as it was: it is not too much to say that one aspect, at least, of life in the reigns of Philip II. and Philip III. would be unknown without the picaresque novel.

Guzman de Alfarache was not in Spain alone a stupendous success. We have a measure of its vogue in England. It was translated by James Mabbe in 1622. For this translation Ben Jonson wrote some preliminary verses in honour of the 'Spanish Proteus.' Ben Jonson similarly wrote laudatory verses for the First Folio of Shakespeare in 1623. The translation of *Guzman de Alfarache* went into a fourth edition in 1656: it was not till 1663 that the Third Folio of Shakespeare was issued. Hence, if we accepted the number of editions as any indication, it would follow that at the time Aleman, in a translated form, left Shakespeare far behind him in the race for mere popularity.

DE ALFARACHE

I

INTRO-DUCTION

The Author

Mateo Aleman was born at Seville in 1547, a year famous in literature as the birth-year of Cervantes. He was the eldest son of Hernando Aleman—a doctor in a humble way—and of Juana de Enero, his second wife. When Mateo was between nine and ten years old, Hernando Aleman was appointed surgeon to the Royal Prison of Seville. In his play-hours the little boy would accompany his father on his rounds, and he obtained thus his first glimpses of the society which he was later to immortalise. He took his Bachelor's degree in Arts and Philosophy in the University of his native town in 1564, and in the same year began his primary course of medicine. From Seville he went on to Salamanca and to Alcalá de Henares, where he read for his final course. His father's somewhat sudden death in 1567 left the family much poorer, but does not appear to have interfered with Aleman's medical studies, which he continued until the spring of 1568. There seems no evidence, however, that he ever obtained his licentiate.

His difficulties

In the autumn of that same year, Aleman, who was just of age, borrowed from a Genoese merchant a considerable sum of money. This he pledged himself to return the following year under penalty of paying double the amount. We do not know whether this penalty was ever exacted of Aleman. But we do know that a much heavier one was incurred by him when, some eleven days later, he borrowed money from a certain Captain Alonso Hernandez de Ayala. This Hernandez de Ayala suggested such terms as would ensure his being repaid, and stipulated that the money

INTRODUCTION

should be forthcoming from his wife's dowry if Aleman married within the year. Aleman seems at the time to have been engaged to Doña Catalina de Espinosa, Hernandez de Ayala's ward. The year of grace elapsed. Aleman had no money ; his fancy for Doña Catalina appears to have been ephemeral. He found himself faced with the disagreeable alternative of a debtor's prison or an uncongenial marriage. He chose what he thought to be the lesser evil, and married Doña Catalina. Allusions in his works, notably in *San Antonio de Padua*, show that he regretted the folly of his choice.

His marriage

The marriage took place in the summer of 1571. It was shortly afterwards—if we are to accept the statement of Luis de Valdés, one of Aleman's friends—that Aleman was given a post in the administration, a post which he seems to have filled for a longish time if not quite for the 'twenty years' which Valdés mentions as his term of service. The same Luis de Valdés says that Aleman fought in Italy, but there is no confirmation of this statement. One would like to know more of Aleman's biography : there are a number of points which require clearing up. We know

His first imprisonment

that he was arrested for debt in October 1580, and although security was given somewhat unwillingly by his wife and more graciously by his uncle, he was not yet at large in December of that year. Aleman's 'deare-bought experi-'ence' provides him with a scathing indictment of prison administration, which is set forth in *Guzman de Alfarache*. 'They that are prisoners, are like unto your Grapes on a 'Vine Bower, which as soone as they waxe ripe, there is 'not a sprigge or bough of them which is not laden with

'Waspes, who insensibly (they having no feeling of it) 'sucke all the juyce and sweetnesse of them, leaving 'onely the Caskes, and Huskes of them empty, hanging 'upon The Arbour; And as are the Grapes, so is the 'swarme; if great and more, the more Waspes; if few 'and small, the lesse. As it is with this Vine and its 'Grapes, so it is with those that are led to Prison.' Early in 1582, Aleman appears to have intended to go to America. Cervantes once had the same hope: in his case it was not to be carried out. But with Aleman it was otherwise, and, if he did not pursue his intent then, we may take it that some powerful reason influenced him. If we consider that at much the same time Aleman settled in Madrid, we are led to think that then, and not eleven years previously (as Valdés tells us), was Aleman made Chief Accountant. This remains a doubtful point.

Guzman de Alfarache

Although Aleman was over fifty before *Guzman de Alfarache* was completed, we are not to suppose that he had never previously felt the stirrings of literary ambition. We know the contrary, for there exist translations of two odes by Horace, and, though these renderings are undated, they almost certainly belong to the author's first phase. The publication of the *Primera Parte de Guzman de Alfarache* in 1599 brought Aleman fame, but it brought him nothing else. He remained as nearly poverty-stricken, as continually driven to shifts of borrowing and doubtful money-dealing, as he had been heretofore. He left Madrid at the end of 1601 to return to Seville. By now he and his wife were virtually separated, and his relations, first with his housekeeper, Doña Gregoria Volante, and next

INTRODUCTION

with Doña Francisca Calderon, seem to have been something more than those of mere friendship.

Juan Bautista del Rosso

Unhappy in his marriage, Aleman was happy in having at least one sincere friend. This was his first cousin, Juan Bautista del Rosso, whose father was a Florentine of no inconsiderable means. Other names, such as those of the Marqués de Poza or the Duque de Cardona y Segorbe, might figure in the dedications of his title-pages, or—as that of Vicente Espinel—in laudatory verses in the prefatory matter. But the financial help that Aleman needed came from none of these, but always from Rosso. It was Rosso who lent Aleman money in his periodical moments of stress, Rosso who reprinted at his own expense in 1602 *Guzman de Alfarache*, with full authority from Aleman to dispose of the copies as he chose: it was Rosso again who provided bail when Aleman was once more arrested for debt. Aleman's second imprisonment took place in 1602, the very year that the spurious sequel to his *Guzman de Alfarache* was published. This sequel probably hastened the publication of the genuine Second Part, which was printed in 1604 by Pedro Crasbeeck at Lisbon, whither Aleman had gone early in that year. It is probable that

San Antonio de Padua

he anticipated there a sound market for his *San Antonio de Padua* (Seville, 1604), relying on the Portuguese predilection for this saint. At any rate, he took the edition of his work with him. *San Antonio de Padua* had been written as the result of a vow, and was prefaced by eulogistic

Lope de Vega

verses from Lope de Vega, who seems to have been on friendly terms with Aleman.

Aleman appears to have stayed about a year in Lisbon,

whence he returned to Seville. Of his friend Rosso, who had been active in sending to America his works (the rarity of extant copies of the 1602 Seville edition is ascribed to Rosso's having transhipped practically all the copies), we have no further news after 1607. From that date Aleman entrusted to others the management of those affairs which would otherwise have fallen to Rosso. This makes it seem very probable that Rosso had died, and Aleman, with little link to bind him to Spain and no prospects, adventurously decided at the age of sixty to try his fortunes in the New World. He was to have sailed with Doña Francisca de Calderon and two small children, whom he describes as his, in June 1607, but owing to the presence of Dutch privateers in Spanish waters it was not until a year later that he left Spain. He had as a fellow-passenger on Tome Garcia's boat the dramatist, Juan Ruiz de Alarcon. Some time before sailing, Aleman had abandoned his rights in the *Segunda Parte de Guzman de Alfarache* to Pedro de Ledesma, Secretary to the Royal Council of the Indies, just as he had given those of the *Primera Parte* to Rosso. It may be legitimate to suppose that in this case, however, there was no question of friendship. Pedro de Ledesma was in a position to prevent Aleman's leaving Spain, and bribery of high officials was not an uncommon occurrence under circumstances of this kind.

Of Aleman's further story and stay in America, nothing practically is known. He published two books in Mexico, one—the *Ortografia Castellana* (which was begun in Spain) —in 1609, and in 1613 he issued a life of Frai Garcia Guerra, who had been Archbishop of Mexico. It has

Ortografia Castellana

INTRODUCTION

been inferred from passages in the *Ortografia Castellana* that Aleman was a printer in Mexico. Frankly, this is conjecture. We do not know what Aleman did in Mexico. Nor are we acquainted with the exact date of his death: he perhaps died soon after 1613, the date of his last published work—the last that we know of at present. But, thanks mainly to the investigations of Sr. D. Francisco Rodríguez Marín, much has been done to dissipate the obscurity which surrounds the figure of Aleman, and perhaps we have not yet gathered all possible results from those researches.

II

The Spanish picaresque novel

The Spanish picaresque novel differs vitally from the English novel of the same type. With the exception of Thomas Nash's *Jacke Wilton* (1594), the English tales of roguery were either the autobiographies of repentant criminals themselves, or were the works of authors intent on social reform. Hence they frequently had little literary merit. It is quite otherwise with the *novelas picarescas* of Spain, which form a distinct branch of literature.

El Caballero Cifar

The oldest novel in Spanish is the *Caballero Cifar* (xiii. c.), and, though it is not specially thrilling—pioneer efforts rarely are, for they bear on themselves naturally the stamp of inexpertness—it is of extraordinary historic interest. It describes the experiences of a knight and a squire (the latter of whom is called *El Ribaldo*), and this squire has a curious tendency to quote proverbs in and out of season. We are at once reminded of *Don Quixote* and, in a minor degree, of *Guzman de Alfarache*. If the

book did suggest anything to Cervantes—or even to Aleman—its literary importance would be very great. But this is a matter of conjecture. It is a matter of fact that the *Caballero Cifar* not only breaks new ground, but anticipates two very eminent aspects of fiction in Spain : the chivalresque novel and the picaresque novel. The adventures of the knight supply the chivalresque element, the portraiture of the *Ribaldo* supplies the picaresque element.

Lazarillo de Tormes

The first of the picaresque novels was the anonymous *Vida de Lazarillo de Tormes*. The circumstances of its publication are unknown. It crept into the world stealthily at a date uncertain. The earliest editions known are dated 1554. It had a vogue, as is testified not only by the ban of the Inquisition but by the publication of sequels. None of these had the qualities which *Lazarillo de Tormes* can claim : its realistic tone and mocking cynicism, its conciseness and speed of narration, its incisive style, all make it the father of the picaresque novel. We cannot feel absolutely certain that no picaresque novel appeared in the interval between the issue of *Lazarillo de Tormes* and *Guzman de Alfarache*. There is a passage in chapter twenty-two of the First Part of *Don Quixote* in which Gines de Pasamonte, referring to his own autobiography, declares that when it appears it will make an end of *Lazarillo de Tormes* and ' all that kind that have been, or ' shall be, written.' This may be a dig at Aleman. If any picaroon tales were written at this period, they have disappeared. *Guzman de Alfarache* is the oldest—after *Lazarillo de Tormes*—that survives.

Don Quixote

Guzman de Alfarache is a reversion to the prototype of

INTRODUCTION

Primera parte de Guzman de Alfarache

Lazarillo. He is not legitimate; he gets the name of Guzman through his mother, who has had some illicit relation with one of that celebrated family. Alfarache he derives from his father, a Genoese who had got together some property in Seville. The father dies, the mother is left in poverty, and at the age of fourteen Guzman goes forth to look for a fortune. His experiences are described in the three books of *Guzman de Alfarache*: the first book leaves him convinced that he must be either tricked or a trickster, and satirises the company that he meets with in inns: in the second book his tricks and swindles in Spain are described: in the third book the scene shifts to Italy, where Guzman suffers many vicissitudes. At the end of the first book comes the story of *Osmin y Daraja*, rather in the style of the Italian *novelle*. This is told by a priest who is met with on the road. At the end of the third book, a member of the Embassy narrates the story of *Dorido y Clorinia*, which seems to be suggested by Perez de Hita's *Guerras Civiles de Granada*. These romantic episodes are blots on the book, for they are out of keeping with Guzman's sordid rascality; but they may have historical importance, for it is quite possible that they suggested to Cervantes the intercalated stories in *Don Quixote*. Apart from these divagations, Guzman de Alfarache draws an exhaustive picture of the picaroon's hazardous existence. The author clearly had a second part in view, and had in fact planned it. For in the preface to his 1599 edition he proclaims that Guzman was writing from the galleys, that Guzman had studied for the Church on his return from Italy, but had slid back into rogueries again.

Perez de Hita

Mateo Lujan de Sayavedra

Aleman proposed this, but a literary picaroon disposed otherwise. A certain Mateo Lujan de Sayavedra (whom legend long identified with Juan Martí, a Valencian lawyer) hurried out with a spurious sequel. Lujan de Sayavedra does not introduce any romantic or tragic episodes, but, except for this accidental unity, the spurious sequel of 1602 falls below the level of the genuine First Part: in this sequel Aleman's good points are diluted, his weak points are reproduced with additional emphasis. Lujan de Sayavedra exploited the plan which Aleman had foreshadowed in his preface to the First Edition: he is also alleged to have somehow seen the manuscript of Aleman's real continuation. If this be so, it would be idle to denounce Lujan de Sayavedra's baseness: it is manifestly greater than the baseness of Avellaneda in the case of *Don Quixote*. In both cases, the interloper succeeded in stinging the author of the First Part into activity, and in hastening the appearance of an authentic sequel. Aleman brought out the real continuation in 1604, and he took the provocation with a good-tempered irony much superior to Cervantes's angry outbursts. He alludes in terms of praise to his opponent's 'great learning, his 'nimble wit, his deepe judgement; his pleasant conceits, 'and his generall knowledge in all humane and divine 'letters,' and says that his discourses throughout are of such a character 'that I doe much envie them, and should 'be proud that they were mine.' None the less, Aleman knew how to protect himself. He begins on the title-page by assuring the reader that a spurious sequel was not his at all, that this is Aleman's own; and in the text he takes

INTRODUCTION

further precautions. He does not, either, hesitate to borrow hints from Sayavedra. He candidly says that he has incorporated some of his rival's best ideas, and he goes on to promise that he will do this again in the Third Part, if forced to do so by Lujan de Sayavedra's impudence. This eventuality never arose. It seems very doubtful if the Third Part was ever written. In 1604 appeared the genuine Second Part. Aleman adheres in this to the plan of dividing his text into three books ; he adheres also to the plan of interpolating stories. In the first book the tale of *Don Luis de Castro y Rodrigo de Montalvo* is taken from the forty-first of *Il Novellino* : this story of Masuccio's seems to have attained wide popularity, for it crops up again as the secondary plot of Beaumont and Fletcher's *Little French Lawyer*, and again in Scarron's *Précaution Inutile.*

Segunda parte de Guzman de Alfarache

Though the real sequel is more coherent than the fraudulent sequel, it is rather more discursive than the First Part. Aleman's introduction of a moralising tone is a departure from the original scheme of the picaresque novel as adumbrated in *Lazarillo de Tormes.* These moralisings were much appreciated by Ben Jonson, Chappuys (the first French translator of *Guzman de Alfarache*), and others : Lesage, however, omits them completely in his translation, whilst in some Spanish texts they are distinctively marked so that the reader may drop them if he wishes to do so. But the main difference between the two parts lies in the relative importance given to the picaroon in the Second. Aleman complains that though he called his book the *Watch-Tower of Human Life* [his

memory seems to mislead him so far as the first edition (1599) is concerned], the public insisted on calling it the 'Pícaro *y no se conoce ya por otro nombre.*' Sequels are hardly ever equal to the First Parts—'Second Parts are 'never good,' as we know from *Don Quixote*, that great exception—perhaps because they cannot have the same charm of novelty in episode and in invention. Even the genuine sequel to *Guzman de Alfarache* does not contradict this rule. In so far as the style is concerned, it is in both parts strong, supple, and singularly illustrative of the vigour of the Spanish language—the '*claro y límpido* '*raudal*'; it is not, however, either elevated or distinguished. Such a style would be out of place in a picaresque tale, and would be out of harmony with the incidents narrated.

Although Aleman has naturally not sought to portray himself in Guzman the picaroon, he has not unnaturally either made him his mouthpiece. And thus are revealed to us many of Aleman's characteristics: his pessimism, his shrewd wit, his independent humour and inability to flatter personally, and his practical mind which leads him to make such remarks as 'the mending of the highwayes, 'the repayring of bridges, and the reforming of Innes is not 'that which requires lesse care, than matters of greater 'moment, in regard of commerce and trafficke.' In a sense *Guzman de Alfarache* may be said to fill in the imaginative touches of Aleman's life: perhaps we should not realise how much Aleman had been made to regret his marriage but for the bitterness of his tirade on women in the Second Part. His frankness is appalling. Nor

INTRODUCTION

should we give any credence to Luis de Valdés's assertion that Aleman had been to Italy as a soldier without his descriptions of Italian towns, and the curious light that he throws on the shady side of military life in the Spanish army.

Cervantes and Aleman

There has been much conjecture on the supposed enmity which existed between Aleman and Cervantes: proof is wanting on this point. Cervantes may be indebted to Aleman for the episode of Sancho's blanketing, but this is a trifling incident—perhaps a mere coincidence. On the other hand, after the appearance of *Don Quixote* in 1605, no new edition of *Guzman de Alfarache* was printed for ten years.

III

James Mabbe

With the exception of Edward FitzGerald, Mabbe has no rival in his special field. His originality perhaps lies in his clear vision of what a translator can do. He refuses to be servilely bound to the *verbum verbo*, but he never fails in fearless loyalty to his author: he is the faithful interpreter in the largest sense. In the first place, he possesses that essential qualification, 'a mastery of the language he 'translates out of and that he translates into': he has an almost uncanny perception of the meaning which underlies his author's words: he is gifted with a capacity for taking pains bordering on genius: and, finally, he holds his art in something not unlike veneration. If his sympathetic intuitions lead him not unfrequently to amplify and even to interpolate, he has an apologist in Dryden, who readily justifies himself in a similar case: 'I desire the false

'critics would not always think, that those thoughts are 'wholly mine, but that either they are secretly in the 'poet, or may be fairly deduced from him; or at least, if 'both these considerations should fail, that my own is of a 'piece with his, and that if he were living, and an English-'man, they are such as he would probably have written.' In this Mabbe's triumph consists. He has given us in his translation of *Guzman de Alfarache* a work which, apart from its subject-matter, might very well pass for a piece of masterly English prose. Mabbe rarely blunders: his concern is with his readers, whose ignorance of Spanish makes them his enduring creditors, and where his text bristles with difficulties he is not content to avoid these by a loose translation, but draws upon his scholarship and fine perceptions to evolve a true solution. Indeed, to make the sense larger, he will even introduce phrases such as 'like 'your Birchen-Lane men,' 'like an old Apple-John,' 'as 'is Salisburie plaine.' On occasions, he cannot resist the substitution of Latin for Spanish terms, but here again his anxiety for clarity begets next to the Latin phrase its English equivalent—'*hijo de la tierra*' he translates '*terrae filius*, a son of the earth'; '*espíritu deambulativo* '—*spiritum ambulatorium*, a wandering humour of my 'own'; '*la estrella no te fuerza*,' 'For the starres *non* '*compellunt sed inclinant*, they incline, but not constraine.' Conciseness is not a characteristic of Mabbe's, and he makes no demand upon it in his aim for clearness. For the simple Spanish phrase, '*hizo un melindre de enojada*, '*diciendo*,' he gives us 'with a bended brow and angry looke, casting her eye a-skew upon him with a coynesse

His chief defect

INTRODUCTION

'of language, she turned aside from him, accenting her 'words in a pretty kinde of mournefull fashion, pittying 'as it were and bemoaning herselfe'; similarly '*vino y* '*miróme de espacio*' is expanded into 'at last very leasurely 'and tenderly went to work with me, with a soft and gentle 'hand, as never a Lady in the land could more handsomely 'have gone about it,' and '*Cerróse la noche, y con ella* '*nuestras esperanzas de remedio, viendo que nada, se aplacaba* '*el temporal*' becomes by the same method 'Whilest they 'were thus busie, the night grew on, and a pitchy darknesse 'had (like a pavillion) pitched itselfe round about us, all 'was clouds, Aegyptian clouds, blacke and darke as Hell; 'so that having lost the comfort of the light, we lost like-'wise with it all hope of safety, especially when we saw 'that the storme was no whit allayed, but rather more 'and more increased upon us.' The force of the Spanish construction is in its simplicity: the long English rendering may gain in colour, but it loses in impressiveness and dramatic effect. This is particularly noticeable in the last quotation. Withal it is seldom that Mabbe's exuberance leads him to perpetrate so ridiculous a pun as in his translation of the sentence '*Su nombre se traen consigo,* '*mujer de mole, por ser toda blanda escepto de condición.*' This he freely paraphrases 'And therefore their name 'sutes well with their nature; being for this cause, called '*Woman* because she is a woe to man. She hath a smooth 'skinne, but a harsh nature; a soft tongue, but a hard 'heart; silken words, but sowtage deeds.' But if Mabbe lacks brevity, he has a rare ingenuity and a delicate ear for the rhythm of prose, and such few words as he coins

—Kim-Kam, jigges and jagges, a-hinching and a-crinching —are curiously expressive and fall well into line with their context. His vocabulary is as varied as it is rich: thus he enters on no unequal contest with his author. He is essentially, too, a master of the values of words: he will transform plain '*Mentira*' into 'the Lady Lye,' '*la Verdad*' into 'honest Dame Truth,' and at a stroke he vitalises Aleman's abstract allegorisings. The reader who judges of Mabbe's style in translation from his prefaces to *Guzman de Alfarache* and to the *Celestina* would be led completely astray. These prefaces are redolent with *culteranismo* and *conceptismo*. Even the pseudonym *Don Diego Puede-Ser* [James May-Be] owes its origin as much probably to Mabbe's love of a conceit as to a prevalent fashion. That his translations are unmarred by conceptist influences is a high tribute to Mabbe's unswerving loyalty in transmission. Throughout the six books of *Guzman de Alfarache* he maintains a high level of style, whilst a peculiarly happy turn strikes at times an arresting note. Such is the rendering of 'the Crowe which cryes still *Cras*' for '*Mañana . . . la del cuervo que siempre la promete.*' Similarly, the commonplace Spanish '*Una pequeña piedra suele* '*trastornar un carro grande*' becomes 'A little haire in 'a pen makes a great blot, and a little stone in the way 'overturnes a great Waine.' Some amplifications are their own justification. Mabbe's name has been mentioned in connexion with the I. M. of Shakespeare's First Folio. Nothing positive is known on this point. The existence of a friendship between Shakespeare and Mabbe is just as much a matter for conjecture; yet an intellectual

INTRODUCTION

Vocabulary

Style

Mabbe and Shakespeare

INTRO-DUCTION

link of a kind seems indicated by Mabbe's prose, whose continuously adequate and melodious form is not wholly unreminiscent of Shakespeare.

IV

His life

Wood tells us that Mabbe was born of 'gentile Parents 'in the County of Surrey and Diocese of Winchester.' His grandfather, John Mabbe (the name is also found as Mabb or Mab), became Chamberlain of London in 1577, and was until then a jeweller in Goldsmiths' Row. James Mabbe the translator—his father was also a James Mabbe —was born in 1572. He matriculated at Magdalen in the Lent term of 1586-7, and was elected to a Fellowship in 1594. In 1603 he began to specialise in Civil Law, a subject which seems to have held attractions for him, since some six years later he presented a plea to the Congregation of Regents that 'he might have the favour to be admitted 'to the degree of Bachelor, but whether he was really 'admitted, it appears not.' He seems to have spoken a stirring oration before Henry, Prince of Wales, when the Prince matriculated in 1605 at Magdalen. In 1611 he went to Spain as secretary to Sir John Digby, afterwards Earl of Bristol. He must have read enormously and studied diligently to have gathered in a sojourn of two years the intimate knowledge of the Spanish language which he shews in his translations. But he would seem to have brought back from Spain nothing but his mastery of its language, and, incidentally, a treasure-house of work and contentment for himself. The external interests to which others were

alive apparently passed him by; or if they touched him, he gives no hint to that effect. When all Europe was agog over *Don Quixote*, Mabbe, who later describes its author as 'one of the prime Wits of Spaine for his rare Fancies 'and wittie Inventions,' leaves us completely in the dark as to whether he ever troubled to meet Cervantes whilst in Madrid. His wooden silence on this point and others can scarcely be due to dullness of mind: it is more probably the attribute of a strongly reserved character. Mabbe had a gift of shrewd observation hardly compatible with dullness—or even indifference; nor does he scruple to intercalate in his text what his discerning eye has seen. He tells us that all Spaniards carry 'a kinde of high hand 'over their wives'; and where Aleman says that no Spanish lady goes without 'her little foisting dog,' Mabbe adds, 'or a Spanish Don without a Tooth-pick.' In 1613 Mabbe was made Lay Prebendary of Wells—'being then in orders,' Wood says. And it is in this connexion that Mabbe is thought to have been a clergyman. There exist no records of his induction, and the only facts definitely known are the following. In 1613 Mabbe was Prebendary of Wanstrow, near Frome; at the visitation of Bishop Montague to Wells Cathedral in July 1615, opposite the name of *Jacobus Mabb artium magister prebendarius de Wanstrow*, the clerk has written the word '*dispensatus*'; on December 11, 1638, Mabbe resigned his 'canonical house' to Roger Wood; and on December 7, 1642, Anthony Madox was instituted to the Wanstrow prebend in his room. The date of Mabbe's death is uncertain. He is said to have died and been buried at Abbotsbury in Dorsetshire in 1642, but

His prebend

His death

INTRODUCTION

the registers of that parish have been destroyed for the years 1637-1666, and Wells Cathedral records are blank from 1641 to 1660.[1]

His work

Apart from some Latin verses which were prefixed in 1611 to Florio's Italian dictionary—*Queen Anna's New World of Words*—Mabbe has done no original work. His command of languages and his tastes alike fitted him for a career less subjective and more thankless. Mabbe had the instinct to know wherein his genius lay. In an extant manuscript dated December 1626, and entitled *Observations Touching some of the more solemne Tymes and festivall Dayes of the yeare*, he writes to his 'worthy frend, 'Mr. Jhon Browne,' 'that this hand of myne, hath beene 'so carefull in the Limning of this little peece, that there 'is very little odds betwixt the Originall, and yt.' The first work of any importance upon which Mabbe engaged was the translation of *Guzman de Alfarache*, which was published in 1622. It was apparently undertaken by him on the representation of his friends, and, in spite of the difficulties that it offered and its inordinate length, Mabbe produced a translation which justifies the note of self-complacency faintly traceable in his preface. That the difficulties were very real we may judge, not merely from Mabbe's own description of his task as '*un negocio muy* '*dificultoso*,' and his remark that he has found in some passages his '*Guzmanico escuro como la noche*,' but from occasional marginal notes wherein he owns himself dis-

[1] For help in verifying these details thanks are due to the Earl of Ilchester, Canon Church of Wells, and the Rev. W. D. Macray, Fellow of Magdalen College.

satisfied with his own ingenious rendering and appeals for another solution. Seven years later Mabbe translated the Augustinian Fray Cristóbal de Fonseca's *Devout Contemplations Expressed in Two and Fortie Sermons upon all Ye Quadragesimall Gospels*; and in 1631 was published his *Spanish Bawd*—a translation of the *Celestina*—which ranks perhaps as his most successful book. Mabbe's choice of texts is illuminating, but it is his translation in 1640 of Cervantes's *Novelas Exemplares—Exemplarie Novells in sixe Books*—which affords the most striking proof that his tastes were linguistic rather than literary. No one possessed of artistic appreciation or of critical discernment could omit from a translation of Cervantes *El Coloquio de los Perros* and *Rinconete y Cortadillo*. Yet it is precisely these that Mabbe omits. His selection of Fonseca, one of the poorest writers of the mystic school, is further illustrative. In his prefaces he is too incurious to make more than a few general remarks on the subject-matter of his texts: he observes an even greater caution with regard to himself. We know that amongst his friends he counted Sir Thomas Richardson—to whom he dedicated his *Celestina*—and Sir Leonard Digges, the translator of Céspedes y Meneses' *Poema tragico del español Gerardo y Desengaño del amor lascivo* (1615-1617). Wood tells us that from 1633 onwards Mabbe lived with Sir John Strangwayes. It is to Sir John Strangwayes that Mabbe dedicates his *Guzman de Alfarache*: in a Spanish preface, full of involved turns and conceits, he confides his '*Pícaro*' to his friend, 'sure,' he says, 'that he will be well received.' His *Exemplarie Novells* he dedicates to 'The worthie (and

His tastes

Cervantes

Mabbe's friends

INTRODUCTION

'Worthily of all who know you to be much honoured) 'Mistress Susanna Strangwayes,' Sir John's daughter-in-law. With a delicate instinct he tunes his language to a simpler and more homely note. 'Some of your Sexe '(especially such as have beene gentily bred) when they 'have wrought hard with their Needle upon some curious 'Worke, have laid that aside, and taken a Lute in hand, 'or some other musicall Instrument, and playd a Lesson 'or two thereon, to recreate themselves therewith, and 'anone after fall to their worke afresh: So naturall is it 'to all sorts of persons whatsoever to take delight in 'Variety.' And he promises that the stories will be 'pleasing and delightfull; The Sceane is so often varied, 'the Passages so pretty, the Accidents so strange; and in 'the end brought to so happy a Conclusion.' Evidently the instinctive understanding that is one of Mabbe's assets as a translator was equally one of his gifts in dealing with persons. And since friendship, books, and work must count for much, life for Mabbe can scarcely have been an unhappy thing.

V

Guzman de Alfarache

Aleman's *Guzman de Alfarache* was known—either in translated or adapted form—in French, Italian, and German before Mabbe brought out *The Rogue: or The Life of Guzman de Alfarache.* Already, in 1600, it had been translated into French by Gabriel Chappuys, and six years later Barezzo Barezzi's Italian version of Part I. was published at Venice. This was followed in 1615 by the

Some foreign translators

fairly free German adaptation of Aegidius Albertinus. Albertinus used Sayavedra's spurious sequel rather than Aleman's continuation as a basis, and his treatment of the subject indicated the way for *Simplicissimus*. In 1615 also Barezzo Barezzi's Second Part saw the light. In 1619 the First Part was retranslated into French by Jean Chapelain, and appeared under the title of *Le gvevx, or la Vie de Gvzman d'Alfarache. Image de la vie humaine. En laquelle toutes les fourbes & meschancetez qui s'vsent dans le monde sont plaisamment & vtilement descouuertes*: the Second Part, by the same hand, came out the following year with slight verbal changes in the title. In 1625 a Latin rendering of *Guzman de Alfarache—Vitae humanae proscenium*—was given by Gaspar Ens. It ultimately comprised three parts. Based on Aleman's work, it introduced a new character, Lazarillo de Tormes, and contained much extraneous matter in the way of discourses and quotations from Horace, Seneca, and Plutarch. Two Dutch translations appeared at Haarlem and at Rotterdam in 1655. By 1689 Chapelain's translation had run into ten editions. In 1695 Gabriel Brémond brought out an adaptation of the book at Amsterdam, and the following year his work was reprinted at Paris. Throughout Eastern Europe the name Guzman became synonymous with rogue.

Mabbe's translation

In England Mabbe's spirited translation found a fitting publisher in Edward Blount, who was responsible also for the printing of Shelton's translation of the First Part of *Don Quixote* in 1612. The first edition was entered at Stationers' Hall on February 28, 1621, and it appeared in print in the two following years: copies dated 1622 seem

INTRODUCTION

now to be rarer than those with the date 1623. A second edition was printed at Oxford in 1630. In the third edition of 1634 *Guzman de Alfarache* was bound up with Mabbe's translation of the *Celestina*, issued in 1631; in 1656 a fourth edition was published in London by Philip Chetwynd. Two altered and abridged editions appeared in 1655 and in 1708 respectively. Whilst Lesage in the definitive French version of 1732 does not scruple to omit Aleman's moralisings, Mabbe scorns to trifle with his text. There may creep into it a reflexion or an amplification, but by his tastes and his generation he had no temptation to prune.

Lesage

And here a curious point arises. In Mabbe's Second Part passages occur which are not to be found in any of the Spanish editions. But these passages do occur and are to be found in Barezzo Barezzi's Italian translation. In Part II., Book 1. Ch. 3, Mabbe interpolates two paragraphs on 'Stationers and Printers.' These paragraphs exist in Barezzi, but where Mabbe stops at the note 'whereas 'now many of them by these mens great paines and in-'dustry are raysed from their graves to immortalitie,' Barezzi continues, '*e del numero di questi Venezia gloriosa-*'*mente ne gode il Trionfo.*' The mention of Venice may have seemed too suggestive to the Englishman, and the passage was accordingly omitted. Mabbe's next insertion deals with the story of the supposed rape of a young woman: Cervantes also introduces this tale in Part II. Ch. 45 of *Don Quixote* as illustrative of Sancho Panza's rulings during his governorship. The tale is told by Mabbe in Book III. Ch. 2. It begins as in the Italian

The Italian text

version—'But upon this subject, may it please you to 'heare a singular accident, and a notable case in this 'kinde, which hapned (not long agoe) in one of the princi- 'pallest Cities of that most noble Common-wealth of 'Venice.' '*Ma udite*' (runs the Italian) '*in tal materia un 'singolar accidente, e caso notabile che successe, no hà molto 'tempo, in una principalissima città nello stato della serenis- 'sima Republica di Venetia*'—and in every respect it closely follows the Italian version. In the next chapter [Ch. 3] Mabbe introduces a long discourse on the perils of riches, consisting mainly of instances drawn from the Scriptures. This passage exists textually in the Italian: it begins with a quotation from San Bonaventura, and ends '*e si come il 'fedel amico si lascia conoscere nel far bene, così l'inimico 'non si nasconde mai nel far male.*' 'And as a faithfull 'friend is known in doing good, in time of need; so an 'enemy will never hide himselfe, when he may do thee a 'mischiefe,' writes Mabbe. Further in the same chapter, in the passage dealing with books of chivalry, we find in the Italian text this warning: '*Ma guardinsi quei che 'leggono simili libri che loro non succeda quello, che auenne 'a D. Quissote della Mancha, che credèdo farsi Caualiere 'errante diuenne pazzo,*' which Mabbe translates, 'But let 'them take heed, who reade such, and the like bookes, 'lest that succeed unto them, which hapned unto Don 'Quixote de la Mancha, who thinking himselfe an errant 'knight came to be an arrant Asse.' Apart from these intercalations, comparison of the three versions—Mabbe's translation, Aleman's text, and Barezzo Barezzi's rendering—goes to shew that the English and the Italian versions

INTRO-DUCTION

are closer to each other than is the English to the Spanish. A few instances may suffice to make this clear. The Spanish '*serviran aqui mis penas para escusarte dellas*' reads in Italian as '*Quì le mie pene* e disaventure *seruiran-*' *noti* per specchio,' and in English as '*For my punishments* ' and my misfortunes . . . *will serve thee in stead of* a ' looking-glasse'; in like manner '*a la noche, se volvería* ' *en un carro*' becomes in Italian '*e la notte sarebbe* senza ' fatica *sopra* qualche *caretta ritornato a casa*,' and in English '*he might in the evening* without any trouble *return* ' *home in* someone *Cart* or other . . .' And again, the Spanish '*si diera el rayo en cas de* Ana Diaz' is rendered by Barezzi, '*Se . . . percotesse il raggio nelle* altrui ' *case* . . .' and by Mabbe, '*if the lightning shall light* ' *upon* another mans *house* . . .' Similarly Aleman tells us that there is in Genoa an excellent Inn, which he leaves nameless: in Mabbe and in Barezzi the Inn becomes '*l'Hosteria di santa Marta.*' These examples and others too numerous to quote constitute evidence which one cannot afford to ignore. And this evidence would seem to prove that Mabbe rendered his Second Part not from the original Spanish, but from an Italian translation. In that he was no worse than other translators of his day. Lavardin's French version of the *Celestina*—which Mabbe consulted for his translation—was made from the Italian. He may have been better, if we construe his rare marginal notes as efforts to represent his original, 'not through a ' glass darkly, but . . . face to face.' At the same time, other indications seem to show that Mabbe was able at some time to have access, either directly or indirectly,

to the Spanish text and to a French translation. The preliminary matter of the Spanish text consists of nine pieces: the Italian translation reproduces four of these, the English six, of which three only coincide with the Italian. Three, therefore, of Mabbe's introductory poems derive from the Spanish. We have further evidence in the notes. There is a passage in the *Arancel de Necedades* (Book III. Ch. 1) whose Spanish reading has '*y otros con* '*unas uñas caireladas, que ponen asco imitarlas*': the Italian version runs '*ed altri, che hanno le unghie orlate in modo di* '*cauiaro, che fanno stomacare chi le vede*': Mabbe translates 'and other some, with nayles either ready to drop off, 'or full of durt, looking like Caveary, that they would be 'ready to turne a mans stomacke,' and in the margin he writes, 'The Spanish word is *vnnas cayreladas*, the French 'renders it *Ongles si lanternes, et si salement colorez.*' And again, in Book III. Ch. 9, the Spanish reads, '*Me dieron todo* '*el trabajo de la corulla*': Barezzi translates, '*Mi diedero* '*carico di custodire tutta la roba del Re*': Mabbe renders this, 'They committed to my charge the trouble of the '*corulla*,' and notes 'the Italian will have this to signifie '*tutta la roba del Rey.* The French renders it *Connille.*' Similarly, proverbs are quoted in the marginal notes in their Spanish form. And since it is not admissible to suppose that Mabbe deliberately chose as his text an Italian version, we must infer that the Spanish *Guzman de Alfarache* only became available after he had finished his translation. Mabbe would then have added the prefatory matter and the proverbs and looked up doubtful passages Copies of the Second Part were issued separately from the

First Part, and were difficult to obtain. It is true that Mabbe makes no admission of his debt to Barezzo Barezzi: it is true that the omission of the passage relating to Venice can bear a wrong construction. But then Mabbe makes no confidences of any sort to his readers. And his use of an Italian text is not incompatible—as things were in his day—with qualities of loyalty. He was a scholar and a gentleman. It would be ridiculous to impeach his honesty of purpose.

J. F. K.

[*November* 1923.]

THE ROGUE

OR

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE

WRITTEN IN SPANISH BY

MATHEO ALEMAN

SERVANT TO HIS CATHOLIKE MAJESTIE

AND BORNE IN SEVILL

—

1623

Al Illustre Sennor,

DON IVAN ESTRANGWAYES

Espeio de la Virtud y Nobleza,
Cauallero Titulado, y gentilhombre de la
Camara de Su Serenissima Magesdad
de la gran Bretaña.

EÑOR mio; No he querido encomendar mi Picaro á la protecion de los Reyes, y Principes. Porque, demas que no convienen tales personas á sus Magesdades y Grandezas, an hecho particulares Leyes muy rigorosas, y Pragmaticas severas contra los que lo hazen.

Ni tampoco á los Consejeros de Estado. Porque, aunque á caso los tengan, no se sirven, ni gustan dellos, si no por su proprio interes, ó razon de Estado.

A los Juezes, menos. Porque son enemigos mortales de la pobreza, y de los, que no tienen dineros.

Pero, á vuestra Señoria si; (aunque no sin reçelo) por amor de los grillos, y çien açotes bien

ORIGINAL DEDICATION

pagados. Siendo vuestra Señoria Governador principal en su tierra, y uno de los Corregidores de Loçanos, y Picaros. Yo se muy bien, que vuestra Señoria puede echar mano á mi Picaro, y agarrarle, para llevarle á la Carcel, y detenerle en ella. Yo confiesso, que era todo quanto malo se puede dezir. Arrojado, y desvanecido, inconsiderado, descuydado, confuso, desordenado, indiscreto. Era reboltoso, y amigo de novedades. Tenia sutilezas, invenciones, y engaños. Era importuno, y porfiado, semejante al navio, que anda dando bordes en la ribera, y nunca acaba de tomar puerto. Era como una pared, que cada momento estava para desmoronarse, y caer en tierra. No tenia firmeza en su voluntad; no tomava resolucion, en lo que avia de hazer; No Sabia refrenar sus passiones; Hinchosele la cabeça de viento, desuaneçio en embelecos; Dando consejo á los otros, no sabiendo los tomar para si. Donde llegó á triste fortuna, y fuerte, a Lazeria, mezquindad, desarrapamiento, estrema miseria, y necessidad, y en fin, á las Galeras.

Con todo esso, como los Picaros tienen entrada en las Casas de Señores, no desconfio, que este niño de la Piedra, será bien recebido de vuestra Señoria, y en toda verdad, deve estimarse en mucho.

ORIGINAL DEDICATION

Porque, aunque habla mucho, pero no sin sustancia. No se puede dezir ser todo hoja, y no tener fruto. O, que nuestro Picaro es gran Charlatan; que tiene muchas palabras, y en ellas poco de que echar mano, que sea de consideracion. Tira á dos hitos, por diversos caminos, dando á entender una cosa con sus palabras, y haziendo lo contrario en sus obras. Hallará vuestra Señoria (como dizen) entre Col, y Col, Lechuga. Variedad de cosas para entretener, y recrear, para que no nos enfademos, tratando siempre una cosa. Trayendo tanta variedad de razones, quantas colores tiene un Pintor. No es como Elecho, yerva sin tallo, sin flor, y sin simiente. Las rasuras, que salen de las pieças de açofar, quando se tornean, en si valen poco, y quando las recogen, hazen bulto; pero echadas á derretir, se vuelven en muy poco. Tales son las palabras vanas de los Charlatanes; y Habladores. Que, si los apurais, tienen poca sustancia.

Pero este Picaro, no es holgaçan, que esta papando viento, como los fuelles. Grande es el provecho, la utilidad, y ganancia, que del se saca. Estremado es en sus dichos, y donayres, y comprehende, y encierra muchas moralidades, unas dentro de otras. Es muy graçioso: Es (como dizen) una sal.

ORIGINAL DEDICATION

Dirán algunos ; Que es todo intricado, confuso, mal-digesto, revesado. Mienten. Antes todo al contrario.

Por el hilo, se saca el ovillo : y por la muestra, y principio de una cosa, se conoçe lo demas della.

O que natural fuerça de de entendimiento ! O, como da en el blanco ! Como tira á punteria. No tira, (como otros) á tiento, á troche moche, de donde diere, si no con orden, y buen concierto. Advertiendo á todos, que no ensucien sus manos en cosas viles, ni hagan cosa fea, O indecente ; si no, que se recojan, y que paren, y obedescan al freno de la razón.

Mi Picaro, es hombre de bien. No es de aquellos Vellacos de Madrid, que pregonan vino, y venden vinagre. De los, que prometen cosas buenas y altas, y despues son ordinarias y frivolas.

No digo mas, sino que me he engolfado en un negocio muy dificultoso. Perdone me vuestra Señoria. No pude menos. Quales las cadenas, quales las ataduras de eslabones nigeridos unos en otros, son la importunidad de los Amigos, y la propria promesa ? Estando desta manera empeñado, me fue menester para satisfazer con mi obligacion ; y aviendome engargantado el pie en el estrivo, no pude tan facilmente sacarlo.

DE ALFARACHE

ORIGINAL DEDICATION

Yo me he puesto las faldas en cinta, para passar mi Carrera ; Se mi poco valor, y flaqueza, y que a lo menos, si no he errado, he tropeçado. Pero, si vuestra Señoria fera servido de tenerla por buena, y suficiente, y que he hecho mi dever sin falta, O Fealdad, el Torneo no sera malo, teniendo Padrino tan noble para abonarme.

El que vuelue las palabras y conceptos de una lengua en otra á menester tener fidelidad, prudencia, y sagacidad, y ygual noticia de ambas Lenguas, y lo que en ellas se dize por alusiones, y terminos metaforicos, y mirar lo, que en esta otra Lengua se puede corresponder. Muchos vierten ; y las mas vezes, pervierten.

El Picaro, esta trasladado. Plego á Dios, que di mi mano no sea mal tradado. Traducido, si ; Si traslucido, bien esta. El Picaro de Alcman ha mudado su Vestido; su Traje, no es al modo de España, sino de Inglaterra. Si yo le he puesto en su punto y ser, muy venturoso soy. Guarde me Dios, de mala noche, y parir hija. Ay tal desconsuelo en el mundo como trabajar mucho en un negocio, y alcabo no suceder como se deseava.

En algunos lugares, hallo mi Guzmanico escuro como la noche. Pero, yo he hecho algunos Escolios, para quitar los Escollos. Espero buen puerto. Pero, si á caso se embraveçe la Mar de

ORIGINAL DEDICATION

Maldiçion, si las Olas creçen, con la espuma de los Deslenguados, si este mi pobre Vaxel no tiene fuerça para contrastar las Tempestades amenazadas, me desnudare, y arrojare con impetu y furia en la Mar, dexandole á la inclemencia destos Torvellinos, y espiritus turbulentos. Confiando, que vuestra Señoria me dara la mano, para Sacarme fuera de un Abismo tan peligroso, no sufriendo se anegue y perezca en la Mar, ahogandose en ella, uno que es tan.

Aficionado á vuestra Señoria ; como
Don Diego Puede-Ser ; de Santa
Maria Magdalena.

DE ALFARACHE

To

DON FRANCISCO DE ROIAS

Marquesse de Poza, Lord of the House de Moncon, President of the Councell de Hazienda to His Majestie, and the Courts belonging there-unto.

OF all those things in this world, which are wont amongst men to cause the greatest feare, I know not any that may be greater, or of equall compare to that of an evill intention, and secret ill meaning. And by so much truely the more, by how much it shall bee the more deepely rooted in those that are of obscure Bloud, humble Birth, and base mindes. For in such, it is usually more forcible, and lesse corrigible. But both of them, the one and the other, are like unto Hunters; who (taking up some close standing shadowed over with boughes) lye in wait for our destruction, and even then, after that we have received our deaths wound, we are never awhit the neerer in discovering whence our hurt came. These are Basilisks, whom if we view them first,

ENGLISH DEDICATION

their poyson loseth its force, and is of so much the lesse prejudice; but if they once gaine the hand of us (by getting a kinde of dominion over us) they bring us in danger of our utter undoing. They are a scandall to a Common-wealth, the promoting Knaves of Innocence, and the very executioners of Vertue; against whom the wisedome of man is not of power to prevaile, or able to guard it selfe. Of these kinde of men, from whose subtill gins (as traps tending to death) no person lives secure, I (for mine owne part) have ever been more afraid then of any other beasts, how fierce or hurtfull so ever. And more especially in this present occasion, wherein a large field is laid open unto them, wherein they may sow the seed of their venome, calumniating mee (at the least) with the reprochfull attribute of an over-bold and rash-headed fellow, that I should presume to offer to so powerful a Prince, so poore a gift. Not considering, that this my boldnesse first grew from that necessitie, where-into their feare had put mee. For, as those Cities that are weakely fortified, meanely mann'd, and of small force for defence, have so much the greater need of brave and worthy Captaines to maintaine them, by resisting the furious violence, and sharpe assaults of their enemies: So in like manner was it needfull for me, to helpe my selfe, and make use of your Lordships protection, in whom, with so much splendour

and glory, are made manifest to the worlds view, those three parts (Vertue, Blood, and Power) whereof true Noblenesse is composed. And because it is a peculiar propertie belonging there-unto, to favour and protect those, who (as to a Sacred place) withdraw themselves thither for their better safety, I rest so secure under the shadow of your Lordships protection, and rely so much upon your noble disposition, that you stretching out the wings of your accustomed clemency, my booke shall under them (as Chickens under the Hens wing) remaine free from those that shall seeke to wrong it: And together therewith obtaine this happinesse, that you making that great, which in it selfe is little, admitting a poore Picaro, to become a Courtier, shall give a being to that which had none before, a worke of such Greatnesse and Excellencie, as shall make your Lordship to appeare the more. Whose long and happy life is desired of no man more then

MATHEO ALEMAN.

TO THE VULGAR

O me it is no new thing (though perhaps it be to thee) to see (O thou vertue-hating Vulgar) the many bad friends that thou hast; that little, which thou deservest, and that lesse, which thou understandest: To behold, how biting, how envious, how covetous thou art; how quick in defaming, how slowe in honoring; how certain in ill, how uncertaine in good; how facile to fly out, and how hard to bee curbed in. What Diamond is there so hard, which thy sharpe teeth doe not grind to powder? What vertue scapes Free from thy venemous tongue? What piety doe thy actions protect? What defects doth thy cloake cover? What Treacle doe thy eyes behold, which doe not like the Basiliske impoyson? What Flower, though never so cordiall, ever entred thorow thy eares, which in the Hive of thy heart thou didst not convert into poyson? What sanctitie hast not thou calumniated? What innocencie hast not thou persecuted? What singlenesse of heart hast not thou condemned? What justice hast not thou confounded? What truth hast not thou profaned? In what greene field hast thou set thy foot, which thou hast not defiled with thy filthy luxuries? And if it were possible to paint forth to the life the true fashion of hell, and the torments thereof, thou onely, in my judgement, mightst (and that truely) be its perfectest counterfet. Thinkest thou (peradventure) that passion blindeth mee, that anger moveth me, or that ignorance violently thrusts me on? No verily. And if thou couldst but be capable of seeing thy owne errour, but suffer

TO THE VULGAR

thy selfe to be informed, (onely but with turning thy head aside) thou shouldst finde thy actions æternized, and even from Adam reproved, as thou thy selfe art already condemned. But alas, what amendment may bee expected from so inveterated a Canker? Or who is he, that can be so happy, as to unclue himselfe from this Labyrinth, or to unseaze himselfe from thy griping talons? I fled from the confused Court, and thou followedst me into a poore Village; I with-drew my selfe into solitaire Shades, and there thou madest a shot at me, and drew'st thy venemous shafts at mee; never letting me alone, but still vexing and pursuing me, to bring me under thy rigid Jurisdiction, and tyrannicall Empire. I am well assured that the protection which I carry with mee, will not correct thy crooked disposition, nor give that respect, which in good manners thou owest, to his noble qualitie, nor that in confidence thereof I should get free from thy arresting hand. For thou despising all goodnesse and civilitie, (which are things that never yet came within the reach of thy better consideration) hast rashly and unadvisedly bitten so many illustrious and worthy persons, extolling some for their wit (though idle) accusing others for their lightnesse, and defaming a third of lyes and false-hoods. Thou art *Mus campestris*, a very Field-mouse, and no better. Thou art still nibbling on the hard rinde of the sowre and unsavourie Melons, but when thou commest to those that are sweet and wholesome, and fitter for nourishment, thy stomake fals into a loathing, thou canst not feede on them without surfetting. Thou imitatest that importunate, troublesome, and eare-offending Fly (through his untuneable buzzing) the Scarabee, who not dwelling on the sweeter sort of Flowers, flyes from forth the delicate Gardens, and pleasant Woods, for to settle on a Cowe-sheard, fall upon a dunghill, and other such like noysome places. Thou doest not make any stay upon the high moralities of diviner wits, but onely contentest thy selfe with that which the Dogge said, and the Foxe answered; this cleaves close unto thee; this, when thou hast read it, remaineth still with thee, and having made it

once thine owne, is never againe forgotten. O unfortunate Foxe, that thou must be likened to one of these, and must, like these, be reviled and persecuted, like an unprofitable and mischievous member in a Common-wealth! I will not injoy the priviledge of thy honours, nor the freedome of thy Flatteries, though thou wouldst inrich me with all the wealth of thy praises. For the commendation of wicked men, is but shame and dishonour. And I rather desire the reprehension of the good; because the end for which they doe it, is like unto themselves, then thy depraved estimation, which cannot bee but bad. Thou takest too much libertie unto thee, thou art an unbridled beast, a head-strong Jade; and, if occasion of matter bee offered unto thee, thou runnest away with it, thou kickest, and flingest, thou tramplest mens good names under thy feete, thou breakest all bounds of modestie, and tearest all in pieces that stands in thy way, and whatsoever else shall seeme good unto thee. But these faire Flowers, which thou so scornefully treadest under thy feete, crowne the Temples of the vertuous, and give a fragrant and odoriferous smell in the nostrils of those that are noble. The deadly razour-wounding flashes of thy sharpe tuskes, and the mortall strokes made by thy hands, shall heale the man that is discreet, under whose warme shade, I shall happily bee defended from all the stormes and tempests of thy blustring malice.

TO THE VULGAR

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

TO THE DISCREET READER

T is usuall with some, that are troubled in their sleepe with sad and melancholy dreames, to strive so strongly with their imagination (that without being otherwise moved at all) after they are awakened and come to themselves, remaine so broken and tyred out, as if they had wrestled and tugged hand to hand with some brave fierce Bull. And such a one for all the world doe I finde my selfe in getting out of my former Proeme, my mind still beating upon the Barbarisme, and dis-equall number of those ignorant Dolts, to whose censure I submitted my selfe, it faring therein with me, as with him, who thrusts himselfe into a voluntary exile, having not the power afterwards in his owne hands to reverse his banishment. I did ingage my selfe by promise to compose this booke, and now I am inforced to hold my honest word. I must confesse I made a false Vie, and did set up my rest in jest, but now I am driven to see it in earnest. For it is the word, that bindes the Player. I know full well (considering the rudenesse of my wit, and shortnesse of my studies) that it had beene very fit in me to feare the Carreere that I am to make ; and that this libertie and licence of mine is more then needed, and might well have been spared ; But considering with my selfe, that there is not any Booke so bad, out of which some good may not be drawne, it may be possible, that in that wherein my wit was wanting, the zeale which I had to profit others, may supply that defect, by working some vertuous effect ; which happinesse if I light upon, it shall bee a sufficient reward of my greater paines, and make this my boldnesse, more worthy your pardon. I shall not need

with the discreet to use long Proemes, nor prolixe circumlocutions. For neither can the eloquence of words vainely worke him, nor the force of speech dotingly perswade him to more then what is just; nor doth his felicitie consist in the procuring of his favourable Censure. I remit myselfe to his correction; I crave his helping hand to uphold my weakenesse, and put my selfe wholly under his faire protection.

And thou, (O Reader) that art desirous to profit hereby, if thou wilt but truely consider me, when I wrote this Booke, and that common good, to which I had then an eye, thou wilt not conceit, that what hath been done therein, was haply performed by me for private Interest, or undertaken for ostentation of wit; for I did never so much as pretend it, nor could I finde that sufficient worth in me, to put my selfe upon my wings in so vaine a flight.

Some perhaps will say, That having (like unto Watermen) turned my backe and eyes the contrarie way, (who looke one way, and rowe another) I direct this little Barke of mine, where I have most desire to land. But upon mine honest word, hee is deceived, that so thinketh. For it was my sole purpose, to guide the prow for the publicke good, if I might be worthy to obtaine so great a blessing, and that my labour might serve to so good a use. Thou shalt finde many things not so cleane wrought, but like Painters first colours, laid on with a carelesse hand and slubberd over, which I did omit to polish and flourish over for some causes, that gave hinderance thereunto. Others are some-what more refined, and better shadowed, which I did willingly avoid to follow, and was loth to finish them to the full, being as fearefull, as carefull of committing some unadvised errour, or un-conceived offence. Others I boldly unmasked and laid open to discovery, as worthy to be drawne without a vayle, and fit to be presented to publike view. I have much to say unto thee, and desire so to doe, yet may not tell it thee. I have written unto thee, yet have I left out much of what I would have written. Reade so, as it becomes thee to reade, and doe not scoffe at my Fable; and if it shall receive intertainment at thy hands, accept these lines, which I give thee, and with them, the minde wherewith

TO THE DISCREET READER

they be offered unto thee. Doe not cast them, as dust and sweepings of the house, upon the dunghill of oblivion; consider that there may be some filings and parings of price; rake them out, gather them into a heape, and when they come to a convenient quantitie, put them into the crisole of thy consideration; give to them the fire of the Spirit; and I assure thee, thou shalt extract some gold from them, wherewithall to inrich thy selfe. These Arrowes are not all of mine owne Quiver, nor this honey that I set before thee, all of mine owne hive; much of their sweetnesse did I sucke from holy and learned men; this is merchantable ware, well-conditioned; and for such I recommend it unto thee. And because there is no good thing, which doth not proceed from the hands of God; nor any thing so bad, whereof some glory doth not result to his divine Majestie (as having a part in every thing) imbrace, and give a friendly reception to that which may be profitable for thee, rejecting that which is otherwise, or whatsoever else is bad, as meerely mine: Albeit I am very confident, that those things which cannot hurt, are wont many times to doe much good.

In this Discourse, thou maist moralize things, as they shall bee offered unto thee, Thou hast a large margent left thee to doe it; That, which thou shalt find lesse grave, or discomposed, presents it selfe in the person of a Picaro, or Rogue; which is the Subject of this Booke. Such things as these (which are not very many) sport thy selfe a while with them, jest and play the wagge, and afterwards shake hands with them. For at great Feasts, we must have meats for all mouthes; and dishes for all tastes; Pleasant and sweet wines, which must cheere the heart, and helpe digestion; and musicke for to please and delight the eares.

VALE, AMICE.

DE ALFARACHE

A DECLARATION FOR THE BETTER UNDERSTANDING OF THIS BOOKE

HAVING written this Poetical History, with purpose to have it printed in one only Volume, in the discourse whereof those doubts might be cleared, which now (being divided) might offer themselves; it appeared (to my seeming) a very just thing, to remove this inconvenience, beeing it might easily be done, and that in very few words. For which purpose, it is to bee presupposed, That Guzman de Alfarache, our Picaro, having (by his study) come to be a good Latinist, Rhetorician, and Grecian (as we shall deliver unto you in this first Part) after that hee had returned out of Italy into Spaine, he went forward in his Studies, with purpose to professe the state of Religion, and to make himselfe a Church-man. But by reason of his often relapsings to his Vices, he left that course, after he had spent some yeeres therein. Now himself writeth his owne life from a-boord the Gallies, where hee remained, and was put to the Oare, for the faults which hee had committed, having beene a most famous Thiefe, and notorious Offender, as you shall see more at large in the second Part. Nor is it any improprietie, or beyond our present purpose, if in this first Part I shall set before you some Tracts of Doctrine: But rather seemeth agreeable unto reason to present unto you a man of a cleere understanding, holpen by Learning, and punished by Time, making benefit of that idle time, which hee had in the Gallies; Being that we likewise see many ignorant poore soules sentenced to death, who being to spend the

A DECLARATION

remainder of their time in thinking on their soules health, divert their thoughts from all other worldly things, for to make a short studied speech when they come to the Ladder.

This Booke divides it selfe into three parts : In the first, it is treated of Guzman de Alfaraches going forth of his mothers house, and the slender consideration of yong men in those indevours which they attempt : And how, though their eye-sight be cleere, they will not see, precipitated and blinded with their false pleasures. In the second, the life of a Picaro or Rogue, which hee under-went, and the lewd tricks which he was led into by ill company, and the time which he idly mis-spent. In the third, the calamities, and extreme povertie, whereunto he grew, and the inconsiderate courses which he ran into, because he would not take up himselfe in time ; and his obstinacie in not suffering himselfe to be ruled by those, who were both able and desirous to doe him good. In that which I shall write hereafter, I shall (God willing) give an end to this Story.

TO THE CURIOUS READER

LBEIT I was still afraid to expose this my Second Part to the light, after it had beene some yeares finished and perused, (though more had beene too few, for the presuming to publish it) and that it were better for me to uphold the good opinion gotten by my first, (which with open armes was generally so kindly embraced by all) then to hazard their good wils by this second ; I was in doubt with my selfe, whether I were best to put my reputation upon so ticklish a pin ; either because it should not perhaps be so well accepted ; or that I might chance to fall short of my desire, missing the marke whereat I aymed : For commonly where the greatest care is taken, those that are unfortunate, are wont to faile most. Yet notwithstanding, it being with me, as with that bad servant, who with blowes and kicks, is awaked out of his deepe sleepe ; being rouzed up by so violent a stroake ; that hapned to my selfe, which is wont to befall lazie and slothfull persons ; to doe one thing twice over. For having beene too prodigall in communicating my papers, and the conceptions of my braine, they caught me when I was upon my wings. So that seeing my selfe (if I may lawfully use that phrase) robbed, and defrauded, I was enforced to fall a-fresh to my labour, seeking out some new supply of moneys, wherewithall to pay my debts, and to disingage my word, which I had formerly past. So that by this meanes I was driven to differ, as much as possibly I could, from that which I had written before. Surely it

TO THE CURIOUS READER

was Esaus owne over-sight, some peculiar slip or fault of his, that being tyred out in the chase, and killing of his game, gave occasion to Jacob to steale away his blessing from him.

Truly, I must ingeniously acknowledge in this my Competitor, Concurrent, or Corrivall (who ere he be) his great learning, his nimble wit, his deepe judgement, his pleasant conceits, and his generall knowledge in all humane and divine letters, and that his discourses throughout, are of that qualitie and condition, that I doe much envie them, and should be proud that they were mine. But by the way, let him give me leave to tell him (which is no more then what others say) that if upon any other occasion saving this, hee would have beene pleased to make use of these his good parts, so honourable would his paines have therein appeared, that the gravest person that is, need not to have beene ashamed to discover both his name, and his face; but to deale after this manner, was to foyst into Castile, the coyne of Aragon. But herein, that succeeded unto him, which usually (we see) befalleth many women, whose parts and members, considered severally by themselves and apart, are of that rare and singular perfection, that desire cannot wish it more, nor the pensill expresse it better. But afterwards, when all these distinct parts shall be conjoyned, made one whole peece, and examined together, they fall short in the making up of a faire and well-favour'd face. But he proceeded therein discreetly; taking that course, which they use to doe, who goe (presuming on the activenesse of their person) with their Lance in their wrest, masked and disguised, to encounter their adversarie. But because these are things of adventure, and depend much upon fortune, if they hit right, they make them-selves knowne, but if they misse, they goe away ashamed, and you shall never see the face of them. Well, whatsoever hath beene done in this kinde, or howsoever carryed by him, he hath enforced me to defend my selfe. For that he argueth; That the great paines that he had taken, and so worthy of excuse, in following the tracke of

my steps, and the imitation of my workes, grew first from this, that hee esteemed them to be good. I pay him againe in the same money, by following of him. Onely we differ in this ; That he hath made a second part out of my first ; and I onely imitated his second. And shall doe the like in the third, if being elder hand, he shall vye upon me. Whereunto if I be put, I shall not refuse to see it. Assuring my selfe, that I shall not be shut out, but have a place amongst the rest. For the field being so large, through the pleasantnesse of the subject, whereunto the sharpnesse of the appetite will likewise give some helpe, more parts will daily come out of this booke, then Conies out of their Berryes, and more glosses made thereupon, then on the faire Angelica in the dayes of Castilejo. But I advise in this case, that they would not be too nimble fingerd in taking pen in hand, till they have wearyed their eyes with perusing, and inlarged their understanding, that it may bee made capable to receive whatsoever shall bee brought into it. Nor would I have them to write, till they be well read, if they will attaine to hit the white, and not shoot beside the butt. For our Guzman having purposed to play the good Student in the Latine and Greeke tongues, and in the studie of Rhetoricke, and having gone forward in his studies with a full purpose to professe Religion ; to take him now out of Alcala, thus on the sodaine, so quite alienated from his former inclination, and so bad a Proficient, were *cortar el hilo a la tela*, to cut the thread before the web were woven ; contrary to that which is pretended in this Historie of his Life ; which was onely to serve as a sentinell, to discover all sorts of Vices, and to draw treacle out of divers poysons : That is to say ; To describe unto you a man, perfect in his parts and person, punished with troubles, and afflicted with miseries, and falling afterwards into (of all other) the basest roguerie, is put into the Gallies, where his wings were clipt, that he could not get thence in haste. Let us slip it over, That he could not be called a most famous theefe, for the stealing of three cloakes, howbeit two of them were very faire ones, and of much

TO THE CURIOUS READER

value, but the other a poore one: Let us likewise omit, That it is improper to fabulous Histories, to introduce publike and knowne persons, naming them by their proper names: And let us come to that obligation, which he had to returne to Genoa to revenge the wrong wherewith he threatned his kindred in the last chapter of the first Part: And many other things, which without giving satisfaction, hee passeth over in divers different fashions, altering, and reiterating not only the accident it selfe, but even the very words used therein. So that undoubtedly I am of opinion, that it is a thing of more difficultie, then every man is aware of, to undertake the pursuit of another mans discourse. For it leadeth its undertaker along even from his purposed, and first intended course, to those things, whose chase he cannot choose but follow. Nay should he come to confer mouth to mouth, with the partie him-selfe, it is impossible but he should goe out of the way: For there are many conceits, that are thrust into by-corners, and there hid; wherewith even its owne proper Author is much troubled, upon a sudden and present occasion, with calling them to minde, time having worne them almost out; whereby men may fall into mistakes; quoting K. Don Fernando of Zamora, in stead of the Infanta Dona Urraca, his daughter. This doth not argue want in the understanding, nor is it a defect, that another should jump upon my conceit, and think my thoughts. But I say it is rashnes in him, that will offer to run with that man, who must needs out-strip him, through the others slownesse of footmanship, or that he runnes not right upon the marke. If here the phrase be not so significant, the stile not so loftie, the language not so sweet, the proverbs not so pithie, the stories not so pleasant, nor so cleanly carryed as I could wish; My excuse must be; Many over-sights cannot be avoyded in the writing but of a little; which will aske a larger time to correct and amend them. But having finished my third Part, and following Horace his counsell therein, that I may be the better able to offer it to your view (which shall be shortly) I could not excuse

this passage, as being very necessarie for those ends which I pretend. Accept of my good will, which is to serve thee. For the times are not still alike; nor the starres alwayes favourable; nor Calliope continually set upon the merry pin.

DE ALFARACHE

AN ELOGIUM OF ALFONSO DE BAROS, Chamberlaine to King Philip the third, in praise of this Booke, and of Matheo Aleman the Author thereof.

F we owe somewhat to those Painters, who in a Treasurie as it were of Monuments, or some faire Store-house, have reserved and lapt up in their linnen clothes (though under lines and dumbe colours) the pictures of those, who for their Heroicall Actions, merited their Tables; As also of those, who by their unworthie carriage gave motion to their Pensils; for that with the pleasing portraiture of the one, and the abhorred aspect of the other, they awaken and stirre up our Spirits, through the ones fame, to imitation; and through the others infamie, to feare, and advisement: Much more obligation (without all comparison) have we unto those, who to their full life represent these things unto us in their Histories; who doe us more good in what they have written, and have this advantage of the others limming, that their reports and relations doe worke so strongly, and with that perswasive power upon our imagination, as if we had really and in truth seene both them and all that they did, with these our bodily eyes.

In these, and all the rest (if there resteth any obligation that may be greater) we have both the lighte and the life, from this our Author: For in this his Historie, which he now hangs foorth (as Painters doe their pictures) in the open streete, to the eye of all the world, he hath portraited so to the life, a sonne of idleness, a loytering Rogue; that there is not any man (though never so ignorant) but will knowe him at

AN ELOGIUM

the first sight, for that he is so like his father: Who as he is the parent of all Vices, so this his childe came to be the Center and Gulfe of them all, suffering them to imbosome themselves within him, receiving in (as sinkes doe) infinite gatherings, not of waters, but of filth and mire. And being now so farre improved in them, that he might serve for an example and patterne unto those, who should dispose themselves to injoy the like kinde of life, the Authors drift is, that no man should adorne himselfe with such roabes as these: For there is not any one so abhorring himselfe, that at so deare a rate will cloathe himselfe with his Liverie, seeing that he payd with a shamefull end the punishment of his offences, and the disordinate actions, which his licentious desires did commit. Whose merited and exemplary chastisement is expressed with Categoricall and strong tearmes, and with an argument ex contrario*; to wit, the reward, and fortunate successes which shall follow him, who living uprightly, and spending his time well, shall in his course of life, apply himselfe to a certaine and determined end, and make himselfe the opposite, and Antipodes as it were of the inconstant Figure of this insuing discourse. Wherein, for his admirable order, and good observations, bearing in the face of it the resemblance of a Historie, the Author hath happely attained the name and office of an Historian, and a Painter; as well in those representations, that are to be seene a farre off, as in those shadowes, wherewith he hath disguised his instructions, and those his so necessary rules and advertisments, appertaining to a politicall life, and to Morall Philosophie, whereunto hee principally aimed; shewing plainely, that which Licurgus expressed, by the example of those two Whelps of one litter, whereof the one, through good teaching, and a habit he had gotten, followed the hunting of the hare, till he had killed him; and the other, because he had not beene so well bred, in stead of falling to hunting, fell a gnawing the bone which he found in the way: Giving us to understand by infallible demonstrations, the knowne danger, wherein those children stand, who in their child-hood are trayned up without obedience and good education by their parents: For without*

this curbe, they rush into the careere of their youth, upon the unbridled Horse of their irrationall and untamed appetite, which carries them away headlong; and precipitates them into a thousand inconveniences, dashing them-selves as upon so many Rocks, till there is not one bone left unbroken, nor one limme left unrent of their life and goods. He likewise sheweth unto us, that that man is no lesse subject to the like misfortunes, who, being destitute of some noble Science, or some speciall misterie, groundes his hopes upon the untilled doctrine of Natures schoole: For without exercising his Talent, or imploying his wit, or without putting him-selfe into some profession, (having experimented that arte, to which he is most inclineable) he usurpeth offices quite contrary to his owne inclination, omitting none which hee not imbraceth, attempting to make triall of all, losing in all of them both himselfe, and his time, pretending by his inconstancie and unsettled disposition, to seeme not to be idle; that man being not-withstanding more idle, who puts his Sickle into another mans Corne, and venters upon a profession that belongs not unto him, then he that sleepeth and takes his ease, or leades the most retired life. This our Treasurer, Matheo Aleman, hath also well defended himselfe from the like objections, by those just occupations of his life, wherein he busied himselfe; who doth teach us as well thereby, as by his booke, finding therein the opposite of this his Historie, which he pretendeth to imply: For being bred up in his tender yeeres in the studie of humane learning, they could not challenge him of keeping residencie in idlenes:[1] *Much lesse, that in this his Historie, he hath thrust himselfe into another mans profession: for that it is so properly his owne, and so annexed to his studies, that the desire he had to write it, withdrewe and distracted his thoughts from the honourable intertainment of those his Majesties papers; (being at that time his Contador) wherein (albeit he were very sufficient for the exercising of that office)*

[1] His learning need not call him to an account, how he had spent his idle howers. A Metaphor taken from Magistrates, of whom their Successors doe take an account of what things have passed in their time of residence in the Office. And this is, *pedir residencia.*

AN ELOGIUM

yet it seemeth that hee was haled thereunto by violence, and against his will; in that he returned afterwards to his former exercise; in the continuation whereof, and by his watchfull indevours, he hath formed this booke for us, mixing it with that most sweet harmony of delight and profit, which Horace requireth; inviting us with its pleasure, and instructing us with its gravity, taking for its scope, the publick good, and for its reward, the common benefit. And because young men shall find in him, the obligation which they have to their parents, who by a good and lawfull education, have drawne them out of the darkenes of ignorance, by shewing them that North-Starre, which ought to guide them in this confused Sea of their troublesome life, (being as long to the idle, as it is short to those that are well occupied) it shall (in point of good manners) be very unfitting, that the Readers, who are the children of this Bookes Learning, should shewe themselves unthankefull to their Master, by not throughly esteeming his just Zeale. And if this shall not save him from their rigorous censure, the fault must then be in the inevitable contradiction of the diversitie of opinions. Nor is it a thing to be wondred at, but rather naturall, and that cannot be avoyded: For most certaine it is, that a man cannot so write, as that he shall please all: And that whosoever should indevour it, should but go about to take from Nature her greatest miracle. Nor doe I knowe which is the greater beauty, either that which she placed in that diversitie, from whence proceed so many diverse opinions; or that of the divers formes of mens faces. For, for the rest, it were but to say, that all the world were but one man, and one taste.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

ANCIANT LUYS DE VALDES

His Elogium to Mateo Aleman

AS if Armes, and Learning were not Sisters, some pratling Sophister seemeth (me thinkes) to tell me, That I should doe well to follow my military profession, and let Elogiums alone, leaving them to Schollers; it seeming unto him, that these two, are of too different a nature, to consort together. But I shall be able to point forth unto him, not one, but many Cæsars, as dextrous in Letters, as disciplin'd in Armes. And that I may take away all occasion from such Cavillers, of alledging against me, That I am too forward in usurping the office of an Orator, taxing mee of too much boldnesse and inconsiderate rashnesse, I will march as farre off as I can, from their dangerous style of flattery and ostentation, safely retiring my selfe into mine owne Trenches, and there to defend and maintaine the truth, a thing as proper to a Souldier, as is his Sword and Target, or his Pike and Corslet.

I will be but the Eccho, not the Chronicler, of what I have seene, heard, treated, and knowne abroad in the world; for I have beene in my time in many, and different Nations, and Countries. I will goe on, and cumply with my desire, not fearing the face of Calumniation, because I know my selfe to be dis-interessed, and a free-man. For love, interest, and feare, are those three ropes, that halter Justice.

And for that it is so just a thing, to reward mens labours, encouraging the vertuous with a shout, as they doe in warre, giving it them as a thankfull pay, which being truly deserved,

is a true treasure. I have therefore beene willing, seeing so many so drouzy in the businesse, to take up the pen for them, though least of all obliged thereunto in the common opinion of the world, by reason of my profession. But no man shall out-strip me herein. We are all beholding to Mateo Aleman, wee are all indebted unto him, and of all he doth justly deserve condigne commendation. For wee must acknowledge him to be the first, that till this very day, hath in such a kind of style as his, come to discover and excommunicate Vice : (with such a sweetnesse and softnesse) which being to them a venemous Aspe, robs them of their lives, when they are in their sweetest sleepe. ELOGIUM

Many Physitians minister to their sicke Patients, pils of Aloes for to purge the head, but few or none of them have taken pleasure in chewing of them, nor so much as to touch them with their tongue, neyther have they beene able so to sweeten them, that moving a desire to eate them, they should procure a generall appetite. Only Mateo Aleman, hath taught us the way to taste things with delight, instructing us by other mens actions how to governe ours : with no small hurt to his health and estate, having much wasted both the one and the other by his painfull studies. And we may very well say of him, That never Souldier had a poorer purse, and a richer minde, nor a life more unquiet, and full of trouble, then was his ; and only, because hee accounted it a greater honor unto him, to be held a poore Philosopher then a rich flatterer. He left (as it is well knowne to the world) voluntarily, and of his owne accord, the Kings palace, where hee served almost twenty yeares, being the best, and as it were the very creame of his age, in the office of Contador de resultas, *to King Philip the 2. and in many other waighty businesses, besides visitations and survayes, which were committed unto him, in all which hee behaved himselfe so well, that hee evermore gave wonderfull good satisfaction, proceeding so uprightly, that he grew to be so poore, that not being able any longer, by reason of his wants and necessities, to continue these his services, he retyred himselfe from that course of life, to one of lesser both ostentation and attendance. And though he*

ELOGIUM *wanted the goods of fortune, yet was he rich in the endowments of the soule, which are of much more estimation and price, then worldly pelfe, whereof no man could more truly boast himselfe.*

Let the tongues of men be listned unto, and yee shall heare nothing so common as the publishing of his praise: no lesse in Spaine (where it is no small wonder to have a Prophet liked in his owne Countrey) then in Italy, France, Flanders, and Germany, which mine owne eares and eyes can truly testifie and avow. And I might (if need were) boldly sweare, That I never heard his name mentioned, but with the addition of some honourable Epithite, even to the giving of him this noble Attribute, El Español divino, *The divine Spaniard.*

Who, like him, in lesse then three yeares, and in his owne life time, saw his owne workes translated into so many sundry languages, that like your Cartillas in Castile, his bookes ran posting for Italy and France? What Author ever writ, who at the very time when he was willing to bring forth his Labours to the light, they have scarce come forth of the wombe of the Presse, but that they were strangled in the mid-wifes hands, and left for dead. And those his workes, that came forth into the world alive, and did breathe, and injoy their life, as these of this our Author, they flew abroad with such swift and nimble wings, holpen by those of Fame, that with extraordinary speed they past through all parts of Christendome, insomuch that there was not any one Province, whereinto they have not flowen, and received, where-ever they came, most honorable entertainment?

What workes can ye instance in, that in so short a time, have had so many Impressions? The whole number of those bookes that have been printed amounting to more then fifty thousand volumes. There have beene (of my knowledge) six and twenty severall Impressions, whereof he was rob'd, whereby others became rich and the Owner of them, poore. Against whom but him, did ye ever finde the gates of Murmuration shut? Who, but he, had so perfectly learnd the way to beat Malice out of the field, and to put her to flight? If this be so; or if (as by evident Mathematicall demon-

strations) it shall require a necessary proofe of witnesses, let the best of the world be brought forth, I meane the famous University of Salamanca, where being celebrated there, by the best wits of that Academy, I have heard many speake of him, as the Grecians of their Demosthenes, and the Romanes of their Cicero; reputing Mateo Aleman, as the Prince of eloquence in the Spanish tongue, as well for the modesty, and dextrousnes of his style, as for his elegancies, and choice phrases. Of which opinion, was a religious Augustine, as discreet, as learned; who maintained in that University, in a publike Act, that there was not from the beginning of the world, to this present day, that the first Part of this was printed, any booke of like nature to this, (being no divine subject) of greater eyther profit or pleasure. ELOGIUM

Valençiano testifieth this truth; who (denying his name) falsly styles himselfe Mateo Lujan, that he might be taken for Mateo Aleman. And albeit he might parallel him in his name, and Country, yet that he should be the same man in his workes, it was not possible. Only therein his malice may be discovered, and that he did that he did, moved thereunto out of the benefit that he should reape therby: which if it had fallen out (as he expected) had been no small matter; But it fell out, (as fit it was) contrary to his expectation. For in that very self-same yeare that it came forth, I bought one in Flanders, which in the Frontispice, had its Impression in Castile, taking it to be authenticall and good, till I had read a little of it, and then it was not long, that his eares shot out of his skin,[1] *and so came to be knowne what he was.*

But to let this passe, and to speake of those that admiring such a deale of depth and profoundnes both of wit and learning, being wonderfull willing to have some learned and grave Fathers to adopt this childe of his begetting, they all laboured to seeke out some one, who for his quicknes of wit, greatnes of Schollership, and singularity of eloquence, might be able to undertake so rare and admirable a peece of worke; all which doth argue the worth thereof, and redound to the greater glory of the true Author. And then shall they free themselves

[1] *Mostrar las orejas fuera del pellejo,* is metaphorically an Asse.

ELOGIUM *of this doubt, when they shall have perused his* St. Antonio de Padua, *which out of a vow that he had made, to set forth his life and miracles, made him so slow in publishing this his second Part. They shall see how miraculously he treateth of them, and it may almost be counted a miracle, if we will but consider how wonderfully he carryed himselfe in the printing of them. For putting his papers from hand to hand to the Presse, and wanting matter for that dayes worke, I knew for certaine, that over-night he composed so much stuffe, as did serve to keepe the Presse going all the next day following: for he was troubled at that time with divers other businesses, which did necessarily require his help and assistance. And in those short houres of the night, he was seene to imploy him-selfe with a great deale of diligence, as well in the affayres of his other businesses, as in the ordering and sorting of papers to send them to the Printers, as also, in the composing of more matter for the Presse, besides his attendance upon other things, importing his owne person and house. Every one of which would have well required a whole man, free from all other incumbrances. And that, which he wrote in this manner, was all the whole third Booke. And though every-where through-out in all the rest of his writings, he hath show'd the Ocean of his wit, being that therein they shall find a most rich treasure of divers Histories moralized, and expressed with all the elegancie that can be devised, yet this is that enamelling, that beautifies that Jewell, and sets it best forth. As all those have affirmed, who had the good hap to have a sight thereof.*

What shall I say of this his Second Part of Guzman de Alfarache, *and in how short a time he made it? Which seemeth almost a thing impossible, being so differing from his former, which he was forced to change and to alter, casting it in a new molde, for the reasons before delivered. This will render sufficient testimony of his worth, and bridle those rash tongues and head-strong spirits, which shall kick against him, and vainly and foolishly runne on to the wronging of their judgements. If all that I have said be truth, if the learned approve it, the vulgar deny it not, if the world con-*

fesseth it; (for here every one may meet with that, which shall please his appetite, which Horace holds so difficult a thing,) if under a prophane name he doth write so divinely, that he may serve for a bridle to the bad, for a spurre to the good, for study to the learned, for entertainment to ordinary capacities, and in generall, for a fine Politicall, Ethicall, and Oeconomicall Schoole, and so full of sweetnesse and pleasure, that it may invite any man to looke thereinto, and to dwell upon that, which he shall finde there set downe, both for pleasure and for profit. What doe I throw upon him? or what doe I in this, more then to pay him that, which he so justly deserveth? O happy Sevill, that maist amongst thy many Greatnesses, nay one of thy greatest, glory in this thy Sonne, whose laborious endevors, and indefatigable studies, (equalling the very best both Latines and Grecians,) have thus truly merited and deserved, that all the nations of the world, crowning his head with Bayes, and celebrating his name, should willingly, and with a great deale of triumph, sing forth his due prayse.

ELOGIUM

DE ALFARACHE

AD

GUZMANUM DE ALFARACHE,
Vincentij Spinelli Epigramma.

Spinellus

Quis te tanta loqui docuit Guzmanule? Quis te
Stercore submersum, duxit ad astra modo?
Musca modo, et lautas epulas, et putrida tangis
Ulcera; iam trepidas frigore, iamque cales.
Iura doces, suprema petis, medicamine curas,
Dulcibus et nugis seria mixta doces.
Dum carpisque alios, alios virtutibus auges,
Consulis ipse omnes, consulis ipse tibi.
Iam sacræ Sophiæ virides amplecteris umbras,
Transis ad obscœnos sordibus inde iocos.
Es modo divitijs plenus, modo paupere cultu,
Tristibus et miseris dulce levamen ades.

Guzman

Sic speciem humanæ vitæ, sic præfero solus
Prospera complectens, aspera cuncta ferens.
Hac Aleman varie picta me veste decorat,
Me lege desertum, tuque disertus eris.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE
upon his owne life

Borne without Parents, which in my Cradle
Should have sowne such seeds, as might inable
Me to good ; My Youth chose Vice fort's Father,
Whose Step-dame, Fortune, quickly did inslave her.
  My Travels, and my Studies found est-soone
More Formes, and Changes, then are in the Moone.
But now my building being ruin'd quite,
Like to a Pillar, I onely stand in fight,
  Others to fore-warne, what course they runne,
Lest, like my selfe, they chance to be undone.
With this Story, my life now liv's againe,
Which in Oblivions pit did dead remaine.
  Whose blurrs are now in such faire letters writ,
As Time no more shall triumph over it.
An un-hewne piece of wood, I long have beene,
Knotty, and rugged, rinded up in sinne.
  But polish't now by this neat Worke-mans hand,
And, on the Altar set, as a Memoriall stand
To lesson others, how their lives to leade,
While I to them, mine owne mis-fortunes reade.

DE ALFARACHE

HERNANDO DE SOTO
to the Author

Two great things I see
In this wise booke contained be :
A notable Knave,
And yet the Authors Subject grave.
In it I discerne,
By others harmes, how men may learne
Their owne faults t' amend,
And shape their course to some good end.
Likewise we may know,
What Love to goodnesse we must owe.
To teach more, none can ;
Nor more be learn'd of any man.
'Tis the Common voice,
So good on either side's the choice.
Picaro honour gaines,
Aleman immortall remaines.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

IN

GUZMANUM D'ALFARACHIA

nobilem Erronem et Prædonem publicum, à clariss. reique militaris expertiss. Duce Don Diego Puede-Ser captum, vinculis constrictum, nec sine ovatione in Britannias perductum.

Este procul Elegi :
Nihil hic Dolente dignum,
Vocem premant Epica :
Non hic celebratur Heros.
Flebili nil opus Lyra :
Facilis hic prostat Venus.
Sed nec Tuba Mantuana :
Bella canuntur bellula.
Grande nimis reboantes
Davum dedecent Cothurni.
Nec Iambi turbet furor
Hilares Lyæi iocos,
Multoque minus loripes
Fugitivum dicat Scazon.
Quale iam dic Metri genus,
Nobilis, Guzmane, prædo,
Te tuosque mores sonet
Expertes Legis, Ordinis ?
Nam Marini more Dei,
Vitijs nunc irritatus
Leo fremis : Nunc remulcens
Caudam Canis adularis :
Colubrina sæpe lingua.
Immane quiddam sibilas ;
Sæpe Sophi meditantis
Pendula severus roga
Vitæ prædicas mæandros.
Vafer sic, et fallis Omnes,
Et Teipsum multiformis.
Ut stupore plenum fuat,
Quibus hamis et catenis
Illigavit Versipellem,
Et hoc Monstrum cicuravit ;
Voce Qui donat Anglica ?
Aureis catenis nempe,
Quibus vinciuntur aures ;
Nempe Circeo poculo,
Tumidos quod sopit angues :
Nempe Thracis plectro Lyræ,
Quæ sequaces reddit ursas.
Hisce comprensus artibus,
Retro manibus revinctis,
Curru positus superbo,
Per Britanna regna, (Guzman)
Prodis in pompam publicam.

I. F.

DE ALFARACHE

FRATRIS CUSTODII LUPI, LUSITANI

Ordinis Sanctissimæ Trinitatis de libri utilitate

EPIGRAMMA

Sunt duo quæ pariter virtus perfecta requirit :
Quod pravè nunquam, quod benè semper agas.
Hæc tibi, si cupias, ullo ne tempore desint.
Auctoris geminum perlege, Lector, opus.
Antoni nunquam ponat tua dextera librum.
Nec tibi Guzmani pagina displiceat.
Si referas divi mores ; infanda prophani
Si scelera abijcias : omnia puncta feres.
Reddite Matthæo grato pro munere grates :
Quo duce conspicuum fit pietatis iter.
Planius hoc fiet, postquam ex incudibus Auctor
Sustulerit plenos utilitate libros.

AD

MATTHÆUM ALEMANUM DE SUO GUZMANO

ΤΕΤΡΑΔΙΣΤΙΧΟΝ

Ruy Fernandez de Almada

Ullibus exemplis Pharij quid grandia cælant ?
Planaque cur simulant abditiore typo ?
Nempè vetant Sophiæ mysteria prodere vulgo
Intimiusque animo pressa figura manet.
His ducibus Guzmane geris, ceu Proteus alter,
Plana sub obscuro, magna minore typo.
Ergo cum scitè Ματθαιε μαθηματα *dones*
Te sibi ματαιον, *Hispalis alma canat.*

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

JOANNIS RIBERII LUSITANI

ad Authorem

ENCOMIASTICHON

Laus, Matthæe, tibi superest post fata perennis,
Quam nullo minuet tempore, tempus edax.
Orbe pererrato virtutem extendere factis,
Factum ingens : opus est Martis, et Artis opus,
Fortunam major variam superare labore,
Herculeis major Quiribus iste labor.
Majus opus, major labor est coluisse Minervam :
Major et ex proprio condere Marte libros.
Heroas decorare solent duo nomina, Mars, Ars :
Munera tu pariter Martis et Artis habes.
Mars dedit invictum, quo tendis ad ardua, pectus :
Excoluit mentem docta Minerva tuam.
Ingenii monumenta tui super æthera nota,
Testantur larga præstita dona manu.
Multa Hispana canit Musa : atqui nullus Ibera
Dogmata pinxit adhuc Φερτερος ἐν μεδοδο.
Testis hic est codex modico qui venditur ære,
Attalicas superant, quas dabit emptus, opes.
Cujus ab aspectu morsus compressit inanos,
Invidia, heu multis injuriosa nimis.
Zoile transverso calamo, qui vulnera figis,
I procul, en contra numina bella paras.
Contra Mercurium, Phœbum, contraque Minervam,
Mortalis poterit tela movere manus ?
Quisquis avarus ades, redimis qui sanguine gemma,
Gemma tibi parvo venditur ære, veni.
Hauris ab effossa pretiosa pericula terra :
Hic liber arcanas fundet, et addet opes.

DE ALFARACHE

Decolor est dives, fulvo quod pallet in auro,
Non sunt divitiæ delitiæque simul.
At liber hic auri venis qui pulcher abundat,
Nunc tibi delitias, divitiasque dabit.
Aureus hic certe gemma est pretiosa libellus,
Quis tenui gemmam respuas ære datam?

DE ALFARACHE

TO THE EXACT TRANSLATOR OF THE FAMOUS HISTORY OF INFAMOUS GUZMAN

When Guzmans Legend was allow'd in Spaine,
And, though a Rogue, found Prince-like intertaine ;
He did o're Alpes and Pyrene Hils advance
To tell his Tale in Italy and France :
With which their native eares being sweetly stung,
He theevish stole their heart, and bound their tongue
To speake his praise. At last on Gallick shore
(Standing like Cæsar) thence he did implore
Some Pegasus, or winged Argoes ayd,
To crosse the Brittaine Seas : Shall they (he said)
Want onely my thrice-seven times printed story ?
Nor know my Odysse's ? Nor shall my glory
Out-goe my feet ? I come no Spy, nor take
A Factious part ; No sound of Warre I make,
But against sinne ; I land no forraine mates ;
For Vertues Schooles should Free be in all states.
Straight-wayes thy Gentler spirit (without thirst
Of Fame or Fare) wafts him a-shore, and first
Shewes him the present garbe, the parle, and guise,
In a few weekes ; whose Quill both writes and flyes
With equall speed : Then shapes him quaint and rare,
That he seemes English, nay a Courtiar.
Would you know his Discourse ? He biting laughes,
A Comicke Satyre, at small faults he scoffes,
But stabbes th' impudent : Now in amorous straine
He sighes a Lover ; Now in busie gaine
He acts a Merchant ; then in learned weedes
He lookes a Student : Ibis-like he feedes
On publike venome, and deserves a Shrine
(Sooner then he that stiled was Divine)
For purging humours. Now his wishes are
Outstript by favour ; then in Gallies bare

He honours beggery : His whole Theame is Man,
On which not Crantor nor Chrysippus can
More wisely comment ; for his life alone,
Is Precept with Example ; So that none
Can better teach by worse meanes ; who by strange
Bifronted posture, Ill, to good, doth change.
So Vipers flesh, the Vipers cure hath bin :
And sinfull surfets, Antidotes for sin.
So an old Bawdes face, Chastnesse doth suggest :
Vices true Picture, makes us Vice detest,
More then Grave Platoes wish ; For vertues fight
Can lesse allure, then villany affright.
Deare Country, then harbour a weary wight,
Be thou a Delos, to this errant Knight :
Give the kind Parabien, and gracious eye
To various mirth : And (Reader) if thou spy
Thy owne selfe in this Magick glasse, Refuse
No Surgeons hand, but ('gainst the common use)
Let the Booke censure thee ; And thanke his paine,
Whose Pen, so gently prickt thy maister-vaine :
And thanke his faithfull Convoy ; It may be,
Who scornes base fawning ; Love may gratifie.
More is but Due : for as my Scale designes ;
This is the Base, to large and worthy Lines.

Yours I. F.

TO DON DIEGO PUEDE-SER, AND HIS TRANSLATION OF GUZMAN

As, few, French Rablais understand ; and none
Dare in our Vulgar Tongue once make him knowne,
No more ; our Plodding Linguists could attaine
(By turning Minshewe) to this Rogue of Spaine,
So crabbed Canting was his Authors Pen
And phrase, ev'n darke to his owne Country-men ;
Till, thankes and praise to this Translators paine,
His Margent, now makes him speake English plaine.

LEO: DIGGS.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

UPON THE BOOKE

and the Author thereof

Poore Guzmans life, the mapp of Vice and Sinne,
Story'ed by Aleman, is as a Voyce
From Heav'en, shewing how thou shouldst make thy choise.
The word, *Shunne thou to be what I have bin.*
Who stands here as a Marke ; that thou maist see
Where his ship was drown'd ; How the same was split,
More through lacke of Wisedome, then want of Wit.
Which was the cause of all his Misery.
The dainty style of this his pleasing quill
By Guzmans roguish life, adviseth thee
What an upright and honest life should be.
How this, doth leade to good ; how that, to ill.
How slight so e're this fiction seeme to be,
None, can be fuller, of Morality.

DE ALFARACHE

ON THE AUTHOR, WORKE, AND TRANSLATOR

Who tracks this Authors, or Translators Pen,
Shall finde, that either hath read Bookes, and Men ;
To say but one, were single. Then it chimes,
When the old words doe strike on the new times,
As in this Spanish Proteus ; who, though writ
But in one tongue, was form'd with the worlds wit :
And hath the noblest marke of a good Booke,
That an ill man dares not securely looke
Upon it, but will loath, or let it passe,
As a deformed face doth a true glasse.
Such Bookes deserve Translators, of like coate
As was the Genius wherewith they were wrote ;
And this hath met that one, that may be stil'd
More then the Foster-father of this Child ;
For though Spaine gave him his first ayre and Vogue,
He would be call'd, henceforth, the English-Rogue,
But that hee 's too well suted, in a cloth,
Finer then was his Spanish, if my Oath
Will bee receiv'd in Court ; If not, would I
Had cloath'd him so. Here 's all I can supply
To your desert, who' have done it, Friend. And this
Faire Æmulation, and no Envy is ;
When you behold me wish my selfe, the man
That would have done, that, which you onely can.

Ben Jonson.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

TO THE TRANSLATOR

Live (Guzman) to a Caveat ; Live to praise
This languag'd Man ; who hath renew'd thy dayes
By a new birth. Translating thee, as tho
The English Rogue, were not the Picaro,
But a more lively peece. Loe, what Art hath done.
Here the Reflection's brighter then the Sunne.
One Language is too narrow to containe
The boundlesse-rascall-froath of Guzmans braine.
It cry'd for more. This Author, hearing it,
Imployes his Pensill, drawes it to the quick
In English colours : and so sets it forth,
As Guzmans shame, and furtherer of worth.
For me, to Guzman it in Rime, or to rehearse
His Prose ; were but to spoyle a Rogue in Verse.
No : Let the Prose remaine : Let it commend
Him, (whom I dare not praise) because a Friend.

E. B.

TO THE TRANSLATOR

But is the Rogue reviv'd ? Is Guzman made
A Spanish-English Rascall by his Trade ?
Tis so. And (as our home-bred Spaniards guesse)
Hee's printed liveliest in the English Presse.
Tongues, have but one Horizon, if they prove
Each others true Interpreters ; and move
Alike to all the world. But if they feare
To joyne ; each Language has his Hemispheare.
And so had Guzman. But this English straine,
Makes it appeare to Us, as well as Spaine.
Thus, like a blazing Starre, each Author is
Stretcht to a streaming length of Languages.

E. B.

DE ALFARACHE

TO THE TRANSLATOR

Would any man sit still, and yet survay
The world at large ? Or study to betray
All humane Quiddities ? Or would he view
All men unmaskt, discerning false from true ?
Would any man see Proteus ? Would hee see
Proteus againe, and say ; That this is hee ?
Or see the Moone ? And when she waxes light,
Know her to be the same, at second sight ?
In this same Optick-Art, who strives to thrive,
Let him use Guzman as a Perspective.

Guzman is all the World ; know him alone,
And then yee know a Multitude in One.
The Spanish, lim's him : But this English phrase,
Adds life and colour ; and prolongs his dayes.
The Spanish, was too small a Mapp : But this
Drawes him at large ; and shewes him as hee is.
Nor let the subject of this Booke seeme ill,
Because tis Guzman. Painters, shew their skill
No more in Beauty then Deformity :
No lesse in Devils then a Deity.
All's one to them. Nor doe they thinke it more
To draw fayre Virgins, then a Blackamore.
Why then, should not a Rascall honour those,
Whose Language showes him to the life in Prose ?
Reade him : and as his Labour shall appeare,
Commend his Pen by which he landed here.

Edw: Burton.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

TO THE WORTHY GENTLEMAN THE TRANSLATOR

Sir, I embrace th' occasion, and am glad,
After that worthy mention I have had
From both our equall Friends, of you, I finde
A meanes to know the person with the minde.
By what you give us here, you, from a wrong
Wherewith she travel'd, vindicate our Tongue.
The Spanish Rogue? Why twas a Ladd so hye,
So full of Nationall proprietie,
Sententious and Proverbiall; that his Nation
Would sooner sheathe them in the Irish fashion
Then he could put on English. As if here
Our Language were but just as one poore Shire
For one of his profession to walke in.
This Mist, wherein so many men have bin,
You have dispers'd. And still an English straine
Be taught (as well as this) the tongue of Spaine,
Our Nephewes shall reproach it to their Heyres,
This way our Wits have over-master'd theirs.

W. Browne.

A TABLE OF THE CHAPTERS AND MATTER CONTAINED IN THE THREE BOOKES OF THE FIRST PART

CHAPTER I

PAGE

Guzman de Alfarache recounteth who was his Father, and thereupon takes occasion learnedly to discourse of Detractors, and evill speakers, of unconscionable Merchants, of Judges, of bad Clerkes, of Lites, and Litigants, and that too much neatnesse in cloathes, and nice dressing, is ill in a Woman, and worse in a Man 37

CHAPTER II

Guzman de Alfarache goes on, in recounting who were his Parents, and declareth withall who his Mother was; and for our better instruction, describes the evill conditions and bad qualities of a lewd woman, of Bawdes; of a sensuall and lascivious man, and that the end of dishonest Love, is the wasting of a mans honour, of his wealth, and of himselfe 63

CHAPTER III

How Guzman departed from his Mothers house upon a Friday towards the Evening, discovering by the way the torments of hunger, and that which befell him with his Hostesse, recounting many notable examples of some Rules of ill Government 93

CHAPTER IV

Guzman de Alfarache recounteth to a Carrier what had betided him with his Hostesse: And discourseth of laughing. After that, he tels two short Tales; one, of a covetous Physician; the other of two yong men, how they us'd the said Hostesse: And upon the neck of that, fals into a learned discourse, touching the pardoning of injuries . 106

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER V

PAGE

How Guzman and the Carrier did eate of a yong Mule, thinking it had beene Veale, being coozened by his Host in Cantillana, and discourseth by the way of the coozening tricks, which bad Hosts put upon poore Travellers . . . 125

CHAPTER VI

Guzman goes on, in recounting what succeeded with his Host of Cantillana, who had given him to eate of his yong Mule, and of the misfortunes that befell the said Guzman: And how it is not good upon the way to quarrell with our Host 136

CHAPTER VII

Mans misfortune is here discoursed of, and to that purpose you have a story told you of the gods of those ancienter times: And how Guzman, being thought to be a Thiefe, was apprehended; but afterwards being knowne what he was, hee was set at liberty. One of the Clergy-men promiseth to tell us a story, to entertaine the time withall, upon the way 145

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein Guzman de Alfarache relateth the story of those two Lovers, Ozmin and Daraxa 162

THE ARGUMENT

How Ferdinand and Isabell, King and Queene of Spaine, took Baça, a Citie of the Moores, wherein Daraxa a beautifull and noble Damozel was taken Prisoner, whom Queene Isabell brought with her to Sevill, and there left her in the custodie of Don Luys de Padilla. And how Ozmin a young Gentleman well descended, and inamoured of that Lady, after hee had suffered long sicknesse for the imprisonment of his faire Daraxa, went to the said Citie; together with the divers accidents that happened to them both.

DE ALFARACHE

A TABLE OF THE CHAPTERS AND MATTER CONTAINED IN THE SECOND BOOKE

CHAPTER I

PAGE

How Guzman de Alfarache, going out of Caçalla towards Madrid, proves the quality and condition of a miserable man, and upon this occasion, gravely discourseth of the effects of Want, of Shame, and of Castles in the ayre : And how he came to serve an Host ; and of the wicked disposition of such kinde of men 234

CHAPTER II

How Guzman de Alfarache leaving his Host, went begging to Madrid ; and comming thither, how he set himselfe to learne to play the Rogue, and to beare a Basket ; where, by the way he discourseth of Hunger, of Beggery, and of Honour which hurteth the soule 249

CHAPTER III

Guzman de Alfarache goes on in his Discourse against vaine Honours : where, by the way he offers unto Mans consideration, what manner of person he ought to be, how to beare himself in his Office, and to governe himselfe in those high places, whereunto he is called 257

CHAPTER IV

PAGE

Guzman de Alfarache delivereth a learned and witty discourse, conceived by himselfe, against the Vanity of Honour: touching by the way upon the Vices of Servants, of Shopkeepers, of Notaries, of Proctors, of Judges, of Artificers, of Apothecaries, of Physicians, and of Lawyers . . 7

CHAPTER V

How Guzman de Alfarache lighted on a Cookes service, and with faire Sentences, and good Lessons, sheweth, what he should be that serveth. He blameth gaming, and Gamesters. He declareth a pretty theft performed by him; he relateth the Vices of *Despensero's*, Cookes, Butlers, and other the like Officers. Of Lords, abused by their servants. Of Kings, and their miserable condition. Of the vanity of Inferiours, contesting with their Superiours. He condemneth those Masters, that ill intreate their servants: And how they ought to carry themselves towards them . 20

CHAPTER VI

Guzman de Alfarache prosecutes that which past betwixt him and his Master, till being dismist, he departed from him: And takes occasion here-upon, to condemne Idlenesse and evill Company, and those inveterated vices in rich men. Hee recounteth the spoyles, and Trophees of Cookes; and tels a merry Story, that past between himselfe, and the Cookes wife, his Mistresse 46

131481

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER VII

PAGE

How Guzman de Alfarache being put from the Cooke his Master, turnes Picaro, and proves a notable cunning Rogue. How he having a great desire to see Italy, occasion was offered unto him to effect his purpose, by the helpe of a theft done upon a Grocer, and how he went sheere away with it, and left Madrid 61

CHAPTER VIII

How Guzman de Alfarache, cloathing himselfe like a Gallant in Toledo, makes love to certain Gentlewomen : He telleth how things past with them, and how there, and in Malagon they scorned him ; He discourseth of youthfull jollity, and of the craft and subtilty of your Spanish women ; which may serve for an Instruction, and warning to all yong men 78

CHAPTER IX

How Guzman de Alfarache lists himselfe for a Souldier. He telleth, whence that ill phrase grew : *En Malagon, en cada casa un ladron ; y en lo del Alcalde, hijo y padre* : In Malagon, every house a Thiefe ; and in that of the Alcalde two : The father and the sonne. How in a short time, through ill government, all Guzmans money is gone ; How to his griefe he is forced to serve a Captaine. Some lessons are given to young men. To these are added the faults of bad Ministers in matters of war-fare 98

CHAPTER X

Guzman de Alfarache declareth the mis-fortunes, and the wants of one that is decayed in his fortunes : And how he followed a Captaine, till he came into Italy ; Exercising himselfe in all kinde of thefts great and small, for the reliefe and helpe of his Master 112

DE ALFARACHE

A TABLE OF THE CHAPTERS AND MATTER CONTAINED IN THE THIRD BOOKE

CHAPTER I

PAGE

Guzman discourseth of povertie, and of the wrongs and outrages, which a poore man indureth ; As also of Riches, and of the honours that are done unto the Rich : As likewise of the naughtinesse of this present world : And how, not finding his Kindred, which he sought for in Genoa, he went to Rome ; and of a jest that was put upon him, before he left that Citie 127

CHAPTER II

Guzman discourseth of the unhappinesse, greatnesse, and commendation of Necessitie and Want ; And how after he was gone from Genoa, he fel abegging. And how, keeping company with other poore beggers, he was instructed by them, of their Statutes, and Lawes 139

CHAPTER III

How Guzman de Alfarache was not only reprehended by a learned Rogue, and Doctor in his facultie ; but likewise how he learned of him some new Orders and Capitulations, concerning this his roguish kinde of life, and that which hapned unto him in this his upright course ; And of many Precepts and Lessons, delivered unto him upon this point by a Cordovese, an old cunning Crosse-biter . . . 155

CHAPTER IV

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth of the Charitie that wee are to use towards our neighbour ; He recounteth what befell him with a Gentleman : And of the free life, and great libertie which a Begger injoyes 167

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER V

PAGE

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth of the qualitie of mens Consciences, and recounteth what hapned in his time to a notable Rogue, and famous begger in Florence, who at his death made the great Duke his heire. He treats of the ambitious man ; And delivers in the end, how he was thrust out of Gaeta for his counterfetting 178

CHAPTER VI

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth of Almes : And being returned to Rome, hee fals afresh to his old Trade of begging. Hee feignes himselfe to have a sore legge. A Cardinall taking compassion of him, takes order, to have him cured in his own house, and to be laid in his owne bed. He discovers the knavery of Surgeons, having a bad conscience : And how being cured, he becomes the Cardinals Page 192

CHAPTER VII

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth, how all things have had their time of Empire. He delivereth strange things, touching Truth and Lying. As beeing Page to the Cardinall ; he declareth the Vertues, and the Vices, wherein your Pages exercise themselves. He relateth a pleasant Story of his stealing of some Conserves, and how hee was punished for it 206

CHAPTER VIII

Guzman de Alfarache revenges a tricke which the Secretarie had put upon the Chamberlaine, whom he then attended. He tels a tale of Shame and feare ; What it is, and how painted forth. He is received againe into the Cardinals service. And how finely he coozened him of a Barrell of Conserves 228

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER IX

PAGE

Guzman de Alfarache treats of Charitie : Discourseth of Masters, kind, and unkinde : Telleth of another theft of Conserves. His exercises, and distastes being a Page. He recounteth the tricks he used at Primera. That it is good to know play ; but better not to use any gaming at all. And how for playing hee was put out of the Cardinals service. And how proud ignorance is the cause of all evill . . . 243

CHAPTER X

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth of ill company ; of Hospitality ; of Patience ; and how being put out of the Cardinals house, he placed himselfe with the Embassador of France, where he plaid some Knavish prankes. He relates a Story, which he heard from a Gentleman of Naples. And ending with that, he gives an end to the first part of his life . 258

THE SECOND PART

THE FIRST BOOKE

CHAPTER I

PAGE

Guzman de Alfarache excuseth the processe of his discourse, craveth attention, gives notice of his intent; sheweth that Lying of all other things is the worst. He treats of the ill government of great men; Of Courtiers, and their vices: Of the Spaniards love to Radishes. Of the order and end of this Worke 25

CHAPTER II

Guzman tells what place he served in, in the house of his Lord Embassador: And that Fooles and Jesters, are both fit and profitable for Princes: falling into a description of their conditions and qualities 41

CHAPTER III

Guzman recounteth that which hapned unto him with a Captaine and a Doctor at a banquet, which the Embassadour his Lord made 66

CHAPTER IV

The Doctor finding himselfe aggrieved, that Guzmanillo had wronged him in the presence of so many Gentle-men, would be revenged of him. The Spanish Embassador takes up the quarrell: The French causing another of the guests, that was there at table, to relate an accident that befell the Constable of Castile, Don Alvaro de Luna 89

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER V

PAGE

A Romane Matron, not knowing how to free her-selfe (without suffering in her honour) from the perswasions of Guzman, who sollicitied her in his Lords behalfe the French Embassador, put a jest upon him, which was the occasion of a second disgrace that afterwards befell him . . . 104

CHAPTER VI

Guzman de Alfarache recounteth, how in the house, whereinto he had withdrawne him-selfe, to make him-selfe cleane, another disgrace befell him, and many other misfortunes. And that which passed afterwards, betweene him and his Lord the Embassadour, with whom he discoursed of politike and grave matters 120

CHAPTER VII

The jest being publikely knowne through Rome, which befell Guzman, together with the ill successe that he had with the Boore; for very shame he departs from thence, and goes for Florence. In which journey, a theefe enters into friendship with him, that he might the better under that colour, rob him of all that he had 136

CHAPTER VIII

Guzman de Alfarache discourses of Deceit. He departs from Rome. He desires to see Siena, where certaine theeves meet with his trunks, which he had sent away before, and rob him of all that he had 152

CHAPTER IX

Guzman de Alfarache, not recovering his lost goods, shrewdly complaines of the small punishment that is laid upon theeves. Wherein he delivereth many things worthy the noting 167

DE ALFARACHE

THE SECOND BOOKE

CHAPTER I

PAGE

Guzman de Alfarache, leaves Siena, and goes for Florence. He meets with Sayavedra, whom he takes into his service. And before he comes to Florence, he recounts unto him on the way, many admirable things concerning that Citie. And when he was arrived there, he shewes him all, that was worth the seeing 178

CHAPTER II

Guzman de Alfarache goes to Bologna in pursuit of Alexandro, who had stolen his trunkes from him; Whither, when he was come, going about to imprison Alexandro, himselfe was clapt up 203

CHAPTER III

Guzman de Alfarache, discourseth on the injustice, which some Judges doe, blinded by gaine, or by passion . . . 228

CHAPTER IV

Guzman de Alfarache, being freed out of prison, falls to gaming, gets money; Whereupon, he resolves with himself to goe to Milan 243

CHAPTER V

Guzman de Alfarache travelling towards Milan, Sayavedra upon the way, recounts his owne life unto him 256

GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VI

PAGE

Sayavedra meets in Milan with a friend of his that serv'd a Merchant; Guzman de Alfarache layes a witty plot how to rob him 286

CHAPTER VII

The robbing of the Merchant of Milan, as Guzman de Alfarache could have wisht it. Aguilera shares so much with him, as of right belonged unto him: And he and his servant Sayavedra goe for Genoa 309

CHAPTER VIII

Guzman de Alfarache comes to Genoa, where being knowne by his kindred, he is feasted by them. He perswades every one to live vertuously; And showes the hurt, which Murmurers, Hypocrites, and false Witnesses, bring to mens soules, honours, and riches: He delivereth the great profit, we shall gaine, by avoiding such venemous Basiliskes. And concludes with telling us, who are true theeves indeed . . 330

CHAPTER IX

PAGE

Guzman de Alfarache robs his Uncle and Kinsmen in Genoa, and imbarkes him-selfe in the Gallies that were to goe for Spaine 5

CHAPTER X

Guzman sayling toward Spaine, Sayavedra by reason of a great storme, growes Sea-sicke. He falls into a Calenture, or burning fever. He waxes light-headed, and loseth his wits. He cryes out, that he is Guzman, and growing mad, throwes him-selfe into the Sea, where he is drowned 34

THE THIRD BOOKE

CHAPTER I

Guzman de Alfarache, having taken his leave of Captaine Favelo, telling him that he was to goe for Sevill, makes for Saragoça, where he peruses the statutes of Gotam Colledge, otherwise called, The Hospitall of Fooles 71

CHAPTER II

Guzman de Alfarache goes from Saragoça, and comes to Madrid; where he turnes Merchant, and is marryed. Hee breaks his credit, and turnes bankrupt. He treats of womens subtle tricks. And of the inconvenience of counter-writings; and of their remedie 97

131183

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER III

PAGE

Guzman de Alfarache prosecutes the successe of his mariage, till such time as his wyfe dyed. And how her dowry returned backe to his father in Law. He discourseth of bad wives, and the hurt they dóe their husbands . . 139

CHAPTER IV

Guzman being now a widower, resolves to goe to Alcala de Henarez, to studie the Arts, and Divinitie, that he might make him-selfe fit to say Masse. And having fulfilled all his tearmes, and duely heard his Lectures, he leaves all and marries againe 179

CHAPTER V

Guzman de Alfarache leaves off his studies; he goes to live at Madrid; he carries his wife with him; from whence they were both banished 221

CHAPTER VI

Guzman and his wife come to Sevill: He finds his mother to be now somewhat ancient, and well strucken in yeeres. His wife gets her away to Italy with one of the Captaines of the Gallies, leaving him alone to him-selfe, and exceeding poore: whereupon he falls to his old trade of theeving . . . 257

CHAPTER VII

Guzman being preferred to a Gentle-womans service, robs her: Upon this theft he is apprehended, and condemned to the Gallies during life 281

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VIII

PAGE

Guzman de Alfarache is taken out of the prison of Sevill, to be carryed to the Port, to be put into the Gallies. He recounteth that which befell him on the way; as likewise in the Gallies 303

CHAPTER IX

Guzman de Alfarache prosecutes that which hapned unto him in the Galleys: And by what meanes he came to be freed from thence 332

THE ROGUE
OR THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE

The First Booke

CHAPTER I

Guzman de Alfarache recounteth who was his Father, and thereupon takes occasion learnedly to discourse of Detractors, and evill speakers, of unconscionable Merchants, of Judges, of bad Clerkes, of Lites, and Litigants, and that too much neatnes in cloaths, and nice dressing, is ill in a Woman, and worse in a Man

URIOUS Reader, The desire which I had to recount my life unto thee, made me make great haste to ingulfe my selfe therein, without first preparing some things fit to be related, which (serving as an induction and entrance to the matter) had beene very needfull for the better informing of thy understanding: (for beeing essentiall to this Discourse) they would likewise have given thee no small content. But through too much haste, I forgat to shut the doore after mee, and so unawares have left a way of entrance open, for every wrangling Sophister, and smatterer in Logicke, to taxe me

of ignorance, and to lay it as a fault to my charge, that I did not proceed *a definitione ad definitum*, from the definition to the thing defined. And that before I tooke upon me to make Relation thereof, I had not first told thee, who, and what were my Parents, together with their obscure and confused birth; which so much for so much, or as farre as concerneth them in their particular, according to their modell, and proportion in their kind and degree, would without doubt (had I but undertaken to describe it unto you) beene farre more pleasing, and more acceptable unto you, then this mine owne life. I will rather preferre that, which is of most importance, leaving that which is now lawfull for me, to others to undergoe that taske, and to play out that tricke at Cards for me. And albeit it becommeth no man, to participate of that propertie of the Hyena, to make a living by ripping up the lives of the dead, as shee doth maintaine her selfe by feeding on those carkases which she teares out of graves; I assure my selfe, considering the Censurers that are now adayes to bee found in the world, they will not want those that will write their Chronicle. Nor is it a thing to be wondred at, since that this slight shadowing of my Fathers life, seemeth to inferre, that I pare them too neere the quicke, or at least, that there went but one paire of sheeres, betweene their lives, and mine. And I doubt not, but thou wilt out with thy purse, and give mee a thousand rash Attributes; the least whereof shall be either Foole, or Blockhead, or Coxcombe, or the like. For if I cannot conceale mine owne faults, you will say, I will make no bones to bewray others. Thy reason is good, and I allow of it, but I would have thee withall to consider, That albeit thou wilt count me but a lewd Companion, yet I would not willingly seeme so to be, though it bee farre worse to be so, and to make boast of wickednesse.[1] And that by contradicting so just a Precept, as is that fifth Commandement, touching the honour and reverence which I owe them, I should goe about to cover mine owne weakenesses, by laying open those of my

The Hyena and her qualities

[1] It is worse to be bad, then to be thought so.

Ancestors. For, it is the birth of vile and base thoughts,[1] to seeke to grace themselves by disgracing others, which is now an ordinary practice, which I condemne for that solemn foolery of sixe Priests Copes, or double-Feasts ;[2] that is to say, for a notorious, and high point of folly. And a greater there cannot be, because therein I discover my bend, and shew which way the dint of my edge lyeth. And my errour is not salved, by wounding the good name of my neighbour, or by traducing my Parent. Besides, the Detractor never heareth well, but is evill spoken of by all men. But to me, it doth not succeed so ; for in the setting forth and adorning of this History, (it being necessary that my selfe must needs doe it) no man but will say, Gods blessing be with him, that so truely resembles his Parents, casting upon me these their good wishes by the way. Againe, his life was so well knowne, and all that he did, so manifest to all the world, that to pretend the denying of it, were meere folly, and an open Arrest,[3] and free liberty given for the occasioning of new matter of murmuration to be brought against him. And therefore I am perswaded, that I doe them (if I may use that phrase of speech) a notorious courtesie, in expressing the pure, and true naked Text, wherewith I will give the lye to those glosses, which have beene made thereupon. For as often as any one mentioneth any thing of him, or recounts ought of his, he addes thereunto, and multiplyes it with .the Cyphers, which are set to his owne Spectacles, or as it

CHAPTER I

[1] What minde is that, which is base.

[2] In your great solemne feasts in Spaine, they use to have seven, and in some places eight Prebends with Scepters of silver in their hands, and Copes of cloth of gold on their backs, when they assist at divine service, and singing of Anthemes. From which metaphor this phrase is borrowed.

[3] *Arresto*, is a French word : but because it is Spaniolized, I say, *Arresto*, is as much as a Decree, or Sentence confirmed in the Supreme Counsell, from which there is no Appeale. So sayes Casaneus in his *Catol. gloriæ Mundi. Arrestum firmum, et fixum, à quo nemo provocare possit.* And it is a meere Greeke Word ἀρεστόν, *placitum, gratum, æquum.* That it is pronounced with a double *rr* : the reason is, for that the French is a Virile tongue. *Resto consignado*, is the set rest agreed upon at Primero, which they may not passe. But *jugar á resto abierto, vale, sin tassa*, without limitation ; when a man may set what he will : The Reader may take which sense he best liketh.

pleaseth him; sometimes making more, but never lesse, as the vaine comes upon him, and as the toy for the present takes him in the head. For there is a certaine kinde of men, that when matter is offered suting to their purpose, for to make their tale square, and to hang well together, will lessen a Pyramis of Egypt, and make of a Gnat an Elephant, gather evidence from surmises; sight from hearing; and knowledge from opinion, onely for to flourish their eloquence, and to credit their discretion. Thus it usually falleth out, and this was to bee seene in a Gentleman a Stranger, whom my selfe knew in Madrid: Who beeing much affectioned to Spanish Horses, and desirous to carry home with him to his owne Country a true and faithfull Counterfeit, as wel for his own entertainment and delight, as that he might shew the same to his friends. And for that he was of a Nation farre remote, and it being neither permitted, nor possible for him, to carrie them home alive, having in his owne stable two of the fairest of stature, and feature, that were to be found in all the Court: he intreated two famous Painters, that each of them would draw one, as they should agree upon their choise; promising (besides their due) a certain reward to him that should surpasse the other in workemanship. The one painted a py'd Horse, with that perfection, that hee onely failed in that, which was impossible for him to doe, to wit, in giving him life, and soule. For, in the rest (deceiving the sight, because it did little, or nothing at all differ from the naturall) it would on the sudden have blinded any carelesse eye, and at the first blush amazed his understanding, for that there was no difference betweene a living Horse and it. With this onely did he fill and finish his Table, giving in the rest Lights and shadowes, as might sute best with each severall part.

The other drew a Dapple-gray (that heaven-resembling colour) and though his worke were very good, yet it came very short of that before delivered; yet in one thing, he went much beyond him, wherein he shew'd himselfe his crafts-master. And it was this: when he had painted

his Horse, in those other parts of the Table, where he found blankes, or void places, in those that were uppermost, hee drew admirable Land-skips, and other representations of things afarre off, as clouds in the ayre, streakes in the sky, and other fiery colours of the heavens, occasioned by the reflexe of the Sun-setting beames, ruinated buildings, and other diversities of rare Architecture. And in the lower part, neerest to the ground, he had graced his worke with many fine Groves, dainty Flowers, greene Meddowes, and craggy Rocks. And on the one side of the Table, that made fittest for that purpose, hee had fastned all the furniture, belonging to his Horse, to the body of a Tree, at the foote whereof stood a Saddle, Gennet-fashion, so costly, and so curiously wrought, and with that excellency of Art, as it cannot be in-deered too much, or expressed to that life it deserveth.

When this Gentleman saw his Tables, and liking them wonderfull well (as he had reason so to doe) he first paid him, with whom he had first agreed, and not sticking upon that which he demanded for it, giving in reward to that ingenious Painter a rich ring from off his finger, he sent him away well satisfied, having paid him over and above the price for which they bargained.

Now the other grew so fondly conceited, and so foolishly in love with his own worke, and was so vainely transported with hope of a liberall and franke paiment, that he required such an excessive price, as was beyond all reason.

The Gentleman, being strooken blanke, and put to a non-plus, that hee should aske him so much, and that he had scarce wherewithall to pay him, said unto him; Tell me (my friend) why shouldest thou aske me so much; or why doest thou not consider with thy selfe what this other piece cost me, whereunto thine cannot be compared, nor comes nothing neere it? For the Horse (indeede Sir, answered the Painter) your Worship speakes reason. But the very trees, and ruines, that are in mine, are worth as much as all the others worke. To whom the Gentleman replide; It is neither fitting, nor necessary for me to carry

home with me such a volume of trees ; such a bulke of ill combined buildings ; and such a deale of lumber and luggage as is heere, when we have many faire and goodly houses in our owne Country. Besides, I have not that affection to these toyes, as I have unto Horses. And that which I cannot otherwise enjoy but by picture, that alone I desire to carry along with me.

The Painter againe made answere ; In so great and large a piece, a sole single Horse will not shew so well. And if for nothing else, yet at least for the delight of the Eye, and the gracing of the Square, it not only importeth a Painter, but even enforceth him sometimes to compose a Picture of other different things, besides the Master piece, that may qualifie it the better, and give it the more delicate lustre. So that, this seeming fairer to the sight, and presenting it selfe with that pleasure as it doth, you will grant me this, I hope ; That it is very fit, that a horse should have his bridle, and his saddle, together with his trappings, and all other things belonging to a perfect and complete furniture ; especially being so curiously wrought, with so cleane a hand, and such exquisite Art, that if you would give me other such as these, though they were all of Gold, I would not take them in exchange for those that you see heere drawne. The Gentleman having now found a string whereupon to play, and caught hold of that, which he most desired, which was the Picture, that he had already paid for (the other esteeming impertinent, though in it's kinde very good, and much to be commended) and not finding himselfe so over-stored with money, as to part with so much as hee required, discreetly said unto him ; I onely bargain'd with you for the Horse, and (for that the worke is good, and well wrought) I will (if you be pleased to sell it mee) pay you accordingly. As for the furniture, you may keepe it to your selfe, or bestow it upon those, that have a minde to it, for I have no need of it. The Painter went away discontented, and unpaid, by reason of the excessive rate hee had set upon his Picture ; and for that out of his owne choise, he had wilfully overlashed his discretion,

He that does that which he ought not, that haps to him, which hee thinkes not

thinking with himselfe, that because his Worke was more, he should be the more rewarded. CHAPTER I

The effects of Detractors

It hath been (and still is) a common and generall custome amongst men, when you intreat them to recite what they know in this, or that other thing; or to report what they have heard, or seene; or to tell you the truth and substance of a businesse, to prepare colours to slicke it over, and to paint and disguize it, that you can no more know the face of it, then the countenance of an old Hagge, that is plaisterd over with painting. Every one gives his shadowings after his owne fancie: one while amplifying; another while moving passion; sometimes disannulling, and sometimes diverting, as the humour takes him. Now he stretcheth it with his teeth, that he may make the Leather retch: By and by againe, he fyleth and polisheth it, till he have made it fit for his purpose, that he may cut and grave therein what he list; putting it an Ace, or a Sice higher, if it please him so to do. Making, like another Count Palatine,[1] a Foole, a Wise man; a filthy-fac'd fellow, a beautifull person; and a Cowardly Villaine, a valiant Hercules. They set the Caract and worth upon things, as they please to value them; not remembring, that they may paint a Horse well inough, though they leave him bare-ridged, and without his furniture; and report a thing true inough to the life, without commenting upon it. Just so hath it fared with my father, of whom to speake the truth, things are so falsified, that nothing is now said of him, which was so indeed. They have (with Celestine) of *tres* made *treze*, of three, thirteene; and of thirteene, three hundred. For every one thinkes it fit to adde somewhat: so that Molehils are growne to be Mountaines, and such a confused Chaos, and Rapsodie of things hudeled one on the necke of another, that there is no bottome of them, nor can there any ground for them be found; every one incouraging himselfe by the additions

[1] The Count Palatines, anciently in Rome, had power and priviledge to legitimate Bastards, to give degrees, and Titles of honour in learning, or otherwise. *Vide* Covarruvias in *Vocabulo Palatino.*

of others, (one growing still upon another). And that wrong which every particular person in himselfe was not able to doe, by a generall helping hand, and common consent of all men, is become more grievous. There are some deceitful and false tongues, which, like sharpe-headed Arrowes, and hot burning Coales, have gone about to wound the honour, and consume to ashes the good name of my Parents; whence both to them, and my selfe, divers notable affronts doe dayly redound. It is to bee imagined, and you may very well beleeve mee, that if it lay in our hands, to make our owne choise (but beggers must be no choosers) out of that masse of Adam, and first lumpe of flesh, I would have scrambled hard for one of the best morsels, though I had been forced to goe to Cuffes for it: But there is no helpe for that; Every man must bee content with that which fals to his lot: we may not be our owne Carvers. But since he that hath shared these things amongst us, keepes them in his owne hands, and knowes when and where to bestow them, and what is fittest for every man, let us praise his holy Name. For though I had (God be thanked for it) my haltings,[1] though I had naturall defects, though I were not without my spots and blemishes, yet was I so favoured by Fortune, that I was nobly borne; and that they lighted upon a man innobled in his blood, both by father and mother. *La sangue se hereda, y el vicio se apega*, Blood is by inheritance, but Vice is adventitious, yet cleaveth closer then the other, when it once takes hold of us. He that shall be, what he ought to be, shall be accordingly rewarded, but shall not purge away the faults of his Parents.

Guzmans father

First of all then, I shall give you to understand, That my father, and his Kindred, were a certaine kind of upstart Gentlemen, that came out of the Levant,[2] who having no certaine abiding, came at length to reside, and settle in

[1] Alluding to Jacobs halting.

[2] *Levantisco*, which is the word in the Originall, is taken for an Upstart, a Jew, or an Easterling, come from the Levant. And, *Estar de Levante*, is one that hath no set dwelling. Covarruvias, vocab. *Levante*.

Genoa ; where they were ingrafted into the Nobilitie, and had many large and goodly Priviledges granted unto them. And although they were not Naturals of that place, yet we shall here put them under that stile, as if they had beene borne there. His Trafficke and income, whereby he maintained himselfe, was according to the common custome of that Country ; the which, for our sinnes sake, is growne now into ours ; which infection of late, hath spred it selfe thorow the world, to wit, Usury, Money-bankes, and profitable Exchange of gold and silver. Even for this, was he persecuted and reviled, defaming him with that foule name Usurer. Many times hee himselfe heard that reprochfull word as hee past along the streets, it could not escape his eare, yet he was of that good nature, and gentle condition, that hee tooke no notice of it, but slightly past it over. For which, they had no reason so to do, since that Use-money (the more the pittie) hath beene, and is still permitted thorowout the world. I will not commend it, and (God forbid) that I should defend it to be lawfull (which some do allow) to take money for money, upon pawnes of gold or silver for some limited time or to take (the day being broken) the Forfeiture [1] thereof, nor other close trickes and conveyances : nor that which they call by the name of *Cambio seco*,[2] a dry kind of Exchange. Nor that money should runne from Faire to Faire, where there was never any intercourse of men, or trading : for those doe but beare about them the voice of Jacob, and the hands of Esau ; kind shewes, and rough deeds. And at the shooting of Jonathans flight, or some warning-piece or other that is given, the deceit is discovered. But such things as these, (though they laid them to his charge) I my selfe saw them not, and therefore cannot give you any inckling of them.

CHAPTER I

Against Usurers, and Exchangers of Moneys

[1] The Spanish word, is *Rematado*. Now *Remato*, or *Trance*, is the last bidding for a thing at a Port-sale, which when we are come unto, *transit res à venditore ad emptorem*.

[2] *Cambio seco*, is a mystery among Merchants, to assigne over Bils of Exchange from Antwerpe to Bezonzon in Lorrain, where there is no Fayre or trade of Merchandize : but Bils are thence remitted to Genoa, onely to gaine time, and day of payment.

But that which is absolutely understood to be *Cambio*, an Exchange or turning and winding of moneys, is a thing indifferent, which may (as it is used) be either good or ill. And for such (though perhaps unjustly) I doe not wonder, that (being it ought to be esteemed ill) it is not reproved. But that which is evidently good, being without any shadow of evill, that men should murmure at this, and speake against it ; this is that, which doth astonish me, and strikes me into a strange amazement. To say, when I see a religious person enter at midnight thorow a window, into a suspected place, with his sword in his hand, and his buckler at his girdle, that he is going to minister the Sacrament, were a meere madnesse : for neither God will have it so, nor doth his Church permit, that I should be such an errant Asse, as to thinke that to be good, which is evidently evill. When a man shall pray, frequent vertuous exercises, heare divine Service, confesse his sinnes, and often communicate ; for men to say, that such a one is an Hypocrite, I can by no meanes indure it : and as there is nothing more scandalous to a good Christian, so is there not any wickednesse like unto it.

Guzmans fathers devotion

My father had a faire large Masse-booke with the full number of Davids 150. Psalmes, wherein he had beene taught to pray, (I meane in the Spanish tongue) and a great paire of Beades, whereof every one of them was as bigge as an hazell nut. These my mother gave him, which came to his hands when she died. These he alwaies carried about him, you should never see them out of his hand, every morning he heard his Masse, humbly kneeling with both his knees on the ground, his hands joyning themselves together at his brest, lifting them up towards heaven, on the toppe whereof his Hat hung. Some malicious people (by way of reproch) did not sticke to say, that he did pray in this manner, because he would not heare the Priest, and that he held his Hat so high, because he would not see him. But of this, let them judge, who find themselves free from passion, and let them tell me, whether it be not a perverse and rash censure, proceeding

from a prophane kinde of people, that have no care of their soules, and without any conscience at all. But the very truth is, that the maine cause, and first beginning of their murmuring against him, was : that a Partner of his in Sevill, being broken, and turn'd Bankrupt, and having carried away with him great summes of moneys that were his, he pursued after him, as well to remedy himselfe as well as he could of so great a losse, as also to order and settle some other necessary businesses, which did much concerne him. CHAPTER I

The ship he went in was set upon and taken ; and hee, together with the rest that were in her, taken captives, and carried to Argiers : where, what out of feare, and what out of despaire ; feare, for that hee knew not how or which way to recover his liberty ; and despaire, for that hee never looked to get againe his moneys ; for quietnesse sake, as one that had not the spirit of contradiction, or that was wont to gainesay anything, he renounced his Religion, and turned Turke. There he married a Moore, a woman of perfect beauty, and principall ranke, with whom he had good store of wealth. For in matter of interest, (taking it in the generall, in which tracke I still treade, without prejudice to a great number of noble persons, and grave and principall Gentlemen ; for there are of all sorts in all places) I will onely speake by the way, what I myselfe knew of some of my fathers kindred, during the time, that I traded and conversed with them. They were very solicitous in meddling with other mens houses, and too forgetfull and carelesse of their owne : desirous, that other men should deale plainly and truly with them, whilest from themselves, you should not get so much as one true word. Willing, that others should pay them all that they ought, but of what they ought, to pay nothing at all : to gaine and spend it freely, (light where it would light for them, they cared not who did wring for it) for the pawne was already forfeited, their day was past ; and (as the Proverbe is) *a Roma por todo*, at Rome there is an absolution for all offences. It afterwards so fell out, that my fathers Partner, to secure himselfe from after-claps, and to live

Guzmans father taken prisoner

He turnes Turke. He marries a Moore

Guzmans kindred, what condition they were of

out of danger, laboured to take order with his Creditors, and to compound for his debts, upon faire and reasonable conditions, requiring such rates and dayes of payment, as that he might both be able to live well himselfe, as also to pay his debts.

Guzmans father flies from Argiers. And in what manner

When this came to my fathers eare, that had certaine and assured notice of it, he had a great desire to come away with all the secrecie and diligence he could possibly devise. And the better to deceive the Moore his wife, hee told her, that he purposed to employ himselfe in matters of Merchandize, which would turne much to their profit. He made money of most that he had, and putting it into Chekines, (a certaine coyne, that is made of fine Barbary gold) taking with him all the Jewels he could finger, and so leaving her alone, and very poore, he came his way with all the speed he could. And not making any one acquainted therewith, neither friend nor foe, reducing himselfe to the Faith of Jesus Christ, repenting himselfe of his fault, with teares in his eyes, being his owne Promoter, he accused himselfe, craving pardon for his offence, and that some favourable penance might bee inflicted upon him. Which being injoyned him, and fully performed by him, he afterwards went about to recover his debts. And this was the chief cause, why they would never afterwards trust him, nor have any charitable opinion of him, were his workes never so good, never so pious. And if you aske other reason, you were as good hold your tongue, you shall get none other from them, but impertinencies, and answers nothing to the purpose; such as they have often made me; Once a knave, and ever a knave: *Nam qui semel est, semper præsumitur esse malus*: For he that hath once beene naught, is presumed to bee so still; and that he will never get out of the way of wickednes, that hath once made it his common walke. Not considering, that no man knowes, how God toucheth a mans heart, and cals him home unto him, putting him againe in the right path, and whether (agreeable to that authenticke Law) hee had reformed his manners or no.

Once a Knave, and ever a Knave

DE ALFARACHE

Here you see, without leaning this or that way, or without any the least inclining to any side, my fathers Mere-stones; the very limits, and bounds, that do define and determine him; On the one side, stand (as supporters) his couzening Kindred, and bankrupt Copartner; on the other side, his owne coozening of the Moore. And if it be objected, that he himselfe brake twice or thrice, having other mens goods in his hands; if they likewise brake with him, it is no wonder, that he should not hold. For men are not made of steele, nor are they bound to hold like nayles: for they, even though of yron, doe sometimes faile and burst in sunder, and grow weake and loose. These are your Merchants stratagems, their fine shifts of wit, which (upon occasion) they practise when and where they please; especially in Spaine, where they have found the tricke of getting. Nor is it a thing so much to be wondred at; there lies their skill, let it thrive as it will: we leave that to themselves, and their Confessors, to whom, I doubt not, but they give a large account of their doings. Onely God is the Judge of these things; and let him that absolves them, looke what he does: I see many, that make a common practice of it, but not a man of them, that hangs for it. If it were a delict, an evill thing, or a theft, it is a cleare case that it should be punished, since for lesse then sixe Royals, we see an hundred poore soules whipt about the towne, and sent to the Gallies.

The cunning trickes of certaine Merchants in their Trading

That I might not vent my selfe in my fathers prejudice, I could be content to hold my peace, and to silence that I thinke: but if I will follow the Philosophers counsell, I must then say, *Amicus Plato, sed magis amicus Veritas:* Plato is my friend, but the Truth more. I love my father well, but I must preserve the truth above all things. Conforming my selfe therefore to that Philosophicall saying, let the world hold me excused, if I canonize this Case for one of the greatest villanies and rogueries, that was ever put in use, and such as deserveth exemplarie punishment, and that in no meane degree. But perhaps some one Merchant or other, that is his crafts-master in this kind of

trade, will tell me to my face, Hold your hand, Sir, you are a little too forward, in what Consistory (I pray) of the Pope and his Cardinals, hath Bankrupture beene determined, and condemned for a sinne? Who will put an Ideot, a Galley-slave, a Rogue, to establish Lawes, or to censure those Trades wherein he hath no skill? But I now see how I have erred, in speaking against that, which I cannot helpe, and whereof there is so little amendment to bee expected. For I would willingly indure thy taunts, and beare thy reproches, so that there might either punishment or remedy be given to this honourable kind of theeving, though my owne father should stretch for it, and give the Gallowes it's first handsell. Let it runne on as it doth; for the reformation of such important things as these, and other of greater moment, grow daily worse and worse; their Cloake is falne (as it is in the Proverbe) from off their shoulders.[1] But what doth this belong unto me? for me to speake against it, is to cry out upon the Woolfe, where none will come to helpe mee, to stoppe the Sunne in its course, and to preach in the wildernesse.

How a Judge and a Scrivano may be bad

But I returne to that, which they layd most to his charge; which was, That he was apprehended and imprisoned, for that which thou thy selfe sayest, or that hath beene dictated unto thee by others. But for that he was rich and wealthy, and (as some say) for that he had an Alcalde to his father, and a Notarie[2] to his Gossip, he by that meanes came off, and was freed. For there were sufficient proofes and evidences brought against him; and such suspicions to induce beliefe, as might have serv'd the turn to have turn'd him over. But one puls me by the sleeve, and tels me in mine eare, Do you heare, Sir? Suspicion is no proofe, and naked signes, are not of themselves capable of chastisement. I did looke for this conclusion from thee;

[1] *Andar de capa cayda.* To go with their Cloake fallen, is a phrase that is used of those, who go loosing both their substance, and their credit.

[2] The Spanish word is *Escrivano*, i.e. *Scriba publicus, servus publicus, qui acta in Iudicio, vel extra Iudicium, notis vel literis excipit. Ut constat Lege, non unum.* 18. § *de adoptionibus.* Besides that which is alledged by Don Iuan Vela in his Tract *de pœnis delictorum*, cap. 24, *de Notario falsum committente.*

assuring my selfe beforehand, that thou wouldst take them all to be old Wives tales, when they meet at the Bake-house to set their bread into the Oven; that they are all lies, and false testimonies, maliciously urged against him. And seeing I have avow'd, and made good one part unto thee, thou wilt not deny, but that I have reason to defend the other, and to give thee my reasons for it. I say then, that to have Scrivanos, or Notaries, (I may so terme them) to be a mans Gossips, is a bare title, that onely suites it selfe according to the Money, wherewith every one wageth Law. For in blearing the sight, and picking a mans purse before his face, some have the soule and conscience of your Gypsies, and will make of Justice a matter of juggling, with a hye passe, and a repasse, come off Jacke with a whim-wham; ordering things so, as they shall thinke good, and may make most for their profit: so that it shall neither be in the power of the Plaintiffe or Defendant to impeach it, nor in the Advocate to dispute the right, nor in the Judge to sentence it. CHAPTER I

And lest that I should chance to forget it, I pray, hearken by the way to that, which in the Church of S. Gil, in Madrid, was delivered to the Lords of the supreme Councell, by a learned Preacher, upon a certaine Friday in Lent. By way of discourse, he ranne thorow all the ministers of Justice, till he came to the Scrivano, or Notary, or Register, (or what in that kind you please to call him) which he purposely forbore to speake of, as reserving that dish for the last service, and then with these words, he set it before them: Here my Cart stickes fast, and is so clogg'd with durt and myre, and so surrounded and wedged in, as it were, on every side with filth and mucke, that I know not in the world how to get it out, unlesse the Angell of God returne once againe to the fish-poole. I confesse (my Lords) that for these thirty yeeres and upwards, I have seene and heard the Confessions of many sinners; who having falne into one sinne, have falne againe many times into the same. And yet all these, (by Gods helpe, and his goodnesse and mercy towards them) have reformed both their lives and

A discourse of a worthy Preacher against Notaries

consciences, and become good livers, and have all put on amendment. The Wencher, that hath lyen at racke and manger, and stood a continuall Livery, time, and a filthy Queane hath tam'd him. The Gamester, a Master of a Dicing-house, or Keeper of an Ordinary, makes him in the end to see his error; who like a Horse-leech, goes from one to another, sucking by little and little their blood from them. To day thou winnest, to morrow thou losest; the money runnes round, and still it remaineth, but they that play, I am sure, remaine without it. The famousest Thiefe, feare and shame reformeth. The rash Railer, the Palsie,[1] from which few escape. The proud man, his owne miserie doth dis-deceive him, being conscious to himself, that he is but durt. The Lyer, the ill language, and the affrents, which are daily cast in his teeth, put a bridle upon his tongue. The unadvised Blasphemer, the continuall reprehensions of his friends and kinsfolkes correct and amend him. All these, either early or late, at one time or another, reape some fruit, and cast off (like the Snake) their old skinne, although perhaps (within) they wring hard for it.

In all, and every one of these, have I found some markes and signes of their salvation: Onely in the Scrivener, I misse in my account, and am quite out of my reckoning, nor doe I finde in him any amendment at all; but is just the same man to day, that he was yesterday; this yeere, as he was thirty yeeres since; for he is still one and the self-same man: Nor do I knowe to whom, or how he confesseth, nor who absolveth him: (I speake of him, who doth not faithfully exercise his Office) for they informe, and write downe that, which they thinke fit, and for two ducats, or to pleasure a friend, or to doe a shee-creature a courtesie (for your mantles, are great meddlers, and your women, not the worst sollicitours:) they take away this mans life, that mans honour, and a third mans wealth; setting the gate wide open to an infinit number of sinnes, in

[1] The Spanish word *perlesia*, signifieth also Prelacie. As if the way to get preferment were to rayle upon Governement.

their insatiable covetousnesse, in their canine and dogge-like appetite, through the heate of that infernall fire that is in their soule: which makes them to swallow downe without chewing, bee it good or bad; right or wrong, another mans goods. And because ever and anon, upon every slight occasion, they take that which is not their due; and for that the money that is put into the palmes of their hands, their fist beeing well greased therewith, is in an instant converted into flesh and bloud, and incorporated into one and the selfe-same substance with themselves; they have no more power to cast it off from them, then they have to shake off the World, or the divell, who sit so close unto them, that they can hardly be removed. So that it seemeth unto me, that when any such is saved, (for it cannot be, that all should bee such, as I have heere taken upon me to treat of) at his entrance into glory, the Angels fulfilled with joy, will cry out one to another, *Lætamini in Domino*, A Scrivener come into Heaven, new fruit, new. For Scriveners are not *pomi Paradisi*, such fruit growes not there: And with this he ended his Sermon. But let it passe and goe for currant, that some good may be wrought upon a Scrivener, and that there may be some hope his soule may bee saved, by changing his former course of life; yet for all this, fall backe, fall edge, goe which way you will to worke with him, he will bee well inough able to answere for himselfe, by laying an excuse upon his faults (for iron also may be guided) and then will he tell you that these are the rates of old, and that they take no more but their wonted fees, that victuals and other things grow still dearer and dearer, and the meanes to maintain them, worse and worse: That the Kings rents and prices are raised, that they had not their Offices for nothing, but paid soundly for them; and therefore must licke himselfe whole as well as he can, saving himselfe harmelesse out of other mens gettings: And that there is no reason but that he should bee well paid for the imployment of his person, and his paines taking. This hath been the course of all ages, and for ought I see, is like still so to continue:

A defence of Scriveners, though a weake one

THE FIRST BOOKE

Howbeit, Aristotle tels us, That the greatest wrong, that can be offered to a Common-wealth, is the sale of Offices.

Aristotles saying

A saying of Cleomenes

And Cleomenes the Spartane, being demanded how a Kingdome might come to be happy, made answere, When a King should not respect his private profit. But for a Judge that comes freely by his place, to whom, they have given the Title of gracious Lord, in hope that he will doe the office of God, which is, to doe Justice, and to shew Mercy, (and therefore are called Gods upon earth) that to such a one it should be imputed, that he sels Justice; omitting to punish the bad, and to reward the good; and that hee will salve and cover a fault in a lewd fellow, or save a notorious offender from the gallowes; I absolutely deny it, and prove this my proposition by plaine and evident Reasons. For who can thinke, that there should be in the world a Judge so ill, so un-orderly, so impudent and so shamelesse (for such a one must he be, that will doe such things) that a mountaine of gold should make his Mace, or rod of justice to bend, and compell him to breake the Law? Howbeit, there are some abroad in the world, who sticke not to say, that this suing for Offices, and seates of Justice, goes by certaine indirect pathes, and by-wayes, unusuall courses out of the common track, and un-accustomed; or (to speake more properly) by false reports and forged Relations, whereof they make benefit, and grow thereby into great Estates. And after that they once grow warme in their places, and see that they are surely setled in them, they then make up their stocke againe, and set up for themselves, and begin to play their prizes, raking and scraping at whatsoever comes within their reach; like unto the Polypus, or Cuttle Fish,[1] that hath many clawes (like so many Wyers) to catch his prey. There is not a pore, or joynt in all his body, but is either a mouth to swallow, or a paw to take hold, if you once come within his clutches. Heere he seazeth on Wheat, there

Judges are Gods

A bad Judge, and his conditions

[1] A fish that hath many feet wherewith to catch his prey. Derived from the Greeke word πολύπος, à πολυς, *multus* & πούς, ποδός, *pes*.

on Barley; heere Wine, there Oyle, besides flitches of Bacon, cloathes both woollen and linnen, silks of all sorts, Jewels, money; from the Hangings in the dining Chamber, to stoope so low as the spice-boxe in the Kitchen; from the Masters-bed, to the Mules Cratch; from the purest wheat in the granarie, to the very straw and chaffe that lyes at the barnes doore, choosing rather to play at small game, then to sit out. From which terrible griping, and violent hold-fast, nothing can un-hitch them but deaths flesh-hooke. For, when the hand takes a bribe, and they once begin to be corrupted, there is no ho with them, they are marred for ever after by an evill use, and never come to be good. And so they receive with open hand all manner of Bribes, as if they were men in pay, and what they wrongfully take, were true wages, and lawfull fees. So, that they observe not Justice, they winke at theeves, because they offer unto them the first fruits and tithes of their thefts: they have gotten the favour of some Courtier, to beare them out in that, which they have bought for their money: whereupon they relying, cast away all feare of wresting and perverting Justice. CHAPTER I

Thus is it, in all your Officers of Justice, as well with your royall Merchant, as your Retayler; your Alcalde, as your Alguazil; your Judge, as your Petty-fogger; with him that selleth in groosse, as him that selleth by retayle; your Justicer is the Merchant; your Petty-fogger, the Pedler. And (for their better thriving in the world) every one hath his *bonus Genius*, or Angell of guard, either bought out right for his money, (or at least so settled upon him, that it can hardly be alienated from him,) for those impertinent necessities of the body; besides that, which God hath given them for those that import the Soule. So that they have two Genij, (as men for the more surety wil have two strings to their Bowe:) The Court Genius, which is the Protector of their bodily goods; and Gods good Angell, that is the Protector of their soules.

So that out of all this, you see something may be gathered, and happely a great part of it too true; yet for all this, we

must not hence presume to conclude of all: But he that shall fall through covetousnesse into the like basenesse, which perhaps may be one of a thousand, and the same some base-born Slave, an ill-bred fellow, or of a vile and abject minde, thou needest not wish him greater harme, or worse misfortune, then hath already lighted upon him; for he carries with him his owne chastisement; He is pointed at (where-ever hee goes) with the finger; he is murmured at by men; he is abhorred of the Angels; and both in publike, and in private, hath every mans mouth against him: yet must we not for their sakes condemne the rest, or thinke all to bee made of the same lumpe. And if some particular person finde himselfe aggrieved, and complaine, that he hath received hard measure, wise men will consider (as a thing to be necessarily presupposed) that suites of Law, being in number so infinit: in nature, so differing; and in their ends so diverse and difficile to be decided, it is not possible that one judgement should content both sides; or one Judge (though never so indifferent) please both parties. There will (while the world stands) be some querrulous men, either with, or without reason, have they cause, or not cause. Therefore, thou must first weigh, and consider well with thy selfe, that these things, (I meane your Law-suites) will require a great deale of care, a great deale of skill, and a great deale of cunning. And if thou be wanting to thy selfe in these thy diligences, and take not the right course, the blame will lye in thy selfe. Nor is it any marvell, *Que pierdas tu derecho, no sabiendo hazer tu hecho*: That for want of good information, thou shouldest lose thy right, and miscarry in thy suite, so that the fault is not so much the Judges, as thine owne. But that the Judge should deny to doe justice, because many times hee does not give sentence on his side, who perswades himselfe that he is in the right, it is because hee failes peradventure in his proofes, or for that his Adversarie made a bad cause good, and the other a good cause bad, by the evill carriage of the businesse. (For much advantage doth consist in the

The punishment that an evill Judge receiveth

What he should doe, that hath a suite in Law

handling of a cause.) Or else through the negligence of the partie; or for that hee wants meanes and money to follow his suite; or for that his opposite is too powerfull for him. And therefore it is not good to taxe the Judges, much lesse those, that are seated in those higher Thrones, and superiour tribunall seates, where there are many good and choise men, even the best that the Kingdome affoordeth. And suppose, some one Judge or other out of passion, would rashly and unadvisedly precipitate himselfe, not caring which end went forward (be it right, or be it wrong,) yet the rest will not doe so, they beare a better minde, and will not sticke to withstand him to his face. CHAPTER I

I remember that a *Labrador* in Granada, a good crafty Clowne, did (for his owne private profit) follow a suite very hard in open Court, against the Lord of the towne where he dwelt. Thinking with himselfe, that he had to doe with Pero Crespo, the Townes Alcalde, or Constable (if I may so stile him) of the Parish, and that he could have drawne the Oydores, or Judges (appointed to heare his cause) by the eares, and led them along as hee listed; standing one day in the Plaça nueva, or the new-Market-place, gazing hard, and looking busily on the Porch, by which you enter into the Chancery, which is one of the famousest buildings (for it's bignesse) that is in all Spaine; and whereunto (for not onely the curiousnesse of the Arches and Vaults, but for the faire carriage of businesse) there is not any in these times knowne to be equall unto it: after he had well viewed it, he perceived that the Kings Armes that were placed in the Frontispice, had for it's two Supporters, Justice, and Fortitude. Another Country fellow of his acquaintance, seeing him stand thus gaping as if hee had nothing to doe, asked him, why hee did not goe in to sollicite his businesse? He told him, I begin to thinke with my selfe, that these things are not for me, and therefore I could wish my selfe at home againe. Why (quoth his friend?) Why, said he? because Justice is heere seated so high, that it is in vaine for me to looke to have

A witty saying of a Country fellow

her stoope unto me, and I am not able to reach up unto her, and therefore would I were well at home.

It is no marvell then (as I said before) that a Judge doe not Justice now and then to some men, though they have Law on their side; but it would seeme somewhat strange, that a man should have a sentence goe on his side, that hath not wit to defend his cause. But my father found sentence in his favour, because hee had beene beaten to those kindes of businesses, and knew the trace of them, and was well able to hold plea. Besides, when hee had the torment given him, and was put (as we heere tearme it) upon the rack, he cleered himselfe of those imputations that were laid upon him, and attainted those witnesses that were brought against him of publike malice, proving that they had deposed against him upon idle and vaine presumptions, and upon weake and feeble grounds.

But heere (mee thinkes) I heare a Murmurer muttering forth his malice, telling me, That my father had a very ill report: That hee curled his hayre, painted his face, and did divers other things, which I passe over with silence, and willingly omit to speake of: That moneys were still stirring, and came tumbling in on every side, besides gifts and presents, which comming from two opposite parties, continually crossed one another. Whereunto I may adde the sollicitation of women, who are not the worst Advocates, or the least importunate Suitors. All which put together, leave such a thorne or sting in my finger, that I dare not touch upon them. O thou man of malediction, thou doest presse me too too hard, thou doest weary, and tyre me out; I purpose this bout onely, to give thee the best satisfaction I can, and not to answer any more to thy replyes; for it were but to proceed in *infinitum*, and never to make an end, to waight upon thy Sophistries, and frivolous questions. And therefore I doe not tell thee, that thou shootest at randome, speakest *non sequiturs*, and such like things, wherein thou canst not prevaile as thou wouldst, nor make thy part good; for as much as the truth thereof is otherwise already determined. Yet, when suites goe thus, they

give occasion of much mislike and offence; but there is no remedy, and we must bee contented with it, as things that can not sometimes bee possibly avoided: But God deliver thee from such a Judge, *qui habet Legem in scrinio pectoris*, that interpreteth the Law as hee listeth himselfe, and as his owne conceit shall leade him, having neither Text, nor Doctor on his side to make good that hee doth; and from a Notarie, that is thine enemy, or any other of those kinde of creatures, that are bribed: for they will falsifie orders for their profit, and register things otherwise, then they were reported in Court. But in case thou wilt be carried away with opinion, and the voice of the Vulgar,[1] (which is evermore the weakest, and least true, according to the subject from whence it comes) tell me, not out of the peoples talke, (whereunto little credit is to be given) but to speake like a wise man, (out of thine owne discretion and judgement,) whether all that which thou hast said, be sufficient to prove, that my Father was (undoubtedly) faulty.

Against painting

Besides, if it be the received opinion of some Physicians, that the using of Complexions, and such like slibber-slabbers, is a kinde of infirmitie and sicknesse in it selfe, who can say, whether my father were sound or no? And as for your curling of pates, crisping of haires, and other greater dishonesties, and unseemelier sights then these, I doe not commend them; nor allow of those, who permit them in Spaine.

But that which I saw with mine owne eyes, for that time that I knew him, and was conversant with him, I am able to tell thee what manner of man my Father was. Hee was of a faire complexion, ruddy, well coloured,[2] cleane and soft, was the graine of his skinne, and his hayre curled, which on my conscience was naturall unto him: He had a full eye, and that full of life, resembling in colour the watery Turquoys. He ware a foretop, and those his Locks, which overspred his Temples, to give them the greater grace,

[1] *Vox populi non modo est infirma, sed ipsa infirmitas, et morbus.*

[2] *Omnium colorum homo.*

curled themselves into rings of hayres. And if God had given him these colours, as proper to him, was it fit (thinke you) that he should besoot his face with the same paintings? or is it likely, that he would make such slight reckoning of these faire pledges of Gods goodnes, and imbrace such counterfet stuffe to the ill example of others? But if it be true, as thou saist, that he made use of oyntments, greasie ingredients, slabber-sawces, gals of beasts, and the like artifices; and that those teeth, and hands, which did so much commend him, that all this, I say, should be done by the vertue of certaine Powders, Oxe-gals, Lees, Latherings, and other such sluttish and beastly confections, I shall then ingeniously acknowledge whatsoever thou shalt say of him, and shall be a capitall enemy not onely unto him, but to all those that shall practise the like. For besides, that they are effeminate actions, fitting onely wanton wenches, and light huswives, they give occasion to men, to murmure against them, and breed a just suspition of basenesse in the vilest degree, when they shall see them thus dawbed over with clay, and wholly composed of those things, that are onely permitted unto women; who, because they have not sufficient beauty of themselves, borrow it from paintings, and varnishings, to the great cost, both of their health, and purse. And (which to see, is a thousand pities) that your foule, and worst favoured women, are not onely those that do this, but even your fairest, and those that are most beholding to Nature: who thinking thereby to seeme fairer, and to make Nature appeare more lovely in Arts dressing, begin this worke betimes in the morning in their bed, and finish it at noone, when the Cloth is layd. So that I say, (and not without reason) *Que la muger, quanto mas mirare la cara, tanto mas destruye la casa*: That a woman, the more curious she is about her face, the more carelesse she is about her house: the repairing of the one being the ruining of the other. If this then (even in women) be blame-worthy, how much more shall it bee in men? O filthinesse, above all other filthinesse! O affront, above all other affronts! that God

Painting bad, both in a foule, and in a faire woman, but worst of all in a man

having given thee one face, thou shouldst abuse his image, and make thy selfe another. Thou canst not twit mee in the teeth, that my love to my father hath blinded me, or that my naturall affection to my Country hath bribed me, nor shalt thou ever find me out of reason, or in ought that I shall say, to swerve from the truth. But if there be any discharge or satisfaction in a thing that is evil, I wil tel thee one curiositie, because it fals out patt for this place, and did succeed all, as it were about one and the selfe-same time. To thee it will serve for counsell; to me, for comfort, as a common evill, that goes not without its fellowes.[1]

In the yeere 1512, (a little before Ravenna was sack't) there were cruell warres in Italy. And in this very Citty, (I meane Ravenna) there was borne a strange Monster, which did strike the beholders into great admiration, and caused much wonder. He had from the girdle upward, all his whole body, face, and head, like unto a man, saving that he had one horne in his forehead: he wanted his armes, but in stead thereof, Nature had given him two wings like a Bat: he had figured in his brest, the Pythagoricall (Y) and in his stomacke downe to his belly, a well-formed Crosse, or Crucifix. He was an Hermaphrodite, both those two naturall Sexes, being in a very proportionable manner well and truly formed: he had no more but one thigh, and to it one legge with its foot like a Kites, and the tallons answerable thereunto. In the knotty part, or locking joynt of the knee, he had one onely eye. These montrosities and unnaturall shapes possessed mens minds with extraordinary admiration; and those that were learned men, and great Schollers, considering with themselves, that such monsters in nature were usually prodigious, and did foretoken some strange effects, did beate their braines, and exercise the strength of their wit, in the speculation and search of the signification thereof, and what this strange Monster might portend. And amongst many other that were given, onely this that

[1] *Dulce est socios habuisse dolorum.*

followeth, was well received amongst them: That the horne did signifie Pride, and Ambition; the wings, Inconstancie and Lightnesse: want of armes, want of good workes: the foot, of that bird of rapine, Theft, Usury, and Avarice: the eye in the knee, affection to vanities and worldly things: the two Sexes, Sodomy, and beastly filthinesse; in all which vices, all Italy did then abound. For the which, God did scourge them with that his whip of warres and dissentions. But the Crosse and the Y were good and fortunate signes; for the Y in the brest did signifie Vertue: and the Crosse on the belly, that if men (suppressing their dishonest lusts of the flesh) should imbrace vertue in their brests, God would give them peace, sweeten his displeasure, and abate his wrath.

You see here, (in a case prohibited) that when the whole current ran with a troubled water, my father followed along with the streame, and did as others did, and was not the sole and onely offender. And therefore more worthy shalt thou be of blame, if thou shalt offend, having beene brought up in a schoole of Christianity, and taught by example what to avoyd. God lend us his helping hand, that we may not fall into other the like miseries: for all of us, even the best of us, we are but men.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER II

Guzman de Alfarache goes on, in recounting who were his Parents, and declareth withall who his Mother was; and for our better instruction, describes the evill conditions, and bad qualities of a lewd woman, of Bawdes; of a sensuall and lascivious man, and that the end of dishonest Love, is the wasting of a mans honour, of his wealth, and of himselfe

BUT that I may returne againe to my Storie, I told you before, (if my memory doe not faile mee) that (having performed his penance) my father came to Sevill for to recover his debt; whereupon Law was waged, many offers made either to give or take; some demands, and some answers: and if he had not thorowly purged himselfe for his health, and found an evasion; that is, if he had not well cleared himselfe of being a Renegado, it would have broken out upon him into the scurfe of the head, or the scratches in the pasternes; all the fat had lyen in the fire, and he had beene quite blowne up. But he had wrought such a cure upon himselfe, and handled the businesse so handsomely, that they could not catch hold of him for having the Leprosie, or the dry scab. All things were so well made up, that they could not find a hole in his coate, or make any marke or white, to shoot at him; so well was he provided for all commers. Meanes were used on both sides, composition offered, but not accepted; the one being unwilling to pay all, the other as loth to lose all. Of this spilt water, hee gathered up as much as he could, making the best of a bad bargaine. And with that which came to his share (be it what it will) it so

Guzmans father compounds with his Creditors; growes rich, and takes his pleasure

well served his turne, that the cards once more were dealt round againe, and he come into very good play. His incomes were such, and his lucke so great, that in a very short time, hee gained not onely where-withall to dine, but also to sup.* Hee built him a prety handsome house, he sought to plant and settle himselfe in those parts, hee bought him land of inheritance; he had a Garden in San Juan de Alfarache; a neat one it was, and of much recreation and pleasure, distant from Sevill little more then halfe a League; whither many dayes, especially in the Summer time, he went for his passe-time, and made many banquets. It happened, that the Merchants made a Burse or Pawne for their contractations at the stayres of the great Church, (like that of Saint Felipe at Madrid) with a place to walke in, which went round about it, having a Parapet or Wall brest-high on the outside of it, to separate it from the open street, girt in with great Marble pillars, and strong chaines of yron. My father walking there with other Merchants, there chanced a Christening to passe by. And (as the talke there went) this child was said to be the secret sonne, or (to speake plaine English) bastard to a certaine person, that shall be namelesse. My father followed in the tayle of the troope, and entred in after them even to the very Font, for to see and view my mother, who with a certaine old Knight of the military habit, (who for to maintaine the honour of his Order, lived by the Rents of the Church) were Partners in this Ceremonie: it was a metall'd thing, a lusty lively wench, yet grave enough withall; her carriage was very gracefull, and full of courtesie, her selfe young, beautifull, discreet, modest, and of a well composed and settled behaviour. Her handsome feature needes no other commender, then it selfe. He stood steddily looking upon her, all the while that the Exercise of that Sacrament gave him leave so to do, beeing astonisht to behold so rare a beauty, if not besotted with it. For, to that her naturall beauty of face, and feature of body, (without any tricking or painting at all) all was so curious and fitly placed thorow that whole

Guzmans mother an handsome woman: Her condition

frame of nature, that one part helping another, and all put together into one piece, did make such a delicate contexture, that no pensill can reach to expresse its perfection ; nor imagination conceive, how to make it better. The parts, and fashion of my father, I have already largely laid open unto you : this goodly creature, (for they seeme gods and not men, who are not touched with naturall affections) began to perceive his earnest eyeing of her, and did not a little rejoyce in it, howsoever she did dissemble it. For there is not any woman, (though never so proud, be she of high or low degree) but does take comfort, and chucke for joy, to be beheld and looked upon with an hungry eye, be the man never so base, never so meane. Their eyes being their interpreters, though their tongues were silent, spake plaine language each to other : manifesting by them their hearts ; for soules on such occasions do not admit of maskes, neither will willing minds yeeld to the vaile and muffler. For that time, there passed no more betwixt them, nor ought else done, save onely that he came to know, that she was that Knights Pawne ; his jewel, his delight, a morsell that he kept for his owne mouth, over whom he was wondrous wary, and so tenderly affected, that he could scarce indure to have her out of his sight. In fine, this Gentlewoman went directly home to her house, and my father was at his wits end, not knowing in the world how to put her out of his mind. He used, that hee might come to the sight of her againe, many extraordinary diligences : but, unlesse when she went foorth to Masse upon some solemne Feast-dayes, hee could not otherwise see her for a long time together.

CHAPTER II

Women love to be eyed, and to be lookt upon

The often falling drop, hollowes the hardest stone that is ; and stedfast perseverance still gets the victory : for continuance crowneth our actions, and disposeth them to their intended ends. Hee plodded so long on the matter, that he found out a tricke to serve his turne, using the meanes of a good old beldame, a reverent Matron forsooth, an honest Bawd, one of my charitable Aunts : for such ministers as these doth the Divell set aworke, and employ

in his service; with which secret Mynes, he overturnes the strongest towers of the chastest women: for that they may better themselves in their rayment, seeking to gaine a widowes habit, a Huke, or a Mantle, and that their little Caskets may be stored with Boxes of Marmalet; there is no trecherie which they will not attempt; no filthinesse, which they will not sollicite; no blood, which they will not draw foorth; no chastity, which they will not spot; no cleannesse, which they will not sully; no wickednesse which they will not bring to passe. This good creature then, being courted by him with words, and rewarded by him with deeds, went and came to and fro with papers: And because the Principles, as they are the first, so the hardest to learne; and because the greatest difficultie consists in the beginning; and for that, Loaves go aside, if they be not well set into the Oven, she molded the businesse well, using the best sleights she had. And because my father had heard of old, That money levelleth the greatest difficulties, and makes all things plaine and easie, he did ever manifest his faith by his workes, because they should not condemne it to be dead and fruitlesse. He was never negligent, nor yet no niggard. He began (as I told you) by this womans hand, to sow the seeds of his love, and prodigally to spend upon my mother; and they both, very willingly, and very cheerefully, are ready to receive all. And because unto goodnes, gratitude is so due a debt; and that he who receiveth, is bound to a requitall, and every courtesie deserves its acknowledgement. This good mother of mischiefe did play her part so well, grew such a good Sollicitor, and followed the businesse so close, that her diligence meeting in a happy conjuncture, with the forwardnesse of my Mothers will, she still went adding more fuell to the fire; and of a little light stubble, raised in a short time a terrible flame. As we see many times, jeasting turned into earnest; and things full often to end in sober sadnesse, which at the first, were but begun in jeast.

A Bawde, and her condition

Money overcoms all difficulties, especially with women

My Mother (as ye have already heard) was a discreet

woman ; faine shee would, but durst not ; she had a good mind to the businesse, but yet she was afraid : she was sometimes on, sometimes off ; her owne heart was the Oracle of her desires ; with that she consulted often, what were best to do. And thus disputing *pro* and *con* with herselfe, *ya lo tenia de la haz, ya delenues.* Somtimes (as we see in the handling of Stuffes, or of Cloth) she was on the right, sometimes on the wrong : one while she would put on a full resolution to doe thus and thus ; by and by againe, she would turne to a new Conjugation, and vary the Mood she was in before. In conclusion, whom will not silver win ? whom will not gold corrupt ? This Knight was an elderly man, much subject to spitting, spalling, and coughing, he was troubled with the Stone, with sharpnesse of his Urine, and other the like infirmites : she had seene him full oft by her sweet side in the naked bed ; where he did not appeare the man my father was, he had not that vigour, nor livelinesse, nor that handsomenesse of shape and proportion. And besides, observe it while you live, and you shal evermore find it to be true, That long acquaintance, and much conversation, (where Gods feare is not) breeds wearisomnesse ; and loathsomenesse at the last. Novelties please all, especially women, who are lovers of flim-flam tales, and for the receiving and returning of newes ; like unto *Materia prima*, which never ceaseth to desire and seeke after new Formes. She was resolved to have forsaken the old Knight, to shift her of her old clothes, to change her smocke, and was fully bent to fly out, and to breake loose, whatsoever came of it : but her great wisedome, and long experience, which was hereditary unto her, and suckt from her mothers teat, opened the way, and presented unto her an ingenious resolution. And questionlesse, the feare of losing her pension, kept her aloofe off, the thought whereof much perplexed her for the present, who otherwise was of her selfe well egged forward, and had a good mind to the game. For what lesson my Father read but once unto her, the Divell repeated the same ten times over ; so that it was no such great

Novelties please women

A woman, wise in wickednesse, what one she is

matter now to winne Troy; there was likelihood inough to take it in lesse then ten yeeres.

My good Mother casts up her account, and made this reckoning with her selfe: In this particular, my person loseth nothing, I sell no houshold stuffe, I waste none of my goods; and though in this kind, I affoord much kindnesse to others, I am therein like unto the Candle, or the Sunne in its brightnesse, though I lend light unto others, I have nothing the lesse my selfe: I shall not want awhit in my estate, but be rather still at the full. Of whom I have received so many courtesies, so many gifts, it is fit, I should in some sort shew my selfe thankfull, and not be sparing to him, that hath beene so bountifull to me. Shall I be covetous, when he is so liberall? God forbid. I am now resolved what to do: I will sow my bagge at both ends, my jawes shall grind on both sides, my chaps shall walke every way; and the better to secure my shippe, I will have two anchors to one bottome; that if I should chance to lose the one, I might still have another remaining to serve my turne. And if the mansion-house should hap to fall, yet if the Dove-house hold up, if that stand fast, we shall lacke no Pigeons, as long as there is a Lover-hole for the poore fooles to get in at.

Having taken these things into her consideration, she treated with this her bawdy Embassadresse, how, and when it might be; the manner, how; and the time when. But finding (after long consultation) that it was impossible to effect her desires in her owne house, and that there was no good to be done at home, for to enjoy each other freely, and to take that fulnesse of content, which must satisfie the hungry mawes of greedy Lovers, amongst many other shifts and tricks, and very good and witty devices, and strange plots, which they had laid their heads about, for the better successe in the businesse, they made choyse of this which followeth.

The Spring had so farre advanced it selfe, that May was in its ending, and the Summer was now making his entrance. And the Villages of Gelves, and that of San Juan de

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER II

Alfarache,[1] are now the sweetest and the pleasantest of all that bordring Territory, none thereabouts was like unto them; besides, the fertilenesse and goodnesse of the soyle (which is all one with that of Sevill, as next neighbour unto it) which that River of Guadalquibir,[2] makes the more famous, whose watry gullets purling along the bankes, inrich and adorne all those gardens and fields, that confine thereupon: so that with reason (if there may be a knowne Paradise upon earth) sure the name thereof properly appertaines to this particular seate: So fairly is it set forth with shadow-casting trees, so beautiful with curious bowers, so richly inameled with sundry sorts of flowers, so abounding with savoury fruits, so accompanied with silver-running streames, with cleere springs, glasse-labour-saving fountaines, fresh ayres, and delightsome shades, whereinto the beames of the Sunne are at that time denied their entrance, and have not permission so much as once to peepe in. At one of these retiring roomes of recreation, my mother agreed with her marriage-maker, her *Sine qua*, *non*, and some of the people of her house, to come one day thither to make merry. And albeit the place, whither they were to goe, was not that which my father was owner of, but was somewhat beyond it, neerer unto Gelves; yet of force they must, to goe thither, passe close by our doore.

Upon this care taken, and former agreement concluded betweene them, just about the time that she was to come neere unto our garden gate, my Mother began presently to complaine of a sudden and grievous paine in her stomake, imputing the cause thereof to the coldnes of the morning,

[1] Alfarache, a place of recreation neere unto Sevill: And it's rare pleasures.

[2] Quadalquibir is a famous River, which thwarteth all Andaluzia: it empties it selfe into the Sea, neere to San Lucar de Barrameda. It is a great River, whose head rises in the Sierra de Sigura, or Alcaçar, anciently called Tabigensis: from whose spring-head, to the Sea, it runnes more then 60 Leagues; it's ancient name was Betis: from whence that Province is called Betica, of Betus the 6. K. of Spaine. Or from the Greeke word βάθος, which signifies Deepe. Some say it is a Chaldee word, and signifies a House. For that it is the receptacle whither al other Rivers enter in, as into a house. Some call it Thuria, of θοῦρος, which signifies impetuous, proud, etc. *Vide* Covarruvias, and Esteban de Garrib. l. 5. c. 4. fol. 128.

and the freshnesse of the weather, and did so cunningly dissemble the pangs and gripings she indured, that they were faigne to take her downe from her Xamuga,[1] which for her more ease in her journey, was borne by a pretty little, but sure-footed Sardinian Asse.[2] She feigned such extremities of torture, made such pittifull faces, and such wofull gestures (holding her hand as hard as shee could for her life upon her belly, crushing and wringing it with all the might and maine she could :) then would she let them loose againe, then claspe them together, and wring each finger through anguish of her paine : other-while she would hang the head, as if she were fainting and ready to swoune ; and that fit past, fetching a deepe sigh or two, she fell to unlacing and unbracing her selfe, that all that were about her (save those that were privy to the plot) did verily beleeve that she was wonderfully and mightily tormented, that shee made them to melt into teares, and to have a compassionate feeling of this her affliction. Divers passengers chanced in the *interim* to come by, and every one proposed his remedy ; so many men, so many medicines ; but because they knew not for the present where to have the things that should be applyed ; nor where to have a fit place for to minister unto her, their medicines were impertinent, and to no purpose in the world. To goe backe unto the Citie, it was impossible ; to goe further forward, dangerous ; and to abide thus in the high-way, not commodious. Her fits increased, all stood amazed, as not knowing what to doe, nor what course to take. At last, one amongst the rest, that was there (who was laid there for the purpose) breakes mee in amongst them, and as he passes the presse, cryes, Roome for the passion of God, make way there, stand farther off, lest you stiffle her for want of ayre. Come, let us take her, and remove her out of the high way ; it were cruelty, not to seeke to cure her, and a thousand pitties, that so sweet a creature should bee cast away, for want of care and good

A notable subtilty of Guzmans Mother, for the injoying of his Father, before she came to bee his Wife

[1] Xamuga. A womans saddle with a Chaire.
[2] A Sardinian Asse, of all Asses, is the least.

looking to. Come, let us take her in our armes, and put her into this garden-house heere hard by, in this case we must be content to take that which comes next to hand. CHAPTER II

All approved what hee said, his motion was applauded, and so generally well liked, that it was presently concluded amongst them, That untill that fit were over-past, they should crave leave of those that kept the house, to give her entrance, not doubting but she would bee much the better, if they could be but so happy as once to get her within the doores. They knockt hard and thick, (as men use to doe when they are in haste ;) the good woman that kept the house, made show as if she thought her Master had been there : and as she came waddling along, bawled to herselfe : O good God, is it you, Master ? O sweet Jesus ! I pray bee not angry, that I came no sooner, I was very busie, I could not doe withall, I came as soone as I could. These and the like excuses, her unprofitable chaps mumbled to her selfe.

The old Hagge knew well enough what she had to doe, she might goe in the ranke of those rude Countrie wenches, that make curtsey, and cry, *No chero, no sabo* ; No forsooth not I, I am a poore silly old Woman, seeming as if she did not know how to say B. to a battle-doore. Yet was she a dissembling Hilding, a crafty old Carrion, one that had learned her lesson before-hand, and received her instructions from my father, so that shee was well prepared for the businesse. Besides, she was no Dullard, and for such kinde of imployments she was no Baby, but understood very well in such services as these what was fit to be done.

The difference betwixt the poore and the rich Master

And herein (amongst other things) the rich have this advantage of the poore, That evill servants will not so easily come to the beck and bend of a poore Master, as well-disposed servants will be over-awed by a rich Master, and wonne to his lewd commands. The poore man, (though he be never so honest) yet must he yeeld sometimes to the violent disposition of his wilfull and headstrong servants ;

whereas honest Country-Swaines, over-commanded by their rich Land-lords, become Ministers to their lustfulnesse. So that the poore (though never so good) having ill servants, are servants to their servants. And the rich (though never so bad) by beeing served with good servants, are the onely men that are well served.

My good old Woman had by this time opened the gate, and either not well remembring, or making show as if she had not knowne them, full of dissimulation, she fell thus upon them: What a stirre, what a knocking is heere? The Divell take you all for me; beshrew me, if I did not thinke it had been our Master. The very feare whereof, lest I might have stayed too long before I let him in, hath not left me one drop of bloud in all my body. It's very well, what 's the matter now, I pray? What would you with me? What is your Worships pleasure? Have you any things to say to mee? If you have, let me know your minde, that I may make an end and goe about my businesse; for I have something else to doe then to stand thus idly heere.

Then the old Knight answered, and said; Good woman, I pray afford us some place in your house, where this Gentlewoman may rest her selfe awhile: for a grievous paine in her stomake, hath befalne her heere upon the way: she, that kept the house, seeming to resent her paine, and to be much grieved for it, in her rude rusticke manner, sorrowfully replyde:

Now a mischiefe on all such ill lucke! O what a griefe it is to see, that any paine should prove so unhappy, as to be thus ill imploy'd upon so sweet a face, such a dainty bed of red and white Roses! Come in a Gods name, come in, I pray, for all the house is at your service. My Mother, all this while, said not so much as one word, onely she complained of her griefe.

The good old Wench of the house, using her with all the kindnesse her Country-fashion could afford, gave them the liberty of the whole house, bringing them into a lower roome, where, in a well-furnisht bed, there were certaine

Colchones,[1] or Mattresses; these shee presently unfolded, and having spred them forth, and made all things fit and handsome, she presently opened a Chest, whence she tooke out a very fine payre of sheetes, that were neat and sweet, a faire Quilt, and a couple of Pillowes; wherewith shee dressed up a bed, and made it ready for her to take her rest in. Well might the bed have beene made, the roome kept cleane, all places sweetned with the burning of perfumes, breathing forth Pomanders, and other the like odoriferous sents, and a breakfast provided, and many other dainties and delicacies put in a readinesse for to entertaine them withall. All these things, I say, might well have beene made ready before-hand; but it was thought, that some of them should not be prepared; as also that the woman that kept the house, should not come at the first knocking, as likewise that the gate should be shut against them, and not be opened untill they called, that it might not seeme to bee a set match, and lest it might chance to breed some suspition, and so the stratagem[2] might be discovered, and the maskers made known; for this dayes plot was meerely no other thing. My Mother, in this her pittifull paine, put off her cloathes, got her to bed, and called ever and anon for warme cloathes; which being brought unto her, making as if she had laid them to her belly, she thrust them lower beneath her knees, and somewhat apart from her, because the heat of them did somewhat offend her, fearing lest they might cause some remotion or alteration in her body, whereby qualmes might arise and weaken her stomake: With the helpe of these warme Napkins, she found her selfe much eased, and feigned she had a desire to sleepe, hoping she should bee the better after she had taken some rest.

The poore old Knight, whose chiefest joy consisted in

[1] A *Colchon* is a kinde of Mattresse, quilted with Wooll, and basted with Thread, that the Wooll may not slide and grow into Knots.

[2] The Spanish word *Encamisada* signifies a stratagem; borrowed from the wearing of shirts upon their Armour, thereby to surprize the enemy on the sudden, and to bee distinguished from their enemies. It is also a Maske, or Mummery.

giving her content, having placed all his happinesse in her welfare, was (honest Cuckold as hee was) wonderfully glad of this, and left her all alone in her naked bed. And having made fast the doore after him, that none could get in to trouble her, he went forth to recreate himselfe in those Gardens belonging to the house, charging his people to make no noise, and that none should come neere the doore, enjoyning stilnesse and silence, and that none of them should dare to open it, till they had farther order from him, or that he came himselfe. And for that honest woman of the house, he willed her that she should watch by her, til she awaked, and that then she should come and call him. My Father in the meane while was not asleepe, but stood with attention hearkening to what was said, and lay peeping out through the Key-hole (like one that lyes in Ambuscado) of a certaine back doore, belonging to a little close closet, whither he had retired himselfe, till he could spy his time of advantage for to sally forth, and surprize that desired fort, which he had long since so cunningly undermined.

Now, when all was husht and quiet, and that her owne Nurse that came with her, and that other old Bawd of the house, stood like two Sentinels upon their Watch, ready upon all occasions, to give quicke advice, by a certaine secret signe, which might serve in stead of a watch-word, when the old Knight should make head that way, then did my father issue out at that posterne, or little back-doore of his, that he might see, and conferre with his Mistresse. And at that very instant did her feigned pangs cease, and those truer ones of love began to manifest themselves, giving other kinde of twinges, and those kinder for the place affected. In this swelling kind of sport they continued two long houres, two yeeres being not sufficient to expresse those passages that were betwixt these two new Lovers in this their merry fit.

Now the day began to grow hot, and was entring more and more into his heates, which forced the Knight to make his retreat towards the house. Which he did the more

willingly, out of the desire which he had to know how his sicke Saint did, whether she were any thing better, and whether they should stay there, or goe forward, or what they were best to doe, these were the lines that led him along to visit her. Upon his marching thitherward, the Sentinels shot off a warning peece: and my father with great sorrow of heart forsooke the Fort, where hee had set up his Standard, and retyred backe to his Court of guard, and shut himselfe up close, where he was before.

Upon the entring in of her old Gallant, she made show as if she had beene fast asleepe, and was awakened with the noise that hee had made. And with a bended browe, and angry looke, casting her eye a-skew upon him with a coynesse of language, she turn'd aside from him, accenting her words in a pretty kinde of mournefull fashion, pittying as it were and bemoning her selfe; Ay me; God helpe me. Why (alas) have they opened the doore so quickly? Was there no care, no love to be showne unto me, in letting mee sleepe a little longer? I thought you, of all others, would not have put me out of so sweet a slumber. But tis no matter, I shall one day; and with that shee sigh'd, and stop'd, as if she had some-thing else to say, studying more to amuze him, then to declare her selfe.

This good old Knight of ours, this patient peece of flesh, gently made answere: By those eyes of thine, then which I adore nothing more, I did not thinke to wake thee, it grieves me (pretty soule) that I have done thee that wrong; yet hast thou slept full two houres and more. Two hours? (replide my Mother:) no, nor yet halfe an houre: me thinkes it is but even now that I beganne to shut mine eyes, and in all my life, I never had so quiet and contented a napp, for that little while that it lasted; (nor did she lye in all that she said, for she gulled him with a matter of truth:) and looking with somewhat a more cheerefull countenance upon him, she much commended the remedy which they had given her; telling them, that they had given her her life.

The old Knight was glad to see so much comfort come

from her. And by consent of both parties, they agreed to celebrate their feast there, and to passe away as merrily as they could the remainder of that day, for that Garden was no lesse pleasant, then that whither they intended to have gone. And because their people were not farre off, that had the charge of their provision (for the other house was hard by) they sent to them to bring back their dinner thither, and such other things, as they had brought along with them.

Whilest this businesse was a-doing, my Father found fit opportunity to get out secretly at the other gate, and to returne back to Sevill : where, every houre, was a thousand yeeres ; a moment, an Age, and the time of his absence from his new Love, a present Hell.

Now, when the Sunne was in his declining, which was about five in the Evening, mounting upon his Gennet, as if it had been but his ordinary walke, he came to visit this his house. Wherein he found these gallants, he bid them welcome, and told them he was very glad to see them there, onely hee was sorry for the mishap, which caused their stay. For he no sooner came in, but they told him all that had past. His carriage was courteous ; his voice lowd and shrill, but not very cleere : He made them many discreet, and faire offers, (for hee had learned a little Courtship) and they on the other side, remained no whit in his debt for kinde words : So that in the end, there was a great League of friendship professed and confirmed betweene them in publike ; but a stricter tye in secret, betwixt my Father and his Mistresse, for the good pawnes and pledges of Love, that had lately past between them.

The difference that is betwixt Love, Friendship, and Goodwill

But there is a difference betweene Love, Friendship, and Good-will. Good-will, is that, which I may beare to one that I never saw in all my life, nor had any other knowledge of him, then that I have heard of his vertues, or of his noble disposition, or some other worthy parts in him, which makes me to wish him well, and drawes my affection by a violent kind of motion as it were, to follow after him.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER II

Friendship, we call that, which is commonly concluded betwixt man and man, or one friend with another, upon some long Treaty or Communication, Similiancie in condition, or some other pledges of love, and reall courtesies, that have passed betweene them: so that Good-wil, is said to bee betweene those that are absent; and Friendship, betweene those that are present. But Love runnes by another kind of course; it steeres by another compasse. That must of force be reciprocall, a commutation of hearts, a copy or counterpane of interchangeable kindnesse, a translation of two soules, where each strives with other with all their might and maine, to assist there more, where it loves, then where it lives. And this takes its perfection from its object; the perfecter the object, the perfecter the Love: but the truest Love of all is divine Love. And therefore we are to love God above all things, with all our heart, with all our strength, and with all our soule, seeing that he so much loveth us. Next unto that, is your *Amor conjugalis*, that Love which is betweene a man and his wife, and then that which is betwixt neighbour and neighbour, or one friend towards another. For lewd Love, and that which is dishonest, (whose ground growes not from Vertue) is not worthy of this name of Love, as being of a bastard-brood.

True Love, what it is

What lewd Love is

But hap what may hap, come what will come, fall backe, or fall edge; wheresoever this lewd love raigneth, there are all your Witchcrafts, as no where in the world more; there your inchantments, there your Sorceries. This lewd love is that, which (like another Circes) alters the conditions of men, adventureth thorow all difficulties, and makes them easie; it is that alone which tameth the strongest and fiercest Lyons. For to say, that there are *Philtra*, amorous potions, poysons of love, and the like baits and trickes to force affection, it is all false: for this alone, is sufficient of it selfe to turne a mans braines, to pervert his judgement, to take away his life, to confound his memory, to draw on diseases, and to occasion sundry shrewd fits either of melancholy, or of madnesse. Love

THE FIRST BOOKE

Love ought to be free

ought to be free, and to have the libertie and power to consigne, and deliver over al the faculties of the soule to the thing beloved. For the Alcayde, or Governour of a Castle, cannot be sayd to give up the Castle, when as by force it is taken from him; so hee, that shall make love by indirect and evill meanes, it cannot be truly said that hee loveth, but that he is forced (contrary to his better will) and violently carried away with that eager passion of lust and sensualitie, which like a head-strong beast beares a man on headlong to his destruction.

The conversation went forward, Cards are call'd for, and to play they go. Their game was Primera at three hands; my mother, she got the money, for my father was willing to lose to her: and it beginning now to waxe night, they gave off play, and went out into the garden to take the ayre. In the meane while, the Cloth was layd, and their supper brought in, and set on the boord; they sit downe, they eate, and have sup't. And having given order against after supper, that a Barge should be made ready for them, and tricked up with fresh Flagges, and greene Boughs: when they came to the water side, they tooke Boat, and were no sooner lanched foorth into the channell, but they might heare from other Vessels, which went to and fro upon the river, sundry Consorts of all sorts of Musicke, which made a most melodious sound; being an usuall and ordinary thing with them, in such a place, and such a time as that was, being in that season of the yeere that was fittest for it. In this manner they were brought along, till at last they landed; and being now come into the city, they tooke their leaves: every one betaking himselfe to his owne home, and his owne bed, save onely my fathers contemplative pate, whose roving head was so full of fancies, that it could take no rest. My mother too, (like another Melisendra) full of musing and thoughtfull love, slept with her bedfellow, her old Consort; her body beeing prisoner in Sansuenna, and her soule a slave in Paris; her corps in one place, and her mind in another.

From that day forwards, such a strong knot of friendship

Guzmans fathers craftie condition

The disposition of Guzmans mother

was there knit betweene them, and continued with so much discretion and good cunning, (considering their over-venturousnesse, and the danger they might run into) as could possibly be presumed from the quaint wit, and close conveyance of an Easterling, dyed into a Genovese, and dipt in the Vat of Usury, who knew well inough, how to put out his money to the best profit; who could cleare you any account, could liquidate and divide you to an haire, how much losse there was in measure, from the wastings that arose from the winnowing, and cleansing of corne; how many graines lost in the refining of such a proportion or quantity of Metall; nay, he could tell you to a crumme, how much losse there was in an hundred doozen, betweene the bread that was broken with the hand, and that which was cut with the knife. As likewise from a woman of that good talent, and those gifts and conditions, which I have heretofore acquainted you withall, it is inough (if I say no more) that she was an Andaluz, borne in the towne of Sevill, and bred up in that good schoole, where she prooved so good a proficient, that shee ranne thorow the whole course of her Art, and did all her Exercise for her Degree of a Whore; which she had laudably taken, by making her appointments betweene the two Quires, and the Naves, or Isles of the old Church. Now my mother had her fits and flings before this time; this was not her first flying out, insomuch, that not having any thing of her owne in her owne hands, that was woorth the keeping, that very day that she compounded with this old Knight for her company, and had driven her bargaine with him, she swore unto me, that she put over in trust above 3000. Ducats, onely in Jewels of gold and Plate, besides the moveables of her house, and her change of apparell for the setting foorth of her person.

The time (wee see) weares away, and we must weare with it: that runnes from us, and we must follow after it. Every day that opens, discovers new things; and with the rising of the morning, arise new alterations. And let us labour, and do all that we can, we may not be excused,

THE FIRST BOOKE

nor can the flower of our youth escape in its due time the cutting Sythe of Death. For there is not the shortest moment that passes, that doth not shorten somewhat of our life. And the older still we grow, the neerer we are to our grave. The good old Knight (as formerly you have heard) was an ancient man, and of a feeble body: my mother, young, faire, and full of wit, and knew so well how to provoke his appetite upon all occasions, that his disorder opened the doore to his death; for the old Lad, by over-doing himselfe, hastened his owne end. First, his stomacke began to faile him, then was he taken with a paine in his head, after that followed a burning Fever, which after some few fits began to leave him; but though that ceased, he had never awhit the more mind to his meate, he could eate nothing: so by little and little hee consumed away, and after some few puls, he died. My mother not being able to restore him to life, though she would ever sweare unto him, that she was his life, and he hers: But all that protestation proved to be but a lie; for he was buried, yet she still lived.

An old man, unfit for a young woman

The old Knight left many kinsmen behind him in the house, when he dyed, but none of them of the same sute with my selfe, though they colour'd for it; onely my mother and I sorted well together: as for the rest, they were *pan de diezmo, cada uno de la suya*: like the bread, that the people offer up to the Priest; every one with a different device, or contrary marke, that his loafe may be knowne from others. That good old Gentleman, (God be with him, and have mercy on his soule) had but little comfort in this life; and at the time of his death, they on the one side, my mother on the other, while the breath was yet in his body, pull'd the linnen from under him, leaving him a soule in his body, but not a sheet in his bed: so that the sacking of Antwerpe (which for the cruelty thereof is growne into a Proverbe) compared with this, was not halfe so rigorous, nor halfe so inhumane as this: and all (forsooth) for feare of a Sequestration to have the goods deposited. But my mother, as she churned the

The actions of Guzmans mother

milke, so she was her owne carver; she was the Taylor to cut out her owne coat, and the worker of her owne fortune. Shee found a time not long after to put her hands there, where her heart was long before, and fell to fingring of his mony. For she had the chiefest of all his goods in her owne keeping under locke and key, and was Mistris of all that was woorth the having. But seeing her selfe in danger, and fearing to be put to her jumpes, she thought it better to steale, then to begge; and like a thiefe to make a start out of a bush, then hereafter to aske an almes for Gods sake. They were so nimble on all hands, that there was scarce inough left where-withall to bury him. CHAPTER II

Some few dayes were scarce over-past, but many diligences were used, for to make these his goods appeare. They set up Excommunications at the Churches, and upon mens doores, to try if that would do any good, and make the purloyners to bring in the goods: but all to small purpose; for hee that steales, seldome returnes to make restitution. But my mother made her excuse, saying; That the Knight (God be with him) would still tell her, when he came to visit his moneys, and ran over his Coffers and his Cabinets, or had brought any thing into the house; This is thine, (sweet heart) it is all for thee. So the Lawyers were of opinion, that with this she might very well satisfie her conscience. Besides, they affirmed, that it was a due debt, and properly belonged unto her; for though she gain'd it ill, yet it was not received ill. And howbeit the Act were not lawfull, yet the Compact was justifiable. It was not lawfull for her to play the whore, yet might shee by Law have whatsoever was promised her for the use of her body.

In this mans death, I found that to be verified, which I had often heard before; That rich men dye of hunger, poore men of surfets, and those which have no Heyres, and enjoy the goods of the Church, of cold: So that this man may serve herein for an Example. For whilest he was yet living, they left him not so much as a shirt, save

Rich men dye of hunger

only that which he wore on his backe, which of courtesie they were content he should carry out of the world with him. Rich men, for feare they should be sicke with eating too much, to avoyd hurt, hurt themselves ; since by eating by ounces, and drinking by thimble-fuls, they live by drams ; dying rather out of hunger, then their disease. Poore men, in that they are poore, every man takes pitie of them ; one sends, another brings to them, and all of all sorts, and from all parts repaire unto them, to give them reliefe, especially when they are in that extremity. And when they find themselves leane and hunger-starv'd, they make no good choyce of their feeding, for want of some discreet bodie that should administer unto them, and order them in their dyet : whereupon they eate so much, and glut themselves so full, that they cannot digest their meat for want of naturall heat, and so choaking themselves with over-gorging their pannels, they meerely die surfeited.

Poore men dye with over-eating themselves

The like happeneth likewise in your Hospitals, where some devout fooles, tender-hearted women, who go thither to visit them out of meere devotion, stuffe their pockets and their sleeves full of banquetting-stuffe to carry along with them, sending their servants laden with baskets of *regalo's*, and delicate choice Dainties. And thinking therein to do an almes-deed, out of their charity, they kill them for Gods-sake. In my opinion, this ought not to be suffered, but this cost should rather be bestowed upon the sicknesse, then the sick, and be put into their Keepers hands, that are sworne to have a due care of them : for by that meanes, (having the counsell of some learned Physician) these things shall be better distributed in their proper place, and make more for their good : And to doe otherwise, may prove hurtfull and dangerous. And in this their ill-dispensed charity, not weighing the good, nor the hurt ; the season, nor the sicknesse ; whether it be fitting, or not fitting, they cramme their crawes, like so many Capons in a Coope, till they can swallow no more, and so die of the throttle. Hencefoorth therefore, let it be ordained, that such things as these, be given to those

which minister unto them, who know better how to dispose of them, or let it be given in money, for to supply other their greater wants and necessities. CHAPTER II

O what a gentle disparate, what a pretty absurdity is this of mine, yet well grounded in Divinity? how am I leapt from the Oare to the Helme?[1] What a Saint John the Evangelist am I become on the sudden, that I reade you such a Lecture? The Oven grew hot, my zeale was kindled, and so these good flashes flew foorth; you may the better pardon this fault in me, because I have made you some amends in being so short. As it came in my fingers, I tooke it along with me; it came in my way, and I could not let it slippe: so shall I doe hereafter, as often as occasion is offered. And looke not thou on him that sayes it, but to that which is said unto thee. For if thou be clad in a neat Suit of clothes, and that they fit well upon thee, it is not materiall, whether thy Taylour were crooke-back't, or no: that is not a thing to be thought on. And thus much by way of prevention, that thou mayest either leave mee to my selfe, or arme thy selfe with patience. I wot well, that it is impossible to bee well received of all; for there is not that Vessell in the world, that can measure mens tastes; nor that Balance, that can equall their likings, or give an even poyze to such uneven humours. Every one is in love with his owne: and thinking his owne judgement to be the best, is thereby the more deceived: For the most of men have it, for the most part, most depraved.

But I returne to my first station, whence I have digressed: for my mother lookes for me, now being the widow of him that first possessed her; and dearely beloved, and wonderfully much made of by this second Owner. In this change and alteration of things, betweene these and those other nuptials, I was betweene three and foure yeeres old: and by the reckenings and rules of your feminine knowledge, I had two fathers: for my mother was so well learned in

Guzman had two fathers, by vertue of his mother

[1] *A remo, ad clavum et gubernaculum Navis:* A Metaphor from Galley-slaves.

her Art, that she knew very well how to father me on them both. She had attained to the knowledge of working impossibilities, as plainely was to be seene, since she had the cunning to serve two Masters, and to please two husbands; to both of them giving good contentment. Both of them did acknowledge me to be their sonne; the one sayd, I was his; so did the other. And when the Knight was alone by himselfe, my mother would tell him, that I was like him, as if I had beene spit out of his mouth;[1] and that two Egges were not liker one another, then I was like him. When againe, shee talked with my father, she would tell him, that I was his *alter ego*, that he and I were one, and so would have seemed, if our heads had beene cut off, and layd in a Charger: and that I was himselfe, made lesse; and did so truly resemble him, as if my head had stood upon his shoulders. But I wonder a God, in this resemblance of mine, (which a blind man might discerne at the first blush) that the mystery thereof was not discovered; that they found not out her craft, and searched not out the secret of this her deceit. But what with the blindnesse where-withall they lov'd her, and the confidence which each of them had, it was not perceived, nor any the least suspition made thereof. And so both their beliefes were good, and both made exceeding much of me: the difference onely was, that in the time the good old man liv'd, hee was my true father in publicke, and the stranger in secret. And so my mother certified me afterwards, making large relations of these things unto me.

And therefore I protest, howsoever men may talke, and seeke to slander me, that it doth no whit prejudice me; I heard it from her owne mouth, and barely relate unto you what she told me. For it were great indiscretion and unadvisednesse in me, to affirme, which of these two did beget mee, or whether I were the sonne of a third. Let her excuse me in this, who brought me foorth: for it ill

[1] As they say, *el gato es estornudo del leon*, as like him, as if he had been spit out of his mouth, or sneezed out of his nose, for his face, eyes, and mustacho's.

becommeth any man to lye, much lesse to write an untruth: nor would I that men should say, that I maintaine Paradoxes. But that woman, that professes to love two, deceiveth both the one and the other, and there is no trust to be had to her. This is to be understood of a single woman; for the rule in those that are married is otherwise. It is an old saying, That two is one; one, none; and three, Roguery. For a woman, making no reckoning of her husband, (and this is true which I speake) he being alone, is none; and he, with another, makes one; and with those other two, which are three in the whole, make up just as much, as those two to a single-woman. So that according to their reason, the reckoning is already made. But be it as it may be, and grant that this Easterling, this Jew, or this Moore be my father; for since that they have said it, and every one doth averre it to be true, it is not fit that I should appeale, all parties being agreed. I call my selfe his sonne, and so I take my selfe to be: since that from that Mellon-bed [1] I was made legitimate by the holy right of Matrimony. And it is much better for me this way, then that people should say, that I am ill borne, and the sonne of no man.

My father did love us both with that true love, as his actions shall sufficiently declare. For by the force of this his love, he did tread under-foot the idolatry of that, which men style by the name of popular Voyce, and common Opinion. For they knew no other name that she had, save the *Commendadora*; [2] and to that would she answere, as if she had had some *Commendam* conferred upon her. But he not regarding any of these things, nor making any reckoning of the one or the other, setting as light by them, as the least hayre of his head, kept company with her, and in the end tooke her to wife. I would have thee likewise to understand, that he did not enter upon this businesse, *á humo de pajas*, suddenly and unadvisedly, without having

[1] Agreeing with that phrase which we use to little children, when we tell them they were borne in their mothers Parsly-bed.

[2] By reason the old Knight held some Church-living *in Commendam*.

first well bethought himselfe of what he did. Every man knowes his owne estate best; And a foole understands more in his owne, then a wise man in another mans house.

In this *Intermedium*, albeit this his *Quinta* or Garden-house, which hee had purchased, was a place of pleasure and delight, yet it was his undoing, it was his overthrow: The profit little, and losse much; the cost great, as well for the keeping of it neat and handsome, as for the feastings and banquetings which were very frequent. Such kind of delicacies as these, and such places for recreations, are onely fit for those, that have other large possessions, good sure Lands, great and certaine Rents, which may quit the cost, and make the loade seeme the lighter. But for those that are not well lin'd, that have not a strong and able purse, and that have not the world at will, these niceties, are that Moth that eateth on, till it fretteth out and consumeth the heart: it is that Worme in Wood; that Magot in the Nut, which turnes all into dust and rottennesse: it is Hemlocke in a cup of Ambar; and poyson in a golden Vessell.

For poore men to keepe places for pleasure, is their ruine

And thus much by the way concerning that point; it is but a touch; and now we go on. What with suites in Law, what with making love to my mother, and other expences, one charge drawing on another, a great part of my fathers state was consumed, all was almost gone, he was upon the point of breaking, and ready to turne Bankerupt,[1] as he had often done before; so that it would have beene no strange or new thing unto him.

How Guzmans Mother got her wealth which his father had with her

My Mother was a storer, a thrifty Wench, one that could hold her owne; she was no waster, but lay still on the saving hand: what with that which she gained in her youth-fuller dayes, and what she had scraped up in the Knights life-time, as likewise at his death, amounted almost to ten thousand Ducats, this was her Dowry, and so much had he with her.

[1] *Estallido:* Is the noise which a thing makes when it cleaves, or rends in sunder. *Metaphoricè*, A Bankerout.

CHAPTER II

This money did somewhat refresh his drooping estate, it made him hold up his head againe, who before was upon fainting, and ready to swoune: it was unto him like a piece of Weeke or Cotton in a Lampe, dipt in Oyle; hee began to give light a-fresh; he spent bravely, got him a Caroche, and a *Silla de manos*, a little chaire to carry with hands, borne with girthes upon mens shoulders, as well for ease, as state. Not so much for any longing that my mother had thereunto, as for his owne ostentation and glory, that the world might not take notice of the weakenesse of his Estate, or that he was going downe the winde. In this kinde of fashion did he live to uphold his credit, and rubb'd out as well as he might with his meanes; but his gaines did not equal his expences. There was but one to get, and many to spend; but one paire of hands, and a great many mouthes. The Times were hard; the yeeres deare; dealings, small and bad; little, or no Trading. What was well gotten, is wasted and gone; and what was ill gotten, hath not onely consumed it selfe, but his owner too. So that at last, all was brought to nothing: Sinne, brought it in; and Sinne (on my conscience) sent it packing. For of all that was left, nothing appeared. The light was now quite out, and my father beeing taken with a grievous sicknesse, was arrested by Death within five dayes after: and so shut up his shop-windowes, and departed this world.

Ill gotten goods, what became of them?

The death of Guzmans Father

Now, for that I was a child, and of small understanding, I did not feele the want of a Father, nor found any great misse of him when he dyed, though I was then at that time a doozen yeere old, and better. And notwithstanding that we grew poore, the house was still well furnished with houshold-stuffe, whereof we tooke now a piece, and then a piece, and sold it away by parcels for to buy us bread, and wherewith to eate. But the wealth of those, that have beene rich, hath this property, that the remainder of their estate is alwayes more, then the best estate of those that be poore; and dayly more and more they leave some prints, which discover, like the ruines of Rome, what it was.

The property of the wealth of rich men reduced to poverty

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

THE FIRST BOOKE

My mother grieved much, for that she had lost a good and honest Husband, and found her selfe, not onely robbed of him, but also of her wealth, and growne now so aged, that she was super-annuated for any more Suitors, so that she could not help her selfe with her good parts; nor recover her former credit. And albeit her beauty was not disfigured, yet her yeeres had somewhat defaced it: And it grieved her exceedingly, that having beene so many times sued unto by many, that she was not now in case to be courted: And especially of some such person, whose fethers she might have pull'd from him; for otherwise, neither would she have yeelded unto him, nor I have permitted it. Even in this also was I unhappy, since that in-come which my Mother got (as Cats doe) by her tayle, did then cease, when I had most need of it. I said amisse, when I said it ceased: For she was yet fit for action; and would (when she was so disposed) put on her dressings, and weare her head attire, as being little more then forty yeeres old. I have knowne since some old Maids (pussocks in comparison of her) of greater yeeres, and lesse handsomnesse, that would call themselves by the name of young Girles, and little pretty Maidens, and sweare (if you would beleeve them when they lye) that they came but yesterday out of their swaddling cloathes: And although my Mother did not shew so faire for it, she thought her penny good silver, and would not give her arme for the wringing, or her head for the washing. And shee would rather die and starve for hunger, then bate an Ace of her former height, or faile one quilate in the touch and finenesse of her punctualitie.

You now see me heere left without a father, either the one or the other, our goods wasted, and that which is worst of all, bearing a high sayle, living at a great rate, without any person in it to gaine a penny, to maintaine this port.

Guzmans linage

On my fathers side, Cid [1] did not goe beyond me, he was no better a man than my selfe; for my possession crossed

[1] Cid, was the bravest and valiantest Souldier in his time, and had conquered five Kings of the Moores, and made them pay tribute.

and divided that Lordship. On my mothers side, I was as well descended; my great grand-fathers being men of great wealth, and of good esteeme in their Country. I had more grafts, then the *Cigarrales* of Toledo,[1] (for by that name are those Gardens of pleasure thereabouts called) as I learned afterwards. I tell you (as a thing publiquely knowne to all the world) that my mother was her mothers owne daughter, and trode just in her steps, she set her Samplar before her, that she might draw out some good worke from thence, so that shee went along in the very same path that she did, save only in that of their child-bearing; for my grand-mother brought forth a daughter for her comfort, and my father begot a sonne for my mothers ruine. If my Mother brought two into the net, my Grandmother brought two doozen, and made them like Chickens (if the world speakes truth) to eate together in one pot-sheard, and to sleepe in one Hen-roost, and to be pen'd up in one Coope, without pecking one at another, or driven to hood them, as they doe Hawkes. CHAPTER II

With this daughter of hers, (I meane my Mother) she insnared a hundred severall persons, vowing and protesting to every supposed father, that my Mother was his child, and so to all, that she was like them all: To such a one, in her eye; to another, in her mouth; to a third, in most of the parts and lineament of her body: nay, to colour the busines the better, she would go a little farther, in counterfetting markes and moles in the face, and other spots in other parts to that purpose; not wanting to tell some, that she did spit like them, and that she had it naturally from them. She had this (as she was excellent in many) cunning tricke with her, that when any of her sweet-hearts were present with her, she would call her

[1] In Toledo, they tearme *Cigarrales*, certaine possessions, not farre from Toledo, which are little choise garden plots, full of Fountaines, as also Fruit trees, Vines, Olives, and Figges, with a little house of pleasure to entertaine the Owner. But some of your *Cigarrales* are goodly things of great both value, and recreation; but of as much expence, as profit. Father Guadix sayes, that it is an Arabique word; and signifies as much as a little House.

after his Sir-name. And if two, or more were there at the same time, she call'd her barely by her owne name, without any addition. Her proper name was Marcella, which was burnished and furbished over with the title of Don set over the head of it; for as she was called Donna Marcella; so had she her Don or Cavallero for her servant. For Donna, without a Don, are lesse compatible, and lesse comely, then a house without a bed; a Mill, without a Wheele; or a body, without a shadow. As for her sir-names, being they were things that meerely depended upon her mothers owne free choise and election; and for that she was uncertaine thereof, because she could not well tell who was the true father to her daughter: I must therefore give you to know, that she did bolster her up, and under-prop her, with the best titulary names she could devise, throwing more noble houses upon her, then a King of Armes could conferre with all his farre-fetcht Pedigrees. Which to repeat unto you, were to reckon up a Bead-roll of Genealogies, as long as any Letany, that is solemnly sung at divine service.

A notable vanity

The Guzmans were those, unto whom she most inclined, (for she had a great liking to that name) and my Mother told me in secret, that in her opinion, which was no more then her owne conscience did tell her: in discharge whereof, she did verily beleeve, and was fully perswaded (by some likely incounters, probable ghesses, and other circumstances of time and place jumping and concurring together) that she was some by-blow of a Cavallero, that was neere of kinne to the Dukes of Medina Sidonia. My Grandmother was a wise woman, a crafty old Dame, and never wanted to her dying day, but had wherewithall to spend freely, nor was it any wonder; for when it began to wax night with her, and that it was time for her to shut up her shop, then did my Mothers dawning of the day begin to appeare, and she had her at her elbow, to continue the trade for her, and the first bargaine that she drove, was worth to her better then 4000. ducats, which shee had of a rich Merchant, (with whom she held trafficke, and

exchanged wares) that was newly come from Peru, who did deliver her the money by basket-fuls, which was good and quick payment. She never made bad voyage, she still bore up, liv'd in plenty, and would not lose a jot of what was her due. No Christian could carry away her right from her; nor would she give any first fruits to the Divell. CHAPTER II

Now, if we had had the like good lucke, our misery might have beene the lesse: Or if, as I was the onely sonne of my Mother, it had been my good hap to have had a Sister, to have serv'd as a prop to my Mother, as a Staffe to her old Age, as a Pillar to our Poverty, and as a Port to our often shipwracks, we would have bid a figge in Fortunes teeth.

Sevill stood very fitly and commodiously seated for point of profit, or for any kinde of incroaching-getting, and as much is brought thither to be sold, as there is to be bought. For there shall you meete with Merchants that will deale with you in all commodities, no wares come amisse. It is *Patria communis*, and a free-common for all commers; it is a pasture, without inclosure; a Gordian Knot, an open field, a Globe without end, a mother of Orphans, and a shelter for Sinners; where all cry out of want, and yet no man wants. Or (since not this) that I had been bred up in Court, which is the Sea, that swallowes all; the point, wherein all lines meet, and the very center, whereunto all other parts have recourse: sure my abilities would not have beene lesse then other mens; and as I should have wanted no good parts, so should I not have lackt entertainment. I should have lighted on some good Office or other, got to be in Commission, and other the like places of profit and honour, wherein I should have gone as farre as another, and have found as much favour, had my purse been as good: For that will hold any thing fast, and is the onely thing to keepe a man in. And had the worst come to the worst, yet could we not have wanted meat and drinke, but should have far'd like Kings. For he that shall have a good piece of land, or the like pledge, Sevill, and its condition

either to impawne, or to sell, shall ever have a chapman ready at hand, either to buy it out-right, or to lend so much money upon it, as to serve a mans present occasions. But I was an unfortunate man, (as you have already heard) and stood alone by my selfe, without any tree by me, either to shadow, or to shelter me. I had many troubles come upon me, the burthen was heavy, my strength weake, my debt great, and my meanes small. See then and consider whether it were fit or no, that such a young Youth as I, that began to crowe before I was scarce out of the shell, and to write man so soone, having such honest parts in me, and good indowments, should not bee made some reckoning off? The best help that I had, was to try my fortune, by leaving my Mother, and my Country, to see if I could mend my miserable Estate. I did so, and because I would not bee knowne, I would not make use of my Fathers name: but that of Guzman, which I tooke from my Mother, and of Alfarache, which was the place of my inheritance, as also of my beeing. With this resolution, I went abroad to see the World, travelling from place to place, re-commending my selfe to God, and well-disposed people, in whom I had put my trust.

Whence Guzman de Alfarache had his name

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER III

How Guzman departed from his Mothers house upon a Friday towards the Evening; discovering by the way the torments of hunger, and that which befell him with his Hostesse, recounting many notable examples of some Rules of ill government

WAS a fat plumpe Lad, well fed, and cockerd up, bred in Sevill, never checkt, chid, nor corrected by my Father: My Mother (as you have heard) a Widdow-woman, my selfe cram'd with Collops of Bacon, your finest Bread, and your daintiest Creame; your sops of Honey steep'd in Rose-water, more lookt on and adored, then a Merchant of Toledo, or at least as good a man as he, it grieved me very much (besides that the love of a mans Country is sweet and deare into him) to forgoe thus my house, my kinsfolke and my friends. But being forced thereunto, I could not avoid it. The desire that I had to see the world, and to goe into Italy to take acquaintance of my Noble Kindred and Alliance, did much quicken and put life into me.

The delicacie wherein Guzman lived

I set forth, which I ought not to have done (I may be bold to say it) late, and unluckily. And thinking to meet with some rich remedy, I lost all that little that I had. That hapned unto me, which befell the Dogge in the Fable with the shadow of his piece of flesh in the water.

Guzman departs from Sevill to see the world; and what hapned unto him the first night

I had scarce gone out of the Citie gate, when (without being able to make resistance) two great Rivers (like an over-flowing Nilus) did breake out from forth mine eyes, watring my face in great aboundance, till it was bathed all over with teares. What with this, and the nights

THE FIRST BOOKE

comming on (for it grew darke) I could not discerne any light of heaven; nor perceive so much as a hands-breadth of earth as I went along. When I came to San Lazaro, (which is but a little way off from the Citie, I sate me downe there upon the stayres or steps, by which we goe up to that holy Hermitage; There I made a new muster of my life, survay'd it over and over, and discoursed with my selfe thereupon. I was about to goe backe againe, for that I came forth ill provided, worse advised, and poorely furnisht with money for so long a Voyage, having scarce sufficient to serve my turne for a farre shorter journey.

Misfortunes seldome come alone

And amongst other my so many misfortunes, (which when they once beginne, come by clusters, hanging like Cherries; one at the tayle of another) it was Friday night; and withall, somewhat darke. I had neither supt, nor had any bever that afternoone. Had I gone out of the Citie upon a flesh day, although I had beene borne blind, my nose would have helped mee to smell out some one Cookes shoppe or other, where I might have bought a penny Pasty, wherewithall to entertaine my stomake, and to dry up my teares, and so my sorrow would have beene the lesse.

He that hath not where-withall to eate, hath store of sorrowes

Then I began to perceive, how much more sensible a man is of the good he loseth then when he injoyed it; and what difference there is betweene the hungry belly, and the full-fed paunch. All troubles passe the better with bread: Where good feeding fayleth, there no good followeth; no evill which aboundeth not; no pleasure that indureth, nor content to comfort us. All fret and chafe, and know not why, nor wherefore. No man is in fault; and yet they lay it one upon another; all runne upon the haunt, feigning strange Chimera's in their heads; all is then nothing but government; all is Philosophy. I had a great minde to my supper, but the divell a bit of any thing that I could get to put to my mouth, save a little fresh water that ran from a fountaine that was there hard by. I knew not what to doe with my selfe, nor how to cast about, to bring my self into some one Haven or other. That which did hearten me one way, did discourage me another. I

found my selfe betwixt feares and hopes; a steepe downe- CHAPTER
fall before mine eyes, and ravening Wolves ready to III
devoure me at my backe. My thoughts began as fast to waver, as my feet did to wander: at length I was willing to put my selfe into God's hands. I entred into a Church, I powr'd foorth a short prayer, but whether devout enough or no, I know not. Nor would they suffer me to dwell any longer on my Orizons; for the hower was come that they were to rid the Church, and to shut up the doores.

The night was now shut up, and with it my imaginations, but not the teares, that trickled from mine eyes: In this melancholy humour I fell at last asleepe upon a seate without in the Church-porch. I know not what should be the reason of it, unlesse peradventure, that sleepe crackes cares, and breaks melancholy in twaine. As that Mountanese gave us to understand, who going to bury The
his Wife, went bare-foot, and bare-legg'd; his Jacket conceit of a
with its inside outward; and so in the rest, all was Kim- Mountanese
kam, I know not how. In that mountainous Country the houses stand apart, and some of them very farre from the Church. And passing by a Taverne, he perceived white-Wine was there to be sold: whereupon he made as if he had some other necessary businesse to do, and sayd unto them; On a Gods name, keepe on afore, my masters, with this unfortunate Coarse, for I shall over-take you in a trice: So hee slunke backe, and went into the Taverne; where taking cuppe after cuppe, he soop't so long, till he was starke drunke, and there fell asleepe. Now when those of his company came from the Buriall, and found him stretcht out upon the floore, they called alowd unto him; he after awhile being come againe to himselfe, looking somewhat heavily upon them, sayd; Now a pockes of all ill lucke: pardon mee, (my masters) I pray, pardon mee; for, I sweare unto you, that there is not any thing in the world, that causeth more thirst, or more sleepe, then sorrow. It was just even so with me; for it was now Saturday morning, and the Sunne was some two houres high, when I began to bethinke my selfe what I had beene

doing; nor should I have wak't so soone, if the Timbrels, and the Songs, and the Dancings of certaine Women, which came thither that day to keepe their Wake, and to feast, and be merry, with their dubbing, and their bawling, had not rowz'd me up from sleepe. I got me up, (though somewhat of the latest) hungry, and drowsie, without knowing for a while where I was; so that me thought I was still as it were in a dreame. But when at last I was fully awake, and found all was true that I or saw, or heard, I said to my selfe; *Echada esta la suerte*, the Dye is throwne, God send me good lucke. And with this resolution, I went forward on my journey; but the divell awhit did I know whither I did go, nor indeed did I much stand upon it; for all was one to me. At last, I tooke that way, which offered it selfe fairest to mine eye; let it lead whither it would, I did not care. Which did then put me in mind of those ill-governed both houses and Common-wealths, where the feet performe the heads office. Where reason and understanding doe not dispatch businesses; where they have not the command, it is to melt a mans gold, (come of it what may come) and afterwards to adore a calfe. My feet carried me along; I followed as fast after them; come good, or come ill; over hill and dale trudge I. That happening unto mee, which befell a foolish Physician in Mancha; who had no learning in the world, never studied any Physicall Author; but had gotten together (which he carried along with him) a great number of Receipts; some for Syrrupes, and some for Purges, which were distributed into severall, either Boxes, or Vyols.

What houses and Common-wealths are ill governed

A tale of an ignorant Phisician

Now this cunning Leech, when he visited any sicke-body, (and look't to be well payed for his paines, for the good he should do him) he would thrust his hand into his Satchell, (which he still bare about with him for those purposes) and then would he take foorth one of his recipe's, saying first to himselfe, God dispose it to good. And so he gave the Patient that which came first to hand, without any more ado; worke how it would worke, that was all one

to him ; he would put that still to the venture. In letting of blood, he kept no account either for the Veine, or the quantitie ; but would cry, either a little more, or a little lesse, as he chanced to blurt the word at all adventure out of his mouth, casting himselfe upon Fortune, rushing thorow thicke and thinne ; like him that carelesly runnes thorow a Corne-field, where some Eares are trod under-foot, and some scape without harme ; more by chance, then good cunning. I might then have said to my selfe, as did hee, God dispose it to good ; for I did not know what course I ran ; I was ignorant of my way, nor could I tell, (if my life should have lyen upon it) whither I was bound. CHAPTER III

But because his divine Majestie sendeth troubles, according to his owne good will and pleasure, and for such ends, as are best knowne to himselfe, they turne all to our greater good, if we can have the grace to make true use of them. They began now to come fast upon me, and followed me at an inch, not allowing me one moment of content, nor affoording mee so much as a breathing-time from my cares, all the while that I was abroad in my travels : so that they never left, whither-soever I went. But these were not those, that were sent me of God ; but onely those which my selfe went seeking after. And there is a great deale of difference betweene the one, and the other ; for those that come from the hand of God, he knowes how to free us from them ; and such as these, are Mynes of most pure gold, most precious Jewels, covered with a little Sward, or light Turfe of earth, which with a little labour may be discovered and found. But those, which men draw upon themselves by their vices and sensuall delights, are gilded Pilles, which deceiving the sight with a false show of a savourie taste, put the body out of order, if not utterly overthrow it. They are greene fields, full of venimous Vipers ; stones (at the first sight) of great esteeme, but underneath are full of Scorpions : and lastly, an eternal death, which deludeth us with a short life.

Afflictions are sent us by God for our good

Troubles sent from God, are Jewels :

But drawne on by our selves, are torments unto us

This day having wearied out my selfe with going onely

THE FIRST BOOKE

but two little Leagues, (which were the first that ever I went) it seemed unto me, that I had arrived at the Antipodes, and like another famous Columbus, that I had discovered a new World. Well, I came at length to an Inne, full of sweate and dust; my feet surbated, my selfe sad, and above all, with my Mill in very good state to grind, my teeth sharpe, and my stomacke faint. It was about Noone, I ask't what we might have to dinner: they told me, That they had nothing but egges; it had not beene amisse if they had beene egges: for either whether the roguish Hostesse, through too much heat, clocking over them, or that the Foxe had kill'd the Hen, some were growne addle, others ready to hatch; and that she might not lose by them, shee had put them in a boxe, and had mingled them with other egges that were good. But shee did not deale so ill with me, God reward her according to her usage of me; she saw I was a young Lad, ruddy-cheek't, full-fac't, and plumpe withall; that I was a novice in the world, and look't like a good honest simple Youth, and that any thing would serve me well inough: upon this she ask't me; My pretty child, whence are you? I told her, I was of Sevill: with that, she came neerer unto me, and giving me a chocke under the chin, she said unto me; Now you little wanton foole, whither wander you? O good God, how did her stinking breath annoy me! with her very touching of me, me thought I had drawne old-age upon me, the attraction was so sensible to my seeming. This made me imagine, that the utmost of evils had now lighted upon me, in meeting with such a filthy unsavoury Slut. And if my stomacke had beene full at that time, as it was empty, I should have spued out all within me; for my stomacke then rose up to my mouth, and my guts had almost kist my lippes. I told her, that I was going to the Court, and wisht her to give me somwhat for my dinner. Then she made me sit downe upon a lame bench, and on the top of a little blocke, she spred a Dish-clout before me, just for all the world, like unto theMaulkins wherewith she swept her Oven; and this (forsooth) was

The roguery of an Hostesse

my Table-cloth: my Salt-sellar, was the foot of an old broken Pitcher, or some piece of a pot-sheard, such as she sets full of water, to make her Poultry drinke: and halfe a Loafe of bread, that was blacker then her Napery. This preparation made, she presently powr'd me foorth upon a plate a Froize of egges, which might more truly have beene tearmed a Plaister of egges: they, the bread, the Jarre, the water, the Salt-sellar, the salt, the linnen, and the Hostesse, were all one; so well did they suit together. I knew my selfe to be a young traveller, and therefore held it discretion to make no reply, but to take all patiently; my tongue was tyed, my mouth muzzled, my stomacke empty, my guts shrunke, and clung so close together, as if they had beene newly milched. I was as sharpe set upon my Froize, as a Hog is after Akornes, and slopt up my egges, as a Sow do's Wash, I was so eager upon the businesse. I made no bones of it, all went cleane up together without any great chewing, howbeit, to speake the truth, I felt the tender bones of those untimely Chickens to crackle betweene my teeth, that they made my gummes to tickle againe. I must tel you truly, that me thought, (besides the ill-favouredness of the taste, which was not like that of other egges, which I us'd to eate at home in my mothers house) this was but a coorse kind of usage; and such as I had not here-tofore beene acquainted with. But I did let that conceit passe by, and drown'd the imagination thereof in my hunger and wearinesse; conceiting with my selfe, that the distance of place, or difference of the Climate, might be the cause thereof, and that all egges were not of one savour, nor of one quality. In conclusion, I digested all things so well, that I tooke it for a token of good lucke. For it is as proper to him that is hungry, not to stand upon Sauces, and your fine relishes; as to him that is in want, to step out into the high way, and to take a purse. No booty comes amisse to him that is in need. Beg, steale, or any thing, rather then starve.

He that is truly hungry, will not sticke to eate any thing

I made light of it, my dinner was short, and as quickly

dispatch't, and took in good part this my first course, though it could not well be courser. Upon my bread I dwelt somewhat longer ; I fell to that a little more leysurely, pawsing now and then betwixt every bit ; for it being likewise very bad, I was forced to take longer time ; one morsell making way for another, that it might the more orderly descend downe into my stomacke. I began with the crust, and ended in the crumme, which was as tough as Whit-lether, and as dry as a Paste-boord. But whatsoever it were, were it better or worse, I devoured every jot of it ; nor did leave out of courtesie, the least crumme thereof for the Ants to feed upon, no more then if it had beene little, and good. That happening unto me, which doth befall good feeders, when they fall close to a dish of fruit ; who picking out first the best and the ripest, do (as in the eating of Cherries) eate up the greenest and worst last, without once thinking of those that were gone before. Then did I eat apace, one bit (as they say) driving down another, till I had made an end of halfe a Loafe : which, if it had beene good, or but any thing reasonable, or that it had but pleased my eye, (for it was but poore browne-bread) I would have taken in a greater crop, and have filled up my pannell, with a whole Loafe of at least three pound weight. The yeere was barren by reason of the great droughts ; and in such times as those, Sevill was wont to suffer much scarcitie ; for even in their better, and more plentifull yeeres, they have had much ado to rub out : what hope can there then be, when corne is scant with them ?

But it is not fit, that I should inlarge my selfe in this subject, nor open the mysterie thereof unto you, by giving you a reason for it. I am a sonne of that Citie, a Towne-borne child : I will therefore hold my peace ; for all the whole World is one and the same, here and there, and every where, all alike. For no man buyes an Office [1] for any other end and purpose, but for his profit, be it publike, or be it private ; they will grate and scrape, be it by hooke

[1] Or a Monopoly. Against the ill Governours and Magistrates of Sevill.

or by crooke, to raise a fortune there-out unto themselves. Few are they, that will part with so many thousand Ducats, for to do good unto the poore, but to themselves. For ere they will bestow a farthing-token on a poore body by way of almes, they will first examine the businesse, and consult with themselves, whether it be a charitable act or no.

Thus it fared with a *Regidor*, who being espied by an old man, one of that Towne where he had to doe, to exceed the bounds of his duty, and to doe things beyond his Commission, call'd him unto him, and told him; How now Sinior N, &c. Is this it, that you were sworne unto, when you were admitted at the Assembly, to be one of our Company, that you should goe about to picke up your crummes a this fashion, and trot up and downe to sharke for these *Menudo's*? [1] To whom he made this answer; Doe not you see, how I comply with mine Oath, since I come for them every Saturday to the Shambles? I bought them with my money, and I had them out of the poore sheepes belly. After this manner all things passe, in all places; it is the world. They go dividing the spoile among themselves; they will fetch flowre from all parts to make themselves a good Cake. Claw me, claw thee: to day for me, to morrow for thee: doe thou give me leave to buy, and I will give thee leave to sell. They make restraints for selling of Victuals, save onely at such set times and places: they set the prices upon all things, as if they were their owne: and when they please they will sell the same againe at what rate they thinke fit. For all is theirs, as well what is bought, as what is sold.

My selfe am a Witnesse, that a *Regidor* of one of the chiefest Cities of Andaluzia, and Kingdome of Granada, had a flocke of sheepe, an herd of Goates, and some other

[1] The conceit of this passage, consists in the word *Menudos*, and its double signification. For *Menudo's* are brasse Moneys: they signifie also particular necessities. *Menudo* is likewise the intrailes of a sheep, together with the head and feet: and in birds, the garbage. And these are usually eaten in Spaine upon Saturday, but no other part of the carkase. This last signification sorts best.

milch-beasts; and for that the weather was cold, he could by no meanes utter his milke, but every man fell to his *Bunnuelo's*.[1] Now thinking with himselfe, that he should lose much thereby, if Lent should grow on, and should not remedy the matter before-hand, hee propounded at an open Meeting, or publicke Assembly, That the Moriscan *Bunnulero's*, or Fritter-makers, did rob the Common-wealth. Hee rated them therefore at a lesser price, then it stood them in, amounting to little more then sixe *Maravedis*.[2] Well, he was willing in the end to raise them to eight, allowing them rather a small, then moderate gaine.

Hereupon, none would make of them, because they could get nothing by the bargaine. And so in that space or tract of time, he spent the profits of his Cattle, in Butter, Creame, fresh-Cheese, and other such like things, till the time of yeere was come, that he was to put foorth his Flockes and Herds of Cattle into the common fields. And when he began to make his Cheese, then would he raise up your *Bunnuelo's* to twelve *Maravedis*, as they were at before; but then Summer was comming on, and they shortly to grow out of season. He himselfe did not sticke to report this crafty tricke of his, to teach men how to become good husbands, and how they ought to beate their brains, to make shift to live.

Now let us returne againe into our old way, from which we have digrest: for me thinkes it is not meet, that we should lay all the fault upon the Magistrates and Governours of Townes and Incorporations, being that wee may distribute it as well among others. Let us throw some of this upon your Purveyors, and Commissaries; and not upon all neither, but on some of them, as it may be foure out of five, or so; who like Caterpillers destroy the Land, by robbing of poore old Men, and desolate Widdowes, by

The craft of a covetous Magistrate

[1] *Bunnuelo*, is a certaine round Fritter compos'd of Meale, Oyle, and Hony: and is more us'd in Spaine, then in any other parts, in Winter time. It is called *Bunnuelo*, quasi *Punnuelo*, because it is strained or squeazed out of the Fist, and so let fall into the Pan of Oyle.

[2] A *Maravedis*, is a small piece of brasse-money, 32. of them go to sixepence.

deceiving of their betters, and by telling lyes, and informing false-hoods to their King; the one for to increase their lands and inheritances; and the other, to have them confirmed unto them, that they may settle a good estate upon the Heires of their house, and have where-withall to live in fulnesse, and in plenty. CHAPTER III

This likewise is somewhat out of the way from that discourse which I ought heere to treat of, and requires of it selfe a whole and intire booke. I treat in this of mine owne life, and therefore will not meddle with other mens; but I doe not know, whether I shall be able, when a ball offers it selfe so fairely unto me, to pull backe my hand or no? For there is no man that is Master of himselfe, when he is on horsebacke: How much more is a man unable to containe himselfe, in things so generally knowne? Both the one and the other is generally imbraced, and all walke the same way, yeelding the field to the stronger, crying out *Vivat, qui vincit*, let him live that conquers; and he weare gold that wins it. But alas, how do we deceive our selves? For we are those that are conquered; and he that deceiveth, is the deceived. I say then, that Sevilla *per fas, aut per nefas*, either by right or by wrong, one way or other, I know not which (considering her aboundance of fruits, and the dearenesse of them) suffreth sterrilitie, and scarcitie; and that yeere was there greater want and penury then heretofore, by reason of some secret disorders, and through the covetousnesse of those, who should have sought to remedy the matter, who did study onely their owne ends, and to make a particular fortune to themselves. The secret of this mysterie past onely between some three or foure of them, many were not acquainted with it, who without considering the ends, tooke in hand bad beginnings, and divellish meanes, to the hurt of their owne Common-wealth.

Rich men are like Whales: for they grow great by the hurt of others

In all my travels, I have ever observed, that these great rich men, and powerfull persons, are like unto Whales, who opening wide the mouth and jawes of their covetousnesse, swallow up all that comes in their way; to the end

that their houses may be well provided for, and their revenues increased, without casting any eye of compassion upon the poore young Orphane; or lending an eare to the cry of the distressed Damsell; or affoording his shoulders for to uphold the feeble and the weake; or opening his charitable hands to relieve the sicke, and him that is in need: but rather under the name of good government, every man so governes himselfe, that hee does the best he can, to draw all the water to his owne Mill. They publish good desires; but they exercise bad actions. Their pretensions are faire; but their practise starke naught. They would seeme to be Gods Lambes, innocent and harmelesse soules, but the Divell onely makes profit of them; they fall wholly to his share; he, and none but he reapes the fruit of them: God has the name indeede, but the Divell hath the shearing of them. There was good store of Rye bread, passable inough, and at a reasonable price; He that had Wheat, reserved the Flowre of the Meale for his own table, and the refuse he brought forth to sell in the Market, as if any thing were good enough for the poore Commons. Our Officers and great men turn'd to be Bakers, and those went about to burne and waste the Country, which should have rather beene willing to have been burned for it. I can not deny, but this was punished, and that there were many good men, to whom evill seemed evill. But in such necessities as these, it is not to be holpen by a few. Besides, the great numbers of those that were interessed therein, did crush those, that offered to stirre against them, because they were poore. And if poore, it is inough, I need say no more. Let every man make his owne conjecture, and discourse that with himselfe.

Perceivest thou not how impatient I am? Seest thou not that I can not containe my selfe? and how that my pen, before ever I thought of lashing out so farre, hath slipt upon this Theame. They gave mee the yarke with the spurre, and I turned my head to strike where they pricked me. I know not what excuse to make thee, but

to tell thee, that I doe as Carriers doe, that drive their beasts of burthen before them, who rush the man that meetes them against the wall, or throwes him to the ground, and then say, I cry you mercy, Sir. In conclusion, all the bread was nought, although then it did not rellish amisse with mee. I did refresh my selfe with eating, and did cheere up my heart with drinking, for the Wines of those Countries are exceeding rich, generous, and full of spirit; and with this I had pretty well recovered my selfe, and received new courage. And my feet, that were wearied out with bearing my belly, though empty, and of small weight (as being lightly laden), now that it was full, and had his loade, made shift to carry my feet.

And so I went on on my way, with no small care to know, what knacking of *Castannetas*[1] that might be, which made the Egges that I had eaten, to daunce in my mouth. My imagination was working to and fro upon this matter; and the more it did beat upon it, the more misfortunes represented themselves unto me, and my stomake began to stirre more and more: for I could suspect nothing lesse then a kinde of loathing, seeing how ill they were drest, of what blacknesse the oyle, like to that which is in the bottome of a Lampe; a fowle Pan; and a fowle bleare-ey'd Hostesse.

This my imagination running from one thing to another, I met at last with the truth; and having gone another League, my fancy wrought so with me, that I could hold no longer. For, as it is with your women that are with child, so was it just with me. Eructations and belchings did come and goe from my stomake to my mouth, till at last I fell a vomiting, till there was not any thing left within me. And even yet to this day, me thinkes I heare those little chickens, those poore pretty fooles, cry still peepe, peepe, within my bowels.

[1] *Castanneta*, is the stroke or sound, that is given with the Thumbe, and the middle finger, when they dance. And to make the noise the lowder, they tye two hollow thinne pieces of wood to their thumbe, which are made round after the manner of your Chesse-Nuts. *Castanneta*, beeing derived from *Castanna*, which signifies a Chesse-Nut.

Being in this miserable taking, I sate mee downe on the side of a hollow Ditch, that serv'd for a fence to certaine Vines that were thereby; considering with my selfe the misfortunes that I had, and was like to runne into, much repenting my selfe of my ill advised departure. But it is, and ever will be the fashion of young fellowes, to cast themselves away headlong, upon their present pleasures, without having an eye, or any regard in the world to their future hurt; or the harme that will follow after.

CHAPTER IV

Guzman de Alfarache, recounteth to a Carrier what had betided him with his Hostesse: And discourseth of laughing. After that, hee tels two short Tales; one, of a covetous Physician; the other of two young men, how they us'd the said Hostesse: And upon the neck of that fals into a learned Discourse, touching the pardoning of injuries

TROUBLED in minde, full of care and thoughts, and pensively musing with my self, I lay all along on the ground, leaning mine head upon mine arme; when by chance a Carrier hapt to passe by, who went along with empty Mules, which were to be laden with Wine at the Village called Caçalla de la Sierra. He seeing me sitting in this melancholly manner, a Yong Strippling, all alone, afflicted in minde, handsome in my person, and reasonably well clad, as one that had beene much made of heretofore, began (as I then conceived) to pitie my troubles, and to take compassion of me, asking

me, what the matter was, that I was so sad. I told him all that had hapned unto me in my Inne; and had scarce made an end of my Tale, when he brake forth into such a Youle of laughing, that he was ready to burst, and I to breake forth into choller. And that face of mine, which before was as pale as ashes, was set on fire by those coales of anger, which were kindled in my brest against him. But because I was not then a Cock that stood upon my owne dunghill, nor scarce mine owne man; as also for that I found my selfe disarmed, and as it were in a desart by my selfe: I held my tongue, and said nothing unto him, because I could not crowe as I would. For it is discretion to dissemble that, which a man cannot helpe; Patiently brooking this his rather grinning, then laughing: And those ends that are doubtfull in their obtaining, must be throughly first consulted on, and be reduced to some certain grounds and Principles. For opinions are various, and honours vitreous, glassy, and subject to breaking. And if I should there, at that time, have misbehaved my selfe, happely he would have laid hold on me first, and by adventuring to gaine upon him, I might have runne the hazzard, if not the certainty of losing all. For Competition is a thing to be avoided. But if it cannot be avoided, but that we must needs have it, let it be with our equals; and rather of the two, with thy Superiours, then thy inferiours; but have a care that thou doe not over-match thy selfe with those that are too strong for thee, lest they trample upon thee, and tread thee under foot. Every thing hath its Vice, and there must an account be given of it. But although I did forbeare him; yet he had so heated me, that out of the warmth of that choller, which yet boyled within me, I could not choose but tell him:

CHAPTER IV

My friend; Doe you see me coated for a Foole; or with a Fooles Cap on my head? Or what else is it that occasions you thus to laugh? He, rather increasing, then ceasing his laughter, as if it had been a taske put upon him, or a part that he had beene enjoyned to play: so fast it came from him, that gaping with his mouth fist-wide, he let his

The description of laughter

head fall on t'one side, (for hee was not able for laughing to hold it upright :) and laying both his hands as hard as he was able, one while upon his belly, another on his sides, for feare of bursting ; he was scarce able to sit upon his Beast for falling, and seemed with his extreme straining of himselfe, as if he would at every bout have come tumbling downe on the ground.

I was about to answere him some three or foure times, but I could never come to doe it : for I no sooner offered to speake unto him, but he presently fell a-fresh to his laughing till he chuck't againe ; so did his pot runne over, when it once fell a boyling.

God be thanked yet at last, after this great inundation and sudden breaking forth of waters, (that those over-flowings of Tagus could not be greater) began to fall by little and little, by patches and by pieces, now a word and then a word, as well as he could, having taken a little breath, delivering his minde by halfes, like one that stumbles and goes, and goes and stumbles, he blunderd forth these words unto me : My good Youth, I doe not laugh at your ill successe, nor doe your mis-fortunes glad me any whit at all : but I laugh at that, which hapned to this woman scarce two houres since. Did you happely meet with two young fellowes, that were *Camerades*, and walkt along together, and seemed by their habit to be Souldiers ; the one clad in a medley greene suite ; the other in a gray or ash-colour'd cloth, with a white doublet cut to the skin ? These two (quoth I) by your description ; if my memory doe not faile me, when I left the Inne, remained there behinde, beeing newly come in, when I went my way, and called for their dinner. These then (said the Carrier) are those that have revenged your quarrell. And the jest, that they put upon the Hostesse, is that which I now laugh at. But if you goe my way, get up upon one of these beasts ; and as we ride along I will tell you how it was. I thankt him for his kindnesse, as I had good cause so to doe, considering my present necessitie, rendring him such good language, as I thought might make sufficient

CHAPTER IV

paiment for such a courtesie. For good words requite good workes, when a man is not able to pay him, that he is beholding unto, in better money; and that he is in necessitie, to whom the kindnesse is done.

Kinde words currant money in case of necessity

Mounting my selfe then upon this ill accoutred Gennet, howbeit it was no better then a plaine Asse with a pack-saddle; yet it seemed to me a *Silla de manos*, or easie hand-Chayre, a Litter or a Coach, drawne with foure horses. For some succour, in case of necessitie, although it bee little, yet it helpeth much; and that which is but a triffle to him that gives, is an infinit supply to him that wants: it is like a little stone, that is throwne into a smooth and cleere water, which makes not only many, but great circles also. And then is a kindnesse most to be esteemed, when it comes in a good conjuncture, albeit it alwayes comes well, and never too late, so as it come at last. Now (me thought) I saw Heaven opened, and my honest Carrier appearing unto me in the shape of an Angell. His face was as joyfull unto me, as that of the desired Physician is to him that is afflicted with sicknesse. I say, desired; because (as perhaps you may have heard) a Physician hath three faces. Of a man, when wee see him, and have no need of him: Of an Angell, when we are sicke, and cannot bee without him; and of a Divell, when at one and the selfe-same time our sicknesse, and our purse ends together, and yet for his private interest and to gaine a fee, he followes us with dayly visits. As it hapned to a Gentleman in Madrid, who having sent for a Physician,[1] for a certaine infirmity, where-withall he was troubled, every visit that he made, gave him a Crowne. The humour ceased; but his Physician was not in the humour to cease from comming unto him.

A Physician hath three faces

Now the Gentleman, when he saw that he was thorow well, and that his Physician did still continue his Visits, he got him up one morning very early, and went to Church.

[1] A Tale of a Physician that lov'd money too well. In Spaine your Physicians fee is ordinarily two shillings; the better sort give foure shillings, and the best seldom above a Crowne.

The nature of servants

Now, when the Physician came to visit him, and found him not at home, he asked his servant whither he was gone. He (like a foole as he was) for there are servants still inow for their Masters hurt, but few for their profit, told him, that he was gone forth to Masse to such a Church. My nimble Doctor, putting spurres to his Mule for to make the more haste, went with all speed to the said Church, and searching for him, at last he found him; and then said unto him; What a-Gods name, Sir, doe you meane to commit so great an excesse, as to go abroad without my leave? The Gentleman, who knew well inough what he came for, and seeing that now he had no more need of him, put his hand in his pocket, tooke out his purse, drew foorth a Crowne, and putting it in his hand, told him; Here, take it; (master Doctor) for by the faith of a Gentleman, I now perceive, that this sacred place cannot priviledge me from you.

See heer, how farre the covetousnesse of a foolish Physician carries him; and how farre the vertue of a quicke and noble disposition, this other Gentleman.

I betooke me to my beast, and fetching my rise, I got up upon his backe, and away we went together: and wee had scarce gone a furlong from the place, but we met with two Church-men that sate there hard by, expecting some passengers, that would carry them on horse-backe towards Caçalla, (for there was their dwelling) and had beene at Sevill about a certaine Suit in Law. By their carriage and their countenance you might well know their good life and their povertie. They were well spoken men, very kind, and very courteous; the one was about some 36. yeeres of age, the other above fifty. They made the Carrier stay, they agreed with him; and, doing as I had done before, they got each of them up upon his Asse, and wee proceeded on our journey.

But all this while, so great was the laughter of this honest man, and so excessive beyond all measure, that he could scarce go on with his tale: for betwixt every word he would let go the sluce of his sides, whilest like a Flood

that furiously breakes foorth, his laughing suddenly flushes out upon him: and as in houses, where men vittaile upon the way, a man shall meet many times with a bare couple of Hens onely amongst five hundred persons; and see what they want in good cheere, they make up with good mirth: so this mans laughter was three-fold more then his discourse; so farre did his spleene out-talke his tongue. These his delayes were so many Speares in my sides; every deferring was a farther provoking: so that I was all this while upon thornes. For he that hath a longing desire to know a thing, would willingly have one word come treading on the heeles of another; and with a quicke and nimble pace come (if it were possible) huddling all at once out of the mouth.

Never any woman that hath beene with child, did ever more earnestly long for any thing, then I did to know the successe of this businesse. Mee thought I did consume and pine away while I was held in this suspence, I could have burst for anger, that my eares were put off, from having a present hearing: for I could not but expect, that some great matter must arise from such a glorious and ingenious Fabricke, as this made show to be. I began to conceit with my selfe, whether some fire falne from heaven, had consumed the house, and all that was therein: or whether those young fellowes had set the house on fire, and rosted my Hostesse alive: or at least (for a lesser revenge could not be taken of so vile a creature) whether or no they had stript her starke naked, and hung her up by the heeles upon an Olive-tree, and given her some thousand lashes, till they had left her for dead: for lesser things then these, his laughter could not promise. Howbeit, I must confesse, had I beene then so wise and considerate, as I should have beene, I ought not to have look't for any great matter, or to presume that any good thing could proceed from one, that was thus immoderate in his laughter. For even that which is moderate, doth in a kind of manner, accuse a man of lightnesse, argue indiscretion, want of judgement, and store of vanity: but

Excessive laughter condemned

that which is dis-composed, and out of Reasons compasse, is (though there be never so much occasion offered) the marke of a mad-man, and the onely note of an absolute Asse, or complete Foole.

At last (God be thanked) this Mountaine brought foorth its Mouse: in conclusion, he told us, (but with a thousand stops and jumpes, and his wonted bounds and curvets of laughing) that he having stayd to drinke a little wine, and to tarry the comming of a Companion of his, whom he had left behind, he perceived, that the Hostesse of the house brought in on a Plate, a Froyze of sixe egges; three of them starke naught, the other not so bad; which she set before them: and going about to divide this their Froyze or Tansey in twaine, it seemed unto them, that it made a certaine kind of resistance, refusing (as it were) to be parted, one piece hanging (like torne ragges) at the taile of another. Whereupon, because this seemed to be somewhat a bad signe, and such as they did not well like of; they began to search a little more narrowly, what should be the cause thereof. They were not long in discovering the truth; for they might discern certaine knobs and knurs in it; which, had it bin any body but my self, he might at first sight have seen how the world went, and where the fault lay; but being a young Lad, I should easily have swallowed such a Gudgeon, and should in good manners have slightly past it over. But these were a little more curious, and more Court-like, and sifted it out so finely, that they found to their seeming, three little round bumps, like three little Chickens heads all clotted together. And this cleared the doubt; for finding the bils of these pretty fooles somewhat hard growne and none of the tendrest, the pad that lay in the straw was presently perceived. And they taking one of them betweene their fingers, going about to crush and breake it in pieces, it put foorth his bill, and began (though dead) to peepe foorth its head, and spake alowd unto them, and told them plainely, whence, and what he was. So they covered the Plate, clapping another thereupon, and whispered some-

what in secret amongst themselves: what it was, I then knew not, howbeit afterwards it did manifest it selfe; for presently one of them called out, and sayd; Hostesse, have you any thing else for us? she had a little before (in their sight) bought a *Sabalo*,[1] (which is a Fish like a Shad) which she had put upon the ground for to rub off the scales of it, telling them; I have such a Fish here, whereof (if you will) I shall spare you a slice or two, other meat have I none. I pray (mother) said they, broyle it us quickly then, for we must be gone; and if it stand with your good liking, set a price what you wil have for it all, and we will carry it home along with us. She said, it being cut out into pieces, every slice wil yeeld me a Royal, and I cannot bate you a farthing of it. They said, No: they thought it was too much, one Royall profit in the whole, were very good gaines.

CHAPTER IV

A jest put upon an Hostesse by two young fellowes

At last they agreed for two Royals; for a bad pay-master never reckons what he receiveth, nor stands a hucking for that, which he is to take up upon trust. It went against her heart to let them have it so, howbeit the gaine of two Royals in foure, for so short a time as she layd it out of her purse, did worke much with her, and made her willing at last to let them have it. She cuts it out into pieces, broyles two of them, they eate it, the rest they wrapt up in a Napkin of her owne; and after they had fill'd their bellies, being not well contented with their ill usage, in stead of paying their Reckoning, they reckoned without paying. For one of the young fellowes, taking the Froyze of egges in his right hand, went directly thither where the old woman was unpanching the belly of an old rotten sheepe, that had dyed in some ditch, to make thereof Tripes and Chitterlings, or (as the Spanish word hath it) *Mondongo's*;[2] and with all the force that he had,

[1] *Sabalo*, is a knowne fish, and a savoury, and is called *Sabalo*, quasi *Sapalo a Sapore*. In Latine they call it *Alofa*, *Frifla*, *Clupea*. In fresh water it doth usually dye. *Rondelecio de Piscibus*, lib. 7. cap. 15.

[2] *Mondongo*, is a hodge-podge made of the intrailes and trotters of a sheepe, or other beast, boyled, and sold at every corner of the streets in Spaine to poore folkes.

threw it full in the face of her, seeling up both her eyes therewith, which looked like an old wall all to bedawbed with rough-cast. Which plaistred eyes of hers, he had made so blind and painefull unto her, that not daring to open them, she cryed out, as if shee had beene mad, whilest this his other Companion, behaving himselfe, as if he had rebuked him for it, and that he might be ashamed to use a poore old woman in this uncivill kind of fashion, threw me a handfull of hot ashes in the very face of her, and so they got them out of dores, telling her, as they went away; Ah you old rotten Carrion, *Qui en tal haze, que tal pague*, you are now payd in your owne money: what you got by your coozening, you may now put it in your eye.

She was toothlesse, chap-falne, hollow-eyed, and wappering withall, her haire sluttishly hanging about her eares, unkempt, and as greazie, as it was knotty; a fouler Swine no man ever saw: mealed she was all over, like a Mullet dressed with Flowre, or a Flounder that is ready for the frying-pan; with a gesture so graciously scurvie, a looke so pleasantly fierce, and in all the rest so handsomely ill-favoured, that as oft as you shall but thinke either of it or her, you cannot (if your life should lye upon it) but you must needes burst foorth into laughter.

With this, he ended his storie, telling us, that he had now matter inough to laugh at all the dayes of his life. Whereunto I answered; And I to weepe. Why, quoth he? Because when time was, I did not do the like: but like a coward (as I was) suffered my revenge to come from anothers hand. But I vow (if God give me life and health) it shall cost her deare; I will make her pay for the old and the new; I will have my penny-woorths out of her, and make my selfe that full amends, that the longest day she ha's to live, she shall thinke upon the egges, and the Youth.

The good honest Clergie-men much condemned their Hostesse, and did as much reproove my speech; for that I seemed to be grieved, that I had not done her a mischiefe.

They both set themselves against me, and turning towards me, the ancienter of the two, seeing mee so angry and full of choler, spake thus unto me :

Your hot and young blood moves you to say that, which your owne good nature and ingenuous disposition will by and by confesse to be ill : and I hope in God, that I shall worke so much good upon you, that you will be sorry for the present, for what you have sayd, and study to correct hereafter, not onely the acting of any such violent deed, but the very thought of it.

A discourse touching the pardoning of injuries

Saint Mathew in the fift Chapter of his holy Gospell, and S. Luke in his sixt, reade us this Lesson ; Love your enemies, and do good to them that hate you. Wherein you are first to consider, that the Evangelist doth not say, Doe good unto those, that do ill unto you ; but he sayth ; Do good to them that hate you. For suppose that your enemy should hate you, yet is it impossible that he should hurt you, unlesse you will your selfe. For, it being an infallible truth, that we are to account those as true goods, which are to continue for ever : and that those which faile us to morrow, (as they often do) are more properly to be called evils, for the ill use which we make of them : since that in the trust that we have in them, *et nos ipsos, et illa amittimus*, wee lose both them and our selves. We may reckon these our enemies, to be our best friends ; and these our friends to be our greatest enemies ; in regard of the effects which arise from the one and the other : for, from our enemies, ariseth all our true good ; and from our friends, our assured hurt. Wee may plainely perceive, how that the greatest good that we can draw from the faithfullest friend that we have in this world, can be no more, then to pleasure us, either with his purse, by giving us all that he hath ; or by his life, by employing it in those things that give us content ; or by his honour, by not sticking to hazard that for us, when our reputation shall lie at the stake. In which two latter none will adventure themselves ; or there are so few of them to be found, that I doubt we shall not be able to produce any example in these

True good is that which is eternall

The goods of this world are not good

A faithful friend, what good he may do us

times wherein we live. But say it were so indeed, and that there were some such kind of men now adayes, and should jumpe together in all these three repeated particulars, when they have done all that they can, it is much lesse (if in that which is not at all, a *magis* and a *minus* ; a more, or a lesse, may be found) then a Geometricall point. For, when he hath given me all that hee hath in this world, (were it never so much) it is too small a substance to free me from hell. Besides, men do not now adayes spend their wealth, and their riches upon the vertuous, but such as are conditioned like themselves, and assist them in their sinnes ; and these are the friends that they reckon of, and to these their purse is open.

If for my sake, my friend should lose his life, one minute of time is not added thereby unto mine ; if he should put his honour in perill, nay say, he should be willing to lose it quite for his love to me, I say, that is not honour, nor may it be so called : for true honor is that, which is ingaged in the service of God ; and whatsoever is otherwise, and hath not some reference thereunto, is false and evill. So that, whatsoever my friend shall throw upon me, being it is temporal and of no continuance, it is unprofitable, vaine, and of little or no woorth at all. But my enemy, proves all pure wheat ; all turnes to profit, that comes from him to me ; so that my selfe will be willing to make true use thereof. For from his ill-wishing to me, doe I come to wish well unto him ; and therefore God will wish well againe unto me, and do me good, (though I deserve ill) for that I do good for ill. If I pardon him a light injury, to me are forgiven and remitted an infinit number of sinnes ; and if he speake ill of me, and I speake well of him, his evill language cannot hurt me ; and his bitter tongue shall bring me a blessing ; *Come ye blessed of my Father, etc.* So that by his thoughts, words, and workes, my enemy makes mine to be good and true.

The good we receive from our enemies

And what is the cause, thinke you, of this so great a wonder, and whence is the force of this so excellent a vertue ? I shall tell it you, because it is a thing commanded by God,

because it is his expresse will and commandement so to do. And if we are to observe that of the Princes of this world, much better (without comparison) is it, to keep that which is commanded us by the King of heaven : before whom are humbled all the hearts both of heaven and earth. And that saying of his, I command you this, is a sweet conserve,[1] which is applied to the distasted palate of him that is commanded. As if the Physicians should prescribe their sicke Patients to take flowres of Oranges, young preserved Wall-nuts, buds of Limmons, rindes of Pome-Citrons, the rootes of wild Borage, or Buglosse.[2] What shall I say more ? O my good Lord, doe not give me any such thing ! for a body that is strong and in health, can by no meanes away with it, but is rather unpleasing then otherwise. But for the better swallowing of these Pilles, and to make the rellish the sweeter, they are so well candyed and rolled up in Sugar, that what was hard in it selfe to be taken downe, is now become sweet and savoury unto us. The like effect doth this sweet Conserve of Gods Word worke with us : I command (saith the Text) that ye love your enemies. This is a dainty Sauce, made for that soure Morsell, which before was so unsavoury to our tastes. So that, that which goes most against our stomackes, and which flesh and blood can hardly indure, by reason of its bitternesse, being to our concupiscences and fleshly desires, no better then very Gall and Wormwood ; The Spirit tels us in the voyce of a good Physician, now it is made more pleasant, more savoury and sweeter for you, since that Christ our Redeemer hath so commanded it. So that if a man should now strike me on the one cheek, I would turne the other : for it is an honour

We must obay God

[1] Gods commandements are sweet.

[2] The Spanish word is *Escorzonera*. This hearbe the Latines call *Viperina*, a species of that which they call *Barba de Cabron*. It is called *Escorzonera*, because it is good against the venyme of Toades, and all other venymous Vermin ; and amongst the rest, the Viper. This Plant was first found out in Spaine in Catalunna, by a slave of Barbary. And in harvest-time men being stung by Vipers, they gave them the juice of this herbe, wherewith they were healed. There is exeellent good now in this kind, in the Sierras de Cuenca in Spaine. *Vide* Mathiolo, lib. 2. cap. 137, and Covarruvias, verb. *Escorzonera*.

unto us punctually to observe those orders which are delivered unto us by those that are set in authority over us, and not to breake them in the least branch or tittle.

A Generall doth command one of his Captaines, that he make good such a strong place or passage, by which the enemy is to passe; where, if he will himselfe, it shall be in his power to overcome him, and to kill him: but his Generall tels him; Take heed, I charge you, for it much importeth my Service, and it is my pleasure so to have it, that when he shall passe by you, you offend him not, but let him goe quietly along, notwithstanding that he should give you cause to the contrarie, and provoke you all that he can to fight with him.

Now when this his enemy shall passe thus along by him, and shall brave him to his face, and revile him with reproch-full and injurious termes, calling this Captaine Coward, and other the like disgracefull names, will this Captaine (thinke you) though thus mightily abused, and affronted in the face of the whole Armie, offer him hereupon any offence at all, or violently set upon him? No certainly; But he will rather laugh at him, as a Braggadoccio, and vaine-boaster; and though he could easily have over-throwne him, and kill'd him at pleasure; yet he doth it not, onely because he would keepe that Order which was given unto him: And if he should have broken it, he had done very ill, and contrary to his duty, and therefore had well deserved to be punished for it. What reason then is it, that we should not diligently observe the orders and ordinances, given us by God? Why should we goe about to breake them; or seeke even in the least kinde of manner to contradict them? If a Captaine, for his pay onely, and upon hope of some better preferment (which is a hazzard, whether he shall ever attaine there-unto or no) shall bee so punctuall: why should not we be as observant, since we shall gaine thereby a celestiall reward, which is reserved for us? Especially, since that hee that made the Law, had the first handsell of it himselfe, and submitted himselfe thereunto, by suffering and receiving from that

God rewardeth the obedient

unhallowed and sacrilegious hand of an under-officer, a great buffet on that most sacred face of his, without returning him so much as an evill word, or any angry looke. CHAPTER IV

If God himselfe could be content to indure such rough usage, and pocket it up with so much patience: Why should this same *Nada del hombre*, this same nothing of man, this *res nihili*, why I say should he be puffed up with pride, transported with passion, and stand upon his *puntos*, and termes of honour? And why, for to receive satisfaction of a poore silly word, shot out un-awares, or advisedly; or howsoever (complaining of the infinitenesse of the wrong) breaking forth into rage, should one Christian challenge the field of another, seeking amongst Infidels, as if he were one of them himselfe, a place,[1] where to fight it out; or (to speake more truely) to thrust themselves wilfully into the hands of the Divell their mortall enemy, flying from those of their Creator? Man ought to be humble, not proud

Of whom we may learne, that when he was to leave this world, and was to seale his last Will and Testament, he suffered himselfe to bee nayled to the Crosse, his body to be bored, his flesh to be torne, being full of paine, and gored all in bloud, from the sole of his foot, even to the crowne of his head, whose haire did cleave to his most precious bloud, being congealed and clodded together in hard-plotted Knots, and matted, as it were, with the cruell wounds, occasioned by that his sharpe thorny crowne, which they scornefully crowned him withall. And when he was to take his leave of his Mother, and that his beloved Disciple, amongst other his last words that he uttered, as it were by way of his last request, and charge unto them, and in that his violent and extreme agony, which was then plucking up his soule by the rootes from his divine body, he prayed unto his eternall Father, that hee would pardon those that had thus persecuted him, and put him to this so shamefull and painfull a death. A lesson for the forgiving of our enemies

[1] The Duell, in Spaine is a capitall crime. And therefore the Spaniards, when they challenge the Field, goe into Barbary to end their quarrell.

Saint Christopher his answer to one that strooke him

This mildnesse of our Saviour, was imitated by Saint Christopher: who, when he had a sound boxe on the eare given him, calling that to mind, which his Master had before received, told him that strooke him; If I were not a Christian, I would be revenged on thee. So that revenge then, is a member put apart from the children of the Church our Mother.

S. Bernards saying, touching the suffering of injuries

The like blowe was given to Saint Bernard in the presence of his brethren; and they being very earnest to revenge this wrong done unto him, hee ranne in amongst them, telling them, It is not fit, that we should revenge the injuries done us by others, when as wee doe all day-long, kneeling humbly on our knees, crave pardon for our owne offences.

S. Steven prayes for his persecutors

Saint Steven, when they were stoning him to death, doth not grieve for those cruell blowes, which bereave him of his life; but his sorrow was, to see that these bloudy Ministers should lose their soules; and grieving for them, desires God, even then, when the pangs of death were upon him, that hee would pardon his persecutors, and Saul especially; who being deceived, and zealous of his Law, thought to merit heaven by looking to the Cloakes and other cloathes belonging to those that were the Executioners; to the end that having nothing to hinder their armes, they might, being ridde of those lets, wound him with the greater force.

S. Paul teacheth us to forgive our enemies

And so fervent was his Prayer; that this glorious Apostle Saint Paul was afterwards reduced to the faith; who like a wise Doctor, well experienced in this doctrine, finding it to be so necessary a thing, and so much importing our salvation, as nothing more, gives us this good counsell: That we should forget and lay aside all anger; that we should not suffer the Sunne to goe downe upon our wrath. Rather blesse then curse your persecutors: Give them to eate, if they suffer hunger; and if they be a-thirst, give them drinke: which if you shall not doe, the same measure that you mete unto others, shall be mete unto you againe: and as you forgive, so shall you be forgiven.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER IV

The Apostle Saint James saith; Without mercy shall they be judged, that have no mercy: and the rigour of justice shall be returned on those that are rigorous.

S. James instructeth us to be mercifull

Very fearefull of the breach of this divine precept, was Constantine the Great; who, when one told him, how his enemies, to affront him, had in contempt and scorne of him, throwne stones at his picture, wounding him with their strokes in the head and the face; so great was his modesty, that neglecting the injury, he began to touch and feele with his hands from place to place all the severall parts of his body: Asking, when he had so done; What are become of these blowes; where are those wounds you talk off? I feele none, nor have I any paine of all those thou tell'st me, they have done unto me. Giving thereby to understand, that there is no dishonour done to any, but to him that will esteeme it so. Besides, he was willing thereby to inferre, that whosoever does thee an injury, shall not scape scot-free, or goe cleere away with it, though thou doe not revenge it; nay, though thou for thy part shouldst pardon the wrong that he hath done thee: For what injury he hath offered unto thee, he hath likewise offered the like unto God, whose, both thou and he art. *Duenno tiene esta hazienda*; these goods have an owner; And therefore you must not be your owne carvers. For, if in a Princes Palace, or a Kings Court, any affront shal be done, it is likewise done unto the Lord thereof: nor shall the pardon of him that is affronted be sufficient absolutely to excuse the other, because by that indiscreet act of his, and inferred injury, are likewise injured the lawes of that Prince, the good government of his house questioned, and his Kingdome scandalized thereby. And therefore God saith, Revenge belongeth unto me; and when I see my time, I shall punish the offender: Vengeance is mine, and mine owne hands shall execute the same. Wretched then is that man, who is thus threatned; for if Gods owne hands shall give him his chastisement, better had it beene that he had never beene borne. So that thou must never requite ill with ill, unlesse thou wilt

Constantine the Great, and his great patience

God favoureth and defendeth the wronged

that ill shall light upon thy selfe. Moreover, thou shalt merit much thereby, and thou shalt be thine owne paymaster: for, by imitating him that commandeth thee, thou shalt be made like unto him. Give way therefore to the ire and fury of your persecutors, that you may merit Gods favour: Thanke him for these outrages and wrongs that are done you, and you shall in requitall receive glory, and obtaine eternall rest.—And there he rested.—

I would faine have committed to memory that good doctrine which hee delivered unto me to this purpose, that I might repeat it heere unto you. For it was all heavenly stuffe. Fine, most fine holy Scripture. From that time forward I unfeignedly propounded to my selfe to make true profit thereof. And if it be well considered, he spake very home, and well unto mee. What greater revenge can there be, then that a man may be revenged if hee will? *Posse, nolle, nobile*, is as true a saying as it is old: And what thing can bee more foule then revenge, being that it is a passion of injustice? And such a one, as none is more odious in the sight both of God and Man? For it is onely proper unto brute beasts. Revenge is but a kinde of cowardize, and a certain *Actus fœminilis*, an effeminate Act, and womanish kinde of weakenesse: Whereas the forgiving of a wrong, is a glorious kinde of Victory. The revengefull man makes himselfe the *Reus*, when by pardoning, he might bee made the Actor; that is, in stead of an Accuser, the Accused. What greater presumption can there be in the world, then that the creature should usurpe the office of his Creator? appropriating that unto him, which is none of his; and going away (as we say) with another mans wealth, whereunto hee hath no right in the world? If thou thy selfe art not thine owne, nor in thine owne disposall; neither hast thou any thing of thine owne in thee, that he, who (as thou sayst) hath offended thee, can take from thee. Such actions as these, thou canst not commence thy selfe, they belong unto thy Lord, which is God: Leave vengeance therefore unto him. God will take it of the wicked, *tardius*

Injury, how foule a thing it is

Revenge, what it is

Man hath nothing that is his, no not so much as himselfe

aut citius, at one time or another, early or late. And that cannot bee termed too late, which is in a continuall inclination to its end. And to take it out of his hands, is a heynous offence, a mighty mis-regard, and a contempt in the highest degree.

But admit satisfaction should belong unto thee, and that the Law were in thine owne hands; tell me, I pray thee, What thing can be more noble, then to doe good? And what more good, then not to do ill? One onely, which is this; To doe good unto him, that doth ill unto thee, and doth persecute thee, as it is commanded us, which we are bound to obey. For, to repay ill with ill, is the Divels office; to doe good to him, that doth good unto thee, is a naturall debt betweene man and man; nay, the wilde beasts of the Forrest doe acknowledge as much, and doe not waxe furious against those, that do not seeke to hurt them. But to procure and worke that mans good, that would doe thee a mischiefe, and cut thy throat, if it were in his power to doe it; this is *opus supernaturale*, a worke above the reach of nature: it is that divine Ladder, whereby we climbe up by the rounds of Charitie, to glorious Eternitie; it is that key of the crosse, which openeth the gates of Heaven: it is the soules sweet peace; and the bodies quiet rest. But revenge is a life without quietnesse; one cals upon another, and all unto death. Is not he a foole, nay, worse then a mad-man, who, if his doublet chance to wring him, will thrust his ponyard into his owne body? And what other thing is revenge, then to doe ill unto our selves, out of a desire to doe ill unto others? And to plucke out both our owne eyes, to put out one of our enemies? Or to spit against heaven, that it may presently fall againe in our owne faces? Seneca understood this doctrine wonderfull well, when an enemy of his having given him a boxe of the eare in the Market-place, and all that saw it, did incite him to complaine thereof unto the Justice; he smiling upon them, said unto them, Were it not a foolish part in me (thinke you) to call a beast into the Court? As if he should have said, With

Seneca's saying touching revenge

that buffet, hee like a beast did expresse his rage; and I like a man, did scorne and contemne this his brutish behaviour. Can there be any brutishnesse greater then to doe ill? Or can there bee any greatnesse like unto that, which shall despise the ill that is done him, and set light by it?

The French Kings answere

The Duke of Orleans having formerly been injured by one, when he was afterward King of France, he was put in minde, that hee might now be revenged of the wrong he then received: for now it was in his power to doe it. But he, looking sowrely on him that did so advise him, told him; it was not fit, that the King of France, should revenge the wrongs of the Duke of Orleans. If, for a man to conquer himselfe, be counted so great a Victory;[1] Why, by subduing our appetites, allaying our anger, and rebating our rancour; doe not we gaine unto our selves this glorious Palme? Since that, (besides that which is promised unto us in the future) even in this life also, wee shall avoid many mischiefes, which may either take away our life from us, or rob us of this our vaine honour, and consume our wealth. O good God, had I beene a good Lad, that which I heard from that good man, I might have been the better for it all the dayes of my life. But I was young, and past it quickly over; that treasure was ill bestow'd upon me, I lost it; it was corne that fell in the high-way, it did not thrive with me. His good conversation and doctrine entertained us to Cantillana, whither we came about Sun-set: I with a good desire to my Supper, and my Companion with an earnest expectation to have his, but that never came. The two Clergie men made their ranke apart, and went to a friends house that they were acquainted withall in the Towne, and we to our Inne.

[1] *Fortior, qui se, quam qui fortissima vincit mœnia.*

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER V

How Guzman and the Carrier did eate of a young Mule, thinking it had beene Veale, being coozened by his Host in Cantillana, and discourseth by the way of the coozening tricks, which bad Hosts put upon poore Travellers

HEN the Company, that came along with us, had left us, and were gone every man his way; I askt my Camerade, Whither shall we goe now? He told me. Here 's an honest Host hard by, one of my old acquaintance, a good-fellow, where we shall be well lodged, fare daintily, and kindly entertained. Well, along we trudge together, till we came to this his so much commended Inne, having brought me (as you shall heare hereafter) to one of the veryest theeves, and arrantest knaves, that there was not such another in all that part of the Country wherin he liv'd.

Heere new occasion of matter was offered, fresh plates set upon the boord, and such provision, as you may therewith well entertaine the time. Was I not (thinke you) in fine taking when I leapt out of the Frying-pan into the fire; and fell into Scilla, seeking to shunne Charibdis? Our Host had for his owne use a good strong Asse, and a Galitian Mare, that was a pretty little Tit. And because men in their necessitie, doe not stand upon beauty, youth, nor pompe of apparell; but content themselves onely with Night-caps, when their heads are mangie and scabbed; it is no marvell, if the like should happen even amongst brute beasts. They were alwayes fellow-feeders in one Stable, one Racke, and one Field; and he that was owner of them, tooke no great heed to have them tyde fast, but

let them go loose, of purpose to the end, that they might helpe the other Beasts in the Inne in the repeating of their lessons. Whereby it came to passe that this Mare grew great with Foale, by living at large amongst this good company.

It is an inviolable law in Andaluzia, That no such Conjunction, or Commixture be permitted; and to this end, grievous penalties are ordained.[1] This Mare then, having in her due time foaled a pretty young Mule, mine Host was willing to make profit thereof, and to that end nourished and bred it up. He kept this businesse very secret some certaine dayes, and was wonderfull carefull, that it might not come to light: but because he saw it was not possible for him to hide this matter long, and to keepe it from the knowledge of the world, that he might not give his enemies advantage of revenge; carried away partly with the feare of his owne hurt, and partly with the greedinesse of gaine, he resolved (this last Friday night) to kill him. He cuts me out the flesh of it into pieces, which he powders up in a pickle made of purpose, and made ready against the next day, (being Saturday[2]) for his Ghests: *partes minutiores hujus animalis*, *ut pedes*, *ilia*, *venter*, etc. all the intrailes and offals of this beast: as feet, tripes, the cragge-end of the necke, tongue, braine, and the like. We (as I told you) came to our Inne in a very good hower; for he that travailes, takes contentment upon the way, that hee may come into his Inne betimes, that he may have meat to fill his empty guts, and a bed to rest his weary bones.

My Companion, as soone as he had alighted and taken off his lading, and put up all things safe, sets up his Asses in the Stable, taking order for their dressing and their feeding. But I came thither so wearied, that I was not able when I lighted, to stand upon my legges, but was faine to lie downe on the ground, and was not able for a

Uneasie riding causeth wearines

[1] A Law in Andaluzia against the unnaturall covering in horses.

[2] These things are commonly eaten in Spaine upon Saturdayes, by custome received amongst them.

great while to turne my selfe any way in the world. For all my muscles and sinewes were quite benum'd, my legges and feet swolne, with their long hanging downe for lacke of Stirrops, my breech extremely gall'd, my parts neerer my privities full of paine, as if so many needles had beene stucke in my Groyne; my body was all out of joynt; but of all other parts, my belly (for pure hunger) did most pitifully complaine.

Now when my Companion had ordered his beasts of burthen, and had eased them of their carriages, and had done all things fitting for one of his profession, my turne was next to be served, and therefore said unto him; How now (my Camerade) what thinke you of the motion? Is it not high-time (thinke you) to go to Supper? He answered, It was; the motion he told me, was very good, and that it was high time indeed: for he meant to bee stirring very early the next morning, and to reach betimes to Caçalla, and so to lade, and away. We ask't our Host, if he had any thing in the house for our supper? He answered, He had; adding withal, that we should fare very daintily. He was a burly-kind of man, yet of a stirring metall, nimble-witted, cheerfull both in his speech and countenance, an eternall talker, but above all a most excellent Villaine. His promising person (I confesse) did deceive mee: for, seeing so good a presence, and not having knowne him before, the Spot at first sight, made show of a good Card. And hearing him say, that he could feast us bravely, my very heart and soule did leape for joy within mee: Oh, they were comfortable words! Whereupon, I began with my selfe to give thankes unto God, reverencing his holy Name, for that after our troubles he gives us ease; after sicknesse, health; after a storme, a calme; after sorrow, joy; and a good Supper, after a bad dinner.

What a manner of creature our Host was

I know not, whether I may well tell you or no, of a toung-errour, but a witty one, which came from a plaine country-fellow, whom I knew in Olias, being a certaine Village belonging to Toledo? yet I shall make bold to tell it you, as well for that the thing in it selfe is not scandalous, as

also for that it proceeded from the sincere heart of an old Christian.[1]

There were certaine good fellowes playing at *Primera*, and the third having discarded, the second cride, I am *Prime*; God be thanked yet at last, that I have got one game since I played, said he, that had the *Prime*. The other Country-fellow that was in the *interim* drawing his Cards, when he had puld them, found them to be all of one linage, and being glad that he had got the hand of him, suddenly brake foorth at that very instant, and sayd; Not so much God be thanked neither, as you thinke for; for I am Flush. If such a disparate, or idle toy as this, being not purposely spoken with either due measure, or to any certain end, but by meere chance, as it were, may be brought upon the Stage; this is its proper place, and the Scene well layd here, considering what befell us. Its very well (said my Companion) to mine Host; Now and thou beest a good fellow, tell me, I pray thee, what dainty morsell hast thou provided for us? This Socarron,[2] this dissembling Rascall, that was all for his commodity, and cared not (so as he might get by him) whom he coozened, told him; Yesterday I kill'd a very delicate fine young Calfe; which, because the Damme thereof was very weake; and by reason, (through the drinesse of the yeere) that he wanted feeding, he caused this Calfe to be kill'd after it was some eight days old. The offals, and the intrailes are ready drest, take what you please. After this, crying out *Presto*, bee gone, lifting up his legges, and fetching a friscall or two, he flyes away in the ayre in a trice, clapping his heeles with his hands as he runnes along. With this, my heart began to be somewhat lighter then it was before, and it did rejoyce me much to heare him say, that he had the Calves intrailes; the very naming whereof, did make my Bowels to move within me. And now taking

A jest of a country-fellow

[1] Old Christians in Spaine are counted the best, by way of difference from the Moores, whom they call new Christians, as being but lately converted.

[2] *Socarron; el vellaco dissimulado, que solo pretende su interes, y quando habla con vos, os esta secretamente abrasando.*

leave of my former wearinesse, looking cheerily upon him, I said unto him; Mine Host, bring us what you thinke good. CHAPTER V

Thereupon, the Cloth was laid in the turning of an hand, our Linnen was cleane, and our bread was not so bad as before, but our wine was passing good: we had also a fresh Sallad set upon the Board in a faire Plate; but for such washie Tripes as mine then were, I held it no good meate. And had it beene spared by me, either for any of the intrailes, or any one foot of a Calfe, it would never have griev'd me. But these premises might deceive any discreet judgement whatsoever, making the taste of an hungry appetite drunken with the very conceit of his promised fare. The *Italian*, by way of advice, gives us this good lesson; That in the promises of Women, Mariners, and Inne-Keepers, we should place small confidence: for they that are given to commend themselves, and their owne things, (as all these usually do) they do all (guessing the whole by the greater part) generally lye. After he had set downe the Sallad, he brings us in two little Plates, in each of which lay a little of this same Calves-plucke, I say, a little; for he was afraid to give us too much, lest through too much plenty, hunger being satisfied, and the belly glutted, we might more easily come to the knowledge of this deceit of his.

Leading us thus leysurely along, we follow the sent we first ran upon, and it seemed to our taste, that we still did eate, according to that conceit, which wee had intertained of this our supposed tender Veale; and the more wee thought thereon, the greater edge was set upon our appetite; and as wee had a longing desire thereunto, so by degrees wee were still calling for the same hand againe. For my Companion, there was no care to be taken for him, all meates were alike to him; for he was borne amongst Savage people, and bred up by brutish Parents, whose palate was seasoned from the cradle with a clove of Garlicke; and your rude rusticall Clownes, (as a thing not belonging to their either goodnesse or cleanlinesse) in matter of taste can seldome distinguish ill from good. To most of them,

The defect which is in Country people in their feeding

there is a want of perfection in their Senses; and albeit they see, yet do they not see that, which they ought to see: and though they heare, yet do they not heare that which they ought to heare: and so in the rest; but more particularly in the tongue, which was not given them to murmure against any man, much lesse against those, that are gentle and noble, as well in their disposition, as their descent. But these kindes of un-nurtured people are like unto Dogs, who snatch and snap at every thing, swallowing all that comes in the compasse of their chaps, without chewing: or like unto the Ostrich, that will devoure a horse-shoo, though it bee never so red hot. And if a double-soled shoo, which had done service three Winters in Madrid, treading thorow thicke and thinne; *lodo y mierda*, durt and turds had beene set before such a fellow as this, he would have made no bones of it, nor found no difference in the going downe of it. But that I, who was daintily brought up, and borne of civill parents, and such as were neat and curious in their dyet, that I should not find out this deceit, my hunger must needs be great; and this must excuse my errour. The desire that I had to eate something that was good, was exceeding great, so that every thing seemed too little to feed mine eyes. This cunning Rogue, mine Host, gave it us by way of distillation, Limbecke-fashion, now a little, and then a little: and therefore it is no such wonder, had it had farre greater defects, that it should seeme unto me a well-ordered Banquet.

The Hosts craft

Have you not heard it sayd, *Que a la hambre, no ay mal pan?* That all bread is savoury to the hungry? I say, all seemed to me to be Suckets, and Marmalate; and me thought I should never have enough to fill my belly. I demanded, if he had any thing else: He told me, we might (if wee would) have the braines fryed, with some butter and egges. We told him, we would: but we are slower in telling him so, then he in going about it; nay, almost in the dressing of it. In the meane while, lest we might not catch cold with standing still, like your Poste-horses when they have run their stage; he gave us, to intertaine

the time withall, a piece of flesh folded and rolled up, made out of the Tripes, (after the fashion of your rosted Olives of Veale) together with some of the Filme and rinde of the belly. I did not like the taste of it halfe wel; it smelled (me thought) like rotten straw that's throwne out upon the dung-hill. Whereupon I thrust it from me, leaving it to my Companion, who entred roundly upon it, devouring it as greedily, as a man would grapes, comming into a Vineyard in the time of Vintage. Nor did it grieve mee awhit to see him fall to it so lustily, but was rather very glad of it, thinking by this meanes, that when he had beene full-fed therewith, a greater part of the braines would fall to my share. But it fell out contrary to my expectation; for he had never awhit the more cloyd his panch, nor did hee cease to lay about him with as good a stomacke, as if he had not all the day, nor night before, eaten so much as one morsell of bread.

The egges and the braines were set upon the Board; and when my honest Carrier saw this fine Froyze, he began, according to his old wont, to laugh out alowd, with as wide a throat, as you can imagine. I did fret, and fume, and chafe with myselfe out of all cry, conceiting with my selfe, that he made himselfe merry with my miserie, and tooke delight, to represent to my remembrance those former loathsome things, that had lately overthrowne my stomacke.

A guilty Conscience is evermore suspicious, and full of feare

Our Host thereupon looking very soberly on us both, with a watchfull eye observing our behaviour, and with an itching eare, listening to heare what we sayd; seeing his dis-composed laughter so ill seasoned, and un-occasioned, (as he thought) was much mooved thereat; fearing, that hee had found out his Knavery: for untill then, there was not any matter offered, that might moove occasion of laughter. And therefore he was jelous, that the Foxe was now un-earthed, and this must needs be it. And because a guilty person carries his Beard[1] evermore upon his

[1] *Traer la barba sobre el ombro: Vivir recatado, y con recelo, como hazen los que tienen enemigos, que van bolviendo el rostro á un lado, y al otro, de donde naçio el refran.*

shoulder; *et umbræ suæ imagine concutitur*, and is afraid of his owne shadow; because his owne conscience doth accuse him; and the committed fault, represents the deserved punishment: Every the least act, or inkling of any thing whatsoever, he imagineth, that it is all meant against him; and that the very ayre doth whistle foorth his offence, and publisheth it to all the world.

This poore Rogue, (albeit a very villaine) hardened in roguery, and habituated in mischiefe, and being steeped, and layen long in soke, (as it were) in thefts, and all kinds of coozenages, was now out of heart, and grew silly and weake-spirited, and was ready to quake for feare. Besides, such kind of men are commonly Cowards, and have onely an outside of men, but no manhood at all. Why is it (thinke you) that some men hacke and hew, and threaten to kill and slay, and like Tygres lay about them? I will tell you the reason of it. They do this, not out of true metall, but to make others afraid, and to supply by this roaring carriage, the defect of their courage: being like herein, unto dogges; whereof, those that are barkers, are the least biters: they are like your little Melitean [1] dogges, or a kind of foysting-Hounds, which are made all of noyse and barking; but if you turne towards them, they clap their taile betweene their legges, and runne away. Our Host was (as I have told you) much troubled; for feare, suspicion, and jelousie, is a propertie, that is still incident to an evill liver. He had quite lost his stirrops, nor did he know how or which way to recover his feat; but began to sweare with many great and horrible oathes, that it was very good Veale that hee had set before us, and that we had no just cause, nor reason to laugh as we did; and if need were, I could bring you an hundred witnesses to testifie as much.

These words he uttered with much passion; with a face as red as fire, that the blood seemed to trickle downe his cheekes, and sparkles to flash for very anger foorth his eyes. The Carrier lifting up his head, and looking

[1] *Meliteos si dizen, porque se trahian de Malta.*

earnestly upon him, told him; Who medles with you, (my friend) what wrong have we done you, that you are so cholericke? We do not touch upon you, no not so much as to aske you how you do, or how old[1] you are? Have you any Edict,[2] or Proclamation here in the house, that doth set a taxe or rate upon laughing; or to what proportion and quantitie your ghests shall be tyed to laugh, if at any time he be so disposed, upon paine of some great forfeit? or is this a generall sessing set thereupon, and you alone have got the Monopoly thereof into your hands? If it be so, good mine Host, let every man weepe, or laugh, as he will himselfe; and take that a Gods-name which is your due, and recover your right of us by order of Law. I tell you, Sir, you are mistaken in me; for I am of that free disposition, that if I were minded to laugh at any thing of yours, I am not so meale-mouth'd, but I would plainely tell you at what I laught. CHAPTER V

These egges now put me in mind of those other, which my Companion here did eate to day at an Inne some three Leagues hence. Then hee up and told all that had passed, as my selfe before had delivered unto him; and that which happened afterwards in his presence, betwixt the old Hostesse, and my two young Souldiers; in the relating whereof, he seemed as if hee had beene bathing himselfe all the while in Rose-water, if a man might judge the content he tooke in repeating the same; by his passions, his lowd laughters, strange visages, anticke gestures, and the diversities of postures, in the bowing and writhing of his body, all the while that he was telling him this tale. Mine Hoste, he fell as fast a blessing and crossing himselfe, powring out Volleys of Exclamations, calling upon, and often reiterating the name of Jesus; a thousand times one after another, and lifting up his eyes unto heaven, The Spaniards fashion of wondring

[1] A metaphor borrowed from women, who cannot abide to be askt, how old they are.

[2] The Spanish word is *Aranzel*, which is a Decree, or Law, which sets a taxe upon such things as are solde. *Tabula est, ubi scribitur ordo et pretium rerum venalium*, derived of *a, articulo arabico*, and *rancel, que vale tanto, como decreto, determinaçion, assiento.*

sayd; Our blessed Lady be my helper; let her still be present with me! *Mal haga Dios, á quién mal haze su Oficio*, let ill betide him, that performes his function ill. And because in his Theeveries and his Rogueries he was so good a Proficient, he might rest assured, that this malediction did not belong to him, so well had he exercised that trade all his life-time. Hee began afterwards to walk up and down, and seeming somtimes to wonder, somtimes to complaine, at last he cryde out; I wonder a-gods name, that the earth did not open, and swallow up this Inne? How is it possible, that God should dissemble his anger, and forbeare to punish so vile a woman? Does this old Witch live? is she not gone downe quicke to hell? All Travellers have just cause to complaine of her; I now see, that all men have reason to complaine of her ill usage; no man comes away contented from her; all finde fault, not one that comes thence well satisfied, but are sorry that ever they came within her doores. Either all her ghests are very bad, or she her selfe: but it is not to bee imagined so many can be all bad; and therefore sure the fault is onely hers.

Mine Host by railing on the old Hostesse, discovers the knavery of Inne-keepers

For these, and other the like tricks, no passenger will stay to bait at her Inne, they have all set a crosse upon her doore, they blesse themselves when they goe by, and make large strides till they bee past that wicked house. I sweare unto you, she should be soundly whipt, if she were well serv'd, that all other coozening queanes, such as she is, might take example by her. Her Signe was once pull'd downe, and order taken, that shee should not keepe victualling any more. And I much wonder, that she turning againe to the old byas, the officers returne not againe to punish her anew.

There is something in it, as the Ant said, but what it is I cannot tell you, that makes her to doe as she does. There must be some mysterie in it, what ever it be: for she robs and coozens with the like liberty to day, as she did yesterday; and now, as last yeere: And (which is worst of all) she coozens with that confidence, as if she

were commanded so to doe. And sure it must needs be so; for the Guards, the Searchers, the Promoters, and the Alguazils, all see her dealings, and know them well inough; yet they winke at them, and say not so much as blacke is her eye. These I warrant you be her fee'd men, she gives them good content, and greazes them in the fist with that, which she filches from others. For if it were not so, as sure as the coat is on your back, they would have another fling at her, and pay her home againe with a poxe in her owne kinde.

Howbeit (wretched woman as she is) it is punishment inough unto her, that she liv'd so long, as to discredit her house. For if she had kept good meat in her house, and us'd her ghests well, behaving her selfe civilly, and demanding reasonable reckonings, her custome would have been good, and all Travellers would have flockt unto her house. And you know, *De muchos pocos hiziera mucho*; Many a little, makes a mickle. For, by carrying but one graine of corne away with him at once, the Ant fils his granary, and lives in store and plenty all the yeere long. And had she done so, the proudest Officer of them all, could not have set his foot upon her neck, and teare her ungodly gaines out of her throat. But shame light upon her, and all such as she is. The Divell take such unconscionable Inne-keepers.

When he had come thus farre and made his full point, I thought he would there have left. But hee comes about againe, giving us this cloze for a farewell: Blessed bee that unspotted purity of the Virgin Mary, that though I am but a poore man; yet I thanke God for it, there is no such ill usage in my house, no such deceitfull tricks; Every thing is heere sold for the thing it is: no Cats, for Conies; nor Mutton, for Veale. *Limpieza de vida, es lo que importé*, a cleere conscience, is that, which will carry a man through thicke and thin. He may goe bare-faced through the world, and never bee ashamed, that hath led an innocent life. Let every man enjoy that which is his owne, and not defraud and deceive one another.

Heere he stopt, and tooke in fresh breath, which was no more then needed, considering how fast his tongue walkt: And though happely he might thinke, that we might the more willingly give him the hearing now that we had supt; yet he heere cuts off the thread of his Discourse, and says no more, giving us in stead of our second Course, two or three Olives, as bigge as Nuts. We intreated him that against the next morning we might have a morsell of his Veale made ready for us. He undertooke that care, and we went to take our rest. Our boulsters, were our pack-Saddles; and our bedding the cloathes that covered our Packs, which we stretch out as plaine as wee could upon the bare Floore: and so we past over that night, as well as we could.

CHAPTER VI

Guzman goes on, in recounting what succeeded with his Host of Cantillana, who had given him to eate of his young Mule, and of the misfortunes that befell the said Guzman: And how it is not good upon the way to quarrell with our Host

Guzman is extremely bitten by Fleas

AD I, the Sunday morning following, when it was day, been set in the Market-place in Sevill, or at my mothers owne doore: I am doubtfull, whether they would have knowne me or no. For I was monstrously Flea-bitten by that infinit number of Fleas; which had fed that night on my carkase, that it seemed they likewise indured a deare yeere, and that I was offered up unto them for a prey. And so in the morning I got me up, looking for all the world, like one that had been sick

of the small Pox, or infected with the Meazels; my face and hands, and all my whole body over, not having one free place, or one spot of white, no, not so much as you might put a pins point betweene; so miserably was I tormented with them.

Drinking freely, what it effecteth

But fortune was herein so favourable unto me, that what with the wearinesse of the journey, and taking a cup or two over-night more then ordinary, I slept soundly, dreaming heavenly dreames, no noise hindring my quiet rest; till that my Companion, whose minde ranne upon hearing Masse betimes in the morning, and of his seven Leagues which he had farther to goe, did awaken me.

We rise by the breake of day, before the Sunne was up. And calling presently for our breakfast, it was brought us in; but it did not like me so well, as it did my fellow: for every morsell, that went downe his throat, seemed to him, as if he had swallowed so many bits of the brawne of some yong tender Peacocks, and he did so much commend the goodnes of it, as if all the world could not affoord a daintier dish. And I was forced so to esteeme of it, by laying my faith upon another mans taste, attributing that defect to mine owne bad palate, which this hungry hound had inherited from the Asse his father. But, to speake the plaine truth, it was starke naught, and as vile meat as a man could eate, and did not sticke to speake it selfe unto mee in a knowne language.

To me it seemed tough, and unsavoury, and of that little which I did eate over-night at supper, my stomake was so sur-charged with it, lying as heavy within me as Lead, that I was not able for my life to digest it. And albeit I was somewhat fearefull, lest my fellow should finde fault with me, yet did I not sticke to say unto mine Host; How comes this flesh to be so tough, and of that evill rellish, that a man can scarce fasten upon it with his teeth? Hee told me; Do not you see, Sir, that it is flesh that hath been newly kill'd, and wants time for the mortifying and making of it tender? Hereupon, my Companion taking his Q: It is not (quoth he) any lack of mortifying,

or hanging in the ayre; or that it does not eate tender and short inough, that makes this Gentleman to be so squeamish: but because he hath been fed from his cradle with spice-Buns, Sugar-Cakes, and fresh Egges, all other meates save these, are both hard to his teeth and stomake. I shrunke up my shoulders, and held my peace, as one that knew full well, that I was now as it were in another kinde of world, and that it was but one dayes patience more, and then I should be out of danger of understanding such kinde of language any longer.

But for all this, I could not here-with rest contented, but still mee thought this meat had an ill smatch with it, of I know not what.

And as I was thinking thereon, it presently came in my minde what unnecessary oathes mine Host made the night before, when he vow'd and swore it was Veale.

This swearing and staring of his, I did not like halfe well, and did therefore thinke, he did the rather lye, because he did so deepely sweare: for the truth hath no need of the confirmation of an Oath, unlesse it be in open Court before a Judge, or in case of great necessitie.[1] Besides, all such satisfaction, as offers it selfe by way of prevention, before the thing delivered, is questioned, or called into doubt, makes the faith of the reporter to bee evermore suspected. I knew not what did ayle me, or what might be the cause of this; for although I did not really conceive any assured ill, I did as little presume, that there could be any good meaning herein. It was onely a touch of my imagination, a strange apprehension, that I had in my head at that time: Whereupon I did not long dwell, nor made any great reckoning of it. So passing it over, I call'd for a reckoning, my Companion told me, I should let my purse alone, for he would pay for us both. Whereupon I went aside, leaving him to be the Pay-master: thinking with my selfe, that out of courtesie, and this our new acquaintance, he was not willing, that I should pay my share of so small a shot.

[1] *Qui sæpé iurat, sæpé periurat.*

CHAPTER VI

I was very thankefull to him in my heart for this his kindnesse, and was not wanting to sing forth his praises, for this his freenesse and love, which he had showne unto me, ever since that he met me upon the way, giving me my horse-hyre, and my dyet *gratis*; not suffering me to spend one penny in his company.

I thought with my selfe, this world would still hold, and that wheresoever I went, I should meet with some one or other that would beare my charges, and let me ride for nothing. I had now taken heart unto me, and began to be prettily well flesht, and to forget my mothers teat, as if it had been noynted with Aloes, Worme-wood, or the like bitter stuffe, and so in all other things did I doe the like, whereunto I had beene formerly accustomed. And because it should not be said of me, *Que delos ingratos estava lleno el infierno*; That hell is full of ungratefull persons: While he was paying the shot, I was willing to shew some part of my thankefulnesse, by leading out his Asses to drinke, and carrying them backe againe to their cratches, to the end, that while they were saddling and making all things ready, they might champe upon their strawe, and make an end of their provender. I put a helping hand to all that was needfull, rubbing their foreheads and their eares, as well as I was able.

He that receives a courtesie, ever ought to shew his readinesse to doe that man service from whom it comes

Whil'st I was busied in this, I had laid my Cloke upon a bench hard by, which like Quick-silver, before the fire, or smoake before the winde, was vanisht away in an instant, that I could never set eye on it any more; nor could devise in the world, what should become of it. I thought with my selfe, that either mine Host or my Consort, had, to make themselves merry therewith, hid it from me in jest. But it was now no more a jesting matter, for they beganne to sweare in good earnest that they had it not, nor knew what was become of it; I made diligent search for it even to the very gate which was shut, and had not yet been opened. There was no body there in the house but our selves, and mine Host, and therefore me thought it was impossible, that it should be lost, and that I might

peradventure forget my selfe, and have put it apart in some other place. Hereupon, I sought up and downe all the house; and going out of the Hall into the Kitchen, it was my hap to come into a back-Court, where I found a great plash of fresh bloud, and hard by it a Mules skinne, fairely stretcht out to its full breadth and length, from the which the feet were not yet cut off; The eares were there at large, and all that part of the head towards the fore-head, neere whereunto were those other bones belonging to the head, onely the tongue, and the braines were wanting: Which I no sooner perceived, but I was presently confirmed in my doubt.

Hereupon I streight goe forth to call in my Companion; To whom, when I had made show of the Hide, that had bound in our breakefast and our supper, I then said unto him; What thinke you now, Sir? Are not those things (trow you) Sugar-cakes, and new-laid Egges, in comparison of these that we eate at home? This is that Veale, forsooth, which you so extolled to the skies; and this the Host, you promised should provide us such dainty cheere.

What thinke you of the supper now, and the breakefast which he hath bestowed upon us? Hath he not dealt well with us I pray? have we not beene excellently well used? He (good man) is none of these coozening Hosts, and cheating Inne-keepers, that will sell a Cat for a Cony; and put away Mutton, for Veale. This is that innocent man, that may goe unmaskt throughout the world, and care not who sees him, and lookes him in the face, he is so honest a man. This is that *integer vitæ, scelerisque purus*, so unspotted in his life and conscience, and so free from all ill dealing, that out of his owne integritie, made no bones to curse our Hostesse, and the evill usage of her Ghests.

He was strooken so dumpe, and so full of wonder, to see what I had show'd him, that he had not a word to say; but with his head cast downe into his bosome, went slinking away from me, and was so amazed at this strange sight, that all the day after till we parted company, I could not get from him so much as a word, save what past at our

parting when we were to take our leave each of other. And that which then came from him, seemed to bee drawne out of the very guts of him, as you shall heare anon. CHAPTER VI

Howbeit, I was not (as every man may imagine) very well pleased with this unhappy accident; yet notwithstanding, (that this his floud of laughter might by this meanes de dammed up, or the current thereof turn'd another way, wherewith every moment before, my very heart and soule was overflowne, and in a manner, quite drowned.) I was wonderfully over-joyed with this my misfortune, which did so much the lesse grieve me, because he had so great a share in it.

What with this (which was vantage inough) and the strong beliefe that I had that no man but mine Host could possibly convay away my Cloake, I began somewhat more boldly to charge him with it; It being ever incident to a good cause, to put strength into weakenesse; and to adde courage to the faint-hearted I began to put it home to him, and told him plainely that hee should answere me my Cloake, and that he had stolne it: But he very scornefully denies it, jeering and fleering at me; and the more earnest I was, the more merry he makes himselfe. Wherewith my patience was so much mooved, that I could not hold, but threatned him (in my choller) with the Justice; yet did I not touch at all on this new businesse, nor spake one word to him of that which I had seene. But he, for that I was a young Lad, a poore Boy, and no body to take my part, began to domineere over me, telling me, that he had a rod for me in his pocket, and other the like reproachfull words, termes onely befitting Cowards, and men of base condition, such as himselfe. But because worms will turne againe, if they be trod on, and the gentlest Lambes grow mad, if they be too much wrong'd, upon multiplying of words one begetting another; and the latter worse then the former, at last wee fell foule. And as the fewnesse of my yeeres, and weakness of my strength would give me leave, I tore out halfe a brick-bat from the side of a Bench there-by; and threw it at him as hard

He that hath right, hath courage

as ever I could drive; which, if I had hit him withall, and that he had not hid himselfe behind a pillar, I thinke I had beaten out his braines, and beene fully revenged of the wrong he did me. But hee scap't my hands, and ranne as fast as his legges would carry him into his chamber; whence he came foorth in all haste with his sword drawne in his hand.

He that is faulty turnes coward

Here you may see, what manner of men these roaring-Boyes be, since that this great Gull doth not now seeke to defend himselfe with the force of his strong and brawnie armes, against those weake and tender twigges of mine; forgetting, that he said, he would whip me, seeking now to offend mee by force of armes, I beeing but a grissle, and a poore simple dis-armed chicken. In this manner then, he makes towards me with his naked sword; whilest I fearing what might follow, stood upon my gard with two pibble-stones, which I had pluck't out of the pavement. Which when hee saw I had now ready in my hand, his courage began to be abated, and did not dare to draw neerer unto me.

Now with the noyse and out-cries that were made upon this occasion, the whole Inne was in an uprore; and all the neighbours there-abouts, hearing the stirre, came flocking in upon us, to see what the matter was. All the whole street hasted thither, and with them a great throng of people, as well Justices, as Notaries. There came in two Alcaldes, both at the same instant, and each of them strove to have the hearing of the cause, labouring to prevent each other. And the Notaries for their private gaine, every one said, that this businesse did belong unto him; whereupon they grew at difference and oddes betweene themselves.

Upon this contention, grew a second quarrell, no lesse fierce and tumultuous, then was ours: for on both sides, they digg'd up their Grandfathers graves, twitting one another in the teeth with their fathers and their mothers, not sparing one anothers wives, ripping up their faults, and the course of life that they led; wherein perhaps they did not lie: But they would no more understand

one another, then did we. Whilest we were in this hurly-burly, come in certaine *Regidores*, accompanied with other worshipfull Burgomasters of the Towne, who laboured to make peace betweene them, and laid hold on me. *Que siempre quebra la soga, por lo mas delgado* : for the weakest must still go to the wal : and the Skeane there breaketh soonest, where the thred is finest. The stranger, the poore soule, the miserable man, he that ha's no shelter, no friends to sticke unto him ; no great Ones to favour him, he that is deprived of all succour and comfort, and hath no body to defend him, he is the man, whom the Justice doth first take in hand.

They would needs know, what this stirre was, and whence it grew. They call'd me aside, and tooke my confession : I plainely told them all that had passed ; but because some that were there by, might chance to over-heare me, I went apart with the Alcaldes, and told them in secret, that which I knew concerning the *Machuelo*, or little young Mule. They were first of all desirous to approve and verifie the cause ; but it seeming unto them, that they had time inough to dispatch all, they used diligence for the apprehending of mine Host ; who was carelesse of any ill that might come unto him for that offence. And perswading himselfe, that all this inquiry was onely about the Cloake, made but a jest of it, and laugh't at it as a thing of nothing, and could no way touch him, for default of Information, and those due proofes that I was to make, having no man, besides the Carrier, to witnesse for me, that I was seen to come in thither with a Cloake.

But afterwards perceiving, that by little and little, this piece of hangings came to be seene, to wit, the skinne, and the rest of the appurtenances, the copy of my Gentlemans countenance was quickly altered, and began suddenly to looke blanke upon the matter : so that, when they began to examin him, and had withall before his face shewd him the skinne ; confessing the fact, hee was convicted, not having the heart to deny any thing, but told them the truth of all that had past.

For it is an assured truth, that base-minded men, infamous in their life, and ill-conditioned in their carriage and manners, are (as I said before) ranke cowards, and of no courage in the world. For, without having the torment given him, or before ever that he was threatned with the Racke; undemanded, he declared the Thefts, and the Rogueries that he had done, as well in that his Inne, as his robbing upon the high-way, when he was a shepherd: whereby he got him a Stocke, to set up for himselfe in the world. I all this while listened very close; looking still when his confession should bring my cloake to light; but out of the malice and hatred that he bare unto me, that was quite left out. I used my best diligence I could, to make it appeare, but all would not serve the turne. After they had made an end of taking our declarations; I meane, the Carriers and mine, because we were strangers, they did in that particular ratifie and approve what we had deposed. And whilest this Plea was depending, whether or no (till it were determined) they should carry me to prison, and keepe me there (*tras paciente, aporreado* (as they say) I must have the wrong, and be beaten too,) there were divers disputes therupon. The Notaries were very glad of this, and they did pretend I should: but one of the Alcaldes stood up and said, That I had reason on my side, and was in no fault at all: and that they had no reason to question me any farther; for it was punishment enough already for me, and too much too, that I was left thus naked in my hose and dubblet, and was coozened of my cloake. Hereupon, they let mee goe, but mine Host, he was led away to prison. And leaving him there, we prepare for our journey; and all things being made ready, we begin to set forward, passing along that street, where the Clergy-men stood looking for us, each of them tooke his Asse, and away we go. By the way I told them the whole successe of the businesse: they blest themselves, when they heard of it, and much pitied my case. But because they could not helpe it, they committed it to God. My selfe and my Companion, what with the long time that

was spent in this broyle, and the haste we had to be gone, wee went away without hearing Masse; seeming rather to flie, then go foorth of the Towne. I (for my part) never mist Masse before, being accustomed all my life-time to that daily exercise of devotion. From that time forward, it entred into my head, That from so bad a beginning, it was impossible to looke for a good ending. And that now, nothing could succeed well and happily unto me. And so it fell out, as you shall heare hereafter. Nor can it be otherwise expected, when we serve our selves, and not God first; and not begin with him, before we begin our businesse.

He that leaves God, God will leave him

CHAPTER VII

Mans misfortune is here discoursed of, and to that purpose you have a story told you of the gods of those ancienter times: And how Guzman, being thought to bee a Thiefe, was apprehended; but afterwards being knowne what he was, hee was set at liberty. One of the Clergie-men promiseth to tell us a story, to entertaine the time withall, upon the way

THE Egyptians, a great while ago, in those times of old being notable Sooth-sayers, (as indeed they were) amongst many other errours, which they had, this was one amongst the rest, that they adored Fortune, as a Goddesse; verily beleeving, that there was some such thing indeed. To her, they celebrated a Feast on the first day of the yeere, preparing sumptuous Tables, making great Feasts and costly Banquets, in a thankefull acknowledgement of the fore-passed yeare,

The Egiptians adored Fortune as a goddesse

and intreating her favour, for that which was to come. They were fully perswaded, that this Goddesse was she, that had the disposall of all things, giving and taking away at her pleasure, as supreme Governesse over all humane things. This they did, because they wanted the knowledge of one onely true God, whom we adore and worship, by whose powerfull hand, and divine will, heaven and earth are governed, and whatsoever is created in them both, be it visible, or invisible. It seemed somewhat strange unto them, and were touched therewith to the quicke, when misfortunes began to light upon them; to see how one mischiefe came upon the necke of another; one no sooner past, but another at the heeles of them, not giving them one hower of ease and quiet, never making an end, till they had made an end of man, and quite overthrowne him horse and foot: And how againe at another time (like so many Cowards) they come trooping all at once upon us, and never leave assaulting us, till they have utterly ruin'd us, and throwne this our house of clay downe to the ground.

And on the contrary side againe, the Ayre doth not ascend with that nimblenesse and quicke motion to the top of the highest mountaines, as Fortune doth elevate and lift men up by wayes and meanes, neither seene, nor thought upon, never suffering them to continue still firme, either in the one, or t'other estate; to the end that he that is dejected, may not despaire; and hee that is exalted, may not presume. If the light of faith were wanting unto me, as it was unto them, I might (giving credit to this their errour) happely say, when such like misfortunes should befall me; *Bien vengas mal, si solo vienes*, Welcome is that misfortune which comes alone: yesterday morning I did complaine of little wearinesse, and of the two demy-Chickens that I had to dinner, going disguized in your Hermits habit, as unwilling to be knowne. Afterwards, I came to make my supper upon the stinking panch of a young Mule; and which was worse, to feed upon the flesh and braines thereof, which was all one in a manner,

as if I should have devoured mine owne flesh; I meane, by his fathers[1] side; which may be every mans case, as well as mine. And for an upshot of all, the ill lucke that I had at last, to be coozened of my Cloake. *Poco danno espanta, y mucho amansa*: little losses doe onely startle and amaze men at the first, but great ones do quell and daunt a man, making him as gentle as a Lambe.

What treason hath beene plotted against me? what squint-ey'd Starre hath scowl'd upon me? what misfortune followed me, since I came from home? For from the time, that I first put foorth of doores, all things have gone amisse with me, one mischance being the fore-runner of another, and the sad presager of worser things to come, which like a double Tertian went increasing upon me, every fit being worse and more violent, then the former, not allowing me the least *intervallum* of time, or any space or respit in the world to take any rest.

Man's life, what it is

Mans life is a warre-fare upon earth, there is no certainty therein; no settled assurance, no estate that is permanent; no pleasure that is perfect; no content that is true; but all is counterfeit and vaine. Wilt thou see, that this is true? Then hearken to that which I shall tell thee.

A morall Fable of the gods of old-time, and the Councel that was held in heaven against Mankind

The great god Jupiter (for so the Poets faigne him) having created all things upon earth; and man to be the enjoyer of them, commanded the god Content, to reside in the world, not beleeving, nor preventing the ingratitude, which afterwards they fell into, following their owne proper pleasures and delights, and bearing themselves in a high and proud fashion; for having this god continuing amongst them, they did not so much as thinke on any other. To him they did sacrifice, to him they offered their oblations, his name they celebrated with joy, and to him onely did they sing Songs of prayse and thanksgiving. Jupiter scorning this contempt, and being mightily offended with man for this strange neglect, called a Councell of the gods; and when they were all assembled together, he made unto them a long Discourse, wherein he informed them,

[1] The Sire of a Mule, is an Asse.

of the evill Correspondence which man held with him, for that they did onely adore Content, as their true god ; not considering the benefits which they had received from his prodigall hand, being meerely his workmanship, and by him created of nothing. And that therefore they should deliver their Opinions, what order was to be taken, for the redressing of so foule an abuse ; and what Medicines to be applied for the curing of this their madnesse.

Some of the milder gods, out of their tender hearts, and mercifull natures, spake thus unto Jupiter :

Man, you know, is but a weake kind of creature, framed of a frayle and brittle matter, a corruptible substance, soone dissolv'd and turn'd to nothing ; and therefore we thinke it fit, that they should be holpen and held up by us, and that we should yeeld them our succour and assistance in all that we can. For, if it were possible, that we could exchange fortunes with them, and were in the same state and condition as they are, and every way equall with them, I doubt me, we should do just as they do. And therefore we are not to make any great reckoning of the matter : but if we doe, and that they must be proceeded against, we for our parts are verily perswaded, that some mild and gentle correction will be a sufficient remedy for the present.

Momus would faine have spoke his mind, and his tongue itch't to bee let loose, having already entred into some free language, and would have lash't out farther, had he not beene commanded to hold his peace, and to forbeare till it came to his turne, and then he should have a full hearing. Hee would gladly have taken hold on that occasion, to have incensed Jupiter, because it did so fairely offer it selfe unto him : but obeying for the present, he meditated in the meane while on a long Oration, which he meant should make for his purpose, when it came to his turne to speake. Howbeit, there were not some wanting in the *interim*, of equall (almost) condition with himselfe, and of the same humour, who stood up and said :

It is not fit (great god of Heaven) to leave so heynous

a fault unpunished: for the offence is infinit, being committed against so infinit a Majestie; and therefore the punishment ought likewise to be infinit. Our opinion is, that they should be utterly destroyed, and made an end of at once, and never to have any more of them created anew; for there is no necessity at all of their being and living in the world, but may very well be spared. Others would not agree to that motion, but did hold it fit, that great store of Thunder-bolts, with fearfull flashes of Lightning, should be throwne downe upon them, and consume them all; and that others more good should be created a-new. CHAPTER VII

Thus as they were delivering their opinions, being more or lesse rigorous, according to their severall qualities and complexions, till it came to Apollo's turne to speake, who craving leave of the House, and their favour obtained, in a grave voice, and with a cheerefull countenance, he thus exprest himselfe:

Apollo's speech in mans favour

Supreme Scepter-swaying Jupiter, highest amongst the gods, both in power, and in pitie: That grievous accusation, wherewith thou chargest Man, is so just, that we cannot gaine-say, or contradict any vengeance, which thou shalt take of them. Yet withall, I can not (out of that great respect which I beare unto thee) but utter what I thinke, and plainly to shew unto thee, what I have conceived in my minde, my words being as free from passion, as I hope they shall be from offence.

If thou destroy the world, in vaine then are those things, which thou hast therein created; and it were imperfection in thee, to un-make that, which thou hast already made; only for to mend that which thou now findest amisse: Much lesse, would I have thee to repent thy selfe that thou hast made Man; for that will be but to discredit thy selfe and thine owne worke. Besides, how can it stand with the power and goodnesse of a Creator, to take too strict a course against his Creature, and to exceed, by extraordinary meanes, in his chastisements?

To destroy these that are now living, and to create

others a-new, I hold that not so fit to be done by thee. For thou must either give them, or not give them free-will: if thou give them it, they must necessarily then be such manner of men, as their fore-fathers were: If thou not give it them, they shall not be men: And so thou shalt have created in vaine that so great and glorious a frame of Heaven, Earth, Starres, Moone, Sunne, together with the composition of the Elements, and millions more of things, which thou hast made in so exact a manner, and such a singular perfection. So that (which importeth your service, if you will be pleased to take it into consideration) there remaineth but one thing to be done to set all right againe, without seeking for any other remedy; or that you shall be driven to use any violent or rigorous proceeding against them, to the prejudice of your clemencie.

Thou (O Jupiter) gav'st them the God Content, whom they were to have with them as long as it pleased thee, and no longer: for upon thy will and pleasure, all things both in Heaven and earth have their dependency. Now, had they been so wise, that they could have continued thankefull towards thee, and have conserved themselves in justice and obedience towards thee, it had been a thing repugnant to the goodnesse of thy nature and justice, not to uphold and protect them, by inlarging thy favours towards them, and multiplying thy blessings upon them. But since they have dis-merited this by disobedience, thou oughtest in some sort to punish them. For it is not fit, that they should in tyrannous manner, and with a strong hand possesse these so great blessings, to offend thee thereby: But thou oughtest rather to take this their god from them, and in his stead to send downe his brother Discontent amongst them, who is very like in favour unto him, and doth resemble him so neere, that a man can hardly discerne the one from the other. And so by this meanes, they will ever hereafter come to acknowledge their own misery, and thy mercy; thy happy estate, and their owne wretched condition; thy ease, and their trouble; their paine, and thy glory; thy power, and their

owne weakenesse. And then, as thou shalt see cause, thou maist distribute thy favours to those that shall deserve them; and according to thy loving kindnesse recompence every man according to thine owne good will and pleasure, not making thy benefits alike common to the good and the bad, by suffering all men equally to enjoy one and the same happinesse. This course being taken with them, I am of opinion, that it will not onely be a sufficient punishment unto them; but will also bring them to a due acknowledgement of their errour. I have spoke my minde and shall now leave it unto thee (thou mercy-imbracing Jupiter) to doe that herein which shall sute best with thine owne good liking, and shall make most for thy service. CHAPTER VII

With this briefe advice, he ended his Oration. Then Momus, with his venemous tongue, began to lay about him; labouring to exaggerate the offence, and to set it forth in its vilest colours, induced thereunto not so much for goodnesse sake, as that inveterated hatred which he evermore bare unto mankinde. But notice being taken of his passion (which was a knowne disease in him) his opinion was reproved, and cryde downe by the generall voice of that highest Court of Parliament: All commending the motion that was made by Apollo. The execution of whose speech was (with an unanimous consent) committed to Mercury: Who presently (spreading his wings, and breaking with them through the ayre) descended downe upon the earth, where he found the men of this world with their god, Content, feeding and making merry together, doing him all the honour they could devise, being farre from any the least thought, that this their god should (while the world indured) be alienated from their possession. Momus mans ancient enemy

Mercury, by order from Jove, descends on earth, and to what end

Mercury came to this god, where he was; and having in secret delivered the Embassage unto him, sent from the gods above, was (though sore against his will) inforced to yeeld thereunto. The men were hereupon in an uprore, and sought to hinder it all they could, and began with might and maine to interest themselves in the cause; and

seeing that there was no remedy, but that this their god must be taken away from them, they strove to defend him with all the strength they could make; and taking strong hold of him, they tugged hard for him, as desirous to retaine him still amongst them.

Jupiter perceiving how the world went, and what a coyle they kept about him, came downe amongst them, and whilest these men were busied in laying fast hold on his cloathes, (using a pretty slight) he cunningly convay'd away Content from amidst his cloathes, leaving them Discontent in his stead, with the same cloathes, and the very same habit of raiment, wherewith Content was at that time apparelled, taking him from thence away with him to heaven. Wherewith the men that were in this broyle were very well pleased (though thus deceived) thinking that they had prevailed in their purpose, and obtained what they desired, since they had their god still amongst them: But it was not so well with them, as they thought it to be.

This errour of those former times (the same deceit yet living still amongst them) hath continued even to this present age. Men did thinke that Content remained stil with them, and that they had him sure inough heere upon earth. But it is nothing so; for it is onely the bare raiment, and outward shape and resemblance, which they injoy with them; and Discontent, clapt into his cloathes. And if thou beleeve otherwise, or conceiv'st the contrary, thou art wide of the truth, and a meere stranger thereunto. Wilt thou, that I make this plaine unto thee? Marke well then what I shall say unto thee.

Weigh and consider with thy selfe, in any kinde of manner thou thy selfe shalt devise: the Feasts, the Sports, the Bankets, the Musicks, all the delights and joyes, and whatsoever else may most move thy inclination to the highest point of all, which thine owne desire can suggest and paint forth unto thee to the life. If I shall aske thee by the way, Whither goest thou? Thou wilt answere me perhaps, and that very proudly: To such a feast of

Content. I give it for granted, that there thou doest receive it, and that the place doth affoord it thee; the Gardens being fresh and full of flowers; the Rivers plated with their silver-streames, and that the Fountaines distilling their drops of pearle, may much cheere and glad thy heart. I suppose that thou hast banketed thy selfe in sweet and pleasant Arbours, where neither the Sunne did offend thee, nor the ayre annoy thee. And that thou didst injoy thy desires to their full height, and that thou hadst all the sports and pastimes that a man could wish. Yet notwithstanding, there is no contentment so absolute in this world, which is not watred with some sorrow. And though in all these things thou hadst no distaste at all given thee; but hadst every thing according to thine owne mind: yet when thou returnest home to thine own house; or layest thee down in thy bed to take thy rest, it is not possible but thou shalt find thy selfe weary, dusty and sweaty, to have lost thy stomake, or taken cold, to grow heavy, melancholly, and sad; and peradventure become either mad, or dead. For amidst our greatest pleasures, happen the greatest misfortunes: And are usually wont to be unto us Vespers of feare, and of horrour; and not Vespers, where the night passeth merrily away from the beginning to the middle, and from the middle to the end: for in the midst of this thy idolatry, all shall bee taken from thee. Set not thy heart therefore upon them; but slight them, and let them goe by, as if thou didst not know them: for there is no trust to be had in them.

Now, by this time, (I doubt not) but thou wilt ingenuously confesse, that this disguise did deceive thee, these cloathes coozen thee, and this maske so blinde thy eye-sight; That whereas thou didst verily thinke, that thou hadst Content now safe inough in thy hands, thou hadst nothing more but his outward raiment; and in it, Discontent. Now doest thou see, how there is no Content upon the earth; and that our true Content is onely in Heaven. And therefore, till thou meet with it there; doe not looke for it heere.

True content is in heaven

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

THE FIRST BOOKE

When I resolved on my departure, (O good God) what a deale of content did represent it selfe unto me? Me thought, the very thought of it wrought wonderfully upon me, apprehending no happinesse to be equall unto this. With these eyes of my imagination, I beheld onely Aprill, and the beauty of the Fields in that season; not so much as once thinking on the August, that was to come after: As if I were to suffer nothing, and had been made of some impossible substance, that could not be subject to perturbations; or these foolish crosses of the world. Those long and even wayes, I conceited as things, that I was not to goe; at least, not to be wearied with them. To eate and drinke at your Innes, and other the like vittailing houses, (as one that did not know what kinde of Vermine, these bloud-suckers were,) I thought they would have given me my meat for nothing; or if they did take money for it, that it would have beene much better then what you have heard me tell you. The variety and greatnesse of things; as Birds, Beasts, Mountaines, Woods, Cities, and whatsoever was inhabited with people, as if I had them all ready in my hand, all did figure forth unto me content, and nothing but content; but could not finde it in any thing, but in a good and honest life.

The strange alterations in this world

I did frame in the fabrike of my braine, Castles of Content, and that all things should succeed prosperously with me, and that where-soever I came, I should meet with my Mother, that should make much of me, and my Maid, that should make me unready, and bring my supper to bed to mee, and that should helpe me on in the morning with my cloathes, and fetch me my breakfast. Good God, who would thinke, that the world were so large and so long as it is? I had seene it in some Maps, and me thought it was all plaine and smooth, and huddled (as it seemed there to be) all together, without any great either difference, or distance. I did not imagine, there could have been so many troubles, and so many miseries in it. But to say, I never thought it, is a thing that betrayes a man to have lineally descended of a race of Coxcombs, it is a property,

that belongs onely unto fooles;[1] it is the excuse of rude and ignorant Asses, the childes helpe, and the carelesse mans refuge. For he that is wise and discreet, ought ever to thinke on things afore-hand, to fore-cast the worst; and to prevent a mischiefe before it come. CHAPTER VII

But I did like a simple Youth, (as I was) having neither wit nor government in me; and therefore I was justly punished, for that living so at ease as I did; and being as it were in Paradise, I would goe abroad into the world; and like my first fore-fathers, could not see when I was well; but I know not out of what vaine humour, must goe seeke after the knowledge of good, and ill. How many things began I then to call to minde, when I came out of the Inne without my Cloake, and was not onely coozened, but made a common laughing stocke, to as many as lookt upon me! I would faine have then beene feeding on the flesh-pots of Egypt: O how I did long to be at home againe! But (as the saying is) *el bien, hasta que se pierde, no se conoçe.* Man knowes not what happinesse is, till he want it.[2]

We were all sad and heavy, and jogged on along in a sullen and melancholy kinde of fashion; and now my honest Carrier was no more so full of his laughing, as he was before; the winde was laid in that corner, by the tricke that mine Host had put upon him. Before, he threw stones on my house top, thinking to breake the Tyles, and cracke my Roofe: but when hee found his owne to be made of glasse, he left his flinging, with-drew his hand, and kept himselfe quiet. It is lesse ill, and more discretion to consider with a mans selfe, before he speake, what he may chance to heare; and before that he doe a wrong, whether it may be returned upon himselfe, or no? It is not good for a man to thrust himselfe wilfully into danger. For when a man shall take too much liberty to himselfe; he shall finde a tongue for a tongue, and a hand for a hand. All things have their equall measure; like

Morall lessons

[1] *Insipientis est dicere non putarem.*
[2] *Magis carendo, quàm fruendo,* etc.

doe, like have: And he that will be honoured of all, must honour all.

If it enter not (yet at least it ought) into thy consideration, that what thou hast said or done in secret, either shall, or may be published by some one or other to the world, and that thou maist meet with such a one, that either in word, or in deed, may reply that unto thee, which thou wouldst not willingly heare, and lesse indure: Doe not stand upon thy strength, nor rely too much on thine owne might: For though thy affront be not written in thy fore-head; yet will it be made knowne to all the world. Doe not make those thy enemies, whom with good usage thou maist make thy friends. For it is not good to have any enemy at all, though never so weake. For from a little sparke, ariseth oftentimes a great flame. What thing's so faire and beautifull in it selfe; what more worthy wise-men; what more befitting brave spirits and valiant Gentlemen, then to measure their actions by the rule of reason, to bridle and reine in their passions, and to carry an even hand in all that they doe; to the end that they may not act any thing un-advisedly, and put themselves upon extremities? Doest thou not see, how the world is now altred with our Carrier? He was now as silent as the night, not a word that comes from him. He laughs no more, but hangs downe his head in his bosome, not daring for shame to lift it up. Our good honest Clergy-men rode mumbling their Mattins to themselves; I was thinking on mine owne mis-fortunes: and when all and every one of us were as it were in a wood, even in the thickest of all our contemplations, (every man thinking upon his owne businesse) two Ministers of justice, with their Officers at their heeles, came in pursuit of a Page, that had stolne from his Master great store of money and jewels. And by the markes that were given them; it should seeme it was such another strippling as my selfe. They had no sooner spide me, but they cryde out aloud: Ah thou thiefe, have we caught thee? wee have thee safe enough now, thou canst not escape our hands: And

Guzman apprehended for a Thiefe, and his sufferings

presently hereupon they strooke me off the Asse (my brother) with their Fists; and when they had me downe, laying fast hold on me, they fell a searching mee, thinking to have found the stolne-goods about me.

Sergeants and Catchpoles, an uncivill kind of people

They tooke off the Pack-saddles, searched the Pannels, leaving not so much roome, as you may put a pins-head betweene, which they did not narrowly pry into: and when they could find nothing there, then they beganne to exclaime, and cry out upon me; Ah, thou thiefe, confesse and tell us the truth; for we will hang thee here presently, if thou delay us any longer. They would not heare me, nor admit of any excuse I could make for my selfe; and in despight of the world, without any other cause given, (save their own selfe-will and opinion) I, and no other man, must needs be the fellow. They gave me many blowes, thumpes on the brest, boxes on the eare with the backes of their hands, and many other outrages, wherewith they tormented me, and all that I might not be suffered by them to speake for myselfe, and to pronounce something in mine owne defence. And although it did much grieve me, to see how ill I was used by them, yet I could not choose but laugh to my selfe, for that my com panion was worse dealt withall; laying more load and harder blowes upon him, than me, as a receiver and concealer of this theft, and that he was my partner and sharer therein.

Mans depraved disposition, what effects it worketh

Doest thou not here perceive the perverse inclination of men, who have scarce any feeling of their owne miseries, when they see those of their enemies, to be greater then their owne? I was not halfe Cater-cousins with him, because by his meanes, I had lost my Cloake, and sup't upon a Mule. And therefore I did beare mine owne hurt the better, because hee suffered somewhat more than my selfe. They did beat him without mercy; they had no pitie of him in the world, but were still bawlling upon him, that hee should discover, whither he had carried these goods? and to what secret place hee had conveyd them?

The poore man that was as innocent as my selfe, and as

free from any such fault, as the child that is new borne, did not know in the world what to doe. He thought at first that they had beene but in jest with him ; but when he saw they were in earnest, and past so farre beyond the bounds of sport, and that it was now no longer a jesting matter, He curst the dead to the divell, and all those that should but shed a teare for him.[1] This sport did nothing please him, and wisht by this time with all his heart, that he had never seene mee. The Gowne (as they say) was now brusht cleane, not a specke to bee seene ; all was unfolded, and searched over and over, but nothing at all to bee found : and though the theft appeared not, yet the rigour of their punishing ceased not : But as if they had the Law in their owne hands, or had beene to sit upon us as our lawfull Judges, they did use us most cruelly both in word and deed : perhaps it was given them so in charge amongst other their instructions. Now they being weary with punching us, and wee with suffering it, they began to bind our hands, and pinion our armes, to carry us backe with them to Sevill.

The severest and cruellest Officers that are in all Spaine

Let it be in thy Letany, that God would deliver thee from committing any offence against these three Holy's ; The holy Inquisition,[2] the holy Hermandad,[3] and the holy Crusada : [4] But if thou bee faulty, then pray, That the Lord would deliver thee from the holy Hermandad : for the other Holy's, having (as they have) upright Judges, men of truth, knowledge, and Conscience ; their Ministers notwithstanding and under-Officers, are of a different condition. And your Sergeants and Catch-poles belonging

[1] A Proverbe.

[2] The holy Inquisition is well knowne to the world, what severe courses they take.

[3] *Hermandad*, in Castile, is a certaine Tribunall, that hath a great Jurisdiction, and punisheth the faults committed in the fields, which hath great prerogatives and exemptions from the kings of Spaine : And is in that respect amongst them, that it is styled by the name of *Santa*, or *holy*.

[4] The *Cruzada* is an Indulgence which the Popes granted to those, that went to conquer the Holy-Land, which is now granted to the King of Spaine, by way of Subsidie against Infidels and Heretickes, giving some small almes towards so pious a worke.

What base and vile people, are the Sergeants and Catch-poles

to the holy Hermandad, are in the generall, a kind of most lewd and wicked people; men without Soules, and not worthy to be spoken of, or named amongst honest men. And very many of them, for a very little matter, will not sticke to sweare that against thee, which thou never didst, nor they never saw, more then the money which they tooke, to beare false witnesse against thee, (unlesse thou bestow the wine upon them, or otherwise content them, by greasing their fist.) They are in conclusion, of a rascall kind of race; very Varlets, Buckle-bosomes, Collar-catchers: in a word, they are Sergeants, and Catch-poles; and so by consequence, theeves passants, or but an Ace lesse; and (as we shall tell you hereafter) those that rob the Common-wealth where-soever they come, as if they had a Commission for these their open thefts. And now (my honest Sergeant) me thinkes I heare thee mutter, that I speake amisse; telling mee, that thou (for thy part) art a very honest man, and dost exercise thy Office well, without abuse unto any. I confesse as much, and say, that thou art such an one, and that I know thee to be so. But tell me, my friend, (and let us speake it in secret betweene our selves, that no body may heare us) doest not thou know, (and confesse ingenuously) that this is truth which I speake of thy fellowes? if thou knowst as much, (as thou canst not choose) and that it is so indeed; I talke to them, and not to thee.

Now had we quite lost our Clergy-men, we shooke hands with them at the first, who walked afoot their way, and we ours. Shall I tell you, what I thought with my selfe? if you will give me the hearing, I will. Trust me, all the blowes that I received, nay, Death it selfe, would not have beene halfe so grievous unto me, as to see my selfe brought backe againe, in this manner to mine owne Countrey, if their resolution had held: if they had carried me to any place, where I was unknowne to it, and it unto me, it had not beene a Pins-poynt matter. I should have set light by it, and cast it at my heele, especially considering, that in the end I must be set at libertie, and come off

cleare; and that the truth would at last shew it selfe, and make it knowne to the world that I was not the man, they took me to be. We were drawn along like dogges in a paire of couples, afflicted in that manner as thou mayst imagine, (if ever the like misfortune should happen unto thee). I know not how it came to passe, (but so it was) that one amongst the rest lookt stedfastly upon me, and said to one that was by him; How now, what's this? I feare mee we have taken our marke amisse, and through our too much haste, have run into an errour. The other answered; Why thinke you so? Hee replide; Doe not you know, that he, whom we are to seeke after, wants his left Thumbe; and this Youth you see, is sound in that part? Whereupon they went to read their *Requisitoria*,[1] which did set downe the markes, whereby they should know him, and they found they had beene deceived almost in every one of them. But questionlesse, they had a great desire to beat some-body, and so fell upon him that came first to hand. Presently thereupon, they un-pinion'd us, and loosed our hands, and craving pardon, that they were so much mistaken, they went their way, and left us soundly payd for our paines; taking some few *Quarto's*[2] of the Carrier, for the sight of the Commission, to moysten their mouthes herewith, at the next Inne that they should light on.

Guzman, set free.

No ay mal tan malo, de que no resulte algo bueno.

There is no ill so bad, from whence there doth not arise some good.

If they had not stolne my Cloake from me, by having that upon my backe, they would not have perceived, whether I had beene sound of my thumbes, or no? But had it so falne out, that they should have come to know any such thing by me, it had come so out of season, that rather then I would have confest the fact, I would have first indured a thousand torments. In every thing I had very good

[1] *Requisitoria* is a Judges Warrant to another, wherein he requireth him to execute his command.

[2] The Spanish word *Quarto*, is a kind of brasse coyne, whereof foure make 3. pence.

CHAPTER VII
Guzmans good fortune what it was

fortune. My money spent, my Cloake stolne, my belly hungry, my cheekes buffeted, my necke out of joynt, and my teeth bathed in blood, with the bobs on my nose, and the dashes that they gave mee on the mouth. My Companion, if he were not worse, was no lesse ill intreated then my selfe. And when they had us'd us both thus hardly, to make us amends, they cry us mercy, saying; That we are not the men. I pray marke, what a pretty kind of pardon this was, and in what good time it came: first, they fall a beating of us, before they examine us; and when they have almost maimed us, to make us amends, forsooth, they aske us forgivenesse.

The Clergy-men were now neere at hand, we presently overtake them; they blest themselves when they saw us. But I up and told them, what was the cause of our liberty; for my Companion was so bang'd about the chappes, that he durst not dare to speake, for feare he should spit out his grinders.

Every one got upon his Asse, and we began to spurre on, but not with our heeles; because with them we were not able to reach to our Saddle-skirts. And I assure you in good faith, it were a world to tell you, what a bargaine we had of it; how the Faire went, and what a market we made of it.

Then said the younger of the two Clerkes; No more of this (my friends) it is enough. That we may forget part of these sorrowes past, and intertaine the way with some merriment; when my Companion hath ended his Devotion,[1] I shall relate a Story unto you; much whereof happened in Sevill. We tooke it all as a favour; and the other having now ended his Orizons, attending this Discourse with a deepe silence, and an earnest desire, wee lookt still when he should begin.

[1] The Clergymen in Spaine, when they travell on the way, have certaine set prayers to say.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER VIII

Wherein Guzman de Alfarache relateth the Story of those two Lovers, Ozmin and Daraxa

THE ARGUMENT

How Ferdinand and Isabell, King and Queene of Spaine, tooke Baça, a Citty of the Moores, wherein Daraxa a beautifull and noble Damozell was taken prisoner, whom Queene Isabell brought with her to Sevill, and there left her in the custodie of Don Luys de Padilla. And how Ozmin, a young Gentleman well descended, and inamoured of that Lady, after he had suffered long sicknesse for the imprisonment of his faire Daraxa, went to the said City; together with the divers accidents that happened to them both.

SOone as they had mumbled up their prayers, (which they quickly dispatch't) they shut their Prayer-bookes, and putting them in their *Alforjas*, (which is a kind of Wallet) all of us giving diligent eare unto him, the good Priest began his promised History after this manner:

The Catholike Kings Don Ferdinand, and Donna Isabella, being at the Siege of Baça, it was so well fought on both sides, (being as bravely defended, as it was valiantly assaulted) that for a long time it was not knowne which side had the better, or where the advantage was like to fall, (Fortune had so equally spred her wings.) For albeit, the Kings Forces were the greater, and did exceed the other in number of men; yet the Moores (being likewise many) were wonderfully strengthened by the good disposition of the situation of that City.

The Queene Donna Isabell remained in Jaen, making provision of all things necessary for the Campe. And the

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VIII

King Don Ferdinand went foorth in person to supply the Army; which hee divided into two parts: In the one he planted his Ordinance, recommending the care thereof to the Marquesses of Cadiz, and Aquila, to Luys Fernandez Portocarrero, Lord of Palma, and to the *Commendadores* of Alcantara and Calatrava, besides other Captaines and Souldiers. In the other himselfe was incamped, accompanied with the chiefe of his Nobilitie and Gentry, and most experienced men of Armes; so hedging in the Citie on every side, that it seemed as a Center in the midst of a large Circle.

The two Campes lay some halfe League the one from the other, if the compasse had runne right; but because their passage was stopt, they beleaguerd the other halfe along by the mountaine; and by this meanes were distanced one from the other a League or thereabouts: and because they could hardly succour one another, they agreed (the Councell of Warre having so thought it fit) to make certaine Trenches and Castles, which the King in his owne person did often visit. And albeit the Moores did labour by all meanes possible, to hinder this designe, yet the Christians made good their Worke, valiantly defending what they had undertaken; there being not a day that past over their heads, wherein there were not two or three (if not more) skirmishes that past betweene them; many on both sides being both hurt and slaine. But because the worke, (being a thing of so great importance) should not cease, upon those that wrought thereon a sufficient Gard did continually attend both night and day: it happened, that Don Rodrigo, and Don Hortado de Mendonça, Adelantado of Caçorla, and Don Sancho de Castilla, beeing of the Gard; the King commanded them to make good that place, till that the Condees of Cabra, and Urenna, and the Marquesse of Astorga should enter with their Regiments for a certaine exploit that was to be put in execution. The Moores, who (as hath beene said) were very watchfull, seeking to disturbe the worke, descended from the top of the mountaine with some 3000. Foot, and

400. Horse, and set upon Don Rodrigo de Mendonça. The Adelantado and Don Sancho began the fight with them; and now the battell growing hot betweene them, the Moores were relieved by many other that sallied out of the City. King Ferdinand being there present, and seeing how things went, commanded the Condee de Tendilla, that he should assaile them on the other side, so that the battell by this time grew very bloody on both sides.

The King then seeing the streight wherein the Condee was, and that hee was wounded, manfully fighting against the Moores, he gave order to the Master de Santiago to assist with his forces on the one side, and to the Marquesse of Cadiz, the Duke of Nagora, and the Comendadors of Calatrava, and to Françisco de Bouadilla, that they should charge them with their troopes, where the Artillery was planted. The Moores thereupon drew foorth another third Squadron against them, and it was bravely fought on both sides, as well by the Moores as the Christians. And the King being himselfe in this conflict, discovered by those of his Campe, they armed with all the haste they could, and went foorth to ayde him. And so thicke were the Troopes of those that came to succour him, that the Moores being unable any longer to make resistance, betooke themselves to flight, the Christians still having them in chase, making great slaughter of them; pursuing them even to the very suburbes of the Citie; whereinto many of the Souldiers entred, and got rich pillage; taking some of the principall persons prisoners; in which number was Daraxa, a Moorish Damosell, the onely daughter of the Alcalde of that Fort. Her beauty was her owne, and the most perfect one, that ever eye had seene: her yeeres were rather shorter, then full seventeene; being so well growne in the bud, that she was now ready for the blowing. And beeing in this true height of excellencie, as is here set downe, it was raised much the higher by her discretion, gravity, and gracefull carriage: She spake Spanish so well, that a man that had not knowne her, would have taken

her to have beene an old Christian; for she might have past amongst those that speake the purest Language. CHAPTER VIII

The King did highly esteeme of this Lady, accounting of her as of a jewell of great price. And therefore sent her as a treasure to the Queene his Wife, who made no lesse reckning of her, receiving her very graciously, as well for her owne desert and worth, for that she was of principall ranke and qualitie, being descended of Kings, and the daughter of so honourable a person; as also for to try whether she might be a meanes to make the Citie to yeeld, without farther fight, and shedding of bloud. Whereupon she treated her with all kindnesse, and the best usage she could devise, farre exceeding the fashion of those her other Ladies, which were neerest about her person. So that, not as a Captive, but as a Kinswoman, she entertained her in the kindest manner that could be, greatly desiring, that such an excellent piece of nature as she was, and where such surpassing beauty did possesse the body, there the soule might not with fowle Paganisme be sullied and defiled. These were sufficient reasons of themselves to have her still in her sight, besides the content she received in talking and conversing with her. For shee was able to give her so good an account of the state of the whole Country, and of every particular passage in those warres (though she were but of yong and tender yeeres) as if she had been of maturer age, and the wisest Counsellor in the Kingdom. And albeit the King and Queene hapned afterwards to meet in Baça, (that Citie being rendred up into their hands upon certaine conditions) yet the Queene would never suffer Daraxa to be from her side, for that great affection which she bare unto her, promising the Alcalde her father, to doe her many particular favours. Her absence did much grieve him: but the love which he saw their Catholike Majesties bare unto her, did somwhat lessen his sorrow, conceiving that much honour and profit would redound unto her thereby: And so rested himselfe contented, and pocketed up his griefe in silence. The Queene (as I told you) would never be without her, and at

length carried her along with her into Sevill; where, out of the desire shee had to winne her to be a Christian, for to dispose her thereunto by little and by little, using no violent, but tractable meanes; she tooke her one day aside, and said thus unto her:

Thou canst not by this time (Daraxa) but truely understand how well I affect thee, and the great desire I have had to give thee content: In requitall whereof, I shall intreat thee for my sake to grant me one request; which is, that thou wilt exchange this attire thou now wearest, and put on such cloathes as I shall invest thee withall, appertaining to mine owne person; and to weare, and enjoy them, being that thy beauty will be much advantaged by this habit of ours.

Daraxa mildly made answere; I shall willingly performe, what your Majesty shall be pleased to command me. For, by obeying you herein, (if there be any discretion in mee, or any consideration of worth in this my weake apprehension,) I shall from this day forward thinke the better of it, and hold it for good, for doubtlesse it cannot be otherwise, but that these your Majesties ornaments will adde a grace to my imperfections, and your rich dressings supply my poore defects.

Daraxa (replide the Queene) it is not your modesty that can make you derogate from your selfe. For if ever Nature made a perfect worke, shee sum'd it all up in thy selfe. But not to insist upon the praise of that, which can not sufficiently be expressed, we graciously accept of this your service, and the willing tender you make thereof unto us.

Now was Daraxa apparelled after the Spanish fashion, residing certaine dayes in the Palace, till such time as their Catholike Majesties departed from thence, to goe to the siege of Granada. And therefore as well for the troubles that attend the Warres; as also that she might take some favour in the things of our Faith, the Queene thought it fit to leave her in the house of Don Luys de Padilla (a man of quality and a Favourite) where shee might entertaine

her selfe with Donna Elvira de Guzman, his Daughter and a Virgin; to whom was given in charge, the care of her entertainment, with expresse order to use her with all respect; and that shee should want nothing that might give her content. And albeit she were accordingly received by them, being feasted and courted with all the pleasures that place could affoord; yet it grieved her much to see her selfe so farre from her native home, besides other causes, which gave her much more discontent, but those shee did not discover; for with a cheerefull countenance, and a pleasant semblance, shee made show, that seeing it was her Majesties pleasure so to dispose of her, that shee did esteeme it as a favour; and so did expresse it in her lookes and gesture. CHAPTER VIII

This Damsell, her Parents had betrothed to a Moorish Gentleman of Granada, whose name was Ozmin: whose qualitie and condition, together with his disposition, was in all points sutable to that of Daraxa. Hee was young, rich, of a sweet behaviour, personable, discreet, and above all very valiant, and full of courage, and every one of these parts well adapted, and disposed to receive many other, which as they were fit for him, so they did well become him. Besides, he was so dextrous in the Spanish tongue, as if hee had been bred up in the heart of Castile, and a naturall of that Countrey: (it being a thing as worthy commendation in vertuous young men, as it is a glory to those parents, who breed up their children in the knowledge of tongues, and exercise of Armes.) He lov'd his espoused Lady with all the tendernesse that a Lover could, insomuch that hee did (in a manner) commit idolatry, out of the reverence and respect that he bare unto her; and would (might hee be suffered so to doe) have set up her *Statua* upon the highest Altars. On her, hee did wholly imploy his memory; for her all his sences kept continuall watch and ward, and his will was more hers, then his owne: Nor was his Spouse (who was made all of thankefulnesse) any whit his debtor. Their love was as equall, as was their qualitie, and their affection did truely correspond

with their even condition. But surpassing all the rest, was that most honest course of life, wherein they conserved themselves. The sweetnesse of those discourses which by Letters passed betweene them, those lovely messages which were sent to and fro each to other, can not be indeered according to their true desert. They had visited and seen one another very often, but never treated of love mouth to mouth. But their speaking eyes parled many times, when their tongues were silent, which never omitted the occasion to talke together. For both of them many yeeres before, and yet not very many, because they were both but young, but to speake more properly, had even from their child-hood loved and visited each other at their pleasure. The parents were knit in so perfect a friendship, and their children in such streight knots of the fastest love, that to make this harmony the fuller, they did all desire to be neerer linked (if possibly it might be) by a strong Alliance: And by this marriage it had taken effect, had it not, when all was in a manner concluded, beene crost in an unlucky houre, and by the rigour of some austere Planet, when Baça was besieged.

But upon this revolution of things, and these warlike commotions, it was thought fit to deferre it for a while, wayting for a more convenient time, wherein their marriage might be solemnized with greater mirth and jollitie, and such triumphs and feastings performed, as the youthfulnesse and qualification required of so sweet and lovely a couple; and seemed necessarily to suit with the estimation and greatnesse of both their parents.

You have heard already who Daraxa's Father was: Her Mother was her owne Kinswoman, daughter to a Sister of Boabdelin, King of that Citie, who had treated this Match betweene them. And Ozmin was cousin German to Mahomet, King of Granada, sur-named The Little. Now that all these faire designes, had contrary successe to their desires, and that Fortune had bent her browe against them, Daraxa remaining now in the power of those their Catholike Majesties; and being left behind in Sevill, as soone as

Ozmin heard of it, the exclamations that he made; the sorrowes which hee uttered; the sighs which he vented, (as they were the true Heralds that proclaimed his hearts-griefe;) so did they move all men to compassion, who could not choose but share, (and that in no small measure) with him, when they saw such lamentable effects of his great affliction.

But because the losse was so solely his, and the wound put so home to his very heart and soule, sorrow did so seaze upon him, that in a short time it tooke hold upon his manly (yet delicate) body: so that all the whole frame thereof was out of temper, and fell at last into a grievous sicknesse, as dangerous and difficill to be cured, as the remedy was distant, and the cause unknowne. The effects whereof dayly increased with mortall signes of death, because the cause increased; and the medicines that were ministred unto him, being not rightly applyed, did him no good at all. And which is the worst in maladies, the Physicians did not truely apprehend the nature of his disease, being the most essentiall point, for the restoring of a man to his former state of health. So that his afflicted Parents, despairing of his recovery, had now rendred up all hope of life; and the Physicians, they had given him over, being of opinion, that it was impossible hee should live; their judgement being strengthned and confirmed by all those accidents which did joyntly concurre, and openly expresse themselves, in this his painfull torment.

But when this sicke Lover was treading the last step of life, that he had to goe, and even entring into the doores of Death; a conceit came sodainly into his head, which representing it selfe to his imagination, wrought so effectually with him, that he seemed to draw some fruit from it, and to be somewhat better then he was: And though his sicknesse were yet still full of danger, yet compared with that miserable estate wherein hee stood before, the amendment could not for the time be greater. And out of the longing desire that he had to put that in execution, which his conceit had formerly entertained, plotting in his imagination,

how he might come to get a sight of his beloved Spouse, he gained breath, and grew somewhat stronger, stoutly resisting those things, that might hinder his intent.

Whereupon he licenced his sorrowes, and shooke hands with melancholly, taking his leave of them both, bidding them fare-well for ever, and did now wholly intend his health; and by this meanes beganne by degrees to grow better and better, cleane contrary to the expectation of those, who had seene how low hee was brought, and in what a desperate estate hee was.

True is that old Adage, Desire subdueth feare, trampleth on the neck of inconveniences, and levelleth all difficulties, be the way of them never so steepe, never so rocky. And a good and cheerefull heart in a sicke man, is the best Sirrop, and the most comfortable cordiall in the world; your Amber, your Corall, your Pearle, your Gold, and all the rabble of your other restoratives are nothing unto it. And therefore it is good for a man to make himselfe as merry as he can. And when thou seest a man once to wax merry when he is sicke, thou maist boldly say he mends.

Now then, by this time, our Gentleman is up upon his feet, and although yet weake and scarce able to walke up and downe in his Chamber (his long sicknesse having yet made his legges unable to beare his body) he forthwith furnished himselfe of a Moore, to be both his Guide, and Interpreter, who had for a long time served the Kings of Granada as an Intelligencer. And putting up good store of gold and jewels for that journey, and taking with him a good horse, that was browne Bay, with a Petronell hanging at the arson of his Saddle, and his Sword and Dagger girt to his side, upon a certaine night by them appointed, they departed out of the Citie, in the fashion and habit of Spaniards; and going by the way, knowing well how to coast the Country, as being well acquainted with those parts, they passed within view of the enemies Campe, and having left that behinde them, by by-pathes and secret passages they came to Loja. Where, being neere unto the Citie, it was their hard fortune to meet with a Captaine

of the field, who went gathering up of men which had fled from the Army, and forsaken their colours. Now as soone as he spied these two, he tooke hold of them. The Moore feigned hee had a Pasport, seeking for it one while in his bosome, another while in his pocket, and other parts about him. But because he could not finde it, and for that the Captaine perceived he had beene out of the rode way, which made him shrewdly to suspect them, he tooke them along with him, to bring them backe againe to the Campe.

But Ozmin not dismayed herewith, nor suffering any alteration of countenance, with great boldnes and free language, making benefit of the Noblemans name, in whose power his Spouse was, feigned himselfe to be his sonne, stiling himselfe by the name of Don Rodrigo de Padilla, and that he came with a message to their Catholicke Majesties from his father touching Daraxa; and that his health failing him (which was witnessed by his wanne lookes) hee was making home with all the convenient haste hee could. Other-whiles, hee affirmed he had lost both his Pasport, and his way; and that to returne againe thereinto, he had betaken himselfe to that path.

But this would not serve his turne, for hee still insisted to have them goe backe, whilest they either did not, or would not then understand, that he did not care a button whether they returned or no? His pretension onely was, that a Gentleman of that ranke and quality, as hee pretended himselfe to be, should have blinded his eyes with some few Dubblons; for there is no Generals hand, that can equall the seale-Royall, which is of so much the more power with us; by how much wee find it firmed and instamped with that more noble metall. For your poore Shag-rags, and silly snakes, that steale from the Armie to returne home: for these (I say) they have teeth, and sharpe ones too, and on such poor soules as these, doe they onely exercise their power, executing those orders which are made against such kind of fugitives: But not on them, from whom they have hope of profit, and may make good gaine; for this is that they seeke for.

Ozmin suspecting whither these bravings of his did tend ; and finding on which foot he began to halt, followed him close, and began thus to speake unto him : Misconster me not (Noble Captaine) nor thinke, that it shall grieve me a whit to returne once more backe againe, nor were it ten times one after another, should it trouble me to reiterate the steps that I have troden ; nay, I would willingly repeate the same way againe and againe ; if my health (as you see) were not wanting unto mee ; but since the necessitie of my returne is made evident and plaine unto you : let me intreate you, Sir, not to put me to that trouble, seeing it is as much as my life is worth, considering the weakenesse wherein I now am. And with that, taking a rich ring from off his finger, he put it into his hand, which was as if he should have throwne Vinegar upon fire ; for he streight grew coole upon it, and kindely said unto him ; Sir, God be your good speed ; for I well perceive that you are as you seeme to bee, a man of principall note, that does not serve the King for pay, nor would out of your noblenesse and point of honour forsake the field, but upon so great an occasion as this. I shall waight upon you to Loja, where I will give order, that you passe forward with the more safety. And so he did, remaining both good friends ; and when they had reposed themselves awhile, they tooke their leave.

Attended with these and other the like misfortunes, they arrived at length at Sevill ; where, by the information that he had gotten, he came to know the street and house where his Daraxa dwelt : hee walked many a faire turne thereabout at different howers, and on divers dayes, but it was never his good hap to see her : for in regard shee walked not abroad, nor went to Church, she spent her whole time in her needle, and in recreating her selfe with her friend Donna Elvira.

Now Ozmin perceiving the difficulty to compasse his desire, and the suspicion which he might give, (as ordinarily all strangers do, in what-soever place they come : for all mens eyes are upon them, desiring to know who they are,

whence they come, what they seeke, and how they live, especially if they frequent one street more then another, and cast a carefull eye either upon the windowes or the doores of some particular house.) Hence ariseth envie; hence, a muttering and murmuring of the multitude, and hence, (though none be interessed in the businesse) an hatred without a cause. And some whisperings were already begun; whereupon he was inforced, for the avoyding of scandall, to forbeare for some few dayes, whilest his servant in the meane while performed that office, as being a person of lesse esteeme, and therefore the lesse observed. But hee making no discovery, did onely comfort himselfe in walking that way in the night at extraordinary howers, and in imbracing the wals, kissing the doores and thresholds of that house.

In this forlorne kind of hope he lived some time, till at length that fell out which sorted with his desire. For his servant taking the care upon him to round the house three or foure times a day, found out in the end, that Don Luys was a making up of a certaine Wall that was falne downe. Then did he take Occasion by the fore-top, advising his Master to put on a poore canvasse Frocke, or the like base garment, and to thrust himselfe in amongst the rest, as a Labourer in that Worke. He liked well of the invention, put it in execution, leaving his servant to looke to his horse, and the wealth and Jewels that were in his Lodging, that he might helpe himselfe there-withall, if need were. And so he went foorth to this worke: whither, when he came, he demanded, if they had any worke for a stranger; they told him, they had. For his wages, it is to be supposed, that he for his part was willing to bee hired at any rate, rather then to sit out. So he now sets himself roundly to his worke, striving to out-worke them all: and albeit, through his many crosses and discontents, he had not yet recovered his perfect health, yet (as the phrase is) he drew strength out of weaknesse: for it is the heart that commands the flesh. He was first still that came to worke, and the last that left off: and when all the rest were

willing to take their ease and refresh themselves, hee was still seeking out something, wherein he might busie himselfe: insomuch that being found fault withall for it by his fellow-Labourers, (for even in misfortunes Envy likewise hath a hand) he made them answer: That he knew not how to be idle. Don Luys, who noted his diligence, had a liking unto him, and was resolving with himselfe to take him into his service for the affaires of his house; and more particularly for the keeping of his Garden. Hereupon he demanded of him, whether he had any skill in that kind? Hee told him, A little; and that the desire that he had to do him service, would in short time inable him much more. He was well pleased both with his speech and person; for he had found him in every thing, to be as sufficient, as he was carefull.

The Mason had made an end of repayring the wall, and Ozmin was now Gardiner to Don Luys: nor untill that day, was it ever possible for him to see Daraxa. But such was his good fortune (Fortune being willing so to have it) that the Sunne shone bright that morning, the skie was cleare, the heavens propitious, scattering the clouds of his former disgraces, and discovering a new light; by helpe whereof, he saw the joyfull haven to his long-indured ship-wracks.

And the very first Evening that he exercised this his new Office, he saw his Spouse comming all alone, softly pacing her steps thorow a spacious Walke, beset all with Myrtles, muske-Roses, Jesmines, and other Flowers, gathering here and there one, where-with she adorned her haire. Now by her attire, he would never have knowne her, if the true Originall had not well agreed with that lively counterfeit, which he had imprinted in his heart: as likewise, that he did plainely perceive, that so great beauty could not belong to any body but her selfe. He was much perplexed when he saw her, and debated with himselfe, whether he were best to speake to her or no: but his bashfulnesse being as great, as was his prevention, being hindred by the shortnes of that time wherein she

passed along, he hung downe his head, making holes in the earth with a Dibbe that he had in his hand, for the setting of a few choyce Slips.

Daraxa turn'd her head aside, and when in the casting of it, shee saw this new Gardiner, she stedfastly began to looke upon him: and viewing well that side of his face (which did most conveniently discover it selfe unto her) that place did represent it selfe to her imagination, where she had so often beheld her Beloved, (so like did he seeme unto her:) whereupon, such a sudden sadnesse seized upon her, that fainting she fell to ground; and when shee came to her selfe, taking hold on the Rayles of the Garden, which were wrought of well-ordered Canes, (according to the fashion of that Country) she sent forth a most sorrowfull sigh, attended with infinite store of teares; and leaning her hand on her rosie cheeke, she called many things to remembrance; wherein, if she should have insisted upon every particular, and persevered in the recordation of them, she might easily have beene the authour of her owne death. But she did put them off as well as she could, with another new desire which she had, to intertaine her soule with his sight; deceiving those conceits, with that little parcell of Ozmins face which represented it selfe unto her.

Hereupon she rose, but accompanied with a generall trembling, (her whole body and heart, panting and shivering with an aguish fit of Love) and turning againe to contemplate anew the image of her adoration; which the more attentively she beheld, the more lively she transformed the same into her selfe. It seemed unto her that she had beene in a dreame, but when shee perceived that she was awake, and that her sight served her, she was afrayd it was some ghost or Fairy-apparition. But afterwards, when upon better view she saw it was a man, a very man, and no Phantasma, she wished that it might be he, whom she loved. Notwithstanding, she was mightily perplexed in mind, and cast many doubts with her selfe, not beeing able to devise who this man should be. For his sicknesse

had layd a palenesse on his cheekes, which had lost their wonted colours; but in all other things besides, as his favour, his feature, his proportion, and carriage did assure her of the truth: yet his office, his habit, and the very place wherein hee stood, made her discard all such kind of thoughts, and to dis-deceive her selfe: and again, it grieved her to be drawne out of this errour, persisting obstinately in her wish, not being able to abstaine to discover her particular affection unto him, for the resemblance which he had of him, whom she so dearely loved: wherupon, out of those her doubtings and anxieties to know what hee was, she sayd unto him; Friend, whence are you? With that, Ozmin suddenly, and in a starting manner casts up his head, looking upon his beloved and sweetest pledge, but his tongue being knit close to the roofe of his mouth with the fullest knot of Love, having not the power to speake a word; and not being able, no not for his life, (so great was his passion) to answer her with his tongue, he replyed with his eyes, watering the earth with that abundance of teares, which fell guttering downe his cheekes, as if they had flowed from two cleare fountaines. And with this, these two deere and faithfull Lovers came to have true knowledge each of other.

Daraxa answered him in his owne language, distilling ropes of Pearles in round orientall drops downe her lovely cheekes. And now were they ready to exchange imbracements, at least some sweet words of Love; when lo, in the instant there entred into the Garden Don Rodrigo, sonne and heyre to Don Luys, who being inamoured of Daraxa, did alwayes wait upon her steps, that he might thereby injoy the occasion to contemplate on her beauty. Now, that they might avoyd all suspicion, they no sooner spyde him, but Ozmin returned roundly to his labour, and Daraxa walked leysurely along, as she was wont to do. Don Rodrigo perceived (by her sad semblance, and inflamed eyes, growne red with weeping) an alteration in her countenance, and presuming that somewhat had offended her, (for her lookes did shew she was not well pleas'd) he made

towards Ozmin, and asked him what the matter might be of her discontent: who, albeit he was not fully as yet recovered of his fore-passed perturbation, yet inforced by that necessity whereunto he was driven, told him; Sir, as you see her now, so was she when she came hither, she did not exchange so much as one word with me; and therefore told me no part of her mind, nor do I know whence this her passion should proceed. Especially, this being the first day, that I entred into this place: so that it was neither fitting for me to aske her the question, nor discretion in her to open her heart unto me. With this answere he went his way, with purpose to learne it out of Daraxa her selfe. But the more he intertained himselfe in this displeasing subject, the larger steps shee made, speedily wheeling about to her Lodging, shutting the doores after her as she went in.

Divers Evenings and Mornings these two Lovers luckily met, injoying upon several occasions some flowers, and honest fruits from the tree of true love, wherewith they gave some ease unto their griefes; Intertaining their true pleasures, with the desire and hope of that happy time, wherein without shadowes and interruptions, they might freely injoy each other. But this content of theirs was as short, as unsecure. For the extraordinary continuation of their companying together, and their close discourse, (and that in the Arabicke tongue) and her excusing herselfe (for his sake) from the conversation of her friend Donna Elvira, had already given sufficient distaste to all those of the house, and Don Rodrigo himselfe was hornemad, inraged so with Jelousie, that he knew not what to do. Not that he had any the least imagination, that the Gardiner did treat with her any thing that was unlawfull, or made any love to her: but because he saw, that he was made worthy to be intertained with so much frequencie in that sweet conversation of hers, which she did not exercise so freely with any other in the world.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

THE FIRST BOOKE

THE ARGUMENT

Going on in the discourse of the adventures of these two faithfull Lovers, Ozmin and the faire Daraxa, are delivered at large the troubles, jelousies, and the sorrowes that befell them.

MURMURING, being the naturall daughter of Hatred and Envy, is ever more busily labouring to staine the lives of others, and to draw a curtaine of darknesse over their bright-shining vertues. And amongst people of base and vile condition, (where most commonly she keepes her Court of Audience) it is the onely sauce to move their appetite, without which their daintiest dishes have no rellish, nor their best morsels any savour in them. It is a bird of the flippantst wing, which as it moveth with most nimblenesse, so it doth the greatest mischiefe. There were not some wanting, that tossed words from hand to hand; some adding, and others inventing matter upon this their so great familiaritie, till the ball at last came to ground, and this whispering to Don Luys his eare, by one who thought to worke out himselfe a fortune therby, and to grow into favour with his Lord, by this his supposed honourable piece of service.

This is that which the world doth practice, seeking to gaine great mens love at other mens cost, by trickes and lies, when in the naked truth there is not cloth inough to shape a garment according to their mind. An office, worthy those, to whom their owne worth is wanting, and have nothing either in their actions, or their persons, that may deservedly recommend them.

Don Luys attentively gave eare to these well-composed words, and painted speeches, on which such faire colours were layd. He was a wise and discreet Gentleman, and therefore did not suffer them to dwell, where these men had placed them, but gave them onely passage to his imagination, leaving a roome empty for to receive the

reasons of the defendant, to whom he had left the doore open, and would by no meanes give way to have his eares stopped, albeit he were somewhat offended with the occasion of the scandall. Many things did he cast in his mind, but still the farther hee went, the farther he was from the truth. But that which did most trouble him, was the suspicion which he had, that the Gardiner was a Moore, who was cunningly come thither to steale away Daraxa: and perswading himselfe that it was so, his understanding was presently blinded there-with. And that which is ill considered on, many times, nay, for the most part, the execution of that advice is scarce gone out of doores, but that repentance presently enters the house. Upon this surmise, he was resolved to take hold of him, and to clappe him fast. Ozmin, without any resistance, or show of Sorrow, or any other alteration of countenance, submitted himselfe to be shut up in the Hall, the fittest place the suddennesse of his surprise could afford for the present. And leaving him thus under locke and key, he made towards Daraxa, who by the hurrie and tumult of the ministers and servants of the house, knew already all that had past, there having beene some few dayes before a muttring of this matter about the house. She shewed her selfe much agrieved with Don Luys his manner of proceeding, forming complaints, how he had put in doubt the goodnesse and unspotted innocencie of her life, setting the gate wide open to Suspicion; and that with this blurre which he had given to her reputation, every one might thinke as he listed, and as his fancie should stand affected, to censure her honour accordingly; for there was not any suspicion so bad, whereunto he had not by this his unadvised act, opened a gap to it's entrance.

These, and other well-ordered reasons, delivered with an affection of the mind, and freenesse of spirit, made Don Luys quickly repent himselfe of what he had done. He now wisht with all his heart, (after Daraxa had thus newly molded him) that he had never attempted any such thing, being angry with himselfe, and much incensed against

those, who had put this into his head. But that he might not shew his lightnesse, in being thus mis-led, and over-facile to be wrought upon by other mens perswasions, but that what hee had done, he had done it upon good consideration, and as the weightinesse of the businesse required, dissembling his sorrow, he spake thus unto her :

Deare Daraxa, I acknowledge the wrong I have done you, and ingeniously confesse that your complaint is not without just cause, in that I proceeded against you in this uncivill fashion, without having first examined the Witnesses to the full, who have deposed, (as it should seeme) thus wrongfully against you. I am not ignorant of your owne woorth, as likewise that of your parents and Ancestors, from whom you are descended. I know, that the merits of your owne proper person have purchased of the King my Master, and his noble Queene, all that love, which a true and onely heyre can gaine of his loving and tender Parents, having conferred upon you many prodigall and publike favours. To this I must give you to understand, that they placed you in my house ; to the end that you might be served therein with all care and diligence, according to your own will and pleasure : And that I am bound to give account thereof, according to the trust that was reposed in me. For which reasons, and for that which my service deserveth at your hands, you ought to corre spond (that you may not be unlike your selfe) with that faire carriage which is due unto my loyalty, and the consideration of these things that are now in question. I neither can nor will conceive, that there can bee any thing in you that may seeme unbefitting your breeding, or give the least blemish to your honour. But the great familiaritie which you hold with Ambrosio (for that name had Ozmin put upon himselfe, when he first entred to serve as a day-labourer) together with his talking unto you in the Arabike tongue, hath somewhat troubled me, out of the generall desire that all heere have to understand what manner of man this fellow is, and what his first beginning, neither you, nor my selfe having seene or knowne him

heretofore. And this being satisfied, you shall rid others of their doubt, and my selfe of an impertinent and tedious trouble. I beseech you (as you are worthy) that you will resolve us of this scruple, assuring your selfe for mine owne part, that as much as in me lyeth, I shall ever bee ready to serve you upon all occasions that shall offer themselves, wherein I may be serviceable unto you. CHAPTER VIII

Daraxa stood curiously attentive to that which Don Luys had delivered, that she might be able to make answere unto him, (albeit his good understanding had already prevented her with reasons) in case that any thing had beene discovered. But out of that short tearme of time which she had to bethinke her selfe (laying her former thoughts aside) she was driven to make use of other more materiall to that proposition which was made unto her, where-with easily (leaving him well satisfied) shee freed him of his care, making good use of it, to bee more wary hereafter, that she might injoy her selfe, as shee was wont, with her beloved; and therewithall she thus said unto him:

My Lord, and Father; (for so I may truely call you) Lord, for that I am in your power: and Father, for the tender care which you have of me. I should ill correspond with that obligation whereunto I am bound, and those continuall favours, which I receive from their Majesties by your meanes, and by your intercessions dayly augmented in my favour, if I should not deposite in the Cabinet of your discretion, my greatest secrets: sheltring them with your shadow, and governing my selfe by your wisedome: and if with the same truth and plainenesse, I should not fulfill all your just desires. And albeit to recall things to my remembrance (which I may not forbeare to recite unto you) cannot but be a great griefe unto me, and even a matter of no small martyrdome; yet with this I will repay your kindnesse, and make you become a debtor to my sorrowes, and give you assurance thereby in how much I esteeme your love.

Sir, you have already understood who I am, for it is

notorious to you, and all the world; and how my misfortune or good hap (for I can not, till the fruit wax ripe, by seeing the end of so many troubles, condemne the one, or commend the other :) brought me to this house of yours, even at that very time, when a marriage was in Treaty for me, with a Gentleman of the best both worth and ranke in Granada, being a neere Kinsman of those Kings, and anciently descended from them.

This my Husband (if I may so stile him) was bred up, being then about some sixe or seven yeeres of age, with another child a Captive Christian, much about the same yeeres, whom his parents bought for his service and entertainment. They ever went together, plaid together, eate together, and usually slept together, out of the great love that was betweene them. See whether these were not pledges of friendship which I have repeated unto you. And so well did my Husband love him, that had hee beene his equall, or his neerest Kinsman, he could not have lov'd him better. Hee trusted him with his person; for he was very valiant; he was the Feoffie of all his pleasures, the Companion of his entertainments, the Treasury of his Secrets, and in substance his second selfe. In conclusion, they were in all things both of them so like, that nothing did difference them, but their Religion, whereof (out of the greatnesse of both their discretions) they never argued, that they might not dis-brother themselves. For no brothers in the world could love better then they did. And well did this Captive deserve his love (I spake amisse, the word Brother better befits him, and so I should have call'd him) for his faithfull carriage, his composed behaviour, and his Gentleman-like proceeding; insomuch, that if we had not knowne him to have beene borne of meane parents that got their living by their handy-labour, in a poore Cottage, who were captivated and made slaves at the same time, we should verily have beleev'd, that he had descended from some Noble bloud, and generous off-spring.

This honest man (I should say honourable; for his vertue deserves that stile) was the Messenger of our enter-

tainments, the Post that ranne betweene us: for being so faithfull as he was, hee was the onely man that was wholly imployed in that businesse. He brought me Letters and presents, returning back by him such due requitals, as in like cases usually passe betwixt those that truely love. CHAPTER VIII

Now, when Baça was delivered up, and he found there, he was set at liberty, together with the rest of the Captives that were at that time within the Citie. But I am not able to say, whether his joy to recover his freedome, or his sorrow to forsake us, were the greater. This himselfe can best tell you, as also whatsoever else you shall desire to know besides, if it please you to aske him, which is no hard matter for you to doe: for this man I speake of, is that very Ambrosio, which is now in your service, it being Gods will that he should come hither, for to be a comfort unto me in these my afflictions. I lost him before ever I thought of it; and when I least looked for him, I found him againe. With him I ranne over the whole course of my misfortunes, since the first time that I was graduated and tooke degree in them; with him I did cherish the hopes of my adverse fortune, entertaining a painefull life, for to deceive the wearisomnesse of a lingring and tedious time. If this comfort (for that it is in my favour) shall offend you, follow your owne will, for mine shall ever be subordinate to yours, which you may dispose of at your pleasure.

Don Luys was strooken with astonishment and tender nesse, as well for the strangenesse, as the pittifulnesse of her Story. Besides, he was much mooved with her manner of proceeding; for she went on in her Discourse without any pausing, perturbation, or other accident, whereby hee might conjecture, that it was a made tale, or invention of her owne upon the present. Which carriage she did credit the better, by letting fall from her eyes some effectual teares, which were able to soften hard Marble, and to rent in sunder the rocky Diamond.

With this speech of hers, Ambrosio was loosed out of prison, without being questioned of any thing, that he

might not wrong the report which Daraxa had given of him: Onely laying his arme about his neck, looking cheerefully upon him, he told him; Now I know, Ambrosio, that thou hast some noble bloud about thee; and though this should be wanting unto thee, thou art able to give it thy selfe by thine owne vertue and noblenesse. For by that which I have lately heard of thee, I am obliged henceforth to use thee with that fairenesse as thy worth deserveth. Ozmin told him; In this, Sir, you shall doe like your selfe; and the good which I shall receive from you, I shall ever make it my glory, that it came from the largenesse of your hand, and from so noble a House as this is. This past, he was permitted to return againe unto the garden, with the same familiaritie as before, if not with much more licence and freenesse of liberty. So that now they talked together as often as they would themselves, without any scandall at all.

In this *interim*, the King and Queene had still a care to know how it was with Daraxa, as well in the state of her health, as otherwise; whereof particular advice was given them from time to time, who were very glad to heare of her well-doing; and did continually in their Letters recommend her very dearely to the care of Don Luys, with expresse charge to use her with all kindnesse.

This favour of theirs wrought so much, that as well out of the desire to stand in grace with their Majesties, as out of Daraxa her owne deserts; not onely Don Rodrigo, but most of the principall Cavallero's of that Citie, wished in their hearts she were a Christian, that they might make love unto her, pretending to take her to Wife. But because Don Rodrigo had her (as hath been said) in his custody, he was in the common opinion of the World, amongst all the other rivalls thought to be most favoured by her. The case was very cleere, and this suspition not without great likelihood. For of his qualitie, condition, behaviour, and faire proceeding, she had had very good tryall; and ostentations of this nature, and apparences of such commendable parts as these, are not wont to be of the slightest

moment, nor the lowest round in the Ladder, that climbes unto honour. For when a man shall have made publike demonstrations of his vertues, and his noble carriage, it is to be presumed he will be no less beloved, then he is knowne; and so get advantage of those, who (when it shall come to matter of opposition) shall be under-valued by opinion. But as if these Lovers had exchanged their soules, and none of them possessed that which was his owne, they were as firme in loving, as farre from offending.

Daraxa never gave way by any dis-composture, or unjoynted behaviour, or any other occasion whatsoever, whereby any one might presume more then other upon her favour; howbeit, all of them adored her, left no meanes unsought to procure her love, nor no nets unspred, seeking by traines to draw her within their reach, but none of them had any ground, whereupon to build their hopes.

Don Rodrigo perceiving how little his services did availe him, how his labour was in vaine, and the small remedy that hee found, since after so many dayes spent in her continuall conversation, he remained in the same state as he did the very first day, neither better nor worse, for ought hee knew, it came into his consideration to make use of Ozmin, thinking by his intercession to get into her favour; and taking this to be the best and surest way to worke his ends, being one morning in the garden, hee brake thus with him:

Friend Ambrosio, Thou canst not but know the obligations which thou hast to thy Religion, to thy King, to thy Country, to that bread which thou eatest of my Fathers, and to that desire, which we have of thy good. I conceive, that as a Christian of that quality, which thy workes doe publish, thou wilt correspond with that thou professest thy selfe to be.

I come to thee, moved thereupon by a great necessitie (which now offers it selfe unto me) whercupon doth depend all the increase of mine honour, and the safety of my life, which wholly lyes in thy hands. If discoursing then with Daraxa, amongst other reasons, thou shalt worke her by

force of Argument, that she forsake this false Sect, wherewith she is nowinfected, and make her to become a Christian, thou canst not but see what good will come thereof: first, Salvation to her owne soule; next, good service unto God; thirdly, great content to their Catholike Majesties; fourthly, honour to thy selfe in thy Countrey; and lastly, to my selfe perfect happinesse. For, desiring her to Wife, I meane to be married unto her, and the benefit shall not be small which thou shalt make by this voyage; for it shall be as profitable, as it shall be honourable unto thee; and therefore straine all the wits thou hast to bring this good purpose to passe. For besides that thou shalt bee rewarded by God, for the soule which thou shalt gaine, I for my part will, with many requitals, and those reall, recompence the life which thou shalt give mee by thy good diligence in this businesse, and if (exercising thy power with her,) it shall be my good hap to winne her by thy intercession. Doe not refuse to doe mee this favour, since thou canst doe so much with her: And because there are so many tyes upon thee, to induce thee hereunto, it is not fit that I should presse thee any further, or be too importunate with thee. To whom, when hee had ended his exhortation, Ozmin made him this answere:

My very good Lord; The same reason, wherewith you seeke to binde me, ought likewise to oblige you to beleeve, how much I desire that Daraxa should follow my Religion, which very earnestly, divers, nay infinit times I have perswaded her unto. My desire is no other, then your own; and therefore I will use all diligence in this particular cause, as in a thing wherein I am so much interessed. But loving her betrothed friend, and my Master, so dearely as she does, to treat with her to turne Christian, were but to double passion in her, without any other fruit at all: For she hath some hopes yet alive in her, that Fortune may turne the wheele againe, flattering her selfe with some accident or other, whereby in time she may come to injoy her desire. This is all that I can yet learne from her, shee is still harping upon this string, and (for ought that I can

perceive) very constant in this conceit of hers. But that I may comply with that, which you command me, I shall (though I were sure my labour should be fruitlesse) returne once more to treat with her in this kinde; and when I have done, I will acquaint you with her answere. The Moore did not lye in any one word that he said, had he been rightly understood; but (not thinking on a thing so remote) Don Rodrigo gave credit, not to that which he truely, but to that he formally delivered. And so (though deceived) he had some confidence with him, and was not cleane out of hope. For *Quien de veras ama, se enganna, con desengannos*: Hee that truely loves, is deceiv'd with that, which ought to dis-deceive him. CHAPTER VIII

Ozmin (when Rodrigo was gone) remained so sad to see the open instance which was made to his owne hurt, that he was ready through jealousie to runne out of his wits. Which did so afflict him, that from that day forward you could never get a cheerefull looke from him, and making things impossible, seeme possible unto him, hee did wrastle and struggle with himselfe, imagining, that this new Competitor (being powerfull in his owne House and Country) might use some tricks and devices, wherewith to hinder his intent, being so sollicitous as he was, and so earnest in the businesse. He feared againe on the other side, lest she might be wrought to alter her former affection; for many batteries make a breach in the strongest walles; and with secret mynes they are blowne up, and laid levell with the ground.

Out of this jealousie of his, hee discoursed in his thoughts of Tragicall ends, and disastrous accidents, which presented themselves unto his phantasie, which he did not so much beleeve, as he did mightily feare, because hee was a perfect Lover.

Daraxa seeing how her dearest beloved had for many dayes together continued in this melancholy mood, was very desirous to know the cause of this his sadnesse: but she could not wring it from him, nor did he speake a word of that unto her, which had past betwixt him and Don

Rodrigo. Shee (poore Gentlewoman) knew not what to do, nor which way to worke him to bee merry; howbeit with sweet words, uttered from a daintier tongue, pleasant smiles, and a constant heart, much augmented by those faire eyes, whose warme teares did be-dew her tender cheeks with those cristall waters which did flow from them, she softly breathed foorth (having first sent foorth many a sigh, as heralds of her sorrowfull mind) these few words unto him:

Lord of my life and liberty; my betroathed, whom I honour and obay, what thing can there be of that force, (I being alive, and in your presence) that should thus to my hurt torment and grieve you? May my life peradventure be the price of your joy? or how will you be pleased to dispose of it, whereby my soule may be freed from this hell of sorrow, wherein for your sake I am tormented? Let the chearefull heaven of your countenance, scatter those clouds where my heart is over-cast, if I am able to doe any thing with you; if the love which I beare you deserveth ought; if the griefe wherein I am may move you to pity; if you will not that my life receive its buriall in your secrecie, I beseech you to tell me the cause of your sadnesse. Here she stopt; for her teares had choak't her utterance, sorrow working on them both, one and the same effect; for he could not answer her otherwise, then with the scalding teares of love, each striving with their owne to dry up the others, seeming both to bee one and the selfe-same thing, as long as their tongues were thus tyed, and the current of their speach stopped.

Ozmin, with the oppression of his sighes, (for he closely smoothered them) fearing (if he should vent them) to be over-heard, did so long resist them, by returning them backe againe unto his soule; from whence they would have broken out their way, that he fell downe into a swoune; and so deepe an one, as that he lay for dead. Daraxa knew not what to do, nor how to fetch him againe, nor which way to comfort him, nor could she conceive what might be the cause of this so great and sudden an

alteration, having formerly beene accustomed to shew himselfe merry and cheerefull. Shee was very busie in wiping his face, in drying his eyes, putting her faire hands upon them; after she had dip't a rich hand-kerchiefe, that she had about her in the water, imbroydered with gold and silver, inter-woven with divers other glorious colours, and scattered here and there with pearle, and other devices of wonderfull both worth and workmanship. So much was she transformed into this paine of his; and her senses so wholly taken up in seeking to recover him, that had this fit continued but a little longer, Don Rodrigo might have found them little lesse then arme in arme; for Daraxa had his head leaning on her knee, and one side of his body folded in her Gowne, when he first began to come to himselfe. Now when his Senses were come againe into their proper places, and all was well, thinking to have taken his leave of her, Don Rodrigo on the nicke, comes into the garden. Daraxa (though much troubled) came off as handsomely as she could, leaving through haste her curious hand-kerchiefe on the ground, which was quickly taken up by Ozmin, who presently had it in his eye.

Now when she saw that Don Rodrigo drew nigh, she went her way, and left them two alone together: Rodrigo (when he saw the coast was cleare) ask't him what he had done in the busines? He told him, (as he had at other times) that he found her so firme in her love to her betrothed friend that she will not onely not be wonne, (as you pretend) to be a Christian: but if shee were so, yet for his sake, she would willingly turne Moore; so extreame is her owne folly, the love of her Religion, and of her husband. I treated your businesse with her; and to you, because you attempt it, and to me, because I propose it, she beareth us both that hatred, that she is resolved, if ever I speake word thereof againe, never any more to see me; and as for you, you see, she no sooner saw you, but she went her way. So that I would not have you weary out your selfe in this suit, nor spend any more time in it; for I see it will be but in vaine, and a hopelesse piece of

worke. Don Rodrigo was strucken deeply into his dumpes with this so resolute an answer, delivered with that sharpnesse, which made it the more sowre and unfit for rellish. From that time forward he began to suspect that Ozmin was rather in his prejudice, then profit, and did rather dis-advantage, then advance his pretension. Howsoever he thought at least with himselfe, that though Daraxa might haply have given so distastfull a reply, yet it did ill become him to report it unto him, in that rough fashion as he did, making himselfe, as it were, master and ruler of the roste : but such impossible things in their incounter are Love and discretion ; for evermore a man is so much the more confounded and troubled in himselfe, by how much the more hee loveth and affecteth : hereupon did represent it selfe unto him that strict league of amity and friendship, which Daraxa reported to have beene betwixt him and his old Master, he imagined, that love was still alive in him, and could not be perswaded, that the ashes of that fire were yet growne cold. With this conceit (which was re-inforced by his passion) he was fully bent to put him out of the house, informing his father how unfitting it was ; nay how dangerous to permit (where Daraxa was) such a one, as might intertaine her in the Discourse of her former Love, still putting her in mind thereof, especially it being their Majesties intent and purpose to have her turne Christian : which would be hard to do, as long as Ambrosio was there. Let us, Sir, (sayd he) make some triall by sundring them some few dayes one from another, and then we shall see what effect it will bring foorth.

Don Luys did no whit mislike his sonnes councell, and presently picking a quarrell, where no cause was, (for of great men we must not aske the reason of things ; and a Captaine with his souldiers will bee bold now and then to make fifteene of two eights) he dismissed him of his service, commanding him, that he should not so much as once dare to passe by the doore. And hee tooke him so on the sudden, that he could not take his leave of Daraxa. And

so obaying his Master, faining lesse sorrow, then what he felt, he removed his body from thence, (for that pledge he could carry whither he listed) but for his soule, that abode still with her, in whose power it had formerly so long remained. CHAPTER VIII

THE ARGUMENT

Continuing the Story of the love of Ozmin and Daraxa, are recounted the troubles and griefes that befell them both: as also those publike Feasts, that were made by divers Knights and Gentlemen, for to glad and cheare up the dis-consolate Daraxa: and of the valour which Ozmin in disguise and unknowne, did performe in them.

DARAXA seeing so sudden a change, began to suspect that his former sorrow had its birth from that new successe; and now by the sequele assured her selfe it was so: whereupon adding one evill to another, sorrow to sorrow, and griefe to griefe, wanting the sight of her espoused Lord; albeit the poore Lady did dissemble it all that shee could, yet this was that, which did most trouble her. Give them leave to weepe, howle, sigh, cry, and talke, that find themselves afflicted: for albeit they doe not there-with take away the burthen of that paine which they indure, yet it doth lessen sorrow, and makes the load somewhat lighter. She was so deprived of all content, so heavily sad, and so bodily afflicted, that you might read her griefes not onely in her face and countenance, but throughout all the course of her carriage. Our inamoured Moore would not change his estate and condition of life; for as he went clad before, the same stile he still continued, and in the habit of a day-Labourer, he followed his painefull fortune: therein hee had had good successe, and he hoped the like with advantage. He daily followed his worke hard, where there was ought to be got, going in this sort from place to place to prove his fortune, trying if by this meanes he could come to heare

or hearken out any thing that might import him, or serve his turne concerning Daraxa : for no other end or interest in the world had he but this, to labour so hard as he did ; for he had liberally to spend with a large hand for many dayes together, out of the meanes that he had brought from home in money and in Jewels. But as well for that which hath beene sayd, as also because hee was well knowne in that habit, that he might have the freer licence wheresoever he came, and himselfe remaine safe in his person under this disguise, lest his designes might otherwise be overthrowne, he continued his wonted weare.

Those young Cavallero's that served Daraxa, knowing the favour that she bare to Ozmin, and that he was now no longer servant in Don Luys his house, every one did covet him for himselfe and his owne ends, and happy was he, that could make the first purchase ; so generall was their desire to have him theirs.

But Don Alonso de Cuniga got the start of all the rest, being a Gentleman of that City, one that was borne to a great estate, young, gallant, and rich, and one that was confident, that others want, and his wealth, by the helpe of Ambrosio, should carry the businesse. He commanded him to be sent for, intertained him in his service, did him many knowne good turnes, made him more advantageous proffers, gave him many kind and loving words, and in conclusion, a kind of friendship was begun betweene them, (if any such thing may be found betweene master and man :) notwithstanding, inasmuch as man is compatible, it is commonly called by the name of Privancie or Inwardnesse ; whereinto men grow by some deserving service, with whom having runne over some passages, he came in the end to discover his desire unto him, promising him great rewards : all which was but an opening unto him of his old wounds, and a ripping up of his sores, to make them greater then before : if he were jelous before of one, now he had two Corrivals, and within a short time after, he knew of many which his Master had discovered unto him, and which way they marched, and the meanes whereby

they thought to prevaile : but for his owne part he neither sought, nor desired any furtherance of others, save onely his good intelligence, beleeving (as he verily perswaded himselfe) that solely his intercession should bee sufficient to effect it.

I am not able to imagine, much lesse to expresse the griefe which hee conceived, seeing himselfe now the second time to be made a Bawd to his owne wife : and how fitting notwithstanding it was for him to passe thorow all these pikes with a discreet kind of dissimulation.

He intertained him with good words, for feare lest it might happen unto him, as it did with Don Rodrigo ; and if he should carry himselfe violently and inconsideratly with the rest with whom he had to deale with, he should finde his hands too full, and give himselfe a great deale of trouble, and in the end lose all, and not come to the knowledge of any thing concerning his best beloved. And if we will peaceably injoy the end of our desires, we must put on Patience and sufferance in the atchievement of them.

He bore him fayrely in hand, albeit his heart was all on fire, his various thoughts gave him many a shrewd battell, and assaulted him on every side, galling him in such cruell manner, that like a Bull inraged, he knew not how to helpe himselfe, nor whither to fly for succour, nor behind whom to runne, nor could he find any comfort for to ease those intolerable torments which he indured. The Hare was single, the Grayhounds many, and all light-footed, they had certaine Falcons too in their favour, that for all their high place, would not refuse to stoope to their Lure, for hope of reward : to these I may adde a number of shefriends and acquaintance, comming to visit and banquet with Daraxa, who too too usually set fire to the honour of many a faire Lady, and blow the coales of Lust in many Noble houses of good report and honest fame : many Ladies and Gentlewomen enter (for such they are in appearance) and all forsooth under the faire name of Visites ; some, out of the difficulty they find at home in

their owne houses to effect their purpose; others, to worke deceite, and to bring innocent Dames, by one device or other into the same net, wherein themselves have beene caught. Of these kind of creatures there are great store, the world is full of them, and the practice too too common. Nay, out of the principallest and gravest sort of Ladies, the Divel hath not beene carelesse in working them to become pot-lids, and covers to these boyling vessels of concupiscence. These are those silver Plates, that cover many a sweet morsell, after which your Gallants so eagerly long to licke their lippes, and are so sharpe set. All these things did hee feare, and many more, but most of all Don Rodrigo, to whom both himselfe, and the rest of the Rivals bare great hatred for his false arrogancie, whereof hee cunningly made use, to have them thereby to desist from their purpose: and the more to daunt and amate them, hee made them all beleeve, or at least would faine have them so to thinke, that he was the onely man that was like to carry Daraxa, as having the best meanes and opportunity, (besides his owne desires) to grow into her Love and favour. Hereupon they spake courteously unto him, but in their hearts they wish't him hang'd; they powred hony to him out of their mouthes, leaving rancour and poyson in their brests; they saluted him kindly, but curst his very bowels and intrailes, desiring to see them burst in a thousand pieces; they smiled upon him, but as dogges doe grin at Waspes, they long'd to have a snap at him: this is the common fashion now in Court, and more particularly amongst those of the greatest ranke and quality.

Now let us returne againe to Daraxa, and speake of the torments which she suffered; of the care which she tooke to know what was become of her dearest Love, whither he was gone, what he did, how it was with him in his health, how he spent his time, and whether he had got him some other new Mistresse; and this did trouble her most: for albeit mothers have likewise some sorrow for the absence of their children, yet notwithstanding the case is not alike: for they onely feare the life of their child, but a wife the

losse of her husbands love, lest some other woman with fawning blandishments, and smooth flatteries should draw his affection from her. What dayes so sad as those, what nights so tedious, as for a woman to weave and un-weave her thoughts, like Penelope's Web, with the chaste desire of her beloved Ulysses ? CHAPTER VIII

I shall utter much by being silent in a passage of this nature, for to paint foorth such a sorrow as this, small was that cunning, which a famous Painter used upon the death of a young damosell, who after hee had painted her dead, stretcht out to the life lying in her Coffin, hee placed round about the Coarse, her parents, her brethren, her kinsfolkes, her friends, her acquaintance, and her houshold servants in their proper places ; and with that griefe which was fitting for every one of them in their severall degrees : but when he came to her father and mother, he left off to finish their faces, giving every one licence and free libertie to pourtrayt foorth such a sorrow, according as himselfe should therewith be affected ; for neither words nor pensill were any way able to manifest a parents love, or the sorrow that they conceived, save onely some actions, which wee have read of Heathen people. The same course must I take. The pensill of my rude tongue, shall bee but a grosse unhewen sticke, fit onely to forme blots and blurres ; and therefore it shall bee wisedome to leave it to the discretion of the hearer : and to him that shall understand History, to referre it to his consideration in what manner such passions as these are to be apprehended. So that every man may measure it by his owne imagination, judging others hearts by their owne.

Daraxa was so surcharg'd with sorrow, that her outward remonstrances manifested her inward afflictions. Don Luys seeing her so wholly taken up with melancholly, as also Don Rodrigo his sonne, both of them for to cheere her up, ordained certaine feasts ; as that of the running of Buls, and their *juego de cannas* : And because the City was so well fitted for these pastimes, it shortly after tooke effect. Now those that were Actors in those sports, had

every one of them his severall device, wrought in different sorts of silkes and colours, expressing therein their divers passions; one, his Despaire; another, his Hope; this, his Captivity; that, his Jealousie; some their Joy, some their Sorrow, and some their being in Love, and the like. All which, and more too, did meet in poore Daraxa.

As soone as Ozmin knew that this appointed feast was to bee performed, and that his Master was one of the number, he thought with himselfe, that it were not time ill spent to see his Mistris, by giving some proofe of his valour, and setting himselfe forth that day amongst the rest. Which being come, just as the Buls began to rune, he mounted upon his horse, both he and it being in every point very well fitted. His face was scarfed with watchet Taffata, that he might avoid the common eye, and his Horse had his eyes vayled with a bend of blacke. He feigned himselfe to be a stranger; his servant went before him, bearing in his hand a goodly strong Launce, he rounded the whole place, beholding many things of admiration which were therein: but above all, the beauty of Daraxa did out-shine the rest, as the day doth the night; and in her presence all the other Dames were but darknesse. He placed himselfe right over against her window; whither he was no sooner come, but hee saw the place much altered, every man flying as fast as he could from a fierce Bull, which at that instant they had let out of the Paddock; it was a Bull of Tarifa well growne, cunning in the carriage of his head, and as stout as a Lyon, and as full of rage. Who was no sooner let forth, but giving two or three nimble bounds, put himselfe into the midst of the place, making himselfe Master of all that Round, to the great affright and terrour of all that were there. Hee turn'd his frizzled front from side to side, whilest divers darts were throwne at him, which he did easily shake off, and used such art, that hee would not suffer them to gall him in the flanke, or other his inferiour parts: and this hee did avoid, by using certaine light friskals, which he performed so dexterously as they could not touch him. Now,

there was not a man in all the place that durst to incounter him a horse-backe, and those that were a-foot, durst not expect his comming, nor looke him in the face, though he were never so farre from them. So that for very feare they left him all alone, and not one man save onely Ozmin, and his servant, was to be seene any thing neere him in all that circuit of ground.

The Bull, as if he had rode on the wings of the winde, ranne with all the speed he could, directly towards this Gentleman; so that hee was forced to betake himselfe suddenly to his Launce, which he had not taken into his hand, when the Bull was first let loose, and lifting up his right arme, bearing his Launce for his best advantage, whereat was fastened Daraxa's Handkerchiefe which she left behind her in the Garden (as you have heard heretofore) with a gracefull kinde of activenesse, and a gallant ayme in the carriage of his arme, he charged home upon him; and making way by his necke, hee ranne his Launce quite through his body, which made no stay till the point thereof had nayled the hoofe of one of his farther feete to the ground, leaving him there for dead, without any motion in the world; there onely remaining in his hand the short broken truncheon of his Launce, which hee casting away from him in a carelesse fashion, he victoriously but modestly quitted the place.

Daraxa was much rejoyced in the sight of him: for when he first made his entrance, she knew him by his man, who had sometimes also been her servant; as likewise by his handkercher, which after the Bull was slaine, he wore about his arme. All that were there present, with a generall murmure, remained full of admiration, giving him due commendation, indearing the happinesse of the stroke, and the strength of this unknowne Knight. Nor was any thing else in the mouthes of the multitude, then the discoursing of the brave performance of this businesse, delivering the manner thereof one to another; and though they had all seene how it was, yet every one spake thereof a-fresh, and it seemed to them as a dreame; some in

wonder clapping their hands; others highly extolling his valour; one speakes with his fingers; another stands amazed; a third blesses himselfe; a fourth lifts up his arme; a fifth acts it with his hand, all of them having their mouthes and their eyes full of joy; a sixt bowes downe his body, and suddenly leapes up againe in the ayre; some bend the browe, and some being ready to burst with content, make gracefull Matachines, with many other pretty Antike-gestures.

All which to Daraxa seemed so many degrees of glory. Ozmin with-drew himselfe out of the Citie into certaine back-Gardens, out of which he formerly came; and (leaving his Horse, and changing his cloathes, with his Sword under his arme, returning in the habit of Ambrosio) he came to the place; taking his Stand where he might see what hee most desired, and was seene againe by her, who lov'd him more then her owne life. They tooke great pleasure in beholding each other; howbeit Daraxa was very fearefull, lest some mis-fortune might befall him, standing there a-foot amongst the multitude; she made signes unto him, that he should get up upon a Scaffold: but he made show that he did not understand her meaning, standing there still, till the Buls began to runne.

By this time the evening was farre spent, and with the approaching of the night, those that were to sport at the *juego de Cannas*, made their entrance in manner following:

First of all, the Trumpets, Fifes, and Drums, accompanied with divers other sorts of Musicke, presented themselves, being cladde in rich Liveries of sundry colours; after whom followed the *Azemilas*, or Sumpter Mules, laden with bundles of Canes.

The Companies that were to maintaine this sport, were likewise eight, answering to the number of their bundles of Canes. Every one had his Sumpter Cloth of Velvet cast over the Canes, richly imbroydered with the Armes of their Master in Silke and Gold, the *Garrotes* belonging thereunto, being all of silver.

After these, entred two hundred and forty Gennets,

richly furnished for 48. Knights, which were five a piece for every man, besides that which came in with the Canes, which made up sixe in the whole. But they that entred first on the right hand, came in two Files, opposing themselves against the adverse part. The first two horses (which as if they had beene yoaked together, ranne on in an even and equall course) were assisted by five others of a side, bearing their Owners Targets at the Arson of their Saddles, offering their fairest show to the eyes of the Spectators ; wherein were depainted their Emblemes and their Motto's, set forth with faire Scarfes, rich Ribbonings, Tassels and Buttons of the best both silke and gold, with sundry other borderings and costly imbroyderies, every man suting himselfe according to his own humour, and particular fancy. Most of the Horses had their Pettrels stucke full with Bels, all their other furniture and trappings being very rich and curious, they had sumptuous headstals of gold and silver, set with precious Stones, as thicke as they could stand each by other : it shall suffice, for the better amplifying of what I have spoken, that they were in Sevill, where there is no small store of them, nor make little esteeme of such things ; and that these Knights and Gentlemen were Lovers, Competitors, rich, and young ; and the Lady for whom they strove, present amongst them. These entred in at one gate of the Place, and when they had given it a round, they issued out at another neere unto that by which they entred. So that the one did not hinder the other either in their comming in, or their going forth : and thus they past in very good equipage as could be desired.

The Horses having quit the place, these Gallants entred in againe, the whole eight squadrons running two and two together, well attired themselves, with their Liveries attending upon them (as before hath been delivered) and with their Launces in their hands, which they strongly brandishing, made the stock and point thereof seeme to meet together, whose nimble shaking caused every single Launce to appeare to be foure. Presently upon this, incouraging their proud Gennet with their lowd shoutes

and cryes, and wounding their Sattin sides with their sharpe Spurres, you would have thought them rather to fly, then runne; their Masters, and they, seeming but one joynt-body, so closely did they keepe themselves in their seates. Nor is this any Hyperbole, or over-indearing what was done, since that in all parts almost of Andaluzia; as Sevill, Cordova and Xerez de la frontera, they bring forth their children (as it is commonly said) from the Cradle, to the Saddle, as in other parts they accustome them to carry Canes. And it is a wonder in such tender yeeres, to see such hard steeles, and such dexterity and agility of body. For to doe these things, is an ordinary exercise amongst them. They gave a turne about the Place, running to and fro from all the foure parts thereof: and then leaving the place for a while (to recover fresh breath, and to give some pawsing to the Spectators) they entred againe, as before, (changing still their Horses) with their Targets on their armes, and their Canes in their hands.

Then they divided themselves by sixe and sixe (as the manner there is) and in a handsome well-ordered fashion began their sport. Wherein having continued for the space of a quarter of an houre, or thereabouts, some other Gentlemen thrust in amongst them to part the quarrell, beginning with their fresh Horses a well-prepared skirmish, both the one and the other from all parts of the Place, ranging and marshalling themselves in such good array, observing such due both time and measure, that it seemed a very fine contrived daunce: the beholding whereof, as it held the people in suspence by possessing all their faculties; so did it give them singular content. But this sport was interrupted, and wholly disordered by the sudden approch of a furious Bull, which they had let loose from the other side of the place. Those that were a horsebacke, changing their Canes into Javelins, (which they had ready at hand) began to cast themselves into a ring, seeking to shut him in on every side: but the Bull stood stocke still in the midst of them, not knowing whom he should first set upon; he cast his eyes upon them all, tearing up the earth with his

forked feet; and whilest every man stood in this manner expecting his chance; one bold Rogue amongst the rest comes athwart him, provoking him to fury with his tottered Cloake, and his shrill shoutes, but little needed any such instigations: for the Bull presently thereupon, like one mad with rage, forsaking the horsemen, made after him with all the eagernesse he could, who tooke himselfe to his heeles as fast as they were able to carry him; he flyes from the Bull, the Bull after him, and never gives him over, forcing him to take Sanctuary under Daraxa's window, just there where Oznin then stood; who deeming it a place of priviledge for this fearefull young fellow, and reputing it a kinde of injury offered to his Lady and Mistris, if there he should receive any ill entertainment, as likewise to himselfe, if this poore Rogue should suffer for his comming thither; as well out of this respect, as also for that he was incensed against those, who strove to get the honour of the day, and to winne grace by doing something bravely in her presence, breaking through the thickest of all the people, he went out against the Bull, who forsaking him he formerly followed, made directly towards himselfe. All that beheld this, thought him either foolish or mad, that should so desperately put himselfe forth to incounter with a Beast of that courage and fiercenesse, looking every minute, when he should take him up betweene his Hornes; and tossing him up aloft, breake every bone of him in pieces. All of them with lowd voices cride out unto him, Take heed, for the passion of God, if you love your life, looke to your selfe; for if you had a thousand lives, they are all in danger of losing. You may by this time imagine with your selves, what a poore taking his Spouse was in: for mine owne part I know not what to say therein, save that she was as a woman bereft of her proper Soule, and was become an insensible body, through too much Sence. The Bull bowed downe his head for to fasten his blowe upon him, but this was but an humbling himselfe to the sacrifice, for he never came to lift it up againe. For the Moore wrything his body aside, and with extraordinary

quicknesse unsheathing his sword, acting it all in an instant, he gave him such a cut in the neck, close unto the horne, that parting the bones of the braine in sunder, hee left his head hanging by his winde-pipe, and there he lay for dead.

This done (as though he had done nothing) sheathing his sword, he presently leaves the Place. But the common rout that love novelties, and hunger as well to heare, as to tell strange tales, (besides many horsemen, and footmen, that began to flock about him, to know who he was) pressed so hard on every side to see him, and so throng'd him both before and behind, that they had almost stiffled him, being scarce able to wagge amongst them. In the Windowes, and on the Scaffolds, began a new murmure of admiration, like unto the former, there being a generall joy amongst them all, for that this thing had hapned at the conclusion of these feasts, so that nothing else was talked of, save onely those two wonderfull accidents of that Evening, doubting which were the greater of the two ; and taking in good part this second course which he set before them, hee left their palate well pleased, and their mouthes seasoned with a good rellish, to recommend such brave actions in perpetuall remembrance to all succeeding ages.

THE ARGUMENT

The Story continues of these two illustrious Lovers, Ozmin and Daraxa ; wherein is declared her sorrow, and his griefe, with divers other accidents ; and how for to comfort and cheere up Daraxa, there was a Tourney-ment, or Justing performed by many Knights, and Gentlemen of worth, wherein Ozmin bore away the bell, and had the glory of the day : yet all this could not make Daraxa merry.

THIS day Daraxa had (as you have seene) her pleasures interrupted, her joyes intermixed with griefes, her delights false, and her contents unsavoury : For scarce had arrived the comfort which she tooke in seeing

that which she most desired, but on the sudden it was over-taken with feare of danger: it did likewise torment her, to thinke with her selfe, that she knew not how, nor upon what occasion to see him once againe, nor how she might feed her fill, satisfying the hunger of her eyes, on the delicate food of her sweet desire. And because Pleasure appeares not, where Sorrow is in place, it could not be discerned in her countenance, whether these Feasts had given her that contentment, for which they were intended: As well for this, as for that these Gallants were somewhat more heated then before, beeing set on fire with that beautifull fayrenesse, and fayre beauty of Daraxa, desirous more then ever to entertayne her with pleasures, and that fitting occasion might be offered to come againe to the sight of her; in this their pride of heart, and heat of blood, they ordayned a Tourney, wherein Don Rodrigo was to be the Challenger.

And some few nights after, the Challenge was publisht with great store of musicall Instruments, and bright-burning Torches, that all the streetes, together with the great Place, seemed to be all on a flame: in this solemne manner they set up the Challenge, where it might best be seene and read of all that passed by.

There was a place for Tourneyment neere unto the Gate, which they call the gate of Cordova, adjoyning to the wall, (which I have sometimes seene and well knowne, though now decayed) where the Knights and Gentlemen went to exercise Armes, and to prove their Lances: there Don Alonso de Zunniga, being but a new beginner, did likewise practise amongst the rest, desirous to shew himselfe in this Tourney, for the great affection which hee bare to Daraxa. He was afraid he should rather lose then get honour in this Tourneyment, nor did he sticke in all Companies publikely to say as much; not because he wanted eyther strength, or courage; but because in all things whatsoever, Use makes masteries: for they that have onely the bare Theoricke, and naked speculation of things, be they never so skilful in this their contemplative

knowledge, they erre in their ayme, be they never so confident in their under-takings. And in this, of all other he was most unwilling to erre, the thought whereof did much afflict him, yet made him with-all more carefull how to behave himselfe in the businesse.

Ozmin on the other side desired to have as few enemies as hee could, and because he might not Tourney, nor thought it possible to be admitted into the number, he would faine have some-body to enter the Lists, that might overthrow Don Rodrigo's pride; for that he was more jelous of him, then of all the rest: more to effect this his purpose, then any mind that he had therein to do his Master service, he spake thus unto him:

Sir, if you be pleased to grant me free liberty of speech, I may haply deliver that unto you, which may be of some profit unto you in this so honourable an occasion. Don Alonso dreaming of nothing lesse, then that he would treat with him touching such Gentleman-like exercises as these, but rather supposing that he would entertaine him with some discourse touching his Love, sayd unto him; You are too slow in unfolding your selfe, considering the haste I have to heare thee, and the longing desire which I have to know what it is thou wilt say unto me.

Sir, (quoth he) I find, that of force you must bee present at this famous Tourneyment, the noyse whereof, as it hath filled every mans eare, so it is now all their talke: nor do I wonder, that where the reward of a glorious name lyes at stake, men go on fearefully, out of their great desire that they have to gain it. I that am your poore creature, will doe you the best service I can, by instructing and enabling you in that which you are desirous to attayne unto in the exercise of Horsemanship, and the use of Armes, and that in a short time; no way doubting but my instructions shall bring foorth good fruits of what I promise. Let not this seeme strange unto you, nor let my youth scandall my skill; for I must tell you, they beeing things whereunto I have even beene bred, they are familiar unto mee, and I dare boldly boast my knowledge in them. Don

Alonso was much joyed in hearing him, and giving him many thankes for this his voluntary offer of his love and service: he told him; If thou performest what thou speakest, thou shalt bind me much unto thee. Ozmin made answere; He that promiseth that, which he cannot performe, is as wide of his word, as he is from the worke; and meanes nothing but deceit; but he that stands in those tearmes, as I doe now, where trickes cannot serve the turne, he must of force, (unlesse he bee a foole) accomplish more in deeds, then he promiseth in his words.

Take order, Sir, that Armes be provided for your owne person, and mine, and then you shall quickly know, that by how much the slower I have beene in my offer, by so much the sooner I will bring it to effect: freeing my selfe from this debt, but not from that obligation which I have to serve you. Don Alonso presently gave order to have all things necessary provided, and when they were fitted for the purpose, they went foorth to a place a-part, where that day, and those that followed till the determined time of the Tourneying, they spent their time in the exercises which that solemne Feast required. So that in a very short time, Alonso learn'd to keepe his seate so sure, as if hee had beene lockt to his Saddle, bearing his Lance with so gracefull a carriage, and cowching it in his wrest with so comely a diportment, as if he had many yeeres beene practised in the Feates of Armes: whereunto were very good helpes, his cleane proportion of body, accompanied with a smart and nymble kinde of strength, which gave no small gracefull successe to his performance.

From his dexterity in vaulting on his horse, passing lightly from one Saddle to another, from his directions in his teaching, and from the shape, proportion, fashion of his body, from his behaviour, besides the garbe of Ozmins language, Don Alonço began to thinke with himselfe, that it was impossible this mans name should be Ambrosio, much lesse a Labourer, unlesse perhaps he laboured with his wretched Fortunes, whereof hee seemed to make shew. He discovered by his actions the lively splendour of some

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

THE FIRST BOOKE

principall person nobly descended, who by some various successe of Fortune, wandred up and downe in this disguise: and not being able to contayne himselfe in quiet, till he were rid of this doubt, taking him one day aside, hee spake thus in secret unto him:

Ambrosio, it is not long that you have served me, but in this short time you have been with me, you have bound me much unto you: your vertues, and your noble kind of carriage speake what you are; and therefore it is in vayne to seeke any longer to conceale your selfe: under the course vayle of these base and vile clothes, and under this poore habit, which thou wearest, lyes hid a nobler office, and a nobler name, (like Jewels lap't up in leather-Cases.) I now know by manifest signes which I have noted and observed in thee, that thou doest, (or to speake more properly) hast deceived me: for, that a poore Labourer, whose person you are willing to represent, should be so generall (especially being so young) in all kind of knowledge, but more particularly in the exercise of Armes and Horsemanship, is a thing almost (let me call in that word againe, and say) beyond beliefe. I have seene in thee, and plainely perceyved, that under these hard clods of earth, and muddy shels, is inclosed the finest gold, and the purest orientall Pearles the world can afford. What I am, it is already well knowne unto thee; what thou art, I am yet to seeke; howbeit (as I say) the causes are knowne by their effects, and that thou canst not any longer conceale thy selfe from me. I sweare unto thee by the faith which I have in Jesus Christ, and by the Order of Knight-hood which I professe and maintaine, to be thy both faithfull and secret friend, keeping that under the Locke of Silence, which thou shalt deposite in my bosome, assisting thee in all that I am able, both in my purse and person. Give mee an account of thy fortune, that I may in some sort cancell the debt, wherein I stand bound unto thee for those reall courtesies, which I have received from thee. Hereunto Ozmin thus replyde:

So strongly (Sir) have you conjur'd me; so squiz'd the

Grapes in the wine-presse, that you must of force wring that from my Soule, which with any other strayning in the world, save by these the Presses of your Gentleman-like proceeding, were impossible to be drawne from me. Complying therefore with that which you command me, putting assured confidence as well in your person, as your promise, I shall give you to understand, that I am a Gentleman; my native Soyle Saragoça in Aragon; my name Jayme Vives, which I borrowed from my father; for so likewise was he called. It is not many yeres since, that following an occasion, (it being the nature of young-men to bee in action) I fell into the Moores hands, and was made a slave, by a subtill kind of trechery, and false play of certaine fained friends; which, whether it were occasioned through their envy, or my misfortune, is too large a tale to tell you. It shall suffice that I deliver unto you, that being in their power, they sold me to a *Renegado*, one that had renounced his Christianity; who, how he did use me, it is inough to have nam'd his condition. He led me along with him, till he had brought me to Granada, where a Gentleman bought mee, called Zegri, one of the principallest persons in that City. This man had a sonne of the same yeeres with my selfe, whose name was Ozmin, who because he was the very picture of my selfe, as well in age, as in stature, feature, favour, condition, and all things else whatsoever: for that I did so truly resemble him, he was the more desirous to buy me, and to use me the better, that it might breed the greater fastnesse and friendship betweene us. I taught him all I could or knew, according as my selfe had learned of my friends at home in mine owne Country, which was the more perfected in mee by the frequent practice of such like exercises, being of that common use with us, as nothing more. From whence I reaped no small benefit; for, by conversing with my Masters sonne, my knowledge was thereby increased, which otherwise I might haply have forgot: and experience teacheth us, That men by teaching, come to learne. Hence grew to be refined both in the sonne and father,

that affection which they bore unto me; trusting me with their persons and wealth; so much did they rely upon my truth and honesty.

This young Gentleman was a Suitour to Daraxa, daughter to the Alcalde de Baça; (my Mistresse, whom you so much adore:) the marriage was treated of, and upon the point to take effect; for the Articles of agreement were already drawne, and no doubt the match ere this had beene concluded, had not the warres hindred it, and the present siege that was then layd unto it, wherby they were forced to deferre it till some fitter time.

Baça was shortly after yeelded up, by occasion whereof, this intended Marriage hung in suspence. And because I was then *Dominus Fac-totum*, and the onely man in favour and trust with them, I went and came with presents, and other inter-changeable kindnesses, from the one City to the other: it being my good fortune to be in Baça at that time, when it was rendred up; and so I recovered my liberty, together with many other Captives. I would faine have returned home to mine owne Countrey, but I wanted money: In the end I had notice, that a Kinsman of mine was abiding in this City. Two things did concurre to draw me hither; the desire I had to see this place, (being so noble and magnificent a City) and the supplying of my wants, the better to performe my Journey. I continued here a great while, without finding him, that I sought for: for hearing no newes of him, but such as were uncertaine, it turned to my utter un-doing; by finding that which I did not seeke for, as in such cases it commonly falleth out. I went wandring up and downe the City, and having little money, and much care, it was my happe to meete with a rare piece of Nature, an admirable Beauty; (at least in my eye, howsoever in other it might be otherwise) but that 's all one, being that is onely faire, which most pleaseth. To her I delivered up all my faculties, leaving to my selfe not one of them to live with me: I made now no more any reckoning of my selfe, nor possessed any thing which was not hers. This faire workmanship

is Donna Elvira, sister to Don Rodrigo, and daughter to Don Luys de Padilla, my old Master. And because counsell (as the saying is) springeth from necessity, seeing my selfe so wholly lost in her love, and not finding any meanes to manifest my affection, together with the quality of my person, I held it my best course to write Letters unto my father of the recovery of my liberty, and that I was indebted in a thousand double Ducats ; and that he would be pleased to supply me with so much moneys for my reliefe. Which businesse succeeded well ; for having sent me the whole Summe, and a servant with a horse for my journey, I put my selfe into good Cloathes, and fitted my selfe with all things necessary according to mine owne mind. The two or three first dayes I began to make that street my walke, giving many a turne at all howers of the day, but could never have the happinesse to see her. Now, from my continuall walking that way, I began by some suspicious people to be observed, who seemed to have a watchfull eye over me ; wherefore, for the avoyding of Spyes, I with-drew my selfe from my wonted walke, and betooke my selfe to a more retired course of life. CHAPTER VIII

My servant (to whom I imparted my Love-businesses) thinking upon some course for me, advised me (as beeing elder and better experienced then my selfe) finding a certaine piece of Worke going forward in my Lords house, to suite my selfe like a day-Labourer, and to change my name, that I might not be knowne, and so ranke my selfe amongst the rest, that are hired to digge and carry away the rubbish from the Masons worke. I began to consider with my selfe, what might happen thereupon ; but because Love over comes all difficulties, and Death is too weake an adversary to withstand its force, all feare was layd aside, every thing seemed easie unto me, I put on a resolution to entertaine his advice, and so I did accordingly. At that time there befell mee an un-expected accident, which was this ; When the Worke was finished, they receiv'd me into the house to be their Gardiner. Then, and never till then, was that happy day that I long looked

for : my Moone was now come to her Full ; and I was now climing to the height of my good fortune : for the very first day that I supplyde that place, and had but newly set foot within the garden, I luckily met with Daraxa ; she wondred to see me there, and I no lesse to behold her. We gave an account each to other of our lives, relating our mutuall misfortunes ; she recounting hers, and I mine ; not sticking to tell her, how farre I was in love with her friend, and in what fast Fetters she held my heart : intreating her withall, that since shee had such cleare knowledge both of my parents and selfe, and how nobly I was descended, she would bee pleased to favour my pretension, and to worke so with her by her good intercession, that I might come (by the holy Rite of Marriage) to enjoy the fruit of my hopes. She promised she would, and did (I assure my selfe) all that in her lay to accomplish my desire. But because Fortune was evermore too too niggardly-handed towards mee, when these our tender loves (like young Plants) began to gather a little strength, and were in the way to shoot up higher ; the sprigs being rent off, the bud was blasted with a sharpe Easterly wind, and some malicious Worme lay gnawing at the root, till at last it withered to nothing, and was quite consumed : for I was on the sudden banished the house, not knowing why, nor wherefore ; falling thus from the highest top of happinesse, to the lowest depth of misery. He that with the stroke of a Launce kill'd the first Bull, hee that with the edge of his sword made the other fall dead at his foot, was my selfe. She saw me well inough, and knew me too, and was not a little glad of it, which I did plainely reade in her looks, and her eyes did expresse it to the life. And in this occasion (if it were possible) I would likewise strive to make some notable proofe for to please my Mistris, who shall eternize my actions, by giving the world to understand who I am, and at what valuation I ought to be rated amongst the rest. My inability to execute this my desire, makes me even ready to burst with griefe ; and if I could purchase it with

my bloud, I would willingly let loose the Sluces of my veines to obtaine my wished end. Thus (Sir) you see, I have freely laid open unto you the whole successe of my love, I have given you a true account of it, there remaining nothing to my selfe in the reckoning, save a grosse summe of disgraces. And with that word he stopt. CHAPTER VIII

Don Alonso, who listned earnestly all this while unto him, when his eares were let loose (for t'others tongue had tyde them to his mouth) threw his armes about his necke, clasping him close unto him with streight imbracements: Whilst Ozmin in the meane while strove to kisse his hands, but hee would not suffer him so to doe, saying; These hands and armes are to bee imployed in thy service, that they may thereby deserve to gaine thine. It is no time now to use compliments, nor to alter as yet the courses you have hitherto held, seeing your owne will is not in disposition to doe otherwise. As for the Tourneyment, let that never trouble your thoughts, for you shall enter in with the rest, and doubt you not of it, for it shall be so; therefore plucke up your spirits, and set your heart at rest. Ozmin once more made offer to kisse his hands, humbling his knee on the ground. Don Alonso did the like, making many proffers of prevention: so forcibly did this new bond of friendship tye them each to other. Thus they past in large conversation the rest of those dayes that remained, till the very time and houre, wherein the Tourneyment was to be performed.

I told you before, how that Don Rodrigo for his great arrogancie, was secretly misliked by most of these Gallants. And therefore Don Alonso thought with himselfe that he had now met with that he desired. For Jayme Vives entring into the Tourney, he was wel assured, that he would eclypse his honour, and beat downe his pride. Ozmin for his part likewise did desire it as much. And before the houre of arming was come, that he might see Daraxa enter the place, he walked up and downe there a while, wondring to see it so richly adorned: the Hangings of Cloth of Gold and of Silke, were such and so many, as are

unable to be expressed; such variety was there in the colours; such curiositie in the windowes; such beauty in the Ladies; such richnesse in their dressings, and their cloathes; such concourse of all sorts of Gallants, that all being put together, seemed to be one inestimable Jewell; and every particular by it selfe, a precious Stone set therein. The Tilt-yard, which divided the Place into two equall parts, ranne quite athwart the midst of it; and in a convenient place was a Scaffold set up for the Judges, right over against the which were the windowes appointed for Daraxa and Donna Elvira, who upon two white Palfreys, their furniture being blacke Velvet set with silver Oes, and sutably frindged, entred well attended: Who after they had rounded the Place, tooke their Seates. Where Ozmin leaving her, hasted away, because anon after, the Challengers were to enter; who within a little space made their arrivall, wonderfull well set foorth, and in very good equipage. The Ho-boyes, the Trumpets, and other instruments of Musicke sounded without ceasing, till they were seated in their places. Afterwards entred the Defendants, and Don Alonso was one of the first; who having performed his three courses, and those singular well (that few did better) he presently returned home.

Having before obtained licence for a Cavaleere, a friend of his, whom hee expected from Xeres de la frontera, Ozmin in the meane while attending his comming. They came in both together to the place; and Alonso being his Padrino, presented him unto them. The Moores Armes were all blacke, his Horse sutable, without any plume in his Helmet; in stead whereof with great curiosity, he had made a Rose of Daraxa's Handkercher; which was an assured token, whereby she might know him. He put himselfe in his posture, and as good lucke would have it, he was to runne his first Launce against one of the Challengers Abettors: The signall was given, they made their Carreere, Ozmin hits his Adversary on the Bever, where hee brake his Launce; and giving him a counter-buffe with the Truncheon of his Staffe, he removed him from his

Saddle, and fell with that stroke to the ground over his horse crupper, but he had no other harme, save what he suffered with the weight of his Armour. For the two last courses, Don Rodrigo put himselfe forth, who lighted with his first Launce on the left arme of the Moore, neere unto the shoulder, remaining wounded by him in the pouldrons on the right side, where he brake his staffe in three pieces. With the last Don Rodrigo mist, and Ozmin brake his neere the sight of his Helmet, where hee left behinde him a great splinter of his Launce; so that it was generally thought, that he had shrewdly wounded him; but his Helmet defended him so well, that he had no great harme.

The Moore having broken his three Launces, went his way wonderfully joyed with his Victory; but much more Don Alonso who had brought him as his Champion into the field, and could not finde any place large inough to intertaine his joy. They quitted the Place, and went home to his house to disarme himselfe, suffering no man else to see his face. And putting on his ordinary apparell, he secretly went out at a posterne doore on the backside of the house, returning to behold his deare Daraxa, and to see that which passed in the Tilt-yard. Hee had gotten so neere unto his Mistris, that they might in a manner have shaken hands: they looked steadily each on other, but he evermore bare his eyes sadly, and with a heavy cheere; but she beyond all degrees of sadnesse, supposing that the cause of his sorrow might be, that she had not cheered him with some gracious cast of her eye. Nor could shee tell what to thinke, so much was she amazed, to see him Tilt in blacke both Horse and Armour, being it is a signe amongst them of evill lucke. All this put together, wrought in her a most deepe melancholly, and continued so extremely passionate therein, and was so surcharged with sorrow, that the sports being scarce ended, her heart trembling in her body, shee left her window, and hastned home. They which did accompany her, did much marvell that she went away no better pleased, seeming to take no contentment in what was done, and withall

began to murmure and mutter amongst themselves, every one suspecting that, which his owne malice did suggest unto him.

Don Luys, like a wise Gentleman, as oft as he heard any reasoning thereof, spake still in her excuse; the like he did with his sonnes that Evening, when he found them grumbling at her carriage, telling them that an afflicted soule weepes in the midst of mirth, and that there is not any thing that can minister matter of joy and gladnes to man or woman, that is absent from those, whom they best affect. Good things are so much the more esteemed, by how much the more we injoy them with knowne persons, and our particular acquaintance.

Towards strangers, there may (no doubt) be many intertainments given to move pleasure and delight; but (alas) they have no feeling of them; their thoughts are otherwise taken up, and in them the increase of sorrow is so much the more, by how much in others they see the greater joy. I blame her not for it, nor doe I thinke it a thing so strange; but rather imagine it to have proceeded from her great prudence, then any dislike she had of our sports, and doe meerely attribute it to her grave and sober behaviour; whereas the contrary would have argued too much lightnesse, and an unsettled kind of carriage, which imputation, women that prize their vertue and goodnesse, study to avoid. Besides, she is farre from father and mother, and from her best-beloved; and (though free in her usage) yet a Captive in her condition, and that in a strange Country, not knowing how to remedy her selfe, nor when she shall finde the meanes. Let every man examine his owne bosome, let him but make her case his owne, and then hee will tell mee another tale, and ingenuously confesse, that he should finde himselfe affected, just as she is now. And in doing otherwise, is (as it is with him that is in health) to bid the sicke to eate and be well.

This discourse having past in secret amongst them, they treated afterwards in publike of the *Xerezano*, how

bravely hee had behav'd himselfe that day; and how (albeit they desired much to know who he was) they could never get any more out of Don Alonso, then what he told them at first, and they beleeved it was true. Daraxa's melancholly increased dayly more and more, but the cause thereof none could guesse aright: they were all wide of the marke, none came neere the Butt: of all that shot their bolts; some fell too short, and some flew over. All did judge amisse, inventing in the meane time all the entertainments their wits could devise to give her content: but should they have broken their braines in the study thereof, they had never been neerer their purpose: for she was as farre from being capable of the delights they devised for her, as they were from entring within the Circle of her desires.

CHAPTER VIII

THE ARGUMENT

Continuing the Story of the noble loves of these two disconsolate Lovers, it is now recounted how Don Luys, for to cheere up the gentle Daraxa, brought her to a pleasant Village, whither Ozmin repairing, was set upon by a Company of Clownes. And in the defence of himselfe he slewe foure of them outright, and wounded many others. For the which fact he was committed to prison, and sentenced to death; together with the divers and sundry accidents that insued thereupon; and how in the end hee was set at liberty. And how himselfe and Daraxa turning Christians, their happy Nuptials were solemnly celebrated in the presence of the King and Queene of Spaine.

DON LUYS had a house in Axarase, and other possessions belonging thereunto, by the vertue of his Mayorasgoship, in a little Village appertaining to Sevill. The season was temperate, beeing then about February, at which time the Fields seeme to put on their new apparell; thither they agreed to goe to

make merry, and to recreate themselves for some few dayes, that they might not leave this path untroden, to see if by this meanes they could divert her sorrowes. With this shee seemed somewhat pleased, and made shew of better cheerefulnes then before; supposing, if she went forth of the Citie, shee should finde some meanes or other, to see and speake with Ozmin. They made ready their *Recamara*, and all fitting provision for such a businesse: and it was good sport to behold the hurly burly and confused noise amongst them, as of him that had the charge of Gray-hounds, of that other, that was to goe along with the setting dogs, the Tumblers, and the Kennell of the hounds; of a third, that carried Hawkes a-field; of this man bearing the Owle, that his Peece on his shoulder; of some with Crosse-bowes in their hands; othersome with Mules laden with Bedding, Hangings, and other houshold-stuff, and all of them trooping together, laughing and making themselves merry with the conceived joy of this Feast.

Don Alonso having notice hereof, comes me to Ozmin, and tels him that their Mistresses were gone abroad into the Country to take the ayre, and disport themselves, and that they were to remaine there some time: but when they would returne againe, that he knew not. This newes was nothing displeasing unto them for two respects: the one, for that they might (happely) meet there with the fewer Competitors in the pursuit of their Loves; the other, that they might have the better occasion not to be knowne. The nights were neither cleere, nor darke, nor cold, nor hot; but with a pleasant noise of stilnesse, and delicate darke clearenesse, heav'n and earth were both so over-spred, that the heart of man could not imagine a fitter night for the purpose.

These two loving friends, and friendly Lovers, agreed to try their fortunes, and to see what prize they could make in the choise of two such rich Bottomes as these were, laden with so much Honour, Beauty, and Wealth, the greatest treasure the world can afford. They disguised

themselves, apparelling their bodies with good honest Country cloathes, like plaine Husbandmen, and set forth about Sun-set upon two hackney Jades; and when they came neere unto the Village, some quarter of a League, or there-abouts, they alighted at a certaine Farme-house; to the end, that by marching thus on foot, the lesser notice might be taken of them. Which might then have fell out very happily for them, if Fortune had not wheeled her selfe about, and turned her back towards them; for they arrived in very good time, even then when their Ladies were in the Balcon intertaining discourse, wholly fitting themselves for conversation, and mirth, as the company, or occasion should give cause.

Don Alonso durst not draw too neere, for feare of fright ing the game; and therefore intreated his Companion to make the winde-lase, and to negotiate alone for them both; because he being beloved of Donna Elvira, and well knowne to Daraxa, he had no reason to hide himselfe from them. Ozmin then by degrees, (with a carefull kinde of carelesnesse) stole neerer and neerer, singing in a low Base as it were, humming betweene the teeth an Arabique song; which (to those that understood the language) were cleere notes: But to those that knew it not, and were neglectfull thereof, it seemed no more then an ordinary La, La, La. Donna Elvira (hearkening unto him) told Daraxa; Even on these rude kinde of people God hath bestow'd his gifts, if they knew well how to use them. Doe you not observe that savage fellow, what a sweet and well-tuned voice he hath; and how he rellisheth and ayreth his notes, and how merrily he chants it, as if his mother had brought him into the world with a prick-song? But this is in him, as water that raines it selfe into the Sea without any profit. By this you see (said Daraxa) that all things are esteemed according to the subject wherein they subsist. These country Clownes, if in their tender age they be not trans-planted into a political and Civill life: and if they be not removed and changed from their barren, to better grounds, and wholly stript of that rugged bark, wherin

they are born, it is a thousand to one if ever they come to be well behav'd. Whereas on the contrary, those that are Citizens, and naturally of a good disposition, are like the Vine, which if it continue a yeere undrest and untrim'd, it yeeldeth fruit notwithstanding, though it be but a little: but if you returne to prune and husband it aright, it acknowledgeth the good it hath received, and renders a very large and thankefull recompence. But this fellow that sings heere now, is such a knotty piece of Timber, such an arrant Clowne, that the best Carpenter in the world cannot with his Axe nor his Plainer, hewe him into fashion, or shave him to any smoothnesse of civill carriage, but for ever remaine an unprofitable blocke. It is a torment to me to heare this Turtle sing; if it please you, let us go hence, for it is time to with-draw our selves, that we may take our rest.

The Lovers well understood one another; she the Song, and he her words; and to what end she spake them. The rest of the Ladies went their way, only Daraxa remained a little behind after the rest, and speaking to him in the Arabicke tongue, will'd him to stay there: where he stood waiting for her, and in the meane while, walked carelessly up and downe, but still with an eye towards the Window, to see when she should make her returne.

The baser sort of people, (by a secret kind of instinct) do evermore beare a naturall hatred to those that are Noble; as the Lyzard to the Snake, the Swan to the Eagle, the Cocke to the Phesant,[1] the Crab to the Cuttle-fish, the Dolphin to the Whale, Oyle to Pitch, the Vine to the Cole-wort, and the like. And if you aske, (as desirous to know, what is the naturall cause thereof,) I can shew you no other reason for it, more then that the Adamant drawes unto it the Yron, that the Marygold followes the Sunne, the Basiliske kills by Looking, and Swallow-wort helpes the Sight. For as some things naturally love one another, so othersome hate and abhorre by a celestiall influence; the reason whereof mortall men have not to this day beene

[1] Francolino.

able to reach unto. And that things of divers kinds have this property, it is no wonder, because they consist of differing compositions, dispositions, and inclinations in nature: but that reasonable men, both t'one and t'other, molded of one and the same earth, of one flesh, of one blood, of one beginning, created-forme, and the selfe-same end, living under one self-same Law, beeing of one and the same Religion, and all of them in all and every part, (as farre-foorth as they are men) so one selfe-same substance; that out of that Similiancy, man naturally loves man: that yet (I say) there should be that contrariety and unsavorie taste; that this Raskallity, and base off-scumme of the earth, more hard then Flint, or the Gallician Nut, should persecute the Nobility with that vehemencie as they do, is a matter to me of great admiration. CHAPTER VIII

That night certaine young Lads of the Parish likewise walked abroad, and lighted by chance upon these two Strangers: and at the very first incounter, without any cause or reason in the world; no occasion being given them, began to flocke together; and gathering themselves into a ring, beganne to cry amaine; A Woolfe, a Woolfe, the Woolfe is come: and throwing there-withall little stones by hand-fuls on their heads, (as they had showred down from heaven) they shrewdly be-pelted their Pates: so that they were forced to flie, unable to make any longer stay, their intertainment was so bad. And so they returned without any more ado, Ozmin being dis-appointed (which did much grieve him) of taking his leave of his Mistresse. They went thither where their horses stood; and on them to the City, with purpose to returne late againe in the night, that they might not bee discovered. But this forecast stood them in little stead: for if Lightning and Thunder should have fallen from heaven, and though they knew it should either burne or dash them in pieces, there was one Rogue amongst the rest, that would rather lose his life, then carry himselfe civilly towards them; and onely out of no other end but to do mischiefe and

villany. Scarce had they the next night following set foot in the Village, but that a knot of these mad-caps being met together, and knowing them to be the very same whom they abused the night before, one with a Sling, another with a Yard, this man with a Bore-speare, that with a Batt, some with Staves, some with Spits, not sparing so much as the Peele and Maulkin of their Ovens, (as if they were to go out against a mad Dog) they joyntly set upon them: but they found them better provided then they were the night before; for they had brought with them good Jackes of Male, and steele Murrians, and strong Bucklers. On the one side you might see stones, Cudgels, and lowd showtes; and on the other, many strong blowes, and cutting flashes with the sword; and on both such a tumult, and such a stirre, that with the noyse thereof, the whole Village seemed to be up in armes; so like a little warre did this fierce fight appeare. Don Alonso, in crossing the street, was un-awares with an unluckie stone strooke on the brest, and fell to the ground, wanting strength to recover himselfe to returne afresh to the fight. Wherefore as well as he could, he crawled up, and withdrew himselfe aside, while Ozmin in the meane time drave them up before him in the street, working them much harme: for some of them (and those not a few) were sore hurt, and three left dead in the place. The tumult increasing, all the whole Village came out at once, and stopt the passage, that he could not, though he would never so faine, have fled from them. There was got now on the one side of him a Turfe-breaker, a sturdy stout Rogue, who with the Barre of a doore strooke him such a cruell blow on the shoulder, that he forc't him upon his knees: but it did nothing benefit him, that he was the Alcalde's sonne; for before that he could come to double his blow upon him, (which he was about to do) he gave him such a flash, that he clave his head in twaine, as it had bin of a Kid or a Calfe, leaving him lying like a Tunny on the shore, having rendred up his life in satisfaction of his Roguery. So many charged him on every side, and laid such load upon

him, that being unable any longer to defend himselfe, he was taken by them.

Daraxa and Donna Elvira, saw and heard all that had past between them, (but with much sorrow to see such uncivil out-rage) even from the very first beginning of the Fray, as also what a coyle they kept, when they had caught him thus alive, and had him in their hold, and how they bound his hands behind him with a Cord, as if he had beene one of their fellow-rogues. All of them on all sides intreated him ill ; one buffetted him, another puncht him, a third kickt him, throwing on him a thousand disgracefull affronts, wherewith they sought to be revenged on him for all the wrongs he did them, who (before he was their prisoner) durst not looke him in the face.

What a beastly and a shamefull thing was this, to use a man thus, when he was not able to make resistance, his hands being bound to the peace ? A thing never to be done by any, but such base Villaines, and dogged Clownes, which kind of coorse usage is naturall and proper unto them. But what becomes now of Daraxa ? how does she brooke this misfortune ? how is she able without swouning, to see his person thus basely abused, who did so much love and adore his shadow ? on the one side to see him prisoner, on the other, to see some wounded, and some slaine, and her honour lying in the midst betweene them both ? for she knew well enough, when the case should bee layd open, Don Luys of force could not but aske, what Ambrosio made there, and what occasion drew him thither.

In this confusion, necessity drave her to sit in councell with her selfe what course were best to be taken. To prevent therefore farther mischiefe, she devised a Letter, which when she had sealed, she lockt it up in a little Cabinet that she had, to the intent that when Don Luys should come unto her, shee might make shew thereof for her owne discharge.

Now by this time the day began to appeare, and yet the people were not quieted. They had sent unto the City to give notice of what had happened, to the end that

information might be taken how things had past, and to open the businesse. And when the Notary was come, they began to examine Witnesses ; whereof many (without being called) made their voluntary appearance. For ill men, of themselves invite themselves unbidden, onely out of a desire to do that is ill : and of enemies, become friends, to condemne the innocent. Some sware that Ozmin had sixe or seven, besides himselfe in his company ; others, that he was seene to come out of Don Luys his house, and that some cryde out of the window, Kill them, kill them. Others, that the people of the Towne resting secure and quiet, they wilfully set upon them ; others, that they came and challenged them out of their houses ; there not being one man amongst them all that sware a truth. God deliver us from such Clownes, for they are as stiffe as Oakes, and of the same toughnesse of nature, cruell, and hard-hearted : if you will have any fruit from them, they must bee used like Akornes, beaten downe with Cudgels and dry blowes ; for they will sooner suffer themselves to be pluckt up by the rootes, though it be to the utter ruine of themselves, and their estates, then to bow or stoope, bee it never so little. And if they be once minded to persecute a man, they will perjure themselves a thousand times, though the matter in question be not worth a straw, onely out of an inclination to doe that which is evill. And the ill is so much the worse, that these wretches thinke, that they do God good service therein, and that their soules are saved by it : and it is a wonder, if they confesse their fault, and repent themselves of this their rancour and malicious poyson. The deaths and wounds received, were prov'd upon him, and the poore Gentleman laden with yrons, and put in safe custody. Don Luys, as soone as he had notice hereof, hastened to the Village, his daughter informed him of the businesse, acquainting him truly with all that had past : he inquired likewise of Daraxa, who told him the same tale, and that she had sent for Ambrosio to come thither, for to dispatch him thence with Letters for Granada, and before that he could get to

speake with her, they had these two nights together beaten him with Cudgels, and pelted him with stones; so that, though her Letters were written, and lay ready for him, shee could not come to deliver them into his hands. Don Luys desired her, that she would shew him the Letter, as well to see the contents thereof, as also for his owne discharge, she being by their Majesties committed to his custody. Shee (though she seemed loth so to do) condescended at last to his request, and gave him the Letter, howbeit little intreaty would have served the turne; for she desired nothing more, then to have him see what she had writt. And taking it from foorth her Cabinet, she sayd unto him; I give it unto you, that you may perceive my truth, and conceive no jelousie, that I write any thing worthy the hiding from you. Don Luys tooke the Letter, and going to reade it, found that it was written in the Arabicke tongue, wherein he had no knowledge. Hee then made inquirie for one that could reade and interpret that Language; the Contents whereof were, that she signified unto her father, what a griefe it was unto her, to live thus divided from him; and that she desired to be certified of his welfare; and if the desire she had to see him did not over-sway all other respects, she liv'd otherwise in as full content as any woman in the world, being more made of by Don Luys, then any of his owne children: And therefore besought him, that in acknowledgement of this his kindnesse, and courteous intertainment, he would be pleased to remember him with some Present worthy his desert.

And because in such like hurly-burlies as these, words multiply more and more, and together with the stirre, reports gather strength, and increase; and for that every one canonizeth his owne presumption, according as hee is in love with it, they began to murmure against Don Luys, and the people of his house. The Mustard was got up already into their Noses, and their fingers began to itch; but he, like a wise and discreet Gentleman, (as he was) thought fit for the present to dissemble the matter;

and seeming to take little notice of their malicious pro ceeding, he removed his whole houshold, and returned backe to the City.

Now, whilest these things thus succeeded, Granada had yeelded her selfe to the Conquerours, upon such conditions as the Chronicles mention, and as by our fore-fathers hath beene reported unto us. Amongst those other Nobles that were found there at that time, were the two fellow-father-in-lawes, Albcaçen father to Ozmin, and the Alcayde de Baça : both which besought to be baptized, desirous to become Christians : which Ceremonie being performed, the Alcayde intreated their Majesties hee might have licence to goe see his daughter Daraxa : which being granted, they tolde him he should be advised from them ere long, how and when it should be. Albcaçen thinking that his sonne was dead, or taken Captive, used all diligence to know what was become of him, but he could never get any inkling thereof. For the which (as he had good reason so to be) he was wondrous sad, not onely as he was his onely child, but being also such a sonne, so well qualified as he was, and descended of such rich and noble Parents, the onely hope of their House. The Alcayde had no lesse feeling of it then he, as well for that he loved him as dearely, as if he had beene his owne ; as also for the griefe Daraxa would conceive, when she should come to heare the tidings of this heavy newes. Their Majesties on their part had dispatcht a messenger unto Sevill with expresse command, that Don Luys should presently without delay repaire unto them, and bring Daraxa along with him ; with that respect and good usage, wher-withall they had put him in trust.

Upon the receipt of these Letters, she (being acquainted what order was given) was at her wits end, and ready to runne mad, because of force, upon this occasion, she was to depart, grieving thus to go away, before she should see an end of this businesse, not knowing what would become of it; and sorrowing beyond measure that her dearest Love should be left behind her in prison ; and that now

when he had most need of her helpe, she must in this his greatest extremity, he driven to leave him to shift for himselfe. Her thoughts were all in a confusion, her imagination was troubled, and her heart (through the weight of her griefes) as heavy as Lead, calling her selfe a thousand times more unfortunate, then Misfortune it selfe, and of all other the most wretched woman.

She was resolving to finish all at once, and together with her Love, to lose her life, with a perplexed, but almost-settled mind, it was in her deliberation to have acted a most cruell errour upon her selfe, in token of that chaste and true love which she bare to Ozmin. But Daraxa, whose passion had not quite out-gone her judgement, like a discreet Lady, (as she was) correcting her cruell determinations, taking up her selfe when she was in the height of her speed, she resolved to trust her misfortunes in the hands of Fortune her enemy, expecting whatever she would give them; and being that the utmost evill, was death, she would not despaire of the game till she saw the last man borne. But this resolution of sufferance could not stop a sea of teares, which burst with a swelling Tide from foorth her eyes. The standers by, supposed this to proceed out of her over-joy, that she was to returne to her owne Country, but they were all deceived, so that every one spake to her, but none did comfort her. Don Rodrigo came to take his leave of her, who with a countenance bathed with those cristalline teares, which dropped from her heavenly eyes, spake unto him in this manner following:

Noble Don Rodrigo, I might very well seeke to perswade you with abundance of reasons to that good worke, which upon this present occasion I pretend to present unto you, and to crave your furtherance therein. Which in its owne nature is so just, that I cannot forbeare to aske it, nor you to grant it, being that your selfe is so much interessed therein: you know (though I should not tell you) the obligation we have to do good; which as a naturall and divine Law speaketh particularly to every mans soule and conscience. Nor is there any man so barbarous, that is

ignorant thereof: and this carries so much the more force with it, by how much the stronger the reasons are that are alledged; amongst the which, a principal one, and not the least, is, that we apply this good unto those, that have eaten of our bread, and been intertained in our service. And because I know you can not be unlike your selfe, my intercession may seeme the lesse needfull. But that which I shall intreat at your hands, is this: You know, that Ambrosio was servant to both our fathers: first to mine, then to yours: And therefore we are both bound (but I the more) to doe for him; having put himselfe through my default in that necessity, wherin now he is, the cause in hand no otherwise concerning him, but as I was interessed in the business. By my hand he was thrust into this danger, I was the sole causer of it; and therefore I stand charged with it, and must put it to my account. If you will therefore free me from this debt; if you desire to give me content; if you purpose to binde me unto you, that I may for ever remaine the thankefull acknowledger of your love and kindnesse, it must be, that by laying upon your shoulders this weighty care of mine owne desire, that you seeke by all meanes to procure his liberty, which in the reckoning is mine; and my request unto you is, that you indevour it with that earnestnesse, as I doe desire it. Don Luys, (whom I have ever found my singular good Lord) will, before I goe hence, use all possible diligence in his owne person, with his friends and kinsfolke; that the one ayding the other in his absence, may free mee of this debt, for the which I stand ingaged. Don Rodrigo promised to do his best, and so they parted.

Now, for that this poore Lady had left her best beloved in this great perill of his life, she was much grieved; and by so much the more, by how much the farther she was from him; so that when shee came to Granada, shee did not seeme to be the same she was.

Don Alonso, though he had escaped their hands, yet being sorely bruised in his brest, he was forced to keepe his bed, so soundly had the Clownes bang'd him. But

when he afterwards heard, that his Companion was carried prisoner to Sevill, he got him out of his bed, posted thither, tooke infinit paines, trotting up and downe, and never ceasing to sollicit his friends cause, as if the case had been his owne. Notwithstanding, what with the complaint of the Plaintifes; the accusation of Witnesses; the evill inclination of the Judges, (either upon information, or corruption; not favouring the Defendant,) besides the slaine and wounded (which were many) he could not save him, together with divers other his good friends, from being condemned to be hanged at the common Gallowes.

Don Rodrigo was in a great rage, that his father and himselfe should find so little respect, as to hang up a servant of theirs, that had not offended the Law, had he had equall hearing, and a faire tryall. On the other side, Don Alonso stood much in maintenance of the Defendant, saying, that it was not to bee permitted; nor could the Law condemne a Gentleman so nobly descended as his friend Jayme Vives was, to be hanged: And that in case the fault were farre greater, yet the difference of quality ought to save his life: At least it ought to priviledge him from hanging, it being the Law, that, in matters deserving death, Gentlemen should not be hanged, but be-headed. The Judges and the rest of the Bench were distracted in this Case, and knew not what they were best to doe. Don Rodrigo, he stiles him his servant; Don Alonço, his friend; Don Rodrigo pleades for him by the name of Ambrosio, and Don Alonço, by that of Jayme Vives, a Gentleman of Zaragosa; who, at the feast of their Buls, had made such noble proofe of his Valour, as the whole Citie could well witnesse: And that in the Turnament (he being his *Padrino*, or Champion that brought him in) un-horst one of the Challengers, shewing that day great tokens of his worth and Valour. The difference was so great, the names so contrary; the qualities alledged so discrepant; that the Judges, to cleere this doubt, resolved with themselves to take declaration thereof from himselfe. They demanded then of him, whether he were a Gentleman

or no? Hee answered that he was nobly descended, and of Royall Bloud, but that his name was neither Ambrosio, nor Jayme Vives. Then they willed him, that hee should manifest his name, and the quality of his person. Whereunto he made answer, that his punishment might excuse him for not discovering himselfe; and being that he was undoubtedly to dye, it was no more necessary to tell it them, then it was materiall, to suffer either the one, or the other death. Then they desired him to deliver, whether hee were the same man Don Alonço had reported, which had so bravely kill'd the two Buls, and gotten such honour in the Tourneyment.

He replide he was; but that he had neither of those names, whereby they called him. And because he was so loth to declare his Linage (conceiving him thereby to be a man of quality,) they demurred upon the busines, to see if they could worke the truth out of him, to know who he was; as also to winde out the reasons, why these two noble Gentlemen should so earnestly undertake his defence. And which did not a little startle them; they saw the whole City did generally desire his liberty, and stood strongly affected towards him. Hereupon they dispatched some presently away for Zaragosa, that they might learne out the truth, and give knowledge of his Birth. But having spent some dayes therein, and used many diligences, they could not meet with any (for all their strict inquiry,) that could give them notice who he might be, nor could devise what manner of Gentleman he might be, either by his name, or any signes or tokens by them given, who failed not to describe him at full unto them. Being returned with this ill Dispatch, albeit his friends did much importune for him, and the Magistrates of Justice did often require him, that he would lay open his quality and condition, yet he would not do it, nor was it possible to perswade him thereunto. So the Judges (the time limited being fully expired for farther respite) sore against their will, much pittying both his Youth and Valour, not being able to crosse the course of Justice, being prest so earnestly

by the importunity of the adverse party, they confirmed their former sentence.

Daraxa, nor the two fathers were asleepe, whilest these things were in doing; for they had made their Majesties acquainted with the whole carriage of the businesse, and were by them informed of the truth thereof. Many petitions they put up, and no sooner one Memoriall given, but another was a drawing to second their suit. Daraxa, she in her owne person did sollicit the life of her espoused husband, begging it by the way of *merced* and grace: But their Majesties answered nothing thereunto. Yet secretly they dispatched Don Luys presently away, with their kingly provision to the Judges, that they should deliver unto him the Bill of the whole inditement, in every point as it was taken from the beginning to the end, together with the prisoner, for that it did much concerne their Highnes service. Don Luys posted away (as he was commanded) with all the speed he could; whilest poore Daraxa, her own father, and father-in-law melted into teares, considering the haste which the Judges would make in dispatching this poore innocent Gentleman. Which they so much the more feared, for that their Petitions received so slowe an answere. They knew not what to say, or think of this so long a delaying of them, without giving them any answer off or on, either good or bad, or any the least hope of life. This did exceedingly grieve them, but they knew not how to helpe themselves, nor had they left any one stone un-removed, but made all the meanes and friends they could. But that which did most daunt them, was, that the maine danger did consist in the delay.

Whilest they were thus strucken into their dumps, and doubts (for what comfort can there be in so dangerous a suspension?) Don Luys (as you heard before,) spurred on a mayne, with much both speed and secresie. And as he entred the gates of Sevill, Ozmin was led forth of the prison, to be carried to his execution. The streets, and every place through which they past, were full of people, all was

tumult and noise, and not a person, but wept and shed teares, to see so handsome a yong man, so well favour'd, so valiant, and well-belov'd for those famous deeds which he had publikely done, to bee so untimely cut off: And the more was their sorrow, to see him dye without confession. Which made them all to thinke, that he did it to escape death, or to prolong his life: but he was silent, and spake not a word, nor shew'd any signe of sadnesse in his lookes, but with a smiling kinde of countenance beheld them all as he passed along. They made now and then certaine stops, to see if they could exhort him to confesse himselfe, labouring all they could to perswade him, that hee would not lose body and Soule both at once. But hee answered them not a word, but held his peace all the while. The people continuing thus in this confusion, and the Citie wayting on this sad spectacle, Don Luys came, making the people give way, pressing through the throng, to hinder the Execution. The Alguazils thought it was a resistance of Justice, and out of very feare which they had of Don Luys, for that he was a stout and valiant Gentleman, and dared to oppose himselfe to any danger, they forsooke Ozmin who was under their guard, and with a great hurry and clamour, they ranne to give account of what had past, to the Magistrates, whose authority (they thought) it more neerly touched. Whereupon they came to know, what might be the cause of so great disrespect done unto them. He put his hand in his pocket, and taking out the Kings Order, he delivered it unto them, which was by them, to their great contentments, most willingly obeyed. And so they brought Ozmin (being accompanied with all the Gentlemen of that Citie, and the common joy of the people) to Don Luys his house; Where that night hee was intertained with a gallant Maske, setting up many Torches and Cressets in the streetes and windowes, for to give the more generall content: And in token of their great joy, they would have celebrated those dayes hee stayed there with publike feasts; for now they knew who he was. But Don Luys would not give way thereunto; but tying

himselfe to his Instructions, carried him as his prisoner, along with him the next morning, being kindely used, and well intertained upon the way, according to the greatnesse of his ranke and quality. CHAPTER VIII

Being now arrived at Granada, hee kept him secretly with him some few dayes, untill such time as he had order from their Majesties to bring him to Court. Who when he was come before them, they joyed much in the sight of him ; and whilest he was standing thus in their presence, they commanded Daraxa to be called forth. Now when these two Lovers thus suddenly met in such a place as that was, so unexpectedly, and so farre beyond their hopes, every man may make his owne heart judge of the wonderfull joy which they received in this happy (but unlooked for) incounter, and imagine with himselfe what each of them did thinke and conceive thereof. When each others eyes had fed their fill, the Queene made towards them, and told them that both their fathers were become Christians : howbeit, Daraxa knew so much before. She desired them to doe the like, which shee should receive as a singular favour from them : but that no other love, nor feare should inforce them thereunto, save onely that of God, and their owne salvation. But howsoever, whether they did so or no, (for she would not compell the conscience) her pleasure was that they should now instantly injoy their liberty, and dispose of their Estates and Persons, according to their owne will and pleasure.

Ozmin would faine have answered the Queene with all the joynts and sinewes of his body, making them so many tongues, to render thankes to her Majesty, for this so great a benefit ; signifying that he was very willing to be baptized ; and then addressing himselfe to Daraxa, in the presence of their Majesties, he intreated her to doe the like. Daraxa, whose eye was never off from her dearest Ozmin (so hungry was she in beholding him) shedding a few sweet teares from her Rosie cheekes, directing her lookes and speech unto their Majesties, she told them, That since it was Gods will to inlighten their understanding,

and by many tribulations, to bring them to the knowledge of his truth, she was disposed, and that unfeignedly, and with a true heart, humbly to submit her selfe thereunto, and to the obedience of their Majesties, under whose protection and princely hands, she reposed both her selfe, and all that she had. So anon after, they were christened with a great deale of Ceremonie, naming the one Ferdinand, and the other Isabell, according to that of their Majesties, who as God-father, and God-mother gave them their names at the Font. Within some few dayes after, their Nuptials were celebrated with a great deale of glory and ostentation, many Presents and other courtesies being conferred upon them in that City, where they lived all their life-time, and left behinde them an illustrious and noble off-spring, which continueth yet to this day in much honour and reputation in their Country.

We went hearkening to this Story, with a great deale of Silence, being led on attentively with it, till we came within sight of Caçalla : so that it seemed to have been measured just out for that journey, so truely did the one jumpe with the other. Howbeit, it was somewhat more inlarged by the Author, flourished over with finer phrases, and a different Soule, to that which I have delivered unto you.

Our honest Carrier, who remained mute from the beginning to the ending (which was no more then all of us did) began now to find a tongue, and was the first that opened his mouth. Alight (my masters) quoth hee : For heere I must leave you : my way lyes along by this path. And with that hee cals unto me, Come hither, (my yong Gallant) let us make up our reckoning before we part.

When I heard this, I was almost ready to hang my selfe, it was the bitterest draught, that ere went downe my throat. Is it e'ne so, (said I to my selfe ?) Well, let it goe : for I did verily beleeve, that all that past betweene us, had been in the way of friendship. Well, I dis-mounted, and got not up so lightly before, as I now came downe heavily : for I knew not in the world what answer to make him, save onely to aske him, how much I was to pay him for the riding

of nine Leagues? See what these Gentlemen give, so must you. For your lodging and your dyet, you are to pay me three Royals more. The Umbles of the Mule I now found to be deare meat unto me (and that they stucke a little also in his stomake:) but that which griev'd me most, was; That I had not money to pay for it. And therefore I came unto him, and told him; My friend, Lo, heere is your money for the reckning, so much you say is my part of the shot; but for my horse-hyre I owe you nothing; for you your selfe, without any intreatie of mine, desired me to get up, inviting me thereunto of your owne accord.

What a Divell (quoth he) meane you by this? Marry gupp with a murraine, you are a fine Gentleman indeed; doe you thinke to ride a cock-horse on free cost? you are a pretty Youth indeed. I replyde upon him; we fall to scuffling; the Clergy-men inter-posed them-selves; they were to umpire the businesse betweene us: They condemned me to pay for the meat of my Beast for that night. I did so; making an even reckoning with my purse, having no more left me in all the world, but twenty *Maravedis*, to beare my charges that night. The Muletier went about his businesse; The Clergy-men, and my selfe, entered into Caçalla, where we take our leave, every man betaking himselfe to his owne way.

THE ROGUE
OR THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE

The Second Booke

Wherein is treated, how he came to be a Rogue; and by beeing so, what happened unto him

CHAPTER I

How Guzman de Alfarache, going out of Caçalla towards Madrid, proves the quality and condition of a miserable man; and upon this occasion, gravely discourseth of the effects of Want, of Shame, and of Castles in the ayre: And how he came to serve an Host; and of the wicked disposition of such kind of men

THOU seest mee here in Caçalla, twelve Leagues from Sevill, upon Munday in the morning, with my purse pennilesse, and my patience remedilesse: and accused (as you have heard) for a Thiefe, by way as it were of Prophecie, presaging what I should bee hereafter. I suffered inough the first day I set forth; the second, more. For my care increased, and it rained downe hard upon him, who was too wet already; one mischiefe overtaking another. I had lately money in my purse, and

meate to put in my belly: and griefes (as the Proverbe is) are the better over-past with bread.[1] It is good to have a father, it is good to have a mother; but to have meat to put in a mans mouth, is better then them both. The third day was to me, as it were, a day of death: for then I had my full load of miseries: I found my selfe then like a leane Dogge, barked at by others; grinning with my teeth upon all those that came round about me; turning head against all, but not daring to bite any: my cares continued with me; with them, their barking: and having hedg'd me in, set all upon me at once: but that which most troubled mee, was; That I had not where-withall to spend, nor any meanes to defray my necessary expences. I knew then, what a Blanke[2] meant; and that he that doth not seeke to gather, doth not make any reckoning of it, nor know the woorth thereof, till he feeles the want of it. This was the first time, that I look't that Hereticke Necessity in the face: I knew him then by his Character, but afterwards I did better consider him by his effects. How many dishonest actions doth it venture on? what cruell imaginations doth it represent unto thee? what infamous things doth it sollicite? what disorders doth it drive thee into? and what impossibilities doth it not attempt? I weighed also with my selfe, with how little our mother Nature is contented; and having given much to many, yet none of them rest contented: all cry out, They are poore, publishing their wants to the world. O thou Epicure! O thou ryotous Glutton! thou lavish Prodigall! why dost thou talk thus foolishly, that thou eatest and swallowest downe so many thousand Ducats yeerely? Say rather, that thou hast so much Rent comming in; and that thou keep'st it in thy hands, but not that thou eat'st it out: and if thou doest eate it out, why doest thou keepe such a complaining? seeing thou art no more man, then my selfe, whom poore Lentils, dry Fitches, old Beanes, hard Pease, and Bisket that is fenowed and moth-eaten, keepes as fat and faire, as those

CHAPTER I

The effects of Want

[1] *Los duelos con pan, son menos.*

[2] *Blanca*, is a small piece of money, Lat. *As, assis.*

that have daintier feeding. Thou wilt not tell me, nor canst thou (I thinke) give me a reason, what should bee the cause of it. For my part I know not: but if ever thou hast beene in want, or shouldst (which is possible) be put to shift for thy selfe, and be driven to need and to lacke, thou wouldst then be able to tell mee another tale. I wish no man that ill lucke, but onely lament mine owne misfortunes. She is the Mistresse to all things, a subtill Inventresse, by whom your Thrushes, your Pyes, your Jack-dawes, and your Parrats are taught to speake. I plainely began to perceive, how Adversitie makes men wise: in that very instant, me thought, I discovered a new light; which as in a cleare Glasse, did represent unto mee things past, things present, and things to come.

Necessity the best Schoole-mistresse

Adversity makes men wise

Till this present I was a meere Cockney, and well might that name sute with my breeding. For (as it is in the Proverbe) *Hijo de la viuda, bien consentido, y mal dotrinado*: the sonne of a Widow is well fed, and ill taught. I had many chips to be hewne out of me, and the first stroke of the Axe, was this trouble that did light upon me; which did so wound the maine timber, and so touch me to the quicke, that I know not how to indeere it unto thee. I saw my selfe abandoned, and so dangerously ingulphed, that I knew not where to find harbour, or to put into any port for to save my selfe. My yeeres were few, my experience lesse, it being fitting, that they should both have beene greater then they were. And which was worst of all, (knowing by manifest signes, that my ruine was neere at hand) being willing to aske counsell, I did not know from whom I might receive it.

A poore mans account, to what a reckoning it comes

I entred into a reckoning with my selfe, and was making my Account; which I found to be very bad; my charge was great, and my cash small: I was about not to have gone any farther; for to go on I wanted meanes, as I likewise did for to carry me home. I was ashamed, being I was come away from thence, to become againe (as it is in the Proverbe) an Hindge to the doore; (which, howsoever that open or shut, it remaines still in the selfe same

place) or to put my foot upon our owne Threshold, in the open sight of my Mother, my friends, and my kinsfolke. God helpe me, how many, from that day to this, have I seene to be utterly undone, and meerely out of this respect! I was (I say) ashamed: how many Virgins have left off to be so, and have lost their Maiden-heads, by thinking themselves to be tyde in thankfulnesse for a paper of Sugar-Comfits, and some Love-verses; or because some vaine fellow hath given her musicke at her Window, and made her fall in love with him, by the helpe of another mans quality; with that very Song, which with a sweet ayre and gracefull voyce another sung for him? How many block-heads (out of shame of deniall) have entred into Sureti-ship for others, and have payd the debt, themselves beeing utterly undone thereby; and the children (through the fathers folly) for want of maintenance, sent to some Hospitall? How much money hath bin lent and borrowed, for the continuing of friendship and kindnesse betwixt man and man; whereby in the end it so falles out, that he doth not onely lose his friend, but his money too? Nay more, many times it so comes to passe, that he that parted with his money, hath not meat to put in his mouth, and is ready to starve for want of food; and hee that had it of him, hath over and above to pay him; and yet the other dares not aske it him, and all (forsooth) for that he is ashamed to speake to him.

CHAPTER I

To be ashamed out of modestie to do what is good, is a cause of great hurt

I would have thee to know, (if thou knowst it not already) that Shamefastnesse is like unto a web in a Weavers Loome; if one thred be broken, it ravels the whole Worke. In those things, whereby hurt may arise unto thee, and drive thee to narrow shifts, spoyle the worke, and breake the threds in sunder, and I assure my selfe thou wilt rather thanke me for it, then thinke amisse of my counsell. And the inconvenience which thou must suffer, (having done that which is desired at thy hands) let him smart for it that craves it, rather than thou, when thou hast done it.

Shamefastnesse, what it is likened to

Good advice

For Modesty and shamefastnesse in such a case, when it stands upon a mans making or marring, is a thing that

is onely proper unto fooles. It is fit, that thou shouldst have a kind of modestie in thy selfe, not to do (no not when thou art alone by thy selfe) any foule or shamefull act: but for any other, what knowst thou of what colour he is, or of what metall hee is made? Free thy selfe from him, in that which shall neerely concerne thee; let him not tye thee up like a Dogge, with a chaine and a clogge, behind the doore of thy ignorance: cut, or slip the Collar; get loose, and runne away from him, as fast as thy legges will carry thee. Onely be ashamed to do any thing (as I sayd before) that is shame-worthy. For that which thou callest Modestie, is no better then meere foolerie: if I my selfe had not beene ashamed, I should not have wasted so many sheetes of Paper, as this volume containes, to acquaint thee with the sad Story of my miserable life: whereunto I might adde many more; but I now ride poste, and must hasten away, promising to deliver unto thee farre greater things concerning my life, if God say Amen.

Modesty, when to be used

Shamefastnesse in some things, is notable ignorance

I tell you, it would have grieved me very much to have returned home without a Cloake, especially having come foorth with one upon my backe. Nor was I willing to be laught at, (which they could not choose but doe) to see what a single-sole Gentleman I was, and how like a naked cottage I lookt, or a bare wall without hangings: Besides, I made it a point of shame, and stood much upon it. And that having put on a resolution at my departing, it had beene pusillanimity in me, and basenesse of mind, to have had but so much as a bare thought of returning backe againe. I thought, I should never have the like occasion againe, (though I thinke, never any man but my selfe, played such an idle tricke) and therefore when I was once on my way, it stood not (me thought) with my reputation to hang an arse, and to pull that foot backe, which had already set it selfe so forward: I made it a matter of shame, which turned afterward to my undoing; but am not now ashamed to speake this as boldly, as I did under-go it foolishly: for such another Asse as I, was there never.

DE ALFARACHE

The good old Hostesse ran still in my mind, who, I make account, will fall ere long into my hands; whom, if it be my chance to light upon, I beleeve she shall not get from me with her Kerchiefe on her head: I will make her walke with her haire about her eares, and throw her (Sir-reverence) in the durt. I have water inough in store for her, to set her up to the chinne: I am resolved to be revenged on her, by treading on the very necke of her, and setting my foot on her old withered wind-pipe, throwing her first to the ground, as thou wouldst throw a Dish-clout. CHAPTER I

Would to God (thou paltry proud Boy, thou unruly young man, and thou senselesse old Asse) that I had either then understood, or thou didst now know, what manner of thing Shame is, what point of honour and reputation, considering the great disorders that thou doest, and the idle courses that thou runnest.

I said with my selfe, my Reputation lyes upon 't; my Honour is ingaged; I must and will goe on, my trust is in God, and I hope he will not faile mee. Having thus set up my rest, I resolved to passe forward, with purpose to make a journey to Madrid. For there was the Court, where was all the braverie and gallantry of the world, nothing to bee seene, save Roses and Lillies great plenty, and aboundance of all things, with many Knights of the order of the golden Fleece; many Dukes and Grandes of Spaine; many men of Title; many Prelates; many Knights of the Habit, with many principall Gentlemen of extraordinary ranke and quality; and above all, a young King newly married.

I thought with my selfe, because I was a handsome young Lad, well shap't, and of some reasonable good fashion in my behaviour, that they would have gone together by the eares for mee, striving who should have me away with him. O how many things did present themselves at once unto mee! How farre, in this simplicitie of ours, are our deeds, from our thoughts! What made dishes; what hot, what cold; what boyld, what rost? For it is easier to thinke, then to doe. Businesses may

It is easie to think on a thing, but hard to bring it about

THE SECOND BOOKE

bee soone conceived, but they are not so easily effected. Both which in my imagination I thus paint forth unto thee.

How both these are painted

To thinke upon a thing, I suppose to be like unto a pretty little Boy, riding upon a Hobby-horse, with a Winde-Mill made of paper, which hee beares in his hand upon the top of a Cane, or some little sticke, that comes first to hand. But to bring that thing to passe, I liken that to an old man, bald-headed, weake-handed, lame-legged, who leaning on two Crutches, goes to the scaling of a high wall, that is strongly defended. Have I spoke too much? I say it is no lesse. For things oftentimes seeme to bee well disposed of in the night, when the Candles are out, and all is darke, taking counsaile with our pillow: But the Sunne no sooner appeares, but they vanish away in an instant, like thinne clouds in the heat of Summer. He that could have seene mee, when I made this account, might easily have perceived with what care, and breaking of my sleepes, I framed these things in my thoughts. But they were Castles in the ayre, and fantasticall Chimera's, and had scarce put on my cloathes when I had put them all off againe, and throwne them from mee. I plotted many things, but none of my projects did hit right, but fell out crosse, if not quite contrarie to what I had proposed. All was vaine, all lyes, all illusion, all falsehood, and deception of the imagination, and like Duendes [1] Treasure, all cold embers, and dead coales.

Pillow Counsell proveth vaine

Now, I goe onward on my way, and having gotten me a short Cane in my hand, in stead of a walking Cudgell, me thought, all the while I had that, I had my Cloake [2] on my back; but it did neither doe me that credit, nor keepe mee so warme, as that would have done. Onely it serv'd me to under-prop mine arme now and then, whilest I gave breath to my weary legges.

[1] *Duende*, is one of the spirits that fell with Lucifer. *Tesoro de Duende*: Or Duendes treasure, we say to be that Estate, or Wealth, which is all consumed and gone, and a man knowes not how, being vanished like a spirit.

[2] A Plimmouth Cloake.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER I

As I was trudging along, a couple chanced to overtake mee, travelling that way on their Mules: I thought with my selfe, Could I now hold out lustily, and keepe company with them, they could not in kindnesse but pay my charges. But *Pescar con Maço*,[1] *no es renta cierta.* To fish with a Pole, is no certaine rent. Nor, is it to thinke, and to be wise, all one. They are two differing things. They had never a boy betweene them, to goe along and looke to their Mules; they did not ride very hard; though their hearts (as I afterwards found) were very hard towards me. They rode gently inough, but they were cruell-minded men. Their pace was softer then their bowels, for any compassion that was in them.

To sute this with an English proverbe I know not

I jogg'd still along, and kept close with them: and when wee had gone some three Leagues, or there-abouts, it was neere about Noone. My heart-strings were ready to breake with trotting and galloping after them, because I would not be cast behinde. For, though their gate were easie, yet it put me (considering my youth and weakenesse of body) to the height of my speed. These were men, or rather Beasts in mens shape, for they spake not a word. And I beleeve they were monstrous covetous; and some there are that are so neere, that they will not part with their spittle, if they knew it would serve for a medicine. These miserable wretches would not exchange so much as one word with mee, because they would not helpe mee (if need had been) with some intertainment on the way.

Had they entred upon some Discourse, or told mee some such Story, as did my honest Clergie man, I should not have beene halfe so weary as I was. For good company, (wheresoever we chance to light upon it) is a kinde of meat and drinke to the Soule: it cheeres the hearts of Travellers; it recreateth their minds; it refresheth their bodies; it makes them forget their wearinesse; it riddeth the way; it easeth our griefe; it expelleth melancholly; it lengthens mans life, and by a particular priviledge that it hath, it

Good company, what effects it worketh

[1] *Mazo* is properly a Mallet wherewith Carpenters drive their Chizell.

makes horse-men, of footmen. Wee came in together into the Inne where wee were to bait; but I in that case, that there was but little difference betwixt me, and one that is dead, I was e'ne quite out of heart, and cleane tyred out. But that I might get me a morsell of bread to put in my mouth, I was forced to buckle up my selfe, to bestirre my stumps, to lay aside all ceremonies, and to forget to stand upon my points. Moreover I strain'd my selfe beyond my strength; humbled my selfe more then stood with my nature; applyde my selfe to wayt upon them, to put their Mules into the Stable, and to carry their luggage into their lodging. They were sound and lusty, and had their healths about them, but I had got the Plague by meeting with them. For at the first dash, one of them sayes unto me; Stand aside (my yong Gallant) get you gone, we have no need of your service.

O Traytors, enemies to God (thought I to my selfe) how uncharitably doe these men beginne with mee? what hope can I have from them, that they will give me victuals; or if I should faint on the way, that they would take pitie of me, and set me up behinde them? They are set downe to dinner: I stood right over against them, but somewhat aloofe off, thinking they would have been so tender-hearted, as to affoord one bit or other from their trencher: but I fell short of my hopes.

There came thither at that time a Franciscan Fryer, who was on foot, and all in a sweat. He sate downe to rest himselfe, and anon after, puls mee out of his Wallet (which hung on his left shoulder) a Loafe of Bread, and a piece of Bacon. I was so horrible hungry, that I could scarce stand upon my legges, or fetch my breath, so faint was I growne for want of food.

But not having (white-Liver'd Whore-sonne, as I was) the courage (out of a dastardly kinde of bashfulnesse) to speake unto him to relieve my want: I lookt pittifully upon him, and besought him with mine eyes (which is a good dumbe eloquence) that he would give me a bit of something for Gods sake.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER I

The good Fryer, who read my Petition in my lookes, (with all the haste he could make, as if his life had lyen upon the speedy doing of it,) said ; Blessed be God, Though I should want my selfe ; yet seeing thee in that necessitie thou now art, I would rather goe without my selfe, then to see my poore brother lacke.

The Franciscan Fryers Charitie

Take this (my pretty Boy) quoth hee ; and much good may it doe thee. O to see the wonderfull goodnes of God, the eternall Wisedome, the divine Providence ; the infinit Mercy, which in the bowels of a hard stone, doth sustaine a poore silly worme, and provide it food, and filleth all things living with his heavenly bounty !

They that were able, and had wherewithall, would not (out of meere covetousnesse) give mee so much as one crumme from their table : and what reliefe I could not draw from them, by all my serviceable indevours, I had from this Mendicant, this poore beggerly Fryer, onely for Gods sake, and out of meere charitie, seeing in what extremitie I was. *Quién proprias necessidades no tiene, mal se acuerda de agenas.* Hee that never knew what want meant, hath little feeling of another mans misery. Mine was before them, they saw it, and with it my tender yeeres, and that I had almost broken my heart, having spent and tyred out my selfe to keep company with them ; yet were they not sensible of my wearinesse, tooke no pitie at all of me, nor did commiserate my wants.

My good honest Fryer, did freely share his victuals with me, wherewith I fill'd my belly, and was well satisfied. If that good man, as hee went towards Sevill, had beene to goe my way, hee had ransomed mee from my mis-fortunes, and had made me a happy man : but we were to runne a contrarie course, and to take severall wayes : yet when he was to goe his way, the good man (I shall ever call him by that name,) gave mee half a Loafe that hee had left, and bid me farewell, telling mee, Thou must content thy selfe (my child) with this ; had I more, more shouldst thou have.

I put it in the lyning of the lappet of my Jacket, and

faire and softly set forward on my way. By that time I had gone three Leagues more, it was night, then did I supper my selfe upon my bread, without any other meat in the world ; nor was there any that would give me ought else to eate.

It was the Carriers day, and some of them Inned there : Mine Host of the house bid me goe in, and sleepe upon the Straw, I did so, and past over my travell, as well as I could, being poore and needy, and must doe as I might, seeing I could not doe as I would.

I had made a light Supper, (which you may well beleeve without an oath) for I did not rise the next morning with a full stomake. But when I was about to depart, and ready to leave the Inne, my Host comes unto mee, and demaunds a *Quarto* of mee for my lodging. I had it not, and therefore could not pay it him : the cunning Rogue had a great desire to have stript mee out of my Jacket, which was of very good cloath.

A hard-hearted Host

When I saw I was put to this streight, and that hee was so eager upon mee, my eyes were brimme full, and ready to runne over with water. One of the Carriers tooke pitie of mee that was there, (for they are not all Blasphemers, and fellowes that have no Soules) stept in betweene us, and said, Mine Host, Let the poore Boy alone, I will pay it for him. His fellowes askt me ; Sirra, whence are you, and whether goe you ? Hee made answere for mee, that had paid for mee. What uncivill people are ye to aske him that question ? Is that so hard a matter to be knowne ? you may easily guesse, that hee is runne away either from his Father, or his Master.

All Carriers are not Knaves ; some have Soules to be saved

Mine Host then said unto mee ; How sayst thou my Boy, wilt thou take wages, and dwell with mee ? As things then stood with me, me thought it was no badde bargaine ; yet it seemed harsh unto mee, that I should now learne to serve, who from my child-hood, had beene taught to command. I told him I would. Get you in then (quoth hee) and rest you heere, for I will not imploy you in any other service then the Stable, for the delivering out my

Strawe [1] and my Barley, and see that you keepe a good account, and score up truely, what every man takes, that neither you, nor they may be mis-reckoned. Take you no care, Sir (quoth I) I shall doe it to a hayre.

And thus I remained there a while, having victuals without allowance, and feeding (as they say) upon free cost; and for my worke, that was rather a sport unto mee then otherwise, and holpe well to passe away the time. For till those nights that the Carriers came, there was little or nothing to doe; as for other ordinarie Passengers, it was not a trouble, worthy the talking of. There I learned to steepe Barley in warme water, to make it increase a third part, and to give false measure; I had the cunning strike of the hand; I knew how to hollow [2] it with mine arme, and to runne over the Mangers; and if any man did put me in trust to looke to his Beast, and to give him his Provender, I would bee sure to coozen him of one third part of his measure. Some of my Yongsters would come in now and then very neatly, in their tricksie Garters,[3] and their trim Mouchato's, as spruce as could be, carrying the show of Gentlemen, but the Divell a Page or Lackey that they had to attend upon them. It was good holding the Bason to these: they are your onely Dons, to indure a fine Shaving.

With these, wee drove a good Trade. For wee came unto them, and taking charge of their Hackneys, we did set them up in such places as were appointed for them, where they had the remaines of that the others had left, which went for one halfe of their allowance; and the other halfe they were presently supplide with (though but bad measure;) but when they came to pay, we gave them a reckoning for the whole. And into the bargaine we had our Hens, and our Pigs, if not now and then the Foale of an Asse, that did helpe to share with them. For bountifull

[1] They have little Hay in Spaine, and no Oates at al. Their ordinary feeding for Horse, is chopt Straw, and Barly.

[2] *Hincar el pulpejo.*

[3] *Mancebilletes de ligas y vigotes.*

natures, and minds that are magnificent, never sticke for trifles,[1] nor offer to stand for small matters; so that we had all that we could aske, and they never made any more bones of the matter. Our mouthes were the measures, never weighing the set prices of things, nor the Sizes set downe in the Proclamation, nor what the Justices had ordered in that kinde, which were formally hung up in every Inne, with a particular taxe to every thing there specified. For those are never kept, and therefore made little or no reckoning thereof at all. Onely they are set up there at our doores, to the end that the Alcalde and the *Esçrivano*[2] may licke their fingers, and receive some monethly profit from the fees belonging thereunto. And to take occasion to see, whether they had fixed up the *Cedula* or no, with purpose to picke a quarrell with them, if they neglected the doing thereof, and so make them pay soundly for it. For the Stable, it is already well knowne, what every Horses allowance is, and how much it comes to a piece, both for their Straw, their Provender and their Standing. For the Kitchen, that was sport alone to us, it made us all merry, for we were quicke upon that call to come in, and nimble (as having learned our lessons afore-hand) in the bringing in of our reckoning. So many *Ryals* (Gentlemen) and so many *Maravedis*[3] miche yee God diche you, and you are heartily welcome. Being ever sure to reckon rather a *Ryall* over, then a *Blanke* under.

Many (like good wise men as they were) would never examine the reckoning, but lay downe their money presently, saying, Lo (my friend) ther's your due. But some fresh-water-Souldiers, that were but Novices and yong Travellers, plants of the first Leafe, would aske us wherefore? How can it come to be so much, etc.? But this was but to cut their owne throates, and to make us to inhaunce the reckoning the higher; for when they once put us to

[1] *Magnanimus non curat de minimis.*
[2] The Notary.
[3] A *Maravedi*, is the thirty two part of a *Ryall*, which is sixe pence.

that jumpe, (besides the raysing of our prices in the generall) we did alwaies finde a tricke to adde some-thing, though it were but for the boyling of their *Olla*,[1] and such like toyes; so that by this time there were money wanting for to make up the full reckoning, which they were forced to pay in the end, by way of fine or amercement for their folly. For had they (like others) taken their payment quietly, they had not beene so soundly lash't. For you must understand, that the word of an Host, is a kind of definitive Sentence; there is no appealing from it, but to the Purse. Nor is it swaggering or roaring that can serve the turne; your bravings will little benefit you; for your Hostes, for the most part, are a company of old Catch-poles, dogged Curres, who out of a scurvie condition that they have, will with a still mouth hunt dry-foot after you, till he come to some good Towne, and then hee will bawle upon you (like olde Cryer) and when he hath set you up, will accuse you to the Justice, That you would have set his Inne on fire, or that you did bastonado him with a Cudgel, or that you would have forced his wife, or his daughter; and onely that hee might do thee a mischiefe, and be revenged upon thee. Besides, we had some Lures in our house to catch foolish birds with-all, and had some shewes of provision for poore Travellers; which were such, that no man that had come into the Inne afoot, would have stayed to goe out a horse-backe: if thou chance to forget thy selfe, and to leave any thing behind thee, give

[1] *Olla*, is a pot or Pipkin, wherein flesh, and other things are sod. By the Figure Metonym the *Olla* is taken for that which is boyled in it. *Olla podrida*, is a very great one, contayning in it divers things, as Mutton, Beefe, Hens, Capons, Sawsages, Piggs feete, Garlick, Onions, etc. It is called *Podrida*, because it is sod leisurely, til it be rotten (as we say) and ready to fall in peeces. And it is therefore tearmed *Podrida*, for that it is like fruite that is over-ripe. Andreas Bacius, A Roman Phisician, in his booke *de natura Vinorum*, says; That *Olla Podrida*, is the same as *Poderosa*: To wit, powerfull by reason of its greatnesse, and the variety of the things contayned in it. In English it may well beare the name of *Hodge-podge*. Covarruvias, verb. *Olla*. This *Olla*, is in Spaine the common'st meate of all other, and in most esteeme. They eate the meate first, and suppe up their *Caldo* or broth afterwards.

it thy good word, unlesse thou have the better lucke ; for it shall be layd up sure inough for thy finding.

What shall I tell thee of the thefts, the tyrannies, the impudencies, and the villanies, that daily passe in your Innes and Victualling-houses ? There is neither the feare of God, nor of his Ministers amongst them : and for matter of Justice, either therc is none at all to be had against them, or else they takc part with them : But God forbid, that we should beleeve any such things of them ; for it is not to be supposed, that your Justices will be corrupted : But be it so or not so, take it as you will, the remedy thereof were a matter of no small importance. For it is a thing worthy the following, that many Wainmcn, and those that goe up and downe with Carriages, do refraine their Trading, through the great expence and charges of your Innes. Trafficke ceaseth every where, out of the feare that they have to be bitten by your Hosts, and Victuallers, who receive good payment for evill usage, professing a kind of publicke theft.

I have beene an eye-witnesse of seeing many things touching these kind of insolencics ; which to deliver, would require a large Discourse. And should we heare the like amongst Barbarians, we should censure them accordingly ; and yet, when we see the same here at home before our eyes, we are not moved thereat. But I sweare unto you, that the mending of the high wayes, the repayring of Bridges, and the reforming of Innes,[1] is not that which requires lesse care, then matters of greater moment, in regard of commerce and trafficke.

Howsoever, when I shall leave this house,
I have not farre to go.

[1] Profitable conveniences for Travellours.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER II

How Guzman de Alfarache leaving his Host, went begging to Madrid; and comming thither, how he set himselfe to learne to play the Rogue, and to beare a Basket; where by the way he discourseth of Hunger, of Beggerie; and of Honour which hurteth the soule

THIS beeing too lazie a life for me, I did not like it halfe well; and the lesse, for that it did not sort to my purpose. For I was no better (to speake the best of it) then an Inne-keepers Boy, which is some-what worse then a blind-man. I had a mind to be a Traveller, and thereon had set up my resolution, and therefore would not (though it had cost mee a thousand lives) have beene found there in such a base Office, as that was. There did daily passe by the doore many haggard-Hawkes, young wandring Lads, much about my yeeres and growth; some with money in their purse, others begging an almes for Gods sake: whereupon I said with my selfe, What a devill ayles me? or what scurvy metall am I made of, that I should be more cowardly, and baser-minded then other men? in that I am not sensible, how much I wrong my selfe; and out of a faint-heartednesse, and like a Craven (as I am) should stoope to picke out a poore living, out of such a dung-hill kind of life, as this? Hereupon I tooke heart unto me, and set a good face on the matter; and so bidding mine Host God b'wy, I went foorth to seeke my fortune, carrying some Copper-money along with me, gotten in a good warre; and some other lawfull purchases that I made: but my store being small, it was quickly gone. When all was spent, I fell a begging: some would

Guzman resolves to part with his Hoste

Guzman falls a begging

give me an *Ochavo*;[1] but most would say unto me, Pardon me (my Boy) I have not for you.

With this poore *Ochavo*, and other his fellowes, I did eate now and then with a *gaudeamus*, according to my gettings: but this Pardon mee (my Boy) I have not for you, did me no good in the world: I might have sate downe with a *pereamus*, for any comfort that I found in it. Charity was very cold, and it was no marvell; for it was a deare yeere, and there was a generall scarcitie thorow-out the Kingdome. And if there were a dearth in Andalusia, how great then must the want be in the Kingdome of Toledo? and farre greater in the In-land. Then I heard that Proverbe verified, *Librete Dios de la enfermedad que baxa de Castilla, y de hambre, que sube del Andaluzia*,[2] God deliver thee from the Plague, that comes downe from Castile, and from the Famine that comes up from Andaluzia.

Guzman leaves begging

Now, because I found begging to be but a poore Trade, and all things else at excessive rates; food and rayment being deare commodities, I grew so out of heart therewith, that I resolved to follow that occupation no longer, though my wants should be never so great. Hereupon, I was minded to make the best I could of those Cloathes that I had on my backe: then I began to unbinde the Booke, and to divide it into Leaves: that is, to separate one thing from another, that all might not go away at once; sorting my clothes into severall parcels, consuming one piece after another, till all was gone; selling this, chopping that, and pawning t' other, till I had not a ragge left.

What shift he makes to live

Guzman comes to Madrid; and in what kind of fashion

So that when I came to Madrid, I look't like one that had come from the Oare, or some gentile Rower returned lately from the Gallies, I was so lightly clad, having nothing on but a Canvas paire of Breeches, and a course Shirt; and that none of the cleanest, but as foule as foule might be; all so tatter'd and torne, and so rotten with age, that it was ready to fall from my backe. And this I was forced

[1] *Ochavo*, is a kind of brasse-money, whereof two make three farthings.

[2] When there is a Plague in Castile, the infection is generall. And when there is a famine in Andaluzia, the dearth is over all the Land.

to do, to keepe life and soule together, and all little inough to serve the turne. CHAPTER II

Seeing my selfe thus out of reparations, and all to be rent and torne; howbeit I sought after Service, thinking to winne credit with my good words, no man would trust me the more for my faire tongue, but grew rather jelous of my evill conditions; insomuch that I could not meet with any that would give me intertainment, admit me into his service, or suffer me to come within his doores, because I was without a Cloake, and so nasty in my other cloathes; that out of a very loathing, they were able to turne a mans stomacke. They did thinke, that I was some roguish little Thiefe, and that if they should take me in, I would filch some thing from them, and betake mee to my heeles when I had done.

Seeing my selfe in this desperate state, counting my selfe, as it were a lost man, I began to follow the Trade *de la Florida Picardia*, exercising all your Cony-catching trickes, knavish prankes, fine feates, with slight of hand, and whatsoever Rogueries come within the compasse of that prowling office. The shame that I had to returne home, I lost it upon the way; for travelling a-foot as I did, it wayed so heavie, that I was not able to bring it along with me: or perhaps, they that stole my Cloake, carried it away with them in the Cape thereof; and this is sure the likelier of the two. For ever since that time I have beene troubled with a lazie kind of yawning, and a Fever-lordane,[1] which did prognosticate the Disease I should be sicke of to my dying day. A Pockes upon Shamefastnesse, which hung still upon me, and yet I had none of it; for I began to free my selfe from that irkesomenesse, and that little shame that was left me, I turned into Impudencie: for Hunger and Shame could never yet be made friends. My former Modestie (I confesse) was meerely out of my shallownesse of wit, and now I find, that it was even then a foolish kind of Simplicitie. And in those dayes, I playd the

Hunger and Shame, mortall enemies

[1] The Spanish word is *Calofrio*: Lat. *Paroxysmus, frigus simul et calorem inducens: et nomen habet á calido et frigido.*

THE SECOND BOOKE

child, as others of my age do : but now, like a Vyper, that hath stung mee unawares by the hand, I have shak't that Vermine from off my finger ends. I fell in with other Tassel-gentles, much about my size and pitch, that were high Flyers, and cunning in the catching of their prey. As I saw them do, so did I, as well as I could : but because I was but newly entred, and was not yet come to that true flying to seize the Partridge in foot, I did assist them with my best indevours, refused no paines, followed their steps, and walked their stations ; whereby I came to picke up my crummes, and to gather a few Blankes together. Thus I sayled up and downe, fetching my boords to and fro, still sounding as I went along, to see how many fadome I was off from the shore, and what new Countrey was upon discovery.

Guzman begins to turne Picaro

I could now hunt out for my supper, as well as the best of them, and knew certainly where to have it ; but I was to take heed, that I playd the true Clock-keeper : for if I failed of my hower, (especially at your Monasteries, and Religious Houses) and did not truely keepe the due time, limited and prescribed by them, I was shut out, and left in the darke : so that I had now learned the fashion, to shew my selfe a mannerly Ghest, by staying rather for others, then that others should stay for me. This loytering kind of life was not without its cares ; and as idle as it seem'd to be, it was painfull inough unto mee : for, while I led this Roguish life, I learned to play at Cock-All, at Handy-Pandy, and at Nine-holes : from these I went a Forme higher ; I knew how to play at Noddy, One-and-thirty, Quinolas, and Primera : in a short time I profited so well in these my studies, that I past on to the upper Forme. I could cogge a Dye handsomely, and if I had good lucke, all was mine owne (especially if I met with weake Gamesters). Nor would I change this life of a Picaro, this roguish life of mine, for the best that any of my Ancestors ever ledde.

Need is a diligent Wayter

I had a moneths mind to the Court ; and I went daily refining my wit ; I set a new edge upon my understanding,

and inriched my braine with new Philosophie. And seeing others of lesser worth then my selfe to grow from a little, to a great deale of wealth; and from meane beginnings, to come to mighty matters, and to eate their bread without begging, nor expecting it from others hands, (which is the bread of sorrow, and the bread of blood) yea though it should be bestowed upon thee by thine owne father: out of a desire that I had to attaine to this glorious liberty; and that I might not (as many others) be punished as a Vagabond, and runne the censure of a wandring Rogue, I applyed my selfe to carry such burdens as my weake shoulders were able to beare. CHAPTER II

Bread of Sorrow, what it is

The Fraternity of Asses is a great Brother-hood; for, even men have beene willing to bee admitted into this Companie; and have beene glad to yeeld themselves to carry uncleane and heavie Loades, with as much patience, as the silliest Asse alive, as if they had beene borne for no other end, but to ease them of their burthens. Now, if men are growne to that basenesse, that they will quite the Asse of his Hamper, and clap it on their owne backes, onely to gaine an *Açumbre* [1] more of Wine, that they may drinke the freelier, when they have done their worke: see in what ample manner their Assishnesse extendeth it selfe; what a strong hand it hath in the world, and to what a mighty Corporation it is now growne.

But to let this passe, I confesse unto thee, that I was some-what cold in the matter at the first, and fell to it with an ill will; but above all, I was wonderfull fearefull: for being a thing that I was never us'd to before, it suted ill-favouredly with me at the first, and worse afterwards, when I was entred into it: for all beginnings have their difficulties; and are not so easie at the first as they seeme to be; but after I had taken a rellish of this Roguish life, and found the sweetnesse of it, I could tread the true Tracke of it, and was growne so perfect, that I could have

All things are hard in the beginning

[1] *Açumbre* is a Jarre or Pitcher, containing about a Pottle, little more or lesse, and is one mans allowance in wine. The *Açumbre* we divide into foure Measures, called *Quartillo's*. It is an Arabicke word.

gone blind fold to my worke, and not have stept a foot out of the way.

What a fine kind of life was it, what a dainty and delicate thing, without Thimble, Thred, or Needle; without Pinsers, Hammer, or Wimble, or any other Mechanicall Instrument whatsoever, more then one onely bare Basket; like unto those of your Brethren of the Order de Anton Martin, (though unlike to them in their goodnesse of life, and solitary retirednesse) I had gotten me an Office whereby to live: and such a kind of Office, as seemed to be a bit without a bone; a backe, without a burthen; a merry kind of Occupation, and free from all manner of trouble and vexation?

I did often thinke on the life that my Parents led; and that, which I had made tryall of in this so short a time; as also, that which they had undergone to so little purpose, and to their so great cost. O! (said I to my selfe) what a burthen is the weight of Honour? And what metall is there, that can equall it in poyze? To what a world of inconveniences, is that man lyable, who is driven to make use of it? How warily, and how circumspectly must he goe to worke? What a deale of care, and sudden passions, come upon him? What high and slender ropes must he runne up and downe upon? Thorow how many thousands of perils must he sayle in this vaste Ocean? Into what infinit troubles must hee thrust himselfe? And amidst how many Brambles, and Bushes, and pricking Thornes, must he im-bryer, and intangle himselfe withall, and scarce get out of them, without leaving his fleece behinde him, if not his skinne? What a thing is it, that my honour must bee subject to the mouth of the dissolute, and to the hand of the indiscreet and unadvised man? The one by word, the other by action. Against which, all the wit and force of man is not able to prevaile, nor to turne that unruly tyde, when it shall breake in upon us. What phrensie of Satan, what malice of the Divell was it, to marry this foule abuse unto Man, which is able to make him run mad, and irrecoverably to lose his wits? As

Honour, what a burthen it is

if he did not know, that Honour is the Daughter of Truth. And see how much a man is Vertuous, so much is he Honourable, and no more. And it is impossible, that my honour should be taken away from mee, as long as my Vertue remaines with mee, which is it's proper Centre. Onely mine owne Wife may take away mine honour from me (according to the opinion of Spaine) by taking away first her owne: for she being one and the selfe-same thing with my selfe, my Honour and hers are one, and not two, as being but one, and the same flesh; and whatsoever shall be said in the contrarie, it is but scurrility, meere wit and invention, and the idle dreames of a fantasticke braine. Happy is that mans life, that neither knowes what Honour meanes, nor seekes after it, nor hath any thing to doe with this Titulary toy.

True Honour is the Daughter of Truth

The honour of a mans Wife, what it is

I was ever of the minde, that if that man that pretends Honour, should but truely open his eyes, and looke upon it without partialitie, considering (not carried away with passion) the effects thereof, he would not stoope to take it up; nor touch that with his hand, whose burthen must either breake his backe, or make him sinke under the weight thereof to the ground. O how troublesome a thing is it, first to get it? how difficult afterwards to keepe it? how dangerous to hold, how easie to lose, as depending on the common estimation and opinion of men? But if it rely upon the Vulgar, and that bee the proppe that must up-hold it, it is one of the greatest torments that Fortune can give, or man suffer in this life, who desires to end his dayes quietly, and to passe his Carreere peaceably, without being crossed in his Course. And albeit men plainely perceive, that this which I say is true, and they see the experience thereof daily before their eyes, yet they will not sticke to hazard their lives; nay to give their very Soules for it, as if that should save them another day.

What the honour of the Vulgar is

Thou thinkst it no honour unto thee, to cloath the naked, to feed the hungry, nor to exercise (as thou oughtest) those good deeds, that belong to thy function, and many other things, which I know, and am silent in; and thou knowest

them to thy selfe, though thou doest dissemble them; thinking that others perceive it not, and that thou carryest things closely, when as indeed thou dancest but as it were in a net, and all thy actions lye open to publique view, which my pen shall omit to set down, that I may not point them forth unto thee as it were with the finger, and whereof perhaps, when I shall have delivered thee my minde, thou wilt make no more, if not lesse reckoning of it, then of a blast of winde, or a puffe of smoake, that presently vanisheth, and is no more seene.

Christian Honour, what it ought to be

Canst thou thinke it an Honour unto thee, that the Hospitall should bee maintained with the droppings of thy Tap, and the Scraps of thy Kitchen, (when there is not a Dogge, that waites at thy Trencher, but fares better ?) Canst thou thinke it an honour unto thee, that thy Mules should have their Linnen and their Woollen cloathes, whilest Christ (in his members) dyes out of very cold, not having wherewith to cover his nakednesse ? Canst thou thinke it an Honour to thee, that thy Horses should be as fat as their skins can hold, that they are even ready to burst againe with the fulnesse of their feeding, while the poore fall downe at thy gate for want of food, their weake legges not being able to support their hunger-starved bodies ? No, thou canst not. And I presume, the practice of every good Christian is farre otherwise. And this is that honour, which every man ought highly to esteeme, and may justly seeke, and hunt after it. But that which thou callest honour, may more properly be termed Pride, or foolish estimation, which makes men fall into Hecticks, and Ptysicks, and with a canine appetite to catch greedily at that Honour, which is no sooner had, then lost. And not onely that, but with it the Soule ; (which is a thousand pities) which every good Soule ought to avoid, and bewaile.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER III

Guzman de Alfarache goes on in his Discourse against vaine Honours: Where, by the way he offers unto Mans consideration, what manner of person hee ought to be, how to beare himselfe in his Office, and to governe himselfe in those high places, whereunto he is called

LBEIT, (as being then but a Youth) and newly (as they say) crept out of the shell, this being the first flight that ever I made, I had runne thorow many miseries, and suffered much want, yet I past them all over as easily as I could; imagining still in my minde, that Honour is like unto your early fruits, that are sooner ripe then the rest, and brought first into the Market, which though they be excessive deare, and not to be had, but at a high rate, and unmeasurable prices; yet all doe equally buy them, and pay alike for them, even from him, that hath a purse to beare it, as from him, that hath not the like abilitie. What a great presumption and shame is it, that a poore Husband-man should buy halfe a pound of your first Cherries that come into the market, which may chance to cost him the price of so much bread, as would very well serve to sustaine himselfe, his Wife, and his Children? O holy Lawes, and O happy Kingdomes, that shall put a bridle to this abuse, as a thing tending to the generall hurt of a Common-wealth! For (there being no restraint in that kinde) they buy, and eate thereof without limit, or moderation, never growing weary of buying, nor glutted with eating: Which too timely, or rather untimely fruits, breed no good nutriment, corrupt the bloud, cause raw concoction, and ingender evill humours,

Honour, how prettily it is heere compared

which afterwards pay their bodies with sound Agues, sharpe Fevers, strange *Parasismes*, and other the like grievous, and painefull infirmities.

I sweare by the faith of an honest man, that such a devouring of Honour, will cost thee more then one purge. I was never ambitious in this kinde, never greedy of this honour, never gave it a good looke, since I first knew it; especially, when I saw Pages, Serving-men, and Prentises forsake their old Trades, to follow new courses, and to get themselves into some odde Office, or other, as farre repugnant from their nature, as heat, from cold, and as much differing from their disposition, as heaven is distant from the earth. Yesterday, thou wouldst have sent thy Servant to one of these fellowes, to will him to come to thee, and when he had come, given him an *Ha*, or a *Nod*, or a plaine *Vos*,[1] which was as much, if not more, then he deserved. And now that he hath got but an Office upon his backe, hee sends the next day for thee by a Porter, where thou must sue and intreat that hee will be-friend thee in such a businesse, and stand with cap in hand, crowching unto him, giving him the Worship, with a Sir-reverence at every word, beseeching him, that his Worship would be pleased to doe you this or that favour.

Honour ill placed upon some

Tell me, is not that true of this man, which is spoken of that proud Bird the Peacocke, who t' other day having scarce ever a feather to cover his nakednesse, doth now boast his silken plumes, and spread abroad his golden traine? If this be true, it must likewise then follow, that when this painted puffe shall have his tayle pluckt, all his gilded feathers, and rich imbroyderies taken from him, which natures richest hand hath so curiously wrought; if any mis-fortune befall such a man, and that he once come to be stript of his honours, downe goes his goodly traine, and his plumes beeing pull'd from him, is just the same man, as he was before.

And if you shall but weigh and consider this thing well,

[1] Counted a disgracefull word in Spaine. As if heere in England we should in scorne Thou a man.

CHAPTER III

Touching Honour, and the honoured

you shall find such men as these, not to be men of Honour, but men honoured; for they that are truely honourable, have this honour from, and in themselves, and no man can so pill and pull their feathers, but that fresher and goodlier plumes will come up a-new in the place, and be more glorious to looke to then before.

But the honoured, that receive their honour from another, one while you see them; another while you not see them. So long as the merry moneth of May lasteth, so long are your flowers fresh and faire to see to: As these flowers, so are those favours, which the Favourite receiveth from the Prince, or person that favours him. They soone fade; they had but their time, and thats gone, and they with it: And then they returne to be the same men they were before.

Whilest the sap is in the bough, it is greene and flourisheth; but when it goes back into the roote, it dyes and withereth for the time. So it stands with your Favourite; his Honour flourisheth like the greene Bay-tree, while his Princes favour shines upon him; but when hee cals this in againe unto himselfe, as the tree doth the sappe, and it returnes to the roote from whence it came, his honour is nipt in the head, and is no better (if not much worse) then he was before his rising. So have I seene some men mounted on high, imployed in great affaires, and to have held great places of Dignity and honour in the Common-wealth, which might have beene put into the hands of Gentlemen of approved good judgement, and excellent parts, and thought themselves happy, if they had beene conferred and bestow'd upon them.

A reprehending of those that are Sots and Dolts, and yet seeke after Offices, and Places of great preferment

To these men I have call'd, as I have lyen in my bed, and cryde out unto them: How now (my friends) whither away goe ye with these Offices? Who (if they heare me) might very well answere: I vow to God, I know not my selfe: I thinke they are therefore given us, that wee should make our profit of them, feather our nests, and in-rich our selves, as well as we can. But thou doest not consider (wretched as thou art) that the burthen which thou bearest, thou

neither truely understandest, nor is it properly belonging to thy profession: and that in losing thine owne Soule, thou overthrowest withall another mans businesse, and art bound in conscience to make him recompence, for the wrong thou hast done him.

Doest thou not know, that there belongs more to the dispatch of businesse, and deciding of differences betwixt party and party, then there doth to the sowing of a Garment, or the shearing of Cloth, or to lend such a Gentlewoman your arme, when you Usher her along the streetes; which grace shee vouchsafes to affoord thee, for that hands sake, which did advance thee?

Peradventure, thou maist have beene askt the question, or thy selfe mayst perhaps have made some secret scrutiny in thine owne bosome, whether thou didst finde thy selfe of ability and sufficiency to performe thy charge; or whether thou hadst the knowledge and understanding to doe things well and handsomely, without wronging thy Conscience, going thy selfe to hell, and carrying him along with thee, that did conferre thy Office upon thee? But some babbling fellow here-abouts, which I suppose to be some one Barbers man or other, (for they are commonly a kind of Climactericall and dangerous prattlers) will give me this short answere: We can. It is a strange thing to see the humours of some men. Consider with mee (for Gods sake) what businesse hath with it so many tricks, so many shifts, and so many difficulties, as hath this? We are all of us men (the best of us are no more) and when the wheeles are once set a-worke, wee imagine, they must goe well inough of themselves, without any care, or looking to of ours. O what a pitie is it, that thou shouldst then begin to learne an Office, when thou should'st come to use it! O what a griefe, to see a mans practice out-runne his knowledge! he being as unfit for the Place, as the place for him.

The Pylot is feareful of governing his Ship, (not only in tempestuous weather, but at all times, even in the calmest Sea, and fairest Season; by reason of those sudden

accidents and various casualties, which hourely, nay, every minute may befall him) although he be his Arts-master, and throughly understands, what he hath to doe upon all occasions. And thou, which never sawest the Sea, wast never taught thy Compasse, nor knowst what belongs to the Art of Navigation: Wilt thou, I say, venture to steere a Ship, and ingulph thy selfe, thou knowst not whither, nor into what danger? What wouldst thou thinke or say, when thou seest a Boy fumble on the Citterne, and when hee should come to play before thee, not to be able to strike a true note; what a tearing would this bee to thine, or any other musicall eare? O how harsh would it sound? And yet all this while, thou doest not, or wilt not perceive, that when thy selfe commest to understand thy Place, or to thinke, that thou understandest it (which is the truer of the two) for want of knowledge, thou hast not onely lost that, but thy Lords love together with it, and the time which thou hast spent, and nothing left to comfort thee withall but the fooleries, which thou hast committed therein. Follow thine owne trade, and exercise thy selfe in those things, thou well understandest, thrust not thy Sickle into another mans Harvest, and meddle not with those things, that are fitter for others, then thy selfe. But this is not so much thy fault, as of those that thrust it upon thee, who have more, then thou, to answere for it: it is a Commutation, that lyes heavily upon the Conscience. But to proceed.

Even now, but to day, have I knowne these kinde of men, meane, poore, and miserable creatures; on the morrow after, they have risen up in a strange fashion, utterly unknowne unto me (like him that dyes his Beard, or being old and strooken in yeeres, growes to be young againe,) exalted, and set aloft, looking bigge upon the matter, expecting to have the first Cap, and to bee first saluted by those, whose servants they might well have been, and that in meane and base offices, and yet have thought it preferment good inough for them. I knew very well, which way he would goe, that led the daunce; and whence this violence did proceed, by altring things, and putting

them out of their due course, thrusting out the naturals, to bring in strangers. I likewise was not ignorant, that those that did murmure and repine thereat, had good reason so to doe; for by giving unto every one, that which of right belongeth unto him, the gall of Envy and Malice is thereby broken and split in sunder. For it is an ease to the sicke stomake of a State, when Offices seeke men, and not men Offices, whence great scandall and infamie doth arise. For by how much the more high Places make them to be knowne, that doe not deserve them, by so much the more they make the owners of them to be contemned and despised. And these undeserved dignities, go not away without their payment. For as they are an affront to those that hold them, when they are unworthy of them; so they suffer dishonour in themselves, by beeing conferred on such undeserving persons; Leaving him likewise, who did bestow them, subject to Infamy, Detraction, and Obligation to make satisfaction to the State, for the wrongs occasioned thereby.

Heere I alight, and make a stand, shutting up my conceit within it's bounds, that it may not straggle too farre. This ware I sell you as mine owne, and recommend it unto you for good, unlesse you under-value it for the sellers sake. And I must needs confesse, that this off-spring of my braine is worthy a better father. But doe thou dispose of it, and compose it, according as thy selfe shall thinke fit, by amending such faults as thou findst amisse. And though it be a beggers Brat, and the sonne of a Rogue, yet conceive withall, that we are all men, and have all of us understanding; and that *El habito no haze el Monge*: it is not the Coule, that makes the Fryer.[1] Yet in this, as in all things else, I submit my selfe to thy censure, and am willing to receive thy correction.

Now by this time, thou knowest my weaknesse, notwithstanding I would have thee to know, that there was not that day went over my head, wherein I did not runne over my beades, besides other devotions that I did. And

[1] *Cucullus non facit Monachum.*

although I heare thee murmure, that it is a common practice amongst Thieves and Ruffians, to have their *Rosario*[1] still in their hand, faining themselves to be very devoutly affected towards our Lady: Thinke, and say what thou wilt, I care not a rush, for I desire not thy good opinion, nor seeke to winne any credit from thy mouth. Every morning, the first thing that I did, was to goe to Church to heare Masse; that being done, I afterwards began presently to cast about, how I should spend that day, for the getting of something to sustaine my selfe withall, and to keepe me from starving.

I once remember, that having layen some-what long a-bed, and finding my selfe not halfe currant, I thought it not fit, that day, to take any paines for my living: it was a Festivall-day, and to Church I went, where I heard high Masse, and a very good Sermon by a learned Augustine, upon the fifth Chapter of S. Mathewes Gospel, where it is sayd; Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good workes, and glorifie your Father which is in Heav'n: where by the way, he bestowed a little sprinkling upon your Clergie-men, your Prelates, and such as were beneficed: telling them, That they had not these great Rents given them for nothing; that they were to looke rather upon the greatnesse of their charge, then into the greatnesse of their Revenew; and that these good things were not confer'd upon them, to fill the belly, and to cloath the backe, and to waste and consume these good blessings of God in unnecessary idlements; but in feeding the poore, and cloathing the naked, and in dispensing to the needy, and those that are in necessitie; over whom God had set them as Stewards, and no otherwise; or to speake more properly, hath appointed them his Administrators over this his Hospitall. And that in putting this Stewardship or Administration into their hands, it was more particularly throwne upon them, then any other, as on men of all other the most to be trusted, and (by reason of their

A Discourse upon the 5. of Mat.

Clergie-men charitably reprooved of their faults

[1] *Rosario. Las cuentas para rezar.* Latinè, *Sphærulæ, Precatoriæ, Corona.*

Profession) least interessed in the World: mercifull-minded men, wholly retired from the world, and from those confusions which accompany it; to the end, that with the more care, and the lesse trouble, they may apply themselves to this Ministerie, wherewith they were in-trusted.

Would to God they would open their eyes, and looke to whom they give, how, and on what they do distribute it; for it is anothers money, and not their owne, whereof a strict account will be taken of them. Let them not therefore abuse the trust, that is reposed in them; God never sleepeth; he is still awake and seeth all our Actions. Nor will it boot them to use trickes and devices to defraud him but in a Farthing, or to coozen him of the least Mite. For as it is the gaine of Judas, so shall they receive Judas his reward. He sayd in the generall, that their manners and behaviour should bee like unto the Lanterne in the Admirall, to the rest of the Fleet, by whose light, all the rest of the Ships should steare their Course, and still have an eye upon it, without troubling themselves in other worldly affaires, and matters of profit to their purse, which is contrary to their Profession, and to that obligation, whereunto they are bound by Gods Word, which cannot lie.

What manner of men Church-men ought to be

I remember very well, I did then call to mind a certaine friend of my fathers, how ill he disposed of that which he had got, and the ill example which he left behind him: this was his end; and with this the Preacher ended.

Many other excellent good things did he utter to this purpose, and strongly confirmed what he delivered with forcible reasons; which for the in-decencie of my profession, I willingly silence; nor is it fitting for a man of my fashion, to make mention of them.

Guzmans miserable condition

That night my sicknesse increased upon me; my bed was none of the best, nor much softer then a piece of an old Matt, that is full of holes, and throwne upon the dung-hill, as good for nothing. The cattell went grazing on the humane Pasture of my miserable corps; I awaked with

their nibbling, fell a scrubbing, and finding no disposition in my selfe to sleepe, I made a repetition of the whole Sermon to my selfe; as one, that understood very well, that albeit his speach tended more particularly towards Church-men, yet it did in the generall appertaine unto all; from the Myter to the Crowne; from the most powerfull Prince, to such a poore Caytiffe as my selfe. Lord be mercifull unto me, I began to thinke with my selfe, that this did as well concerne me as them: and that I was a kind of Some-thing; that I had a soule to save as well as they; and that there was some reckoning to be made of me too. Then I began to examine my selfe, What light am I able to give to others; or how can it be had, much lesse shine in a man, whose office is so vile, and so base as mine? Yes (my friend) quoth I: and it belongeth also unto thee, and therefore I speake it unto thee; for thou likewise art a member of this mysticall Body, equall with the greatest in substance, though not in quality. Beare thy burthens well and faithfully; make not your Vintage out of other mens Grapes; doe not nimme and purloyne by the way; conveying from the Basket to the Breeches, into Privy Pockets, and false Linings, that which is none of thine. Doe not shrinke the shoulder, as if thou hadst the dead weight of Plate upon thy backe; and do not thou move as slowly, when thou hast but two Loaves to carry, as when thou art laden with two Beames, or maine pieces of Timber.

Every man, even the meanest, is bound to be vertuous, and to have a good conscience

What your Porters that carry baskets, and the like burdens, ought to do

Make a conscience of thy gettings; bee moderate and temperate in thy gaines; not demanding more then thy labour is woorth; use all men well, but bestow thy paines on the poore for nothing; offering that freely, as thy first fruits due unto God. Be not dishonest, be not vicious, be no Glutton, nor no Drunkard: call thy conscience to an account, be sure to keepe a true score and reckoning with it: for, in so doing (like that poore olde woman in the Gospell) thou canst not want the comfort of lifting up thy heart, and thy eyes unto Heav'n, saying; Blessed be the Name of the Lord. For even in Rogues there is

some vertue, some sparke of goodnesse; and this in thee shall bee thy Light.

But in my judgement, both now, and then when I heard the Sermon, (that we may returne againe to our former consideration) what he spake (besides that which concerned the Clergy and the Communalty) had especiall reference unto Princes, and their ministers of Justice, whereof I should have spoken when I made this my Digression. These are truly sayd to be the Light; and in that sacred Chapter-house, or in the greatest part thereof, all is Light, more and more Light still, to the end (to leave them the more inexcusable) that they may not alledge hereafter, that they had not any Light at all. Consider with me, that the Light ought to subsist (as the Agent) in some subject (as the Patient) whereon to worke. As for Example, in the Waxe, be it Torch, or any other thing whatsoever. I say then, that when any such kind of person, be it another, or be it thy selfe, shall represent himselfe, as a Light unto me, thy good workes, thy faire behaviour, thy civill carriage, thy zeale, thy holinesse of life, is that which makes thee to shine, and to give Light unto others. What thing is it then, thinkst thou, to have an Office throwne upon thee, or some great dignity or other? It is, a putting of Waxe to this Light, to make it shine the more: but tell me then, what is the office of the Light? It is to go with his heate, drawing and sucking the Waxe still towards him, that it may burne the brighter, and maintaine it selfe the better. Even so must thou do with thy Office; thou must drinke it in, as it were, and incorporate it into this Light of thy vertues, and honest course of life, that all men may see it, and imitate it, bearing thy selfe so uprightly, that prayers may not move thee, teares may not soften thee, gifts may not corrupt thee, menaces may not daunt thee, anger may not over-come thee, hatred may not disturbe thee, nor affection deceive thee. Againe, which offers it selfe first to our sight, the Light, or the Waxe? You will grant me, the Light: if so, then so behave thy selfe, that thy Office, which is the Waxe, may be seene

Light, how it ought to be in those that beare Office

Rules for him that governs others

Officers compared to the Light, and to Waxe

after thee; and that the Office may be knowne by thee, and not thou by the Office. It often so fals out, that the Waxe is much, and the Light is little; whereby the Light comes to be drowned and quenched in it; as in case the Torch should be great, and the Weke small. Other-times it happeneth, that the Light is turned down-wards; and so by melting the Waxe above, it is presently extinguished and put out.

So we see, that the good in thy selfe is so little, and the Office which thou art put into, is so farre beyond the measure of thy Merit, that that little Light thou hast, is smoothered on the sudden, and so thou remainest in darknesse. Other-whiles, thou turnest these thy vertues towards the ground, by inclining thy selfe unto evill: for thou dost make thy Office to melt as it were at the top, and to waste and consume its light, by thy robbing, by thy coozening, by thy over-commanding, and contemning the poore: using in his Cause, delayes; in that of the rich, all possible speed: with the poore thou deal'st rigorously; with the rich, gently and mildly: on the one thou frownest, on the other thou smilest: the poore thou proudly tramplest under thy feet; but the rich thou salutest with Cap in hand; bowest thy body, using him in all the rest, with a great deale of love and kindnesse. And while this is in doing, Death comes on thee unawares; it seizeth suddenly upon thee, thy life is quickly at an end, but thy damnation remaineth for ever. Others there are, who (as I sayd before) draw Light from their Office; and whereas they themselves ought to be the Light, they are indeed but the Waxe. Wouldst thou know the condition of these men, and what they do? I will tell thee: What, I pray, is the property of Waxe? To goe by little and little, wearing and wasting away; haling the Light violently after it selfe, till they both go toppling out, vanish away at last, and come to nothing. Just so is it with these kind of men; they live in that manner, (hiding their Light under a Bushell, concealing their good Workes, and burying all Vertue and Goodnes in them) that they make no use of it,

nor esteeme it: onely they esteeme the Office, which they have made their Light: this, they go forcing, as it were, by violence, they tugge and hale it unto them, that they may incorporate it into themselves, that they may reape their profit by it, skimme the Creame from it; and not onely that, but to draw away its very heart-blood. And so by little and little, together with it, they themselves likewise consume away. Ill they liv'd, and ill they dye: as was their life, so was their end. What doth he thinke with himselfe, that suffers himselfe to be made Waxe, when he taketh from one that which is his right, or that which he justly deserveth, and doth transferre it on a foole, or some un-worthy person, whom he hath a desire to pleasure? Shall I tell thee what becomes of this man in the end? He melts and drips away like Waxe, not knowing how, nor which way he comes to bee consumed: his health decayes, his honour diminisheth, his wealth wastes away, his friends faile him, his wife, his children, and his kinsfolke, are taken from him by Death; on whom, as on the proppes of his house, leaned all his pretensions, he is swallowed up with Melancholy, as it were in a grave, or some deepe pit, yet knowes not the cause why, nor whence it should proceed. But the cause (my friend) is, that these are the whips of God, wherewith he scourgeth them temporally in this world, in that part which shall paine them most, besides that which he reserveth for their farther punishment, in the world to come. And his divine Majesty, for the comfort of the righteous, is willing, that those, that doe dissolutely sinne, by doing publike and open wrongs, contrary to all right and reason, should be corrected in the sight of men, and in the open view of all the world, to the intent that they may magnifie him in his justice, and draw consolation unto themselves from his mercy, which is also made knowne in the chastisement of the wicked.

God punisheth evill Officers, and in what manner

Wouldst thou live in health? wouldst thou bee cheerefull and merry? wouldst thou continue free from those disturbances, which might give thee cause to lament? wouldst

thou abound in riches? and leade a contented life without melancholly? Take then this rule of me; Make thy dayly account with God, confesse thy selfe unto him every day, as if that very day thou wert to dye.

A good lesson for those that desire, to live well and happily.

Let Justice be observed by thee in that maner, as it is defined and set down unto thee, giving to every man that which is his due: Eat of the sweat of thine owne browes, and not of the labours of other men; and to this end, store thou up such riches, as are well and truely gotten; so shalt thou live contentedly, so shalt thou be happy, and every thing shall prosper and thrive with thee, and all shall goe well with thee and thine.

In good sooth I am halfe afrayd, that this consideration of mine hath ledde mee on a little too farre, where-into I have so farre thrust in my foot, that I had need of some helpe to pull it out. I have launched out too much into the deepe, and ingulphed my selfe before I was aware. I have almost lost my selfe in this businesse, in dilating upon this point, and should runne out much more at randome, if I should goe about to tell you, why, and how, some of these things, are thus and thus carried, whether out of private interest, or affection, or passion, etc. But I will bee silent, all shall bee hush with me; for I will not (in these tongue-controlling dayes) that the Law take hold upon mee. *Secreta mea mihi*: My secret I will keepe to my selfe; I will locke it up close in mine owne bosome: besides, good and discreet silence is counted a holy thing: Though in that which I have spoken, I acknowledge my excesse, and confesse I have (with the Cobler) gone beyond my Last, this being a point of doctrine, fitter to bee discussed by a Preacher, then a Picaro. These barkings will require better mouth'd Dogges. Let them stretch out their throats, and yawle alowd, that they may discover the theeves. But alas, it may happely, or rather unhappely bee, that they have their mouthes stopt with a crust, which makes them to hold their peace.

Why Preachers refuse to reprove sinne, and to cry out against it

CHAPTER IV

Guzman de Alfarache delivereth a learned and witty Discourse, conceyved by himselfe, against the Vanity of Honour: touching by the way upon the Vices of Servants, of Shop-keepers, of Notaries, of Proctors, of Judges, of Artificers, of Apothecaries, of Physicians, and of Lawyers

HAVE made a long and a tedious digression, and am well witting thereof to my selfe. But I would not have thee make it a matter of wonder; for the necessitie that enforced me thereunto, was very great. And if two or more hurts meet in one and the self-same body, it is good discretion to succour the more important, not being unmindfull in the meane while of the lesser. So doth it often occurre in Warre, and in all other things whatsoever. I assure thee by the faith of an honest man, that I am not able to tell thee, which of the two were the greater, either that which I did let alone, or that which I tooke in hand, considering how much both of them imported, and of what consequence they were. But let us redeeme the Pawne that stands ingaged, and returne againe to our former matter, following the pursuite of that Discourse, of whose footing, we have found the pricks already.

It was my hap one day to beare in my basket, (which I brought from the Shambles) a quarter of Mutton, for a

certaine Hosier, or Gentleman Taylor. I had by chance at that time about me, certaine old *Coplas*,[1] or Ballads, which (in a kind of broken tune) still as I read this or t'other line, I fell a singing, as I went along. My good Master having (as it should seeme) listened unto me, look't backe on the sudden, and smiling, said; How now (my totter'd Raskall) a pox take you for a ragga-muffin, can you reade, you Rogue? Yes marry can I, Sir, (quoth I) I thanke God, I can reade reasonable well, but my writing is better then my reading. Sayst thou me so, Boy? And with that he intreated me, that I would teach him to write his name, or to make some marke, that might serve for a subscription, or under-signing (hee cared not which) for either would serve his turne. I pray Sir (said I) what good can this doe you? What can you benefit your selfe, by having learned to make a bare marke, and no more? Me thinkes you should have no great use for that alone, unlesse you could write too. Yes marry have I, Sir (quoth he,) for I have much worke goes through these hands, of such and such great men, I make all the cloathes their children weare (and there by the way, he reckons me up a bead-roll of these and these Lords) and therefore I would very faine, (if I knew how) learne to write my Name, or to make my Marke, that (if occasion were offered) I might not be taken for an Asse, and say (like a foole as I am) when I am call'd to subscribe, Indeed, Sir, you must pardon mee, I cannot write. And so this businesse broke off as abruptly, as it began. And I making a large *Soliloquium*, and meditation to my selfe, went on a good while with the same after this manner.

A Taylor would faine learne to write his name, or to make his *firma* or marke. And the reason why

Heere (Guzman) thou shalt see, what a kinde of thing Honour is, seeing it is conferred on such as these: It is, the sonne of Nothing; the Child that knowes neither father, nor mother; the Earth's off-spring, beeing raised out of the dust thereof; it is a fraile Vessell, full of cracks, of flawes, and of holes, uncapable of containing any thing in it, that is of any moment or worth. Favour hath

Honour, what kind of thing it is

[1] *Coplas son cantos que venden por las calles, y en las plaças los ciegos.*

indevoured to mend this broken Bucket, and to stop the Leakes thereof with clouts and with rags; and putting thereunto the rope of private interest, now they draw up water with it, and it seemeth to bee very beneficiall and profitable unto them. It is one of Peter the Taylors sonnes, whose father, howsoever he got it, were it well, or were it ill, made a shift to leave him something to live upon. Or like unto that other, who by stealing from others, got wherewithall to give, and where-with to bribe, and suborne. These are the men that are honoured now a daies, they speake high language, and utter arrogant words, and presse into all your great Assemblies, and principall meetings, as if they were the only men, and none but they. These now take the upper hand, sit downe first, and take place of all men, whom heretofore you might have ranked amongst your Muletters, or scarce so good men as they.

CHAPTER IV

Honour, compared to base persons

Behold, how many good men have with-drawne themselves from the Court, and live a private and retyred life at home? How many habits of St. Jago, Calatrana, and Alcantara, sowne with white threed? How many of the ancient Nobilitie of Zayn Calvo, and Nunno Rasura, trodden under feet?

Tell me I pray, who is that that gives honour unto some, and takes it from other some? Marry, it is more or lesse wealth. O what a brave Canon is this, to qualifie a man? what an excellent Rector, what a learned Schoolemaster? How discreetly doe they graduate a man, what a good examination doe they take, before they preferre any! Tell me once more I pray: What difference is there in their Obligation, between him that commeth fairely (as thou saidst before) by an Office; and him that buyes an Office, whose money only (without any other merit) hath inthroned him in the *Sancta Sanctorum* of the world? Whence comes it to passe, that the man that is discreet, noble, vertuous, well descended, of a sound and sober judgment, long practice, and more experience, a true Master of his Art, should (by being deprived of his due

The more rich, the more honour

preferment,) remaine poore and needy, shut up in a corner, excluded from businesse, afflicted, and peradventure inforced to derogate from his owne worth, and to doe that which is not agreeable to his disposition, that he may avoid the incurring of a worse inconvenience? Thou hast put too hard a taske upon me, considering that slender satisfaction, that I am able to give thee: But I shall tell thee, according to my talent, and as the poorenesse of my understanding shall give me leave.

Gods secrets concealed from men

When I consider thereon, as a thing properly appertaining unto God (whose judgements are inscrutable, and hidden both from men and Angels) I shall not inter-meddle, or straine my selfe any further therin, then the shortnes of my apprehension shall be able to reach unto. Which is; That he very well knoweth, how to proportion his gifts, and to give unto every one so much as is needfull for him, for his salvation. And therefore when a man shall faile of such or such an Office, or misse such or such a preferment, God saw it was not so fitting for him, for causes best knowne unto himselfe, or for that hee fore-knew that it would be a meanes to worke his condemnation, whom he is willing to save, because he hath predestinated him to a better place.

And this is as much as can be said concerning him, who doth not obtaine that, which he deserveth. But for that Favourite, or person of Power with his Prince, that shall either be a blocke in this mans way, or strippe him of the Office that he worthily holdeth, who is not a Judge of the inward intentions, nor of the hearts of men, neither is able to examine them; but must goe upon trust, and make his judgement by externall and outward things, (which he can only see and know) doth often-times tread awry, and pervert and wrest things to an ill sense: If it may be lawfull for us to speake in a rusticall phrase; applying the language of heaven, to that here on earth, I say, that upon the margent of this great mans Account, God doth (as we use here to doe, when we will marke a thing the better, and looke more narrowly into it) shut one of his eies, to

make his sight the surer, when he mindes to hit the marke hee aimes at. I say then: I wil demand of these men, what cause they had to do this wrong, knowing that my threatnings are out against them? O ye Judges of the earth, because ye have judged unrighteously, I have prepared for you a hard and insufferable punishment: I will reside in the Synagogue of the gods, and I will judge them. O, what a griefe is it, how many thousands of pitties, that these men (knowing this to be true) will adventure to come before that upright and true Judge, when the Accusation is certaine, which is brought in to condemne them; and the restitution now wanting, which they ought to make; without the which, their sinne cannot be forgiven them; and yet would not, when time served, take order to make amendment for so foule a fault!

True it is, that peradventure there were not some wanting, that would whisper them in the eare, and say; Sir, you may doe this very well, and not sinne, it is not a thing that ought to trouble your conscience, you did well, (which is no more then every wise man would doe, were he in your place) in bestowing this Office, on that kinsman, that acquaintance, that friend, or servant of yours, which are neerest unto you. But (to speake the truth) thou couldst not doe it; for thou didst remove it from it's right place, and put it into that, which was unfit, and improper for it. Looke over thy Cardes a little better, thinke well on this businesse, and then thou wilt tell me (my friend) that it was an errour in thee, and that thou couldst not doe it; And because thou couldst not doe it, thou didst sinne; And because thou didst sinne, it was not well done. Doe not listen to the words of fooles, nor of flatterers, in a thing that concernes thee so much as this doth: it were better for thee, that thou wouldst gird up thy loynes, and looke unto that which may doe thee hurt, and seeke in time to prevent it, lest the remedie come too late. For there are some Confessors, that will give large Absolutions, who are like unto Taylours, who will tell thee, that the garment which they have made for thee, fits thee very well; but

thou knowest better then they, whether it wring thee or no, whether it be too streight, and uneasie for thee, and how it fitteth to thy body. And God doth permit, because thou didst not seeke after one (whilest thou wast living, and in place of authoritie) that should tell thee the truth, at the time of thy death, when thou art in thy last agonie and anguish of soule, thou shalt not meet with that true friend, that shall then tell it thee, but rather sooth thee up to thy condemnation. Looke about with thine eies, open wide thine eares, and suffer not these busie Bees of Satan, to put honie into them, nor there to swarme and in-hive themselves. For these their sweet words will but leade thee on in the high and ready way to damnation.

But to returne againe unto these kinde of men, in respect of God, I doubt not of their punishment; And in regard of man, I must plainely tell thee, that they open the doore to murmuration, and give occasion to the people, to speake thereof in publike, not sticking to utter (as I said before) those ends which I thought should have beene kept secret; taking pittie and compassion of so many merits, so ill rewarded; and of so disproportionable an Exchange as this, in seeing the evill, by evill meanes, to be in highest esteeme: and the good, by reason of their goodnesse, to be excluded, and shut out of all. But I can assure you, that God hath numbred all the haires of their head, and will not suffer one of them to fall to the ground. Though men therefore may chance to faile them, yet let them comfort themselves with this, that they have a good God to friend, that will never forsake them. This is the World, and thus things goe.

I therefore will neither have Empire, nor Dignitie; I will not have Honour, I will not so much as once looke upon it. Keepe thy selfe as thou art, (Guzman:) continue (my honest friend) the same man still. Let others (a Gods name) be the Councell of the Common-wealth, the Oracles of the State; let them never thinke upon thee; Enter not into that place, whence thou canst not get out, when thou wouldst: Doe not put thy selfe into that danger,

which may bring a continuall feare with it; Desire not to have too much, lest it chance to be taken from thee; nor too little, lest thou bee driven to beg; Doe not pretend any thing by way of flatterie: Doe not intangle thy selfe in many businesses, lest they should disquiet thee: Seeke to be the Usufructuarie, and free injoyer of thy life, that by using of it well, thou maist live safe in thy estate. Why shouldst thou keepe a stirre, and trouble thy selfe for that, which to morrow is to be no more, and when it is at the most, is of no long continuance? What doest thou, or any man else know, is become of the Mayor-Domo to King Don Pelayo, or of the Chamberlain to Conde Fernan Gonçales? They had honour, and they held it, but neither of them, nor that, is any memory remaining. So shalt thou the next day be forgotten, as if thou hadst never beene at all. Why then is there so much greedinesse, so much thirst, and so much coile; one for his belly, (for to so great a Vanitie are wee now growne, that to eate and waste much, is held no small reputation) another for his backe, and a third for honour?

No, no, these things are not for thee, and if thou offer to trouble thy thoughts with them, thou shalt not live to be an old man, or else thou shalt be old before thy time. Leave, leave off, I say, the swelling pride of these huge Gyants, and thrust them up against the Walls; let them stand there, as Bug-beares to fright children, as being good for nothing else.

Cloath thy selfe in the winter, with that which may keepe thee Warme; and in the Summer, with that which may cover thee, not going too slovenly, nor too pompously, rather decently then richly; Eate no more then may suffice nature, preferring moderation before excesse, for whatsoever is more then necessary, is meerely superfluous. For by it, neither the rich man lives, nor the poore man dies. But the diversitie and abundance of meates, is rather a disease then otherwise, breeding viscous and slimy humours, whence arise grievous sicknesses, and mortall Apoplexies.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

THE SECOND BOOKE

Libertie, how pleasant a thing it is

Twice, thrice, nay foure times happy art thou, who risest in the morning when thou wilt, and at what houre thy selfe listeth, without once thinking of serving, or being served by any body; for although it be a trouble to have a Master, it is also a trouble to have a servant, as you shall here by and by. At noone, feed freely, dine securely, runne not upon the score with thy Cooke, nor be indebted to thy *Dispensero*,[1] send not for thy Coales from the Merchants Sellar, where they gather wet and moisture,[2] in stead where of they will bring thee in dust and stones, wherewith thou wilt be coozened; for there are more deceits in the world, then thou or any man else knowes, save God alone. Seeke not to excell in braverie, affect not too much neatnes, feare not every spot that may fall upon thy clothes, be not in love with rich Imbroderies; be not too carefull to keepe, nor too fearefull to lose. Bee not envious nor suspicious; Let no occasion move thee to lie; Doe not purchase preferment by undermining of others, nor worke not another mans Ruine, to worke thy selfe into favour. Thinke it fitter for thee to goe alone, then accompanied; a quicke, then a slow pace: rather laughing then weeping; eating then dancing; without being noted by any. That is the best Taverne to thee, where thou meetst with the best Wine: And that the best Cookes shop, where thou lightest on the best morsell: In the Market place, thou maist make choice of the best seat, and so thou maist the like at all publike Feasts. In the Winter, get thee into the Sunne, in the Summer into the shade. Thou maist cover thy Boord according to thine owne minde: thou maist make thy Bed, according to thine owne liking; without paying one pennie either for the making or standing of it: And maist choose, whether any man shall see thee, disquiet thee, or contradict thee. Keepe thy selfe aloofe from Law-businesses: live a stranger to Sutes and Actions: free thy selfe from false Witnesses, for feare they should part thy goods amongst them, and become masters of all

[1] A Cater, that makes provision for victuals.
[2] In Spaine they sell their coales by the pound.

that thou hast. Let no man be able to ask thee a penny; keepe thy selfe safe from Decrees; Beware how, and whom you trust, and upon what termes: but above all, (which will be no small glory unto thee) take heed, how thou becom'st a surety for any man. Give no cause to have any executions come out against thee; nor thou to doe the like against others: Shunne all contentions and debates, and all manner of suites in Law. Last of all, rest thou satisfied and contented, so that nothing may oppresse thee, nor breake thy sleepe, that thou maist rise betimes in the morning to thinke upon those things that may turne to thy good, by reforming what is amisse.

The poore man may, ordering himselfe well, live happely

All men can not doe all that they would; yet our good God is not forgetfull of the poore, having opened a way unto him, whereby he may live contented; not giving him more cold, then his body is able to beare, suting his constitution, according to his cloathes; so that he may passe in this world, as well as the rich, if he will but order and governe himselfe aright. But this life is not made alike for all men: And undoubtedly, the first inventer must be a most famous Philosopher; for so happy a reposednesse, is to bee supposed to have it's beginning from some singular wit. And to speake truely, that which is not so, costeth much trouble. And those that doe not so passe through this life, are the men that suffer, and pay for all:

Walking through this world with many disturbances, contentions, and molestations; flattering, idolatrizing, carrying things away with a strong hand, plotting of tricks, violently haling by the haire, that, which neither ought to be suffered, nor is fit to be effected, or any way in the world to bee borne withall; shutting their eyes all this while against that, which it concernes them to see; but are very sharpe-sighted in looking to their profit, nothing shall passe by them then: They are Linxes, and Eagle-ey'd, when their prey is before them; though it were better for them in these things, to bee as blind as the Beetle, or the Mole; For then they begin to lay their Nets, to pitch their Hayes, fall a setting of Lime-twigges, watching how

THE SECOND BOOKE

to put themselves forward, by making of Pit fals, wherein to intrap men, thinking to raise themselves, by the fall of others. For they doubt not of their owne comming forward, if they can but once come to thrust others backe. Vanity of Vanities, and nothing but Vanity.

What a troublesome thing Honour is

O what a grievous thing is it, that a man should suffer such a number of calamities, and for no other end onely, but to uphold his frayle and unfortunate honour from falling? And he that thinkes he hath surest possession of it, lives but with so much the greater care to repayre and maintaine it. I returned againe and againe to consider thereon, never ceasing, nor never inough satisfied with the repeating of this saying: Happy, thrice happy thou, who hast wrapt Honour in a Coffin of Lead, and with strong cords, tying heavy stones thereunto, hast buried it in the Sea, whence it may never rise up any more, nor appeare unto the world.

Bad servants, what a bane they are to a house

I likewise beganne to thinke with my selfe, what a hurtfull thing in a Family, is a villanous, an ungratefull, a coozening, and a lying servant: whereof now a-dayes, the world is too full. And if we shall briefely decipher forth unto you such a manner of servant, you shall finde him to be a Foole; a Sloven; a carelesse Companion; idle, lazie; a bagge, fill'd with nothing but malice, and roguery; a Funnell, to powre in all manner of discord, and dissention; full of prattle, upon every slight occasion; and dumbe, in those things, that are of any moment; ignorant, in speaking; and impudent, in grumbling.

The wickednesse of women-servants, and their qualities

Shall I character forth unto you a Maid-servant, or a Nurse, that will serve for any thing? You shall have her sluttish, theevish; with a Brother, a Parent, or a Kinsman, ever and anon asking for her, troubling thy house with dayly visits; for, and with whom, she returnes so many nights, every weeke, by retayle; dividing that time amongst them in parcels, which shee should lay out in the grosse in thy service; devoted onely to the love and service of her Sweet-heart: earnestly desiring to see her selfe made Mistresse of a Mantle: shee will looke for good

maintenance, and be her wages never so good, that proportion will not serve the turne, but as she sees occasion, she will still bee grating more and more upon thee: And you must over and besides, allow her her wine into the bargaine, because forsooth her stomake is weake, and cannot digest her meat without it. If wee will but looke out into the street, which way so ever we turne our eye, we see every thing want some-what in the finenesse of it's Loy and true touch, all is false, and without law, nothing that is perfect, neither in weight, nor in measure.

Falsehood in selling of wares

And that this is true, looke into your Shambles, your Hucksters, and other shops of retayle in the Market-place; and then you will tell mee what a deale of coozenage they use in the venting of their wares, and with what gainefull cunning they utter their commodities. Besides, to what desperation doth a false, or corrupted Notary drive a man unto? Against whom, even truth it selfe hath not the power to prevaile. For the Stemme onely of his Quill, and the very nib of his Pen, is more dangerous against whom it is bent, then a strong-steeled Launce, or a Canon of Brasse, with all his batteries.

Against Notaries, Scriveners, etc.

What thinke you of a lying Attourney? a wrangling Lawyer? Both men of an evill conscience, full of tricks and of quillets, skilfull in deceiving, cunning in plotting, and above all, wonderfull lovers of delayes, making it their maine study to put off and prolong suites, that they may licke their own fingers, and fill their hungry bellies, at other mens cost.

Against Attourneys and Lawiers

What say you, to an obstinate and head-strong Judge? one of those ignorant wilfull ones, who will not sticke perhaps to say of himselfe; I understand my selfe well inough; I know what I speake; nor will I bee taught what to doe. When indeed, he neither understandeth, nor knoweth, nor doth any thing that is fit, nor is well understood by others. At the first, hee seemed milde and gentle (before hee was warme in his Office) like a Bull amidst a Heard of Cowes; but when he came forth, he appeared fierce, and full of rage, as if he had been stucke with darts, and his bloud drawne from him. He wore a

Against Judges

garment, which for the shaping of it into fashion, setting the pieces handsomely together, and to make it fit for wearing, had need of more then a thousand Scedules, and as many Passe-ports, as also the thread of Theseus ; for it is a Labyrinth to enter into. O with what hunger is he affected ! he thinkes hee shall never be full inough. So that I must say, nothing escaped his hand, were it little or great ; the bare fell, or the whole Fleece. I found he offended in all : In this by an I ; in that, by a No : In some things by doing, in some things by not doing : Offending, not only in matters of Omission, but in sinnes of Commission. Who, like the Lyonesse, can with lowd roarings put life into these little Whelpes, (these dead truthes) to the end, that by taking breath, some remedy might be had ?

Against Taylors

Let us runne through all occupations ; Looke I pray into your Taylor, with whom it is now growne to a custome, that you must pay something to the setting up of their Signe,[1] else your worke shall ne're be made an end of ; or if it be, it shall be spoyled in the making, or they will filch so much of your stuffe from you, as shall lessen your Coat, and inlarge their Vailes.

Against Masons, Smithes, Carpenters, etc.

Your Mason, your Smith, your Carpenter, and all other Trades-men whatsoever, none excepted, doe all steale, all lye, all coozen : none of them deales truely, no not one. And which is worst of all, they take a glory therein, and thinke themselves, in so doing, to be jolly wise fellowes, and Masters of their craft ; holding those that deale more honestly (if there be any such) to be simple men, and poore seely fooles, that want wit.

Against Apothecaries

Let us looke a little backe, and see, if we shall not finde an Apothecarie in a blind corner, who because he will not be said to say I have not such a thing, or so, nor discredit his shop ; will not stick to give you contrary Syrrops, counterfet Oyles, falsify'd Waters ; you shall not finde one Drugge that is of true and perfect goodnes ; or any Compound made according unto the rules of Art ; they

[1] The Spanish word is *Pendon*. And so it may signifie something given to the Corporation.

mingle, baptize, and make confections (according to their owne liking) of differing qualities, and divers effects, thinking (in their poore discretion) that there is but little difference betwixt the one and the other, though it bee contrary to all truth and reason. And thus doe they kill many a man, making of their Boxes, and their Vyals, Dags and Pistols; and of their Pils, Pellets; wherewith (as with so many Bullets) they lay us dead on the ground. CHAPTER IV

But you will say, Master Doctor over-sees him, and that there is not an ingredient, but carries his eye, and direction with it, and therefore the danger is so much the lesse. Against Doctors of Physicke

True: But if you doe not fee him well, he forgoes the cure; and if you doe fee him well, hee prolongs it: And so by this meanes, some, nay, many times, his sicke Patient mis-carries, and is sent untimely to his grave.

And it is a thing worthy the noting, that Lawes being the Daughters of Reason, if you put a Case to a Lawyer, or aske his opinion, hee studies it, and will not resolve you, till he have well and truely considered thereon, because it is a matter of goods, or of Land, which may concerne a mans making, or marring.

But your Physician, no sooner comes in to visit you, but presently by the touch of your Pulse, as soone as ever his finger hath felt it, hee instantly knowes your disease, though it be utterly unknowne unto him, and removed as farre from his understanding, as earth, from heaven. And then, (that hee may not betray this his ignorance) hee forthwith prescribes, and applyes such remedies unto you, as are more truely meanes to bring you to your last home, then to restore you to health. Shall it not bee fit (if that Aphorisme of theirs bee true) that life is short, the Art long, experience deceitfull, and the judgment hard and difficult, to goe on by little and little, as it were by degrees, till they bee thorowly entred thereinto, and become Masters of that which they would willingly cure, by studying that which they ought to doe therein? To treat of this, would aske a long discourse. All goes topsie-turvy; all Kim, Kam; all, is tricks and devices; all Riddles and unknowne

THE SECOND BOOKE

Mysteries; you shall not finde man, with man; we all live in ambush, lying in wait one for another, as the Cat, for the Mouse, or the Spider for the Fly; who roming carelessely up and downe, suffers her selfe to be taken by a slender thread, whilest that venemous vermine, seazing on her head, holds her fast, never leaving her, till shee hath kill'd her with her poison.

CHAPTER V

How Guzman de Alfarache lighted on a Cookes service, and with faire Sentences, and good Lessons, sheweth, what he should be that serveth. He blameth gaming, and Gamsters. He declareth a pretty theft performed by him; he relateth the Vices of *Despensero's*, Cookes, Butlers, and other the like Officers. Of Lords, abused by their servants. Of Kings, and their miserable condition. Of the vanitie of Inferiours, contesting with their Superiours. He condemneth those Masters, that ill intreate their servants: And how they ought to carrie themselves towards them

Libertie, a great jewell

I FOUND my selfe free from all these things, as subject to none of them, except infirmitie, and sicknesse. In regard whereof, I had a determination, to have put my selfe into an Hospitall. I injoyed a free and flourishing kinde of liberty, praised by the wise, desired of many, and so much applauded and reapplauded by the Poets. To whose true valuation, all

CHAPTER V

Guzman, a Porter, or Basket-bearer

the gold and riches of the earth, are not to bee compared, as things of to poore and meane a price. I had it once, but had not the wit to keepe it. For it being my course of life (as a thing whereunto I was accustomed) to play the Porter, and carry burthens, and being now as well trusted, as I was knowne, all my care was to come acquainted with some one false Cater or other (Gods curse and mine goe with him) that was the Purser, Disburser, Distributer or Steward, or by what other stile or Title, in that kinde you shall call him. This *Despensero*, or Cater (as you please) had a good confidence in me, trusted me very farre, and would often send me away alone by my selfe, to carry those things home to his house, which he had bought in the Market. This my continued Conversation and daily commercement with him, did (which it should not have done) procure his good liking, and love towards me; Insomuch, that he removed me from that Office, and preferred me to be Scullion of the Kitchen, which was as much as my ambition could then reach unto.

Hee would often-times tell me, (and one day amongst the rest, and I remember it was in the morning; he made me a long Oration, flourished over with a great many of faire Promises, so that by climing from one round to another, I began to conceive with my selfe, that I should come at last to be a *Corregidor*[1] at least) That if I would apply my selfe to that Office, and take paines therein, behaving my selfe well and honestly, when I was growne fit and perfect, he would be a meanes to place me in Court, and put me into the Kings service; where when I had serv'd so many yeeres in the Kitchen, I should be well rewarded, and might afterwards live richly of my selfe, and be mine owne man.

O how quickly did this vaine blast puffe up my emptie Pate; This giddy-winde-mill of mine was set aworke, and turned quite round with the breath of his words. The adventure I saw was small, and the gaine might be great.

[1] A Ruler or Governour of a City, or Towne.

THE SECOND BOOKE

Guzman goes to serve a Cooke. The dutie of a servant

Well, he brought me to the Cooke my master (we being well knowne to each other.) When I came thither, (as if it had beene the first time that wee had seene one another) he spake to me in a proud commanding manner. How now (Sennor few-clothes) what winde drave you hither? What make you here, goodman Shag-rag, you *Cavallero de Illescas*?[1] Have you any businesse here? or doe you come to abide with me? Sure I was ill advised; for when I saw he began in so high a key, I was about to shew him my backe, and to leave him to himselfe, and his flie; (for Summer was now fully in.) I started, and stood as one astonied, not knowing what answer to make him, but when I saw there was no remedie, I replide; yes Sir. Come your wayes then (quoth he) in with me; And if thou dost thy dutie (said he) and shalt deserve well at my hands, thou shalt not lose thy labour.

Guzman his readinesse in serving his Master

I told him, I was very well assured, that in serving his Worship, I might gaine by the bargaine, but lose nothing, because I had nothing to lose. Then he ask'd me; Doe you know (sirrah) what you are to doe? All that (I mildly replide) that you shall be pleased to command me; or my selfe either know, or am able to performe. For he that sets himselfe to serve, must not refuse (when need is) to doe any thing, but that which more properly belongs to the dutie of his place, he ought cheerefully to undergoe it; and to applie himselfe as well to the one as the other.

He seemed to like well both of my speech and understanding; and I hoping to be well rewarded, flew in like a Hawke for the prey. At my first comming, I behaved my selfe very respectfully towards him, and served him as punctually as I could; and he againe made much of me, and us'd me as kindly as heart could wish. But I did not only seeke to please my Master (who was a married man)

[1] Illescas, is a certaine Towne neere unto Toledo. King Don Alonso, *Anno Domini* 1176 made a Donation thereof to the Church of Toledo. But it is now reverted again to the Crowne. Illescas is an Arabicke word, and signifies, lascivious and dishonest love. *Cavallero de Illescas*, is a word used in scorne. Covarruvias.

and his wife my Mistris, even in the meanest services, serving them in all things else besides, both in Towne and Countrie, at home and abroad; taking upon me the Office both of Man-servant, and Maid-servant, (save only that I had never a Gowne to put on, nor a Mantle to cover me withall, to waite upon my Mistris when she went abroad;) But for all other services of the house, as sweeping, rubbing, scowring, setting the Pot over the fire, dressing of meate, making of Beds, laying the *Estrado* [1] in order, smoothing and plaining it, that not a wrinckle was to be seene, and other the like services were my ordinary exercise; (And for that I was the only man, all this was committed to my charge:) But I laboured besides to give good contentment to all the rest of my Masters servants. So that my heeles were as nimble to runne upon the least boyes errand in the house, as the Stewards, the Pages, as the Mayor-Domos; for him that rub'd the Horses heeles, as for him that was Usher of the Hall. One would have me to buy such and such necessaries for him; another, that I would brush, and make cleane his clothes; This man, that I would get his band washt and starcht for him; that, that I would carrie some provision [2] home to his wife; A third, to his Wench. And all this I did without grumbling, or muttring, or any the least unwillingnesse in the world. I was never any Tale-carrier nor sower of sedition; nor did I ever discover any secret, or report againe what I had heard, though it were not delivered under the seale of Silence unto me, or that the relators had laid their finger on my mouth. For I was not so ill bred, but that I knew very well, what, and when it was lawfull for me to speake, and when to hold my peace. Hee therefore, (whosoever he be) that serves, must have an especiall care to observe these two things; Wherein if he faile, he will quickly

CHAPTER V

A silent tongue, and a true heart did never hurt any servant

[1] *Estrado*, is a kinde of halfe place, covered with Turkie Carpets, and furnished with faire long Cushions, whereon your great Ladies and Gentlewomen sit, when they receive any Visits. But now adayes, your ordinary women in Spaine are growne into this fashion, taking more state upon them, then sutes with their conditions.

[2] The Spanish word is *Raçion*, i.e. *rata portio*; a set allowance.

ruine himselfe, by drawing all mens ill will upon him, and making himselfe the most hated man in the world. Whereas nothing doth more recommend a man, then a faire carriage, and a faithfull heart. When I was chidden, I never replide: and made it my studie, to give them as little cause as I could, to finde fault with me. I would not willingly have any mans displeasure; And all my care was, to doe what I was commanded. And when there was need of my service, or that my helping hand might doe any good, I was seldome or never wanting; I was Jacke at a pinch, I was here, and there, and every where. And albeit these diligences of mine cost me a great deale of labour and paines-taking, yet I lost nothing by it; for the good commendations that they gave mee, and the kinde words that they spake of me behinde my backe, and the hopes that I had to be well rewarded, when time should serve, seemed to me a sufficient paiment, and I was well contented therewith.

The good usage of the Master is a spurre to the servant

Good usage, is a great heartening to him that serveth: It is the spurre which pricks on the Will, and makes it goe forward; it is the finger, that beckens our affections, it is the Lure, that calls our desires, it is a Charriot, wherein our forces (like strong Jades) draw on without wearinesse, and tugg, stoutly thorow thicke and thinne; it is good serving of some men, and they deserve to have service done them *Gratis*; And there are some men againe, that a man would not serve for any money. But of all others, I disclaime that Master as unworthy to bee waighted on, that will neither give his servant good wages, nor good words. Kinde usage will make a man worke out his heart, but high language and poore paiment, will kill any spirit living, and make a servant grow neglectfull, if not weary of his Masters service.

The commendation of a roguish life

Then might I affirme, that leaving my roguish kinde of life, this *Picardia* of mine, (as a Queene, whose name I am not worthy to take in my mouth, and whereunto any other politicke course of life is not to be compared) all the braverie and gallantrie of the curious method of living happily, and

passing well away the time, which the world solemnizeth so much, must yeeld, and give place thereunto. But this, (though accompanied with much care) was exceeding good, good in the highest degree, for such a one (I meane) as my selfe, who had beene daintily bred up in the midst of delights. So that me thought, I was in a manner reduced and brought backe againe to my old bias, and naturall course of life, as farre as it concerned the Bucolicks; for my *Bocados*[1] were of another kinde of qualitie and rellish, then those of the *Bodegon*, or a Pie-corner Tripe-wives shop; they were otherwise drest, otherwise season'd. And in this, those of St. Gil, Santo Domingo, Puerta de Sol, Placa Mayor, and Calle de Toledo,[2] must pardon me, and hold me excused; howbeit I cannot denie, but that their Liver-slices, and their rashers on the coales, ran still in my head, and were hard things for me to forget.

I did nothing, were it never so small a thing, never so little, for the which I had not something. All did give me one thing or other; one a *Tarja*,[3] which is a matter of pennie halfe-pennie, another a Royall, a third a Doublet, a fourth an old Jacket to cover this poore flesh of mine: I did not goe so like a tattred Rogue as I did before; my meales were sure and certaine; and though I had not had any other thing to sustaine my selfe withall, I might have liv'd very well upon the skimmings of the pot, and upon the triall of my taste, by essaying whether my boild meates were sod enough, and so likewise for my roste, reserving still mine owne allowance whole and intire, I had no need to touch upon that that I made profit of. This good did me much hurt, as also did my Gaming, which I had learned in my looser daies; For looke whatsoever I got by meanes of my Place, for that I had no houses to repaire, nor rents to buy in, I plaid it all away. So that I may very well say,

Gaming, a hurtfull thing

[1] The morsels I did eate.

[2] The principall victualing places in Madrid, and what poore kinde of things they be.

[3] *Quædam moneta Hispanica, valoris* 9. *Maravedis, sic dicta, ab Tarja;* i.e. *scuti similitudinem, quam habet.* A piece of three halfe-pence.

My good did me hurt. For, see how much increase it bringeth to the good, (because they know how to turne it to their best benefit;) so it worketh as much hurt in the bad, for (when they fall once a losing what they have got) they lose a great deale more with it, it being with them, as it is with your venemous beasts; who draw poison from that, from which your Bees sucke honie.

Goodnesse, what it is like unto

Goodnesse is like unto your sweet Waters, which if they be kept in cleane Vessels, grow still the better, but in bad, are straightway corrupted, and quite spoiled. I was a learned Doctor in that Science, but yet I consumed my Estate in following that Trade. Within a few daies, I grew a refined Gamester, and could play well with my hands too, I had learned to filch and steale finely, which was the worse Occupation of the two. Gaming, is a terrible vice; And as all Rivers have recourse unto the Sea; So is there not that vice, which is not to be found in a Gamester. He never does well, and alwaies thinkes ill. He never tels truth, but still lies; He hath no man to friend; Hee keepes no good quarter with his Kindred; He esteemes not his credit, but overthroweth the honour of his house; He leadeth a lewd life: Hee desires the death of his Parents; He sweares without cause; He blasphemes upon every little losse. He neither feares God, nor regards his own soule. If he leese his money, he loseth all shame to get it againe, and so he may have it, hee cares not with what infamy; He lives gaming, and he dyes gaming. In stead of a holy Taper, he holds a pack of Cards in his hand, as one that is resolv'd to lose soule, life, and all that he hath at one dealing. I had a very good experience hereof from others, but I speake not that, which was told me by others, but what my selfe saw with mine owne eyes.

All manner of vices are in a Gamester

When my Vailes would not serve my turne, (that I might not want where-withall to game) I would cast mine eyes, like burning Torches, about the house, where, and out of what I might make my provision. For those things, that belong'd to the Kitchen, I could make purchase there in the turning of a hand, but ever had a care to doe it so

handsomely, and to carry it so cleanely, that they might not have the least suspition of me in the world. Many things which I stole, I hid in the selfe-same roome, where I found them, with purpose, (if they should chance to suspect mee) to pull them out in publike, gaining thereby credit to my selfe for after-times, upon the like occasion. And in case the suspition fell upon another, I presently tooke hold upon that advantage; and putting it from my selfe, transferred it on him. Once I remember, I lighted on a happy encounter, which was this: CHAPTER V

A pretty theft done by Guzman

My Master on a time brought certaine friends of his home to his house, good-fellowes, sworne brothers to Bacchus, Pylots for Guadalcana,[1] and Coca,[2] and he would needs forsooth in kindnesse bestow a Bever upon them, all of them playd well upon the Keyes of this Organ; the Jacks went up lively, but my Master he tickled it notably, hee was an excellent Musician upon a jarre of Wine: he was a brave bottle-banger, a singular tosse-pot. Hee tooke me out of one of the cup-boords of his Ambry (which were ever stored with cold meates) a delicate piece of Bacon finely inter-larded, or (to speake more properly) inter-laced with fat and leane, which look't as fresh and as ruddy, as the bloud of a Lambe, that is newly kill'd. The game growing now hot, and the Vyes seene on all sides, they were all thirty apiece in Kings,[3] merry, rich, and contented: And with this new Shooing-horne to draw down their drinke, they fell a-fresh to their former play, drinking Healths Helter Skelter, till at last (and my Mistris had her share too, who did mince and gyg it in this round, with as much metall, and as nimbly, as the best dancer of them all) they grew so fine and so mellow, that you might have stript them (like Rabbets) out of their

A drunken Description

[1] *Guadalcana*, signifies *rio de la recreaçion*: a River of recreation.

[2] *Coca*, is a Drugge so called, wherewith Fishermen are wont to make the Fish drunke, and to turne up their bellies upon the water, as if they were dead.

[3] A *tryenta con-Rey*, is the Spanish word, which is a game at Cards common amongst them. It is good sticking at thirty, for feare of being out.

Cases, and left them starke naked as ever they were borne, and yet they never have knowne who had done them this harme. Their Peeces were overcharged, the powder strong, the charge too great; so that when the fire tooke them, the smoke and fume thereof flew up to the highest part of all the chimney, wherewith the whole house was so shaken, that some fell downe flat, others reeled to and fro; some tript in their tongue and feet; other were full of their gamboll-tricks, each man having his severall Posture.

My Master and my Mistresse (as one of the neighbours told me) scrambled (as well as they could) to bed, leaving all the doores of the house open, the Table un-taken away, and the silver Gobblet, wherein they drunke their Healths, tumbled downe on the ground, all which made much for the benefit of the Inventorie.

I was by chance at that time in my Masters Kitchen, scowring of the Panns and the Spits, pyling up the wood, laying it handsomely together, and doing other things belonging to my office. When that taske was done, and I had made an end of all my worke, I got me to my lodging, and as I past along, I found all out of order, every thing out of his proper place, all the doores open; the Cup that was falne downe on the floore, I fortunately stumbled on; it silently seeming to intreat me, that I would doe it the courtesie to take it up. I stooped downe unto it, to doe it that friendly office, looking in the meane while round about me, to see whether any mans eye were upon mee, to spy what I was a doing; but when I saw the coast was cleere, that there was not any body living there-abouts, so that no man could detect me, I put it up, and softly stole away. But I had scarce gone foure steps from the place, when my heart began to beat a false alarme.

Then I began to thinke with my selfe, whether I had heard any noise stirring either within or without the house, for I could not be too secure, and it did much concerne me, to have a care to keepe my skinne whole, and not to indanger the losing of much, for the gaining of a little, and so in the end get a whipping by the bargaine. I got

me in, I called twice or thrice upon this, then that man, but not a word of answere that I had from any of them.

I went to my Masters bed-chamber, where I found him and his Wife in that case, that they seemed to be dead, and sure they were little better, for they were deepely buried in Wine.

The snores and snorts that came from them, and other the like puffings and blowings, which they breathed forth, made me to imagine, that I had beene newly entred into some famous drinking-schoole. I had a great mind to have bound them with some whip-cord by the feet to the bed-post, and to have playd the knave with them in that manner, to have made a little sport with them. But I did not like so well of that jest, a great businesse was now in hand, and I thought it the better jest of the two, to content my selfe with that silver piece of Plate: Whereupon, I made safe worke with that. And having now secured this theft, away went I back againe to the Kitchen, where I found worke inough to doe till it was night, about which time my Master came thither, terribly pained in his belly, and his temples. And finding there but only one fire-brand lying on the Harth, he would needs cudgell my coat therewith, scolding and railing at me, telling me that I wasted too much wood, and that I would never leave, till I had fired his house. That night, was not a night of profit; it was worth nothing unto me; yet I supply'd (as well as I could) what was wanting, and covering my Masters defect, supper was made readie, and orderly served in, which being ended, and all things done that should be done, we went to bed. But I found my Mistris in an ill taking, her countenance sad and heavy; her eyes cast downe to the ground, and full of teares, her heart swolne with griefe; all was out of tune with her, and not so much as one word, that came from her, till my Master was gone to bed. And then I made bold to aske her, what was the matter that she was so melancholly. She answered, O my Guzmanico, (sonne of my soule) a great evill, a great misfortune hath befalne me, wretched woman that I am;

cursed was that houre, wherein I was borne, and in an unlucky time did my mother bring me forth. By this time I knew where her shoo did wring her; My pocket was her Pothecaries shop. There lay the restorative: And my good will had been the best Physician, she could have gotten for her griefe. But all her pittifull complaints, and whatsoever else might worke compassion, being all put together, could not move me awhit. For I have heard say; Let a woman weepe never so much, though she should seeme to weepe her heart out, there is no more pitie to be taken of her, then to see a goose goe bare-foote. All her lamentations, her wringing of her hands, and other her demonstrations of her sorrow, could not stirre up pitie in me, or take hold on the least haire of a fellow-kinde of feeling.

But feigning my selfe to be very sensible of her affliction, and that it griev'd me much to see her so surprized with griefe, I began to comfort her, and to perswade her (al that I could) that her impatience might not force such words from her, as I heard her but now utter, requesting her, that she would lay open the wound, and tell me what she ayld, and make mee a sharer in this her misery; promising (in all that little, that I was able to do) to doe as much for her, as I would for mine owne Mother. O sonne (quoth she) your Master (in an ill houre) brought hither certaine of his friends to make merry this afternoone, and amongst other things, my silver Gobblet is wanting, and I know not in the world what to doe. What will thy Master say, or doe, when he shall know it? O he will kill me (sonne of my bowels, mine owne deare child) he will kill me, that is the least he can doe unto me. And what I pray can he doe more, said I with my selfe? Well, I put on a mourning-face, looke sad, shewing how much I was displeased with this roguish dealing, and how much it did vexe me for her sake. And then calling my wits together, I told her, that there was no other way in the world to salve this sore, but that she should be stirring very early in the morning, and get her to the Gold-smiths,

and buy another like unto it, and then tell her Husband, that because the silver cup was old, and stained with many spots, she had caus'd it to be new burnish't over, and made as bright as it was the first day it was bought.

And by this meanes, this cloud, that threatens such a foule storme, will quickly be over-blowne, and all be faire weather againe with you.

I offred her withall, that if she wanted money, shee should make shift to take it up upon credit, she should have my allowance and my Vailes, till all was paid, if shee did not finde meanes before of her owne to discharge the debt. She did with a great deale of thankfulnesse entertaine what I had spoken, as well for my good counsels, as the speedy remedy. But it seemed unto her, that it would bee very unfitting for her to goe from home, and that all alone, and so early in the morning, fearing lest her Husband might chance to know it, who was very jealous of her, and woulde thinke, shee had gone a gadding to some worser purpose. Whereupon, she intreated me of all Loves, even for Gods sake, that I would goe my selfe to see and I could get such another as that was ; and as for the money, she had inough of her own store to pay for it. This was e'ne as I would have it, it hit as pat as a pudding to a Fryers mouth, I could not have wisht it to have falne out better ; for I had already begun to devise and cast with my selfe, to whom, or how I might sell it, and what chapman I might best finde out to buy it of mee ; for if they should come to scanne my person, they might easily be induced to beleeve, that I had stolne it.

But this businesse falling out so luckily, and all things sorting so well with me, I went amongst the Gold-smiths, and spake to one of them, that he would make cleane this plate, take out the staines, and beat out the dents, for it had taken some knocks in the fall ; I agreed with him for two Royals, for which price he finished his worke, and made it looke as fresh and as new, as if it had beene newly bought out of the shop ; I tooke my cup, and carried it

home with me to my Mistris, telling her, that I had met with this piece at the *puerta de Guadaxara*,[1] and that it amounted in weight to seven and fifty Royals, and for the fashion he would not abate a farthing of eight Royals.

All this seemed to her, as if it had been but one poore Blanke, considering the great desire which she had to be freed from that trouble wherein she was. She told me out the money upon a table, so that I sold her her owne againe, as if it had not been the same, or that I had beene the man that had stolne it from her. Wherewith she remained contented, and I satisfied. But lightly come, lightly gone: Two incounters carried it cleane away from me.

These petty thefts of wit, I reckned as things of nothing, and occasion taught me the way: These were naturall unto mee. But those of permission, and of greater moment, I took great care in the managing of them, when need did require: it was a common thing with me, to come neere to the Butchers chopping-blocke, where the portions allotted to every man for their allowance, were cut out and divided. I did diligently observe that which passed, I learned the trick of the finger, the bounding of the ballance, and al the tricks of weighing, and many would say, I weigh'd passing well, yet so for mine own advantage, that every mans part should dayly come short two ounces in weight.

Your Catrers, your Cookes, and your Butlers, a company of coozening knaves

The *Despensero*, he would answer for himselfe, that the flesh did shrinke and drie away, and though he received full weight, and the Scales true, yet there could not choose but be some losse therein, by cutting it out afterwards into so many severall pieces for Commons, which might very well take up a sixt part. Your *Despensero*, your Cooke, your Butler, your Purveyour, and most of all your Officers, they doe all of them filch and steale, and sticke not to say, it is their Fees, and that it belongs of right unto them, and this they so openly and impudently

[1] A place so called in Madrid.

maintaine, as if they had the Kings Letters Patents[1] to shew for it. CHAPTER V

There was never yet any Kitchen-boy so foolish or so unluckie, but that he would make a shift to meet with the giblets of your Geese, your Hens, and your Capons, with the hocks of a gammon of Bacon, your flaps, Kidnies, and fat of the shoulders and loines of Mutton, your Pigs-pettitoes, your Calves-feet, Livars, Gisards, Sweet-breads, Sauces, Spices, Snow, Wine, Sugar, Oyle, Honie, Candles, Coles, and Wood, not sparing the very Ashes, nor any thing else, (were it Vineger, Mustard, Annis-seede, Carrowaies,) from that which was most necessarie, even to those of smallest moment, which are daily spent in a great mans house.

When I came thither first, I confesse, there was no man would trust mee farther then he saw me, they had no great confidence of me ; but by little and little, I got into credit by degrees, first pleasing this man, then contenting that man, and in fine, being willing to serve them all, in all that I was able : for he must have a care to please all, that will have all men to pleasure him. To gaine friends, is a putting forth of money to Interest, and the sowing of seed in a fruitfull soyle. A man ought to venture his life, for the keeping of a friend, and the spending of his wealth, for the un-procuring of an enemie. For such a one is a Sentinell, that sees with a hundred eies ; hee is like a Dragon, that stands upon the Tower of his malice, to looke into our actions from afarre, and to watch us a mischiefe, if we doe amisse. It importeth much, not to have an enemie, and he that hath, let him carrie himselfe so towards him, as though he were by and by readie to become his friend.

He must doe, that will receive a pleasure

Friends and foes, how to be kept, or avoyded

How a man should behave himselfe towards his enemie

Wouldst thou know who this is ? Behold his name, and thou shalt finde him to be all one with the Devill, our mortall enemy, and both of them, to be one, and the selfesame thing. Doe thou sowe good workes, and thou shalt reape the fruit of them. For the first (whosoever hee were)

[1] The Spanish word is *Esecutoria*, i.e. *el Instrumento y auto de lo determinado en juizio, por tres Sententias*. Covarruvias, verb. *Esec.*

that did a benefit, wrought chaines therewith to imprison noble spirits, and to binde their hearts unto him in the bonds of love. In those things, wherein I might put my selfe forward, I was never slothfull; I did never give way to any just complaints to come against mee; nor was I ever given to faction, or to the raising of calumnies and evill reports upon any; I did abhorre all colours of this nature, and above all, your scandalous and offensive persons, whom wee properly compare unto Sponges, who what they sucke in one place, have it wrung from them in another, if they doe not drop it out of themselves, which is too usuall with them. Such men as these, see thou trust them not, shunne their fellowship, abhorre their company, though thou wert sure to get by them. For in the end, thou shalt sit downe with losse, and shame enough.

Scandalous persons, what they are like unto

A private house cannot suffer a greater calamitie; nor a Common-wealth a more contagious pestilence, then these make-bates, these sowers of discord, these Court-chamblets, that are sprinkled over with holy water, whose glosse of words makes a very faire shew, but under that print (which is quickly gone) lies the devill, and his foule deeds.

Peace, the daughter of Humilitie

It was ever-more my chiefe studie, to have peace with all men, because it is the daughter of Humilitie; And the humble minded man, that loveth peace, loveth, and is beloved of the Author thereof, which is God: if ill company had not done me harme, I had begun well, and gone on better; I had had wherewith-all to eate, to drinke, to laugh, and to bee merry, and might have passed this carreere of my life with a great deale of content. Many times (when I had ended my businesse) I would take a nap in the sweetnesse of that Sunne, which shew'd it selfe afert dinner, and some-times I made my sleepes by Moone-shine, remaining in the view of that faire light untill the morning.

The Pages waggery with Guzman

But when there was nothing to be done at home, your Lackies and Pages of the Court, being a company of Crack-ropes and notable Wags, would make me free of the frying Pan, fright me with Snakes, hang on my back, and weigh me downe, crying, More sackes to the Mill; If by chance

they found me asleepe, then would they clap a Flie made of Waxe upon the instep of my shoo, and letting it burne there, till shoo and skinne were both scorched, and when I began to stir and stretch, then would their knavery breake forth, and cry, Fire, fire, fire. Other-while they would roll up a Carde, or a piece of Paper, Tunnel-wise, and then setting it a fire, (blowing out the flame) they would put it directly under my nose, till the pillars of smoake that ascended to my nostrils, had not only awak'd me, but almost choakt me. I remember they us'd me so once in this manner, that I knew not in the world where I was, whether sleeping, waking, standing, or sitting; I was eene mad, I had lost my wits amongst them; and if I had not beene held fast, I had falne against one of the corner stones of the house, and dasht out my braines in a thousand pieces: yet I tooke all patiently, never opened my mouth against them, pocketting these and many other the like wrongs, which I passed over. CHAPTER V

All which I did, that by correcting my selfe, I might conserve my selfe: choosing rather to kill my choller, then choller should kill me. *Que el que todo lo quiere Vengar, presto quiere acabar.* Hee that will revenge all wrongs, shall sooner end himselfe, then them. *Larga se deveder a mucho, si no se quiere vivir poco.* The man, that would live long, must not be too short. This cuttednesse, hath cut off many a mans life before his time. But by slighting of injuries, and letting them quietly goe by, he that does them, growes in the end both wearie, and ashamed; Whereas if thou shouldst risent them, and take them to heart, they would never leave persecuting thee, but be vexing thee still more and more. For mine owne part, if I should have complain'd of these Wags, or but made any stirre in the businesse, I am sure they would have made an Anatomie of me. I (poore Scullion) must have turned Skellidon; There had beene no other way with me. Sometimes, to make triall of mee, they would lay baits for me, putting money in some such place, where I could not choose but finde it; and then would they watch Proverb

THE SECOND BOOKE

me, to see, whether I were light-fingered or no, and had the art of taking up, and were in the number of those that still take up, and ne're lay downe? But because I knew their meaning, and had found out the tricke, that they would faine put upon mee; I said with my selfe, It will not serve your turne, *A otro perro, con esse huesso*; I am too craftie a curre, to be taken with this bone; you must throw it out to some other dogge, you shall doe no good with it on mee: you have mist your marke (my Masters) you have leapt a little too short, you shall not goe beyond mee, nor shall you make your selves merry with my miseries, nor make merchandize of my credit, nor furnish your *Almoneda*[1] with my infamies. Therefore, it should rest there for me; till he that had laid it there, should come himselfe and fetch it away. Still having an eie, that another should not take it thence, lest afterwards it might be said, I was the man that did it.

Proverb

Guzmans craft to preserve his credit

Otherwhiles I would take it up my selfe, and come and bring it to my Master and give it him; having alwaies a great care to keepe my wounds cleane, and like a good Fencer, to come fairely off, without the least Vennie or touch in the world: For to give another man a cut in the legge, or a flash on the arme, and to receive a home-thrust, and full *Stocada* in his owne bosome, shewes himselfe to bee but a foole in his Science. I filcht and stole whatsoever came in my way, but still carried it so cunningly, that no man could have cause to suspect me.

Guzmans diligence in doing his Office

For those things that appertained to my charge, I was wonderfull prompt and diligent, albeit my Master had beene carelesse in willing me to doe this, or that; And when there was any worke to be done, I never stood looking, when my Master would bid me goe about it; I would save him that labour. I was the formost of all my fellowes, when Birds were brought in, to fall to plucking of their feathers, to scowre the Spits, to make cleane the Vessell, to sweepe the house, to make, and blow the fire, without saying to another, Doe it you. For I did consider with

[1] *Almoneda*, is an open sale at an Out-crie.

my selfe ; that seeing I was not to take my pleasure ; nor to stand like a Loyterer, with my thumbes under my girdle ; one was as much trouble to me as the other ; And me thought, it was a fine kinde of deceiving of the time ; to doe that by faire meanes, which I must otherwise have done perforce. And this made me indifferent (so as I were a doing) whether it were this worke, or that worke, all was one to me, since first or last, it must be done by one of us. CHAPTER V

I did evermore doe my uttermost indevour, as farre as my abilitie and knowledge would lead me, reserving alwaies the Decorum due to my Office. I was ever in Action ; I had scarce made an end of pulling my Birds, but I presently runne me to the Morter, and fall a pounding of Sawces, some for my Boyld meates, some for my Roast ; all my Iron Utensels about the Kitchin, as Spits, Andiornes, Tongs, Fire-shovell, Pot-hookes, and the like, I kept so neat and so cleere, that they lookt like so many Sword-blades, whereon the Cuttlers hand had set a delicate Glasse ; my Pots and my Pans, why you might have wiped them with a Cloake of Velvet ; my Skimmers, my Ladles, and my flesh-Hookes, were (like Barbers Looking-glasses) curiously kept in their Cases, and hung up upon severall Nailes, as all things else that were of use, had their peculiar places appointed for them, that they might be ready still at hand, when need should serve, without being driven to seeke for one thing in one corner, and another in another, bearing still in my minde, how and where I had plast them.

In a word, every thing had it's deputed place, with much diligence, and very good order. At my spare houres, when I had nothing to doe (which were likely in the Evening,) for then I was usually most at leisure ; the Officers of the house would give me their Vailes,[1] that I might goe abroad, and sell them for them. I went with them to the Gate that belongs to the Shambles, which was our set place for

Your Officers in great houses challenge their Fees, as a Tribute due unto them

[1] The Spanish word is *Percances*, i.e. *Quicquid acquiritur à servis præter Salarium.* Dict. : *à perquirendo.*

How the Cookes licke their owne fingers

that businesse, whither came such to buy, as had need thereof; Sometimes that which I brought, was good; sometimes so so; and at other times, stinking and starke naught. And all did arise out of that, which they call *Provechos y Derechos*, Fees, and Duties, which is two, out of every ten: a great deale better paiment I am sure, then that of the Almoxarifasgo[1] of Sevilla; Seldome or never were wanting unto us the *Menudillos* or entrailes of your Birds, the mammocks of Veale, Partridges and Hens, which were spoiled or lost in the spitting or the roasting, or had clung in the boiling to the Pots side, or falne in sunder by being over-sod; in the stripping and uncasing of Rabbets and Conies, and the Lard bestow'd upon them, being bordered about, and imbroydered as it were with Bacon, like unto one of your Gabardines of Sayago, scarce leaving so much white as the bredth of my naile, through which their larding-Needles had not past. There were some other commodities, which being kept too long, before they came to be sold, beganne to stinke; these they had a tricke to disguise in that handsome manner, that they should seeme to be fresh and sweet. Every one did set forth his own ware, as well as he could. I sold likewise Neats-tongues, Hogs-cheeks, powdred pessels of Porke, English Pasties of Venison, and pieces of Bacon, three fingers thicke of fat. Behold, what undue duties, what unprofitable profits, and what hurtfull and ungaineful gaines these were; things able to undoe a Noble man,

[1] *Almoxarifasgo*, comes of *Almozarife*; i.e. *Exactor portoriorum*. He that takes up all the Kings rents upon all merchandize, either imported, or exported. It is an Arabicke word, and signifies an Officer, that recovers all Rights and Duties, belonging to the King, bee it upon Customers, Tenths, or payment of Rents. Father Guadix saies, this name by corruption, is borrowed from *Al-Muxuiph*, that is to say, a Teller, a Changer, a Banker, a Renter. Diego de Urrea, That in it's Arabicke termination, it is tearmed *Muxerifun*, of the Verbe *Xerefe*, which signifies to see, to discover. And so *Almoxarife* may be taken for a Seer or Discoverer. And the reason of it is, for that he sees and discovers all the Merchandize that passeth to and fro, to recover what is due to the King, and to let the other passe free. This in ancient time, was a generall name to all Treasurers, till the daies of King Alonso II. who discarded it, because it was Moorish, and changed the Title into *Tesorero* generall, i.e. Lord high Treasurer. Covarruvias.

to make him waste his Wealth, morgage his Lands, and sell his Vassals. CHAPTER V

I pity ye (poore Lords, ye Gentlemen that keep good Houses) who either can not, or know not, (or to speake truely) will not consume this Locust, this Caterpiller, by destroying so harmfull a moth. And thrice unhappy they, who for ostentations sake, will offer to throw the Barre, with those that are able to out-fling them, and strive in a bravery to over-doe their strength, which may cause a spraine, if not a Rupture in their Estates.

The Porter,[1] as well as the Trades-man; the Trades-man, as the Merchant; the Merchant, as the Gentleman; the Gentleman, as the Knight; the Knight, as a *Grande*; and the *Grande*, as a King; all desire to bee in-throaned, and to out-strip one another, by living above their com passe, and spending beyond their means. But in troth, the Office of a King, that is no good Place, there is no sport in it, no mirth no jollity. For a King neither sleepeth so soundly, nor resteth so quietly as the poore Porter doth; neither doth hee eate his meat with that merry heart, and free from all care, as doth the Trades-man. The care of one Crowne afflicts him more, then that of many doth the Merchant. He is troubled more in making provision for his Armies, then a Gentleman in preparing his Armes: Nor is there any Knight or *Titulado* so much impawned, or so deepely in debt, but that his King is much more: Nor any *Grande* so great, but that the troubles and griefes which attend a King, are farre greater. He must keepe watch and ward, when others securely sleepe. His eyes (like your shops on worky-dayes) must be still open, that those of his Subjects may be shut up, and keepe Holy-day. And therefore the Egyptians, when they would Hieroglyffe a King, and by some mystical Cyphers, expresse his vigilancy; they did put a Scepter in his hand, with an eye on the top of it. Hee travels hard, when all others take

The condition of a King, what it is, in comparison of other men

A vigilant King, how depainted by the Egyptians

[1] The Spanish word is, *Ganapan*, quasi *ganar el pan. Acquirere panem et victum sudore faciei.*

their ease and laugh; for he is both Coach, and Coachman. He sighs, and groanes, when others, sport, and play; yet few are they, that take pitie of him, or are sensible of his sorrowes, unlesse it be for their owne private interest. Whereas indeed, onely for his owne sake, and for that generall care that he hath of all, he ought of all, to be both loved, feared, and respected.

The wretched estate of a King

Few informe him of the truth, for feare of drawing hatred upon themselves: Few, if he be in an errour, will seeke to put him out of it, and they know well inough, why, and wherefore they let him alone, and suffer him to goe on in't; and so doe we too: Onely forsooth to put themselves forward, and that they may come to mount and soare the higher, and the sooner, though it bee with waxen wings, and must in the end, like Icarus, come tumbling downe, and fall into the Sea, where they, and their fortunes, are to sinke for ever, never to be seene more.

But what doe I talke of these transcendencies? I divine nothing. They are things out of my element, and therefore I will let them alone. It is mens foolishnesse, and their want of judgement and discretion (as I told you before) that leades them thus along (deceived with these vanities) to their destruction, and of all other, most miserable are your great Lords, and other Noble Gentlemen, who spending where they need not, fall into need themselves. For even small and slight expences, used often and too abundantly, consume the substance, their feathers begin to faile them, they fall away by one and by one; heere lose a principall, there a Sarcell, and so in the rest: so that (having never a sound feather left, neither in wing, or traine, wherewith to maintaine their flight:) they are called *Pelones*, or *Pelados*, peel'd Gentlemen, that have had their Plumes pluckt. Whereupon they are forced to retire themselves home into the Country, to live upon some poore Farme or other, where they must spend their time in breeding of Cattel, as Pigs, Hens, and Chickens, and the like, reckoning the Egges that are dayly laid, making account thereof, as of his chiefest living.

The miserable condition of your great Lords and Gentlemen

CHAPTER V

Profitable lessons both for rich and poore

Hence therefore I set downe this as a ruled Case ; That if a rich man will governe himselfe, he shall never be poore. And if a poore man will be thriving, he shall quickly be rich. Both of them applying themselves in all things, according to the time, and as they see occasion. For it is not alwayes fit for a Gentleman to save ; nor for a poore man to spend. There are entertainments to be had, but such as are rather to be had for intertainment, then undoing.

Upon occasion, every man ought to shew himselfe, like himselfe, according to the meanes that God hath given him. For to this end hath hee bestowed these his blessings upon him. But not that all men should walke cheeke by joule, foote by foote, side by side one with another, as if they were all fellowes, and no difference of Estates, or Persons.

If a Noble man shall be a great spender, let a meaner Gentleman hold his hand, and let him not be-foole himselfe, to thinke, that hee can doe as much with three, as the other with thirty. He doth not consider that these are abortive births ; and things that are out of their naturall course : whereby he becomes a by-word, and laughing stocke among the people : and his wealth being wasted, turnes begger, and mewes himselfe up in a corner, and dares not be seene. That man doth not understand, (who is not of good ability) that he does ill ; to seeme to be a Cocke, before hee be out of the shell, and to stretch out his throat, as if he would over-crow all the world. If hee be a Raven, and can but croke at the best, why will he offer to sing and put forth his voice ? Or why, when some Flatterer shall tell him that hee hath an excellent ayre, and sings exceeding sweetly : doth he not perceive that he onely commends him, to make him (as it is in the Fable) let fall his Cheese, and then laugh at him when he ha's done ? The selfe-same Lesson I reade to all, that every man would learne to know himselfe : let him try the temper of his Steele, and let him not goe about to fyle iron with a fyle of wood, lest hee finde it lost labour. And

Good instructions for a Master of a Family

when he heares a man murmure at another, let him shut the doore, lest another may murmure at him.

It is fit, that wee should all sleepe upon one foote (as the Crane doth) when our wealth, (which is the life of this world) lyes upon it: casting about (now that all is gone) how we may doe, that we may not be driven to steale. For to let things runne to waste, is not liberalitie, but loosenesse. And with that, which thy Catrer, thy Cooke, and thy *Despensero*, shall steale from thee, and never thanke thee; (for these are your onely three Cheaters,[1]) thou maist reward halfe a doozen of thy other Servants.

But I speake no more of their theft, then others waste; for they will all steale, all filch (ne're a barrell better Herring) looke what is under their charge, they will be sure to nimme somewhat out of it. One a little, and another a little: and many a little makes a mickle. So that what with a little, and what with a mickle, it mounts to so much in the end, and makes such a deepe hole in thy mayne estate, that thou art much maymed by it, if not wholly swallowed up, and utterly sunke.

And heere I must not sticke to tell the Masters themselves, That a great part of this fault is theirs; for that Servants wages (usually) are too short, and ill payd. For, if they be served by men, that are in necessitie, and constrained by want, they shall finde few of them faithfull. Thou wilt not sticke sometimes in a humour, to play away at one rest, all thy whole yeares Revenues. This is naught, give it over. Pay thy servants well, use them with courtesie, and speake kindly unto them; for the rewarding and recompencing of services, makes the Master to be esteemed, and respected, according to his worth and qualitie, and incourageth the poore servant, (by requiting him for his paines,) to serve him the better, and with the more alacritie. There are some Masters, that will not bestow a Royall

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Tres del mohino*. That is, when foure play at Dice, or Cards, two against two (yet three of them Partners), those three combine to coozen the fourth man of his mony. Whence growes that Proverbe, *Tres al Mohino*.

on the best servant they have, thinking it inough, that they have onely their bare wages, and that in giving them that and their dyet, they are very well paid. CHAPTER V

No (my Masters) this may not serve your turne, it stand's not with reason to doe no more; for this is but their due, and deserves but little, or no thankes at all. But by giving that, which is not their due, thou bindest them to doe more then their due, and winnest them to serve thee with the greater love. Whereas, if thou (being a Master) shalt not inlarge thy hand, and bee better unto him, then the bare bargaine that is driven betweene yee, it is no great marvell, if thy servant hold backe, and steppe not a foot farther then those bounds, whereunto his Covenant binds him: Reasons, in favour of servants

As it hapned to a cowardly Gentleman, who (presuming too much on his wealth, and the greatnesse of his meanes) fell at odds with another Gentleman that was very valiant; and finding himselfe farre inferiour unto him, both in strength and in courage, was willing to intertaine a proper young fellow, of good metall, and approved Valour, to wait upon his person. A Tale of a miserly Gentleman

Now it hapned, that this Enemy setting one day upon him, this his servant drew in his defence, and behav'd himselfe so well, that he made his Adversarie retire with dishonour, and held him play so long, till his Master was quite out of danger.

In this fray, the Yong man lost his Cloake, and the scabberd of his Sword. When all was past, and this fray (whereof I told you) fully ended, my honest Serving-man gets him home, but his unthankefull Master did neither make good this his losse, nor returne him any requitall in the world. It was this Gentlemans hap afterwards, to meet with his Master againe, and having a good Cudgell in his hand, he affronted him, and gave him the Bastanado upon the former quarrell: his servant all the while stood still, and was content to be a looker on, while the other did beat him. His Master cryde out unto him, that he should come in and helpe him. Your Worship (quoth

his man) did agree with me to pay me my wages monethly, and I did covenant with you, to wait upon you for it.

And for ought I know, neither of us both are bound to any more. So that if thou mindest that they should strain themselves for thee, and do those things, that may advance thy service; with that which thou so dissolutely losest, and vainely and idly throwest away, gaine their good-wils, and thou shalt gaine this thereby, that they will not rob thee of thy wealth; that they defend thy Person, illustrate thy Fame, and desire thy life. O how often have I seene them carry away, and carried away my selfe, whole tartes of *Manjar Blanco*,[1] Pigs, Pidgeons, Stock-Doves, Cheeses of a hundred sundry sorts, and other infinit things to sell, which are too tedious to relate, and I feare me, both time, and memory would faile mee, if I should goe about to recount them unto thee! Onely I will tell thee, that these disorders, beeing a generall disease, whereof all of them were sicke, infected me also, and made mee become as bad as the best of them. I liv'd amongst a company of Wolves, and I learned of them to howle, and devoure Lambes, as they did. I was a reasonable good Scholler for my time albeit in a different kinde of learning, but at last, I lost all feare: I had learned now to swimme without Bladders; I was flush enough now to forsake the nest; all did game and sweare, all did steale and lurch,[2] and I did, as I saw others doe before mee. From small beginnings, great matters arise.

I began (as I told you before) to play a little, to lurch a little, and to steale a little; But at length, I began to inlarge my strides like little children, when they have

[1] *Alba, quedam esca, Hispanis in usu.* A meate made of the brest of an Hen, Milke, Sugar, Rice, beaten, and all mixed together. One of the daintiest dishes they have in Spaine. This *Manjar Blanco*, was anciently eaten in Princes Courts, and Noble mens Houses, but now publikely sold in the open Market.

[2] The Spanish word is *Sisar*. Now *Sisar*, is to take out of that which is bought, or spent, some small part: As out of a sixt part, one. And therefore it ought to be rather *Seisar*, then *Sisar*, of the Hebrew word *Sisah*, *Sextare*, or to take out a sixt part.

beene taught a while to goe alone. I was now perfect in my pace, and had the tricke to make one in the hundred. I no more held it ill (to such passe was my innocencie come) but as a thing lawfull, and to bee permitted, I bought therewith some few necessaries, that I stood in need of; the rest I threw away at play; for in my gaming, I alwaies made choice of those games that were the most vertuous, either in Dice,[1] or Cardes, such as were the nimblest to ridd a man of his money, that I might make an end of it quickly, and get me home to execute mine Office. CHAPTER V

I once remember, that contesting about a Chance with other young Lads about my pitch, we were so loud, in one of the Courts of the house where we plaid, that with the noise thereof, you would have thought, the whole house would have falne downe about our eares. Our Master spake to the Usher of the Hall, that he would goe see what the matter was; who found us together by the eares, which made the fault the greater. And (exceeding his Commission) he basted our shoulders with Cudgell-deaw, making the dust flie out of our Coates, till he had beaten our bodies all blacke and blue; The markes whereof appeared afterwards, when we came to put off our Shirts; which likewise occasioned the losse of my credit amongst them; For, from that time forward, they had an eie still over me; and lookt a little more narrowly into my water. And this was it, that gave the first beginning to my utter undoing, as by and by I shall more plainely deliver unto you.

[1] The Spanish words, are *Buelios, y Carteta*: Games much used amongst the Spaniards.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER VI

Guzman de Alfarache prosecutes that which past betwixt him and his Master, till being dismist, he departed from him: And takes occasion hereupon, to condemne Idlenesse and evill Companie, and those inveterated vices in rich men. Hee recounteth the spoiles, and Trophees of Cookes; and tells a merry Story, that past betweene himselfe, and the Cookes wife, his Mistresse

HAT man is much to be commended, who knowes to gaine by his labours: But much more ought hee to be esteemed, who by his vertue knowes how to keepe that which he hath gotten. I did strive all I could to please everybody, albeit the ill custome of my former lewd life, did now and then lead me awry; so that whatsoever I did, was like forced earth, that fell in short time to it's old levell, and being all but counterfeite stuffe, were but Apish imitations, contrarie to mine owne nature, and that bent, whereunto I had beene used. For that Glory that is falsely gotten, indureth but a while, it is not permanent, but quickly passeth away; I was like unto a drop of Oyle, that falls upon a garment, which

Proverb *Si fresca no paraçe, brevemente se descubre y crece*; If it be not presently perceiv'd, and taken off in time, discovers it selfe, and goes increasing. Now, they would no longer trust me. One would call me, *Cedaçillo nuevo*, the new little Sive, or the youth of three daies standing; For as your new married Wives, that buy a little Sive, to straine their Wine, or any other liquor, for some few daies, are very carefull of it, hang it up upon a Naile, or some woodden

Pin, but anon after thinke no more of it, and let it lie tumbling on the ground ; so is it with your new servants : you shall have them at the first very diligent and carefull, and like new Broomes, sweepe all cleane, but after a while they grow negligent and lazie, and are wearie of well doing. Another would call me *La Gata de Venus*, one of Venus Cats ; A craftie knave from the Cradle. But they were all deceived ; For I was naturally good, and in mine owne disposition, I neither had read nor knew so much ; but I depraved this good nature of mine, and did ill dispose of it. Vice and want altred this my good inclination, and made me otherwise then I would have beene. And what knavery I had in me, I learnt it of the Officers there, and other the servants of the house. And these are they that I must thanke ; for they were the only men that brought mee to it ; I was but coorse Sugar, till they refin'd me. CHAPTER VI

There are some happie theeves, that come to be old men before they die ; others are so unlucky, that for the very first robberie, that ever they committed, have beene taken in the manner, and presently hanged, without any more adoe. That which in others was but a veniall, was in me, a mortall sinne. And it was fit it should be so, because I did degenerate from what I was, by doing that which I ought not to have done. I did undoe my selfe by ill company, which is Vices Ladder, Vertues Hangman ; the Wine that makes drunke ; the Smoake that choaketh ; the Sorceresse that bewitcheth ; Marches Sunshine, a deafe Adder, and an intising Syrene.

Ill companie, is the Author of all mischiefe

When I first began to serve, I applied my selfe to my worke, and sought to please ; but afterwards, my ill-acquaintance (bad friends as they were) did sweetly undoe me. Idlenesse, was a great helpe thereunto, if not the sole cause of all my hurt. For, as unto him that is well occupied, no Vertue is wanting ; so unto him that is idle, there is no Vice, which is not his Companion. Idlenesse is the high way to destruction ; it is that spacious field, that opens to perdition ; it is that Plough, wherewith bad thoughts are sowne ; It is the seed of Tares, cast into the ground ;

Idlenesse, what kinde of thing it is

What evill effects it bringeth forth

THE SECOND BOOKE

it is that Woman-weeder that plucks up goodnesse by the roots; It is that Sickle, that cuts downe all our good works; It is that Flaile, which thresheth all honour out of us: It is that Cart, which comes loaden home with mischiefe; and it is that Barne, wherein all the Vices in the world are mowed, and stored up. Mine eie was not set upon my selfe, but on others; and looke what I saw them doe, that (me thought) was likewise lawfull for me: Not considering, that because they were in places of credit, (that were able to beare them out) and being old-beaten soldiers in all manner of theeveries, it might become them well enough to doe as they did; for by this meanes, they were to make themselves a Fortune, and to this end only doe they seeke to serve good Masters. I was willing to be one of the number, and would faine ranke my selfe amongst them, by doing as they did, being no way their equall, but a poore Picaro, a ragg-taild Rogue, out both of clothes and credit.

He that will not doe ill, must looke well into himselfe

But if excuses may prevaile, and that I may say something for my selfe; When I saw that every man walkt so freely this way, without checke or controule; it seemed to me to be the land of Permission;[1] and that I might passe up and downe there as well as they: Being perswaded, (as I told you before) that it was a worke of Vertue, a very good deed, and very justifiable, howbeit afterwards I was beaten from that errour: My thought though was good, but my understanding was amisse: For the Grace and favour of this Bull, did in especiall words grant the use and exercise thereof to the elder brothers, that are free of the Incorporation of the Rich and Potent; to those that are Favourites to the Proud, to the Arrogant, to Flatterers, to those that are never without Crocodils teares; to Scorpions, which bite not with the mouth, but sting with the taile; to smooth-tongu'd Parasites, who with sweet words cherish the body, but with sowre workes destroy the soule. These were the men that might doe any thing, all was well done that they did; but in such as

The Brotherhood of the Rich, what it is. And the evils that it causeth

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Terra de Xauxa.*

my selfe, it was falshood and roguerie, I was in an errour, and together with this my error, I became so dissolute, and liv'd so disorderly, that my disease even a farre off might easily be discerned: howbeit all was not worth a straw, as being things not to be reckoned of, or scarce worthy the talking of. It is a common saying; *Que el postrero, que sabe las desgracias, es el Marido.* That the good man, is the last that knowes, what things are amisse at home. CHAPTER VI Proverb

Of all these my mad prankes, and crosse fortunes that did befall me, scarce one of a thousand came to my Masters eares; Either because being willing (as I was) to please them, and to get their good will, they would not have my Master to conceive hardly of me, and so put me away; Or else, because (though now and then they would chide me, and tell me mine owne) seeing all the World was alike, and that it was every mans Case as well as mine; they did not much wonder at it. But for some negligences of mine, and other things that were too transparent; my Master grew somewhat angrie with me, and spurr'd hard to overtake me. It so fell out, that he was one day sent for to prepare a Feast for a certaine Prince, that was a stranger, newly come to Court, and carried me along with him, that I might transplant the Onion; that is, take up all the leavings, Reliques, Vailes, Profits, or Fees, (as the custome is) belonging to his Office.

Wee were no sooner come into the Kitchen, but all our provision was brought in unto us. My Master fell presently to worke; and very nimbly; and with a great deale of dexterity began to chop this, to devide that, and breake that other thing asunder, putting somethings apart by themselves, others (especially if they were all of a sort) he heaped up all together, taking the like order in all the rest of those things that appertained unto him (as a lawfull taxe and due tribute, payable to his place) lest he might, (being busied about many other things) forget his owne right, and confusedly intermixe one thing with another; it being meet and just, to give unto Cæsar, that which The fashion of your Cookes, when they are sent for to worke

is Cæsars, and that every man should take possession of his owne, and quietly injoy what of right belonged unto him.

Now, about the shutting in of the Evening, when it began to be darke, my Master willed me to bring the Sackes. I brought them, and fell to filling; which (being well practised therein) I packt up every thing that was there, very handsomely, and very speedily. And clapping them on my shoulder at such a time, and in such a manner, that I might not be seene, he made me make foure returnes, in which journying to and fro, I could hardly fetch my breath, so heavily was I laden. All, and every one of them seemed to me, to be like unto Noahs Arke. And I doe not know, whether in it there were so many individuall and severall Species, or whether God did afterwards create them? Now, when I had made an end of this businesse, he will'd me to make a fire, hang over the Kettles, see the water seethe, pull Fowle, scald the Chickens, sindge the Capons, scorch the Partridge; in which and the like I bestowed a great part of that night. My Masters Cake (good man) did not bake halfe currantly, the byas did not runne the right way, he was shrewdly out of tune, and much disquieted in his minde; it still running in his head, that his Wife was all alone; and that she could not either well order such a deale of wealth as he had sent her in; or that happely some unexpected storme might befall him in his absence.

Hereupon, whilst his thoughts were thus troubled, he calls me unto him, and saies unto me; Guzmanillo, I prythee hie thee home, and have a care to that which thou carriedst hence, see that all be safe, nothing lost, open thine eies, and looke about thee. Tell thy Mistresse that I stay here; have a care to the house, and as soone as it is day, hasten againe unto mee. I did so: I deliver my message to my Mistresse. I call for Pinn's, and Packthread; I plaste them up above in a Gallery, where they hung in a fresh and open ayre. There did I fyle upon strings the Trophees of that Victory. It was a glorious

What are the Trophees of Cookes, whereof they make their Triumph

and goodly sight to see the severall plumage, and divers-coloured feathers of Capons, Partridges, Turtles, Hennes, Peacocks, Thrushes, Veldefares, Pidgeons, Quailes, Chickens, Doves, and Geese. And taking forth from amidst all these the Conies heads, they lookt as if they had come peeping out of their berries. I hung up in another part of the Gallery Gammons of Bacon, joynts of Veale, Red Deere, wild Bore, Mutton, Neats-tongues, Pigs, and Kids. CHAPTER VI

Thus all the Gallery was hung round with this kinde of Tapistry, upon very good Nailes and strong Pins, that I had put up for that purpose. So that I assure thee by the faith of an honest man, according to that faire show that it made there, I had brought home two parts of five: nor was this Conquest yet fully ended; for there were yet wanting those seven *Infantes de Lara*,[1] to make the feast complete. All the rest was very well fitted, and I very weary, for I had wrought very hard, though little notice was taken of it, and my requitall lesse.

My Mistris lodged in a lower roome, who like an idle Drone, left all the burthen on my shoulders, and got her to bed. It seemed she had supt upon salt meates, for she had her fore-head full charged,[2] which was no new thing with her. I, when I had made an end of my worke, did the like, and went to bed. But the weather was so hot, that for a good while I lay scratching, and tossing to and fro, till at last, (though some-what, I confesse, against my will) I let loose the reines, that I might goe softly onward on my way to sleepe. In the end I fell a galloping, that I might the quicklier come to my journeis end, and take my rest. And lapping my selfe in my Blanket, which God knowes was a sorry one, (for in that Countrey, they doe not use to allow Sheetes, nor any more save an old Straw-bed, to such poore boyes as my selfe) I was very carefull to rise

[1] These seven sonnes of Lara were brave Warriours, and conquered all where they came. And their name is used by way of Proverb, when something is wanting yet to be done.

[2] When a man has drunke hard, it is a usuall phrase in Spaine: *Cargò delantero*, He hath charg'd his forepeece.

THE SECOND BOOKE

betimes, according as my Master had commanded me. When behold, (God blesse me) about three of the Clocke in the morning, it beeing then the time betweene the two Lights, when it was neither night nor day, I heard beneath in the Court a cruell skirmish amongst the Cats, which were making of a banquet upon a piece of Poore John, a dry kinde of Fish, which they had drawne out by chance through the Tyles of one of our neighbours houses.

Cats and old Folkes alike

And for that they are naturally of an ill condition, (nor shal you ever know, when they are contented, no more then ye shall, when old men are well pleased) you shall never see them eate their meat quietly, and without noise, but still purring and growling, though they have never so much. Whether it were, that their Fish was good, and so lik't it too well; or whether it were over-salted, and so made them angry, or what a Divell the matter was, that they differ'd about, I know not: but sure I am, that with the noise of this their Warre, they did awake me, and made mee to listen after them, saying with my selfe, Sure the Divell is in it, his hand is in this businesse, if the quarrell that was risen amongst these honest Cats, should fall upon the true mans Cloake,[1] and make him smart for't, that is not in fault: and should quarrell now at this houre, in so unseasonable a time, about the partition of my goods, and then my bones to pay for the meat that they should eate; making my Master thereby to mis-doubt my care, and so breed a difference betweene us.

I lay in my bed, as naked as ever I was when I first came from my Mothers wombe: I did not thinke, that any body should have seene me; I started up in a trice; and as if the Moores[2] had been come to have carried away all my kindred Captives, and this diligence of mine would have served to set them free, I hye me with all the haste I can, and come running downe the stayres amaine, that

[1] *Sobre la capa del justo. Si dize; quando paga el que no tiene culpa.* Covarruvias, verb. *justo.*

[2] It is usuall in Spaine to have the Moores come in upon their coasts, and carry away many Captives.

I might bee there in time, and might prevent that mischiefe, which is wont to grow, when succours are too slow.

The ridiculous jest that past between Guzman and his Mistris

In a businesse of that importance, I thought all delayes were dangerous. My Mistresse as shee was gone to bed before mee, so she had got up before mee. Which shee might the better doe, because shee had nothing to trouble her head, and had taken foure sound sleepes, was lapt up warme like the Silke-worme, so that she had no more to doe, but to rub her eyes, and arise. She heard this stirre as well as I, and thought perhaps with her selfe (as very well she might) that I was fast asleepe, and did not heare the noise. She, though she went to bed in her Smocke, yet as her fashion was, she would put it off before she slept, and lye all night starke-naked ; and so was she now, having not so much upon her to cover her nakednesse, as the inheritance of her Grannam Eve, neither Smocke, nor any other covering in the world.

And thus starke naked as ever she was borne, forgetting through her haste, to clap any thing upon her body, she came running downe like one out of her wits, with a light in her hand, to save her goods. Her thought, and mine, jumpt both alike ; the broyle equall ; the diligence, in *causa propria*, in a businesse that did neerely concerne us both ; and the noise on either side but little, for wee both came thither bare-foote.

Now (if it will please you to behold us) we both of us meet in the Gallery, she strucken with wonder, to see mee there ; and I almost frighted out of my wits, in looking on her. She suspected that I was some *Phantasma*, some Hob-goblin, or wandring Ghost, and letting the light fall out of her hand for feare, she gave withall a great schriche. And I that was affrighted as much with so strange and foule an Apparition, and seeing her to make towards me with a Candle in her hand, I gave a greater schriche then she, thinking it had been the soule of the Steward of our House, who dy'd but some two daies before, and that he was come thither to levell his Accounts with my Master. She shrik't out so lowd on the one side, that the neighbors

might heare her all over the street, and mine were so shrill, that they might almost have bin heard all over the Towne. She fled as fast as she could drive to her Chamber, as if the Divell had been at the tayle of her ; I strove to make as much haste to mine ; the Cats they began to fly, and as glad as we to be gone. But to see the ill lucke of it, upon the very first stayre as I was going up, I stumbled upon the Cat of the house, and treading upon her in the darke, she scratcht me by the legges with her nayles : then did I verily thinke with my selfe, that some Ghost or other followed me at the heeles, and was come to carry me away, and that he was now catching at my soule, and ready to teare it out of my body : wherewith being scarred, I fell, and brake my shinnes against the stayres, having grated off the skinne even almost to the bone, nor did my nose scape free, that was broken as well as the rest. Neither of us two could understand, or certainly suspect, who the other should be, all did succeed so in an instant, and were both called out, at the sound of one and the same Bell ; till that I having falne on the ground, and she having hid her selfe between her sheetes, we began to know one another by the lamentation and mourning that we made. With this fright that she had taken (if the freshnesse of the morning did not occasion it) my Mistresse retentive faculty had shrewdly failed her, and the locke of her belly being loose, and the bolts of her breech none of the fastest, her Posterne doore flew wide open, and before she could recover her Chamber, flirted the excrements of her intrailes, part in the Portal, and part in the open Court ; that White-pot of hers, being stucke full of Cherry-stones, which it should seeme she had swallowed downe whole. I was a good while, ere I could make all cleane, I swept it, and washt it, and did all that I could to make all handsome againe ; for the keeping cleane of the house did properly belong to my charge, as a thing wholly committed to my care.

Then did I begin to know that the Ordure and filthy savour of such accidentall Stooles as these, doe stinke more,

and worse by farre, then those that are naturall and ordinary with us. But the cause and reason hereof, I leave it to the Philosophers to seeke it out: It sufficeth, that it cost me a great deale of labour, to the detriment of my smelling faculty, and the great annoyance of my Nose: and this I dare be bold to make good unto you out of mine owne experience.

My Mistresse was much ashamed of this foule accident, and I more: for albeit I did write man, yet I was but a young Lad to speake of, and a meere child in the knowledge of these things; I was as modest, as any Maid of them all, and as tender-stomak't; and had I beene more man then I was, I should have been ashamed for her shame, and have blusht, if not for mine owne, yet for her sake. It did grieve me very much, that I had seene her in this manner, as I have told you; for as I live, I would not willingly for all the world have lighted upon such an uncouth casualty as this was: But (doe all that I could) she could never be perswaded, but it was my knavery, and my roguery, and that I did it of purpose; nor all the oathes that I used unto her, could make her to alter her minde, reduce her to reason, make her capable how and by what meanes this hapned, or give her any the least assurance of my innocencie.

From that day forward, I utterly lost her good-will; and I knew so much afterwards by a neighbour of hers; whom shee acquainted with all that had hapned. For that which did trouble her most, and did even vexe her to the heart, was, not for my finding of her naked, and un-array'd; but because she had beray'd her selfe. As for all the rest she did not care a pin; for most women desire nothing more, especially those that have a good opinion of themselves, have consulted with the cleerenesse of their skinnes, and are privy to their owne perfections.

When I saw that nothing would serve the turne, and that neither perswasions, nor protestations would perswade with her; I tooke it for an ill signe, and beganne to thinke with my selfe, that some false witnesse or other would bee raised up against mee, to cast mee out of doores, putting

her Husband into an evill opinion of me, as if this (poore innocent soule as I was) had been meerely my fault. Never did she looke straight upon me afterwards, nor ever exchanged word with me, good or bad.

When it was broad day, backe went I to my Mill againe, as I was commanded, that I might fall there afresh to my drudgery. But when I came to my Master, not a word of what had past. I was Mum-budget, and durst not open my lips to him (for my life) in that businesse. He askt me whether all those things were safe at home? and whether I had set them handsomely in order? I told him, all was well, and well ordred. Hee imploy'd me in some things. And I can assure you, that my Master and his Companions, and I and mine, such as were helpers, and wrought there for him, had more adoe, to gather together, and hide what he had stolne, then we had in the dressing and seasoning of all the rest of our meates. And how was it possible, that it should be otherwise, where there was no order taken, no agreement made, no account to be call'd unto? What did not we call for without controule; what was not given us without grudging; what did we not receive with a great deale of glory; how little was spent, and how much was stolne? Sugar was demanded for our Tarts; and for our Tarts, Sugar. So as we had for every thing twice or thrice over. These kinde of banquets, wee termed Jubilees; because the waters were troubled, and there were store of Fish to be taken. The poison was throwne in, and they began to float.

This made me to thinke, seeing (as the common phrase is) that this was my Gossips bread,[1] but at other folkes cost; that my fore-teeth were no lesse able then other mens, to gaine this Indulgence. For I likewise had a Soule in my body, as well as the best of them; I wanted not a jot of any thing, that should make me a man; My Armour was not without it's Rivets, to buckle all close. And if I had a minde to the Crums that were falne under the Table, (yet so, as not to seeke, to make my selfe equall to

[1] *Pan de mi compadre el duelo ageno.*

my fellowes, or to enter unto comparison with them) it might (me thought) be lawfull for me, to make some profit of other mens liberalitie, and though I were no Gamester, yet I might receive *Barato*,[1] as a stander by. I waxed wearie with pulling Fowle, blanching of Almonds, and the kernels of Pine-apples, with providing of scalding waters, and other things : I had then on at that time, an old Shirt, and a Doublet that was all torne.

Guzman steales Eggs, and is taken in the maner

Amongst other things that came to my Masters share, was a Pannier of Eggs ; I made thither, and tooke out a good companie of them, some few of them I clapt in my bosome, betwixt my body and my shirt, the rest I thrust into my Pockets, and the linings of my Breeches. Now you see, I laid my hand upon that which wrought my woe. But (to speake the truth) I did not doe this so much for mine owne private interest, but that I might say another day (if I list) that I kist the Bride ; and that it might not be said, that shee came forth a Maid ; Or that it should be tit in my teeth, that I had beene at the Court, and not seene the King. The craftie Rogue my Master had found me out ; and that he might sanctifie himselfe by my sinne, and justifie his honestie by my theft, the *Mayor-Domo* being present, and other principall servants of the house, when I was about to goe forth to put this poore purchase of mine in some safe place out of sight, he fell upon me like a Lyon, and laying hold on my Coller, he began to play Rex with me, taking me to *Coram nobis*, haling me by the haire of the head, and treading me under his feet.

You may very well imagine, how well conditioned this Merchandize was like to come home, being with his beating of me, he had broke them all to pieces, making both the Whites and the Yolkes, thus batterd both together, to drop out at my knees. I could not but say to my selfe ; Sure, some Poulterers Planet doth pursue me, and my Choller

[1] *Barato*, is that mony, which at play a man takes out of his heape, when he winnes, and gives it to this or that stander by, that he may wish him good lucke. Giving lesse, or more, as their hand is good, or their game great or small. Prov.

had almost mov'd me to speake it out aloud. But O (thou notorious theefe) how canst thou have thy house hang'd with that, which thou stol'st, and I carried away, and yet keepe such a coile, and make such a deale of doe, for halfe a doozen paltrie eggs that thou foundst about me? Doest thou not see, that thou wrongest thy selfe, in wronging of me? But I thought it my best course, to hold my peace. For, in injuries, the best remedie is to neglect them. It did grieve me so much the more, that my Master should use me thus hardly; had it beene done by a stranger, or so, I could better have borne it. But I must be contented with my hard fortune; I saw I was to suffer, and therefore I past it over without any alteration of countenance, or replying otherwise unto him, then by lifting up mine eies unto heaven, which were brimme full of teares, and ready to runne over.

Faire words and large promises, pacifie anger

Now the heate and furie of the Feast was past, and we were going home; but as we were upon the way, my Master said unto me, What I shall now tell thee (Guzmanillo) hearken unto it, and weigh it well, it is worth the noting; That beating which I bestowed on thee to day, did concerne me more then thou art aware: I know I had no reason to use thee as I did; but to morrow, I will give thee a new paire of shooes, which shall be better worth to thee, then thy eggs would have beene. This was welcome newes, and pleas'd me very well; for those I then wore were old, and all to fitters. But I shrewdly suspect, that my Mistresse, after we were come home, had made her complaint unto him, and spoken some ill language of me; for from that time that wee entred in adoores, my Master did ever after cast such a sowre looke upon me, as if he had beene newly tasting of Wine-vinegar, so sharp a countenance did hee set upon me; so that now we heare no more words of our new shooes, they are forgot, and I must be content to goe without them. When I saw hee lookt awry upon me, and that I found his favour to bee with-drawne from me; I sought to remove all rubs, and to give him all the content I could, serving him with more care then ever;

without committing any the least offence, or being wanting in any thing that belonged to the businesses of the Kitchin ; I was not faultie in an hayre, because he should have no just cause against me.

Upon a Festivall day, (as our fashion was) we had made certaine Pies and Pasties, some of one sort, some of another ; whereof there was some (though not very much) of the Paste left ; And the Munday following, was the Running of the Bulls. In the dust-Basket, amongst other refuse-things out of the sweepings of the house, it was my hap to meet with the shanke-bone of a Heyfer, which was in a manner whole ; I had need of a few of Blankes to make merry with, and presently (a toy taking me in the head) in the turning of a hand, I had lapt up my Shanker in the Paste that remained ; which (as I had handled the matter) was to the outward show a goodly faire Conie, that you could not distinguish the one from the other. Away went I with it to the wonted place, where I us'd to vent my other things, with a purpose to coozen some stranger with it ; But because I was in haste, and could not stay long, I might not wait to make choice of my Merchant. There comes me to buy it of me a goodly grave Gentleman-Usher, (his head and beard as white as Milke). To doe him a pleasure, I was willing he should have it. We agreed upon the price, and he was to give me for it three Royals and a halfe. Me thought I saw the heavens opened, in having made so quicke a market. But the more was my haste, the greater was his fleame.

Guzman tries his wit to get some money

He puts me first under his arme a Reportorie or little Register booke, about the bignesse of an Almanacke, which he had in his hand ; Then he hangs me at his Girdle, his Gloves and his hand-Kercher ; with a great deale of deliberation ; After that, he takes me a case out of his pocket, wherein were his Spectacles : he puls them forth, wipes them, and puts them on, wherein hee spent two long houres. Then he went distilling out of a little leather Purse, one *Quarte* after another, and putting them in his hand, every halfe *Quarte*, seemed to be a *Quartile*, giving

THE SECOND BOOKE

every one of them halfe a doozen turnes at the least, holding them against the Sunne. I had scarce received my money of him, when lo, my Master was at my backe, who missing me at home, came forth to seeke me. And having thus found me napping, he tooke me fast by the arme, and when he had me sure, hee said unto mee, What Pawne (my youth) have you redeemed here? My Gentleman-Usher was present at all this passage: the Devill (I thinke) kept him there all this while, for the disclosing of this my secret.

Guzman taken in a fault by his Master

I saw my selfe now in the suds, and knew not which way to get out; I could not quote my Author, nor yeeld any good reason for what I had done; so that it stood with me, as with prohibited bookes, or merchandize forbidden to be sold: and punishing me for my fault, he afterwards dives me into my pocket; and when he had fisht out the money, hee cries; Let goe you rogue; Let goe, I say: Are you the man, that so many have commended unto me? Are you that dead Flie, that would doe no hurt? Are you that faithfull servant forsooth, whom I trusted with my goods, and that all I had? Have I kept thee in my house? given thee of my bread? cherisht, and made so much of thee, and all for this? I will no more be troubled with such a rogue as thou art. See thou com'st no more in my house, and come not, I advise thee, neere my doore; for he that will be false in a little, will (if occasion be offred) bee false in greater matters.

Guzman thrust out of his Masters service

And so giving me a cuffe on the eare, and a kicke on the breech, both at one instant, in the presence of my Merchant, (whose dull fleame, (the worse lucke mine) would not dismisse him hence) hee had almost laid me flat on the ground. I was so ashamed, that I knew not what answer to make him, though I had stuffe enough in store for him; But not holding it fit so to doe, because he had beene my Master. I hunge downe my head, held my peace, and went my waies. For it is a greater glory to avoid injuries by silence, then to overcome them by replying.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VII

How Guzman de Alfarache, being put from the Cooke his Master, turnes Picaro, and proves a notable cunning Rogue. How he having a great desire to see Italie, occasion was offred unto him to effect his purpose, by the helpe of a theft, done upon a Grocer, and how he went sheere away with it, and left Madrid

N all chances whatsoever that may befall us in this world, *Mas vale saber, que aver*; it is better to be wise, then to be rich; For though Fortune should play the Rebell, yet Knowledge never forsakes a man. Wealth may be wasted, but Knowledge increaseth; and of more worth is that little, which a wise man knowes; then all that which a rich man injoyeth. There is no man (I thinke) makes any question that Wisedome excelleth Fortune; though both of them put forward, and hasten to one and the same end; which is, to adorne and set forth men, and to raise them to honour.

Wisdome better then Riches

Divers Philosophers, did diversly paint forth Fortune, because in all things she is her selfe so diverse. Every one did draw her forth in that forme, as hee found it did accord with himselfe, or as hee did consider it in another. If she be good, she is the Step-dame to all Vertue; if bad, the Mother to all Vice. And him, whom she most favoureth, she reserveth for most miserie: her courtesies ever ending in disgraces. She is brittle, unstable, restlesse, *Tanquam Figura sphœrica in corpore plano*; like a Sphericall Figure, in a plaine body. That, which she gives to day, she takes away to morrow: she is the flowing of the Sea, tossing and tumbling us to and fro, till she leave us at last upon drie

Fortune, how decyphred by the Philosophers

THE SECOND BOOKE

land, on Deaths shore, from which she never returnes to recover us; And while we live, injoyning us (like Players) to con over our parts, and to learne daily new toyes and devices, to present them upon the stage of this World. Every various accident doth disorder her, and steale Wisdomes praise from her. But Wisdome doth quickly repaire that which she ruineth: And redresseth those things, which she despaireth of; shee is a most rich open Mine, from whence, they that will, may exhaust great treasure, like unto the waters of a huge River, which can never be drawne drie. She honoureth a good fortune, and helpeth a bad. She is silver in the poore, gold in the rich, and a precious stone in a Prince. In the perillous passages, and in the troublesome chances of Fortune, the wise man treads safely, and walkes securely; but the Foole stumbles and falls, though the way be never so plaine.

What man should doe, to live happily

There is no trouble so great on the land; no tempest so terrible on the Sea; no storme so violent in the aire, that is able to withstand Wisdome, so that every man ought to desire to live to be wise; and desire to be wise, that he may live happily; Her riches are perpetuall, permanent, constant, and certaine. But thou wilt aske me; Whither away, Guzman, so laden with Knowledge? What thinkst thou to doe with it? To what end dost thou commend it with such large eloquence? Why dost thou so earnestly indeare it unto us? What doest thou meane by it? Whether doth it tend? Since you aske me, I will tell you. All this speech hath reference to my Basket, which was the Knowledge that I did studie, for to get meat to my mouth, which is a good point of Wisdome: For, *Quien a Oficio, a beneficio*, He that hath a good Office, hath a good Living. And he that hath no other meanes to live in this world, and to passe over the necessities of this life, shall for me bee esteemed as much in these dayes, as Demosthenes was in those, for his eloquence, and Ulisses for his wit.

My naturall disposition was good; I was descended both by Father and Mother of a Noble and Honourable Stocke. This I could neither hide, nor lose. And therefore I could

not choose but shew of what house I came, by suffering injuries with patience, the onely tryall of valiant minds. And as badde men, by good things, become worse; so good men, by bad things, are made better; especially, if they know how to make true use of the things of this world. CHAPTER VII

Who would have thought, that so good service as I had done, should have receiv'd so bad a reward? And that upon so light an occasion, and when I did least expect, I should be thrust out of all? But in answere hereof, thou wilt happely say unto me; Such is the world now a-dayes, that for the same very action, for the which at this present, a man is accounted a good servant, an able Minister well seene in his Office, and to have behaved himselfe therein as he ought, shall againe at another time, for doing the very same thing, be neglected, ill thought of, disgraced, and undone. And all to this end, that either herein we may see the worlds incertainty, and what errours it doth dayly runne into; or else be brought to confesse, That God, to those, whom he hath predestinated to salvation, after sinning, sends repentance. O would to God, that I might be so happy, as to receive onely a corporall punishment heere upon earth. Guzman complaines of his misfortunes

My Master was now bent against me, his Wife had set him on, and he thereby so incensed, and so apt to take hold of any occasion, that every the least shutting of the eye, or but the wagging of a Straw, would have beene matter inough of exception against me; and though I should have serv'd him never so well, never so truely, and laboured (as if my life had layne upon it) not to give him any the least cause of dislike, yet all would not serve the turne, hee was minded to put me from him, and I must be packing; faulty, or not faulty, all was one. Now I am throwne out into the street, persecuted, and put away: What shall I doe? Whither shall I goe? Or what will become of me? Seeing I am thrust out of doores for a Thiefe; who will now intertaine mee in his service? Who admit me into his house? Then did I begin to think of

my former troubles; and how well I bore them out, by bearing of a Basket. I was wont to be a *Bunnolero*, a maker of Fritters, Bunnes, and Cracknels, and was now faine to follow mine old trade afresh. It did not repent me, that I had bin in-ured to troubles; for from them I receiv'd my reliefe; and it is good sometimes to take them patiently, and willingly, to the end that they that are driven to necessity, may the better indure them, and not sinke under the burthen of them, as many doe, because they have not been formerly us'd unto them.

And because they can never faile us in this life, but doe still wait upon us, it is fit that we should be taught how to entertaine them, that wee may be the better able to beare them when they come. Besides, they make a man submit himselfe to those things, wherein afterwards he findes a great deale of good. There is no affliction so bitter, from which (if thou wilt) thou maist not in the end suck some sweet juice; nor no pleasure so sweet, whereof thou mayst not feare some bitter end, save onely in that of vertue. If when I was so well accommodated to mine owne content, I had not before indured some stormes of Adversity, never in that faire weather of my Scullion-ship, should I have knowne how to Sayle in my putting forth from the Kitchen, but have shewne my selfe a raw Mariner, and fresh-water-Pylot, nor have found things so ready at hand, where-withall to helpe my selfe in time of need.

What would then have become of me? Doest thou not see how troubled, how afflicted I should have been? and what hard shifts I should (poore wretch) have been put to, when my Office was taken from me, not knowing which way to turne my selfe, what course to take, nor where to put my head? All that I got, I either plaid it away, or unjustly stole it. I had bought me neither goods nor land with it, neither house, nor cloathes, nor any thing where-withall to cover me. All was spent and gone; As it came, so it went; in at one doore, and out at another; what I gain'd, that I lost; what I serv'd for, that I wasted:

CHAPTER VII

And as the Proverbe is; I had *frutos por pension*,[1] my fruits allotted me. Of evils, whereof the least is the best, for all these mis-fortunes that befell me, my mayne stocke was still remaining with me, to wit, my lost shame. For what should a poore man doe with shame? Bashfulnesse brings in no benefit. And the lesse shame I had, the lesse did those errors grieve me, which I committed. I was now well knowne to all the Towne, and I had money in my purse to buy me a Basket; but before I would resolve to saddle it to my backe, I did night and day visit my Masters friends and acquaintance, to see if any of them would have pity of me, and take me into their service. For I had learned now a little skill, and would have beene glad to have better'd my knowledge, that I might know how to live another day. Some of them did relieve me a little, intertaining me with a piece of bread, or so.

But it seemed, they had heard such things of mee, that they quickly dismist me, having no minde in the world to receive mee into their service. Might overcomes Right: And where force prevaileth, there the Law goes to wracke.[2]

With these diligences that I us'd, I had performed my duty, and complyde with that, whereunto I was bound, that I might not accuse my selfe hereafter, of returning to my former course of life, out of meere idlenesse, and for the avoyding of labour, and that I might not worke and take paines for my living. But I assure thee, that I lov'd it then, as one that had experience what Vice was; and knew very well, that by so much one man is more man then another, by how much the more he labours in some honest course of life. As the contrary may be said of him that is idle. But a man can doe no more then he can doe; I did my endevour. Nor doe I know how it comes to passe, that we desiring to be good, yet we never come to be so; and though we propose it dayly and hourely unto our

We still desire to be good, but never are good. And the reason why

[1] *Frutos por pension: Quando del beneficio que uno tiene, da todos los frutos al pensionario, aviendole sennalado la congrua.* Covarruvias, verb. *Fruto.*

[2] *Donde la fuerça oprime, la ley se quiebra.*

THE SECOND BOOKE

selves, yet we doe not put it in execution in many yeeres; nay, not in all our life-time are we able to reach unto it. And the reason is, because, we either will not, or we do not think upon any thing but the present. I began to beare my burthens, I did eate what was needfull, (for I never made my belly, my God) and a man ought not to eate more, then what may suffice for the preserving of life. The excesse whereof is brutishnesse. For it is the Beast that gluts himselfe to grow fat.

Orderly dyet, a wholesome thing

By this my orderly dyet, and moderate feeding, my minde was not dull'd, my body was not weakened, I did nourish no ill humours, I did breed no diseases, I had my health, I was sound and lusty, and never wanted money to play.

Moderate drinking, healthfull. The contrary hurtfull

In my drinking, I was very temperate, never using it but when I must needs, and then too very sparingly; seeking to proportion my selfe to what was necessary; and to moderate my selfe in some measurable manner, as well, for that it was a thing naturall unto me, and agreeable to my disposition; as also for that drunkennesse, did (me thought) very ill become my Companions: Who depriving themselves of the sence and reason of men, fall sicke and ill: their heads turne to aking; their tongues, to hoarsenesse; their breathes, to shortnesse, if not to noysomenesse; their eyes, to a swolne settlednesse, and dulnesse of look; their legges, to making of Congees and Honours; their feet, to tripping of it this way, and that way, with counter-paces, now backward, then forward, as the Morrisbels in their braines should devise them their tune. But (which exceedeth all other mischiefes) this inhumane and sottish Vice makes them a May-game to children, a laughing stocke to men, and a scorne to all the world. Such as these are Rogues, and for such, let them goe, for they are no better then Rogues. And I doe not wonder at it. For all basenesse whatsoever is ingraven on their fore-heads, and is made just fit to their measure, as being the off-scumme and refuse of men.

Porters, and Basket-bearers, are for the most part, a base and brutish kinde of people

A lesson for Noble men, and Gentlemen

But for men of worth, and such as stand upon their credit, as great and noble Persons, and Gentlemen of

qualitie, who ought to abstaine from these disorders; let them take heed, how they give any such scandall, to wrong their Reputation. CHAPTER VII

But for a Church-man to disorder himselfe, nay, but to goe a haires-breadth awry in this kinde: for such a one (I say) it is not onely a disorder, but hee comes within the compasse of being noted for a scandalous person, and a wronger of his profession, which cannot but redound much to his reproach. Let them themselves be their own Judges, and speake what they thinke of it, when they see themselves thus over-taken. Doe they not, for to maintaine their absurdities, seeke to excuse themselves by idle and foolish reasons, and make, I know not what un-joynted sequels, by which after one errour granted, they runne into a thousand: and yet perswade themselves, that they, and none but they, are in the right? It is a shame to treat of it; infamy to use it; villany to cloake it, and a thing unworthy men, not to hate, and abhorre it. The like for Church-men

We had in the Place neere unto Santa Cruz, our proper Mansion, bought, and repaired at other mens cost. There were all the meetings and the Feasts. I was up with the Sunne, I diligently waited on those Shops, and attended often on the Bakers; and if I wanted imploiment there, I got me into the Shambles, to see what good I could do there. I made my harvest in the morning, to serve me all the whole day after. The Parishioners there-abouts, that had no servants of their owne for these businesses, would hyre me to carry home their provision for them. Which I did faithfully, and diligently, without wronging them the least hayre of my head. No man of my place had more credit amongst them, or was better trusted then my selfe. So that my Companions wanted worke, whilest I had inough for my selfe, and some other good-fellow my friend, whom I would make choyse of to helpe me; who would be sure to follow me close at the elbow. Then we were but a few of us, and wee went up and downe from place to place: but now there are very many, the number is much increased, and all of them have their hands full, and glad is he that The Market-place, the Rogues burse

can catch them up first. And I can assure you, that there is not any Estate, that hath more inlarged it selfe, then that of the Picaro's; for all your Rogues apply themselves to the bearing of Baskets, and carrying of Burthens, they count it a very good Trade, and these Rogues grow proud of it. And to this passe doth mis-fortune bring a man, that his Infamy, he makes his glory; his Basenesse, he counts his Honour; and earnest, he turnes to jest.

It so fell out, that there were certaine Companies of Souldiers to be raised, and Captaines appointed for the conducting of them. Now, when any such thing happeneth, it is presently spred abroad over all the Towne, every corner of the street is full of it, and every private house is made a Councell of State.

Porters, and Car-men, and the like base Rogues will not sticke to talke of State-businesses

Nor doth that of your Picaro's sleepe in the meane-while; every Porter, and Basket-bearer will have a hand in the Government of the Common-wealth as well as other men; they will fall into discourse of the businesse, vent their opinions, and conclude, what things ought to be done, how carried, and who fittest for the managing of these great affaires. Nor doe not thou thinke, that because they are base in their qualitie and condition, that therefore they are the farther off from the Truth, or their intelligence the lesse certaine. If thou doe, thou art much deceived; for it is rather the quite contrary with them. For it often-times so comes to passe, that they know the essentiall points of things; and participate of the secrets of State; and there is a great deale of reason for it. For, in regard of the understanding, some there are, nay, very many of them, who if they would applie it well, and accommodate it, as others doe, making the like use of it, have it strong and good. Besides, sithence that they goe all day long from one place to another, through divers streets, and into sundry houses, and being that they be so many, and so scattered and devided over all the Towne; of many, they heare many things; and though it be usually said amongst us; *Quot capita, tot sensus.*[1] So many men,

[1] *Quantas cabeças tantos pareceres.*

so many mindes. And though happily one, or say a hundred, should shoot wide of the marke, and discharge the follies of their idle braines; yet doubtlesse, there are others againe, that discourse wisely, and will come very neere unto, if not hit the Pinne.

Now we (having raked together all the newes of the whole Towne) when we are met together, and are sitting at our supper, every man opens his store, and tels what hath past in Court, some relating one thing, and some another. Besides, there is not that Victualing-house or Taverne, but whatsoever hath beene talked of there, is brought to our eares. For there likewise are held your open Courts, and publike Assemblies, where all questions and doubts are winowed and sifted to the full, nothing escapes their search and inquirie; There they limit the Turks power, reforme Councels, and taxe your Ministers of State.

In a word, there all things are made knowne, there all things are treated of, and they are the Law-givers, that prescribe rules to all; for they speake all out of Bacchus his owne mouth, having Ceres for their Ascendent, conversing with a full belly, and a free heart, and if the Wine bee new,[1] the Vessell will runne over, it must needs worke, and can no longer hold. With that then, which we have learned from others, wee come afterwards to sit and determine of every particular passage, every man according to his severall opinion, setting downe his severall censure. One while we resolve, that these Companies are to march towards Italy; and that went for good, and past the more currant amongst us, because their Banners were advanced towards Mancha, and were now farre entred into that Countrie, passing from Almodovar and Argamasilla, along the skirts of the Kingdome of Toledo, till they had got to Alcala de Henares, and Guadalajara, compassing all the way as they went, the Mediterranean Sea.

Me thought, this was a very good occasion for me to take hold on, for the executing of my former desires, which

[1] *In vino veritas. Si el vino es nuevo, hierve la tinaja.*

THE SECOND BOOKE

with earnest longings did mightily spurre me on to undergoe this Voyage, that I might know mine owne blood, and whence I was descended, how I was alli'd, and of what qualitie my Parents and Kindred were. But I was so totter'd and torne, and so utterly unprovided of all things for this my intended journey, that the bridle of Reason made me stop upon my course, and held me backe from going farther forward, it seeming unto me (upon better deliberation) a thing impossible to be effected. But notwithstanding, my minde ranne still on nothing else.

Guzman, desirous to passe out of Spaine into Italie

This was still in my head, and I could not beate it out. In the day time it was my studie; and in the night I dream'd still on that, and nothing but that. And if that Romane Proverbe taketh place (*Si quieres ser Papa, estampalo en la testa*) if thou mindest to bee Pope, thou must have him writ in thy forehead: it was truly verified in mee. For, as I was beating my braines about this businesse, tossing them a thousand times to and fro, full of this solicitous care, I sate me downe on the one side of the Place, neere unto one of the Shops, where my selfe, and this my other Associate were wont to make our Rendevous; And leaning my cheeke (in a melancholy manner) upon my hand, being fully resolved to goe, though it were but in the place of a stragler, to waite upon the Soldiers, and to carry their luggage for them, thinking this would be place good enough for me, if I could not light on a better.

Proverb

Whilest I was devising this with my selfe, on the sodaine I heard a voice, which said; Guzman, Guzmanillo? I lookt about, and turned my face towards the place, from whence the voice came. And I perceiv'd at last, it was a Grocer, that stood under the walking place underset with Pillars, that cal'd me unto him, neere adjoyning to the Butcher-row. I held up my hand, and made a signe unto him, that I would hasten thither. I got me up, and came to see, what he would with me. He spake unto me, and bid me open my Basket. I did so. That no sooner done, but he throwes me into it, about some two thousand five hundred *Royals* in Silver and Gold, and in some few

CHAPTER VII

Quartes. I ask'd him; To what Brasier I should carry this Copper? Copper, you rogue? Come, up and away with it, for I must goe pay it to a Merchant a stranger, that hath sold me some Wares at my shop.

Guzman resolves to steale a summe of money, and puts it in execution

He said one thing, and I thought another: which was, to shew him a tricke at the next turning. And beleeve me, the joyfull newes of a desired birth, did never come more welcome to the eares of a loving Father: Nor the Mariner beaten by tempest, did with more joy discover on the sodaine the Harbour, that he sought to put into: Nor any rendred Towne, to that famous Captaine that besieg'd it, gave so much content, nor had so sweet a sound with it, or afforded so pleasing an Accent; as I conceived then in my soule, hearing that sweet and melodious voice of my Grocer, when he said, Open thy Basket.[1] Me thought it was a brave word, they were letters of Gold ingraven in my heart, leaving it full of joy, but much more when they had qualifi'd themselves, by actually putting me into a quiet and peaceable possession of that, which I was perswaded would be my best remedie.

Upon this luckie incounter, I began alreadie to dispose of this money, and to change my course of life. I laded my shoulders with it, faining that it did weigh very heavie, but my heavines was the more, that there was no more of it. My honest Grocer, he (good man) goes afore, and I follow after, but with a wondrous desire to meet with some throng, or presse of people in some street or other, or to slip aside into some house, where I might effect my purpose. Fortune (as good lucke was) had, in the very nicke, fitted me with one, just according to the measure of my desire. For if I would have wisht for an opportunitie, I could not have desired a fairer. For as I was entring into the principall Gate, I got me away some three streets from thence by a blinde Posterne doore, and fetching boords from one corner to another, with somewhat a quicke, but not discomposed pace, that I might the better avoid all suspition, I went away gallantly, winding this way, and turning that

[1] The Spanish word is, *Capacha: à capacitate.*

way, till I had got to Puerta la Rega,[1] where I eased my selfe of my load, and made downe to the River. From thence I crost over to Casa del Campo,[2] and being holpen by the night, I walkt (through a little thicket of Alder trees, Poplars, and other well-growne bushes of thorne) a League farther: in the thickest part whereof I cast Ankor, and had now pitcht my Standard, that I might with mature counsell thinke upon things to come, and what fruit and benefit I might make of my late purchase. For it is not enough to begin well, nor to goe on well, but to end well. For to little use serve good beginnings, and better proceedings, unlesse they be crowned with prosperous endings. What good would this theft have done me, if I had beene taken with it, but to lose that, and with it, perhaps my eares, if not to have beene hang'd[3] for my labour, if I had been of yeeres? There I entred into consultation with my selfe, what I were best to doe: I made triall where the water was deepest, and there where the bushes were thickest, I made a deepe hole; and wrapping the money in the linings of my breeches and my doublet, I put it in, covering it over very handsomely with sand and stones; setting up a marke, that I might not forget the place where I had hid it, hankering there-abouts, that I might ever and anon have an eie upon it, for the space of almost fifteene daies: And all because I would not trouble my selfe hereafter in seeking for it some two foot neerer or farther off, which would have beene as bad as death unto me, if I should not have hapned to light upon it, as soone as ever I had thrust in my hand. And the rather, for that some nights I went from thence to the neighbouring places there-abouts, to get me some victuals for three or foure daies, returning presently backe againe

[1] A chiefe Gate so called.

[2] A house of pleasure belonging to the King of Spaine, not far from Madrid.

[3] The Spanish phrase is, *aver comprado un cabo de anno*, i.e. *La memoria y sufragios, que se hazen por el difunto, cumplido el anno que muriò.* That is, the memoriall and suffrages, which are made for the dead, the yeere being fully ended after his death. Covarruvias, verb. *Cabo.*

to my old haunt, keeping my selfe close, after the Sunne once began to peepe forth, in that Wood adjoyning to the *Pardo*.[1] CHAPTER VII

Hither, in this manner as you see, had I with-drawne my selfe, till the Hue and Crie were past and gone, which undoubtedly was made after mee. Now by this time, they had lost my footing, and I conceiving with my selfe, that the Coast was now cleere, and that I might safely passe, that I might remove my Tent, and march forward, I made me up a little fardle of the old linings that were left of my Jerkin, wherein I had closely lapt up this my heart-blood. So that I had nothing now left me, save the old linings of my Breeches, a poore ragged Doublet, and a Shirt all torne and full of holes, but all as white and cleane as a curd, for I had lately washt them. So that I was apparelled all in white, being wonderfull well fitted for to make up one in a Morris-dance.[2] I got me two delicate fine walking Cudgels, which I had cut my selfe, and pill'd off the Rinde, and made as smooth and neat as could be devised. On the one, I hung the precious bundle, which I bare at my backe ; the other I made a Truncheon of it, to carrie in my hand. I was now fat and full fed, and began to grow wearie of being any longer a Conie in that Warren, fearing lest one of the Keepers, or some other Ferreter, should finde me there in the Berrie, and pull me out as a suspicious person ; To prevent that, I began to take my journey by night, when it was darke, going out of the rode-way, taking crosse pathes, by-places, and untrodden tracks, passing

[1] *Pardo* is a house of pleasure, seated in a Wood, belonging to the King of Spaine, neere to Madrid. It comes from the word *Pardes*, *Paradisus*, id est, *hortus domesticus arboribus consitus*, *Pomarium*. And amongst other significations, it is taken for a Parke. Genebrard upon the *Cantic.* saith, *Pards vocabulum est Persicum, quod in omnes fere linguas manavit pro horto pretioso et delicioso omnium arborum genere consito.* Covarruvias, verb. *Pardo.*

[2] The Spanish phrase is *Dança de espadas.* A dance much used in the Kingdome of Toledo ; they dance it in their shirts, and Breeches of Linnen, and night-Caps on their heads, and bright swords ; it is full of changes, and one amongst the rest, which they call *Degollada ; proque cercan el cuello del que los quia con las espadas, y quando pareçe que se la van à cortar por todos partes, se les escurre de entre ellas.* Ξιφίσμος sive, βαλλιμαχία. Covarruvias.

thorow La Sagra de Toledo, a certaine Territorie belonging to that kingdome, till I came two leagues beyond it, to a little place that stood in a bottome called Açuqueica ; whither I had reached betimes in the morning. There I rested my selfe under the shadow of certaine Quince-trees, where I meant to spend that day. Where e're I was aware, I found hard by me a prettie young stripling, much about my pitch. He seemed to be some Citizens sonne, who out of some un-advised consideration as mine was, had forsaken his Parents to travell abroad, and goe see the world ; He carried his Fardle at his backe, and being but a young novice, bred up daintily, and newly taken from his mothers teat, the Milke yet hanging on his lips, was wearie of his burthen, and himselfe seemed heavie, in having so heavie a load : sure, he had no great minde to returne home againe to his friends ; and as little, that they should finde him out. He walk't as I did, in the day thorow Groves and thickets, and in the night along the high-way, seeking covert, where to shrowde himselfe. Which the rather I ghesse to be so, for that, from our arrivall there, untill it were night, that we were to depart, he did not budge a foot from the place where I was. When we were to goe our waies, taking up his Fardle very heavily, he let it fall againe to the ground, saying, Gods curse goe with thee, a little thing would make mee to leave thee here behinde mee.

Now, I must tell you by the way, that we had had some talke together before, and exchanged (as occasion offred) good store of words, taking account one of another of our Voyages, and what, and whence we were ; He did not deale truly with me, and I would not confesse my selfe to him ; For by mine owne lies, I knew those that he told me. And so wee were both payd in our owne coyne. All that I could sucke from him, was ; that he acquainted me with his wants.

Now finding the conjuncture good, and the distaste great, which he had taken at that heavy burthen which he bore at his backe ; but much more, that his purse was so

light, I began to conjecture with my selfe, that it might haply be a sute of cloathes : Whereupon, I askt him, what luggage was that he carried, which did give him so much trouble, and made him so weary ? Hee told me it was a sute of apparell. This suted well with my desires ; the induction (me thought) was good. Thereupon, I proceeded farther, and told him ; Sir, I could give you reasonable good counsell, if you would bee willing to accept of it. He intreated me to give it him, and that finding it to be such, he should be very thankefull unto me for it. CHAPTER VII

My advice then unto him, was ; That since he went laden with that, which as yet he had no great need of, nor would it much import him, if he had, that he should rid himselfe of it, and have recourse to that, which might be more necessary for him. Heere you carry a wardrop, or what else so ever it be, about you ; I would wish you to sell it, and put it in your purse ; for besides that it will weigh lesse, you shall make your profit of the money you shall receive for it.

The yong Youth discreetly replyde, (for your Toledanos have passing good wits :) This advice of yours I like well, and would follow it ; but I hold it impertinent for the present. And *Consejo sin remedio es cuerpo sin alma.* Proverb Counsell, without a cure, is a body, without a Soule. What doth it import me to sell it, if I want a Chapman to buy it ? I have no occasion to goe into any Town, either to truck for it, or to sell it, and no body will buy it of mee, that does not know me.

Then I demanded of him ; what pieces they were that hee had in his packe ? He told me, they were certaine cloathes for change, when he was minded to shift those others that hee had on his backe. I askt him of the colour, and whether it had beene much worne ? He answered mee, that it was a mingled colour, and reasonable good. This pleas'd me better and better, I could not dislike of it : Thereupon, I offred him present paiment, if the cloathes did fit me.

The Youth beganne to looke sadly upon me, as one that had beene strooke into a muze, and fell to eye me from top to toe; for all that I had on my back, was not worth so much thred as would serve to binde up a farthing-worth of Saffron, it was not worth one poore small Comin-seed, and yet I should have the face to offer him money for his cloathes.

This imagination was mine owne; and it may be, it entred into his conceit, that I was a little young thiefe, and that I would put some tricke or other upon him. For he stood in suspence, consulting with himselfe, whether hee were best to shew them unto me, or no? For hee knew not how to trust me. And my fashion was then such, that he could not hope, nor surmize, that any good thing should come from me. So much difference is there betweene good and bad cloathes, that it gives either a good or a badde presumption of a mans person, according to that old Adage; *Qual te hallo, tal te juzgo.* As I find you, so I take you. For where knowledge doth not informe, there the habit doth qualifie. But this Proverbe is oft checkt:

Proverb

Que debaxo de mala capa suele aver buen vividor. Under a thred-bare cloake, lyes many times much learning. And beggerly bottles oftentimes hold rich Wines. I did presently apprehend his thought, as if I had been within him; And that I might reduce him to a better opinion of me, and alter his conceit, I said unto him; My pretty little Youth, I would have you know, that I am as good a man as your selfe, and every way as well borne, though I have forborne till now to give you account what I am; but because thou mayst lay aside all feares and jealousies, I am now minded thou shalt have it. My native soyle is Burgos, there was I borne, and thence did I set forth, (as thou doest now,) reasonable well acoutred. I have already done that, which I now advise thee unto: I sold my cloathes, as having then no need of them, and with that money which I had for them, together with that which I brought from home, I will buy me other, when I shall come, where I have occasion to use them. And by being carefull in looking well

to my money, (hiding it in some secret place about me,) and by travelling upon the way in these totter'd ragges, (which I now have on) I secure my life, and passe freely to and fro.

A poore man lives secure from harme

For no man will set upon him that is poore. Hee lives safely, and dwels in places un-peopled, and dis-inhabited, without any feare at all of theeves that should come to robbe him, or murderers to assault him on the way, and take his life from him. If therefore you have any minde to it, sell mee what you have no need of, and doubt not my paiment, for I am well able to doe it. I am neere to Toledo, whither I am bound; I would gladly goe in a little handsomer, and not in this base and vile habit that I have now about mee. The Youth undid his Fardle, takes me out a Cloake, a payre of Breeches, a Cassocke, two Shirts, and a paire of Silke Stockins, all as fit for me, as if they had been made of purpose for me.

I agreed with him for a hundred *Royals*, nor were they worth any more; for although the cloathes were well us'd, and little worne, yet the cloth was none of the finest. I ript open the one side of my bundle, and tooke out thence as many *Quartes* as serv'd the turne; which gave him no small trouble, when he perceiv'd the basenesse of the money; for though it went against his stomake to beare any more burthens, yet he could by no meanes excuse it. But he comforted himselfe with this, that it was lighter then the other, and more use full upon all occasions. The bargaine ended, we shooke hands, and parted. He went to seeke his fortune, I know not whither. And I that night, though late, entred Toledo.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER VIII

How Guzman de Alfarache, cloathing himselfe like a Gallant in Toledo, makes love to certaine Gentle-women: He telleth how things past with them, and how there, and in Malagon they scorned him; He discourseth of youthfull jollity, and of the craft and subtilty of your Spanish women; which may serve for an Instruction, and warning to all yong men

Proverb

T is a common saying; *Que aunque vistan a la mona de seda, mona se queda.* An Ape, though he bee cladde in gold, will be an Ape still. And this is so infallibly true, that it admitteth no exception. A man may easily alter his Habit, but hardly change his evill conditions. Hee may intertaine and deceive folkes with his cloathes, though hee himselfe be starke naked, and stript of all goodnesse. I will presently turne Gallant, and as soone returne againe to my old trade; bee a Gentleman to day, to morrow a Porter. For, hee that knowes not how to live by the sweat of his browes, must quickly fall into poverty, as you shall see in the sequell of this Story.

Guzman comes to Toledo, and putshimselfe into handsome apparel

The first thing that I did the next morning, was the altring of my Doublet, my Shooes, and my Hat; I tooke off that Taffata, that was on the Cape of my Cloake, and put on other of another colour; I clapt new buttons upon my Cassock; I tooke off the sleeves that were of Cloth, and in their stead set to others, that were of Silke: so that with a little cost, I had quite altred the fashion of those cloathes I had lately bought; fearing lest for my sinnes-sake, or by some other mis-fortune, I might be taken

in some trap, and so come to pay both for this, and the last yeeres reckning. For if (by chance) this young Youths friends should send after him, and make inquiry for him, and should hap to light upon me, and finde his cloathes on my backe, they would presently suspect, that I had kill'd him to get his cloathes, and so demand their lost child of me, and drive me to give them an account, what was become of him.

When I had fitted my selfe to my minde, I walked up and downe the City some two dayes together, making inquiry, where, or in what place were any Companies of Souldiers, that were to goe upon service, but could not of any heare any certaine newes. Thus I went beating the ayre, as one that was idle, and had nothing else to doe.

And as I past by Socodover,[1] (which I crost but seldome, and that with feare : and if I went out of my lodging, it was against my will, and that late, not sleeping three nights in one place, lest, if any man should chance to know me, I might be apprehended and carried to prison :) it was my hap to see a Gentleman, mounted on a Mule, to crosse the way, going (as it should seeme) to the Court, so handsomely clad, and so well suted, that I did envy his gallantry. His breeches were of Murry Velvet, cut with some-what a long, but delicate fine cut, drawne out upon Cloth of Silver : His doublet of Cloth of Gold, upon which he had a Buffe Jerkin, laid on with a costly Milane-Lace, some three fingers broad. Hee had a brave Hat, answerable to the rest, imbroidered about the brimmes, and well set forth with it's Feather, and was not a little graced by the Hat-band, which was set thicke with Gold-Buttons, inammeled with blacke.

[1] Socodover, is the great Market-place in Toledo. Compounded of *Saca*, that is a place ; and *dequevir*, which signifies, great ; which put together, makes *Sacadquevir*, and by corruption *Socodover*. Diego de Urrea saith, it comes from *Sacud de vair*. A word compounded of *Scicun*, which is, a place ; and of the Verbe *Saca*, which is to draw ; and from *devair*, which signifieth all kind of foure-footed Beasts for burthen. So that *Socodover*, is as it were a place, where beasts are brought laden with victuals, and other provision, to sell in the open Market. Covarruvias.

This Gentleman rode *en cuerpo*,[1] in his Hose and Doublet. But in his Port-Manteau he had a Cloake, which (if I be not deceived) was of Rash, or else of fine Cloth, of like colour to his Hose, rounded about, with a broad Parchment Gold Lace, sutable to that of his Jerkin. These good cloathes of his set an edge on my appetite. And seeing I had not got my money by Thrashing, but came by it so easily, it began to laugh and tighie in my purse, it geered and it fleered, and (like a little yong Divell) went gingle, gingle, gingle.

When I saw my purse was set upon this merry pin, I could hold no longer for my heart, but brake presently with him, and told him in good earnest, If you have a minde to dance, I shall not sticke to pype unto you: And if you will not leade on merrily of your owne accord, I shall be as loth to keepe you any longer company. And therefore I would wish you to accomplish this my desire, satisfying mee herein, and that quickly, without any farther delay.

Heereupon I went forth-with to a Merchants shop, bought all things fitting, called a Taylor unto me, and caused him to cut out my cloathes, who made such good haste, that he was (as the phrase is) *ni oydo, ni visto*; neither heard, nor seene. It was finished in a trice, before any words were made of it, or any eye had seene it. For in three dayes, he brought it me home, and put it on my backe; being just the same with the other, and as like, as like could be, all save the Buffe Jerkin, which because I could not meet with a good one according to my minde, I made me one of Murrey Sattin, trimm'd with trensils of Gold. My Garters were of Straw-colour, fringed about with Gold Lace, and purled with Spangles. So that now I did scarce know my selfe; I was growne so fine on the sudden; all was in very good order, and my selfe not a little proud of it.

Now I had no more to doe, but to set a good face on the matter: and to say the truth, for a good face, when I

[1] A man is said to be *en Cuerpo*, when he goes without a Cloake, being in his bare Hose and Doublet.

CHAPTER VIII

Guzmans vaine and idle humour

was a Boy, there were few that had a better. For I was very well-favour'd, my eye quicke, and my countenance throughout very pleasing. When I saw what a gallant Souldier I was growne, I did proudly jet it about the streets of Toledo, in a very good Equipage, as if I had beene the sonne of some principall Man of note. I likewise entertained to attend on my person, a pretie handsome Page, and well clad; and I fell into acquaintance with one that was well skill'd in the fashions of that Countrie, and spake excellent language.

I conceited then with my selfe (seeing my selfe thus inthronized, and so well accoutred) that my Father was alive againe, and that I was restored to those prosperous times, wherein I was borne; I thought my selfe the happiest man in the world, and tooke such delight in my gay clothes, that a nights I was loth to put them off, and a daies, I left no street untrodden, to the end that all might see me; though I would not, that any should know me. I got me up betimes one Sunday morning, put on a proud and stately gate, and in all this my gallantrie stept me with a jolly presence into the Cathedrall Church, for to heare Masse, though (let me whisper it in your eare) I went thither more (I feare me) for ostentation, then devotion; not so much to heare, as to be seene. I walkt round about the Church some three or foure times at least; I visited the Chappels, (which were most resorted unto) till at last I came betweene the two Quires, where I staid: There I saw many Ladies and Gentlewomen, and a great many of Gallants. But I did strut and set forth my selfe, as if I had beene the only Cocke of the game, and all the rest Cravens; none of their combes nor feathers were so goodly (me thought) as mine owne. I did put them downe all for a brave suit of clothes. And like a bonny-Shepheard, made show of all the whole fleece, as one that was very willing, that they should take a generall survey both of my person, and Apparell, not debarring their eies of those lesser objects, as my girdle, garters, and shoo-ties, which were all *del Tudesco*, curious and delicate worke, right Flanders.

The Spaniard hath naturally a proud kinde of gate

I stretcht forth my necke, bore out my brest, stood stiffe upon my legs, advancing one while this, and then that other foot ; carrying my selfe in that vaine and idle fashion, that every one at last had found me out, and observing the strangenesse of my looks, my Mimick gestures, and often change of Postures, they began to jest and scoffe at my folly. But as long as they lookt upon me, I ne're lookt into that ; nor did I so much as once perceive, that my faults were the strings whereon their laughter plaid. But I rather thought with my selfe, that they did admire my curiositie, and my gallantrie.

And this is all, that offers it selfe to be spoken of concern ing the men. But a prettie accident hapned unto me amongst the women, not unworthy such fooles as my selfe ; and this it was : Two amongst the rest were present there at that time, one of the which (being borne in that Citie, and of extraordinarie beautie) fixed her eies upon my person, (or to speake more truly) upon my purse ; perswading her selfe, that I that had such good clothes, could not choose but have good store of money. But for the present, I tooke no notice of that, nor did I care to cast an eye towards her, because I had swallowed the others baite, that sate on the other side. Who having made (as children use to doe) some signes unto her with my finger, smild upon me, and cast a kinde of slie looke towards me. I thought that was enough, and that the goale was already gotten. I persevered in my ignorance, and she in her cunning carriage, till that going out of the Church, she went home to her house, and I after her, walking leisurely along. I ventur'd upon her, and falling into discourse with her, vented some of my fooleries : But she, (as if she had beene made of stone) answered me not a word, nor risented nothing that I said unto her : yet for all this she did not sticke now and then to turne her head aside towards me, and to discover her face unto me, which was the fire, that did burne me alive. At last we come to a street, neere unto the Solana of St. Cyprian,[1] where shee dwelt. And as

Guzman caught with a looke, and a smile

[1] *Solana, Corredor del Sol, Solarium.* Verb. *Solana,* Covarruvias.

CHAPTER VIII

she entred into her house, it seemed (stooping to goe in) that shee made me a kinde of reverence and courtsie with her head ; and me thought her eies laughed as it were upon me, and her countenance shewd it selfe very cheerefull. With this (for this time) I left her, and returned backe to my lodging the same way I came. But I had not gone many steps, but it was my hap to spie a young Wench that had taken up her standing at the corner of the street, who had wrapt her selfe up so close in her Mantle, that you could scarce perceive the eyes of her. This Wench had dogg'd me, and putting only forth those her two lesser fingers of her faire hand, with them and her head, she call'd and beckned me unto her. I came unto her, to know what she would be pleased to command me. Who made a long discourse unto me, telling me that she was servant to such a married Gentlewoman, a woman of very good fashion, and principall qualitie, to whom I was much obliged, and could not out of noblenesse, but thinke my selfe much bound unto her, for the extraordinarie love which she bare unto me.

The cunning of your Spanish women

And therefore, as well in regard of this her good affection towards my selfe, as also in respect of her owne condition, (being so great and so worthy) and the strength of her Alliance and Kindred, which were men of no meane power and estimation in those parts ; that I would be pleased to acquaint her where I lodged, because she had some earnest businesse to treat with me, and must needs speake with me, for it did much concerne her so to doe. I was so taken with this, that I had much adoe (as they say) to keepe my selfe from leaping out of mine owne skinne ; nor would I have chang'd this good fortune of mine, with the best that ever befell Alexander the Great : Soothing and flattering my selfe with this vaine conceit, that all the Ladies and Gentlewomen in the Towne were falne in love with me, and now began to strive who should injoy me first.

To this her message, I returned a very grave and demure answer, with a gratefull acknowledgement of this her offred

(though undeserved) favour, which when she shall be pleased to make me worthie thereof, I shall thinke my selfe not only the most graced, but the most fortunate, and happiest man in the world. In this conversation, by little and little, we draw neere to my Lodging. She tooke notice of it, and leave being taken each of other, I get me in to dinner, for it was more then time.

Now, for that I knew not what this Gentlewoman was, and had never seene her heretofore (to my knowledge) my longing was not so great to looke after her, as was my desire to see this other. I thought every houre a thousand yeere, till I might come to see her againe; Time (me thought) was too slow of wing, his Glasse did not runne fast enough, his Sithe did not sweepe away the loytring houres halfe so speedily, as I could have wished. Yet at last I hie me to the street where she dwelt, bestowing there more turnes, and circling more rounds about her house, then a Mill-horse, or a Mule that drawes in an *Anoria*;[1] yet at last, when it grew somewhat late, and the day shut up, she came forth (as by stealth) to talke with me from her window. Then did we enter discourse, and exchang'd many words; at last she told me, that I must needs that night come and sup with her. I commanded my servant to provide me a good fat Capon, a brace of Partridge, a baked Conie, a bottle of the Wine del Santo,[2] and as good bread as could

[1] *Anoria*, is an engine that goes with wheeles, to draw water out of a Well. Some would have it to come from *Anno*, a yeere. For as the Sunne passing thorow the twelve Signes, causeth the yeere, and brings it about anew: So that Wheele, when it is downe at the lowest, comes about againe. Some say it is compounded of *am*, *circum*; and *haurio*, taking up the water as it turnes about. Others, of ἀνὰ, *sursum* and ῥέω, *fluo*, because it causeth the water below, to come up. Others from the word *Annuere*, To incline. Others, from ἀναῤῥοῦμαι, *Restauro*, *restituo*, *renovo*. Because when they are emptie, they come to be fill'd afresh. Others of the word, ἀντλία, *Haustoria*, which signifieth *Anoria*, quasi *Antloria*. Of the Verbe *Antlo*, *antlas*, Diego de Urrea saies, it is an Arabicke word, of the Verbe *Nevare*, to goe round, making a noise, as *Anoria* doth. Padre Guadix, that it is called *Noria*, from *Naaura*, which is as much as a wheeling, or turning about. Covarruvias.

[2] *Vino del Santo*, a rich kinde of Wine, as famous about Toledo, as that of *Ayon-Nanteuil* in France.

be got for money, fruits and other the like things for the latter course, and that he should make haste, and bring them away with him.

After that the night was well in, thinking it was now high time, I went to the place appointed, where I was kindly received, and entertained with all the kindenesse and courtesie that could be devised. It was now a fit houre for supper, and therefore intreated her, that she would command the Table to be covered. But she finding out fresh matter to worke upon, and spending the time in new entertainements, spunne out the thred still longer and longer, adding one delay to another; I marvail'd a God what she meant by it; I knew not in the world what to make of it.

At last, whilest I was musing upon it, she puts me into a Labyrinth, beginning to tell me that she was a Virgin, her descent Noble, her condition and qualitie, of those of the best ranke, and that she had a brother, an unruly young fellow, ill govern'd, and worse-condition'd, subject to swaggering, and to quarrelling, a kinde of roaring-Boy; one that never came within doores, unlesse it were sometimes to his dinner or his supper, and all the rest both day and night, hee spent in play, and other youthfull pleasures.

Whilest we were in this deepe discourse, behold, one knocks aloud at the doore. Shee cries out, Ay me! what shall I doe? I am undone, I am undone. So much was she moved, so distractedly troubled with this feigned perturbation, so good a face did she set upon this falshood, and did dissemble this her passion so handsomely, that she might have therewith deceived a wiser, and better experienced man then my selfe. And though this Gentlewoman knew very well, both the end and the meanes, whereby all this businesse was to bee carried, yet did she play her part so well, that she seemed to be mightily afflicted, as one that knew not which way to turne her selfe. And as if then presently that remedie had occurr'd unto her, (as a thing suddenly thought upon) she desired me of all loves

to put my selfe for a while into a *Tinaja*,[1] that had no water in it, yet was it not without some droppings, and a kinde of sliminesse hanging about the sides of it, and that none of the cleanest. This earthen Vessell stood in the outward Court under the Porch. I got in as well as I could, as willing to doe what she would have me ; she claps a Lid over it, and when she had so done, she returnes to her *Estrado*, shee was scarce set, but her brother comes in ; who seeing such a great smoake in the house, said unto her ; Why how now sister, what meane you by this ? are you turn'd Gallant, and thinke to out-brave me with this smoake ? it is marvell you doe not let the raine drip in to drive mee hence. What have wee to supper ? so much smoake must promise much good cheere. It is not I trow, a great deale of fire (as they say) and a little roast.

And as he went thus talking along, he entred into the Kitchen ; where he had no sooner seen our provision, but he gets him out againe, saying ; Here's brave doings indeed ; it is newes to see this, Sister. Which of us two, I pray, is to be married this night ? How came this hither into the house, and when ? What curious banquet is this, or who the guests that are invited unto it ? Is this the confidence I have had of you ? Is this the honour which I maintaine ? and this the reputation, that you give to your Fathers house, and to me your unfortunate brother ? I must know the truth of this businesse, or else it is like to be a blacke night. She excused her selfe unto him, but how or which way, I cannot tell you ; for partly through feare, and partly because the *Tinaja* was covered, I could not well either heare or understand more then the noise which her words sent forth. And in this chollericke humour of his, being much offended with her, he willed her to sit downe at boord. And when they had supt, he in his owne person went downe with a Candle, and fell to searching of the house, and had made fast the doore, that opened

[1] *Tinaja*, a large wide Vessell of earth, as big as a Tunne. Antonius drawes it's Etymologie from *Tinea*. Alio nomine, *Dolium*. In Spaine they usually fill them with water, with Oyle, with Wine, or the like.

out into the street: And they two entring together into their privat chambers, remained there within, and I without in the *Tinaja*. All this while I was very attentive to whatsoever was said or done, and earnestly betooke my selfe to my devotions, insomuch, that there was not any one prayer that I had learned all my life-time, that I did not runne over and over, that God might blind his eyes, and that he might not see where I was.

And finding my selfe out of danger, lifting up the cover, I thrust out my head a little to see whether my Mistresse were comming, or that I could heare her either cough, or spet, whether any Cat were stirring about the house, or any thing else whatsoever. Every thing that mov'd, my minde still gave mee that it should be she. But seeing that she staid so long away, and that the house was wonderfull quiet, I leapt out of the belly of my *Tinaja*, like another Jonas out of the Whales, though not so cleane as I could wish.

But it was my good hap, that for feare of such mischances, which are wont to happen, especially to youngmen, I had reserved my better cloathes for the day, making use a nights of that old Sute, which I had bought before, so that the care I tooke was not great, and it did so much the lesse grieve me. I ranged round about the house, and went from lodging to lodging, till I came at last to her Chamber, where I beganne with my finger to scratch the doore, like a dogge; and did the like upon the floore, and all that she might heare me: but this deafe Adder was of that evill condition, that she had stopt her eares.

In this kinde of language the night wore away, and the day beganne to appeare: which when I perceived, inraged, afflicted, desperate, and ready to freeze for cold, opening the street doore, and pulling it after mee, I went forth (like a foole as I was) cursing and blaspheming, fretting and fuming,[1] and making crosses on the wall, with a purpose never to come there any more.

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Echando mantas, y no de lano.* Casting abroad Coverlets, but not of Wooll: *i.e.* using hayry and harsh words, not milde and soft words, like wooll.

THE SECOND BOOKE

Musing upon my mis-fortunes, I drew neere to mine owne lodging, finding not farre from thence a Cookes shop open, where I fill'd my belly with Pyes, such as are eaten by such Picaros and Rogues, as my selfe, which were to mee more savoury, then any other. And with them, that rage, and wrathfull choller descended downe into my stomake, which stucke before in my throat, and was ready to choke me. My lodging was neere at hand, I called to my servant, who (waiting there for me) opened the doore; I came in, put off my cloathes, and got me to bed. But the remembrance of the wrong that I had received, would not suffer me to sleepe, nor to take any rest. One while I condemn'd my selfe, another while my Mistresse, and by fits would lay the blame upon mine owne ill fortune.

And while I was debating these things with my selfe, it being now broad day, behold, one knockes at my Chamber doore, and it was the Maid that had dogg'd me the day before, and her Mistresse with her, who was no sooner come in, but she sets her selfe downe in a Chaire, close by my bed-side, and her servant that waited on her, sate upon the ground neere unto the doore. The Gentlewoman askt me a long Story of my life; Who I was? what my busines? and how long I stayd in Towne? But the Divell a word of truth, that she could get from my mouth. All that I told her, were arrant lyes; for I was made of nothing else. And thinking to deceive her, she caught me in the trap. I went satisfying of her demands, but fell short (I know not how) in that part of mine account, which concerned me most. For, whereas I should have said, That I was to reside there some certaine moneths. I told her that I past as a Traveller, and was shortly to be gone. She, that she might not lose the advantage of the Dice, and to shew what a poore gamester I was, in seeking after such transitorie sport, that was to last so little a while, (but a cast, and away) made sure account, if I would but set out her hand lively, to put a tricke upon mee. And thereupon, she presently began to pitch the Hay, wherewith she meant to catch the Conie.

This is an ordinary fashion in Spaine

CHAPTER VIII

Thus resolved, she carelessely, (or rather with a great deale of carelesse care) went discovering her bravery in her cloathes, which was neat and delicate, with rich abilliments of Gold, with other things under her gowne, which was of Naples Grogram, choyser Silke all Italy was not able to afford.

And taking out certaine Beads of Corall out of her pocket, she made shew of playing with them in her hand, tossing them to and fro; and within a little while after, she feigned that she mist a Relicke, which was fastened thereunto. She seemed to be much afflicted for the losse of it, saying, that it was her husbands. And therewithall she suddenly rose up, as if it did import her to goe backe againe presently to her owne house, that she might lose no time for the finding of it againe, if by chance she had there let it fall. And albeit I promised to give her such another, and perswaded her all that I could, and made her large offers, I could not winne her to stay any longer.

Away she went, yet passing her word unto me, that she would come again to visit me, and send her Maid backe againe unto mee, as soone as shee came home, to advise me, if she had found her lost Jewell. It made me very melancholly, and griev'd me much, that she should in this fashion go away from me; for that (as I told you before) shee was marvellous beautifull, exceeding gallant, and wonderfull discreet. I had a great minde to sleepe, and settled my selfe to take some rest, but I could not continue it for above two houres. I had too many cares in my head to take any ease, and therefore I arose, that I might thinke the better of them, when I was up.

By that time I had made my selfe ready, dinner came in; and while I was yet sitting at the table, her Maid entred the roome. Who (being a witty Wench as she was) intertain'd me till dinner was ended. And then she told me, that she was once more come back againe to see, whether her Mistris, playing there with her *Rosario* in her hand, had by chance let fall that piece? Wee were all downe upon our knees, to see if we could have the good lucke

to finde it; but it could not be found, because it was never lost.

When we had given over looking, I complemented with her, and told her, that I did not grieve so much for the worth of the thing it selfe, as for her sake, whose it was.

Then did she figure forth unto me the bignesse, the proportion, and the true fashion of it, obliging mee with good words, to buy her such another; promising, that her Mistresse should not fayle to be with me the next day following betimes, making some faire excuse (the better to colour the businesse,) to goe on Pilgrimage to our Ladyes Shrine, or some other the like Visit.

Many love Matches are made in Spaine, under these holy pretences

Upon this I went along with her to the Gold-smithes, and bought her a dainty fine little golden booke, curiously wrought, which her Maid had made choyse of; and it may be she had her direction from her Mistresse, as having had her sight of this pretty toy but lately before. Howsoever I am sure they went cleane away with it, for I could never after see either Mistresse, or Maid.

Now was it about three in the afternoone, and I had not yet digested the bread that lay in my stomake; I was ready to dye out of a longing desire that I had to know the occasion, and to search out the true reason of the last nights passage, and whether it were a matter of earnest, or a tricke put upon mee? And so putting this affront out of minde, as if there had never beene any such matter, I returned to my former walke: Where I found my Mistresse looking very heavily on the matter, her countenance was sad and melancholy; and making shew, as if she had stayd there for me, she beckned unto mee with her hand to come unto her, putting her fore-finger upon her mouth, and casting her eye behinde her, (as if she were afrayd lest some body should watch her,) she drew neere unto the doore, and whispered softly unto mee, that I should goe gently on a-fore to the great Church, and so I did. She takes her Mantle, and hastens after me, meeting both, as it were at one instant betweene the two Quires; and she passing quite through them, went

directly out of the Church, into the Calle de la Chapineria,[1] the street where all your womens *Chapines* are sold; and smiling upon me, and intising mee unto her, with a lovely cast of her eye, she seemed to wish me to follow her. I made after her; she entred into a Merchants shop, in the Alcana,[2] and I with her. There she gave me satisfaction, vowing with a thousand oathes, that it was no fault of hers, and that she had no hand in that businesse. Shee fill'd my head with this winde: I beleeved her well-composed lyes, shee promised this next night to make me amends; and though she were sure to lose her life, she would not spare it, to give me content. She made me so plyable, that shee might now worke me like Waxe. She bought some things, which came to about some hundred and fifty *Royals*, and when she was to pay for it, shee said unto the Mercer; What shall I pay you weekely till this debt be out? Hee answered, Mistris, see Ware, see Money. I doe not use to part with my Wares at this price, nor doe I sell upon trust. If you deliver me my money, you may carry away what you have bought; if not, I must intreat you to pardon me. CHAPTER VIII

Then I told him, Sir, This Gentle-woman is disposed to jest with you, for she has money sufficient to satisfie for a greater matter then this. I am her Purse-bearer, and the Steward of her house. So taking some Crownes out of my pocket, for to shew my greatnesse the more, I freed my selfe from basenesse, and her from her debt: Apprehending then at that instant, that this was but a stratagem of hers, to be paid before-hand, and that shee might not be mockt withall, as it often befalleth many women: nor did I repent

[1] They have an old Ta'e in Spaine; That the men, to keepe their wives from gadding abroad, did persuade them to use *Chapines*, that they might seeme as tall and handsome as the men, and they made them of a very heavy kinde of wood. They made use of this invention of their Husbands, but made them at first hollow within, and afterwards of Corke, to lighten the loade, and that they might be able to walke more nimbly. Covarruvias, verb. *Chapin.*

[2] Alcana: A knowne street in Toledo, where all your Mercers dwell. Of the Hebrew word *Chana*, to buy. Guadix says it is an Arabicke word, of *alquina*, which signifies Gaine. Covarruvias.

mee of what I had done; it seeming unto me, that by my faire proceeding, I had bound her unto me. Nor would I have given my two imploiments of that one day, in the pursuite of these two Dames, for all the wealth of Mexico, and Peru. So I askt her, whether she would keepe true touch with me or no? And whether I might take sure hold of her promise? And at what houre I should come? She assur'd me that I might, and for the houre, she would not faile mee at ten in the night. She went home to her house, and I to intertaine the time abroad; Thinking with my selfe, that I had seazed on two preyes at one flight, and tooke two Troutes at one stroke.

At the houre appointed, I put on my old disguise, and got mee to the Mill againe. I gave the signe agreed upon betweene us, which was, to strike certain strokes, with a stone underneath her window. But it was all one, as if I had bestow'd those blowes upon the Bridge of Alcantara.[1]

I conceived with my selfe, that the houre was not yet come, or that it was little more then ten of the clocke, which made mee dance attendance a little longer. And so houre after houre, I stayd waiting there, till it was twelve of the night, now and then making the wonted signes.

But what should a man spend his time in talking to Saint Juan de los Reyes, being it is a *Statua* of Stone? It was but lost labour, a wearying out of my selfe in vaine, and a meere mockery. For he, whom shee termed her brother, was her Gallant, and her Sweet-hart: and did maintaine themselves by these kinde of cheating tricks, and consorted both together in all that they did.

They were of Cordova,[2] proper in their persons, and well accommodated; and amongst other yong Thrushes, that they had brought into the Net, was a young Scrivener, but newly married, who being whetted on by this Gentlewoman, and tolled on by such traines as she had cunningly

[1] Alcantara: A Bridge so called in Toledo. In the year 1258, a great part of it was carried away with a Flood; but the yeere following, it was repaired and new built.

[2] Cordova, is a Noble and famous Citie in Andaluzia.

laid for him, had given her certaine Jewels; and as she dealt with me, so did she lead him along with delayes, making him to wait upon her pleasure, putting him to fine after fine to purchase his desire. But when he found all was coozenage and Roguery, he resolved to be revenged on her.

That night I was quite tyred out with a tedious expectation, (as you have already heard.) And when I was about to goe my way, lo, I might discerne a great troope of people making towards mee, and supposing it to bee the Justice, I got me a little aside. At last I perceived, that they knockt at that doore; I returned backe, drawing neerer and neerer, a little and a little, to see what all this company did seeke for. And one of the *Alguazils* (telling them within who they were) caused the doore to bee opened. When they were all gone in, I got mee to the doore, that I might the better understand how all things passed. The *Alguazil* searched all the house over and over, but could not finde that he came for. I was about to call unto them, to looke into the *Tinaja*, and to have betooke me to my heeles when I had done. But the Scrivener presently tooke that taske upon him, and saved me a labour, and had a care that no corner should be left unsearcht.

But, as these things cannot be carried so close, but that they will soone be brought to light, if they be well followed, one by chance lighted upon a single hand Cuffe that lay upon the ground, which at the time of the hiding of her brothers clothes, was let fall and left behinde out of haste; and because this was a businesse undertaken for a friend, and every one was willing to doe his best, one of the *Alguazils* said, This Cuffe must have a Master, who ever it bee.

The Gentlewoman would faine have salv'd up this matter: but having prickt the Hare, these Hounds began to take a little more paines, and to hunt with more metall, in hope to have their game. And one of the *Alguazils*, seeing a great Coffer there, which (as he thought) might very well containe a man, commanded it to be opened:

where they found my Gallant. Whereupon, they were both will'd to put on their cloathes, and to make themselves readie; which done, they were both for companie carried to prison together. I was both contented therewith and ashamed. Contented, that it was my good hap not to be found there; and ashamed that she had gull'd me, and made a foole of me. All the remainder of that night, I could not sleepe one winke, for, thinking partly on this, and partly on that other Gentlewoman, upon whom, I thought to make my selfe whole, I did conceit with my selfe, that she was a woman of another kinde of qualitie, and of a differing fashion from the former.

All that day I staid waiting for her, but she did not so much as send me any message by her maid, nor did I know where she liv'd, nor what she was. You see here how well I imploi'd my paines, and my Purse upon these two, and whether it had not beene better for me to have laid out my money in the buying of some fiftie young Lambes of a yeere old. I was now growne desperate, and for my greater comfort amidst these my troubles, at night when I came to my lodging, I met with an *Alguazil* there, a stranger, making inquirie for I know not what person. Now by this time you may imagine, in what poore case I tooke my selfe to be, and how the world was like to goe with me. I will'd my servant to tell him, that if he had any thing to say to me, he should be sure to finde me there the next morning.

In the meane-while I walked out by the Gate del Cambron,[1] where musing, and walking, I continued almost till it was day, framing Discourses to my selfe, what, or whom it should be, that this *Alguazil* sought for. But when the morning was come, I thought it a safe houre to goe home, with purpose to change both my apparell and my Lodging.

But by this time, my care was secur'd; for I was not he that he looked for, as I afterwards understood. I

[1] A gate so called in Toledo, because the entrance thereinto, is hard and difficult, it is an Arabicke word, and signifies a thorny place, and full of bushes. Covarruvias.

CHAPTER VIII

Guzman leaves Toledo

went forth to the Place of Socodover, where I heard two Mules cri'd for to goe for Almagro ;[1] I was slower in the hearing, then the agreeing for them, or in my departing from Toledo. For every thing there me thought smelt of Broome, and the soles of old shooes. That night I reached to Orgaz,[2] the next to Malagon. But being not able, out of the feare I had taken those nights before, to take any rest, I came thither so drowzy, and so sleepy, that I was not able to hold up my head : But another new occasion did awaken me, and made me to rowze up my spirits ; which was ; That as soone as I was entred into my Lodging, there came to take charge of my clothes, and such other things as I brought in with me, a young Wench, seeming to be something more then a servant, and yet some-what lesse then a daughter ; She had a good face of her owne, a hansome feature, a pleasant behaviour, and had both wit and tongue at will. Which sort of creatures, (to draw both custome and credit to such kinde of houses) your honest Inne-holders will be sure to lay wait for, and seldome or never shall you see them unprovided of such pretty Commodities to welcome, and cheere up their Guests. I talkt to her, and she answered mee ; I could not spurre her that question, whereunto she did not kicke me an answer. One discourse drew on another, and we continued our conversation so farre forth, that she consented unto me, and had peremptorily given me her promise, that she would come and passe away the time with me, when her Master and Mistresse were gone to bed and asleepe. She covered the boord ; I gave her the brawne of the Capon, I dranke a health to her, and shee did pledge me ; I would have held her fast by the arme ; she flies off ; I seeking to catch hold of her, and she to get away from me : reaching

A pleasant jest, that past betwixt Guzman and a pretie Wench at the Inne in Malagon

[1] Almagro, a principall Towne belonging to the Order de Calatrava. Padre Guadix would have it come from *Alma-agua*, and of *agro*. Because those waters there-abouts have a sowre taste, though they be wholsome. Others from the colour of the soyle, which is red. *Vide* Covarruvias, verb. *Almagre*.

[2] A Towne in the Kingdome of Toledo, intitled with a Condeship. *Tierra umbrosa*.

at her, I fell downe upon th'one side to the ground. The Chaire was of Wood, and had some turn'd pieces in it rib-wise, it tooke me just athwart the midst of my body, whereby I received a shrewd blow. And it was a faire gift of God, that it was not farre worse; for if the Dagger that I had at my backe, had by chance falne out of the sheathe, and pitcht with the Pommell on the ground, and the point have beene upward, and had lighted betweene one of those barres or ribbs in the Chaire, a thousand pound to a pennie, but that I had beene slaine out-right in the place; and so there being an end of me, my Creditours had beene paid. When I was up, and all was well, I put the question againe unto her, whether I should depend upon her comming? She told me I should see, whether she meant to faile me or no? Uttering some other idle foolish speeches, and so went her waies.

You have heard already how ill I past those nights before, which made me now so heavy-headed, that it was impossible, that I should any longer beare up, and abstaine from sleeping. But I was desirous to rise betimes, whether I slept or no. And therefore I will'd my servants, that they should get them straw and Barley, so much as our Mules were to be allowed the next morning, and that they should bring it, and put it in the chamber where I lay. Which being done, having set it neere unto the doore, they pull'd it after them, and leaving it unshut, they went to bed. And albeit sleep would faine have seazed upon me, yet my desire kept me waking; but not being able to hold out any longer, I was forced to yeeld my selfe under the arrest of Morpheus his Mace, in whose silken bands I was fast, though softly bound.

About mid-night a little she-Asse had slipt her halter in the Stable, and got loose (if she were not left loose before, as I verily perswade my selfe it was mine Hosts, and went about the house to seeke her Provant;) This Asse came to my lodging, and having smelt out the Barley, the little foole thrust in her head, thinking to have met with a good

mouth-full, and in pressing to come where the Provender was in the Sieve, she wagged, and wagg'd, this way, and that way, and striving to get in, the doore began to creake, I that was mindfull of the businesse, a little thing would suffice to revive my remembrance: And now I was fully perswaded, that I had the Bulls sure enough in the Place, and that they could by no meanes get from me. And because I was all this while very sleepie, and scarce halfe awake, I imagined with my selfe, that she could not finde the way to the bed, whereupon I raised my selfe, and sitting up in my bed, I call'd her unto me. When the Asse heard my voice, she was afraid, and stood still, save only that she did put one of her fore-feet in the fraile wherein the straw was. I thinking that it was the Wench, and that she had stumbled by chance upon it, leapt out of my bed, and said unto her, Come hither, my Love, come to bed, give me thy hand. And because she should reach me, I stretcht out my body at large unto her, and lifting up my legge, I hit her with my knee on the snout; with that shee lifted up her head, and smote me such a blow with hers on the noddle, that she almost set me on my breech; so much was I astonied therewith. And when she had done, she fled away from me, as fast as her legges would give her leave. For if she had staid, I should have had much adoe (considering the paine I was in) to have forborne to thrust my Dagger up to the hilts in her guttes.

I bled mainly, both at mouth and nose; and cursing Love, and all his cunning tricks to the pit of hell; I knew, that all this hapned deservedly unto me; because, being a wilde simple Ladde as I was, I was so easie of beliefe. But I quickly made fast my doore, and got me to bed.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER IX

How Guzman de Alfarache lists himselfe for a Soldier. Hee tclleth, whence that ill phrase grew, *En Malagon, en cada casa un ladron; y en lo del Alcalde, hijo y padre.* In Malagon, every house a thiefe; And in that of the Alcalde two: The father and the sonne. How in a short time, through ill government, all Guzmans money is gone; How to his griefe he is forced to serve a Captaine. Some lessons are given to young men. To these are added the faults of bad Ministers in matters of war-fare

S if Love had not beene a desire of Immortalitie, bred in an Idle minde; without any beginning of Reason, without any subjection to Law, which is entertained by the Will; but with it, cannot be put off; easie in it's entrance to the heart, but hard to be thrust out againe; I began to sweare, that I would never more follow his colours, nor be of his Company. But I was asleepe when I made this protestation, and knew not what I said. My sleepinesse was so great then at that time, that all my paine could not keepe me waking.

Which drowzinesse of mine was the cause, that I could not rise so early as I thought, but kept my bed till nine of the clocke that morning. At which houre comes me in this my Fiddle-faddle of the Inne, to give me satisfaction, vowing and swearing unto me, that she lay within her Master and Mistris, and that they had shut her up, and kept the key themselves, that she could by no meanes get forth: Though for mine owne part, I did verily beleeve,

that she did purposely play the Wag with me, and had never any such meaning, but did lie in all that she said. Whereupon I told her; O friend Luçia, your love hath done me a great deale of hurt: it began in the Chaire, and ended in the saddle. I shall looke hereafter a little better to your water. Take me with that fault againe, and I will give you leave to hange me. Goe about your businesse, goe, I have no more to say to you. Make haste, and bring in break-fast, for I will presently be gone. So she rosted us out of hand a brace of Partridge, served in with a slice or two of Bacon, which served both for our breake-fast, and our dinner, because the day was farre spent, and our journey but short.

Well, I was now upon going, my Mules were ready, and staid for my comming. The Mule[1] that I rode on, was an ill-condition'd Jade, and somewhat skittish. When I was readie to put foot in the stirrop, I got me up upon a bench, thinking from thence to get with the greater ease into my Saddle; but by her going backe, she seemed to tell me, that I should not doe it so easily as I thought; or else her meaning was, that I should quickly get mee thence, or else shee would set mee going with a witnesse. And because she could not speake my language, that she might make me understand her by signes, jerking out her hinder legges, she flings me out her heeles, and doubling her fyles, with two kicks, that she made at me, she threw mee a good wayes from her: But she did me no harme, for I recovered my selfe by and by, and got up upon my legges. After this, I was a little more wary, and tooke better heed. And with a loud voice I beganne to cry out: There is not any female (I thinke) in this Inne, even to the very Mules, which hath not her jadish tricks.

Well, I was seated in my Saddle, and my Mule was quiet, and being upon the way, (seeing what mis-fortunes I had suffered) I acquainted my servants what had hapned unto

[1] The Spanish word is, *Mohina*. To wit, a Mule that is begotten of an Horse, and a she Asse, commonly with a blacke Muzzle, a swelling nostrill, and having jadish tricks.

me, with the Asse that came into my Chamber. They laught exceedingly, as if they would have burst their hearts, and the more, at my weake and childish understanding, that I would give credit to a Wench in an Inne, who are never good, but at their first comming, and ever after prove arrant Jades, that a man can not tell how to trust to them.

We had now gone two long Leagues, and the Boy that went a-foote by us to looke unto our Mules, would needs drinke. I call'd, Bring hither the Bottle,[1] give me the Bottle : but no Bottle appeares ; for wee had left it behinde us. Peradventure mine Hostesse (said the Boy) hath seazed upon it, and laid it aside in waggery, because we might ride the lighter, or be paid for her care in keeping it safe for us.

Nay (quoth my Page) I rather beleeve, that they amongst them have stolne it from us, for to adde more fame to this towne, that they may not lose that good name they have gotten.

Then was I very desirous to know, how this bad report came first to bee raised, and whence it grew. And because they that use to carry Merchandize from place to place, and travell often on the way, and now and then heare divers men discourse of such things as these ; I thought with my selfe, I were best to aske the reason of it of our Foot-man, imagining he (if any man) could best informe us of it.

Thereupon I call'd unto him, and said ; Friend Andres ; Since thou hast beene a piece of a Scholler, a Wane-man, and now a *Moço de Mulas*, one that Lackey'st along with Mules, and lookest unto them, I prethee tell mee (if happely thou hast heard of it) how this Towne came to have this ill name, and wherefore it is commonly said as a by-word, or by way of a Proverbe in every mans mouth : *En Malagon*,

A Spanish Proverbe

[1] The Spanish word is, *Bota:* quasi *imbuta*, of the Latine word, *imbuo*, *de in* and *Bibo*. It is made of a Goats-skinne, the mouth of it being Horne, with a stopple to it, and the sides strongly sowne and Rozend within, that it may not leake. Your Travellers on the way never goe without one, by reason the countrey is so hot, which causeth much thirst.

en cada casa, ay un Ladron : y en la del Alcalde hijo y padre. CHAPTER IX
Every house in Malagon hath a thiefe of his owne : And in that of the Alcalde, there are twaine ; the father, and the Sonne, both knaves in graine.

The Muleter made answere, saying, Sir, your Worship askes me of a thing, which I have been told of divers times, and that divers wayes, every one following his owne opinion : Which if I should recount them all unto you, the way is too short, and the Story too long, and the desire that I have to drink, beyond them both. For I am so dry, that I am scarce able to speake a word. But be it as it may bee, I will doe my best to satisfie your longing. Laying that therefore aside, which hath no colour nor shadow of truth, and conforming my selfe according to the opinion of some, of whom I have heard it ; upon whose judgement, I ground mine, as more agreeable unto reason : For in that, for which we have no naturall reason, nor by tradition left unto us in writing, when time shal have buried these things, a good and a sound judgment must be the Law, which we must obey, and where-unto wee ought to conforme our selves. And so this had it's beginning, (which is now long since, time out of minde) in this manner, as I shall now deliver unto you.

The story concerning the occasion of this proverbe, *En Malagon,* etc.

In the yeere of our Lord, 1236, King Don Fernando, sur-named the Holy, raigning in Castilla, and Leon, who gained Sevill, the second yeere after the death of King Don Alfonso his father, stayd one day at dinner in Benavente,[1] where he received newes, that the Christians had entred the Citie of Cordova ; and had made themselves Masters of the Towers and Castles belonging to the Suburbs, which they call *Axarquia*,[2] together with that gate and the wall. And for that the Moores were many, and the Christians few, they were driven to great necessities for want of succour.

[1] Benavente, is a towne in the Kingdome of Leon. There is a Land of that name.

[2] *Axarquia*, the suburbs adjoyning to Cordova. Padre Guadix says, it is so called, because it stands towards the East which is termed in the Arabick tongue, *Xarquia.*

The like advice was dispatcht by Post, to Don Alvar Perez de Castro, who was in Martos,[1] and to Don Ordonno Alvarez, principall Gentlemen of Castile, men of great power and strength, and to many other persons, to give them their best aide and assistance. Every one of these, that had notice of it, presently raised Forces, and hasted thither with all the speed they could; the King likewise marched forward on his way, without any delay, or protraction at all; albeit, that this newes was brought unto him, on the 28. of January, and that the season was very bad, and painefull to travell, by reason of the great Snowes, and the extreme coldnesse of the weather. But nothing could hinder him from this his designe, for hee hasted away to their succour, leaving order that the rest of his Army should follow him, carrying no more along with him to attend his person, then a hundred Gentlemen of good quality.

The King had likewise given order to all Cities, Townes, and other places, that were able to afford ayde, to send their Souldiers to those Frontiers and Borders, whither he himselfe was to goe: Great store of raine fell, the Rivers and other Foords, by which they were to passe, were so mightily risen, that his men were not able to goe forward.

There met together at that time in Malagon a great multitude of Souldiers sent from divers and sundry parts, beeing in number so many, that though that place were very well peopled, and of great receipt, being one of the best Townes in all that quarter; yet in every house there was lodged one Souldier at the least; and in some, two, or three.

The Alcalde did lodge one of the Captaines of a Company, and a sonne of his, that he brought along with him, and was his *Alferez*.[2] Their provision grew short, the wayes

[1] Martos, a famous towne in Andaluzia, antiently called Tucci, and Augusta Gemella. Covarruvias.

[2] *Alferez*, is he to whom the Captaine recommends his Ensigne, that he may gather his Company together, and bring them all to their *rendez-vous*. The Captaine should cary the Ancient. But by reason of his divers imployments, he substitutes one in his place, whom they call *Alferez*, who is

bad, there was no comming to Market ; so that for want of reliefe, every one suffered necessitie, every one was put to his shifts, and not a man amongst them, but sought to maintaine and preserve his life by filching and stealing, robbing heere and there ; whence, or from whom, it made no matter, all was one to them : Life was sweet : Let others hang and starve ; so as they had where-withall, all was well.

A conceited Clowne of that very Place, a shrewd witty fellow for a plaine Husband-man, departed thence, to goe to Toledo : And meeting in Orgaz with a brave troope of Gentlemen, they demanded of him, whence he was ? Hee answered ; Of Malagon. They further askt him, What's the newes there ? He told them ; Gentlemen, all the newes in Malagon, is ; In every house, a thiefe ; and in the Alcaldes, two ; the sonne, and the father.

And this was the true Originall of that false report, which men put upon that Towne, as not knowing any other certaine ground, whence this brute should be raised ; and is now, in these our times, a notorious wrong done unto them, as being a fault whereof they are not guilty, and yet are most unjustly charged therewith. For in all this way, that we have come and gone, or whither so ever else it shall be your hap to travell, I doubt me, you will hardly finde either better intertainment (I meane, for Innes) or more civill and better behav'd people (taking every man according to his condition and breeding,) then are in this Towne. Yet, Sir, withall, I could likewise tell you, of many notable thefts, and very famous ones, that have been committed in Malagon.

Whilst we were thus discoursing on the way to passe away the time, and make our journey seeme the easier, I lighted on a Traveller, of whom I learn'd, That in Almagro, I should meet with a Company of Souldiers. Whereof having throughly inform'd my selfe, and well assured of

subordinate unto him and stirs not without his direction. And all that are under that Ensine are to follow his Colours. And therefore they have this varietie of names, as *Signiferos*, *Vexiliferos*, *Primipilarios*, *duces*, etc. Covarruvias pag. 44.

THE SECOND BOOKE

their being there, I was wonderfull glad of it; for this was the onely thing that I did desire, and seeke after for to cast off all care, and to give a farewell to all my former troubles.

Guzman comes to Almagro

In my comming into the Towne, I was no sooner entred, but I might perceive in the High-street a Banner, hanging out at a Window; I past along by it, and went to lodge at one of the Innes there in the Market-place, where I supt betimes, and got me quickly to bed, that I might recover some of my lost sleepes, and repaire the wrongs of so many ill-passed nights, as I had lately indured.

Mine Host, and those his Guests that he had in the house, seeing me come in so well accommodated, and so well waited on, made inquirie of my servants, who I was. And they, (as not knowing any thing, but what they heard from my selfe) told them; That my name was Don Juan de Guzman: Sonne to a principall Gentleman of the house of Toral. On the morning very early, my Page brought me my cloathes; I put them on, setting my selfe forth in all my bravest gallantry, and after that I had beene abroad and heard Masse, I went to visit the Captaine, telling him, that I was come in search of him, to tender my service unto him. He receiv'd me with a great deale of courtesie, and with a cheerefull looke; which was no more than my respect unto him might challenge; besides, the good fashion, that I came to him in, and the moneys, which I brought along with mee in my purse, (which were little lesse then a thousand *Royals*) might merit some respect; for the rest of the birds were flowne, and like Noahs Crow, were never to returne againe; they were spent and gone in gay cloathes, in courting of Wenches, and in good-fellowship upon the way. He admitted me into his owne Squadron, made me sit and eate with him at his owne Table, using me evermore with much love and kindnesse.

Guzman takes on him a feigned name

Guzman entertained by the Captaine for a Souldier, and in what he did exercise himselfe

In requitall whereof, I began to *Regalar*[1] him, and to

[1] *Regalar:* Is to afford a man all the delights and dainties that are to bee had for love, or money. The word is derived *à Rege*: That is, so much that a King can not desire more.

serve him; presenting him still with one thing or other, inlarging my hand like a Prince, as if I had for every Tuesday a new payre of eares;[1] or were sure to meet (wheresoever I came) with another Grocer, another River, and another Grove of Trees, wherein to hide my selfe. So fast did I spend my money without feare or wit, threw it away with so prodigall a hand, taking ames-Ace against seven, and deux-Ace, against eleven; I did so often visit the Drum-head, that at last, getting little, and losing much, I was almost quite blowne up. CHAPTER IX

In these kinde of intertainments did I consume my selfe, and my time, till we were to march away: And for to fill up the Company, we were all of us put into a Church, whence we came forth one by one, and when they came to call me, the Pay-Master lookt upon me, in whose eye I seemed somewhat too yong, insomuch that he durst not inroll me amongst the rest, according to the instructions that were given him. Whereat I grew exceeding angry, and was so inflamed with choller, that I had much adoe to containe my selfe, but was ready to breake forth into passion, and to have lasht out into some liberty of language, whereof afterwards I might have repented myselfe; because it might have forced me to utter that, which would not have well beseemed me, nor indeed had beene lawfull for mee to vent, considering the time, and place.

Guzman passeth not for a Souldier, as being under age

O what good cloathes can doe! I knew the time, when men would kicke me, and cuffe me about the eares, and could be content to hang my head in my bosome, hold my peace, and take all patiently. But now I made reckning, as if all heaven had layne at the stake, of that which to speake of, was not worth a straw, waxing mad with anger. Then I began to know by mine owne experience, that no Wine can make a man so drunke, as the first fit of anger. And it much more blindeth the understanding, not leaving it any the least light of reason. And if that heat should not presently passe away, I know not what fiercenesse or brutishnesse may be compared to this furie

Good cloathes put a man in heart

Anger, and it's evil effects

[1] A Spanish Proverb.

of ours. I did quickly quench this flame, and my Hat being come againe to his colour, and my choller pacifi'd, I said unto him, Sir, you that are Pay-Master, my yeeres (I confesse) are few, but my courage as great as any mans. It is the heart that commands, and this arme knowes how to brandish a blade, there is bloud and marrow enough in it, for to undertake great matters.

Hee answered mee very gravely and wisely, It may bee so, Sir, and I doe verily beleeve it, and with much more willingnesse, then your selfe can speake it; but the Order that I have given me in charge is thus and thus, wherein if I should exceed my Commission, my purse must soundly pay for it. No body shall smart for it, but my selfe. I knew not what to replie to so faire an Answer, though the bloud that boyled in my brest, and the colour that shew'd it selfe in my cheekes, could not so easily be alaid, till my choller were a little better settled. My captaine was very sensible of this affront of mine, and tooke it as tenderly as if the case had beene his owne.

For being quitted of my place, he was perswaded I should then presently forsake his Companie. And taking part with me against the Pay-Master, hee was somewhat round with him, insomuch, that neither of them having the patience to beare one with another, they grew to high words, and much adoe there was.

This storme was laid, the Sea had done roaring, their strife was ended, and the Company was fully made up. The Captaine came to visit me at my lodging; telling me in brave and gallant tearmes, how much this griefe of mine did trouble him, and how sorrie he was for my heavinesse; and with honourable both words and promises, he gave me that good satisfaction, that I rested very well contented.

Eloquence prevaileth much

Such force hath Eloquence, that as horses suffer themselves to be ruled with good Bridles and bitts; so the fierce rage, and chollericke humours of men, are bridled and governed by mannerly reasons, and are brought to winde and turne their head-strong wils, changing their violent resolutions, being easily reduced in the end to a settled

pace, and are well content to goe forward faire and softly on their way.

Whereupon, albeit I was resolved to leave him, yet notwithstanding his words were so powerfull with me, that he stopt me in my course, and suddenly tooke me up, when I was in the heat and height of my Carreere. Wee continued in this kinde of conversation a pretie while, and a great deale of good talke we had together; And if it be not dangerous to speake the truth, (for feare of being called in question) we did murmure and mutine at the small reckning, and slight acknowledgement of Soldiers, and men of true worth and valour, and the base esteeme that was made of militarie discipline and profession of Armes; then did we raile at the slight remuneration of Services, and with how little truth some Ministers did informe the State thereof, for their owne proper ends: How things are quite out of order, and utterly miscarrie, because businesses are not well carried, and are not in a course, that should direct them to a good end, every man tending his particular profit, preferring private, before publike good.

A digression against bad Ministers, touching Martiall men

And though such a one know, that another man, with a very good zeale and love to his Countrie, doth governe his Armie well, and lead them on bravely, he wrests all his good services to the worst sence, and seekes to overthrow his well-deserved reputation, laying Nets to intrap him, that he may be the only Commander, joyning with his enemies, and falling crosse with his friends, that he may bring the dance before his owne doore, and raise himselfe by the others ruine, proposing to himselfe, by this preposterous dealing, to put himselfe into a better fortune.

And to effect this his unruly desire, he will seeke out a thousand fetches, and as many winding Pipes will he lay before hand, to bring the water to his owne Conduict. He would make himselfe like unto the highest, and place his throne in the North, and suffer no man to sit by him, or to be his equall. Such men as these exercise their

voice only in the service of the King, not sticking to crie out, This and this will make much for his Majesties service ; but their workes, and their actions, are directed to their owne good. Like unto that day-labourer, who lifts up his armes to heaven, but strikes his Mattocke into the ground. These make warres at their pleasure, breake Leagues when they list, failing in their Obligation, ruining the Common-wealth, robbing men of their Estates, and in the end damning their owne soules.

How many errors have beene committed ? How many brave Commanders lost ? how many Armies utterly overthrowne ? the fault whereof is laid upon him, that doth least deserve the blame. And the sole cause of this is, because these men will forsooth have it so, that this ill shall make for their good. For if things should succeed well, why then it should goe ill with them.

This is the common course now adaies, and this makes all out of joynt,[1] and causes such confusion in the world. Will you see (Sir) to what poore passe our ill fortune hath brought us, that those brave cloathes, gallant Feathers, and glorious colours ; things that put life and spirit into a Soldiers heart, to make him venture couragiously upon all difficulties, to hew out his way with his Sword, and to undertake any brave and noble enterprize, in seeing us thus adorned, we are disgraced in Spaine, our Habit scorned, and our selves flouted at ? Thinking forsooth that we must walke the streets in blacke, like a companie of Soliciters, or like some Servitour, or poore Scholler, that waites upon another, and hath not a Gowne to his backe to hide his pittifull raggs, or to cover our totterd cloathes, (as your Students use to doe) with blacke foot-cloathes, that the old rotten Saddle underneath may not be seene.

Now are we quite downe the winde, and never so much as now ; For those that should most honour us, doe least favour us. The only bare name of a Spaniard,

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Se pone de lodo.* Now *Poner lo de lodo, es, estragar, o errar el negoçio.*

which heretofore did affright the enemie, and with the reputation of that one word, made the whole world to tremble; now (for our sinnes-sake) the glorie of that is in a manner lost and gone. And we are so falne off from what we were, that we are not able to doe that now with our swords, which before we might have carried with our words. Yet such as wee have beene, we are, and shall be still. It is God, that must make us to acknowledge these our errours, and that must worke amendment in those that are the cause thereof; going (in that course wherein now they runne) against their King, against the Lawes of the Land, against their Countrie, and against themselves.

I need not (Sennor Don Juan) to produce any other witnesse, then the present times, for the truth of what I have spoken, and to prove unto you, that the maine cause of all your great mischiefes in a State, is a Favourites inwardnesse with his King, suffring no man to *Privar*, or to be able to doe any thing but himselfe, led on with the greedinesse of his owne private gaine. From this his ill-imployed Greatnesse, groweth hatred; from hatred, envie; from envie, dissention; and from dissention, evill order: from whence you may inferre those other inconveniences, that may follow thereupon. Let it not trouble you, Sir, that we are now to march hence. In Italie, you shall finde another kinde of world; and here I passe my word unto you, that I will make you an Ancient. Which albeit, it be a meaner place, then your merits may challenge, yet it may serve as a step to advance you higher. I gave him many thankes for this his friendly offer. We tooke our leaves, hee was very desirous to goe home alone, I earnestly intreated him, that I might waite upon him to his Lodging, but he would by no meanes consent thereunto. The next day following, the Companie marched away without any stay, till they came neere unto the Sea-coast; (the Captaine spending liberally upon my Purse.) We staid waiting there for the comming of the Gallies, but three moneths were almost spent, before we could have

THE SECOND BOOKE

any newes of them. In which time, and that which was already past, my Purse had spit his venome, and my rents began to faile me. My continuance at play, did likewise put a helping hand to my speedier dispatch; so that I was now quite out of Cash, and all my money was gone; not all in one day, but all, at all these severall times. I was (as your old prattling Gossips use to say) reduced backe againe to my former state, and might walke (as I did before) with a white Cudgell under mine arme. How much did I then risent my former follies? How angrie was I growne with my selfe? What amendment did I propose unto my selfe, now that I had not so much as one single pennie left me in my Purse? How many shifts did I use to conserve my selfe, when I did not know against what tree to leane? Who forced me to fall in love without discretion? Who made me turne Gallant, without moderation? Who taught me to spend without government? To what end was I so free in my play, so franke in my Lodging? and so prodigall with my Captaine? *Quanto se halla trasero, quien ensilla muy delantero?* How often is he cast behinde, that is first in the Saddle? What a shame is it for a man to follow his delights? What a basenesse, to be captivated by his pleasures? I was readie to run besides my selfe, and was almost out of my little wits, that when I had put myselfe in so good a Predicament, I could not hold me there, and keepe my selfe well, while it was well with me.

Guzmans money is all gone, and now begins to lament his follie

Good Instructions for young men

Spanish Proverb

Now, in regard as well of my youth, as these my youthfull vanities, I was no more esteemed, or respected of any. The friends that I had in my prosperitie, the free table that I kept with the Captaine, the Alferez place, and the ensigne, that he told me he would bestow upon me, it seemed, that they were all strooken with a sudden lightening, which had burnt and consum'd them. They past as an arrow, that makes his quick-feathered-flight thorow the aire; like a Thunder-bolt, that strikes to death, before it be discerned; or to the twinkling of the eye, which opens and shuts in an instant.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER IX

When my moneyes fell short, all fell away from me: as long as I had that, I had them; That gone, they shooke hands with me, and bid me farewell. Thus by little and little, piece after piece, all my ornaments were taken off, and poore Don Juan de Guzman was degraded. I was like that Obispillo de San Nicholas, that prettie little Bishop St. Nicholas, respected only for his Holy-day; and so I, while I had money in my Purse, and no longer.

Proverb

Those that heretofore did me honour, did visit me, did entertaine me, came to feast and banquet with me, the heart-strings of my Purse being broken, they forsooke me, as being no man of this world; Not a man that would talke with me, or converse with me. And not only so, but they would not so much as vouchsafe to looke upon me, or once suffer me to come in their company. The perfume that did once smell sweet, doth now stinke in their noses. They that knew not before how to be unkinde, doe now take all things in snuffe. And I that honoured them, am requited by them with dishonour, and all because I am become poore. And as if povertie had beene a great and heynous offence, I was consigned over to the Secular power. My dealing and conversation was wholly now with the straggling Boyes about the Campe, such as carried Wallets and Knap-sacks for the Soldiers, and on this had I now set up my rest. And it is good Justice, *Que quien tal haze, que assi lo pague.* As a man Brewes, so let him bake.

Proverb

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER X

Guzman de Alfarache declareth the mis-fortunes, and the wants of one that is decayed in his fortunes: And how hee followed a Captaine, till he came into Italy; Exercising himselfe in all kinds of thefts great and small; for the reliefe and helpe of his Master

Misfortunes, are burthens that are hard to be borne

OW bitter was it unto me to beginne; how troublesome to goe on; how grievous to indure this new dis-adventure? But I had been well-acquainted heretofore with these kinde of mis-fortunes, and had learned them long since to my great cost. And because these things were not new unto me, I presently fell to my worke, and lively bestir'd my selfe about my businesse. And I can assure you, it is a great happinesse for a man to sute himselfe to all occasions, and to know how to turne his hand to all kinde of labour, not relying on these transitory goods of the world, which like Buckets in a Well, are now full, and then empty; and no sooner up, but they are downe againe.

But this one thing was my chiefe comfort, That in the time of my Prosperitie, I gained credit against the day of Adversitie. And I did not count it my least riches, seeing I was to become poore, that I had left a stampe and impression in all mens minds, that I was of a noble and free disposition, by those my former actions, which were able to speake themselves, though my selfe should be silent.

My Captaine made some reckoning of me, acknowledging the courtesies, that I had used towards him, and was more willing, then able to help me. For (poore man) he had scarce inough to serve his owne turne. But he conserv'd

CHAPTER X

me at least in that *buen punto* and good esteeme, which he had at his first knowledge of me, anon after that we were acquainted, bearing a kinde of respect to the house whereof I came, and to those my supposed Parents.

I was inforced to stripp my selfe; and laying aside all my gallantry, I began to cloath my selfe againe in a meaner and poorer fashion, and to put on that rich, (though unregarded) Roabe of Humilitie, which I did not thinke on in my bravery, and scorned (as a thing of nought) when I was flush, and full of money:

Considering with my selfe, that Vanitie and Necessitie could not well sute together. And that one Chaire was not able to hold them both. For the rich man, if he brave it, he is to be borne withall, for he hath where-withall. But that a poore man should be so vaine, is to be but like the Cameleon; who, whatsoever he drawes and sucks into him, is but ayre, without substance. And therefore, as the rich man that is vaine, ought to be abhorred; So the poore man that is proud, is not to be indured: It is insupportable in the one, and scandalous in the other.

The rich man that is vaine, and the poore man that is proud, both condemned

I saw, that I was not able to live of my selfe, and therefore got to serve my Captaine, making him now my Master, who but a little before was my Companion. And I waited on him with that care, as I did on the Cooke. Howbeit, he commanded me with a kinde of respect, as considering who I was, and that my excesses, my childishnesse, and ill-governed Youth, had brought me to this low ebbe, that I was driven to serve him. And hee did thus farre assure himselfe of me, that I would not doe any thing unworthy a Gentleman, and un-beseeming my birth and Parentage, for any interest in the world.

Guzman sets himselfe to serve his Captaine

He held me to be as faithfull, and as secret, as I was patient. Hee made me Treasurer of all his secrets; for which affiance I alwayes shew'd my selfe thankefull unto him. Hee manifested his necessities, and made knowne his wants unto me, and what he had spent in his pretensions; besides, the prolixe time, and the excessive travell and paines, whereby hee at last obtained them; as by intreating,

What a man should doe, that would rise by his service

bribing, flattering, serving, attending, crouching, creeping, making of legges, bowing the head to the ground, with cap in hand, and a quicke and nimble pace, trotting up and downe the streets from morning to night; early, and late, without intermission.

A trick of a proud Courtier

I remember he told me, That going out of the Palace with the Kings Favourite, because he put on his Hat, whilest he was entring into his Coach, he lookt upon him, as if he would have eaten him; and shortly after, gave him to understand as much, by delaying his dispatch, making him daunce attendance at Court many a faire day, till he thought hee had sufficiently punished both his Purse, and his Patience. It shall ever be in my Lettany, Good Lord deliver us, when Power and Malice meet.

It is a miserable thing, and much to be pittied, that such an Idoll as one of these, should affect particular adoration; not considering, that he is but a man, a representant, a poore kind of Comedian, that acts his part upon the Stage of this World, and comes forth with this or that Office, thus and thus attended, or at least resembling such a person, and that when the play is done, (which can not be long) he must presently enter into the Tyring-house of the grave, and be turned to dust and ashes, as one of the sonnes of the Earth, which is the common Mother of us all.

Behold (brother) and see the Enterlude of our life is ended; our disguizes laid aside; and thou art as I; I, as thou; and all of us as one another. Some doe so strut and stretch out their bodies, and are swolne so bigge with the puffing winde of pride, as if they were able to swallow the whole Sea into their bellie. They sport, and play, and follow their pleasures, as if their aboade on earth, were to be eternall. They set themselves aloft, and in-throane themselves on high, as if they would get them out of Deaths reach, and that it should not be in his power to tumble them downe. Blessed bee God, that there is a God. And blessed be his mercy, that he hath provided one equall day of Justice for us all.

I did much grieve at my Captaines poverty, because I

did not know how to remedy it. And by how much the more is the want and necessitie of him that is Noble, by so much the more doth the poore man pitie it, then the rich. He had some Jewels left, which he might sell, if need were, but those were things to doe him honour; and being that he was upon his departure, ready to imbarke himselfe, where he should have occasion to use them, it went against the very heart of him, to marre much, to mend a little.

CHAPTER X

Want in a great person, is a thing that moveth much compassion

Now, while these Gallies were so slow in comming, wee were faine in the meane while to goe from one towne to another, to quarter our selves with the best conveniency we could. By that confession, which my Master had made unto me, I understood his minde, and the end wherefore he did it.

I told him, Sir, I know by good experience, both good and bad fortune; prosperitie, and adversitie, and wot well what they are.

In my yonger yeeres I have travelled farre and neere, and have seen somewhat of the world. I shall to the uttermost of my power expresse that loyaltie and faithfulnes which I owe unto my Master, and to the Stock whereof I come.

Take you, Sir, no care, assuring your selfe, that I will hazzard my life in your service, and will so order the businesse (till better times shall befriend us) that for the present, you shall passe over the trouble you now are in, with a great deale more ease. Thus did I take a taske upon mee, that was farre greater then my strength or wit could promise.

From that time forward, I did in this Office that I had undertaken, performe things of admiration, and such as were beyond beliefe.

In every place, where we were to lodge our Souldiers, I had gotten a doozen Billets,[1] whereof the least affoorded

[1] The Spanish word, is *Boleta*, i.e. *Scedula, quæ dabatur militibus in bello, ut properent ad hospitium. Dicitur autem Buleta, quasi Bula pequenna; à diminutivo Buleta. Et erat Scriptura brevis mandatoria, qualis est bulla Pontificis.*

no lesse then twelve *Royals*, and some did contribute fifty. My entrance was free into all those houses, where nothing was safe from my hands, no not so much as the water that was in their Wels.

I never suffered my Master to be without a Hen, a Chicken, a Capon, or a Pidgeon, both at dinner and supper, and a whole Gammon of Bacon every Sunday boyl'd in Wine. Never did I reserve any thing for my selfe of all these booties that I made. But looke whatsoever I got, I put it all into his hands.

Guzmans cunning, while he serv'd the Captaine

If by chance the Master of the house should take mee napping, if it were of small value, it was passed over as a thing of nothing, and accounted onely a waggish tricke; but if it were of any moment, my punishment was, to be brought by my Master before him that had complained of me, and causing my hands to be bound, with the thinne sole of a shoo hee would give me my payment; which being of a hollow kinde of graine, it sounded loud, but did smart but little; the noise was more then the paine. Sometimes I should have the lucke to get me Sureties, that should passe their word for me, that I should not doe so any more, and then I was pardon'd. But though they should chance to faile me, the chastisement was not rigorous, it did not raise any Wheales or Blisters, nor left any marke of the stripes upon my body. And because I knew, they were given mee more for fashion sake, then any ill will; and rather to satisfie others, then to hurt me, before ever the blow came neere mee, I would cry out, as if I had beene kill'd; and set out such a throat, as if I would have rent the very walles of the house asunder.

Thus did my Master and I give good satisfaction; he, by complying with his obligation; and I, by supplying of his necessities: By killing first his hunger, and afterwards by giving life to his Honour.

I would sometimes get me out into the High-wayes, and seyze upon all sorts of baggages; then would I seeme to shew them the favour of the Schoole, in selling them their owne againe; in-dearing to the owners of them, that it

cost me thus and thus much out of mine owne purse, to get these their goods to be returned unto them, so that I had both money, and thankes for my paines. CHAPTER X

Those commodities which wee lighted on in the Villages where wee lay, those that were able, might chance to see them againe, and redeeme them for their money; but those that had not where-withall, their goods were invisible, not a ragge to be seene; they that had taken them from them, were fled and gone, and no more newes to be heard of them. At the Musters, when the Muster-master was to see if the Company were full, I would thrust in amongst the Souldiers five or sixe yong fellowes of the Towne, well-appointed, and made them to passe. Sometimes I would so handle the matter, that putting one single man into the Church, up above in the Charnell house that is made for dead mens bones, five times one after another, I received five payes. And for him, that was to come last, I would clap a plaister upon his nose, that he might not be knowne. And every severall time, I did change his cloathes, because my knavery should not be found out, and my tricke discovered.

With these Gigs, and other the like gulleries, mine own person was as good as foure mens payes. My Master lov'd me as his life for these good services that I did him, but he was a great spender; and therefore both this, and all besides that I could doe for him, was all too little.

Guzman comes to Barçelona

When we were come to Barçelona,[1] and ready to imbarke our selves in the Gallies, I found my Master much troubled, as being in a great straight, for that he had received no pay from the King, and how to procure moneyes, he knew no way in the world; nor could mine that I brought him in, stead him to any purpose. I saw he was melancholly, sad,

[1] The chiefe Citie in Catalunna, founded 230 yeeres before the Incarnation of Christ. It was first called Barzino; of a great linage that builded it, of which descended the great Amilcar. Presently upon that, Barzi-nova. And now Barçelona. The Romanes afterwards called it Faventia: But came in time to recover it's old name. Vid. Abr. Hort. verb. *Barcino*, and Ant. Augustin. Dialogo 70, *de nummis antiquis.*

and heavy; I knew streight what disease he was sicke of, as being the Phisician, that had often cured him thereof heretofore. I offred him to apply a sudden remedie for this sore. He had with him divers Jewels, I knew not well what my selfe, and amongst the rest an *Agnus Dei*[1] of gold, a very rich one: it grieved him to part with it. But I told him; Sir, if you dare to trust me, put this *Agnus Dei* into my hands, and I will promise you to returne it againe unto you within these two dayes much improved, and make it better worth unto you, then now it is. He was glad to hear me say so; and jestingly said unto me; What tricke have you now in store Guzmanillo? Hast thou lighted peradventure (as thou wast wont) upon some new roguish plot, some feate villanie or other, and canst come finely off with it? Now because he knew, that he might trust his profit, with my sufficiencie; his honour, with my secresie; and that his Jewel was sure enough, without farther questioning me, what I would doe with it; he gave it me, telling me withall, God grant thou

[1] *Agnus Dei*, is Christ our Redeemer called a Lambe; not *proprietate sed similitudine*. As in many places, he is called a Vine, a Rocke, a Doore, a Shepheard, a Lyon, etc. But in regard of his meeknesse, unspottednesse, chastitie, innocence and obedience; as also, for that he was sacrificed up to his heavenly Father, for the sinnes of mankinde, with a greate deale of proprietie, hee is called the Lambe. And the Romane Church, in the Sacrifice of the Masse, before the holy Communion was instituted, did say or sing this Prayer: *Agnus Dei, qui tollis peccata mundi*, etc. And John Baptist did signe it with this name, *Ecce Agnus Dei*, etc. *Agnus Dei*, is likewise a holy relicke, which the Pope blesses, and consecrates the first yeere of his Papacie, and so afterwards from seven yeeres to seven yeeres. It belongeth to the Sexton and the Chaplaine to order and dispose the Waxe, where-into they put *Los cirios Pascuales* the yeere before. And with great curiositie, neatnesse, and reverence, and in different Moldes, they take forth these *Agnos*, of different bignesse, and divers Figures; both on the one and the other side, they have the Lambe, whence this relicke takes it's name. And being presented to his Holinesse, he blesses them in the Chappell, and consecrates them with great Ceremonie, throwing them into Vessels of Holy-water, which he hath blessed, powring upon them Balme, and the Crisme, or holy-Oyle, saying many Prayers over them. It is said, that Pope Urban the fift, sent an *Agnus Dei* to the Emperour of Greece, with certaine devout Verses, wherein he declareth the excellencie of this holy Relicke, as that, it is good against tempest, Fire, Lightning, Thunder, and Pestilence; and against the assaults of the Devill, and therefore ought to bee had in great reverence. *Vide* Covarruvias, verb. *Agnus Dei.*

bring it me safe backe againe, and that thy wishes may take good successe. CHAPTER X

Loe, there it is, take it, and doe what thou wilt with it. I tooke it of him, put it in my bosome, lapt it up safe in a little Purse, knit it fast, and ty'd it sure to one of the button-holes of my Doublet. With it I went directly to a Goldsmiths shoppe; One that was a rich man, and a great Usurer; I made a large relation unto him of my person, and how and by what meanes I came to this Companie, and what a deale of money I had spent in a short time, reserving (when I should see my selfe in some need) a very rich Jewell, for the supplying of my wants: And that if he would buy it of me, he should have it reasonable cheape, so as he did not offer me too little, and too much undervalew the worth of it. But withall, I advised him, that hee should first informe himselfe of my person, and my qualitie, who, and whence I was; and in knowing of it, (without rendring any reason why hee was so inquisitive, taking that for a sufficient satisfaction to himselfe) he should walke forth and meet me at the Sea-side, for there I would stay for him, and there hee should finde me all alone, wishing him to make as much haste as he could.

A fine tricke, put by Guzman upon a Goldsmith in Barçelona, that was a great Usurer.

This man, who had a great minde to this Peece, and was greedy of gaine, inform'd himselfe of me from the Captaine, the Officers, and some other of the Soldiers; receiving so much satisfaction, as was sufficient to content him. For they did all of them witnesse one and the same thing; That I was the sonne of a principall *Cavallero*, rich, and nobly descended, and that being desirous to see Italy, I came to their Company with a couple of servants attending on me, well clad, and with good store of Crownes in my Purse; that I had spent it all (as young men use to doe) which was the cause, that I was now in that poore case, as himselfe might well see.

All this made as well for mee, as my selfe could wish it; it fell out pat, as I would have it. My honest Usurer told me what they said, that hee was very well satisfied

therewith, and that he might safely deale with me for any thing that I should sell him. He desired my Jewell of me, that he might looke upon it, and that he would give me as much for it, as it was worth. I told him, that we would goe aside by our selves into some secret place, and there he should have a sight of it.

We went a pretie waies off, and when I had found out a fit place to my minde, I put my hand in my bosome, and tooke out my *Agnus Dei*, of whose price I was well informed, as one that knew what it cost. The Gold-smith lik't it well, and had a great desire to buy it. For, besides that the gold-worke was very well wrought and curiously enameled, it had divers stones in it of great value. I demanded of him for it two hundred Crownes, which was little lesse then the price that was paid for it, when it was first bought. He began to turne and winde it this way and that way, holding it one while upward, another downward, to see which way it shew'd it selfe best, and gave the brightest lustre.

He found a hundred faults in it (only to bring downe the price) offering me a thousand Royals at the first word. I was resolved, that hee should not have it under a hundred and fiftie Crownes, and it was as well worth that, as one Royall; and under that I would not part with it. And here upon the By, let this serve by way of advice to him that is to sell, that he must never descend so low as the price for which he meanes to sell it, but that he should drive his bargaine so, that the buyer may rise to his price; looking still, when he shal come higher and higher, and so by standing off, get as much for it as you can. We give and take; I offer, and he bids; At last, my cunning Merchant comes up to a hundred and twentie Crownes; I thought with my selfe I should never draw him higher, and that it was enough (if not too much) for that which I pretended; and for so much I sold it him. He was loth to leave me, till he had paid me; and would faine have had me to have gone with him: but I told him, Honest sir, God blesse your life, and send you well to doe; if I should

goe hence alone with you, I am afraid, lest that money would bee taken from me, which I purpose to keepe till I come to Italy, to furnish mee with clothes, that I may come in some good fashion, when I make my selfe knowne there to my Kinsmen, and friends. CHAPTER X

And if some Soldier or other should hap to see mee goe with you, they would presently suspect, that it is rather to sell, then buy any thing of you. And if they shall perceive, that I have any store of Copper or silver money about me (being but a Boy as I am) they will take it from me, and I shall have no remedie against them. And therefore God be your good speed, goe your waies, I will stay for you here till you come, bring your gold with you, so many Crownes, as we have agreed upon, and you shall have the Jewell away with you, and God send you as good lucke with it, as I shall wish you.

Hee well approv'd my reason, and hasted home (like a young Colt in his full gallop) for to fetch them. I had given notice to a Companion of mine, (a confident servant of my Masters) that he should stay there waiting for me; And that when I had given him such a signe, he should as secretly as he could haste in unto me. Hee lay close in ambush; The Goldsmith by this time is come, he counts me out my Crownes in the Palme of my hand: I had the Jewell in my purse, I sought to untie it; but because the knots were knit so fast, I could not so easily doe it. My Usuring Merchant had hanging at his girdle a paire of knives in an old greasie sheathe; I desired him, that he would lend me one of them. Hee (not knowing why I borrow'd it) pulls me out his knife, and gives it me. I cut the string asunder, leaving the knot fast knit to my Doublet, as it was before, and I gave it into his hand together with the *Agnus Dei*. The man began to marvell; and askt me why I did so, and wherefore I had put it there? I told him, that because I had never a Boxe, nor no Paper to lap it up in, I had done as I did, and that the matter was not great, for the Purse was old and little worth, and I had no great need of it: and as for those Crownes that I had of him,

I should make a shift to sew them up in some one ragge or other about my cloaths, where nobody should come at them.

He tooke the Jewell of me, just in the same manner as I had given it him, and after that he had put it in his bosome, we tooke our leave, and he went his way. I gave the signe to my Companion : hee comes ; I give him the Crownes, and advised him, that he should hie him home with them, and give them to my Master, and tell him, that I would be with him by and by.

That done, I made after my Goldsmith, and though by reason of his large strides, he had the advantage of me, and got ground upon me, yet I ran after him, till the occasion I expected, did fairely offer it selfe unto mee. And so watching my time, when he was jumpe even with a Company of Souldiers, that were standing together, I tooke fast hold of him with both my hands, crying out, A thiefe, a thiefe, helpe, honest Souldiers, for Gods sake come in and helpe me, for this Rogue hath robb'd me, hold him fast if you love mee, let him not goe, take (and you be good men) O take, take quickly the Jewell from him, for my Master will kill me, if I come home without it, and this Villaine hath violently taken it from me.

I was well knowne to all the Souldiers, and as soone as they heard me, and saw the pittifull moane that I made, they beleeved I said truth. Hereupon they laid hold on the man, to know what the matter was. And because hee that complaines first, the Justice commonly goes on his side ; and that whining and crying out of wrongs received, many times overcome the right, more by clamour, then any good claime that they can make ; I cry'd out more and more, and kept such a stirre and such a noise, that I would not suffer him to speake, and if he did, then I was so loud againe and so clamorous, that they could not heare him ; putting this tricke upon him [1] in the playing of my

[1] The Spanish phrase, is *haziendole el juego Manna.* That is, when one goes deferring the conclusion of a businesse, because he knowes it will goe against him, for that his cause is not good. Covarruvias, verb. *Manna.*

game. I did implore their helpe with great exclamations, with my hands linked one within another, and lifted up to heav'n, and with my knees, creeping and crawling on the ground, crying out unto them; As yee be Gentlemen, good my Masters, take pittie and compassion of me; for the Captaine my Master will surely kill me. This tribulation of mine did much trouble them, it did grieve them to see me in this pittifull plight.

At last, they began to aske me what the matter was? and how, and wherein I had beene wronged? Nor was I herein wanting to play my part; now I had the hand of him, I would be sure to hold it; gracing my lie with all the credit I could, that I might leave the lesse roome for his truth to enter. For, mans Hearing, contracting Matrimonie on the sudden, upon the first word that is given, will hardly be divorced from it, but let it alone, and live and sticke thereunto during life, be it for better or worse. So that all the rest that come after, are but as Concubines, that come now and then to the Hearing, but have no settled abode there: They may perhaps, like gadding Girls, touch at this eare, and that eare, and the t'other, (as at so many doores, or other folkes houses,) but there is no dwelling for them, they must packe and be gone.

Having this string to my bowe, (setting a good face on the matter) I up, and told them; This morning, my Master left his *Agnus Dei* at his beds-head upon his pillow; he willed me to keepe it, and to looke safe unto it; I tooke it, and first put it in my purse, and then in my bosome, (thinking I had made all sure enough) but meeting with this good man (you here see) by the Sea-side, I pull'd it forth to shew it him; And because he was a Gold-smith, I askt him, what it might be worth? He told me, that the body of the Jewell was but Copper double-gilt, and that the Stones were counterfeit, no better then Glasse. Yet askt me withall, whether I would sell it? I told him no; it was my Masters. Hee demanded then of me, if my Master would sell it? My answer was; Sir, I know not: you were best aske him, for hee can best tell you. After this,

he proceeded farther in talke with me, asking me, who I was, whence I came, and whither I would; And so held me on in such idle discourse, till we were both alone, out of sight of any; and drawing a knife out of that sheath of his that hangs there at his girdle, hee willed me to make no words, for if I did but offer to squeake, though ne're so little, or but wagge a foote from that place, there was no way but one with me, he would presently cut my throat. I stood shaking and quivering, while hee was taking the jewell out of my bosome, and because he could not readily unty the knots, I had knit them so fast, he made no more adoe, but cut the string asunder, and so went away with it. And I thinke he hath it still about him; search him, I beseech you (good honest Souldiers) for Gods sake search him.

The Souldiers seeing that the purse was cut indeed, turn'd towards my Goldsmith, and lookt some-what strangely upon him, who was strooke there-with so dead, that he had not a word to say for himselfe. They took the *Agnus Dei* out of his bosome, which he had carried away in the purse; as I had before informed them, so did they just finde it about him.

Then did he begin to fall a cursing and swearing, vowing by no small oaths, that I had sold it unto him, and that I with mine owne hand, with that very knife, cut the purse my selfe, and afterwards delivered it unto him, and that I had of him for it a hundred and twenty Crownes in very good gold. But for all his swearing and staring, they would never a whit the sooner beleeve him; Thinking in good discretion, that it was not likely, that he would venture to buy any such piece of me, for hee might very well thinke that it was stolne Ware. Besides (which made much for me) they had searcht mee all over, from top to toe, but could not finde one penny of money about me.

Making this to serve as a strong proofe against him, they us'd him very homely, both in words and deeds. And whatsoever he said unto them to justifie himselfe, it was all one, he had been as good to have held his tongue, for

after that, they would neither beleeve, nor heare him. They had forcibly taken the jewell from him; Hee complaines thereof unto the Justice; I was brought before him; There I opened the case anew, (as before you have heard) not failing so much as one syllable in the relating of that, which I had formerly delivered.

The Witnesses were sworne, and justified what they had both seene and heard. And in the end, the businesse was brought so about, that it was concluded, the Goldsmith should be severely punished. But upon intreaty, hee had a brotherly correction, and so sent packing. And as for me, I had my Jewell given me in open Court, with charge to carry it home to my Master. I went with it to his lodging, and there in the presence of all his people, I delivered it unto him.

There are many that love treason; but few that like the Traitor.[1] Well may an ill man, by working ill, please that ill man that sets him a-worke, for the working of his ends. But when the deed is done, it can not be, but that in the brest of that man, there is so much mischiefe imprinted, and such knowne Characters of Villany written in the forehead of him, that none of those that imploy him, will trust him, either any farther or longer, then they have use of him to bring their purposes to passe. What I had done did nothing displease my Master. At that time he lik't it well, yet it troubled him some-what, and he could not well tell what to thinke of it. These tricks of mine did him good service, (and that he knew well inough) but he was afraid both of them, and me.

With these kinde of Cordials, I kept my Master in heart, till hee came to Genoa; where, (having dis-imbarkt) and having now but little need of my service, he shifted me off. Your Traitors, and other such like wicked Villaines, are like unto Vipers, or your Scorpions; which when you have taken the substance of that from them, which you seeke for, you take them, and throw them upon the dunghill. Onely they are nourished by all sorts of men (especially your

[1] *Amo proditionem, proditorem odi.*

Great-ones) who make exceeding much of them, all the while they use them as instruments of their pretended ends ; but those once effected, they bid you farewell, they will have no more to doe with you, unlesse it be to undoe you, as you have others ; and so let you goe, for such a one as you are ; caring rather to use, then to keepe a Knave.

Some few dayes after our arrivall, my Master call'd me aside, and said unto me ; Youth, you are now in Italy, your service will be of little use to me ; and your Rogueries may doe me much wrong : Heere is some-what for you to helpe you on your journey, dispatch quickly, and be gone, for you have free liberty to goe whither you will. He gave me some moneys of small value, and some few Spanish *Royals* ; all was a matter of nothing, scarce worth God a mercy ; and with this poore pittance, I tooke my leave of him and left him. I walked along with my head in my bosome, musing in the street as I went, on the great force of Vertue, which did never leave any man un-rewarded ; whereas Vice did never suffer any man to escape without punishment, and shame.

I would faine have spoken then unto my Master, and have told him, that he might be pleased to remember, that I had reliev'd him in his wants, supplyde his necessities, taken a great deale of paines in his service, to my great cost and hinderance. But I thought with my selfe, that he would twit me in the teeth with those things, and lay them to my charge, and that therefore he was the willinger to rid himselfe of me, as of a rotten member, good for nothing, but to infect all the rest. And so I rested from that. Now seeing in what disgrace I was, and hoping to finde out my kindred there, I made the lesse reckning of it.

So I went dayly up and downe the Citie, seeking by that meanes to learne the language, which as yet I neither understood, nor knew, out of the desire that I had to know, and to be knowne.

THE ROGUE
OR THE FIRST PART OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE

The Third Booke

Wherein, he treateth of his beggerly course of life, and what therein hapned unto him, whilst he was in Italy

CHAPTER I

Guzman discourseth of Povertie, and of the wrongs and outrages, which a poore man indureth; As also of Riches, and of the honours that are done unto the Rich: As likewise of the naughtinesse of this present world: And how not finding his Kindred, which he sought for in Genoa, he went to Rome; and of a jest that was put upon him, before he left that Citie

ITH Flatterers, no rich man is a foole; nor no Poore man wise. For they still weare Spectacles of the largest sight; by reason whereof, things represent them selves far greater then indeed they are. It may truly bee called, Wealths-Moth, and Truths-Worme. Flatterie resideth most with the Poore, being the greatest enemie that he hath: For that Povertie, which is not the Daughter of the Spirit, is but the Mother of shame and

The nature of flatterers

reproach ; it is a dis-reputation, that drownes all the other good parts that are in man ; it is a Disposition to all kinde of evill ; it is mans most Foe ; it is a Leprosie, full of anguish ; it is a way that leads unto Hell ; it is a Sea, wherein our Patience is overwhelmed, our honour is consumed, our lives are ended, and our soules utterly lost, and cast away for ever.

The Poore mans Epithites, and his wretched condition

The Poore man is a kinde of money, that is not currant ; the subject of every idle Huswives chat ; the off-scumme of the people ; the dust of the street, first trampled under foot, and then throwne on the dung-hill ; In conclusion, the Poore man is the Rich mans Asse. He dineth with the last, fareth of the worst, and payeth dearest : His Six-pence will not goe so farre, as a Rich mans three-pence ; His opinion is Ignorance : His discretion foolishnesse ; His suffrage, scorne ; His Stocke upon the Common ; abused by many, and abhorred of all. If he come in Companie, he is not heard ; If any chance to meet him, they seeke to shunne him ; If he advise (though never so wisely) they grudge and murmure at him ; If he worke Miracles, they say, he is a Witch ; If vertuous, that he goeth about to deceive ; His veniall sinne, is a blasphemie ; His thought, is made treason ; His cause, be it never so just, it is not regarded ; and to have his wrongs righted, he must appeale to that other life. All men crush him ; no man favoureth him ; There is no man, that will relieve his wants ; No man that will comfort him in his miseries ; nor no man, that will beare him Companie, when he is all alone, and oppressed with griefe. None helpe him, all hinder him ; none give him, all take from him ; he is Debtour to none, and yet must make payment to all. O the unfortunate and poore condition of him that is poore, to whom even the very houres are sold, which the Clocke striketh, and paies Custome for the Sun-shine in August !

And as your rotten and refuse-flesh, comes to be meat for dogs ; so, as an unprofitable piece of flesh, the discreet poore man comes to be eaten up and devoured by a company of ignorant Chuffes. But it is quite otherwise with

CHAPTER I

The rich mans Epithites, and his condition

the rich : How smooth doth the Wool goe on their side ? What a fresh gale of winde is still in the poope of them ? In how calme a Sea doe they saile ? What faire weather, free from the least cloud of care ? And what carelesnesse in those stormes, which other men suffer ? Their Granaries are full of corne ; their Butts [1] of Wine ; their jarres of Oyle ; their Chests of money. In the Summer, he keepes himselfe from the heats ; And in the Winter he clothes himselfe warme to defend him from the cold. Of all men he is well received. His fantasticall tricks, are gentleman-like carriage ; His foolish speeches, are wise sentences ; If he be malicious and hath a pestilent pate to plot mischiefe, then is he said to be subtill, and to have a shrewd head of his owne ; If he be prodigall, they stile him liberall ; if covetous, a warie wise fellow ; if given to rayling, he is a wittie Gentleman ; if foole-hardie, of a brave daring spirit ; if impudent and full of ribaldrie, he is a merry man, and a fine Companion ; if bitter in his taunts, and given to detraction, an admirable Courtier ; if incorrigible, all metall ; if scoffing, pleasant-witted ; if babbling and full of prate, they tearme him sociable ; if vicious, affable ; if a Tyrant, a powerfull man ; if obstinate, constant ; if blasphemous and full of oathes, a very valiant fellow ; if dull, grave and fit to make a Counsellour. His errours the earth covereth ; all are afraid of him ; none dare offend him ; Every mans eare is ty'd to his tongue, seeking by their attention to please his palate ; and not a word that comes from him, but is entertained by them with as much solemnitie, as if an Oracle had spoken unto them. He will not be said nay, but will have what he list, making himselfe both Partie, Judge, and Witnesse. When he will countenance a lie, his power makes it to pa'sse for a truth, and, as if it were so indeed, it is so received. How is he accompanied, how visited, how feasted, how magnified of all men ?

In a word, Povertie is the poore mans portion, and riches,

[1] The Spanish word is, *Cuba*, i.e. *el vaso hecho de costillas de Madera delgada, que se çinne con aros y cercos y communemente se hazen las cubas, para echar en ellas el Vino.* Covarruvias.

that of the rich. And therfore, where good bloud boyleth, and the Pulse of honour beats strongly, want is held a greater losse then life; death is not so hurtfull, nor seemeth halfe so terrible unto him, as Necessitie. For money warmeth the bloud, and makes it quicke and active: Whereas he that is without it, is but a dead body that walkes up and downe like a ghost amongst the living. A man cannot without it doe any thing in it's opportune and fit time, he cannot execute his desires, nor accomplish any thing, whereunto he hath a liking.

A man without money, is a body without life

This is the course of the world, it hath alwaies kept this tracke, it is no new thing, but even from the beginning, to see men of base birth, and meaner parts, to waxe proud and arrogant.[1] There is no helpe nor remedie for it; So we found it, and so we shall leave it; we must not looke for a better time, nor thinke that it was otherwise heretofore. All whatsoever, either hath bin, is, or shall be, is still one and the selfe-same thing. Our first Father was credulous and light of beliefe; our first mother a Lyer, and false of her word; The first sonne that was borne into the world, a thiefe and a Fratricide, one that kild his owne and only brother.

What is there now, that was not heretofore? Or what can we hope for in that which is to come? If what is past seemeth better unto us, it consisteth only in this, that we are more sensible of the ill that is present; and call to remembrance those good things of old, which being so farre off, are quite absented from us: yet when our troubles are once over-passed, we are so glad, when we finde our selves to be well rid of them, as if they had never beene. So your Medowes beheld from a farr, are very pleasant to the eye, and delightfull to looke upon, but when thou drawest neerer unto them, thou doest not finde so much as one hands breadth of ground, where thou mayst conveniently sit thee downe, all that thou seest, being nothing else but bogs, pits, and stones. We see the one, but never

[1] The Spanish phrase, is, *Que de atras le viene al garbanço el pico.* Which is rendred as I have here set it downe. *Vide* Covarruvias, verb. *Garbanço.*

thinke on the other: it is as common, as ancient in the world, for every man to love prosperitie, to follow after riches, to seeke for fulnesse, to procure preferment, to pursue plentie, and to hazard our lives to get wherewithall to live, and to grow into money (which is the mother of abundance;) For where that is wanting, the father towards the sonne, the sonne towards the father, brother towards brother, and I my selfe, even towards my selfe, breake my faith and my word, and abhorre mine owne selfe. CHAPTER I

This lesson, time hath taught me, out of the discipline of his experimentall discourses, having punished me with an infinite number of miseries and afflictions.

I plainely now perceive, that if (when I arrived at Genoa,) I had considered what I was, and but looked well into my selfe, I would not have ventured so farre as I did. And if I had had but the wit to have reserved that occasion to some better fortune, I should not happely have beene ruin'd and undone by it, as you shall heare here-after.

As soone then as I had left the Captaine my Master, having made of all my totter'd rags and other old clouts, a kinde of Scar-crow (for they would scarce serve for any other use) to fray away birds from the Fig-trees, I would needs boast my selfe to be descended of the Gothes,[1] an ancient Gentleman, and neerely ally'd to most of the Nobilitie of that Citie, giving out, that I was such a one, and come of such a house; and making farther inquirie

[1] The etymologie of this word *Godo*, or *Gothe* is divers: and comes of *Gathia*, a Province so called. *Got*, also signifies a Father, which is a phrase properly belonging unto God. If from hence we derive the name of *Gothes*, they must be men of esteeme, as Heroes, or good men. *Goet*, is as much as Good, from *Got*; *qua voce Deum vocamus, quia bonum à Deo descendit, et ad Deum deducit.* It is not amisse to thinke that *Godo* in it's Language, signifies Good. Some would have it come of the Hebrew word *Goi*, which is by interpretation, *Gens*, or *Natio*. But fetch it whence you will, I am sure of this, that the Gothes were Lords of innumerable Provinces, and particularly of Spaine, where they ruled a long time, till the unfortunate raigne of Don Rodrigo, and of the Reliques of those, which had retyred themselves into the Mountaines, the Nobilitie of Spaine began anew to lift up their heads, which continueth to this day; and is still in such estimation amongst them, that when they will set forth the presumption of some vaineglorious fellow, they will ask him, *Si deciende de la casta de los Godos.* Whether he bee lineally descended of the race of the Gothes.

of my Fathers ancient Familie, and his great Alliance in that Citie, it caused such distastefulnes, and such a loathing in them towards me, that they did hate me to the death. And it is to be supposed, that if they could have done it without any prejudice to themselves, they would have given it me; And thou also wouldst have done the like, if such a guest should have come within thy doores. But they manifested their good meaning by those actions, which they used towards me. There was not that man to whom I made my selfe knowne, that did not relieve me with a boxe on the eare, a flirt on the lips, a kicke on the breech; and he that did least hurt or disgrace me, did not sticke to spit in my face, upbraiding me with the name of Villaine, Rogue, Moore,[1] and the like. Art thou a Genoves? Thou art the sonne of some vile lewd woman, no better can be conceived of thee. And as if my father had beene *terræ filius*, a sonne of the earth, a mis-begotten Bastard, or as if he had been dead some two hundred yeeres agoe, I coulde not find so much as a foot-step of any friend or kinsman of his. Nor could I discover any thing, till one came unto me, and greeting me with a Serpents tayle, like a crafty old Scabbe; (O that accursed old Villaine, that sonne of a Whore; O how did he coozen me!) clozing fairely with me, up and told me:

A notable pleasant trick put upon Guzman, by a Genoes

I have heard much talke (my Boy) of your Father, and I can bring you acquainted with those that shall render you a large relation of your Parents, and those none of the meanest; but (if I be not deceived) even the best, and noblest in all the Citie.

And because I suppose you have supt already, come and take a bed with me at my house, (for now the time is fit for nothing else) and to morrow morning we will walke a turne or two about the Towne, and I shall bring you to those (as I told you) that knew him very well, and had long conversed with him. The good presence that he carried,

[1] Covarruvias. The Spanish word is, *Marrano*, i.e. *Porcus unius anni. Et Judeus recenter conversus ad Christianismum, cum Hispanis, vocatur Marrano.*

the gravitie wherewith he uttered his words, his good proportion of body, his decent attire, his bald-head, his white Beard, which reached almost downe to his Girdle, and the Staffe which he bare in his hand, represented (me thought) unto me another Saint Paul. I trusted my selfe with him, I followed him to his house, with a great deale more desire to sup, then to sleepe: for that day I had made but a bad dinner, as well for that I had beene chaste and angred; as also that it must have been at mine owne cost, which made me to quake, as oft as I did but thinke upon spending but a farthing.

But because that which the rich give us, is but little, and what we call for, must cost us money, we eate but little bread, and that (God knowes) stale, and hard; though to us, that are almost hunger-starv'd, it seemes a great deale, and soft inough. Besides, I was now growne a pinch-belly, and a very miser to my selfe.

I went along, but with feeble legges, ready to faint for hunger, after that I saw what an Host I was like to have, and how (like a Cordovese) he told me by way of prevention, that I had already supt: And had it not bin out of the feare that I had to lose so faire an opportunity, I would not have gone with him, untill I had first visited some tippling house. But the hope of that good which seemed to weight for me, made me too leave the Bird that I had in my hand, for to follow the Oxe, which fled too fast from me, for me to catch him. As soon as we were come into his house, a servant came to take off his Cloake; he will'd him to let it alone; and they twaine having talked together a while in their owne language, he sent him forth: So that now being left all alone to our selves, we walked many a turne, and sometimes talked of one thing, sometimes of another. At last, he drew neerer unto me, asking me divers questions concerning Spaine; and amongst the rest, more particularly of my Mother, as how she was left, what was her Estate, how many brothers she had, and in what street she liv'd? I gave him a full account of all, as wisely, and as advisedly as I could for my life.

THE THIRD BOOKE

In this discourse I intertain'd my selfe the better part of an houre, untill such time as his servant was returned. I know not what was his arrand, nor what message he brought him backe; but my old Foxe turn'd about unto me, and said unto me; So, it is well, inough for this bout, it is time for you to take your rest, get you to bed, and to morrow we shall see one another againe, and then we shall inlarge our minds more freely to each other. Then he cals, *O la Antonio*, *Maria*, doe you heare there? Come away, and conduct this Gentleman to his lodging. I went along with him from lodging to lodging, through this roome, and that roome, I know not whither my selfe; it was a great large house, wrought with many goodly faire Pillars, whose pavement was all of Alabaster, hewne four-square.

At last we crosse through a Court, and enter into a lodging, that stood at the one end thereof, which was very well furnished, and fairely hung with Hangings of sundry sorts of colours, like unto your *Arambales*,[1] but that they seemed to be some-what better then they. The Beds-head lean'd against the wall, and close adjoyning thereunto stood a little low Stoole. And as if he would have me to make my selfe unready, the servant that was appointed to attend me, offred his service to pull off my cloathes. But they were such, and so ragged, that my selfe knew not very well how to put them either off, or on, unlesse I tooke a great deale of care, disposing of one piece after another, for there was not any one part that was whole, or put in it's proper place, so that it was impossible to discern or know, which was the Jerkin, or the Breeches, when you saw them layd abroad, and stretched out upon the ground. So that I having undone some few knots, with the which I had fastened them together for want of points, I let them slide off from me at the beds feet. And thus foule and slovenly as I was, and so lowsie, as no man could well be worse, I crept me in between the sheetes. The Bed was soft and good, the sheetes cleane and sweet. And when I was laid, I began to think with my selfe, sure this good old man is my kins-

[1] *Arambal:* Is a Moorish word: and is a courser sort of Hangings.

man, that he uses me thus kindly, but will not make him-selfe knowne unto me, till to morrow morning. It is a good beginning, it cannot be, but that he will give me new Cloathes, and deale kindly with me, since being in that poore and miserable estate as I was, he had given me such good entertainment. Questionlesse it is so, and now wil some faire fortune befall me. I was but yong, I did not dive to the bottome of his drift, I only lookt upon the Superficies, I went no farther then the outward appearance. For, if I had had either wit or experience, I might have considered with my selfe, that great offers, have great ends,[1] and that he that is full of courtesie, is full of craft. For such kindnesses as these, are not done for nothing, there is some mysterie more in it, then a man is aware of. And alwaies observe this for a Maxime, or a generall rule, That when a man shall offer thee courtesies of an extraordinary nature, and such as heretofore he hath not been accustomed to doe, eyther he meanes to put a tricke upon thee, or else he stands in neede of thee. The Servant, when he had me to bed, went forth of the Chamber, leaving a candle burning by me, I spake unto him, wishing him to put it out. He told me, I must hold him excused, and that he would not doe so, for in the night time, there flye up and downe in that Countrey (almost in everie corner) certaine Bats, or Raree-Mice of an extraordinarie bignesse to those in other places, which are very offensive, and doe much hurt, and that the only remedy against them, is to have a light standing by ones bed side, for they can by no meanes indure it, but seeke to avoid it by flying away from it into some blind corner or other.

He likewise told me, that this their Country was full of Hob-gobblins, and Robin-good-fellowes, which were all great enemies to the light, but in your dark lodgings, they did now and then play their parts, and do many a shrewd turne. All which I did beleeve with the greatest simplicitie in the world.

This said, he went his wayes; and he was no sooner gone, but I presently got me up, and made fast the doore, not that

[1] *A grande offerta, grande pensamiento.*

I was afraid of robbing (for I had nothing to lose) but out of a suspition and jealousie that I had, that some one mischance or other might befall me; being yong, unfriended, unknowne, and in a strange place, where I never was before.

Having (as I thought) made all sure, I returned backe againe to my bed, fell presently asleepe, injoying (to my great content) a sweet and quiet rest; for the Pillowes, the *Colchones*,[1] the Coverlets, and the Sheetes did drinke a Health unto me, and I (with a very good will) did soundly pledge them.

The better part of the night was now over-past, the beame of mid-nights ballance began to decline, and leaned a little towards the breake of day, whilest I, being in a dead sleepe, was wakened on the sudden with a confused noise of foure parts: Divels they seemed to be by their shape, their habit, their blacke curled haire, and by those fearefull ugly vizards, which they had upon their faces.

Having walkt their Stations a while about the Chamber, they came at last unto the bed, wherein I lay, putting me in such a fright, that I lost my sences for a time, and without any word speaking, off they plucke the Coverlets from me, anon after the Sheetes. I wondered what a Gods name would become of me; I fell as fast as I could for my life, to crossing and blessing of my selfe; I ranne over my prayers, I called a thousand times upon the name of Jesus; but they were *Dæmonii baptizati*, Christen Divels, and therefore drew still neerer and neerer unto me; They had put upon the *Colchone*, under the nether sheet, a Blanket; every one tooke hold of his corner, and haled me forth into the middle of the roome. I was much amazed, and extremely troubled, when I saw that my prayers could not prevaile; insomuch, that I did neither dare; and if I durst, yet I was not able to open my mouth, nor to speake so much as one word, if I might have all the world for my labour.

The roome was high-roofed, and fitted for their purpose; where, when they had me out amongst them, they began to

[1] Your Spanish *Colchones*, are like our finer sort of English Matresses; quilted with Wooll, or Flaxe; for in your hot Countries they use no feather-beds.

blanket me, and to tosse me up in the aire, as they use to doe dogges at Shrove-tide, till growing so weary, that they could hold out no longer, they left winnowing of me (being sufficiently fanned already) and laid me downe there againe, where they found me; and leaving me for dead, they covered me with the cloathes, and went out that way they came in, having first put out the light. I was so disjoynted, and so broken as it were in pieces, and so beside my selfe, that when it was day, I did not know, whether I were in heaven, or heere upon earth: God, who was pleased to preserve me, knew for what end he did it. CHAPTER I

It was now about eight of the Morning, and I was willing to rise, for that I found my selfe reasonably able to get up. Me thought, I did not smell so sweet as I should, my body cleaving to the Sheetes, no clay could be more clammy, nor any plaister cling closer.

This put me in minde of my old Masters Wife, the Cooke. And although there are no perturbations, without some one disorder or other, yet this did much afflict me. But now the Crow could bee no blacker, then were his wings: And therefore I rubb'd over all my body with the cleanest places, that I could meet withall in the sheetes; which when I had done, I beganne to buckle my harneys unto me, and fall a knitting of my old knots, to my older cloathes. And the longer I was in making of me ready, the more I did consider with my selfe, what a Divell that should be, that had befalne mee this last night: And if when I rose up, I had not found my limm's almost shaken in pieces, my bones bruized, and in a manner out of joynt, I should verily have thought, that it had beene but a dreame. I look't round about the roome, but could by no meanes finde which way they should come in. By the doore it was impossible, for I had shut that sure with mine owne hands, and found it fast lockt, as I left it.

Then I began to cast with my selfe, whether they might not be those Hob-gobblins, and Robin-good-fellowes, which the Yong-man told mee of overnight. But that (me thought) could not be; for if it were so, then had hee

done very ill, that he did not advise me before-hand, that there were some of these same mad merry sprites, that delighted as much in light, as other more melancholly Divels did in darknesse.

Whilest I was musing on this businesse, and devising with my selfe, how or which way they could get in ; I lifted up the Hangings, to see, if behind them I could espy any little out-let ; at last I lighted on an open window, which did butt out upon the Court, thorow which we crost. Then I presently said with my selfe ; This way were the Bulls brought in, my hurt came in at this Window ; And albeit every rib in my bodie, and all my bones throughout, did rattle in my skinne, making such a noise for all the world as your Chesse-men doe, when you shake them together in the bag, yet I did dissemble it all that I could (in regard of that slovenly part, which I had plaid against my will) till I should see my selfe quite cleare of the house : I threw up the bed as handsomely as I could, covering all as close as might be, that if any should come in, they might not smell out my fault, and finde out the feeblenesse of my retentive faculties, and so the same Devils be brought in againe, and torment me anew.

The servant, that brought me thither, came to mee towards nine of the clocke, and told me, that his Master expected me in the Church, and that I must goe thither unto him ; And because I would not willingly have his man stay behinde in the chamber, that I might get the start of him, I intreated him that he would doe me the kindnesse to bring me to the doore, because I was unacquainted with the house, and knew not the way out. So he brought me forth into the street, and returned backe againe.

When I saw I was come off cleere from him, as if I had beene borne with wings at my feet, and my body had been sound and whole, I tooke Villa diego his Breeches,[1] and

[1] *Tomar las calças de Villa diego. Vale huyr mas que de passo.* This Proverbe is in *Celestine*, but it's originall unknowne : But it should seeme Villa Diego was driven to his shifts, and not having time to put on his breeches, was forced to flye away with them in his hand. Covarruvias, verb. *Calças.*

tript away so nimbly, that he that had runne Post, should hardly have overtaken me. Hee runnes fast that flies: Feare addeth wings and strength; thought was not swifter then my flight. I bought something by the way to satisfie hunger, and for to gaine time, I eate as I went, and made no stay, till I was out of the Citie. Where in a Taverne I call'd for a Cup of Wine, where-with I refresht my selfe, that I might walke the stronger towards Rome, whither I had directed my journey, thinking all the way as I went upon that grosse scorne, whereby they sought to banish me out of Genoa, to the end that my povertie might not disgrace them; but I did not remaine their Debtor, nor had they any great cause to bragge thereof in the end, as you shall see in the second part.

CHAPTER I

Guzman leaves Genoa, and goes for Rome

CHAPTER II

Guzman discourseth of the unhappinesse, greatnesse, and commendation of Necessitie and Want; And how after hee was gone from Genoa, he fell a begging. And how keeping Companie with other poore beggers, he was instructed by them, of their Statutes, and Lawes

FLED so fast out of Genoa, that if Lots wife had but done that, which I did, she had never beene turned into a Pillar of Salt. I never offred to looke backe, my Anger spurd me on, and put me up to the height of my speed; for when choller once begins to boyle, we hardly feele the wounds that are given us, though they be never so mortall, never so deadly. Besides, by how

Anger and it's effects

much the more a man re-bringeth as it were himselfe, to himselfe, and looketh home into his owne bosome, by so much the more hee comes neerer to the recognition and knowledge of his hurt.

I escaped from the overthrow given at Ronçes valles,[1] *como perro con bexiga*;[2] like a Dog, that claps his taile betweene his legs, and through too much haste to be gone as farre as his feet will carry him, growes sur-bated, and stiffe in his joynts. There was not one firme ligament in all the whole Fabricke of my body. But I did not much feele it, till I came to rest my selfe; When I drew neere to a little Village some ten miles off from Genoa, where I sate me downe, not knowing whither to goe, being bruised in my body, naked of cloathes, without money in my Purse, and blacke and blue all over, as if I had beene beaten with a Cudgell.

Necessitie and it's effects

O Necessitie, how doest thou abate mans courage? How doest thou take off his Metall? How doest thou dis-hearten his bodie? And howbeit it be true, that thou doest sharpen the wit, and refine the understanding, yet thou destroyest the faculties therof, by diminishing and taking off so much from the senses, that they are readie to bee flaw'd and crackt in pieces through too much sufferance, and that intolerable patience, whereunto they be put.

Two sorts of Necessitie

There are two sorts of Necessitie; The one shamelesse and impudent, which (like an unmannerly guest) comes of it selfe, without being called. The other, which being invited, straines a little curtsie, but comes upon intreatie at the first bidding. That which unrequested, bids it

[1] Ronçes valles, is a Monasterie, built by King Don Sancho de Navarra, which he indowed with great Rents; it is a Convent of Canons Regular, who beare in their brests an Azure Crosse, having the forme of a shepheards Crooke, or Crosier staffe. Heere was a great battell fought. The said King lies buried in this Monasterie, his body being brought from Tudela, where he died.

[2] *Vexigas*, are certaine Blisters which rise upon the flesh, through heat, or some other accident, and commonly grow on the feet of men or beasts, with over-much travaile. Covarruvias, *Bexiga*.

selfe, God deliver us from it; And this is that, of which I treat. This is like a powerfull guest in a poore mans house, who out of his greatnesse brings a thousand followers along with him; it is that man of Warre, wherein a multitude of mischiefes, (like so many Pyrats) stand readie armed, wayting to doe hurt. It is the framer and plotter of all kinde of trecheries and villanies; hard to be indured, and worse to be corrected. It is that *Lucerna Navis Prætoriæ*, that Lanterne in the Admirals Ship, which all couzenages and deceits attend and follow: it is the sport of Boyes and children; a foolish dance, a ridiculous Comedie, the sad and direfull Tragedie of honour and of vertue. It is fierce, foule, fantasticke, furious, fastidious, faint, facile, feeble, false: only she failes of being a Franciscan. And it is a wonder, if she afford any other fruit but infamie.

CHAPTER II

Necessitie, that invites it selfe, and the miserie thereof

That other, which we bid and invite, and comes not but when she is called, is Lady-like, liberall, rich, franke, powerfull, affable, generous, sociable, gracious, acceptable, and welcome to all. She leaves us a full and plentifull house, feeds us at her costs, and defraies all recknings; she is a firme defence, an inexpugnable Tower, true riches indeed, and good, without hurt; That Necessitie (I say) which necessitates it selfe, but is not necessitated, is the place of perpetuall rest, the house of God, and the way to heaven. It lifteth up mens mindes, it addes strength unto their bodies, it doth innoble their fame, it cheereth their hearts, it magnifieth their Actions, and makes their names immortall.

Necessitie, that comes not before she bee invited; and the greatnessethereof

Necessitie, not necessitated, and the commendation thereof

Let renowned Cortes, her truest Lover, sing forth her praises. Her legges and feet are of Diamonds, her body of Saphires, and her countenance of Carbuncles, it shineth, it cheereth, and it quickneth, it is full of pleasure, lustre, and life. But that other neighbour of hers, lookes like a filthy old sluttish Laundresse, where you shall see nothing but a heape of Spittle ragges, full of matter'd stuffe, and the soiles of ulcerous sores, which no eye is able to indure, it is so loathsome to looke upon, and therefore (with a

great deale of reason) abhorred of all. Behold and view me well, for I am one of those, with whom Necessitie fell in love, she never left following me, but kept me company at bed and at boord, living in deadly sinne, by being bound to seeke out meanes to maintaine her. And to this end, she made me studie the Briviatick Art.[1] This was the course I ran, I was to day in one place, and to morrow in another, begging an almes of all that I met with.

Italie, a charitable Countrie

It is fit, that we should give every man his due. And therefore I must confesse unto thee, that there is much charitie used in Italy, and indeed so much, that this new Trade, that I had betaken my selfe unto, made me loth to leave it, I found so much sweetnesse in it. For in a few daies I grew flush, and able to make wing to maintaine my flight ; So that from Genoa, whence I came, till I saw Rome, where I stayd, I performed all that Voyage, without spending so much as one farthing. The money that was given, I kept that whole and intire, and for victuals, I had ever sufficient, and more then would serve my turne. I was yet but a Novice, and therefore threw that away many times to the dogges, which afterwards, when I had more judgement, I sold for money, which brought me in no small gaines.

I had a great minde (as soone as I came thither) to put my selfe into new cloaths, that I might be some-what againe like my selfe ; but this counsell of mine (me thought) was not so good ; and therefore repenting my selfe of it, I said thus with my selfe ; Friend Guzman ; take heed, lest this other doe not prove like that of Toledo. And if being well clad, thou shouldst not chance to meet with a Master, how wilt thou have bread to put in thy mouth ? Content thy selfe, and continue still as thou art ; For, if being well apparelled, thou shalt beg an almes, they will

[1] *Brivion*, is a loytring fellow that will not worke, but goe from Towne to Towne, from house to house, to begge a piece of bread, and a Dish of drinke. It is a French word, *Bribeur*, *mendicus* ; *Briber*, *mendicare*. Covarruvias.

give thee nothing; Keepe that which thou hast, and leave off these thy vaine and idle humours.

This deliberation took place: and having now set up my rest, I knit another knot upon my Purse-strings, and then I spake unto my money, and said, Here rest you quiet, for I know not what need I may have of your helpe. I began then in these my old raggs, that were not good enough to make waste Paper, hanging those totterd streamers as handsomely as I could about mee, (which seemed like so many little pieces of ravell'd Flannell, so full they were of Jiggs and jaggs) to beg for my living.

Having recourse still at noone to those places, where there was either bread, or porrage to be had; and sometimes it would so fall out, that I should get as much at once, as might very well serve three more besides my selfe. I visited your Cardinals, your Embassadours, your Princes, your Bishops, and other great mens houses, not overskipping any one of them. I was directed unto them by another young Youth of that Countrie, he was my Guide, who was well skill'd in that craft, and was the first Tutor that ever read any Lectures unto me in this kinde. Hee taught me the first grounds and Principles of this learned Science, and the different Species and formes of begging, how this man was to be sought unto, how that; what phrase of language to be used towards such a sort of people, and what a differing fashion to those of another kinde. For we must not have all one tone, for all sorts of persons, but must varie our note, alter our straine, and applie our selves to that stile, which we shall thinke will take best, and most move and affect the partie, whose devotion we crave.

Men doe not care for curious words and choyse phrases, they love not the smoothnesse of flatterie, and as little can they abide to be beaten about the eares with loud exclamations; that which they like best, is an honest plaine kinde of begging, *Por Amor de Dios*; Good Sir, for Gods sake, bestow one poore pennie upon me.

Your women, they are wonderfully devoted to the Virgin Mary, to our Lady del Rosario, and the like ; with these you may be a little more liberall of your Language, beseeching God, that he will direct all their Actions to his holy service, that he would deliver them from all deadly sinne, from the accusation of false Witnesses, from the power of Traytors, and the malice of evill tongues.

This being well pronounced, and repeated over and over, with a great deale of vehemency of words, and a strong and earnest delivery, makes their purses presently fly open, and happy is she who can first supply thee with an Almes. He taught me how to worke the rich to compassion, how to moove the poorer sort to pitie, and how to oblige the religious devout man, that he should not be able to get from me, before he had given me an Almes. He instructed me so well in such a company of fine cunning tricks in this kinde, that I got a great deale in a little time.

There was not that man, but I did know, even from the very Pope, to him that had ne're a Cloake : that is, from the highest to the lowest.[1] I did runne over all the streetes of Rome, and that I might not bee too troublesome by begging too often in one place, or of one person, I did divide the whole City into certaine quarters, every working-day walking my severall Station ; but on Sundayes and Holydayes, I was wholly for your Churches, I never mist, but punctually kept my houres, and there I made good purchase. But that which I made most profit of, were the pieces of bread, that were given me : These I sold, and they yeelded me many a faire penny. Part whereof those poore men did buy, which did not goe up and downe a begging, but were faire for it,[2] being (as they say) the next doore to it, who out of their poverty, were faine to trade with me, because I could affoord them a good bargaine.

And some I sold to poore Country-folkes, such as make a living of feeding Pigs, and fatting of Poultry. But those

[1] *Conoçia desde el Papa hasta el que estava sin capa.* Proverb.
[2] The Spanish word is, *Tenian la bola en el embogue.*

that were my best pay-masters, were your *Turroneros*,[1] for to make their *Alaxur* or *Alfaxor*,[2] as they call it in Castile. I did helpe my selfe besides, with some old houshold ragges, who, for that they saw I was young, and naked, did in pitie bestow them upon mee, which were something worth to mee, though to them they were things of nothing.

Afterwards, I fell in company with some other of more ancient standing in that faculty (for they had their distinction of degrees, and prioritie of formes, as in Schooles) for the better increasing of my knowledge, and that from them I might learne how to governe my selfe wisely and discreetly. These Rogues had beene admitted into the Livery long agoe, and had borne Office of Renters and Wardens, men that had held preeminence amongst them, and deserv'd to be Masters of their company. With these I went to some knowne Doles; there being some men that did dayly (out of meere devotion) distribute almes every morning to the poore in their particular houses. Going once to receive this Dole in the French Embassadors house, I might heare other poore Beggers, that were behinde me, begin to murmure, saying; This Spanish unhappy Boy, which beggeth heere now in Rome, is newly come, and a meere stranger in this place, he is not acquainted with this course of life, and for want of knowledge, (by that which I have observed in him) he is likely to beat downe the market, and if some order be not quickly taken with him, he will undoe us all. For having once fill'd his belly, in the most places where he comes, if they give him any victuals, he refuses to take them, and tels them (God be thanked) he hath dined well inough already. He will quite overthrow the Art of begging, by giving the world by this meanes to understand, that we poore Rogues have more given us, then we can well tell what to doe withall.

[1] *Qui coquit et facit turrones. Turron*, i.e. *Copta, crustulum.* A Bisket made with Honey, Almonds, small Nuts, Walnuts, Kernels of Pine-Apples, etc.

[2] *Alfaxor* is a Moorish word; And is a kinde of Conserve, made of Hony, Spices, and crummes of bread. Covarruvias, verb. *Alaxu.*

So that if he runne this course a little longer, he will hurt us, and doe himselfe no good.

Another of their Comrags, that was there with them, Tush (quoth he) hold ye your peace, let me alone with this Lad, I will take him to taske, and yee shall see how I will worke him, I will instruct him how to understand himselfe, and how he may not easily be understood by others. Leave him (I say) to me. With that, speaking softly unto me, he called me unto him, and we went out alone by our selves from all the rest of the Company. He was an excellent Proficient, and a very ready and dextrous man in all that appertained to that Art.

The first thing that he did (as if he had been the *Protopobre*, or Prince of Beggers) was, to examine my life, asking me, Whence I was? What was my name? When, and to what end I was come thither? Then did he deliver unto me the great obligation, that Beggers had to keepe a decorum in all their actions, to hold correspondence one with another, and to linke in love together like sworne brothers,[1] and that I should informe my selfe of certaine curiosities, and secrets, and some Principles, which I did not as yet know. For in very truth, that which I learned of my Youth afore-mentioned, and of other poore Rogues of lesse talent, and farre inferiour both in knowledge and experience, were all triviall things, and of no esteeme, in comparison of those precepts, which I received from this Grand-Master of his faculty. He gave me certaine Rules, which I shall never forget as long as I live.

Amongst the which, one was, that I should unfold three

[1] The Spanish word is *Hermano de mesta*. A certaine jurisdiction belonging to Heards-men and Shepheards. The Etymology thereof is not so easie; but I will deliver what I thinke, remitting my selfe to others better opinion. It is termed *Mesta*, quasi *mixta*. By reason of the concurrency and mixture of divers Herds and Flocks one amongst another. And because they make restitution of those that are thus inter-mingled one with another, which are knowne by some Markes branded with hot irons. Or it is said to be *Mesta*, of *amista*, because of the great conformitie and friendship betweene these kinde of people, who are very observant of their Lawes. This the Idiome of Aragon doth confirme, who name that, which the Spaniards call *Mesta*, *Ligallo*, which is as much as *Liga*, and *Liga* is a confederation, or friendship.

or foure leaves of my stomake, and open the booke to a plaine vomit, yet to be so well read therein, that it should not appeare to the world, that it proceeded from any surfet, or that I had over-charged my stomake. He taught me a tricke how to turne up my stomake in some by-corner, which wrought two good effects.

First, it moved the people to compassion, thinking that I was sicke : Secondly, though afterwards I should swallow downe two Platters of warme pottage, there would be roome inough still for more. And so by this meanes the infamy and misery that the poore indured, would the better be published and spred abroad. I knew how many bits I was to eate, and how I was to looke upon the bread that they gave me, how to kisse it, and how often, and what kinde of countenance to cast upon it : What fashion of behaviour I was to use, and how to carry my selfe upon all occasions, differing the forme, according to the diversitie of mens dispositions. I knew the true tone of my voice, when I was to rise, and when to fall with it. I knew the set houres wherein I was to repaire to such or such a place ; In what houses, I might enter in even to the bed-side, and in what, I might not presse no farther then the doore. I knew whom I might bee bold to importune, and be earnest withall in my craving ; and whom againe I ought not to sollicite or speake unto above once. In conclusion, he gave me in writing all the Statute-Lawes, and Orders, ordained by that free Common-wealth of beggers, instructing me in the observation of them, for the avoiding of scandall, and the better informing of my understanding. And these are they that follow.

The Lawes and Ordinances, that are inviolably to be observed amongst Beggers.

FORASMUCH as all Nations have their proper method of Begging, and are distinguished and knowne by their sound, and by a differing forme from all others ; as are your *Almanes* by their singing, and

going in troopes; your French-men, by their praying; your Flemmings, by their making of legges, and their low and frequent Congies; your Gypsies, by their importuning; your Portugals, by their weeping; your Italians, by their long Circumlocutions; and your Spaniards, by their bigge lookes, and high language, as if they would swagger a man out of an Almes whether he will or no: whereby they make themselves hatefull to their owne hurt, being held no better then vaine babblers, and a kinde of insufferable proud Rogues; these therefore we more especially will and command, that they reform this disorder, beare themselves civilly, that they doe not curse, nor blaspheme, (as too commonly they use to doe) but that they keepe good order, according to our Statutes and Ordinances in that case provided.

Item, we will and command; That none of our brother Rogues, or begger what-soever, either wounded, or lame, of any of these Nations, whence, or whatsoever, shall joyne and unite himselfe with those of another Country, and that not any person or persons of all, or any one particular, shall make any Covenant, Compact, or Alliance, with any blind men, that goe saying their prayers, from doore to doore, nor with any Mounty-bankes, Musicians, nor Poets, nor with Slaves set at libertie, though our Lady her selfe should have released and set them free from the power and tyranny of the Turkes, nor with old Souldiers, which being totter'd and torne, have forsaken their colours, and fled from their Captaines; nor with Mariners, that with one storme are dis-heartened, and have no more minde to goe to Sea. For howbeit all and every one of them doe sute and agree well together in all kinde of cheating, and roguish tricks, and would make excellent beggers, yet the Art it selfe of Begging, and the language are much differing. And therefore we will and command every one of these to keepe his owne quarter, and strictly to observe such Orders as are set downe and ordained in that case.

Item, We will and command, that the poore of every

Nation, especially in their owne Countries, have certaine Tavernes, and knowne victualling houses, where shall ordinarily preside and governe, three or foure of the more ancient amongst them, having Staves in their hands, as Ensignes of their precedencie, and authoritie: Whom wee depute, to treat in those places of all such Accidents and other things that shall happen there, or shall otherwise be brought to their knowledge. That they shall sit in Councell, and give their opinion thereupon. And when they have so done, they may afterwards play at Foxe mine Host, or some other drinking Game,[1] at Cards or Dice for their recreation, and to wash away care. They may sit over the Cup, and tell old Stories: they may recount the famous Acts, done either by themselves, or others, as also of their Ancestors, and boast of those warres, wherein they have served, and what-soever else they shall thinke fit for intertainment. CHAPTER II

Item, We will and command; That every Begger carry a good Bat or Cudgell in his hand, and those that are able, to put a good Pike at the end of it, that they may be armed and provided against all casualties, that may befall either their Purse, or their Persons. Which they are to doe upon penalty of their own hurt.

Item, That no Begger may, or doe weare any new garment, or but halfe worne out, save such as is rent and thred-bare, and full of patches, by reason of the ill example that may grow thereby, and the generall hurt that may come of it. Alwayes provided, that if any such Coat or Cloake bee given by way of Almes, that then it shall bee lawfull for him to weare it that day onely wherein it was given him, without any farther limitation of licence, but the next day following to put it off, and never weare it more, but forthwith to alter the propertie, upon paine of our generall displeasure, and his owne particular hinderance.

[1] The Spanish word is *Rentilla*: The Italian, *Gattacieca*. It is some Tosse-pots game, wherein your Ale-Knights, and idle Rogues sit over their Cups, and censure and deride all estates.

Item, We will and command, That in the taking of their places, and their seates, they doe all and every one of them observe, *antiquitatem possessionis, et non personæ*, the antiquitie of possession, and not of the person; preferring the ancienter in standing, before the elder in yeeres. And that no man shall dare or presume, to usurpe or defraud one another in this kinde.

Item, We will and command, That two sicke, or two lame persons may joyne and goe together, and call Brothers, but with this condition, that they begge by turnes, and straine their voices as high as they can reach; the one still beginning, where the other leaveth, observing equall time, and tune, every one keeping his one side of the street; and not using any artificiall phrases, or affected forme of speeches let each of them expresse, as significantly as he can, his particular griefe; and let them afterwards part and share the gaines betweene them, upon paine of our Worships displeasure.

Item, we will and commaund, That no Begger carrie from the knife upwards, any armes, either offensive or defensive. That he weare no Gloves, Pantofles, Spectacles, his hose trussed or his stockings gartered, upon paine of forfeiting of all his temporalties.

Item, it is farther enacted, That they may weare a foule filthy clowt knit about their heads in stead of a Kerchieffe.

They may also beare about them a paire of Sizars, a knife, an Awle, Needle and thred, a Thimble, a woodden Dish, a Gourd,[1] a little Hand-basket, a Scrip, a Wallet. Be it alwaies provided, that they beare no Sacke at their backe, no basket of burthen, no *Alforjas* [2] or Knap-sacke, which Travellers use to put their provision in, when they are to goe some great journey, nor any such like kinde of things as these be. But it shall be only lawfull for them to

[1] The Spanish word, is *Calabaça*: wherein Pilgrims and beggers carry their beverage.

[2] *Alforjas*, is a Wallet devided into two parts, that it may the more easily be borne upon a mans beast. It is an Arabicke word, to wit, *Ahfodja*, of the Verbe *Ahfad*, which signifies to keepe: because in it Travellers keepe their provision.

walke with two Crutches, and a fore-legge, with a long and deepe tent in it.

Item, We will and command, That all beggers beare two purses about them; one little one, and another of a bigger size, besides certaine private pockets for closer conveyance, that may safely indure a search; and that they put the almes that is given them into their Hat. And Wee further will and command, that they neither may make, nor doe make any Pouch or Budget, in Coate, Cloake, Frocke, Gabardine, Cassocke, or Mandillion, upon forfeiture, it being once espi'd and found out, they may chance to lose it, and stand registred ever after for fooles upon record.

Item, We will and command, that no man discover the secrets and mysteries of our Trade, nor divulge and publish them abroad, save only to those that are Professors of the said Arte. And he that shall invent or finde out any new tricke or cunning device for the common good, shall be bound to manifest the same to the incorporation of beggers; to the end, that it may be understood and knowne of all, for as much as such good things as these, are to be accounted as common, there being no prohibition to the contrarie; and more especially, not to be concealed from those that are our Country-men, and naturals of the same Kingdome. But for the better incouraging of others, and that notice may be taken of our good government; We give priviledge, and plenary power to the first inventor and Author thereof, that for the space of one whole and complete yeere, he make his best benefit of the first impression, not suffring or permitting any, without his especiall and particular Licence, to use or exercise the same, upon paine of our heavie displeasure.

Item, We will and command, That all beggers shall manifest and make knowne to one another, all those houses, where any almes are to be had, especially those, where there is any Gaming, as also such places, where your Gallants use to meet, and court their Mistresses; for that is a certaine rent, and seldome faileth.

Item, We will and command, That no begger breed any hunting Hounds, Greyhounds, or bloud-Hounds, nor may in his owne house have any more then one little Mungril-curre ; for the which wee give free libertie and licence, and that he lead him along with him either ty'de in a string, or otherwise fastened to his girdle.

Item, We will and command, That none shall carry a dog about with him, making him to dance and leape thorow a Hoope : nor shall it be lawfull for him to have or hold any place to begge at the doore of any Church, any station, or Jubilee, only he shall have free leave to begge as he passes along by the street, upon paine of being counted contumacious and rebellious to our Lawes and Ordinances.

Item, Wee will and command, That no begger presume to come to the Butchers shambles, or to the Fish-market, to buy either fish or flesh, save in case of extreme necessitie, and licence of the Phisician ; nor that he sing, play upon any Instrument, leape, or dance, by reason of the scandall that may arise by so doing.

Item, We licence and permit, that such beggers as are so disposed, may rent certaine children, to the number of foure (but not above) their ages being first examined ; and if two of them be taken for twinnes, borne of one wombe, at one and the selfe-same time, it shall not be thought amisse of, in case that the elder of the two be not above five yeere old. And if it bee a woman that goes about with these children, she shall beare one of them sucking at her brest ; and if a man, he shall carry one of them in his armes, and lead the other along by the hand, and not otherwise.

Item, We will and command, That those Beggers that have any children, they make setting dogges of them, to lie watching close at your Churches, and have still an eye upon those that come in and out, for whom it shall be lawfull to begge an almes for their poore father or mother, that lie very sicke and keepe their beds, and have nothing to helpe themselves withall, having foure or five small children,

that are ready to starve for want of food. Alwaies provided, that it be so taken and understood, that this Patent extends not to any that is above sixe yeeres of age; for if they shall once exceed and passe those yeeres, then are they to shift for themselves, and like birds that are flush, to forsake the nest, and like Hounds that are readie to be entred, nose out their owne living, and goe abroad, and bring home their prey at usuall and ordinarie houres.

Item, We will and command, That no begger give consent, or suffer his children to serve, to be bound Prentice to any Trade, or to waite upon any man, whom he shall acknowledge for his Master. For their gaines will be little, and their labour much: And therein they shall greatly offend, by not following the steps of their forefathers, and running a course quite contrary to that good way, wherein they have beene borne and bred.

Item, We will and command, That by seven of the morning in the Winter, and at five in the Summer, no begger be in his bed, or keepe his lodging, but by breake of day, as soone as the Sunne shall be ready to peepe forth, or some halfe houre before they goe abroad to gather honey for their hive. And likewise, that some halfe an houre before the shutting in of the Evening, he by all meanes, and at all times retire himselfe, and get him home; save only in some cases reserved, and that with our especiall leave and licence.

Item, We permit and give leave, that they may breake their fast in the morning, eating a morsell of some thing or other, if they have laboured for their living, and gotten any thing the same morning, and not otherwise. For therein they lose time (which is a precious thing) and spend upon the stocke, by diminishing the principall. But with condition, that he wash and clense his mouth, that the sent thereof be not perceived; As likewise, that he passe not up and downe the streets, or by any mans house, playing with a clove of Garlicke in his hand, a sliced Onion, or that his breath smell of Wine; upon paine of being held incapable and unfit to begge.

Item, We will and command, that no man dare to play the Impostor, or commit any grosse villanie, as to steale houshold-stuffe, or helpe to convey it away, or exchange it for other, or to untyle houses, or strip children of their cloathes, or to commit any the like base action, upon paine of being excluded from our brotherhood, and put out of our incorporation, and to be remitted over to the secular power.

Item, Our will and pleasure is, that every begger, when he shall be of full age; that is, (three yeeres after twelve, being fully complete and ended) having legally and worthily laboured in that course of life, and attained to the true arte of this our free and noble Profession, he be held, taken, knowne, and understood (be it any such manner of person or persons) to have fulfilled the Law, and comply'd with the Statute: notwithstanding, that two other yeeres to gaine experience, and to learne how to drive the fish into the net,[1] have alwaies to this very day and present houre, beene thought very necessarie and expedient; and ever after to be held as a Graduate, that hath performed his exercise, and taken Degree amongst us. And having thus profest himselfe, and made proofe of his learning and manners, we farther will and command, that he have, hold, and injoy all the Liberties, Priviledges, and exemptions granted by us under our great Seale; but with this condition, that he neither may, nor at any time doe forsake our service, and that hee shew his obedience unto us, by observing our Lawes and Statutes, and by submitting himselfe to our Censure, in case he shall offend against them.

[1] *Xavega* is the Spanish word, which is a Fishers net at Sea, wherewith by little and little, they goe drawing and haling the fish to the shore, where certaine *Picaros* and Rogues are still waiting for to pull and tugge at the cordes of the net, whom they call *Los de la Xavega*. It is an Arabick word, which in it's owne termination is said to bee *Xibquetum*, of the Verbe *Xebque*, which signifieth, to intrap, or bring into the Net.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER III

How Guzman de Alfarache, was not only reprehended by a learned Rogue, and Doctor in his facultie; but likewise how he learned of him some new Orders and Capitulations, concerning this his roguish kinde of life, and that which hapned unto him in this his upright course; And of many Precepts and lessons, delivered unto him upon this point by a Cordovese, an old cunning Crosse-biter

ESIDES these Ordinances, they had many other which they duly kept and observed, not worthy at this time to be spoken of, which were prescribed and compiled by the advice and counsell of the famousest Rogues in Italy, every one (in his time) setting downe such Lawes, as then seemed most convenient. So that it might be said of them, that they were another new Recompilation, or gathering together of those of Castile. These were much illustrated in those daies by one, whose proper name was Alberto, whose surname Mizer Morcon: Whom in Rome, we had made choyce of for our Generall; Who, for his stature, shape, proportion of body, his fashion, conversation, and commendable carriage, deserved to have the Imperiall Crowne set upon his head. For he farre surpassed all his Predecessours, who were no way to be compared unto him, so farre did he outstrip all them that had gone before him. He might deservedly be stiled the Prince of Roguerie, and the Arch-begger of Christendome. Hee would devoure you at one meale, all the tripes and intrailes of two good sheepe, togèther with the puddings that were made of them, besides the Trotters, a whole

Mizer Morcon, Generall and Superintendent over the beggers

Cowes Udder, ten pound of bread, unboulted and unsifted, betweene the beginning and end of dinner, allowing himselfe thereunto in drinke, two *Açumbres* [1] of Wine. And albeit he himselfe alone got more almes in one day then any sixe of those ordinarie beggers, which gained most; yet had he never any overplus left, nor did sell any of those scraps, that were given him, nor did receive any money, which he did not presently drinke out. And he did goe so farre beyond us, and was every way so much our superiour, that we must of force (as Vassals to his good or bad fortune) succour and relieve him all that wee could. I never saw him buttond, nor covered from the girdle upward, never to weare any girdle, nor so much as halfe a hose or shoe upon foot or legge; His head was evermore bare, his beard close shaven, and his skinne all over his body did shine and glister, as if it had beene anointed and basted with Bacon.

Orders, set downe by Morcon, King of Beggers

This Upright-man did ordaine, that every poore body should carry about with him a woodden dish in the crowne of his hat, or some other convenient place, and the dried rinde of a Pumpion, wherein to put his Wine, clapping it in some close place, where it might not be seene.

That no begger should carry any jarre or pot about him, wherein to drinke his water. But when he came to drinke, he should sup it out of a Caldron, a Kettle, a great earthen Pan, some broad Tub, or huge Vatte, or the like, and then too, to thrust in his head like a beast, and not in any other manner.

That he, that should not drinke a sound draught after his Sallet, should bee made incapable to drinke afterwards, as long as that supper, or dinner lasted, and to rise up a thirst.

That no begging Rogue should buy, or eate any Comfits, Conserves, or the like sweet things.

That every one should eate either Salt, or Pepper with his meat, unlesse it have beene therewith seasoned before.

[1] Every *Açumbre*, we devide into foure measures, which we call in Spaine, *quartillos*. An *Açumbre*, may be said also to be a great big Jarre, or Pitcher filled with Wine.

In that case, the doing, or not doing of it, shall be left to his owne liberty.

That your poore Rogues shall be bound to sleep upon the ground in their cloathes, without Pillow or Bolster, lying upon their backs, with their faces up to heaven.

That having gotten inough to spend that day he goes a begging, hee shall trouble himselfe no farther, nor begge any more for that day, but give way to others to gleane, where he left off.

This our Mizer Morcon, when he did eate, would lye lazing all along upon the ground, and would sleepe both Winter and Summer, without any covering of Sheet, Blanket, or any thing else that might keepe him warme.

Ten moneths of the yeere, he never went out of Tavernes, and victualling houses; We had (as you have heard) our Lawes and Orders amongst us, all which I committed to memory, and was perfect in them, but did observe no more of them, save such as appertained to good government, and of these I was every way as religious, and observant, as if my salvation had depended upon the true keeping of them. I made it my chiefe happinesse, and placed a kinde of felicitie therein, that my Actions might credit my Profession, and become absolute in my calling. For things, that are once imitated and begun by us, when we have taken them in hand, are not easily to be forgotten, nor to be given over, till they be fully finished, and ended. For it is a note of small prudence, to enter upon many things, and to end none of them.

I did not put my hand to any thing, that ever I tooke it away, till I saw my labour ended, and had fully effected what I had under-taken. But because as yet I was but greene fruit, and not come to my full ripenesse, whereby I wanted much of my true relish, I failed much in the practicke part of my profession, and fell short dayly in such casualties as did usually offer themselves unto me, and in many of them I did much erre.

Upon a Feast-day, about the beginning of September,[1]

[1] In Italy in that moneth it is hot at that time of day.

THE THIRD BOOKE

towards one of the clock in the afternoone, I went into the Citie in that great heat, and such a scorching Sunne, that I am not able to expresse it, perswading my selfe, that whosoever should heare me begge at that time of day, would verily thinke, that I was wondrous hungry, and taking pitie of me, would relieve me with some thing or other.

Guzman recounts the tricks used by Beggers: And a jest that was put upon him

I would needs (meerely out of curiositie, and no other end else in the world) see what I could get at these unseasonable houres. I walkt my Stations through some streets, and visited many houses, but could get nothing from them, save evill words, giving me foule language, and many a bitter curse, asking me in a Divels name what I made there? And so roming about from house to house, I came at last to one, where I knockt at the doore with my Staffe, but no body would answere me. I knockt the second time, and the third, but all was one. Then I inlarged my voice, and began in the highest key I could reach, to set out my throat, and to begge as loud as I could for my life. For the house was very great, and stood farre within, and therefore supposed they could hardly heare me, unlesse I strained my note a little higher. Whilest I was thus balling at the doore, a roguish Boy of the Kitchen, who (as it should seeme) was scouring of Dishes, came just to the same window, under which I directly stood, and threw downe upon me a great bucket of scalding water; and when hee saw it had fairely lighted upon me, he leisurely utters: *Aqua va, quardaos debaxo.* Ware water, looke to your selves there below. With that I began to cry out, that all the street did ring of me, grievously complaining, that I was kill'd by some of that house, and that it was impossible I should live. True it is, that I was scalded, but not in that cruell manner as I made my crimination.

With this vociferation of mine, and the lamentable exclamation that I made, the people flockt about me, and every one spake what he thought: One said, it was ill done; another, that it was mine owne fault; and that, though my selfe had no minde to sleepe, yet I ought in good manners to suffer others to take their rest.

CHAPTER III

There were some others, that did comfort me the best they could, and of those that were some-what more tender-hearted then the rest, I made a shift to picke up some money amongst them, and with the helpe of that, I went first where I might dry myselfe, and afterwards got me home to take my rest; muttering to my selfe, as I went along, Who (with a pocks) made me so curious, as to goe about to remove the River out of his bed? When shall I bee able to containe my selfe? When shall I learne to content myselfe with that, which shal be fit and necessarie for me, without incroaching upon that, which is not convenient for me? What Divell did deceive me, and drew mee out of that ordinarie tracke, which I was wont to tread, by making mee to be more forward then the rest of my fellowes? I drew neere at last to mine owne lodging, and there hard by dwelt an old poore man, about some threescore and ten yeeres of age; who was borne of beggerly Parents, that had borne Office in our Incorporation, and had left this trade of begging unto him by inheritance, wherewith he made a shift to live, and to passe his life away heere upon earth.

A Begger that was a Cordovese, teacheth Guzman many lessons concerning the Art of begging

He was of Cordova, there was he borne: Which I the rather tell you, that you may know that he was dy'de in his wooll, a notable Rogue in graine, whom his Mother brought to Rome sucking at her brest, in the yere of Jubilee.

When he saw me passe by in that miserable pickle, looking for all the world like a dish-clout, all wet, all to be-moyl'd, foule and full of grease, and all to be spatter'd with the refuse leaves of Coleworts, and the over-sodden empty Husks of Pease, wherewith my garments were imbroidered all over; he askt me what had hapned unto me? I acquainted him with the whole successe of the businesse. He was ready to burst himselfe with laughing, and having made himselfe merry a while at my mis-fortune, composing his countenance, with a settled kinde of gravity, in the end he said thus unto me:

I feare me (my friend Guzman) that you will prove another Benitillo, you are such a Hot-spurre, and your young

bloud boyles so fast within you, that you would faine come to be a Master, before you have attain'd to be a Scholler. Doest thou not now perceive, that thou hast done ill, in exceeding thy Commission, and in breaking those customes, that are ordered and ordained by the Company? Yet, because thou art my Country-man, and a yong Lad (and therfore apt to erre) I will teach and instruct thee, what thou oughtest to doe, and how to behave thy selfe. Sit thee downe by mee, and hearken well to that which I shall say unto thee.

Your Spaniards generally sleepe after dinner all the Summer time

And first of all, I would have thee to consider, That you must not goe a begging in the Summer time presently after dinner, when most men are disposed to *Sestear*,[1] and to lye downe and take a Nap, in some place of shade, or some coole roome; and lesse at Noble mens houses, then those of your Trades-men, and Cittizens. The houre is im-proper, and unfit, and all of them then either doe, or at least are desirous to take their rest. And it would be as strange, as troublesome unto them, that any should then offer to wake them; And importunities, at that time of all other, are most irkesome, and unpleasing unto them.

Next, I would have thee take this Rule of me, (and it is a true one) That when you have call'd or knock't at one doore twice, either there is nobody within, or they will not be within, because they are not willing to answere. When thou perceiv'st that, get thee gone, and stay there no longer; for thou maist well lose thy time, but thou shalt get no money.

Never offer to draw a Latch, or to thrust open a doore that is put to, nor to enter within the house. For it hapneth sometime in the opening of a doore, that (without the knowledge of those of the house, not once dreaming of any such accident) a dogge may suddenly rush fiercely forth upon thee, and carry away half a Buttocke at a bit. Nor doe I know how these scurvy Curs should come to know us, so well as they doe, but I am sure we are hated by them,

[1] *Sestear*, i.e. *reposar a la Sombra en la hora de Sexta. Que es la del medio dia.*

and they wil never let us passe by them, without barking, or biting. And if the Dog should be missing, some desperate roguish Boy or other will not faile to fall upon thee, telling thee that, which thou wouldst be loth to heare. And it is well if thou scape him so.

When thou beggest for an Almes, thou must not laugh, nor change thy note, but so tune thy voice, that it may carry the show of one that is sicke, though thou have health inough for thy selfe, and some to spare for thy neighbours; having a speciall care, that your face keepe an even correspondence with your eyes; your mouth it's equall and just compasse, and your head bending towards your bosome.

Rubbe thy face a mornings, when thou risest, with a cloth that is rather dankish, then dung-wet, that when thou goest abroad, thou maist seeme neither faire, nor foule. And on thy cloathes, clap many patches, though they bee never so hole; and let them be of divers colours. For it much importeth, that a poore mans cloathes should be rather patch't, then neat and cleanely; yet so, that they be not so slovenly, as to cause loathsomenesse.

It will sometimes so fall out, that comming to a man to begge an Almes, hee will take off his Glove, and put his hand into his pocket, whereof thou wilt be glad, and laugh to thy selfe, thinking that he hath a purpose to bestow an Almes upon thee, when as in the end thou shalt see him only pull out his Handkerchiefe to blow his Nose. But for all this, thou must not bee angry, nor seeme to grumble at the matter, for it may be some other may bee by him, which will give thee some-what, though he doe not. Whereas, if he shall perceive thy proud and sullen carriage, he will give thee nothing.

Where thou shalt finde thy selfe well used, see thou repaire thither dayly: For as Devotion shall abound, so shall thy Stocke increase. But see, that thou never depart from his doore, till thou have pray'd for his friends that are deceased, and to intreat of God, that

he will be pleased to blesse and prosper him in all his Actions.

Answere evill language, with milde words, and to rough speech, apply soft tearmes; For thou art a Spaniard, and for our pride (being ill belov'd) we are abhorred of all, wheresoever we come; And he that will draw money out of another mans purse, must rather begge, then brawle; crave, then curse; pray, then blaspheme. For a gentle Calfe sucks milke from a strange teat, as well as from his damm's.[1]

When they shall not give thee an Almes, answere with devotion, God bee thanked: God blesse your Worship, and grant much health, peace, and content to this house, for the great good, and mercy, that you daily doe, and shew unto the poore. This tricke got mee a great deale of money; for answering them so gently, and so mildly, holding up my hands, and lifting up my eyes unto heaven; they would call me backe againe, and give me of that they had.

Besides all this, he taught me how to faigne my selfe a Leper, to make wounds in my flesh, to raise a swelling in my legge, to benumme an arme, to set a counterfeit colour on the face, to alter the whole body, and other curious principles of his Art; to the end that some might not twit us in the teeth, and upbraidingly say unto us; that our limmes were sound, and our selves strong and healthy, that wee should worke for our living, and that it were no charitie, to relieve such lusty stout young Rogues. He did me many friendly Offices, he had many curious secrets of nature, whereof he made good use; Nor did he hide any thing from me; for he found me very capable, and apt to receive whatsoever he should put into me; And then he began to say unto me, You see my foot is already in the stirrop to goe unto my grave, and I would willingly leave a Chaplaine behinde me to pray unto God for me. And it fell out true as he said; for within a short time after he died.

[1] Proverb. *La bezerra mansa mama de madre agena y dela suya.*

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER III

Wee did some of us meet many times together, to repeate our parts, and to make shew, what manner of exclamations would best become us, and make most for our profit; These we studied by night, inventing divers methodes and formes of benediction. There was a poore man that got his living only by making these formes for us, and did sell them unto us, at the rate of so many Comedies or Tragedies. And all was little enough, and no more then needed, to move mens mindes, and to stirre them up to compassion.

On festivall dayes we would be up betimes, where the Pardons and Indulgences were stirring, that we might provide us some good place in the Church; for it was no small benefit unto him, that could get neere unto the Font where the Holy-water was, or to that little Chappell, whither they were to make their station.

Wee would now and then goe a Progresse, and runne over all the Countrie, not leaving out a Village, nor so much as a Cottage bordering there-abouts, which we did not goe unto; Whence, we came very well furnisht: For they would give us Bacon, Cheese, Bread, and Eggs in great abundance, besides cloathes to cover our nakednesse, pittying very much our poore and miserable condition.

Wee would many times begge a draught of Wine for Gods sake, complayning much of the paine and weakenesse of our stomacke. As much as you will, would they say, if you have any thing wherein to put it.

Wee alwaies carried a little Jarre with us, under colour of drinking water in it, which held somewhat lesse then halfe an *Açumbre*; They would evermore fill it brim-full, before they give it us; But we were no sooner gone from that doore, but we did presently empty it into a *Bota*,[1] which one of our Company carried behinde him at his girdle, which would well hold some foure *Açumbres*. And I remember it was once our hap to fill it full in one street alone, so that we were inforced to goe home, and powre

[1] This word is margented before. *Bota*, quasi *imbuta*, of the Latine Verbe, *Imbuo*. It is in briefe, a Bottle or *Boracha* made of Lether, to carry Wine in.

it forth into a little earthen vessell (which they call a *Tinajuela*) and then came backe againe to get more.

We usually went shod, but as good have beene unshod, our heads covered, but as good have gone bare ; So that we had shooes, and no shooes ; hats, and no hats ; For our shooes were sandal-fashion, old enough, and torne enough, and our hats were sutable unto them ; the one would scarce hang on our feet, the other scarce sit on our heads.

Wee seldome wore any shirt at all. For, when (according to our accustomed humilitie) we should crave an almes at such a doore, they would ordinarily say, Pardon me (my friend ;) I have not for you. God helpe you, I will give you something at another time. Then we begin anew, and cry ; An old paire of shooes, or an old hat (good Master) for this poore soule, that hath never a shoo to his foot to beare him out of the durt, nor never a hat to defend his head from the Sunne and the raine ; Gods holy name be praised. The Lord blesse your Worship ; and deliver your good Worship from such a deale of miserie and wretchednesse, as we poore creatures indure. God multiply his blessings upon you, and free you and yours, and all that you have, from the power of Traitors and Villaines ; Christ Jesus guard your Worship, and give you health both of body and soule, which is the greatest wealth of all, and the truest riches.

The fashions of Beggers in begging an almes

If after this he shall reply : Indeed (brother) I have not for you, I can not pleasure you at this time, excuse me.

Then, upon the necke of that comes another replicant, and he laies about him, beseeching him to bestow upon him some old shirt, though never so ragged and torne, for to cover the flesh, and to cure the wounds of this poore miserable man, and that he shall finde it againe in heaven, and that God will one day cover him againe with the cloathing of his mercy, and put upon him a newer and a whiter stole of innocencie and righteousnesse, that shall never weare out. I begge it of you for Jesus Christ his sake, he knowes my wants, and that I am not able to worke and labour for my living. The Lord helpe me ; And the

Lord reward you. And praised be that pure unspotted- CHAPTER
nesse of our blessed Lady the Virgin Mary. III

Now tell me, what heart is there in the world, though of Jasper, and what bowels, though as tough as Iron, and as hard as steele, which will not bee made malleable with this hammer, and melt into compassion with the heat and warmth of so many good words ?

Few houses did escape us, without some one purchase or other. And never a paire of shooes could be so bad, no hat so vile, and no shirt so old, that was given us, but yeeld us more then a piece of three pence. To us it was much, but to him that parted with it, of no profit, and lesse reckning. It was to us a mine in the Serro de Potosi : [1] We had Merchants and Brokers for every one of these things, who would lay us downe money for them on the boord, perfumed and washt over with the water of Angels.[2]

We had upon the way certaine little Asses, whereon we did ride by turnes, when any store of raine fell, that we might the better passe over the Rivers, when the waters were risen. And if we did light by chance upon any person, that seemed to beare the face of authoritie, we began to call upon him a farre off, many a large step before we came at him, to the end that he might have leisure enough to pull out his Purse, and take forth an almes ; for if we should stay our begging till we did just incounter each other, many would forbeare to give us, lest they might be hindred in their journey, and so we should goe without it. And taking this course, we did seldome misse.

Other-whiles, when we saw fit occasion and time for it, upon discoverie of some companie of people that came trooping together, we would prepare our selves to put on a counterfeit lamenesse, to fall a halting, and betake us to our Crutches : we would change our lookes, alter our

[1] I conceive this, *Serro de Potosi*, to bee some hill or mountaine in the West Indies, being a principall Mine among the rest, that yeelded great store of treasure.

[2] The Spanish word which is, *Aqua de los Angeles*, is so called by the Spaniards, because it is of an extraordinary sweetnes, distilled out of divers different flowers, and Aromaticall drugges.

countenances, take one another up upon our backs, writhe our mouthes, turne the lids and balls of our eyes up to heaven, some feigning themselves dumbe, other-some crippled, and blinde, making shew that wee could not goe but upon Stilts, when as indeed we were as nimble and light-footed as the Bucke. We would clap our feet in a trice in certaine Swathes, that hung at our necks for that purpose, and carry our armes in a string, so that with these counterfeit tricks, and the helpe of good language, desiring God to send them well on their journey, and that he would preserve their limmes, and blesse their eye-sight, and bring them safe to their journies end, did alwaies bring us in money. And these we did call our Adventures, because these good fortunes befell us abroad in strange Countries, in places that were desart and unpeopled, and because commonly it succeeded well with us. But otherwise, we did goe no farther then what was precisely set downe unto us, and was held to be necessarie for the performance of our Progresse.

We had one excellent gift above all the rest, That there was not any Feast, where we were not present, getting us some one good place or other; nor any Banquet, whereof we had not a part; Our noses were so good, that wee could smell such things some ten streets off.

Wee had no house at all, yet every house was ours; For either a Cardinals, an Embassadours, or some Noble-mans Porch or other did never faile us; And if all, or any of these did faile us, the Church Porches were free, and no body could there put us out. So that having no proprietie in any thing, wee did notwithstanding possesse every thing.

There were some likewise, that had old ruinous Castles, decayed buildings, and other poore lodgings not worth any thing, where we did make our Rendevous: For all were not permitted to be Adventurers, nor all allowed Pipkins [1] to

[1] The Spanish word is *Puchero*: An earthen Pot, or Pipkin, wherein they boyle *las Puches*. Now *Puches* is a kinde of dressing and seething of meale and Oyle together. Which in ancient time, was much used before the invention of baking bread was found out. Latinè, *Pultes*. Covarruvias, Verb. *Puches, y Puchero.*

boyle their meat in; But I (who was but a young strippling) looke where I was over-night, I would be sure to be there againe the next day; So that albeit I had many times bad lodging, yet my youth bore it out, and it seemed to me as good as the best. CHAPTER III

CHAPTER IV

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth of the Charitie, that we are to use towards our neighbour; He recounteth what befell him with a Gentleman: And of the free life, and great libertie which a Begger injoyes

NE true signe, and assured token of our predestination, is the Pitie and Compassion which wee have of our neighbour. For, to have a fellow-feeling of another mans miserie, (as if the case were our owne) is a deed of Charitie, which covereth a multitude of sinnes; and where there is love, there is God; and he evermore plentifully dwelleth in those hearts by his holy Spirit, where Charitie and mercy aboundeth. All things, with it, have life and being; without it, dye, and come to nothing. For, neither the gift of Prophecie, nor the understanding of Mysteries, nor the knowledge of God, no nor Faith it selfe, without charitie, is any thing at all, but is all as nothing. To love my neighbour, as I love my selfe, is of all other, the richest and the greatest Sacrifice; because it is offred up in the Temple of the ever-living God. And the merit is as great (through the mercy of our Saviour Jesus Christ) to be truly sensible of our brothers miserie and undoing; as is the pleasure that we take, that our selves should bee saved.

A good marke of Predestination

Charity, of what force it is

To love our neighbour, is a great Sacrifice

THE THIRD BOOKE

Charitie is the end of the Commandements, it is the only marke, whereat the precepts of the Law doe shoot. And hee that shall be charitable, shall finde the Lord mercifull unto him in the day of his tryall. And because without God, we are not able to merit any thing of our selves, and for that Charitie is the gift of God, it is very fit and necessarie, that we should begge it at his hands with teares, and doe workes worthy the obtaining of it, moystning with those precious drops, the great drought that we suffer in our soules, and mollifying therewith the hardnesse of our hearts, that they may bring forth the fruits of good Workes, which are the effects of a true and lively faith. For, the humble and contrite spirit shall never be forsaken, but God will rather still succour and supply him with his grace, bestowing his best favours upon him, and inriching him with many notable and knowne benefits.

The charitable man is favoured of God

And albeit Riches (being so neere a neighbour as it is unto Pride) be an occasion of Vice, weakning, and infeebling those our other Vertues, though it bee dangerous to it's Owner ; though it be a tyrannizing Lord, and a trayterous Slave ; yet notwithstanding it is of the nature of Sugar, which hath this condition and propertie belonging unto it, that (if it be sweet and good, and hath not lost his savour) with warme things, it warmeth and giveth heat, and with cold things, it cooleth and refresheth. To the rich, it serves as an Instrument and meanes (by the helping hand of Charitie) to buy eternall blessednesse. And that man shall be charitable, and truely rich, who making the poore man rich, shall make himselfe, of a rich man, poore. For thereby, hee shall make the world to know, that hee is a true Disciple of his Saviour Jesus Christ.

Riches, compared to Sugar

I stood one day in the outward Court of a Cardinals house, hard by the Porch, closely wrapt and muffled up in a great Russet Cloake, just of the same colour as it came from the Sheepes backe, without any other Dye in the world : which was so full of Patches, one clapt upon another, which I had sowne so of purpose, that (where it had least) it was no lesse then of three threds, so that you could not

What manner of Cloake Guzman had

at all, or very hardly discerne the ground of it's owne true colour. It was as hard and as stiffe as any boord, and for all weathers, farre better then your fastest Felt, or your closest-wrought Rugge, or any other frized cloth in the world; for it was wondrous warme, and no ayre, water, nor cold would passe thorow it, and I was about to say (please it you to excuse the excesse of the phrase) that no arrow was able to pierce it.

Whilst I was thus waiting, there comes mee in a Cavallero to visit the Cardinall, seeming both by his Person, and his Attendants, to bee a Gentleman of principall ranke and quality. Who, when he saw mee standing there in this manner, thought verily with himselfe, that I was sicke of an Ague, and that I had then my cold fit upon me: when as indeed the cause that I lookt so pittifull was, that I had layen there in the Porch the night before; and because it was winter time, and that the ayre was fresh, and the winde blew cold, I was willing to keep me where I was, till the day had advanced it selfe a little more forward.

A Gentleman sees Guzman, he lookes upon him, pities him, gives him an almes, and praiseth God

He look't earnestly upon me, and after he had well view'd me, he stood still, and beckned me unto him. I sneak't out my head, when I came neere unto him, and being amazed on the sudden, and much astonished, to see a man of his worth approche so neere unto mee, my countenance did come and goe, and began strangely to change and alter it selfe, not knowing why, or wherefore, or what should be the cause of this sudden alteration.

He (good Gentleman) thought that I did shake and tremble, and kindely said unto me; Put on thy Hat, my Boy, put on, I say, and cover thy head; God comfort thee, and send thee well: And with that putting his hand into his pocket, he tooke out all that he had, which was a matter of some thirteene Royals and a halfe, and gave them mee. I tooke them, and was so ravished therewith, that I was almost beside my selfe, as well in regard of the liberalnesse of the Almes, as to see how he went away from me, lifting up his eyes unto heaven.

And, I verily beleeve, that he said to himselfe, as he went

along; Let (O Lord) the Angels blesse thee, and all those Courtiers, that wait on thee in thy heavenly Kingdome; Let all the spirits of heaven praise and magnifie thy holy name, for men doe not know how to honour thee, they are rude and ignorant creatures. O Lord, how much am I bound unto thee! that I beeing made of no better metall then this poore man, and perhaps borne of no better bloud then he, should sleepe and take my rest in my soft bed, whilest he is forced to lye on the hard ground; should goe thus well clad as I doe, whilest he remaines naked, and comfortlesse; should be thus rich, as I am, and hee so poore; that I should be sound, and he sicke; I admitted, and he despised: And whereas thou mightest (by exchanging only of our places) have bestow'd all that upon him, which thou hast conferr'd on me; Yet (O Lord) thou hast been pleased to deale otherwise with me; and thou thy selfe best knowest why, and wherefore. Save me (sweet Jesu) by that precious bloud, which thou sheddest for my sinnes. For this shall be my true riches, to lay fast hold upon thee: for having thee, I have all things; and not having thee, I have nothing. I say, that this Gentleman knew very well how to imploy those Talents, which God had put into his hands; not considering so much to whom he gave, as for whose sake he gave. Looking well upon me, and looking well into himselfe, weighing my wretched, and his happy condition, he gave me all that he had, with a franke hand, and a free heart; the one being as full of bounty, as the other of compassion.

A worthy consideration

Such good soules as these, did (in the exercising of their Charity) gaine heaven by our hands, and we (wicked Villaines) have lost it by theirs; since, through the greedy desire that we have to receive, being still craving and begging when we have no need, we rob those thereof that are in true want, suffering this Vice of ours to usurpe upon anothers Office. We went still full gorg'd, greater gluttons and drunkards the world did not affoord; our sides were ready to cracke with gurmandizing, and our braines to burst with bowzing; your Senators of Rome could not live

To begge without need, may get us money, but lose us heaven

more merrily then we did, for wee were as tall trencher-men, and as good Epicures as the best of them. And albeit we are not so much respected, nor live not in that repute and esteeme as they doe; yet our manner of life hath a great deale more ease in it, and I am sure, a great deale lesse trouble.

The great priviledges belonging unto Beggers

And we have besides two such Priviledges, as none of them all, no not the best man in Rome hath the like. The one is a kinde of liberty that wee have in begging, yet neverthelesse doe not loose our liberty, which is not so with your better sort of men. For misery hath no greater misery with it, then when a man is forced to be beholding to such or such a friend to succour and relieve his wants, though this helpe should come from the free hand of his owne naturall brother. For hee buyes at a deare rate, that receives this kindnesse; and farre more dearely does he sell, who gives to him that is of a thankefull nature. And if on this point of begging, I might boldly speake my opinion, it is the worst mis-fortune, that can befall a poore mans life, when he once comes to be driven to beg out of meere necessity. For although it be freely given, yet the very craving thereof doth cost him much. Moreover, I shal tell thee what is the cause, that begging doth so much vexe a man, and why it goes so much against his stomake, which is; That man beeing a perfect reasonable creature, like unto God himselfe (as himselfe saith) for when he was to make man (the most blessed Trinity assisting at that Creation) God said; Let us make Man after our owne Image and likenesse. (And I could also tell thee, how this is to be understood, but it is not proper for this time and place.) Well, Man was made, and comming forth into the world, we are all of us naturally inclined to deifie our selves, seeking as much as in us lyeth, to come neere unto God; nay, (if it were possible) to be gods. And with this thirst, we still grow dryer and dryer; and with this hunger, waxe weaker and weaker.

Why it grieves a mans heart to begge

Man, whereunto he is inclined

We see, that God created all things: we would faine doe the like. And seeing we can not doe it, as his divine

Majestie did, of nothing, we would doe it of something, as farre forth as our ability hath power to stretch, seeking to conserve *individua Specierum*, the individuals of every Species, or severall kinds upon earth. The bruit beasts in the Fields; the Fishes, in the Waters; the Plants, in the Earth: And so every thing in it's nature, that is in the world. He beheld those workes, which he had made with his owne hands, and they seemed to him very good, as proceeding from those blessed and powerfull hands of his. He tooke delight in looking upon them, for they were made to his minde. This passeth currant at this day, as it is set downe in the letter. And we likewise are desirous to doe, or at least to counterfet the like; striving to imitate him all that we may.

Every man loves his owne

How well doe I like that Bird, that I have bred up in mine owne house? That Lambe, which hath beene reared in mine owne Farme? That Tree, which hath been planted in mine owne Orchard? That Flower, which hath sprung up in mine owne Garden? What comfort doe I take in looking upon them? how does it joy me, to see them to thrive and prosper? Insomuch, that what my selfe have not bred, made, or planted with mine own hands, although it be otherwise very good in it selfe, I wil not stick to pluck it up by the roots, and cast it away from me, and never grieve therat, it shal never trouble me: wheras that, which is the work of mine own hands; the deare child of my industry; the fruit of my labours, though it be not so good as the other; yet because it is my own handy-work, I like it, and I love it. From my neighbours or my friends Tree, I will not onely take away the Flower, and the fruit, but I will not so much as leave a leafe, or a sprigge thereupon, and if I have a minde thereunto, I will not greatly care to cut it downe to the ground. But if it be mine owne, and that I have planted it with mine own hands, it would grieve my very soule, if I should finde but a Pismire, or a Caterpiller upon it, to doe it any hurt, or to see a Bird but to pecke at it; and all because it is mine. In a word, we doe all of us love our owne workes. And so, in wishing well unto

them, I am like to him that made me, and have it from him by inheritance.

Gods greatnesse, and mans basenesse

The like is true in all other actions. It is very proper in God to give; and very improper, to crave. Unlesse, when he requireth something of us for our owne good. For that which he asketh of us, it is not for himselfe, neither hath he any need thereof; for he is *Remedium totius necessitatis*: The onely reliever of all our wants, and the onely satisfier of the hungry. He hath much, and therefore is able to give much; and nothing can be wanting unto him. He doth communicate and impart unto all according to their severall necessities, easilier then thou canst take water out of the Sea, and with a farre larger hand; so great an in-equalitie is there betwixt thy misery, and his mercy.

We would likewise be like to him in this: He made me according to his owne likenesse, and I ought accordingly to be like unto him; even as the thing instamped, ought to be like unto the Stampe. How mad, how eager, how desirous, and how foolishly are we all bent upon giving? The Covetous, the saving man, the Rich, the Usurer, the Begger, all doe keepe and hoord up for to give. But the most of these men understand least (as I told you before) when they are to give, for they doe not give, till they be dead. If thou aske these men, why they masse up money, and why in their life-time they bury it under ground, and to what end they doe it? Some will answere thee, that they lay it up for their heires; others, for their soules; others, that they may leave something behinde them, and all of them sure that they carry none of it away with them. Thou seest then, how they are willing to give, and how out of its due time and season; like an untimely birth, which comes not to perfection. But in the end, this is our end, this our desire.

To have wherewith to give, is a great comfort to a man

How God-like does a man finde himselfe, when with a generous minde he hath wherewith to give, and doth give? How sweet and pleasing is his hand unto him; how cheerefull his countenance; how quiet his heart; how contented his Soule? His gray haires are removed; his bloud is

refreshed ; his life is inlarged. And (questionles) so much the more, by how much he knows, that he hath ability to do it, and is not afraid that he shall ever want. If wee be willing therefore to doe that, which he did ; (for so did he with us) let us take as much pleasure to give, as it would grieve us at the heart to aske.

A noble spirit cannot begge

And those, towards whom Gods hand hath beene so franke and liberall, and having made them (which likewise is another particular gift of his) of a noble minde, if they finde themselves oppressed with want, and deprived of these their worldly goods, they will rather indure any misery whatsoever, then begge of another to relieve their wretched estates.

What kinde of almes is nobly bestowed

These are the men, of whom there is great pittie to be had, and these the whole world ought to relieve with a full hand. For by this it is knowne, who does them friendship, and shewes them any kindnesse, when seeing them in necessitie, they succour them, before they crave their helpe. For, if they should be put to that push, and be driven to sue unto them, they will neither give, nor lend them. It is a debt which they pay them, and yet put it forth to Usurie with advantage. This is a friend indeed, which succours his friend in time of need : And this I call succour,[1] when I concurre and run along with him. It becomes me to give, but beseemes not him to aske. I am to runne equall fortunes with him. I must keepe an even pace with him, neither be too farre behinde him, nor too much before him.

If I have entertained thee too long in this subject, and have not given thee satisfaction, pardon my ignorance, and accept my good will. So that the libertie of craving, is

A poore begger, to whom he may be compared

permitted only to the poore ; And in this we are equall with Kings and Princes, whose particular priviledge it is, to demaund Subsedies, and Ayde-money, which is no basenesse in them, howsoever it may be in others. But the difference is, that Kings crave of the Commons, for the Common good, and for to supply their necessarie occasions ;

[1] The Spanish phrase, *Esse llamo socorro con el que corro.*

But the poore, for themselves only, out of an evill custome, which they have gotten. CHAPTER IV

That other Priviledge, which I told you of, is that of the five Senses. Who is he now adaies in the world, that with larger licence, and freer libertie doth injoy them, then the poore man, or with greater securitie, or more content? Who doth so thorowly and so feelingly taste them as he? And because I have named the word Taste, I will begin first with that. The libertie of the five Senses, by whom most injoyed

There is not that pot, which we doe not skimme; nor that meat, which wee doe not prove; nor that banquet, wherein wee have not a share. Whither did that poore man ever come, that the house that deny'd him to day, did not give him to morrow? He runnes thorow all mens houses, hee begs of them all, and he tastes of all: and he is best able to say, which house hath the best meat, and the best drest. The Taste

For the Hearing; Who heares more then the poore man doth? For being dis-interessed in all kinde of things, none are jealous that hee should heare them; in the open streets, in private houses, in publike Churches, in the Market-place, and in every place, every man treats freely of his businesse, without any suspition of him, though the matter be never so important. Sleeping besides a nights, upon some bulke or stall in the streets, what musicke have they bestowed upon them, which we heare not? What Love-tricks are they privy to, which we know not? Nothing is kept secret from such poore beggerly Rascals as we bee. And for publike affaires, we have by a thousand parts better intelligence, then all the world besides. For we heare that treated of in more parts, then all men else besides put all together. The Hearing

For your seeing likewise: how freely may we injoy it, without being noted? nor aske us the question why we gaze upon them, nor offer to hinder us from looking here, or looking there. How often have I accused and condemned my selfe, when begging in the Church, mine eye hath beene wandring and roving about? and chuckt and hugg'd my The Seeing

selfe, with the delight and pleasure that I have taken therein? Or to speake downe-right English, and to declare my selfe more plainely, feeding mine eyes greedily on those Angelicall faces of your finest Ladyes, whose Lovers did not dare to looke upon them for feare of being noted: all which was freely permitted unto us.

The Smelling

For matter of smelling; Who can smell better then we, who are called by the name of Smell-Feasts? Besides, if any smell bee so much the better, by how much it is the more profitable; to us, our owne Amber, and our owne Muske, is better and truer then all the rest, which is a clove of Garlicke, which ordinarily we never goe without; as being a Preservative against all contagious corruption whatsoever. And if we be desirous of any other odours, we then get us to the corner of some one street or other, where these things are commonly sold, and there we satisfie our sense of smelling with the sweet perfume of Jerkins, and of Gloves, some civited, and some powdred, that are there laid out for show, till the dust and powder of them come flying into our eyes, and our nostrils.

The Touching

Will you happely say, that the sense of Touching is wanting unto us? And that never any good thing came yet to our hands? Lament your ignorance. What such difference I pray, is there betwixt povertie and beautie? Wee poore beggers touch and handle as good ware as the rich, and injoy as prettie Commodities; but all men doe not understand this Mysterie. There be some poore men, which for all their beggerie and povertie, maintaine such a handsome Doxy as many a great rich man would be glad to injoy with all his heart. And yet she had rather have this poore man, that doth truly pay her her Tribute, and is not wanting unto her in his love, then a rich man, that shall defame, and misuse her. And how often have some women given mee an almes with their owne hand. (I know not what others have done) but I out of my youth, would make bold to take hold of hers with mine; and in a kinde of devout acknowledgement, would never let it goe, till I had kist it?

CHAPTER IV

But these are but toyes to speake of, and meere fooleries, but above all these things, the taste, the sight, smelling, hearing, and touching, the chiefest and truest of all the five Senses, put them all together, was that of those ruddy cheeks of your golden Ruddocks, your Spanish Pistolets, your plumpe and ful-fac't Portuguse, and your cleere-skinn'd pieces of eight of Castile, which we kept secret to our selves, and did privately injoy in a plentifull manner; For to have them, for to pay them away, is not to injoy them; To injoy them, is to have them lying by us, having no other need of them, then to use them for the cleering of the eye-sight, and the comforting of our senses. Howbeit, some sticke not to say, *Que el dinero, nunca se goza, hasta que se gasta.* That he injoyes not his money, that does not spend it. These we did carry about with us, sewing them in some patches of our doublets neere unto the heart, and as close to the skinne, as we could handsomely quilt them in, holding them to be restorative. There was not any one piece of a patch about us, were it never so foule, and never so vile, which was not worth a reasonable good sute of cloathes. We were all flush and full of gold; For, having our dyet *gratis*, and feeding on free cost, the money which we got, we never spent. And as the Proverbe is; *Esse te hizo rico, que te hizo el pico*; He made thee rich, who gave thee whereon to picke. And *grano a grano, hincha la gallina el papa.* Graine after graine, the Hen fils her craw. We grew many of us to increase our Talent, till it came to a good round summe, wherewith many an honest man might have lifted his feet from the ground, and not have stucke in the mire. Rest thy selfe a while in this Inne; for in that our journey, which we are to make to the Chapter following, you shall heare what hapned in Florence to a poore man that died there, of the same time and standing with my selfe. Wherein you shall know, whether our Touching be not as good as other mens.

To have money, to pay it againe away, is not the injoying of money

Proverb

Petit à petit l'oiseau faict son nid

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER V

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth of the quality of mens Consciences, and recounteth what hapned in his time to a notable Rogue, and famous begger in Florence, who at his death made the great Duke his heire. Hee treats of the ambitious man; And delivers in the end, how he was thrust out of Gaeta for his counterfeiting

IT is a very ordinary thing with your poorer sort of people, to become Plotters and Contrivers, watching night and day, and beating their braines, to seeke out some poore meanes how to live, that they may not goe a begging from doore to doore, and still to lie (like Lazarus) at rich mens gates for reliefe, and yet starve perhaps in the end for want of a morsell of bread. This every where befalls poore folkes. They (poore soules) are put to their shifts. And albeit it be said; that in matter of cruelty, Italy beares the bell; and in Italy, those more particularly that are in, and about Genoa; yet I am not of beliefe, that the fault lies so much in the soyle of that place, as in the necessitie, and covetousnesse of the people. I meane those, that are of the right stampe, your miserable and hard-hearted Usurers, whom they that are the native Citizens, and naturall Inhabitants of those parts, call by way of Nick-name, *Moros blancos*, white Moores. Now they, to revenge themselves of them, and to returne it home upon them againe,[1] say, *Que quien descubre la alca-*

The proudest, and hardest-harted people in Italy, are your Genoveses

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Echarles las cabras*. Now, *Echar las cabras*, is, when many having plaid together, who should win or lose, when they did rifle for any thing, there should be two losers, and that they might not part or devide, but that one should pay all, and the other scape scot free, they

vala,[1] *esse la paga*. Let him pay the toll, that first invented it. For this was not (say they) spoken of them, nor is it so to be understood; but of those great Dealers and Negociators of Genoa, who carrie their consciences in torne pockets, that are ript and unsewed, whereby they quickly come to be lost, and scarce one amongst them all, that hath a good and a sound conscience. But one said, that this was not so, but would needs fetch the water a little farther off, that should drive this Mill; And therefore (said he) it was thus: That when the Genoveses send forth their children to schoole, they carry their consciences along with them, there at first they begin to play with them, then to wrangle and fall out about them; some forgetting that ever they brought any thither with them; and others (having lost them there at play) leave them behinde them, and never thinke on them after. CHAPTER V

Now, when the schoole comes to be swept, and these Consciences be found againe, they give them to the Master, who carefully laies them up in a Chest, and there locks them up close, that they may no more be lost. And hee that hereafter shall have need of one (if he can call to minde where he either left it, or laid it aside) he were best goe seeke it out himselfe, to see if he can light on the right one.

Now, because the Schoole-master hath the keeping of so many, and so mixed one amongst another, that he doth not know which is which, he gives him that which comes first to hand, and so the party goes away with it, thinking verily that it is his owne Conscience, that he carries thus away with him, when as indeed it is not his, but either his friends Conscience, or his kinsmans, or some one or other of his acquaintance. And hence it comes to passe, that

returne againe to play. And this they cal *Echar las cabras*. Alluding to that which shepheards use to doe, when they make a merry-meeting, and have kill'd some Goats to make a feast; who play who shall pay for all, laying the losse upon the two last. Covarruvias, Verbe *Cabra*. Conscience lost by whom, and how?

[1] *Alcavala* is a Tribute, Taxe, Tole, or Subsedie. The common people have a tale, That King Don Alfonso the Wise, holding a Parliament at Burgos, said unto the Procurators, *Dadme gente delque vala*. And from thence comes *Alcavala*, A supply of monies, which they gave him.

no man bearing his owne Conscience in his owne bosome, every man lookes and pries into that of another mans. And ever since that time, hath this ill report runne of them.

O Spaine, Spaine, my beloved Countrey. Faith's true keeper, God uphold thee with his hand : And as thou hast much of this in thee ; so likewise, thou hast thy Schoole-Masters too, that truck one conscience for another ; and men, as well as they, that having chopt consciences, goe away well contented, presuming all is right and streight, and that that which they have is their owne.

Wholesome lessons for our consciences

How many forgetfull of themselves, busie themselves in those things, which appertaine not unto them ? How unadvisedly reprehend, sollicite, and censure another mans conscience ? My friend, this ought not to bee so ; Looke well into thy selfe, with-draw this chopping and changing : First, throughly examine thine owne, doe not seeke for a mote in another mans eye, till thou hast pull'd the beame out of thine owne ; and then thou wilt tell me another tale.

That which thou thinkest is a discharge to thy conscience, is a meere jest, and an idle toy, and therin thou doest but put a jest upon thy selfe. Do not cloake thy sinne (thou Usurer) saying ; Such a one is a greater Usurer then I am : Nor seeke to excuse thy selfe, by saying ; Such a man is a worse thiefe then my selfe. Meddle not thou with another mans conscience ; let that alone, and looke well into thine owne. This is that which concernes thee ; This is that which imports thee most. Let every man put that away from him, that is not his owne ; and wherewith he hath nothing to doe. Let him not meddle nor make with it. Let him not settle his eyes upon other mens sins, but cast them aside off. For it is neither the Idolatry of Salomon, nor the Sacriledge of Judas, that shall excuse the like in thee : But every man shall beare his owne burthen, and receive such punishment, as his owne sinne hath deserved. Why doest thou incline, and leane unto that, which is not onely ill, but also hurtfull unto thee ? Why doest thou

To let other mens consciences alone, and to looke into our owne

not rather imitate that, which is good, and vertuous? following the example of him that fasteth, confesseth, communicateth, repenteth him of his sinnes, and performeth many other actions of holinesse, and of a good and honest life? Is he peradventure more man then thou art? Thou forbearest (like him that is sicke) to take that, which should cure thy sicknesse, and doe thee good; and feedest on that, which impaireth thy health and doth thee hurt. I therefore assure thee, and give thee my honest word, that it will make much for thy salvation, *acordarte de ti, y olvidarte de mi*, to forget me, and to thinke on thy selfe.

Amongst those many Schooles for little children, and those many Schoole-Masters, which have the keeping of Consciences, (howbeit, as I say, no City, Towne, nor Village escapes them in all the world) Sevill is the onely place for my money; and therein, those that imbarke themselves to passe the Seas. For, the most part of them, as if their Consciences were of that great burthen and extraordinary weight, that they were able to sinke both the Ship and themselves, doe either leave their consciences at home in their own houses, or with their Hosts, to keepe them for them till their returne. And if afterwards they chance to recover them againe, (which in my opinion is a hard matter, for that the Countrey is very spacious and large, where there is no such great reckoning made of these things) it is well and good; if not, they doe not greatly care; or if they take them with them, and leave them there behinde them, as little, if not lesse. And for this reason, Conscience goes a begging in that Citie, in regard of the great store and plenty of that commodity; because those that left them there behinde them, when they went away to the Indies, or some other farre place, did never returne backe againe to fetch them.

Sevill, of all other Cities, the richest for Consciences

I will not offer to walke in the Exchange, nor the Burse, nor have any thing to doe in the street of San Françisco, nor hazzard a drowning in the Sea. Let all trafficke (for my part) be laid aside; Let there be no trade driven, no commerce had, no buying nor selling, nor exchanging of

commodities. For I feare me, if I should once begin to be a dealer therein, I should never be able to give it over. But let me heare make a full point, taking this onely as but a note by the way, and not thinke so much on what I say, as what I would have said, and shall perhaps say hereafter when I see my time. And so I will proceed to my promised Story.

The Story of Pantalon Casteleto, a Genovese, and poore Begger in Florence

There was a certaine man, that was borne neere unto Genoa, a person of great account, for his rare invention, and subtlenesse of wit. His name was Pantalon Casteleto, a poore Begger, who, for that he was married in Florence, and his Wife had borne him a sonne, after that the Mother was delivered of this child, the Father went plotting and devising, how hee might leave him well to live, without tying him to serve any man, or to binde him prentice to any trade or occupation.

Proverb

It is commonly spoken there amongst them by way of Proverbe : Happy is that sonne, whose father goes to Hell.[1] Howbeit, I count him unhappy. For it is not possible,

De male quesitis, vix gaudet tertius hæres

that should thrive with him, which he left him, nor that it should come to the injoying of a third Heire. This is my opinion. For, to leave his child well provided for, he provides ill for himselfe ; and to make him, marres himselfe. For he can not but runne his soules hazzard, who hunts after ungodly gaine.

And albeit he were married, and had the charge of a Wife, (but this is a particular benefit, and a large Theame to treat of, that one Begger should marry with another, and be both of one profession) they had (God be thanked) reasonable well wherewithall to live ; they wanted nothing, that they had need of, and sufficient store of wealth they had besides, to leave unto their heire, in some competent measure, especially for one, that was of so meane a condition as he was.

The cruelty of a Father

But this man would not put himselfe upon Fortune. But had intertained in his imagination, one of the greatest and most unnaturall cruelties, that the wit of man could

[1] *Dichoso el hijo, que tiene à su padre en el infierno.*

devise. He maimes me this his poore innocent Infant, (as many more of all Nations doe in those parts :) where, when they be yong and tender, they writhe their joynts, and breake their bones, making them as plyable as Waxe ; then taking them in hand anew, molding them after this, or that manner, as they have most minde unto, forming and fashioning of them (I know not) into how many monstrous shapes, and ugly postures, onely to move the people to take the more pitie and compassion of them.

With these abused Babes, whilest they are little, they get where-withall to live in their old age ; and afterwards, thus maymed and mangled as you see, they leave them a good patrimonie. But this wicked Rogue, for his greater increase of gaine, would martyrize this poore tender Infant, with new kinde of torments ; He did not put him to these cruell tortures all at once ; but still as he grew in yeeres, so did he vary and change them, as men shift their Shirts, or change their Bathes, one dry ; and the other wet ; till he had left him thus carved and ingraven, as I have painted him forth unto you.

Some naturall gifts hee had, that his father either did not, or could not touch. So that notwithstanding this his unhappinesse, hee had a very happy wit, and was a good Speaker, and his words became him very well. But that which he had from his Father, which was his outward flesh, to begin first with his head, he had writh'd it in that sort, that it seemed to bee set quite backwards, his face falling on t' one side upon his right shoulder. That both beneath, and above the lids of his eyes, was all one over-growne lumpe of flesh : the fore-head and the eye-browes scorch't and burned with a thousand wrinkles : He was crooke-back't, his whole body like a Bottom of Yarne, all one lumpe, without any shape or fashion, of any one part, that might stile him man : His feet turned backwards, and perching up over his shoulders, being dis-joynted, and withered. The onely sound parts that were about him, were his armes, and his tongue. The one left him to talke, the other to take. He went, as if he had beene clapt into

a Cage, being thrust into a little kinde of woodden Chest, set and made fast to a little Asses backe, which he did rule and guide with his hands; save that to get up or downe, he was faine still to seeke for some helpe, which he did seldome or never misse of, having one or other ever at hand for that purpose.

He was, (as I told you before) a pleasant conceited fellow, had a good wit of his owne, and many good things should you heare to come from him. Besides, he went so totter'd, so torne, and in that ragged and wretched manner, that all Florence tooke pitie of him, and as well for his poverties sake, as for those good parts that were in him, they gave him much Almes, wherewith he was well relieved.

After this manner, he lived some seventy and two yeeres, or much there-abouts, at the end whereof he fell into a grievous sicknesse, whereof hee certainly knew, that he should dye.

Seeing himselfe at this point, and that he now stood upon the jumpe of his Salvation, or Condemnation; being (as he was) very discreet, hee began to consider a little better of the matter, thinking with himselfe, that it was no time now to jest, but rather to confesse his sinnes, and to send for the Parson of the Parish and to make his Will. Which as it was to be the last that ever he was to make, so was he carefull to make it as strong and as good as the strength of his wit could devise. He desired, that a knowne Confessor of his might be sent for; one, that was a very learned man, and in very good esteeme, as well for the honesty of his life and conversation, as for his learning and manners. With him he treated touching his sinnes, and fully imparted his minde unto him. And when he had communicated what he thought fit unto him, hee was very desirous to have his Will made, but with the shortest, and most compendious words, that possibly could be imagined. And the beginning being drawne, (which belonged to the publike Notary to doe) what was fit on his part, he briefely thus sets it downe.

Imprimis, I recommend my Soule unto God, who created

it, and my body to the earth, to be buried in mine owne Parish. CHAPTER V

Item, My Will is, that my Asse be sold; which money shall bee bestowed upon my buriall. But the Pack-Saddle I bequeath unto the great Duke my Lord and Master, to whom it rightly appertaineth, and properly belongs, whom I nominate to be my sole Executor, and make my generall and universall Heire. Pantalons last Will and Testament. The Duke made his sole heire and Executor

This done, after that he had settled and sealed this his last Will and Testament of that his indisposition, anon after he dyed. And because every man held him to be a merry-conceited fellow, and one that was full of his witty jests, they did all verily thinke, that he would make his death equall with his life, and shut up his last breath with some odde jest or other for a farewell, as it usually befals such kinde of giddy-headed fooles, when they once take a toy in the head, and are wedded to their humour. Pantalon dyes

But when the great Duke understood of this Will, (which was not long kept from his knowledge) having formerly heard of the Testator, and that he was held to be a wise and discreet man, he did from thence collect, that this Clause was not without it's mysterie. Whereupon hee gave order that this Legacy he had left him, should forthwith be brought unto the Palace, and when he had it before him, he commanded it to be ript in sunder, piece after piece, and still as they went along, they tooke forth divers different sorts of coyne: and when they had sorted out these severall kindes of moneys (which were all in good gold) they amounted in the whole to three thousand and sixe hundred Spanish Crownes, every Crowne bearing the full value of foure hundred Maravedis. This poore man, whether he had consulted with his Confessor or no, I know not; or advised with himselfe, which is not unlikely; It seemed he thought with himselfe, that that was none of his, and that hee had no other meanes to make restitution, then to leave it to the naturall Lord of that Signorie, who had the charge of all the poore committed to his care, and with this he conceived The Duke sends for his Legacy

THE THIRD BOOKE

he had discharged his Conscience. The great Duke being so powerfull and so noble a minded Prince as he was, gave order to have this Will entred, and to remaine upon record to after-ages, and that the Legacie that he had given him, should be imployed for the good of his soules health; Wherein he shew'd himselfe a worthy Executor, but a farre more worthy Gentleman.

What say you now to the feeling of this poore Begger? What thinke you of his sense of Touching? Thine is farre short of it, nor halfe so good and delightfull as this, though thou shouldest injoy the imbracements of another Venus. Of these two Priviledges (before specified) we were the sole and only Lords, for none besides us, did injoy them so freely, as we did; together with many other liberties and immunities which (if I list) I were able to relate unto thee.

When I doe but thinke upon those times, which I injoyed heretofore, and the merry life that I then led, which is all now past and gone with me, (not that I either long or looke for any more such happy dayes, or that I would call them to minde, to make me forget my miseries,) or whether the recordation of them did make those sorrowes seeme either greater or lesse, which I suffred in the Gallies, I will not now dispute; but sure I am, that I take great delight in the remembrance of them: As that having of our Table still provided for us; our bed ready made to our hands; our Chamber without incombrance; our Scrip well furnish'd; our goods about us; our stocks sure on foot, without feare of theeves, or any dread of raine, without Aprill's care, or May's fearfull jealousie, which two are the husband-mans moth: Not troubling our heads with new fashions, with the pompe of apparell, with ceremonious complements, and the like froth of fooleries, scum'd out of forraine Countries: Living without the prevention of flatteries, without the composing of Lies, scorning to get either money, or to seeke to grow into credit by such base insinuations.

Artifices to winne Opinion

How would we suffer that men might the better esteeme of us? How visit them, that they might not forget us?

How attend them, for to binde them unto us? What occasions would we not seeke out, that we might come to speake with them, and be seene by them? How early would we be stirring, to the end they might thinke we were carefull and sollicitous how to live? And evermore the more early up, the colder and sharper the weather was. And every one of these had it's pleasure and delight, for the ends for which they were done. CHAPTER V

How often would my selfe fall a discoursing of other mens houses and their gentilitie, only of purpose to set my owne Pedigree afoot, and to shew that I was a Gentleman well descended? How often would I discover another mans defect, and finde fault with it, and only to this end, that by taxing such a vice in another, I might be thought to be free from the same my selfe? How often would I hold conversation, only for ostentations sake, and no other end in the world? How would I wheele about, and fetch in things a farre off, only to vent my wit, and to make my words to take place? To what good meetings did not I goe? I was the only Cocke there that crow'd lowdest; and when I went away from them, and left their companie, they would not censure me, as I would them, but let me alone.

O these conventicles of lewd Company, these meetings, where mens mouthes fall a murmuring and traducing of others! O how large a Historie would it require? Who is able to expresse, how ill it beseemes a Gentleman, to be the Taylour that must cut out such ill worke? There is no Clergie man, whose Surplice [1] they will not cut; Nor honest woman, whose Kirtle [2] they will not make a hole in.

[1] The Spanish word is *Loba*: that is, *Vestidura clerical, talar, que llega al suelo, cortada à todo ruedo con golpes para sacar los braços. Es vestidura honorifica. Este uso se conserva en la capilla real. Han le dado varias etimologias, y entre las demas, una, que por comer tanta tela, la llamaron, Loba. Però su etimologia trae Origen del nombre griego* λοπη *genero de vestidura, quæ hominem ambit, ut cortex, et tunica arborem, y puede ser hebreo, del verbo labas, induere y assi Valdra, indumentum.* Covarruvias.

[2] The Spanish word is, *Saya*, which is that garment, which a woman weares from her girdle downeward.

THE THIRD BOOKE

The wretched condition of Pretenders

They cloath the Saint and the sinner after a large kinde of fashion. But let it rest as it is ; if we live, we shall be serv'd with the like sawce. By how straight a Rule, by how even a Line, and by how just a Compasse, must that Pretender carry himselfe, who is to saile thorow the sea of this world, hoping for a fortune from another mans hand ? If it be good, how slowly doth it come ? if bad, how soone doth it light upon us ? And the Scale can never be made so upright and even, but that there will be something wanting of it's true weight. And the better a man deserves, oftentimes hee fares the worse. If a man have not a minde to doe him good, every Mole-hill is made a mountaine, and every the least obliquitie, is observed and noted in him. If he speake much, (though never so well,) he is too lavish of his words ; If little, he is too short and obscure, and knowes not how to expresse himselfe. If of high and dainty things indeed, he is too rash, and too presumptuous ; and undertakes to discusse those things, that are too deepe for his understanding. If of things of lesser consequence, and of a lower straine, he is too shallow, and hath no stuffe in him. If he humble himselfe, he is base ; if stand upon his worth, he is proud : if he will fight and take no wrong, hee is ill govern'd, and a Royster ; if pocket a wrong, and hold his hands, he is a coward : if he have a bold looke, he is impudent ; if a modest countenance, he is an hypocrite ; if he laugh, he is condemned of levitie ; if grave, hee is counted a Saturnist : if affable, slightly regarded ; if austere, mightily abhorred : If just, cruell ; if mercifull, a silly sheepe.

Now against all these and the like cavils (which are no small misfortunes) the poore have a Passe-port, as being Lords of themselves, free from all taxes and tallage. They are out of the Gun-shot of their Competitors, they quietly injoy their life, without being troubled with Promooting Knaves to informe against them ; snipping Tailours to take them short ; or snarling dogs to snap at their good name.

Such was my happy condition, if Time and Fortune

(consumers of all things on earth, who suffer not things to continue in one and the self-same estate) had not tumbled me downe from this height of my happinesse; declaring by the colour of my countenance, and the Soundnesse of my limmes, that I was rich in health, and not so maymed, nor so poore, as I made my selfe to be, by my pittifull moanes and lamentations. CHAPTER V

For, as I was sitting one day a begging of almes, in the Citie of Gaeta, hard by the Church porch, whither (out of curiositie) I would needs goe to see if their charitie and devotion did equall that of Rome? There I sate bare, made shew of my head unto them, (for I was but newly come thither, and had not as yet fitted my selfe with necessaries) so that I was forced on the sudden to make use of a kinde of scurfe, that I had clapt thereon; in the counterfeiting whereof, I was excellent cunning. The Governour of the Towne comming to Church, as he past along by me, casts his eye upon me, and gave me an almes. With this tricke, I past reasonable well for a while. But because, *la Codiçia, rompe el saco*, too much covetousnesse makes the bag to breake; and I had not the wit to see when I was well; I thought fitt upon a Festivall day to appeare in publike with some new invention. I had my preparatives ready, my provision at hand, I set them before me, and then drest me such a legge, that was very well worth more, then a very good Vine-yard. This was the farme that I meant then to live upon. Guzman plays the Counterfeit in Gaeta Proverb

Well, away goe I to Church with it; there I began to stretch my throate, and to thunder out my voyce, ever and anon lifting up the cloth with a tender finger, to shew unto them, what a grievous sore legge I had, wherein I was so ready and so perfect, that I had need of no body to teach me my lesson. But whether it were my ill lucke, or mine owne indiscretion, (for from ignorance and foolishnesse, all your mischances for the most part proceed) I cannot tell which to impute it to: But certaine I am, I should not have sought to have eate better bread then is made of Wheat, nor have gone a chopping of horses in so small a Village.

I might have kept me still to my scabbed head, and have past well with it, (for it found me meat to put in my mouth) and not have gone seeking after new tricks, and new inventions.

The Governour of Gaeta cures Guzman of his sore legge, and how he did it

The Governour came that day unto the Church to heare Masse, and because he knew me, he will'd me to rise, saying unto me: Come along with me, and I will bestow a shirt on thee to put on thy backe. I did beleeve him, and went along with him to his Lodging. If I had but knowne before how he would have us'd me, he should not have reach't me with the best Culverine he had, nor have made me to come within his clutches, with all his faire words, nor all the wit in his head. But when he had me there, and saw I was safe for getting from him, he lookt me steadily in the face, and said unto me; Thy colour being so fresh, thy skinne so cleere, thy body so sound (for thou art fat, plumpe, and faire, thy complexion good, thy limmes strong, and the rest of thy skinne smooth and sleeke) how comes it to passe that this thy legge is as it is? Me thinkes this doth not sute and hang well together with the rest.

I answered him, but with a troubled kinde of delivery: Sir, I know not; it hath pleased God it should be so. Presently he knew thereupon upon what legge I halted, he had found me out; whereupon I had an eye to the doore, to see if I could shew him my heeles, and get away from him. But I could not, for the doore was made fast. He willed a Surgeon to be sent for, that hee should search my wound, and see what I ayled. He came and lookt, and lookt upon it againe and againe, and at last very leisurely and tenderly went to worke with me, with a soft and gentle hand, as never a Lady in the land could more handsomely have gone about it. At the first it did somewhat puzzle him, for he knew not what to make of it, but within a little while after he saw his error, and then he told the Governour; Sir, this Youth hath no more hurt in his legge, then I in mine eye; and that you may perceive it is so, I will plainely demonstrate it unto you. With that he began to unswathe

me, and taking off ragge after ragge, and such slibber-slabbers as I had bedawbed it withall, he made my legge to appeare as whole as any fish, as indeed it was.

The Governour blest himselfe, and stood amazed to see me in that maner, but that which did astonish him most, was how I should have the aptitude and wit to doe such a thing as this. I was in a trance, and ready to swoune, not knowing what either to say or doe. And if my youth had not borne me out, none but God could have freed me from exemplary punishment.

But this youth of mine did reserve me for greater chastisement. And in stead of the shirt which hee promised mee, he sent for the Beadle of beggers, and there (in his presence) willed him to give me a strip't Doublet, which I was to weare under that torne one which I had to my backe. Commanding me, that I should presently packe out of the Citie, and come there no more. Which command, though he had not layd it upon me, I should have beene carefull to see it performed my selfe; for I would not have stayd there, if he would have made me Lord of Gaeta. I got me away full of feare, trembling and quaking, shrinking up my shoulders, looking ever and anon behinde me, being jealous and suspicious, that if they should chance to bethinke themselves, that they had not given me sufficient paiment, they would make after me, and bring me to a stricter account.

Hereupon I hastned away as fast as my legges would carry me, making no stay, till I came into the Popes Territories: Calling my Rome still to minde, and throwing a thousand blessings upon it; for there, they did not sticke upon trifles, nor did not busie themselves to examine colours, but let every man (without more adoe) make the best of his living. To conclude, *Tierra larga*: a large Country for my money. Let me live (to choose) in a spacious Countrey, where a man may have Sea-roome inough, and not be driven to runne through narrow Streights and Creekes, sayling still in the Channell, where there is few fetching of boords, nor any danger of being cast away

Rome commended by Guzman

upon the Coast: Wheras, in your narrow Seas, every little gust of winde, every small flawe, or least tempest in the world, will cast you upon Quick-sands, or throw you upon the Rocks, till you be either swallowed up, or dasht in pieces.

CHAPTER VI

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth of Almes: And being returned to Rome, hee fals afresh to his old Trade of begging. Hee feignes himselfe to have a sore legge. A Cardinall taking compassion of him, takes order, to have him cured in his owne house, and to be laid in his owne bed. He discovers the knavery of Surgeons, having a bad conscience: And how being cured, he becomes the Cardinals Page

IT is a knowne and naturall truth; That those that are yong, are very short-sighted in your choyser sort of things, which require gravity, and carry any weight with them: Not for any defect of understanding, but for want of Wisedome, which requireth experience; and that experience, Time. As your greene fruit, that is not come to it's ripenesse, hath not any perfect rellish, but is tart, and sowre; so a young man, before he come to his maturitie, lacks his true taste, and failes in the speculation of things, and comes short of the true knowledge of them. And therefore, it is no wonder if he erre; but 'twere rather a wonder, if he should not erre. Notwithstanding, he that hath good naturall parts, is commonly more capable of these considerations, and readier to receive the impression of them.

Wisdome, gotten by Time

A great wonder if youth should not erre

CHAPTER VI

This I know by my selfe; for many times, the greatnesse of my Spirit did transport me farre beyond that which sorted with my yeeres; setting (as the Eagle doth with her young ones) my eyes fully fixt against the Sun of Truth; considering with my selfe, that all my cunning tricks, and sundry manner of deceivings, was but a kinde of coozening my selfe, by seeking to rob him, that was truely poore and in need, maymed, and not able to worke, to whom those Almes did of right belong. For the poore man indeed never deceiveth, nor can he so doe, though it be his end so to doe. For he that giveth, regardeth not to whom he giveth; and he that beggeth, is that Quayle-pipe or whistle, that cals those Birds unto him, whilest he sits securely on his perch. The Begger, with the Call and cry of his lamentations, receiveth the Almes, which he converteth to his profit, taking God in his mouth, whereby he makes him the debtor, binding him to repay it. On the one side I was glad, when they gave me any thing; On the other side, I did quake and tremble, when I tooke account of mine owne life. For I assuredly knowing, that that was the way to my condemnation, I was bound to make restitution, as did that Florentine. But when I did sometimes see and observe, that some powerfull and rich men would curiously put themselves to search in every corner of their purse, for to looke out a poore Blanke, a single-sol'd piece of money (God he knowes) and had there beene a lesse coyne, I thinke they would have beene well inough contented with it to give unto the poore, I could by no meanes indure it, my bloud would rise at it, and I was ready to lose all patience. And even now (me thinkes) whilest I am now speaking of it, my buttons swell; the coales of my choller, revive and quicken afresh, and such a furie of rage assayleth me, and sets me on against them, that I cannot containe my selfe, but must needs say something, though I know not what, nor where to begin.

A poore man neither doth, nor can deceive

What kinde of poore are bound to make restitution

Hear'st thou me (thou my rich friend) art thou not yet wearied out, or waxen deafe, with so often hearing what hath been said unto thee, (it having beene so often beaten

THE THIRD BOOKE

An admonition to the rich to be liberall in their Almes

in thine eares, and inculcated unto thee) that whatsoever thou shalt doe for any poore body, that shall begge an Almes of thee for Gods sake, thou doest it for God himselfe, and he is ty'de unto thee for the same, and stands bound for the payment, by taking the debt upon him, and making that his owne, which is another mans? Wee that are poore, are like a Cipher in Arithmeticke, which of it selfe is nothing, but with the addition of a figure is something, and the number is still the more, the more Ciphers are set before those figures. If thou wilt stand for ten, set a poore man by thee, and see how many the more poore men thou shalt relieve, and how many the more Almes-deeds thou shalt doe, they are as so many figures, to make up a greater reckoning for thee with God, when thou shalt be called before him to make thine account.

What shouldst thou sticke upon the matter, and begin to debate and consider with thy selfe, whether I get or not get, whether men give me, or give me not? But doe thou give me that which I aske thee, if thou hast wherewithall and art able to doe it. And if not for Gods sake, which commands thee to doe it, yet out of that naturall affection, which thou owest unto me. And doe not flatter thy selfe, or so much as offer to thinke, that the wealth which thou injoyest, and the riches that God hath given thee, is; That thou art better Wooll then we; but that thou art better carded. And he that made thee thus fine, and me thus course; by giving to thee, and taking from mee, may change hands, and may bestowe his blessings upon whom he please, and on such as hee shall thinke worthy thereof, and shall doe more good with it; then thou doest. Be not a pryer into the poore, nor too strict an examinant: demurre not what thou shalt doe for him, stand not a hinching and a crinching with him; for if thou looke well into thy selfe, thou wilt finde Covetousnesse to be the cause of all this, and that they are but meere excuses, because thou would'st not give him any thing, and so shift him off from thee: I know it is so; and therefore let me perswade thee (for thine owne good) to inlarge thy minde, and that

will make thee to inlarge thine Almes. And for this end, as also that thou maist see the good effect of Almes, heare that, which Sofronius recounteth, cited by Canisius, a very learned man.

A Widow-woman, having one onely Daughter, being a very faire and beautifull Damzell, Zenon the Emperour fell mightily in love with her, and was exceedingly inamoured of her; and by force (quite against her will, and utterly with her dislike) he deflowred her; and with a strong and tyrannous hand, kept her, and enjoyed her.

The Emperour Zenon, a great Almes-giver

The Mother of this Maiden, finding her selfe much afflicted for this her so much wronged and abused Daughter, bearing great devotion to a particular Image of our Lady, as often as she presented her selfe there before it, she would still recommend this her cause unto her, saying; O blessed Mary, O sweet Virgin, I heere upon my knees begge revenge and punishment for this force and affront, which that Tyrant Zenon the Emperour hath, and doth still offer us. It is said, that she heard a voice, which spake thus unto her; Thou hadst beene long agoe e're this revenged on him, if the Almes-deeds of the Emperour had not bound our hands.

The effect of Almes-deeds

Loose thou thy hands, that are too fast bound; stretch them out to the poore, and helpe them therewith (as well as thou canst) out of the misery, wherein they lye. For it is thy duty so to doe, it is required at thy hands; and it much more concerneth thee to give an Almes, then the other to receive it. God did not so much make the rich man for the poore, as the poore man for the rich. Not so much for his, as for thy good. And therefore doe not thou stand off, and intertaine thy selfe with saying, One man merits more then another; This deserves some-what, and this not. There is but one God, and they aske of thee in his name; to him thou doest give it. All is one, thou art to make no difference. Thou canst not understand, how much another mans necessitie doth wring him, nor is it possible that thou shouldst come to knowe it.

The necessities of the poore cannot be truely knowne by us

It is the outward man onely, that thou canst judge of. And thou thinking, that such a man is sound and in health, it is not fit (as thou supposest) that thou shouldest give him an Almes.

Doe not seeke starting holes, to hide away thy Devotion; seeke not excuses, to put away the poore from thee; leave that to their Lord and Master, thou hast no Commission to examine them; it is not given thee in charge. There are other Judges, to whom this scrutinie belongeth. And if, looking upon me, thou wilt let thy judgement slip, and say, that God hath been too slacke and negligent in punishing of me; Consider, that the self-same God hath done the like by others.

Do not (O thou man of evill bowels, thou unmercifull-minded man) doe not thou, I say, lye in waite to doe mischiefe. The Ambush is discovered, and I see thy meaning. I say then, that Charity, and distribution of Almes, hath it's method and order, as in other things. Nor doe I say, that thou shouldest not order thy Charitie; but I say, that thou shouldest exercise thy Charitie; That thou shouldst give freely, and not pinchingly; That thou shouldst not make such a deale of scrupulositie with thy selfe; whether he should have an Almes or not have an Almes? whether hee have need, or not need? Troubling thy selfe with this, and with that, and I know not what. If thou wilt give it him, give it him quickly; if thou canst not, say thou canst not, and ther's an end. Yet let me tell thee by the way; if a poore man begge of thee, then, even then, dost thou owe him an Almes, and it costs him deare too, as I told thee before.

Who are to judge of the poore

And let me farther tell thee, That thy Office is onely to give. Let the Rulers and Magistrates, the Bishops and their Vicars, open that doore to looke into, it is their eyes that must see who is poore, and who not, and accordingly appoint the punishment.

This is for men of Office; this, for men of authority; yet it is a crosse unto them; yet is it a trouble unto them. Nor were they made Governours, or Heads over others, for

CHAPTER VI

What manner of man he ought to be, that is in authority

to eate the best morsels, or to feede on the daintiest dishes, but to take more paines and cares then other men. Not to laugh and make themselves merry with their Fooles and Jesters, but to lament and bewayle the wretched estate of the poore: Not for to sleepe and snort, but to watch and sigh, having continually (like unto the Dragon) the eye-sight of the Spirit cleere. So that, it onely appertaines unto thee to give an Almes: And doe not thinke, that thou doest then performe that dutey, when thou givest that thou canst not well tell what to doe withall, and hast kept it so long in some corner a moulding, that it is fitter to be throwne out upon the dunghill, then any thing else. And as if the poore were that dunghill, thou giv'st him thy mouldy and thy stinking meate; not so much out of Charitie, or any devotion thou hast to give it to the poore, as because thou canst not eate it thy selfe, and wouldst have thy house faine rid of it. But this, I tell thee, is the sacrifice of Cain. That which thou wilt offer, must be of the best things that thou hast, as did that good and just man Abel, with a desire and will that it were much better, wishing it may doe him much good. Not, as though thou didst give by constraint and compulsion, nor yet for ostentation, having (like the Pharisee) the trumpet to go before thee, to sound foorth thy praise; but only out of meere charitie, that thou maist reape thereby that fruit that is promised thee, God accepting of thy sacrifice.

Guzman with much joy arrives at Rome

I was now a pretie waies off from Rome, whither I was bending my steps. But I no sooner came thither, but my teares trickled downe my cheekes for joy. I did wish in my heart, that mine armes had been so large, as that they might have beene able to have imbraced those sacred Walls. The first step that I set within those holy gates, I fell downe on my face, and kist that hallowed ground. And because that Country, which a man knowes, and where he hath his meanes, the same is to be accounted his Mother, I did much joy to see it. I knew the Citie well, and was as well knowne in it. I began (as I had done before) to seeke some course to live, and to maintaine this life of mine: I

THE THIRD BOOKE

falsely call it life, being it was my death, though it seemed unto me, to be my proper Center.

O alas, how strangely are we wedded to our passions, and how strange doth that seeme unto us, which doth not answer thereunto, be it never so true, never so certaine! This seemed to me, to be my only happinesse; holding (in comparison thereof) every other thing as a misfortune. And though I did see all, yet I inclined still to the worst, thinking still, that that was the best.[1]

Guzman falls a begging anew with his counterfeit sore legge

I was stirring one morning betimes, according as I had formerly beene accustomed, and trugg'd along with my sore legge, with which I sate me downe to begge at one of the Cardinals gates. And he comming forth for to goe to the Palace, stay'd to heare me, in how loud a voice and extravagant a tune, I besought his pitie; not using those plainer notes of eight, but saying; Give mee somewhat (noble Christian; friend of Jesus Christ) take pitie of this sore afflicted sinner, maimed and pained in his members; Looke upon these wretched limmes: consider my unfortunate yeeres, and take some compassion of this miserable creature! O my most reverend Father, my most noble Lord, shew some sense of sorrow, have some little feeling, I beseech your most illustrious Lordship, of this poore young wretched Youth, and powre forth your fatherly compassion upon such a pittifull piece of miserie and wretchednesse, as you see here before you. I begge it at your noble and charitable hands, in that glorious name of the blessed (though most painefull) passion of our deare Master and Redeemer Jesus Christ.

A forme of begging used by some beggers

The Cardinall takes pitie of Guzman

My Lord Cardinal (after that he had heard me with a great deale of attention) was extremely moved therewith, and conceived an extraordinary pitie towards me, insomuch that I did not seeme unto him to be a man, but that I represented unto him even God himselfe. Thereupon hee forthwith gave order to his servants, that they should take me up in their armes, and carry me into the house, and that stripping me of those old and rotten ragges, they should

What effect his pitie brings forth

[1] *Video meliora*, etc.

lay me in his owne bed, and in another chamber adjoyning thereunto, they should make his. All which was done in a moment. CHAPTER VI

O the great goodnesse of God ! O the largenesse of his noble condition ! They stript me naked, for to cloath mee ; they would not let me begge, but were ready to give me ; and to make me likewise able to give unto others. God never takes any thing away from us, but when hee meanes to bestow greater blessings upon us. When God will give thee anything, he will first aske something of thee. He comes weary about noone to the Fountaine, sits him downe, askes thee a little water whereof the beasts of the field doe drinke. Thou giv'st it him : In exchange whereof, he gives thee the water of the Well of Life, the drinke of Angels, whereof he that drinketh, shall never thirst any more. This holy man made him his patterne, who sending presently for two skilfull Surgeons, and promising to see them well rewarded, committed my cure to their charge, and that they should doe their best to make me a sound man. This care being taken, leaving me in the hands of these two hangmen, and in the power of my enemies, hee gets him away to the Palace.

Gods goodnesse

His readinesse to requite us

Physicians and Surgeons, no friends to beggers

Although we us'd many, and sundrie counterfeitings of sores, yet that which I had then made me, was rubb'd over with a certaine Herbe, which caus'd it to looke so ill and so vile, that whosoever had seene it, would have thought the sore incurable, and that great remedies must bee used, as to a thing that was shrewdly festred, and growne to a Canker ; yet if the use of this roguish Herbe be but left off for three whole daies, nature it selfe, without any other helpe, will reduce the flesh to that perfection and soundnesse, that it was in before. To these two Surgeons, it seemed at the first sight a thing of much moment. They threw off their Cloakes, they call'd for a Panne of coales, fresh butter and other things ; and when they had all that they would in a readinesse, they unswathed me, and unbound the clouts that were about my legge, which they performed very neatly and handsomely. That done, they

askt me how long I had had this sore, if I could ghesse whence it should come; if I did use to drinke Wine, what meates I did most usually feed on, and such other questions as these. Which those that are skilfull in that art, are wont to doe on the like occasions.

Guzman would not answer to the questions that the Surgeons askt him

All these I answered with silence, lying all along as if I had beene dead, for I was not almost my selfe, nor was I indeed for a pretie while, seeing such a deale of preparation to cut, to cauterize and the like; and in case I should escape all this, I was at my wits end, to thinke that my maladie would bee found out, and so my roguerie be discovered. That which I suffered in Gaeta, seemed but a flea-biting unto me. But now I lived in feare, that the Cardinall would inflict some notable punishment upon me, for this cheating tricke that I had put upon him. I knew not how to helpe my selfe, nor what to doe, nor whom to make use of in this my extremitie. For, neither in all the Letanie, nor in *Flos Sanctorum*, could I finde any Saint, that was a Defender and Protector of Villanes, or that would seeke to excuse me.

By this time they had viewd me againe and againe, a hundred and a hundred times, and turned me to and fro, this way and that way, that I thought they would never have made an end; when at last I brake forth and said; I am undone, I am undone; yet there is some life left in me: I die if you aske me any more questions, or if you meddle with me any more. Two houres of trouble have I alreadie indured under their hands, if they doe not burie me now in Tyber, (thought I) I will passe over the rest as well as I can. And say they should agree to cut off my legge, the condition were better, and the gaine more certaine, so as I did not die in the doing of it. But suppose also that this should befall me, I should then be beforehand with Death, and I shall not be put to indure that brunt another time. What can I doe more? (unfortunate man as I am) I was borne into the world, here I must suffer, patience must be my best comfort, shuffle the Cardes therefore anew, and see whether we shall have

any better lucke. For my rest is up, and the care is already taken. CHAPTER VI

While I was thus doubtfull what would become of me, the covetousnesse of these Surgeons, and their greedinesse of gaine, opened the doore to my remedie. The one of them, (who was better experienced then the other) came to know at last, that this sore was a counterfeit sore, and that by the signes and Symptomes of it, it proceeded from the effects of that very self-same Herbe which I had used. But this he kept close to himselfe, telling his fellow, This flesh is canker'd all over, and therefore it is necessarie, that to hinder it from spreading any farther, and that other new flesh may come up in its place, to cut it all away to the quicke, and then there was no doubt of the well curing of it. Surgeons of an evill conscience, what kinde of men they be

The other said unto him; This cure will aske a great deale of time; all this filthy matter must be taken away, till we come to the very belly, as it were, wherein the very pith and Core of it lies, before we can well tell what to say to it. Howsoever, we have here a faire occasion offred to shew our skill, and to picke out something of it, for the better passing over of this hard yeere. He that was the more expert man of the two, tooke the other by the hand, and led him forth aside into a withdrawing roome, that joyned close to the chamber. I, when I saw them thus goe forth together (suspecting some secret consultation) I stole me out of my bed after them, that I might listen to their talke, and it was my hap at last to heare the one of them say to the other; Master Doctor, I doe thinke (be it spoken under correction) that your Worship doth not rightly and truly understand this young mans maladie; for you shall seldome meet with the like kinde of cures, and there is scarce one of a hundred, when they doe meet with them, that doth know them, or can tell what to make of them, yet shall I acquaint you with what I know: we are Partners in this businesse, and therefore I will hide nothing from you; but it is a great secret, that I have to communicate unto you. What (for Gods sake) said the other? I shall

The wicked counsell of two Surgeons, about Guzmans sore legge

tell you, sir: and with that he said; This begger is a notable dissembling Rogue, a subtill Villaine; these sores that you see, are feigned ware, counterfeit stuffe. What shall we doe in this case? Let me be advised by you. If we leave him off thus, the bird will escape our hands, and so we shall lose both the credit and profit of this Cure. If we take upon us to cure him, we have no cure to worke upon, and then this Rascall will befoole us, and laugh at our ignorance: and if we cannot one way or other come off fairely to our best advantage, the best course will be (in my opinion) to acquaint the Cardinall how the case standeth, and what a counterfeit Knave we have under our hands.

No sir (said the other) I hold not that so fit. Let us hold the Bird fast, while we have him: it is a lesse evill, that upon this young fellow (that is no better then a *Picaro*, and an errant Rogue) we should gaine us a little reputation, and come off with some good opinion, then to let slip so fine and so faire an occasion. Let us therefore take no notice of these his counterfeit sores, but rather lay some Playsters thereunto, that may entertaine and delay the time: And if need be, we shall afterwards apply some Corrosives, that shall eate into the sound flesh, in the cure whereof, we will spend some few daies. Nay then (quoth the other) the best way will be, Sir, (as I take it) to begin first with fire, cauterizing that part which appeares thus infected.

Now, which of these two remedies they should first begin withall, as also, how they were to share the gaines betweene them, a great quarrell there was, they could not agree upon the point; for he that first found out the nature of my sore, would have the greater share, or else he would acquaint the Cardinall with the whole businesse.

When I saw upon what they stucke, and that it was a matter of little or no moment, and that upon their difference, which was occasioned by my miserable povertie, I might runne the hazzard of my utter ruine, I rusht in

betweene them, and throwing my selfe down at their feet, I said thus unto them, Gentlemen; on your hands, and tongues, depends my life, or death: my remedy, or my ruine. From my hurt no good can come to you; but from my good, you may reape assured both profit, and credit.

CHAPTER VI

Guzman speaks to the Surgeons. They agree together to abuse the charitie of this good Prelate

I know you are not ignorant of the necessitie and want which the poore suffer, and of the hardnesse of rich mens hearts, insomuch, that to moove them to the more compassion, and the easilier to get an Almes from them, we are inforced to wound our flesh, with these kinde of sores and martyrdomes, induring much trouble, and suffering much paine, yet neither these, nor greater miseries that we abide, are of power to prevaile with them. It were a great mis-fortune in others to indure that out of necessitie, which wee willingly suffer, for that poore and miserable maintenance, which we draw from thence. I beseech you (for Gods sake) to take pitie on me, seeing that you are men that runne through the troublesome street of this world, and are made of flesh and blood, as well as my selfe; and that, which hath driven me to this hard exigent, may likewise light upon your selves.

Doe not (I beseech you) bewray me, worke your will upon me, and wherein I may serve and helpe you, I will not be wanting to do as you will have me, and in all things to be so ruled by you, that you may gaine much by this your cure. You may be confident of me, and trust me as you would your owne lives; for if there were no other meanes to make me sure unto you, the feare of mine owne punishment is sufficient of it selfe, to binde me to be secret. Nor let not the respect of gaine restraine your kindnesse; for it is better to get, then to lose. We are three of us, let us all play booty, and joyne together to coozen the Cardinall; for he is rich, and something is better then nothing.

These intreaties, seasoned with a few teares, and uttered with that earnestnesse as I delivered them unto them, were sufficient to make them approve of my counsell; and so

much the rather, for that they saw that I had hit the nayle right on the head. Wherewith they were so well pleased, that they were ready for joy to take me up upon their shoulders, to carry mee to my bed. And so they and my selfe grew fully agreed to play every man his part as well as we could.

Whilest this businesse was in debating, they were so long before they could agree upon the matter, that I was scarce put into my bed, and the cloathes cast upon me; but that my Lord Cardinall was come to the Chamber doore; who when he was entred, one of the Surgeons said unto him:

The Surgeons dissemble this counterfet sore with the Cardinall

This yong-mans malady (may it please your Lordship) is a very grievous one, and we must necessarily apply great remedies thereunto. For the flesh is festred and canker'd in many places, and it hath taken such deepe roote, that it is impossible for the plaisters that we are to apply to worke any good effect, without some long tract of time; but I am very confident, and dare be bold to assure your Lordship, that (by the helpe of God) we shall make him as sound a man, as ever he was in his life.

Then said the other, If this Youth had not thus luckily falne into your Lordships pittifull and charitable hands, within a few dayes, these his sores would have been so putrified, and have so corrupted the whole body, that all the world could not have sav'd his life, but he must have perished, and dy'de. But we shall so stop this Canker, from spreading it selfe any farther, and use such good meanes for his recoverie, that I make no question but within sixe moneths; if not sooner, his flesh shall come to bee as whole and as faire as mine.

The good Cardinall (whom Charitie had onely mooved hereunto) told them; Be it in sixe, or in ten, let me have it throughly healed and cured as it ought to be cured, and I shall take order that you be provided of all things necessary for it, you shall want nothing. With this, he left them, and with-drew himselfe into another roome. This did put new life into me; and as if they had drawne my

heart out of the one side, and had thrust it in on the other into my body againe, so did I then feele my selfe. For even till that very instant, I did not rest assured of these two traiterous Surgeons. I stil feared, they would have wheeled about another way, and have beene the cause of my undoing. But by that which I had heard them treat in my presence, I was some-what cheered, and began to be of good comfort. CHAPTER VI

But the custome of Swearing, Gaming, and Begging, are things that are hard to be left off. It could not choose but grieve me very much, that I was hindred in my course, mew'd up, debarr'd my liberty, and made unable to injoy those good and plentifull Almes, which I gain'd by begging. Which losse notwithstanding did seeme the lesse, in regard of that curious intertainment, choyse dyet, and good lodging that I had, that mans desire could not have wisht it to have bin better. For I was waited on, like a Prince, and cured with that care, as if I had beene the Cardinall himselfe. And so had he given commandement to the servants of his house; besides his dayly comming in his owne proper person to visit me. And sometimes he would sit downe and make some stay with me, talking of such things, wherein he tooke pleasure to heare me. Swearing, Gaming, and Begging, three things hard to be left

At length, being healed of this infirmitie, (when the Surgeons saw their time,) they were dismissed, receiving a great deale of pay, for a little paines. And I was commanded to be new cloath'd, and to be listed in the Roll of the Pages; that as one of them, from that time forward, I might attend, and wait upon his Lordship. Guzman is fully cured

He is made one of the Cardinalls Pages

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER VII

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth, how all things have had their time of Empire. He delivereth strange things, touching Truth, and Lying. As being Page to the Cardinall; hee declareth the Vertues, and the Vices, wherein your Pages exercise themselves. He relateth a pleasant Story of his stealing of some Conserves; and how he was punished for it

All things created have had their time of sway

OF all things created, none can complaine to have past without it's Empire. They have all of them had their day, and have taken their turne. But because Time changeth al things; these are past and gone; and those have finished their course.

Poetry

And first to begin with Poetry, it is apparent to all the world, how much that in it's time was celebrated.

Oratory

Let ancient Rome report, in what reverence were your Orators held, that were skill'd in the Art of Rhetorick, and had the gift of speaking well and eloquently.

Divinitie

And let our Spaine speake, what honour is now at this day given to those sacred letters of holy Writ, so many

Law

yeeres since, so well received by her; And in what esteeme stand both the Lawes, Civill, and Canon.

Apparell

The fashion of Apparell, and wearing of cloathes in Spaine, cannot escape amongst the rest; wherein we dayly finde new changes, and new alterations, after which strange fashions all runne as fast, as scatteringly, and as much out of order as Goates doe one after another; and as one Sheepe leapes after another; so doe men and women leape into fashions. Hee is no body that is not in the new fashion.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VII

And nothing now seemeth well, but what is in use; notwithstanding that it hath been already used, and that lately, and approved for good: And that sottish ignorance of the common rout, and baser sort of people, is come now to that passe, that they will all forsooth be alike; the tall man as the short; the Quack-belly, as the *Scranio*; the fat, as the leane; the sicke, as the sound; the deformed, as the well-proportioned man, will have (if not one and the selfe-same measure) at least one and the selfe-same fashion; putting themselves into ugly and monstrous shapes, and into an indecent and ill-becomming weare of cloathes, and onely because they will follow the fashion, and be in the same cut as others be, as if one kinde of Syrrop, or Purge, were fit for all diseases.

Words and Speech

The words likewise and phrases of our speech, have been corrupted by use, and those which once were fyled phrases, and pure language, are now accounted rude and barbarous.

Meats

Meates also have their season, and their time; For that doth not please us in the Winter, which we have a great desire unto in the Spring; nor that like us in the Autumne, which we have a minde unto in the Summer.

Buildings
Warlike Engines
Manuall Arts
Musicke
Dancing

Your buildings, and your Engines of Warre are dayly renued. Your Manuall workes, and those that are wrought with the hand, have their turnings too; as your Seates, your Chaires, your Benches, your Cupboords, your Cabinets, your Tables, your low Stooles for women, your Lamps, your Candle-sticks, and the like: Your sports, your games and your Dances, have also their changes. And even in Musicke, and in Songs, wee finde the like.

For some are much taken with the *Zaravanda*;[1] and others may come hereafter, that will utterly mislike it, and make it grow out of date. Who have seene your Mules in former times, how much Velvet they have drawne along

[1] *Zaravanda*: a knowne Dance in Spaine, very wanton and lascivious. The women of Cadiz invented the Dance, and brought it to Rome, whereof Martiall makes mention in some places. Especially lib. 5. Epig. 79. *Nec de Gadibus improbis puellæ Vibrabunt sine fine prurientes Lascivos docili tremore lumbos.*

with them in their Foot-cloathes, may now in these behold how incapable they are of any such courtesie, being not suffered to have any ornaments of Silke or Gold.

Foot cloathes

Asses

We are all witnesses, when the time was, that my little pretty Sardinian Asse, was your womens onely *Regalo* and delightfull companion, when they performed their Stations, or went upon their Visits. But they are now all for their *Sillas*, and easie Chaires carried with hands, which heretofore were well contented with good honest Pack-Saddles.

Pack-Saddles

Dogs

Monkies

Parrots

The Distaffe and Spindle

Let your Ladies now tell me, how essentiall a thing it is, and how much it importeth them, to have little foysting Hounds, Monkies, and Parrakitos, for to intertaine the time; who in times past did spend those idler houres at the Reele and Spindle, and exercising their Needle in some curious, yet necessarie workes: But these are falne into disgrace, they are growne out of fashion, their time is past and gone, they have their course, and are vanished with the rest.

Truth, how much respected in old time

The like hath hapned unto Truth, that also hath had its time: Insomuch that it was anciently much more used then now: And so much, that it was a generall saying in those dayes, that it was respected above all other Vertues; and he that told any Lye, were it of more or lesse importance, received punishment accordingly, even to the losse of life, by being publikely stoned to death.

But because we are quickly weary of well-doing, and what is ill, will never be tyred out; men growing worse and worse, so holy a Law could not keepe it selfe afoot amongst so many wicked persons. Whereupon, it came to passe, that a great Plague and Pestilence comming amongst them, all those that were touched with it (if they escaped with their life) remained with some offensive marke or other on their persons: And as it befalleth, that one generation passeth, and another comes in the place, one succeeding another; they that were borne sound and whole, reproched those other with their faults and defects, wherewith they were notably grieved to see themselves thus disgraced, and tooke it very offensively at their hands.

CHAPTER VII

A short Story of Truth

Whence it came to passe by little and little, that Truth began to be heard with an unwilling eare. And because men were thus unwilling to heare it, they grew at last to be unwilling to tell it. For by the first round, we come unto the second, and by the second, by degrees to the top of all. And a little sparke sometimes sets a whole Citie on fire.

Truth banished

At last they grew so bold as to breake this Statute, and not contented therewith, they banished Truth at last into perpetuall Exile; and in her stead Lying was entertained, and seated in her throne.

Truth being thus condemned, she went from among them to performe the tenor of her Sentence. She went all alone, poore, and naked; as it usually hapneth unto those that are sunke, and falne from their fortunes; (for every man is valued according to that that he hath, or as his abilitie is; and those which formerly have beene our friends, in time of adversitie turne tayle, and become our enemies.) And having gone some few daies journeys from thence, standing on a high Mountaine, she might perceive, passing over the edge of a little Hill, a great companie comming along, and the neerer still they drew, the greater did their number appeare. In the midst of a Squadron, compassed about with an Armie, came Kings, Princes, Governors, Priests of that profession, Men of command, and Rulers of those Provinces, every one according to his qualitie, either more or lesse, neere to this triumphant Chariot, which they had placed in the midst, with a great deale of Majestie, which was wrought with admirable Arte, and extreme curiositie.

Lyes Triumph

In this Chariot, was there a high Throne erected, whose seate was of Ivory, Ebonie, and Gold; wherein were inchased many precious Stones, and a woman sitting thereupon, with a Crowne upon her head, like a Queene; her face most beautifull; but as you drew neerer and neerer unto it, it did lose much of it's fairenesse, and at last appeared most foule and ugly. Her body, when she sate still, and did not stirre, seemed lustie, neate, and handsome;

but when she rose up, and stood upon her feet, or walked up and downe, she discovered many defects. Her Robes were of changeable Taffaties, exceeding rich and glorious to the eye, and full of varietie of colours, strangely diversified, and cunningly intermingled one with another, but the threds so slender, so subtill, and of that little or no substance, that the very ayre would puffe it in pieces, and every the least thing, either make bracks in it, or breake and teare it to fitters.

Truth, she stood still (poore soule) till this Squadron was past, admiring to see so much greatnesse and State; but when the Charriot came right over against her, the Lady Lye tooke notice of this poore honest Dame Truth, and commanded those about her to stay. And causing her to come neerer unto her, she began to aske her whence she came, whither she would, and what she went about? And Truth plainly told her all.

Lye meetes with Truth

The Lady Lye thought it fitting out of state and greatnes, and for a farther addition of honour, to lead her along with her: For every one is so much the more powerfull, by how much the greater are the enemies, whom he overcommeth: and is by so much the more esteemed and reputed of in the world, by how much the mightier the forces are, against which he makes resistance.

Hereupon she commands Truth to wait upon her. There was no remedy, she could not avoyd it, she must along with her, whether she would or no; but in the tayle of all the troope, being commanded to come last, for that was her knowne place, and at that time did (as it should seeme) properly belong unto her.

Truth, where she takes her place

He that will seeke for Truth, shal not finde her with this great Lady Lye, nor with any of her Ministers, for she comes in the Rere last of all, and there she manifests her selfe to those, that make inquirie after her.

Favour goes forth to meet the Lady Lye

The first daies journey that she march't, she came to a goodly faire Citie, where Favour went forth to receive her, a very potent and powerfull Prince, who invites both her and all her Traine to his house.

CHAPTER VII

The Lady Lye accepted of this his kindnesse, giving him many thankes for this his courteous offer, but would needs goe to lodge at the rich and sumptuous Palace of Wit, where a great feast, and a curious banquet was provided for her.

Wit entertaines the Lady Lye

Afterwards, when she was to goe from thence, and to passe on forward with her Troopes, my Lady Lyes Steward, which was Ostentation, tall of person, with a long beard, a grave countenance, a settled gate, and words well plaste, came to mine Host, that had given them this good entertainment, and ask't him, what was to pay? The reckoning was summ'd up; and the Steward, without contradiction, or abatement of any thing, told him it was wel.

Ostentation the Lady Lyes Steward

Then the Lady Lye called Ostentation her Steward unto her, saying; See you pay this man well, out of that money which you gave him to keepe, when you came in hither. Mine Host seemed to be amazed thereat, and began to wonder with himselfe, what money this should be, that they talked of; and thought at first, that they had but spoke in jest. But when he saw that they stood so stiffely in it, and that the same was affirmed by so many of good (as they seemed to be) condition and qualitie, he did very much complaine, saying; That till now, he had never beene so ill us'd before in all his life. Upon that my Lady Lye, for the justifying thereof, presents these for Witnesses; Idlenesse, her Treasurer; Flattery, her principall follower, and chiefe Attendant on her Person; Vice her Chamberlaine; And Wily-beguile-you, one of her maides of Honour, together with divers other of her servants. And that she might convince him the better, she commanded Interest, mine Hosts Sonne, and Covetousnesse, his Wife, to be brought forth before him: All which avouched to his face, that it was so.

The coyne, wherin the Lady Lye makes her payments

Lyes Witnesses, who they be

Wit seeing himselfe in this streight, did rend the ayre with his Exclamations, calling upon the heavens, that they would make the Truth knowne; for they had not only deny'd him that which they ow'd him; but they demaunded that of him, which he ow'd them not.

Wit complains of his wrong

THE THIRD BOOKE

Truth speakes in favour of Wit

Truth, seeing him thus afflicted, as being one that ever wish't him well, came to him, and told him ; My friend Wit, you have reason on your side, but I know not how to helpe thee ; for she that denies this debt, is the Lady Lye, and here is no body on your part but my selfe, and all the service that I am able to doe you, is ; to declare my selfe for you, as I doe.

The Lady Lye gives sentence on Wits side, but condemnes Truth in the charges

The Lady Lye was so startled, and so abasht at this her boldnesse, that she commanded her Ministers, that Wit should be pay'd, but with Truths wealth ; which was accordingly done. And so they set forward, taking up, as they went along, Innes and other lodgings, as such kinde of people use to doe, letting no place scape, where they did not purloine and steale. For one wicked Villaine is commonly the hangman to another. And evermore, (take it for a generall rule) one thiefe, one blasphemer, one ruffian, and one damn'd fellow, ends his life by the hands of one that is as bad as himselfe : And these are a kinde of great Fishes, which feed upon the lesser Frie.

Murmuration

They arrived afterwards at a place, whereof Murmuration was Mistresse, a great friend to the Lady Lye, who came forth to meet her, causing all the great Persons of her Kingdome, and her owne private servants, to lead on the way afore.

Murmurations followers, who they be

Amongst the which went Pride, Trecherie, Deceit, Gluttony, Ingratitude, Malice, Hatred, Negligence, Sloth, Obstinacie, Revenge, Envie, Injurie, Folly, Vainglory, Madnesse, Selfe-will, besides other her familiar friends and acquaintance. She invited her to be her Guest, and that she would be pleased to make her Palace her Inne, and with that freenesse, as if it were her owne.

The Lady Lye dines at her house, and upon what condition

The Lady Lye accepted of her kindenesse, but with this condition, that she might only have the use of her lodgings, and in all the rest, to be at her owne charge. Murmuration was very willing to have showne her greatnesse, and withall to have given her the best entertainment she could ; but because it was Lyes pleasure to have it otherwise, she rested contented, and thanked her that she would be pleased to doe her house that grace, which she esteemed as a great

favour; and so without any farther reply on either part, they went hand in hand together to the Palace. Solicitude, who was Steward; and Inconstancie the Caterer, made provision of victuals; the fame whereof was so great, that many came from all the bordering places thereabouts, with a world of all sorts of dainties, and whatsoever else was necessarie for the setting forth of so great a Feast; all which was taken up, without any hucking or sticking upon the price; Looke what they askt, that they were agreed withall to have. But after dinner, when they were to depart, and goe their wayes, the Owners of these things demanded money for what they had sold. The Treasurer said, that hee ow'd them nothing; and the Caterer, that hee had payd them all. Whereupon there was great stirre, and much adoe; insomuch that the Lady Lye was faine to come foorth her selfe amongst them, and said unto them; My friends, what is it you would have? Are you mad? or what's the matter with you? Sure you are either out of your wits, or I doe not well understand my selfe. You are all of you payd alreadie for whatsoever you brought hither; and I my selfe saw with mine own eyes, when your moneys were payd you before Truths face, and in her presence. Let her speake, if she may be taken for a witnesse, whether it be so or no: I will be content to be tryde by her. They going then to seeke out Truth, to decide this difference, and to award what was to be done in this businesse; she feigned herselfe to bee asleepe. They call'd aloud unto her. But shee bethinking her selfe, how ill she had been dealt withall before, was in a doubt what shee should doe: at last she resolved with her selfe to feigne her selfe dumbe, and had lost her speech, that she might not pay for that, which others had bought, and were her professed enemies: Whereupon she hath continued that custome ever since; And now truth is growne dumbe, for that she had pay'd so soundly for not being mute before. And therefore hee that speakes the Truth, let him pay for't by my consent. For as the world now goes, hee is worthy so to doe.

CHAPTER VII

Solicitude, Steward of the house: Inconstancie, the Caterer

Lyes shift, that she may not pay what she owes

Truth becomes dumbe, and the cause why

Truth and Lying how compared

But it seemeth unto me (as I have painted it in mine Imagination) that Truth and Lying are like the string, and the Wrest or Peg in some Instrument. The string hath a delicate sound, sweet, and pleasing to the eare ; But the Peg doth skreeke, squeake, and creake like a Cart-wheele, and can hardly be turn'd and wrested. The string gently yeelds, willingly stretching and inlarging it selfe, till you have strained it to your liking ; But the Peg goes still twirling and turning, being wrung, wrinched, and pinch't upon by the string. Just so stands the case, for all the world, betwixt Truth and Lying. Truth is the Peg, and Lying the string : Well may a Lye goe working and winding it selfe upon Truth, which is the Peg, and leave some print, or signe therein, making it to sound harsh and untuneable to the eare, but in the end, it goes (although with some difficulty) turning and winding a Lye so long, till Truth remaine whole and sound, like the Peg ; and Lying crack't and broken, like the String.

If I had treated Truth, all those torments, affronts, and afflictions which I had runne thorow and indured, could not in the end but have set me safe in some one good Port or other, and have brought me with joy to the fortunate Ilands. But the whole course of my life, was lying, coozenage, and roguerie, and soe like the string of an Instrument, when it came to be put in tune, it could not indure any the least straining, and so presently brake, it was not able (I say) to resist and withstand Truthes stretching hand, but went still turning and twirling, from one mischiefe to another, and from one evill into a worse. So one Deepe calleth up another, and one Wave comes head-longly tumbling in upon the necke of his fellow.

Guzmans course of life, what it was

Guzman turned Page

The Pin is now turn'd, and I am rais'd up to be a Page, God grant I may come downe no lower. That thing which receiveth violence and is strained to a course contrary to its nature, it is impossible, but it must revert and returne to it's center, be it low, or be it high ; for that is the place, which it doeth naturally affect and desire. They tooke mee from the height of my glory, and brought me downe

so lowe as to serve, which (being so opposite as it was to my disposition) you shall see how long I continued in that course.[1] CHAPTER VII

Hee that walkes too fast, will be quickly weary; And to passe so suddenly from one extreme to another, as it cannot be done with safetie, so is it conserved with difficultie. If a Tree take not deepe rooting, it will never beare any fruit, but quickly dries and withers away; So he that is newly put into an Office, cannot suddenly take any deepe rooting; and say hee should be settled therin some yeeres, he will hardly thrive in a strange soyle, that doth not sort with his nature, and so will prove in the end as unprofitable to himselfe as unfruitfull to others. It was too great a leape, to rise from a Picaro, to be a Page, (though in a manner they are correlatives, and have a kinde of relation one to another, only their habit doth difference and distinguish them) and I could not choose but grieve, as oft as I thought upon it. That which was common with others, fell out quite contrary with mee. For it is said, *Que las honras, quanto mas creçen, mas hambre ponen.* That the more honour a man has, the more he desires. But I was so farre from that liking, that it was rather to mee a loathing. Such high places did not please me; Those that I had profest, those were for mee. *Cada uno en lo que se cria.* Let every man betake himselfe to that, wherein he hath beene traind and bred up. Is it fit (thinke you) to take the fish out of the water, and to breed Peacocks therein? To put an Oxe to fly, and an Eagle to plough? To feed a Horse with sand? To sup a Falcon with straw? And to take from a man his Risibilitie (to speake like a Logician) and facultie of laughing? I was bred up among the Flesh-pots of Egypt; my Center was a good victualing house; my Circle, a good honest Taverne; and my end, Vice; whereunto I did bend amaine; In that I tooke pleasure, that was health and life to me; and what was contrarie to that, I tooke no joy in it, it was not for me, nor was I willing to make it mine. Proverb Proverb

[1] *Nullum violentum diuturnum.*

THE THIRD BOOKE

What Guzman did whilst he was a Page

My mouth was now daintily fed; my backe delicately clad; my eyes swolne with too much sleepe; my hands (for want of worke) as soft as silke; my belly, (with too much pampering) as hard brac't as any Drumme; my buttocks brawny, and thicke-skin'd with too much sitting; and my chaps (like a Monkies) nimbly walking on both sides, when I was at my meat. Tell me, how was it possible for me to content my selfe; how indure to be put to a set Pension, to stay waiting all day long at a doore, at nights to stand with a Torch in my hand, leaning against a wall, and standing upon one legge like a Crane, till it be almost day-breake? Sometimes, (if not for the most part) supper-lesse, but frozen (I am sure) with cold, expecting the Visits that goe out and come in, being like a Ladder for others to goe up and down; or like a Smiths paire of Bellowes, ascending, and descending, to beare others company, waiting upon my Lords Caroche early and late; not onely at some set seasons and certaine times, but at all houres both of day and night, being myred in the Winter with durt; and choaked in the Summer with dust; holding a Trencher betweene my Thumbs at meales; my belly growing leane and lanke through a longing desire, feeding on the best dishes with my eyes, and wishing in my soule, that every dainty morsell at the boord, had been meat for my mouth. Besides, going upon one message, and returning with another, tyring out my legges, and wearing out my shooes, and being allowed but every moneth a paire, we were forced to goe fifteene dayes of the thirty bare-foote. These are the things, that yeerely passe from the first of January, to the last of December. And he, who at the end thereof should aske us: How have you thriv'd this yeere? What have you got?

Pages gettings, what they be

The clocke of a Pages stomake, must goe still an hower after his Masters

The answer is at hand, Sir, I rest upon my Lords love and favour, I referre my selfe to his discretion and goodnes. I eate of his meat, and drinke of his drinke; in Winter feeding on that which is cold; in Summer, that which is hot. And what I have in that kinde, is but a poore pittance, and that little none of the best, and commonly some-

what of the latest, that a man were as good goe without it. I weare what cloathes he gives me, such as you see; as a Livery rather of my servitude, then of devotion to cloath mee; not given me to keepe me warme, but to doe my Lord honour: And those too must be made to their minde, and our cost. So that our money payes for it, and they choose the colours.

Our greater gaines did consist in cold fare, for there was not one of us that could finger a full Trencher: scraps, and picking of their teeth, wee had in some aboundance, and with these wee intertained our selves, and the like poore Relicks that they left, and some refuse fruits, that were not worth the eating, and such things as these, or worse, were all the fruits of our labours.

When the winde blew fresh, and that wee had got a matter of some ten or twelve Quartes,[1] which with us was a great Summe, we rais'd this money out of so many drops and flakes of Waxe, which wee tooke off from our Torches, which we sold to some old Cobler or other. Hee amongst us that could get up a little stocke, that were worth any thing, though it were never so small, this man had a sufficient Patrimony, and did great things with it, he might buy him a penny-pasty at the Cookes, and other the like odde kinde of junkets; but if he were taken in the manner, he was sure to be whipt for his labour. This was his judgement. Onely it was permitted unto us to steale. I say (if we had stolne) it was held the lesse evill of the two. For if it had beene permitted, and that we might have beene suffered so to doe, I would so cunningly have imployd my wits in that kinde, that I would in a short time have beene able to set up a Chandlers shop. But if I did make benefit of mine owne Torch, or filch now and then from my fellowes some of theirs, that was all that I did. But they were so base, and so crafty withall, that I never saw them busie themselves about any other thing, being more desirous to lose their meat, then that; for victuals are consumed in the belly, and can not afterwards be sold to

[1] A matter of some eight pence, or nine pence.

profit; and yet for these things too, they had a thousand shifts and rogueries.

A Page steales a Hony-Combe, waiting at table; The Story of it, and his punishment

For I saw one of them once take a Hony-combe from the table, and presently wrapt it in his Handkerchiefe, and clapt it into his Pocket. But because he waited at the Table, and for that he could not carry it so speedily as he would have done to the Haven of Safety, nor land it in so good a place as he desired, it hapned that the heat of the weather, and the warmth of his pocket, melted the Honey, which in great haste came trickling downe his Breeches, and dropt out at his knees. My Lord spide it, as he sate at Table, who could scarce forbeare laughing; at last, to make himselfe merry, he call'd him unto him, and commanded him to put downe his Hose. The page did so. And when his hands came to touch upon the Honey, it clung fast to his fingers ends, whereat they fell a laughing, and he went away ashamed. But he had sowre sauce to his sweet meat; for besides that he never tasted of the Honey, hee was so soundly lasht, that his breech dropt Waxe, as fast as the Combe did Honey. Which misfortune should never have befalne me, for I was perfect in all kind of roguerie, and would never have beene to seeke of some slight or other for cleanely conveyance. And that my sword might not rust in my scabberd, but that I might still keepe my hand in use, I was evermore a practising upon some toyes and trifles, petty things, not worth the taking, onely to set my fellowes wits aworke, and to give them a bone to gnaw upon.

Foolish Pages, not fit for Court

The Divell (I thinke) brought Fooles and Block-heads to the Court, who let every good morsell slip besides their mouthes: a troublesome and wearisome kinde of people to treat withall, unfit for the managing of businesse; insupportable in their carriage, and tedious in their conversation. A man should be like to a good Horse, or a good Greyhound, upon all occasions to take his carreere, and to make his course; and moreover hee must carry himselfe in a coole and quiet manner.

There were Pages good store; but I must tell you, that

the most of them, nay, I will inlarge my speech a little more, and say; That they were all Chips of one and the same blocke, a company of beetle-heads, dull-spirited fellowes, that had no wherry in them, not onely when they were in their Lords presence; but likewise, when they were out of his sight. They were as slow in executing his will, as they were lazie in getting up from their beds; they were idle, retchlesse, carelesse, all set upon loytering, exercising neither their bodies, nor their braines, which made mee the more willing to play the Wagge with them, and for my better pastime, to put one pretty tricke or other upon them.

Guzmans tricks being a Page

I did store my selfe with Stockins, Garters, Bands, Hats, Handkerchiefes, Poynts, Cuffes, Shooes, and whatsoever I could rape or wring from them, which I hid betweene the Straw of one of my fellowes beds, because, if any search were made, they should not finde them in mine. I altered the propertie of these things in an instant, they never lay long by me, I would chop them for old iron, rather then bee troubled with the keeping of them. It behooved them to looke well about them, and to see that they had all safe and sure under locke and key, for if they should carelessely leave any thing abroad, those eyes that found it gone, did never see it returne againe.

Many of these waggish parts I plaid, which were but tricks of youth, and nothing else. But I fell afterwards into a fault, which I would have sworne of all others (so farre was it from my thought) I should never have offended in. It was a licorish sinne, even the sinne of Gluttony. Which I doe not know, whether it proceeded from my eating by measure (as being stinted) or whether that my longing did provoke and stirre up my appetite? or whether it were now muing time with mee, and that I was to change my old feathers, and get me new; for they say, that men, while they live heere in this world, doe at certaine times and seasons, (as other creatures shead their haires, and recover new coats) change and alter their manners and conditions.

Guzman hath a licorish tooth

THE THIRD BOOKE

I was now growne so licorish, and so sharpe-set upon sweet meats, (for the pleasant taste they had, while they passed downe my throat) that never any blind man was halfe so forward to goe repeating his Letanies, and other his set prayers, from doore to doore, to get an Almes, as I was to please my palate: And looke whatsoever came within the reach[1] of mine eyes, were it as farre as they could ken, and safe inough (as it might be supposed) from catching, yet could it not escape my Eagles-talons.

And as the Hart, with his breathing, drawes your Snakes out of the bowels of the earth: So I, if I could but once come to set mine eyes upon such, or such a dainty, it was sure mine owne, they rendred themselves at first into my hands; my hands, they turn'd them over to my mouth; and my mouth committed them close prisoners to my belly, where these sweets remained, till they were no longer sweet.

My Lord Cardinall had a great Chest (which kinde of Chests are much used in Italy) of white Pine; and I have likewise seene good store of them in Spaine, which they usually bring from thence, stuft with Merchandize, but especially with glasses, and earthen cups and dishes, the better to keepe them from breaking.

This Chest stood in a with-drawing Chamber, for to *regalar*, and cheere himselfe withall, being full of divers sorts of Conserves; there, I say, were your dry Suckets delicately candied, your Bergamota Peare[2] of Aranxues,[3] your Genoa Cherry, your Melon of Granada, your Sevillian Cytrons, your Oranges, and Pome-Citrons of Plasencia, your Lemons of Murçia, your pretty little Cucumbers of Valençia, your budds of the Ilands, your Berengenas of

[1] The Spanish word is *Columbrar*. To discerne a thing a farre off, which can hardly be perceived what it is. It seemeth to be borrowed from the Latine word *Collimare*. *Quod proprium est oculorum, cùm eos in angulum retorquentes, obliquè aliquid aspicimus, penitusque in rem aliquam defigimus, quemadmodum Sagittarii solent, cùm aliquid sibi addictum designant.*

[2] A Peare of a delicate taste, brought from the City of Bergamo in Italy, whence it hath the name.

[3] A garden of great both circuit, and pleasure, full of all sorts of fruits, some few Leagues from Madrid; It is the Kings garden.

Toledo,[1] your Orejones of Aragon,[2] your Potatas of Malaga : your Pippens, Parsneps, Carrets, Pompeons, besides a thousand severall sorts of Comfits, and an infinit number more of sundry different kinds of Sweet-meats, which did disquiet my spirit within me, not suffering my soule to take any rest. CHAPTER VII

As often as he made any Colation, or did eate any of these things, he gave me the Key, himselfe standing by, while I tooke them out, never trusting mee with them alone by my selfe.

This distrust of his, begot anger in me ; and this anger, a desire of revenge. This (though I were broad awake) did I still dreame on. I thought with my selfe (God forgive me for it) how I might possibly come to have a fling at this Chest, and open this Myne, which was more precious unto me, then all the gold in the Indies.

I told you already, that the Chest was a very great one, beeing to my seeming two yards and a halfe in length, one in depth, and another in breadth : it was as white (if not more) then any Paper ; the Barres and all the rest of the Iron-worke about it, as small as your finest threds of Cam bricke, curiously wrought, smooth and neatly polished, strengthened with good strong plates at the corners, set with studs very handsomely ; the Locke stood in the midst, there being but one Key to open to this sweet Paradise, and that was in my Lords custodie. If thou know'st what it is to steale, or hast ever heard tell of it ; or would'st faine learne how to rob a Chest, and to take what thou wilt out of it, without either falsifying of a Key, ripping open of a Locke, taking off the Hindges, or breaking up the Boards ; Listen but to me, and I will tell thee how it may be done.

When it was my turne to waite, and that there were any Visits, or other necessarie businesses at home, whose

[1] A kinde of fruit growing on the ground like a Melon. Also they are called *Amoris poma*, Love-Apples, because they provoke a man to Lust. *Vide* Covarruvias, Ver. *Berengena.*

[2] A kinde of dryed Peaches, which steeped some foure and twenty houres in Wine, are good meat.

THE THIRD BOOKE

Guzman steales his Lords sweet-meates

present being in action, might promise me securitie; I had certaine Iron tooles in a readinesse, which I had prepared of purpose, with the helpe whereof I did by little and little heave up the lid of the Chest, till I could thrust in a pretty little wedge of wood, and then heaving it up a little more, I did put in a round sticke, about the bignesse of the head of a reasonable good big Hammer, and this I went wresting in by degrees, turning and winding it faire and softly towards the locke, whereunto, the neerer and neerer still that it grew, the more and the more did it still heave up my corner, so that being (as I was) but a Youth, and having a slender hand, and a small arme, I tooke out such Sweet-meats, as I had most minde unto, wherewith I fill'd my pockets as full as ever I could stuffe them. But when I could not reach now and then to those that were farther off, that I might meet at last with this their contumacie and rebellion, I did clap upon the end of a Cane, or some little sticke, two Pinn's, one having a sharpe point, and the other made crooked like a hooke, and by the helpe of these two, I brought them to their due obedience.

And thus I became Lord and Master of what-soever was within the Chest, without the helpe of any key. In which theft, I carried my selfe so cunningly, that though I had stolne much, yet there was nothing found to be missing. At last I lighted upon a *Melacotone* of Castile, which being as faire, and as goodly a one (for it's greatnesse) as ever I saw in all my life, and gilded all over, my appetite was much provoked therewith, it seeming to be one intire piece of Gold, when I first tasted it: the relish whereof (me thinkes) remaineth yet still in my mouth; me thought I never tasted any thing better, nor had I ever seene the like before.

Now, because this was a knowne Piece, when it was once discovered, that this curiositie was wanting, there was presently a generall suspition conceived; but not any the least thought or jealousie, that it had beene taken out so, as indeed it was, but was rather imagined, that it was done by some counterfeit key. And this did much trouble

my Lord the Cardinall, that he should have any in his house, that should dare to falsifie his locks, especially in so private and secret a roome as this was, which he reserved for his owne use. Whereupon he forthwith called unto him his principall servants, to the end that he might search out the truth of this businesse. But as good lucke would have, it fell out so happily, that all that I had stolne thence, was downe my throat, and thorowly digested, not any the least remembrance thereof remaining any more in my possession. Now my Lord had to his Steward a melancholy Chaplaine, a fellow of an ill concoction, who wisht my Lord, that all his servants should be call'd together, and afterwards have them shut up in one chamber, where they should be thorowly examined, one by one, to see what could be got out of them, and that their chambers likewise be searcht; for such a piece of worke as this could not proceed from any man of reason, but from the lickorish mouth of some of his Pages, or some other his younger boyes about the house, which had a sweet tooth in their head. CHAPTER VII

Well, we were all lockt up close like birds in a cage, but to no end and purpose in the world; for they found us to be all true blades,[1] not one false one amongst us all, but according to the right marke, just and even to a hayre. This storme was over-past with us, but not my Lords care; For, I can assure you, our Master was wonderfull desirous to come to the true knowledge hereof; And by reason of the great stirre that was made about it, I did refraine for some few daies, till this businesse might be over-blowne, and that the mater was in a manner quite forgotten, *y huviesse otro asno verda*; And that I might have some faire occasion to have another fling at them. Proverb

Well, I durst not for a prettie while after put my hand to the Chest, nor once offer to cast so much as an eye towards it. But that crookednesse, which a tree once taketh in it's tender growth, the bigger it growes, the crookeder

[1] In Spain, all your Sword-blades, are of one length, otherwise they be held unlawfull, and are forfeited to the Justice.

it is, waxing still worse and worse; And therefore those Knavish trickes, which I had learned in my youth, were so deepely imprinted in me, that they could not be blotted out. So that I was as well able to live without them, as without drawing ayre, and fetching of my breath: Especially in those things, whereunto I had beene accustomed from a childe; for I had beene long practised in them, and they pleas'd me passing well, and I tooke such delight and pleasure in them, as in nothing more.

In a word, I must up into the Saddle againe, though it cost me another fall. I could not choose but goe visit my sweet friends, to see how they did; I got me againe to my old haunt, to see what good game I could finde.

One day then amongst the rest, when my Master was at play, I thought with my selfe, that my master could not (would he never so faine shift them off) but keepe those Cardinals companie, that were come in kindenesse to see him. This Chest stood in a by-roome, within his bed-Chamber, much after the manner of a Closet.

Now, I had no sooner trust up my doublet, and tuckt up the sleeve of my shirt, and thrust in mine arme as farre I could reach, but my Lord had list to make water. Whereupon he rose up, and came into his Chamber, and not finding any of his Pages there, he went and took the Urinal himselfe, which stood at his beds head, and whilest he was making water, it was my ill hap to heare him: which sudden and unexpected accident did so startle me, and affright me, that going about to get out mine arme quickly (that I might not be taken in the manner) making (as it seemed) more haste then good speed, my round Rouler fel rumbling on the floore, the Chest, that presently shuts it selfe upon me, while mine arme, like a Sparrow in a Pit-fall, or a Mouse in a Trap, is taken prisoner betwixt the locke and the lid, where it was held too fast to get forth in haste. At the noyse of the fall, my Lord askt, Who's there? I could doe no lesse then make answer to his call, but the Divell a foot that I could stirre to come forth unto him. Thereupon he comes in, finding me upon my knees, stealing

the Hony-combes out of his Hive. He demanded of me, what I made there ? I confest the whole matter how it was, and without any more adoe (for I saw there was no sence for it) I told him the whole truth of the businesse. But when he saw how prettily I was taken, the more he look't upon me, the more desire he had to laugh ; and to make his mirth the fuller, he call'd to those, that were in the next roome at play, that they likewise might come and see, how the bird hung by the wing, and could not get loose. When they saw how I was caught, they all fell a laughing, as though their hearts would have burst for want of breath ; yet had they so much left at last, as to intreat his Lordship that this fault might be forgiven me, as being the first that I had offended him in ; and the rather, for that it is given to al Youth, to have a likorish tooth. My Lord stood off, and would by no meanes be brought to yeeld ; no intreatie would serve the turne, I must be whipt, there was no remedie, but I must be brought to the blocke. CHAPTER VII

Well, when they saw they could not procure my pardon, then they grew to a new Consultation, touching the number of the stripes ; whereon they were so long a devising, as if it had beene a thing contained in the Decretals, or some Pontificiall Act, that they had seriously sate on. In the end, the number concluded on in this Conclave of Cardinals, was twelve, a full doozen I was to have, neither more nor lesse. And the care of this paiment was committed to Sir Nicholas, my Lords Secretary, my mortall enemie, who presently carried me away to his Chamber, and layd them on so soundly, and with so good a will, that for a fortnight after I was not able to sit upon my breech ; but he did not goe so cleare away with this businesse as he thought he should, for it was not long e're I did cry quittance with him, and returned this payment seven-fold into his owne bosome ; so that he had no great cause, by that time I had done with him, to brag of his bargaine. And that I may not delay you any longer, this tricke anon after I put upon him.

Guzman cryes quittance with the Secretary

My gentleman was much troubled with Mosquitos,[1] which did so persecute him, that he could not sleepe for them, they did so disquiet and torment him; All Rome did swarme with them, and in our house we had reasonable good store.

Whereupon, (hearing him complaine much of them, and how hee was bitten and vexed by them) I told him I would give him a remedy, which we did use in Spaine, wherewithall to destroy this troublesome Vermine. Hee thankt me for it, and intreated me very earnestly, that I would doe him the kindenesse to give it him. I told him, that he should get him a good bundle of Petroselinum,[2] and having steept it well in good Wine-Vineger, hee should put it at his beds head, to the smell whereof all the Mosquitos would come; whereupon, as soone as ever they lighted, they would presently fall downe dead. He beleeved me, and presently puts it in practice. But when he was gone to bed, and had laid himselfe downe to sleepe, such a swarme of these buzzing busie Flyes came flying about his eares all the night long, and did so plague and torment him, as if they had pull'd out his eyes with Pincers, and held him by the nose with corne-tongs, as Saint Dunstan did the Divell.

Whil'st they were thus nibbling on his nose, eyes, and all the other parts of his face; he bestow'd a thousand buffets on his cheekes, thinking with those smart claps to kill these angry creatures; and perswading himselfe that they would die at last, when they lighted upon the receipt, that was prepared for them, he past away the time as well as he could untill the morning.

But the next night after (because this remedy had not drawne onely those of the house thither; but all the rest

[1] Lat. *Culex*. A Gnat, which the Spaniards call by the name of Mosquito. They humme more, and sting and bite worse in that Countrie, then here with us, leaving knobs and bunches in the face.

[2] The Spanish word is, *Peregil del nombre latino Petroselinum. Apio minudo, que se cria entre las penas; Deste se haze la salsa, que llamamos, Peregil, y se echa en los quisados, y en las ensaladas.* It is taken diversly, sometimes for Parsley, sometimes for Smallage, and sometimes for Sampiere.

of the Mosquitos, that were bordering there-about) they did so be-peps him, that not onely his face was most vilely dis-figured therewith, but all the rest of the parts of his body, wher-unto they were able to reach, (for some they could not come at for the cloathes,) were taken in that excessive manner, so be-pimpled, and so be-spotted, that hee was forced to forsake his lodging, and to get him gone with all the speed he could.

The Secretary was madded at the matter, and could have found in his heart to have kill'd me.

But my Lord, when hee look't upon this ill-favour'd faced knave, and saw that he seemed so like a Leper (for he had not one free place about him, but like a Leopard spotted all over) and that I durst not appeare for feare, but playd least in sight, he was ready to burst himselfe with laughing, when hee heard that I had put this jest upon him.

Whereupon, commanding me to be called in, when I came, hee askt me, why I had offered the Secretarie so great an affront, and had thus playd the wagge with him ?

Whereunto I answered ; Your Lordship may be pleased to remember that you commanded him to give me a doozen lashes about the businesse of the Sweet-meats. His Commission reach't no further. But I remember very well, how he then us'd me. For what he gave me in grosse, I told out by retayle, one by one, as a matter much importing my posteriors. Besides, I know it was not your Lordships pleasure (as a thing contrary to your mild and gentle disposition) that they should be the stripes of death : but such as my tender yeeres were able to beare. But *el Domine Nicolao*, my Worshipfull good friend Sir Nicholas, that he might not be taxed for a bad pay-master, gave me twenty good sound lashes, the last being more cruell then the first. And so having exceeded not onely his Commission, but common humanitie, I thought I had just cause to cry quittance with him : And thus as you see (whereat I hope your Lordship will not bee offended) I have revenged the Wheales on my breech, by returning them on his face. He was the man that stung me, and I got others to sting

him. And I hope, my Lord, this is but one for another. Onely the difference is, that he did prosecute this sute against me in his owne person, and I against him by my Attourney.

Guzman banished the Cardinals Chamber

This was past over as a jest, and I heard no more of it. And for that, by reason of my former bold attempt, I was not onely beaten, but banished from the service of his Lordships Chamber; I waited in the meane while (during this his displeasure) upon his Lordships Chamberlaine.

CHAPTER VIII

Guzman de Alfarache revenges a tricke which the Secretarie had put upon the Chamberlayne, whom he then attended. He tels a tale of Shame and Feare; What it is, and how painted forth. Hee is received againe into the Cardinals service. And how finely he coozened him of a Barrell of Conserves

MY new Master was a merry pleasant Gentleman, without any gall or malice in the world, set all upon good sport and good fellowship, there was no harme in him in the earth, no fraud, no deceit; but was a man of the old making, an honest true Trojane, without any tricks or Jiggs, just in his dealings, and as plaine as any Pack-staffe. I knew no fault in him, unlesse it were a little choller; hee was some-what too touchy, and would (which was the tendernesse of his nature) quickly be tinded. Whereunto I may adde his over-jealous and suspitious nature, which would make him many times to imagine things to be otherwise then they were meant, it beeing the

condition of such dispositions to interpret all things to the worst. Quit him of these two qualities, (which were not overmuch inherent in him) and there was not a fairer condition'd man to converse withall; if you would have sought a whole Countrey, you could not have met with his fellow.

This *Bonus Socius* had but poore Parents, to whom he dayly sent his owne allowance, and now and then he would either dine or sup with them, as he did the night before that hapned unto him, which you shall heare by and by.

What with his drinking of water, and eating certaine *Taxarinas* (which is a kinde of meat made of Paste, cut out into slices, boyled with the fat of Birds, and seasoned with Pepper) he came not home halfe well, and complaining of the crazinesse of his stomake, he went directly to his Chamber, and got him forthwith to bed.

Now his Lord, missing him at supper, asked for him: They told him how it was with him. He sent one of his Gentlemen to visit him, and to bring him word how he did.

To which message hee made answere, that he did not finde himselfe well, but he hop'd in God, he should be well the next morning, being much comforted that his Lordship had been pleased so farre forth to grace his servant, as to send unto him, to know how hee did, for which favour hee rested much bound unto his Lordship, returning the Messenger, with all humble thankes, and the best remembrance of his love and service.

Thus this matter passed for the present. The morrow after I went to the house of his Parents, with some provision for their dinner, one of my fellowes remaining with him, who was brushing of his cloathes against his Master should rise.

The jest that the Secretary put upon Guzmans Master

He, and the Secretary us'd to breake many jests one upon another, and many merry passages past betweene them; And, because they were harmelesse, and without any prejudice to either, my Lord was so farre from misliking them, that he tooke much delight and pleasure in them.

The Secretarie, as soone as he was up and ready, went towards his Chamber, and meeting with my fellow, who was there ready at hand, waiting when he should be call'd for, askt him; How his Master did? He made answere, That his Master was newly falne asleepe, and that he had not taken one houres rest all that night, but that now (God be thanked) he slept soundly, and well hoped that the worst was past.

It is well (said the Secretarie) and seeing it is so, its pitie to wake him; but in the meane while, till he be ready to rise, (which I presume will not bee with the soonest) I prethee let me intreat thee to goe a little way with a servant of mine, to helpe him to bring home a certain commodity for me, which he cannot well doe alone, and make all the haste I pray that you can, for I will tarry heere till you come, lest your Master might chance to wake and call for you. The yong Lad did as he desired, and went his way.

Now the Secretary, taking hold on this occasion, that his friend had that night supt abroad, and was not in his Lordships presence, (as he was wont to be) that he might have him in his eye, as he sate at supper: devised with himselfe how he might put some pretty jest upon him: and at last the conception of his braine, brought forth this merry Babe. He dresses me a pretty Youth in womans apparell, attired in the habit of a Curtizan, and places this Boy softly and secretly behinde his bed. Now this honest man was all this while fast asleepe, and the entrance was free and open unto him, whilest the Secretarie, for the more surety, went in first himselfe without being heard; and afterwards taking this Youth by the hand, led him softly along, and there hee hid himselfe close behinde the bed, as he had beene before instructed, and there he remained quiet, not so much as offering once to stirre.

This being done, the Secretarie went forth, and going to seek out his Lord, he found him a walking, saying of some prayers to himselfe, as his maner was; who as soone as he saw him, his Lordship demanded of him, how the Chamberlaine did? Who told him; I inquired thereof

but now, and his servant told me, that he hath not been well all this night; And I doe not much marvell at it; for being with him last night, before I went to bed to see how hee did, I talkt unto him, but me thought he answered me with an ill will. What ayles him, I know not. There is something in it more then ordinarie, what ever it be; farther I cannot informe your Lordship.

The Cardinall (who was charitie it selfe) presently thereupon made haste to visit him. And when he had set himselfe downe by him, close to his beds head, the Youth comes me out from behinde the Hangings of the bed, and cryes out; Woe is me, most wretched and unfortunate Woman; What shall I doe? Pardon me (good Sir) for I must be gone, for it is late, and I am afraid my husband will misse me. And with that, she went her way, passing through the midst of all the Cardinals servants, attending there upon his Lordship.

The Cardinall, who thought him to be a Saint, began to blesse himselfe, and was much amazed thereat. And the Chamberlaine, he on the other side, was as much astonished, taking it to have beene some Vision, or strange Apparition. He first crosses himselfe, then cryes out, Jesus! The Divell, the Divell; and therewith lept out of his bed in his Shirt, running up and downe the roome, as if he had beene out of his wits.

The Secretarie, and some other, that were privy thereunto, fell a smiling, and had much adoe to forbeare laughing out-right; whereby the Cardinall perceiv'd, that it was meerely a jest, and they did not sticke to confesse as much, telling the whole truth of the matter, and how it was carried.

But the Chamberlaine could not stand still, but ranne up and downe from place to place, not knowing which way to turne himselfe. And albeit they did all labour to quiet him, yet for all that they could doe, they could not in haste bring him to himselfe againe: but was much abashed, and mightily ashamed of this scoffe and jest that was put upon him; and the more, for that it was in the presence of his

Lord. But in the end (like a good Courtier) hee dissembled it as well as hee could. And the Cardinall went away blessing himselfe, and laughed heartily as he went along at this conceited merriment.

Now, by that time I was come backe, all this businesse was over-past: But I was as sensible of it, as if they had given me so many stripes. And the Chamberlaine would with all his heart have parted with the best eye in his head, to be fully revenged on him.

But when he saw, that I looked some-what sad upon the matter (himselfe being likewise no lesse heavy) he said unto me; What thinkest thou (Guzmanillo) of the wrong that these Villaines have done me? To whom I made answere; They have done well, Sir, and plaid their parts with you very finely, what would you more? But if they had us'd me so scurvily as they have done you, I verily perswade my selfe, that his Holinesse should not need to injoyne them any penance for this offence; nor would I leave it to mine Heires in my last Will and Testament to repay this debt, but I would quit scores with them my selfe, and pay them home with advantage: And ere I had done with them, they should very well put that in their eye, which they should get by the reckoning. They all knew me to be a notable Wagge, and that I had an unhappy wit of mine owne for all kinde of knavery.

But why do I spend the time in talke, when my Lungs are ready to leape out at my throat, and swell with fulnesse of breath, out of the desire they have to vent something? But I kept my selfe aloofe, and was tender to touch upon that string, as being loth to advise and counsell him what to doe, not holding it lawfull for a Page to revenge the injuries of a grave Minister upon another that is his equall, *Ande cada oveja con su pareja.* Like with like doth well. For it is no good jesting with a mans betters. One was enough for me, which might the better be borne withall, because it was in *causa propria*; I was toucht in mine owne person, and therefore had the more reason to right my selfe.

Proverb
Let every man meddle with his match

CHAPTER VIII

But in this particular, why should I wilfully intangle my selfe in that net, whence I should not afterwards be able to escape, with lesse then the laying on of many a sound lash; or to come forth with mine eares foure fingers longer then they went in, or with the losse of the haire of my head? I therefore held my peace, and kept me quiet. But I, who was naturally of a hot and boyling spirit, being often importuned by him, hee making me great offers and large promises, giving me besides to understand, that the Cardinal should know, that it was a childe of mine owne begetting, and the workemanship of mine owne hands, in defence of him who was then my Master; I resolved with my selfe to enter into the Action, and to undertake this businesse in his behalfe, and to be the sole Plotter and contriver thereof my selfe. And so I let some few dayes passe over, waiting for some faire occasion that might give warmth for the hatching of this bird.

When I had found (as I thought) a fit time, and that the Ordinary Post of Spaine was to depart, the Secretary was very busie about his dispatches, which required haste. I bought me then a little Rosin, Frankincense, and Masticke, I pounded it, and sifted it all together, till I had wrought it fine, and as small as any Meale. The Secretaries servant was that morning busied about his Masters cloathes, brushing and making of them cleane with all the speed he could. To him goe I, telling him; Doest thou heare (honest Jacobo) I am come to tell thee, that I have a dainty piece of Bacon on the Spit, it is now ready. Bread I have likewise provided, there is nothing wanting but Wine, if thou wilt finde that, thou shalt share with me; if not, pardon me, for I shall seeke out one that will. He quickly replyde: No, (good Guzman) no, doe not so, for I will give thee Wine to it. Goe to then (quoth I) stay thou here; for I will presently be with both it, and thee.

Guzmans jest that he put upon the Secretary, to revenge his Masters quarrell

Whilest that he went to the *Dispense*[1] for wine, I tooke

[1] *Despensa. El lugar, donde se ponen las cosas, que se traen para comer, y beuer.* Such places properly belong only to Embassadours of Princes, or to great Dukes, and not to ordinary persons.

forth my paper of Powders, and turning the inside of the Breeches outward, I besprinkled them with a little wine, which I carried about me in a little round glasse Vial, and threw good store of these my prepared Powders upon them: which when I had done according to my minde, I turned the Breeches againe, putting them just in the same order they were in, when the Youth left them. He returned anon after with a good Jarre of Wine, and before he could speake unto me, his Master call'd for him to come in, and bring him his cloathes, for he would rise. He left the Wine with me, and I him within, where they were both so busie about their Papers, that it was noone before they had dispatch't, and were ready to come forth. The Secretary was a very hayrie man of his body; and the Powders began to play their part, and to work their effect. The Dog-dayes were then come in, and with the extremitie of those heates, they wrought so upon his body, that from the girdle downwards he was as if it had beene a Seare-cloth of Pitch, which clung so close unto him, and was growne so stiffe withall, that he was terribly tormented therewith, for every hayre did give him such a twinge when he did but move, or when with some sudden reach they did rend and unroot themselves from the flesh, that the tearing of every severall hayre seemed unto him, the plucking out of so many eyes out of his head.

When he saw in what case he was, he began to call his people about him, to know the cause thereof, but none of them could tell, nor were able to answer to that account, till that the Chamberlaine came in, and told him; Sir, this is *Quid pro quo*; one for another; *Qui moccat, moccabitur*. Harme watch, harme catch.

This, sir, is call'd, The beating of the Fencer out of his Schoole. You see for all your cunning, you may take a knocke as well as another man. It is but blow for blow; you have given me one Venew, and I have given you another. And so let us shake hands and be friends.

Well, (to be briefe) the jest ended in this, that they were faine to get a paire of Sizars, and goe cutting hayre after

hayre, which was worke enough for two of his servants, and yet were forced in the end to unrip his Breeches, that they might come the better to clip away the hayres. CHAPTER VIII

This Jest tooke better then the former, because it was a little tarter then the other, and stucke closer unto him. By vertue of this, I received the confirmation of my Knaverie, and was taken ever after for the same man I was; So that all did seeke to flye from my jests, as they would flye from the Plague.

Two moneths of my banishment were now past and gone. After which expiration of time, I returned againe to my former Office; but with the same little Modestie, and feare of doing evill, as before. You may haply have heard tell of that tale, when Modestie, the Ayre and the Water tooke leave one of another. Who at their parting, asking where they should meet againe and see each other: the Ayre said, that they should find her on the tops of Hills; The Water, that they should be sure of her, in the bowels of the Earth. But Modesty, that she being once gone from them, it was impossible to meet with her any more. I have lost her, she is quite gone from me, and without any hope of ever returning. But it makes no matter. *A quien la falta, la Villa es suya*, Where she is away, the Towne is ours. Guzman received againe into the Cardinalls service. A Fable touching Modestie. Proverb

Who would not have beene feared with those former proceedings, and fully resolved with himselfe never to doe the like againe? But what my amendment was, I shall deliver unto you, and what hapned unto me thereupon. I had certaine sweet guts in my belly, and so made and accustomed thereunto, that those dayes that I mist of my sweet-meates, was a taking of water from the sicke, or Wine from a Drunkard. I would have ventured the breaking of my necke from the top of Santo Angelo,[1] rather then I would not downe to steale them, if they were to be had upon the face of the earth. And hence is it: *Que quien teme la muerte, no goza la vida.* That he that feares Death, does not injoy his life. If feare would have made me turne coward, I had never tasted that so sweet a life. I cast up Proverb

[1] A Castle in Rome.

my account, and made this reckning with my selfe; Suppose they should take me againe with the like? What can they doe unto me? or what hurt can come of it? I have alwaies observed, that Feare is painted feeble, leane-visag'd, staring-hayr'd, pale-coloured, sad-countenanced, heavy, melancholy, naked, fearefull, and not daring either to say, or doe that, which it fayne would, and most of all desireth.

Feare, how painted: And what manner of thing it is

Feare is a servill Act, only proper unto slaves; it enterpriseth nothing; nor doth any thing succeed well, that it undertaketh; and is like unto a cowardly curre, which knoweth better to barke then to bite. Feare is the soules hang-man; and it is but foolishnesse, to feare that which cannot bee avoyded.

In a word, it was impossible for me (such was my condition) to abstaine from being in Action; I was not able to containe my selfe. Happen what may happen; Come what will come; all was one to me. I said to my selfe; *Audaces fortuna juvat*; Fortune befriends brave spirits. Let the worst come to the worst; fall backe, or fall edge, I was sure to pay for it only in my person, and not in my goods, either moveable, or unmoveable; for it was not Gods will, that I should have any land of mine owne, whereon to settle my selfe, and make my certaine abode; nor any *Se-moventes*, such things as could move of themselves, and keep me company, whither-soever I should goe. My Lord was a great lover of your moyst Suckets, and such liquid Conserves, as they use to bring from the Canaries in little Barrels, or from the Ilands of the Terçeras; Which Barrels, when they were emptie, were throwne aside, and no reckoning made of them, lying here and there in every corner as good for nothing. I had got me one of these, containing about halfe an *Arroba*,[1] which serv'd me in stead of a Trunke, wherein I kept my Cardes, my Dice,

[1] *Arroba*, Is five and twentie pound weight. It is an Arabicke word, *Errubun*, which is a fourth part of the Verbe *Rebbea*, To part into foure parts. And according to this, an *Arroba* must be in weight, the fourth part of a hundred. It hath it's root from the Heb. *Rubaat*. *Quadrum vel quarta pars*. *In liquidis, est apud Hispanos, octo açumbres*, i.e. 8 *œnophororum*.

Garters, Points, Cuffes, Handkerchiefes, and other things befitting a poore Page. CHAPTER VIII

The Cardinall (as he was sitting one day at dinner), commanded his Steward, that he should goe amongst the Merchants, and buy him some three or foure *Quintals*,[1] of those that were the newest and the freshest, and but lately brought in. When I heard him say so, I began presently to cast about with my selfe, how I might make my selfe Master of one of these Barrels. The Cloth was taken away, the Cardinall risen, all gone to dinner: and whilest they were busie at their victuals, I got me into my Chamber, and in the twinkling of an eye, before you could well say This, I clapt me within that Barrell which I had, as many old rags, dust, gravell, or whatsoever other trash came first to hand, till I had fill'd it brim-full, and thrust it downe as hard as I could for my life to make it lie the closer. This done, on went the head, then the hoopes, making all fast and sure, so that it was now as handsomely fitted up as heart could wish, and no man that should have seene it, but would have sworne (it was so artificially handled) that it had beene newly brought from the Indies stuft with roots of *Tragopogum*,[2] or Goates beard, (as some call it) which is good against poyson.

When I had trimm'd it up, and made it feat and fit, I let it alone, having still an eye, and standing as Sentinell, to watch what successe this project of mine might take.

Now, (as good lucke would have it) behold, about the Evening I did descry two *Azemilas*[3] which came along laden with Conserves, who were no sooner entred within doores, but they were eased presently of their burthen. The Steward commanded the Pages to carry them into the Cardinals lodgings.

I had now a sight of Fortunes foretop, and boldly told

[1] *Quintal*, A hundred pound weight. *Centipondium.*

[2] The Spanish word is, *Escorzonera.* This Herbe the Latines call *Riperina.* Of this you may reade at large in Covarruvias, Verbe *Escorzonera.*

[3] *Mulo grande, y de hueso para litera, o carga de repuesto.* Covarruvias, p. 108.

Guzman plots to play the thiefe. His craftie and cunning carriage

her, You shall not goe from me, till I have taken hold of your hayre. And as I was speaking, I tooke up one of the Barrels and layd it upon my shoulders, as the rest of my fellowes did, but lagging a little behinde, giving them leave to goe before me : as soone as I was come right over against mine owne chamber doore, I suddenly slipt in, when I saw the coast was cleere, and tooke out that other which I bare to my Lords lodging ; and so I made my three returnes, giving a good account of all my lading.

When the last was come up, I stood very soberly in the Hall, where my Lord Cardinall was, who said unto me : What thinke you of this fruit (Guzmanillo ?) you cannot put in your hand here, your Wedges will not serve your turne. I reply'd to that point, and told him ; My good Lord ; *Donde no valen cunnas, aprovechan unnas.* Where the Wedge nought prevailes, wee must make use of our nayles ; if one thing will not doe the deed, another must. And though mine arme cannot get in, my hand may, and that's enough for me, I will desire no more.

Very good Sir (said my Lord) but as they are now, neither your arme, nor your hand will stand you in stead.

There lyes the skill, quoth I to my Lord ; for if they were otherwise easie to be opened, I would not care a button for them, there is no pleasure in such a purchase. In matters of difficultie, your good wits come to their tryall, which onely shew themselves in things of great importance, and not in driving a nayle into the wall, or in pulling on of a paire of shooes, things easie to be done, and which naturally offer themselves unto us at the first sight.

Saist thou me so (quoth my Lord ?) well, I will once set your wits a working. If within these eight dayes you shall shew your selfe so nimble-witted, as to steale one of these from me, I will bestow it on thee for thy labour, and thou shalt have another besides into the bargaine : But if thou shalt faile therein, thou shalt then binde thy selfe to receive such punishment, as shall bee agreed upon.

My Lord, said I ; eight dayes, why, eight dayes is a mans life ; it is time inough of conscience. The businesse will

be too long a doing; and it may be, by putting it off to so large a time, we may either grow cold in the bargaine, or the memory of it dye, and be no more thought upon.

I accept the favour offered mee by your Lordship, and if to morrow by this time I shall not finish this businesse, I shal willingly resigne up my selfe into the Secretaries hands, to be punished at his discretion; Because I assure my selfe, that he would willingly have the tawing of me, that he might revenge himselfe upon me for the late passage that I put upon him to his great griefe: for the sent of the Pitch is not yet gone from him, nor his haires come againe.

My Lord laught, and so did they that were about him. And thus the bargaine was driven betweene us for the next day following. But because I was already on the forehand, and was well assured of the businesse, I could, if I would, have presently cleered my selfe of this debt, but I was willing to let the bond runne on, till the time it was due.

The boord was covered, and my Lord was now set downe to dinner, feeding on such things at first, which I brought in, to procure him the better appetite to his meate; and looking me in the face, he smilingly said unto mee, Guzmanillo, it is but a little now to night; That come, your time is past. What will you give me now to be freed of your bargain? Master Nicolao hath rods in pisse for you, and is provided for your paiment. And me thinks that he is plotting, how he may be revenged of thee, and thou, how thou maist satisfie thy selfe upon him. If I might advise, my counsell should be, that hee should not deale with thee, not so much for thy sake, as his owne. Whereunto I answered; I am sure (my Lord) that my punishment is in the Secretaries hands: But I am not yet sure that the Conserves are in mine. Yet if I had store of money to set upon this cast, and had ought to lose more then the poorenesse of my person, I would venture it all for this once, because I am very confident of my Chance.

Thus dinner past on till the last course was almost ended, and ready to bee taken away; at which time, I

went to the Court-cupboord, and taking from thence a Silver-plate, I fill'd it with the Conserves of that barrell which I had stolne, and therewith I came to the Table, and set them downe before his Lordship.

When my Lord saw, what I had brought him, he blest himselfe, and began to wonder much at the matter, for he himselfe had the barrels in his owne custodie, they were within his owne lodgings, and there he kept them (as he thought) safe inough. He would trust nobody with them, in regard of the bargaine that was driven betweene us: He kept the key himselfe; he bore it alwaies about him. At last he cals the Chamberlaine unto him, and wils him to goe in, and to count the Barrels, and to see if any of them were opened, or ill-conditioned.

He went in, and finding them both in number and place, to be just the same as at their first putting in, he came forth againe, and told his Lordship the tale was whole and intire, not a barrell that was missing, and that they were sound and well-conditioned, and not the least suspition to be had (for ought that hee could perceive) amongst them all, no not so much as the least hayre of his head. Ah, ah, ah, said my Lord, this tricke will not serve your turne; this is a very poore one. Thou would'st make us beleeve, that thou hast taken that out of one of the Barrels, which thou hast bought with thy money.

With that he turned himselfe towards the Secretarie, and told him, Domine Nicolao, I assigne Guzmanillo over unto you, to doe what you list with him, and to punish him as you thinke fit, for that he hath lost his wager.

The Secretary made answere, May it please your Lordship to take the correction of him into your owne hands, and to dispose of him as you please; for I for my part will have no more to doe with him, I will not come neere him, nor his shadow, I dare not; I have had too much of him already: And if I should now tickle upon a new score, and make him pay for the old and this together, I should gaine nothing by the reckoning; for I hold him to bee of that unhappy and dangerous, both wit and nature, that he would

in revenge convey the next time a nest of Hornets into my breeches, or some other venemous vermine, that should either poison me, or sting me to death. And therefore if your Lordship put him over unto me, and leave his punishment to my discretion, I freely absolve him thereof, and am willing to imbrace his friendship. CHAPTER VIII

I have not as yet (said I) offended in that degree, that I had need of absolution. Where there is no matter to worke upon, it is needlesse to seeke to introduce a forme. I am as good as my word, and have performed what I promised; the wager is mine, I have wonne it. And if this bee not true that I speake, and that I make it not plainly to appeare unto you, punish me at your pleasure, I aske no favour at your hands. *¿ De que sirven las palabras, donde ay obras ?* What need words, where there are Workes? I say, and say it againe, and that confidently, that this Conserve is of that which was brought in yesterday; and not onely this, but a whole Barrell thereof is now at this present whole and untoucht in my chamber, save this little that I have set before his Lordship. Proverb

The Cardinall crost himselfe, and wondred how this should be. And untill dinner was done, and the table taken away, he did nothing else but blesse himselfe with both his hands. And being desirous to bee certified of the truth thereof, he rose up, and went into his lodging to bee an eye-witnesse of it himselfe. He lookt upon all the Barrels, whereon he had set certaine markes, he found them faithfull and true, the number full and just, the key in his owne custody, and could not devise how this should be.

Hereupon he did verily beleeve, that I had bought a barrell of the very same Conserves, as his were, and said unto me; Guzmanillo, doest not thou thy selfe know, that thou broughtest in thus many hither? count them now, and see if they be not right. I did so; And when I had done telling, I told him; My Lord, heere is the full number. *Pero de lo contado, come el lobo.* But it is like the Shepheards numbring of his Sheepe; whereof, when he hath Proverb

cast up his reckoning, he shall finde that the Woolfe hath met with one of them by the way. I see they are well, but not all so well as they should be. And that you may see I tell you no lye, let that be brought hither which is in my Chamber, and let this be opened that stands there, and you shall finde that I have changed the one for the other.

They opened it, whereby they discovered as well the truth, as the wit I had used therein. For the dust, the gravell, the old ragges, and the like trumperie which I had fill'd it withall, did manifest as much.

They remained all, as men amazed, not knowing what to thinke of it, nor being able for their lives, to imagine how this should be brought about. They did all aske me the question, but I would not acquaint any of them with it: But presently besought his Lordship, that he would be pleased to performe his promise with me. He did so. So that I had that and one more, which were two in the whole.

And because they should know that I carried a Noble minde, as it was delivered to me with the one hand, so I gave it with another to my fellow-Pages, who divided it amongst them. And howbeit my Lord was some-what offended at the finenesse of my theft, yet he did much more wonder at my liberalitie, and thought the better of me for this my free disposition. He was much afrayd of these cunning and subtill tricks of mine, and questionlesse would have then put me away, but that he was so good and holy a man; and therefore considered with himselfe; If I should now cast off this yong fellow, some great mis-fortune will befall him, by reason of his mis-demeanour. These things that he hath done heere in mine owne house, are but idle tricks of his youth, and I am ne're awhit the poorer for them. It is lesse harme that hee should hurt me in a little, then through want, offend others in much. And out of this apprehension, he did (the better to dissemble what was past) make of this Vice a Vertue. And it is great wisedome in any man, when a hurt may be healed,

for to cure it; and to remedy those things that may bee remedied: if not, to dissemble it the best he can. He made himselfe merry with it: And as often as any Princes and great Lords came to visit him, as occasion was offered, he would not sticke to make report thereof unto them. CHAPTER VIII

CHAPTER IX

Guzman de Alfarache treats of Charitie: Discourseth of Masters, kinde and unkinde: Telleth of another theft of Conserves. His exereises, and distastes, being a Page. He recounteth the tricks he used at Primera. That it is good to know play; but better not to use any gaming at all. And how for playing hee was put out of the Cardinals service. And how proud ignorance is the cause of all evill

THE Ordination of Charitie (howbeit I have pointed at it heretofore) had its first beginning from God. Next in order follows that of Fathers and Mothers, then of children, and after them of servants; who if they be good, are more to be made of, and to be better beloved, then children that are bad. And because my Lord had no children, he did dearely love those that serv'd him, and was very tender over them; placing (next after God, and his Image, which is the poore) all his love upon them. Charity, and its division

The poore are Gods own image

He was generally charitable towards all men; as being the first fruit of the Holy Ghost, and the first fire that inflameth mans soule. It is the prime good of all other The fruits of Charitie

goodnesse, that flowes from our actions; it is the first beginning of a happy ending. It containes in it Faith and Hope; it is the way that leades to Heaven; it is the bond that binds God unto Man; it is the worker of Miracles; it is the scourge of Pride; and the fountaine of Wisdome.

My Lord did desire so much my amendment, as if his owne had lyen upon it. He sought to oblige me unto him by love, that he might not affright mee with feare. And for to try, if he could reduce me to a vertuous course of life, he did (that he might remove from me all occasion of longing) *regalar* me at his owne Table, feeding me from his owne Plate with all the choysest dainties and delicacies, and with all manner of sweet Meates: there was not the thing that he did eat of, whereof I had not my share, telling mee in gentle tearmes; Guzmanillo, I give thee this, to be at truce with thee, in token of peace and amitie: Behold that I, as well as my Secretarie, will hold no contention with thee. Content thy selfe with this morsell, whereby I acknowledge my selfe to be thy Vassall, bestowing this upon thee by way of Tribute. This would he smilingly utter, and with a pleasing countenance, without respect of whosoever sate at Table with him, were they never so great persons, or of what qualitie or condition soever. Hee was a marvelous kinde Gentleman, he treated, and esteemed his servants well, he favoured, and lov'd them exceedingly, doing for them as farre as his abilitie would reach, so that all of them did love him with their very heart and soule, and did doe him all true and faithfull service. For without all doubt, the Master that respecteth his servants, is wel served by those servants: and if he pay them well, they will deserve their payment: but if he be loving and kinde withall, they adore him as a God. Whereas on the contrary, if a Master be proud, a bad Paymaster, and unthankfull to his servants, he shall neither have truth, nor love from them. They neither serve him with feare, nor entertaine him with their love. He is abhorred, hated, scorned, made a common by-word in the

Loving Masters

Bad Masters

Market-place, in the streets, in the Tribunals, and every publike Assembly, discredited by all men, and defended by none.

If Masters did but know, how much it did import them, to have good and honest servants, they would spare the meat out of their owne bellies, to bestow it upon them; for they are true riches indeed; and hee that hath a good servant, hath a great Jewell. And it is impossible, that a servant should be diligent, with that Master that is not loving unto him.

Guzmans other theft of Conserves, with the story thereof

There were brought to my Lord from Genoa certaine Boxes of Conserves, very great and large, they were richly gilded, and curiously wrought upon the top, as possibly could be desired, they were fresh and faire to looke to, as being but newly finished; which Boxes upon the way had taken a little wet. When they were brought before him, it did me good to looke upon them, and the rather, for that they were made and sent him by a kins-woman of his, who did ordinarily use to send him such kinde of dainties. I was not in the house when they came, and while I was lacking, they entred before my returne into a consultation, what they should doe with them, and how, and where they were best to drie them, that they might have a safe conduct from my person, that I might not seaze upon them: And the rather, for they must be forced to lay them abroad in the Sunne, which would have runne some danger, if they had clapt them up close in that Urne,[1] wherein Julius Cæsars ashes were put. Every one broached his opinion, but not one good one amongst them all. My Lord himselfe lighted upon one, and said; It matters not much, to studie for a place, where to keepe them safe; if we give the keeping of them to one, that will looke well unto them, they will that way be safe, and no way else.

They did all allow of my Lords reason; And as soone as I came in, his Lordship call'd me unto him, and said; Guzmanillo, what were we best to doe with these

[1] An Urne is an earthen Pitcher, wherein the Romanes inclosed as in a Coffin the Ashes of the dead.

Conserves, which are come thus wet, that we may preserve them from being spoyl'd? The best course (my Lord) said I, in my poore opinion, is to eate them presently.

And durst thou adventure (quoth he) to eate them all? I answered; It were no great matter so to doe, if a man had time enough. But I am not so great a glutton, that now at this present I dare to venture alone upon so great and honourable a Muster as is here made before me.

My pleasure then is (said he) that thou looke unto them, and keepe a true reckning of them, laying them out every day abroad in the Sunne. And here is no evasion for you, for they shall be delivered unto you by tale, and by tale I will looke you shall returne them unto me. Here you see them layd open before you, and how faire and full they be; and if any harme come unto them, or ought be missing, I shall easily know where the fault lies, and call you to account for it.

I told him, that I was neither master of my selfe, nor them: I knew not what to doe in this case, I was not mine owne man; I had not power over my selfe; and that I was one of Eve's sonnes; and that being put into such a Paradise of Conserves, the Serpent of the flesh might tempt me to eate of this forbidden fruit.

His Lordship reply'd then againe, and told me; See (sirrah) that you looke well to your charge; for I will expect, that you give them me, as I give them you: I must not have a piece missing, neither in number nor in weight, qualitie for qualitie, quantitie for quantitie, all whole and sound, or else you shall see what will come of it, and therefore I would wish you to looke well what you doe, and to use your best care.

I then made bold to tell him; The Plea (my Lord) that is betweene us, depends not on this point; this is not the hinge, whereon it hangeth; For to returne them unto you as they are, without finding any missing, or perceiving any hurt they have taken, that is a very easie thing, I can doe that presently. But it is another point (my Lord) that I stand upon. What point I pray (say's my Lord?) I told

him; I put my selfe into great perill; for I am privy to mine owne inclination and weaknesse, no man should better know mine owne abilitie and strength then my selfe, and therefore (to deale plainely with your Lordship) if you will have me to comply with your Lordships command, if my life lay on it, I shall not be able to hold my hands, I must needs taste of them, if not fill my belly.

My Lord marvelling much at me, Well (quoth he) seeing it will be no otherwise, I will for once make tryall how discreetly you will behave your selfe; I shall see by this, what manner of man you be. I give thee therefore free liberty, that thou eate as much as thou hast a minde to for once, and no more, and that one time, I allow thee to fill thy belly as full as thou wilt thy selfe; but with this condition, that thou deliver them up afterwards unto me, without any defect or fault; and in case the contrary shall appeare, thou shalt make me satisfaction in such payment, as I shall be pleased to appoint.

I accepted of the condition of this Obligation; and thereupon they were all delivered up into my hands.

The next day following, I layd them out in the Sunne, in an open walke, and amongst the rest of these sweetmeates, there was one of the flowers of Oranges and Limons, which offred it selfe to my view, it lookt very lovingly upon me, as if it did desire to be better acquainted with me, and I who was loth to be behinde hand in matter of courtesie, made towards it, tooke it in my hand, and with a little knife that I had about me, loosening those little tacks with which it was fastened beneath, and heaving it up daintily by degrees, till I had turn'd it up-side downe, and that the lid lay downward, with that very knife, I tooke out almost the one halfe, from forth the bottome of it, returning to make it fast againe as before, putting in place of the Conserves so much waste Paper, cut out so just to the same measure and proportion, that no man was able to perceive it.

My Lord that night being minded to make a collation, I brought to his boord foure of the said Boxes, and asked

him when I set them downe, whether I had not looked well unto them? He told me; if the rest be like unto these, he was well contented with them. Whereupon I brought them all before him, and he was very well pleased when he saw them, because they were much dryer then they were before, and better conditioned. With that I presently stept aside, to goe fetch a Plate, and on it I brought him all that I had stolne; for in very deed I had not tasted thereof the quantitie of a Nut, having only done it for the ostentation of my wit.

When he lookt upon it, he ask't me; What's this? I told him; I now devide with your Lordship, part of my theft. He reply'd; I will'd thee, that thou shouldst fill thy selfe, and not filch. And therefore now you have lost.

I answered, I have neither fill'd my selfe with it, nor so much as tasted what it is, nor doe I thinke that I have lost by doing of this; for this is that, wherewith I meane to fill my belly. Besides, all that was stolne out of the Box, is yet whole, and intire, as you may very well perceive; but if, because I have shew'd my selfe honest, I must suffer for it, which way shall I walke to goe right, if you barre me of the path wherein I ought to tread? My punishment does not trouble me, nor does it grieve me that I have lost, as long as I am perswaded I have wonne, howsoever I may be over-borne. But I will be wiser the next time, and be sure to lose no more upon the like match.

Nay (Guzmanillo) bee not angry (said my Lord) I would not thou shouldst grieve or complaine for this, I confesse I have done thee wrong, and have blamed thee without a cause; but I prythee tell me (said hee) out of which of all these Boxes didst thou take this forth? I put forth my hand, and told him; This is it (my Lord) and I shew'd him how and which way I did it.

Hee was well pleased with the subtilnesse of my wit, but hee could have wisht that I had not had so much finenesse in me, for he was afraid, lest one time or other, I would mis-imploy it to my greater hurt. Hee willed me to

take the Boxe notwithstanding for my paines, and to carry it away with mee. CHAPTER IX

Many such things as these came from me ; and he tooke pleasure both in them and me, as being sleights of the hand, using these juggling trickes more for sport then harme. If any of my fellowes should chance to fall asleepe, when he should waite and give attendance, they might the next day goe buy them new shooes and stockings, for Flyes [1] of waxe were sure to be their Cocks to wake them. Our exercise, was every day two houres in the morning, and two in the Evening, to heare our Schoole-master reade unto us, of whom I learned (for the time that I studied there) the Latine tongue, which I had reasonably perfect, I had a little Greeke too, and some Hebrew. The rest of that vacant time, which wee had from serving of our Master (which was, God knowes, very little) wee bestowed in reading of bookes, telling of tales, and in gaming. If we went forth a doores at any time, it was only to coozen the *Buñoleros* ; [2] and amongst the Cookes our credit was very good for Pye-meate. We would goe a-nights to play the wagges with the Curtizans, and to exercise our wits upon them, and to sing songs at their doores. And thus did I spend my time, till my beard began to bud. Guzmans exercises being a Page

And howbeit it may seeme perhaps to thee, a life of entertainment, and full of mirth, yet it was to me as if I had beene ty'de to a stake, with a collar of iron about my necke, exposed to shame. All this was as a stinke in my nose ; none of these things could content me ; night and day I did sigh for the losse of my former delights. The distastes that Guzman had, whilest he was a Page

But when I once began to write Man, and was able to girt a Sword to my side, I would have beene glad of any augmentation of honour, whereby I might have gained some hope to have proceeded farther. And I verily perswade my selfe, that if my Actions had deserv'd it, I should not have wanted the meanes.

[1] The Spanish word is, *Libramiento de çera.* A Flye made of Waxe burning, which Pages put on the shooes of those that sleepe.

[2] What a *Buñolero* is, I have margented else-where.

THE THIRD BOOKE

But in stead of getting judgement, and doing things that were vertuous, for to gaine mens good wils, and thereby to binde them unto me, I fell to gaming, even to the losse of my cloathes from my backe; and as I was somewhat of the freest, so was I too liberall in my play.

Guzmans tricks at Primera

I made it my study, to benefit my selfe by all tricks and cheating devices, that I could invent or learne; and especially when I plaid at Primera. How often when I went upon two Cards, would I take three, and conveying five now and then into my hand, would set up my rest upon the three best? How often would I take the last Card, and clapping it underneath, would see whether it were good for me or no, and in an instant looke on the other already seene, and then make my best advantage of them, which was all one, as if I should have robb'd a man upon the high-way? How often would I have a friend [1] sit by me, which should seeme as if he were asleep, and should supply me with Cards under the boord to serve my turne? How often had I a Copes-mate that stood by, looking upon the others games, who would tell mee what Cards they went upon, and what their game was? all which he signified unto me by such secret and cunning signes, that it was impossible for them to finde it out. How often would I so set and packe the Cards, that I would deale to him that playd against me two and fifty, and having an Ace to helpe me, would make my selfe five and fifty, or else with a five incounter foure and fifty, and so either winne the Game by one peepe, or by the elder hand?

Now when we were two against one, and plaid bootie, and dealt the Cards one to another, how often taking the discarding Card, and clapping it on the top, would we play on till we could make our advantage of it? how by a beck or a nod, did we know how the world went? how to shuffle and mixe the Cards so, as to make our game sure? how to set some privy marke or signe upon them, whereby to know

[1] The Spanish word is *Diacono*, which though it properly signifie a Deacon, yet it is taken more largely for any one that ministers helpe to a man. Covarruvias, verb. *Diacono*.

them ? how to know them by the corners, being bigger or lesse, and a thousand the like, which wee made good use of either by the helpe of a stander by that shared with us, or by corrupting him that sold the Cards, which are ordinarie things ? O how many lewd prankes did I play in that kinde ? how many rogueries ? how many villanies ? there was not that cheating or coozening tricke, which I was not acquainted withall, and had at my fingers ends. And as I was perfect in the knowledge of them, so did I put them in practice when time served. For such is the blindnesse of play, that those that are crafty and cunning in their gaming, have a large field wherein to expatiate themselves, and to shew their skill.

And if it might be lawfull (I say, lawfull) that as in the Common-wealth, houses of sinne are permitted, for the avoiding of greater inconveniences ; there were appointed in every principall Citie or Towne, Masters of this coozening and cheating Science, of whom, those that are addicted and given to play, might be taught and instructed, it were very good for the avoiding of deceit, and many a Gentleman would not be so easily fool'd out of their money and meanes, as now they dayly are. For our Sensualitie suffers it selfe easily to be overcome by Vice, and that is turn'd to an ill habit, and becomes a bad custome in the end, which at first was invented for a lawfull exercise, and to passe away the time. And with reason may it be called a bad custome, when it shall be disorderly followed, and that men are too much wedded to gaming, altering the true intent and meaning thereof, and putting it out of its right byas.

Gaming, made onely for recreation

Gaming was first of all invented for the recreation of mans minde, and for the refreshing of himselfe, when he found himselfe wearied with the troubles and turmoyles which accompany this life ; and when it breaketh this rule, and passeth beyond its due bounds, it is wickednesse, infamy, and theft. For it seldome hapneth, that it is not attended with these Attributes.

I speake of those that are profest Gamesters, who make their living of it, as a man would doe of an Office or a Trade,

Gaming, to be shun'd by Noblemen and Gentlemen; and wherefore

and make a continuall practice of it. Notwithstanding, I could heartily wish, and it is one of my most earnest desires, that those would leave it off, and give over this excesse of play, which are of the nobler sort, considering the hurt which may insue thereupon, especially seeing that ill is ballanced with good; and that if hee winne, and the other lose, he is bound to give the loser leave to speake; to indure many bold and intemperate actions; to beare with many indiscreet both words and deeds, and other strange kinde of gestures, and uncivill behaviour, which he is tyde to suffer, onely as he is a winner, not as he is a man of honour, who in things of another nature, will risent the least wrong that is done unto him. Other things there are of like qualitie with these, which I dare not presume to presse any farther, that not onely for them, and those already mentioned, they ought to abhorre gaming, but even those houses and Ordinaries, where Play is maintained.

It is good to know play. And why

But being that our appetite is so unbridled, and our naturall inclination there-unto so exorbitant, that it cannot in this kinde altogether containe it selfe, it shall not be amisse, but rather good and fitting, that a yong man should know the Lawes of play, learne the skill thereof, and understand all the tricks, and cheatings that are used therein, that he may perceive when he meets with a Cony-catcher. And if such cheating companions once begin to lose, and that their metall melts away from them, let him powre the rest of his owne moneys into his Bootes, Breeches, Hand-wrest, Collar, Girdle, Bosome, Sleeves, or any other part about him, whether he can cleanliest convey it, that he may not lose his money like a beast. For besides the getting of it from him, they will laugh at him when they have done. One thing I was ever carefull to observe; I would never sit downe to play with a little money, nor for a little, nor with that man that would not adventure to get much, playing my money freely, without either offering, or taking of wrong.

Well, I was so wholly given to gaming, and spent so much time therein, that I committed many faults. Nor is it

CHAPTER IX

A Gamester cannot serve and attend his Master as he should

possible, that a Gamester should performe those duties which belong unto him, much lesse he that serves, and is ty'de to attendance. Neither doe I know that Master that will give bread to that servant that is a Gamester. For if he manage his Masters affaires, and have either moneys of his in his hands, or other his goods committed to his charge, and that he chance to lose his owne, hee will play then upon his Masters purse, hoping to recover himselfe; and if peradventure hee continue still on the losing hand, and hath not afterwards wherewithall to pay, hee runnes himselfe into greater danger then before, thinking that lucke will turne, and so come to relieve his losses. But say, he is not trusted with any thing of his Masters, nor hath any thing of his to loose; yet is it not possible, that he should assist at those houres, when he ought to doe him service, nor will he be in the way to be found, when need shall require, as it hapned to my selfe.

The Cardinall shews himselfe a good and loving Master

My Lord was grieved thereat to the very soule; nothing could prevaile with me, neither admonitions, nor perswasions, nor words, nor promises, to remove this evill custome from me. And being one day (in my absence) with his houshold-servants about him, he told them how well he wisht mee, and the great desire that he had of my good. And seeing that I could not be reclaimed by faire means, his purpose was by some one device or other to bring me to be a reformed man. And the plot was, that by discharging me from his service, and putting me out of his house for some certaine dayes, it might be, that calling my lewd courses to minde, and seeing mine owne errours in the end, I might come to a truer feeling of my misery, and by that meanes bee drawne to amendment of life: yet would he not, that my allowance should be taken from me, lest for want of meanes, I might through necessitie be driven to doe some dishonest act or other. O how singular a vertue was this in so great a Prince! how worthy of eternall praise, and how fit to be imitated by all those, that desire to be well and truely served! And certainly, it is impossible, but that servants (unlesse they

be such as I was) would be willing to lay down a thousand lives (if they were Masters of so many) to give but any the least content to such kinde and loving Masters.

Want of food causeth much evill

Well, I was driven by this meanes to my shifts, and wanted meat to put in my mouth. O Lord, let it ever be in my Letany, that thou wilt deliver mee from this evill. Other wants have some trouble with them. But when a man hath a good stomake, and wanteth meat, is extreme hungry, and hath not where-withall to fill his Maw; to see the houre of eating come, and he to remaine fasting; to passe over the day from morning to night, and not to finde whereon to feed; these (I say) are such things, as would make a man doe any thing, be it never so dishonest; Cloakes, Hats, and all walke then, (though it be but for halfe they are worth), what shift so ever we make to come by other.

This miserie befell me, and that in a very troublesome time: For having spent a whole day and night in play, and having lost all the money that I had, and when that was gone, all my cloathes, having nothing left me to cover my nakednesse, but a poore thin Doublet, and a paire of white linnen Drawers, when I saw my selfe in this poore taking, I retyred my selfe into my Chamber, not daring for shame to come abroad.

Guzman plays away his cloaths

And albeit I would willingly have faign'd my selfe sicke, I could not doe it; for my Lord was so carefull of his servants health, and that they should have all things necessarie and fitting for them, that hee would presently have sent for Physicians to see what I ayled. Besides, I saw it was a needlesse remedy, to use any such dissimulation; for by this time it had past from mouth to mouth, how, and in what case I was, and what was the cause of my griefe.

Now though that I had beene wanting so many dayes from the service of his Table, yet would he still aske and inquire what was become of me, and where I was that I did not wait? He could not indure Tale-carriers, nor such as would complaine of their fellowes, and make things worse then perhaps they were, by mis-reporting of them; he did hate it to the death, to have his house, like your

Lawyers Courts, full of clamours, and untruths; and therefore they that might not grieve or disquiet him, they would mildly tell him: Hee is heere (Sir) about the house, I saw him but now, or some such like excusive answere. But this would not serve the turne. For now he began shrewdly to suspect, lest some mis-fortune had befalne me. And therefore pressing them hard to acquaint him where I was, and how I spent my time, they were forced (for the giving of his Lordship satisfaction) to deliver unto him the truth of the businesse.

This evill inclination of mine did much afflict his Lordship, when he saw how dissolutely, without either feare or shame, I proceeded on in my lewd courses. Whereupon, to put his former project in practice, he gave order that I should have some new cloathes made me, and that then they should presently dismisse me, and rid me out of both his house and service, accordingly as he had formerly ordered the businesse.

Guzman hath new cloathes given him, and is turn'd out of doores

So his Steward cloathed me, and then turn'd me out of doores. Which I tooke in that foule scorne (holding it as a due debt, that my Master was still bound to keepe and maintaine me, and to beare with all faults) that in a kind of sullen and dogged fashion, (shewing more stomake, then wit) I left the house, with a full resolution never, (come what would come) to returne thither againe, of all other places in the world; notwithstanding that I had received many messages from the Cardinall, at sundry times, and by severall messengers, with many goodly offers, and faire promises, delivering unto me the end why all this was done, and that there was no other drift in it in the world, save onely what should make for mine owne good; thinking by this meanes, when I had champt a little upon the bit, and tasted what hardnesse was, and knowne the losse of so good a Master, I would have reform'd my manners, reclaim'd my selfe from my lewd courses, and proved afterwards a better servant, then ever I had beene before. They also signified unto me, how much his Lordship lov'd me, and what he had spoken of me in my absence. But

Proud ignorance, and selfe-will, much hurteth yong men

all would not doe; they could never get me backe againe. For I was stiffe and obstinate, and too foolishly selfe-will'd; thinking that I should revenge my selfe in so doing; and so as I might spight them, I did not care how I sped my selfe. I brew'd ill, and bak't worse; I began in pride, and ended in folly. And what could follow thereupon but my miserie and ruine, seeing that I was unthankfull for those favours and benefits, which God had been pleased to bestow upon me by the hands of that good and holy man my Master, who had justly given me my doome, and pronounced this sentence of expulsion against me. For he that cannot be wonne with good workes, nor moved with faire and gentle words, it is pitie but he should smart for it, and that rigour and chastisement should worke that upon him, which rewards and faire usage, were not able to effect. I had now quite lost those little wits that I had, making little or no account of all these things, as if I had wanted nothing. How did I scorne and contemne those many good things that were done for me, without any why or wherefore, being things beyond the reach of my capacitie, unbefitting my service, and altogether unworthy of me by reason of my unthankfulnesse? How unwise was I in conserving that present good, and in seeking to increase the hope of farther favours, which undoubtedly I should have futurely received, if I had but indevoured to deserve them? How forgetfull was I of that kindenesse, wherewith I had beene cured? How unmindefull of the care, that was taken about me? How ungratefull to that charity which was used towards me? How carelesse of that diligence, wherewith I was taught? How stubbornly proud, against that mildenesse, wherewith I was admonished? How perverse, against those sweet words, wherewith I was perswaded? How deafe against those grave yet loving tearmes, wherewith I was reprehended? How surly against that Patience, by which I was supported? How incorrigible against that favour, by which I was defended? How rebellious against those meanes, which were sought for my good? How uncapable of that good usage, where-

with I was treated? How neglectfull in amending those faults, which for my sake were so kindely dissembled? If any of those two, that tooke me for their sonne, had been alive, nay, if they were both now abiding here upon earth, and might returne to their former prosperitie, they could not have done more for me, or with more love, or would have borne halfe so much with my so many, and prejudiciall knavish prankes, which I did so dayly, and so disorderly play, and with that liberty and freenesse, as if I had not beene in my Lords, or my Fathers house, but in mine owne. I was more bold in his presence, then I should have beene amongst my equals, and he imitating God in the sweetnesse of his disposition, had the patience to beare with me.

Certaine I am, that he that begat me, would have abandoned and abhorred me, so wearie would he have growne of my ill government. But my Lord was so good a man, that he was never weary of me, never angry, never offended with me, and would not have cast me off (had not I cast off my selfe) because he lov'd me.

O the noble and Princely condition of this worthy Prelate, given him by inheritance from that true Father of love and goodnesse, that he could be so kinde-hearted, in doing still more and more good to such a one as I was! He looked still when I should returne unto him, he tarried for me, a day, a weeke, a moneth, a yeere, nay many yeeres; in all which time, he was not wanting to exercise his workes of mercy towards me, to the end, that he might leave me without excuse: And that touch't at last with shame of mine owne folly, I might pronounce that sentence against my selfe, which the heynousnesse of mine offences had deserved.

But I for all this followed mine owne humour, which was the rule by which I directed all my actions: To all that was said unto me, I put on Merchants eares,[1] was still deafe to all good counsell, appealing from good advice, to mine owne flesh, which being ready still at hand in favour of my vices, I did utterly undoe my selfe, by following of her ill counsell. For to execute her suggestions, I had

[1] *Orejas de mercader*, i.e. Deafe eares. A Proverb.

force enough; to seeke out occasions of sinne, abilitie sufficient; to persever in them, an untyred constancie; and in not leaving them, a firmenesse not to be removed. I was as well acquainted with all manner of Vice, as I was a stranger to all kinde of Vertue. And to lay the fault upon Nature, I have no reason for it in the world. For I had no lesse abilitie for good, then inclination to evill. The fault was mine owne; for shee never did any thing out of reason. Shee was alwaies the Mistresse of truth and modestie; she was never defective in what was fitting, but as shee hath beene corrupted since through sinne; and mine were so many, that I produced the cause of this bad effect, and became mine owne hangman.

CHAPTER X

Guzman de Alfarache discourseth of ill Companie; of Hospitalitie; of Patience; And how being put out of the Cardinals house, he placed himselfe with the Embassadour of France, where he playde some Knavish prankes. Hee relates a Storie, which he heard from a Gentleman of Naples. And ending with that, he gives an end to the first part of his life

COULD not (as I told you before) justly complaine; or finde fault with any body but my selfe, that my Lord had thus dismist me, and turn'd me out of service. For the very truth was, he made earnest sute (through the importunitie of his servants, who were very instant with me) to have me to come backe againe unto him; but because my bloud (whose heat was not yet

allay'd) still boyled in my brest, and was not come to its wonted coolenesse, I did ill consider mine owne good: or should rather have sayd, That I did well, ill, in not considering my ill, well. CHAPTER X

Being thus discarded, I wandred up and downe at mine owne pleasure, (as my fancie did lead me) thorow the streetes of Rome. And because in my prosperity, I had purchased some friends of mine owne profession, they seeing me un-provided for, and that I went up and downe like a Masterlesse hound, here one would invite me, and there another, howbeit it cost mee deare; for that meale that is made in ill company, though it give nourishment to the body, yet it filleth the soule with ill humours, to its utter overthrow and destruction. Nor did those good morsels so well satisfie hunger, as their ill counsell and lewd conversation did undoe me; Whereof nothing now remaineth, but repentance. For I began then, (and never till then) to know in what danger I was, when I saw the water was come up to my chinne, and ready to runne into my mouth. The conversation of the wicked destroyeth the soule

Vices come stealing in upon a man, they enter with silence, they are a smooth still File, that cuts without any noyse; they are not heard, till they have wrought mans ruine. They are as easie to be received, as they are hard to be rejected.

And such kinde of friends as these, are those Bellowes, which kindle that flame, which sets the whole soule on fire, and with a little sparke raiseth a great blaze. I might very well have recovered my allowance, and had meate of mine owne to put in my mouth; for the Steward told me, that my Lord had given him order, that I should dayly come and fetch it, or send for it, as I would my selfe. But I was so obstinate, that I would none of it. For I was so lewdly given, that I had rather indure hunger with ill company, then feed upon the best meat with honest and civill people. But they quickly payd me home, who first gave me counsell to refuse my boord-wages, as I did, relying upon them and their advice; for they were soone weary

of helping me any longer, and they did not only not relieve me, but because they would not doe it, they did shunne and avoyd me. So that I might starve for any succour that I was to looke for from them.

Touching Hospitalitie

This same thing, called Hospitality, and entertaining of friends and guests, carries a kinde of mysterie with it; I evermore found in his mouth that inviteth, honie, but in his hands gall; they promise liberally, but give sparingly; they bid with joy, but eate with sorrow. Hee that will bee another mans guest, must be content to be ordred, as he will have him; besides, he must be rich and well to passe, other-wise he shall not be welcome; he must not tread many steps in the house, his breech must scarce warme his Chayre, nor must he sit long at boord, for feare of being too troublesome. Doe not flatter thy selfe, that thou art liberally and freely welcome, because a man gives thee good words, and speakes kindely and lovingly unto thee, and tels thee thou art heartily welcome. For I have ever observed it as a true rule amongst other the Lawes of Hospitalitie, that a man may dyet with his kinsman a seven-night, with his elder brother a moneth, with his friend a yeere, and with a bad Father all his life time.

Guests, what manner of men they ought to be

The Lawes of Hospitalitie

The Father only is not weary perhaps of entertaining his sonne, but all the rest take dislike, if not a loathing of his company. If thou shalt stay with them beyond that time, they will hate thee to the death, and picke one quarrell or other against thee; and if that will not serve the turne to set thee packing, they will put crooked Pinnes in thy Bread, or lay baytes to poyson thee, that they may once be rid of thee.

But admit, that thou art invited by a married man, and that his wife bee close-fisted, a very Crib, her wealth her owne, and she somewhat proud and scornefull, say she be thy Mother, or thy Sister, in fine she is a woman, who for the most part are all of them greedy and covetous, so that they will whine for anger to see thee there, looke scurvily upon thee, grudge thee thy meat; chafe with her husband for bringing thee thither, curse both him and

thee, and wish you both choakt. Better is a hard crust in thine owne house, then a cram'd Capon in another mans. It is a miserable thing to set thy foot under another mans table.

Better is a little at home, then a great deale of good cheere abroad

My friends growing now weary of me, I needed not out of shame to leave them; for they had already cast me off, streightning more and more their hand towards me, who were so farre from giving me any thing, that now they could shamefully deny me without blushing. They needed no maske nor disguise for to dissemble the businesse. They could boldly bid me Goe by. I was therefore driven to seeke out some Wall, where-against to leane, and betake my selfe to some Tree for shelter, under whose shadow I might quietly take my feeding. For I was now in that extreme want, that like the Prodigall sonne, I would willingly have returned home, and beene content with all my heart to be one of the meanest mercenary servants in my Lords house. But such was my misfortune, that he was now dead and gone.

Beaten with the rod of affliction, I began to be humbled, and was fully resolved to turne over a new leafe, and betake my selfe to a better course of life: but it was all too late, I came a day after the faire; And fit it is, that he that will not when he may, when he would, he should have nay.

And it stands with very good reason, *Que pierda por el mal querer, el bien poder.* That through the badnesse of will, we should lose the goodnesse of power. There went the distance of some two moneths betweene my good and bad fortune. And if I had beene a stay'd, and well-govern'd Youth, as I had a running head, and a giddy braine, the least good that could have befalne me, would have beene (though the meanest of his servants) an honest provision during my life, and might have runne the venture of some better fortune. But seeing it fell out as it did, yet must we thanke God as well for the bad, as the good. I cannot say, that my malignant Starre was the cause thereof, but that mine owne evill inclination was the worker of my woe;

Want of patience, the cause of much evill

THE THIRD BOOKE

For the starres *non compellunt, sed inclinant*, they incline, but not constraine. They make men apt, but they doe not coact. Some ignorant fooles sticke not to say; O Sir, Destinie is not to be avoyded. That which shall be, shall be. And it is in vaine to strive against it. I tell thee (my friend) it is a vaine thing to say so; and thou doest not understand the truth thereof aright; for there is no necessitie, that it is, or should be so; it is thou thy selfe, that mak'st it so to be.

The Starres doe not inforce a man to this or that

In these Morall and outward things, thou hast a kinde of free-will conferred upon thee, whereby thou maist (if thou wilt) governe both thy selfe, and thy actions. Thy starre cannot constraine thee, nor all the heavens joyned together with all the force and power that they have, cannot compell thee against thy will.

All evil that befalls a man, is for the most part occasioned by himselfe

It is thou that forcest thy selfe to leave what is good, and to apply thy selfe to that which is evill, following thy dishonest desires, whence these thy crosses and calamities come upon thee.

I was now entred into the service of the French Embassadour, with whom my Lord (who is now in glory) held strict amitie; who, in his life-time tooke likewise great pleasure in my witty jests, and merry conceits. He would faine have had me serve him before, but he was loth to intertaine mee, lest it might be taken unkindly to receive another mans servant, considering the good love and friendship that was betweene them.

Guzman serves the French Embassadour

Well, I was now with him, and he us'd me well, but with a different end. For my Lord directed his actions to the profit and benefit of my person, but he onely for his owne private ends, and the pleasure which he tooke in my jerkes of wit, the merry tales that I would tell him, and the pleasing messages that I should bring him now and then, from those his Ladies and Mistresses to whom he made love. He did settle me in no set place, or office about him; I was his servant at large; and he as largely paid me. For either hee would give me my paiment himselfe, or else I my selfe would take it in his presence, with some pleasant

Masters intertaine their servants for divers ends

jest or other ; or to speake more plainely, I was his chiefe Minion and Favorite, though it pleased some to call me his Buffone and Jester. CHAPTER X

When we had any guests (as we seldome or never wanted) wee were very complementall with them, and waited punctually upon them, our eyes still attending on theirs : but if they were either impudent, foolish, or troublesome guests, which came thither unbidden, upon such as these we would put a thousand jests. Some we would make to sit all dinner time without drinke, that you would have thought, that they had been so many Melones sowne in a dry ground ; to others we would give very little, and that in pinching glasses ; some had their Wine over-watered, other-some over-warme without any snow. When they were ready to eate their meat, we would take away their Plates from them, and set some salt-meats before them, ill seasoned, with a little oyle that was none of the best. We would dayly invent new devices, to abuse their palates, that they might take dislike, and come there no more.

Guests how to be attended on by those that wait at the table. Foolish and presumptuous persons not to be observed by those that attend

It hapned once upon a time, that an English-man claiming kindred of the Embassador, and it being a common custome with him, to come dayly to our house, my Master grew weary of him ; for (besides that hee was not his kinsman) he was neither Noble in his bloud, nor indued with good qualities, and above all, in his conversation full of impertinencies, that it was a kind of captivitie, to keepe conversation with him.

Men of good and bad behaviour, to bee respected according as they are. A tale of an Englishman

There are a certaine kinde of men, that a mans heart will rise against them, and grow into a dislike of them, though he never saw them before. And againe there are another sort of men, that will steale thereinto, and thrust themselves into our affection, and good liking, upon the first sight, winning our good will from us, and procuring our best wishes ; this, either hatred, or love, not being in the hands of the one, or the power of the other. But this was a meere lumpe of Lead, a man of no metall in the world, a dull and heavy piece of flesh, in a word a meere block-head.

THE THIRD BOOKE

One night, when they were newly set at supper, hee began to lay open his vanitie, with telling a thousand lyes one upon the necke of another, wherewith the Embassador was much offended, and not being able to suffer such a one, to goe on in his fooleries, he spake to me in Spanish, (which the other understood not) and said unto me, Would I could bee rid once of this foole ; for I am as weary of him, as ever I can be. He did not speake this to a Dolt or an Asse : I had his meaning in the winde. Whereupon I tooke my friend to taske ; I followed him with salt-meats, that were smart and sharpe, and left behinde them a kinde of tartnesse or tang upon the tongue ; wherewith being bitten, he call'd for his coolers, which he tooke almost faster then I could fill them.

The wine that he gulped downe, was the gulph that swallowed him up. The glasse was great, his draughts answerable, and those often, and this powder tooke so well, that at last he was powdred with a witnesse, and quite blowne up.

When I saw he had yeelded himselfe prisoner to his pots, and that hee was above one and thirty, being many peepes out, I tooke off one of my Garters, and knit a sliding knot upon the instep of one of his feete, and fastened it unto the stoole whereon he sate. And when the Table was taken away, and that he offered to rise to take his leave, and to goe home to his lodging, he was no sooner risen from his seat, but that he fell all along on the floore, his mouth, his teeth, and his nose being shrewdly hurt, the bloud gushing out amaine. So that when he was come to himselfe the next day, and saw in what ill case he was, and how his face was batterd with the fall, for very shame hee would never more come neere the house.

This businesse was well carried, for it succeeded even as I would have it. But all darts doe not hit right ; nor all Angle-rods strike sure. There are some fishes that bite and carry away the bait with them, leaving the Angler deluded, and the Hooke empty, as it hapned unto me with a Spanish Souldier, that was longer then the marke.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER X

A tale of a Spaniard, who scorneth Guzman, and shewes himselfe a craftier knave then he

O the whoreson traytor, how crafty and subtill a Rogue hee was! how full of his cunning shifts! Hearken well I pray unto that which passed betweene us.

This wily rascall came into the house about noone, when the Embassador was ready to sit downe to dinner, and comming unto him, he told his Lordship that he was a Souldier, and borne in Cordova, and a principall Gentleman of that place, though now he were in want, and therefore besought him, that he would favour him so farre forth, as that he might taste of his bounty. The Embassadour tooke out a little purse, wherein were some Crownes, and without offering to open it, hee gave him both the Purse and the Gold that was within it, because he seemed to be the same, he had exprest himselfe to be.

But not contenting himselfe with this, he continued still with him, recounting what he was, and the services wherein he had beene. And so running on from one thing to another, the Embassadour setting himselfe downe to dinner, he makes me no more ado, but does the like. And pulling a stoole to him, sets himselfe cheeke by jole with his Lordship.

Court Jer-Falcons what they be

I was then gone to fetch in meat, when lo, by the way, I might perceive two other Jer-Falcons like the former, which were newly entred within the Court; and when they understood, that this other was at dinner with my Lord, the one said to the other; As I am true Souldier, either the Divell, or Sinne, hath clapt gyves upon our legges; for this cheating Rascall still gets the start of us, and winnes all that he playes for by the elder hand.

When I heard them thus mutter and maunder against him, I came unto them, and askt them; Whether they knew that Gentleman within, or no? One of them told me, I know that Taverne-haunter, whose father hath many a time and oft pull'd on my Buskins in Cordova, where hee keepes shop under the wall of the great Church.

This is our unhappinesse, that if some twenty Gentlemen of us goe for Italy, there returne a hundred such infamous fellowes as this is, that will equall themselves

with the best, and boast themselves to be descended of the ancient Gothes: and when they come where they are not knowne, they thinke that with the gumming of their Mouchatos, making them beare up as stiffe as if they were starcht, and with the wagging of three or foure feathers in their Hat, they are growne into noblenesse of bloud, and purchased the name of Valour, beeing no better then notorious Cowards. For it is not Feathers, and starcht-beards that fight it out in the Field, but stout hearts, and men of stiffe courage. Come, let us goe, I will make this effeminate Raskall next time I meet with him, leave off comming in our quarter, and fyle himselfe in some other ranke.

With that they went their wayes, whilest I went considering with my selfe, what kinde of cattle these three were, that thus sought to grace and set forth themselves.

But I was some-what angry at those other two, taking them to bee but Braggadoccios, and meere puffes, as well for the vaunts they made of themselves, as for the ill language they us'd, in defaming him, who sought to honour himselfe, without any cost or prejudice to others.

I was likewise not a little moved against this new-come guest for his bold and insolent carriage, who might very well have contented himselfe with that which was given him, and so gone his wayes, without being so impudent to sit downe at table in that swaggering and uncivill fashion; I had a moneths minde to be at him, I long'd to breake one jest or other upon him, and to put it so home, that he should not be able to avoid it; but thinking to goe forth to fetch Wooll, I was forced to come back with my fleece shorne, failing very much in this my intent and purpose. He intreated mee to give him some drinke. I made as if I did not understand him. He beckned unto me with his hand. I drew neerer unto him. He made me a third signe. I turn'd mine eyes another way, looking very demurely, and carrying with mee a sober and composed countenance, (though I had much adoo to forbeare laughing.) He looking well upon me, and perceiving that I either plaid

the foole, or the knave with him, he would not speake, or becken any more unto me, but turning himselfe towards the Embassador, he thus said unto him :

Sir, I beseech your Lordship, that you will not thinke it over-boldnesse, or too much presumption in mee, that I have offered (though unbidden) to sit downe at your Lordships Table, in regard of those many excuses which I can render to your Lordship, which may (if I have offended therein, and broken the rule of good manners) plead somewhat in my favour.

First, the qualitie of my Person, and the noblenesse of my House, doth deserve any common or ordinary courtesie.

Secondly, my being a Souldier, makes mee worthy of any Princes Table what-soever, because I have purchased that honour by my Sword and profession.

And lastly, I may adde there-unto the necessitie I now am in, which is common to all, and may befall any man, as well as my selfe.

And I presume that your Lordship keepes this so free and honourable a Table for to relieve such as my selfe ; and therefore conceive, that your Lordship holds it not necessarie, that such Souldiers as my selfe, having any worth, or good parts in them, should expect to be invited to your boord.

And therefore I shall desire your Lordship to be pleased to command one of your servants to give me some drinke ; for being a Spaniard, I perceive they doe not understand me, though I have often called for it.

My Lord there-upon commanded us to give him drinke, so that I could not otherwise choose but doe as I was bid ; yet I would have sworne, hee should not have thus gone away with the Bucklers.

Well, I brought him drinke, but in so poore and penurious a glasse, and mixed so much water with his Wine, that I left him in a manner as dry as hee was before. But because a little will serve a Spaniards turne, and that they are inured to suffer much hunger and thirst, with that little pittance, which was rather a drop, then a

draught, he passed therewith as well as he could, till dinner was done.

We that were Pages, having conspired all together, not to looke him any more in the face while he was eating, lest he should speake againe unto us by signes, to give him more drinke, and so binde us to bring it unto him. But he was an old beaten Souldier, and knew well how to use the weapon of his wit, and being too hard for us, did likewise beat us from this ward, which we thought had beene too sure a one, to bee put from. For when hee had fill'd his belly, and well satisfied himselfe, and that the last course was served in, And your Lordship will give me leave (quoth he) I will now goe drinke. And so rising up from boord, removing his stoole from him, he went to the Court-Cupboord, and taking from thence the biggest Glasse that was there, he powr'd forth as much Wine and Water as himselfe thought fit, and having quenched his thirst, putting off his hat, and making a legge to his Lordship, got him out of the roome, and so went his way without speaking any one word or other. My Lord was ready to burst with laughing, to see how hee had put me beside my tricke, and after that he had wondred awhile at the resolution and boldnesse of this fellow, he said unto me; Guzmanillo, this Souldier savours somewhat of thee, and thy countrie, where all is carried away with Bravados, and an impudent kinde of behaviour.

Now, whilst we were talking at table of the libertie and free kinde of carriage, which the Spaniards assume unto themselves, there was newly come into the house a Gentleman of Naples, who had no sooner saluted my Lord, but he told him, that he was purposely come unto his Lordship to acquaint him with one of the cruellest, and strangest accidents, that hath hapned in these our times, which now very lately fell out in Rome.

The Embassadour intreated him to relate it unto him; And that I might the better heare it, I did deferre taking away, and brought him a Chayre, wherein, when he was set, he thus began to speake.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER X

A pitifull and lamentable Accident of two noble Lovers in Rome

In this Citie, there dwelt a young Gentleman of the age of twenty or one and twenty yeeres, more noble in bloud, then rich in wealth. He had a goodly presence; he was vertuous, able, active, and in his owne person very valiant. This Gentleman fell in love with a Damsell, a young Gentlewoman here in Rome, about the age of seventeene; being wonderfull both faire and honest; they were both equall in state and condition, but more in their good will and love to each other. For if the one did love, the other did burne. His name was Dorido, hers Clorinia. Her Parents bred her up so retiredly, that they did not suffer her to treate or converse with any, from whence any danger might arise unto her; neither did she so much as shew her selfe at the Window, and did seldome looke out, unlesse it were by chance. For such was the excesse of her beauty, that it was able to be a loadstone, to draw all the youthfull Nobilitie of Rome to desire her love. Her Parents, and one only brother that she had, were very jealous of her honour; insomuch that these two Lovers could not injoy each other as they would.

Dorido and Clorinia, a payre of faithfull Lovers

True it is, that Clorinia, as one that was truly in love, could by no meanes be hindred from shewing her selfe to Dorido, as oft as he past that way. For neere adjoyning to her owne Window, there was another of a friend of hers; who (for that she was marryed) might with more liberty stand there, when she was disposed so to do. And for that she had acquainted her with her love, as often as Dorido past that way, she would give her some signe or token, thorow a little hole that they had made of purpose in a partition Wall that was betweene them, whereupon she would presently make haste to the Window to see him; And so received from her Lover that short, yet full content, which the covetousnesse and strictnesse of those times could afford.

This continued thus a good while: for other comfort had they none, then what they tooke in this fugitive pleasure, seeing each other only *in transitu*, as he past along the street; which (like a shadow) was as soone gone,

THE THIRD BOOKE

as seene. But Dorido, impatient of this poore content, and desirous to improve these favours he received from her, sought meanes, how he might with more convenience injoy so sweet a sight, seeing he might not be permitted to proceed any further. Whereupon he began to enter into a strict league of amitie with her brother, whose name was Valerio; into whose friendship he had wrought himselfe, with that fastnesse and fervour, that Valerio could not live without Dorido. Which was an occasion that moved him many times to carry him home with him to his house, wishing him to be Master thereof, and to make as bold therewith (if he wanted any thing) as if it were his owne, and to command it with the same freenesse. So that by this meanes, he had both liberty and leisure to contemplate the divine beautie of his dearest Love.

Valerio, brother to Clorinia

With these baytes, their loves were led along, gaining still more ground, and gathering more strength unto them, manifesting more and more their loves, by their lookes. But Clorinia being the weaker of the two, and peradventure more inflamed, opened her minde to a maide of hers called Scintila; who desirous to doe her Mistresse service, went to seeke out Dorido; whom when she had met with, she said thus unto him.

Scintila, Servant to Clorinia

Dorido, it is bootlesse to dissemble the businesse any longer, it is now no time to hide thy selfe from me, for it is not unknowne unto me what good liking there is betwixt you and my Mistresse, and what good love yee make each to other; And that you may see, that I doe not goe about to deceive you, my Mistresse her selfe hath revealed so much unto me, intreating me, that I would be a meanes to lay open her heart unto you, and to signifie unto you, how much she loves you; and for farther declaration thereof, hath by mee sent you this greene silke Riband, as a hopefull token, desiring you for her sake, that you will honour her so much, as to weare it about your arme. I assure my selfe you are perswaded, that it comes recommended unto you from her owne hand, for that your selfe have seene it many a time hang in the dressing of her hayre. So that from

hence-forward, you may rest confident of my faithfulnesse towards you, so great is the desire that I have to doe you service. CHAPTER X

When Dorido heard this, it strooke amazement into him, neither did he seeme to like well of it, for that he had never any great good conceipt of this Wench, as being jealous of her discretion, not holding her to be a fit instrument for a businesse of that great trust and consequence as this was ; fearing lest their loves might, through her weaknesse, come to be discovered ; But seeing there was no other remedie, and that it was Clorinias owne Act, and none of his, he dissembled his dislike, and in the best manner that he could, made shew unto her, in how much he did esteeme this her love and service ; and how ready he would be upon all occasions, to deserve this her free and voluntary offer.

Some few dayes being past, and Dorido's desire increasing to speake face to face with his Mistresse, and finding no meanes how to doe it, Love, that can overcome all difficulties, and make those things facill, that seeme almost impossible, opened a way thereunto : shewing the meanes unto him, whereby he might come to compasse his desire. There was fastened to the Wall of that house where Clorinia dwelt (which butted on the open street) a piece of an old Wall, whereof the one halfe was falne downe, and runne into decay, being scarce so high, as to reach up to the Window belonging to the house, and a little beneath that, was a hole stopt up with a moveable stone that might be taken out, and put in againe at pleasure. This did serve Clorinia sometimes in stead of a Lattice, viewing thorow it, (without being seene) those that did passe to and fro in the street.

This was well knowne to Dorido, for that he had often seene his Mistresse peeping out at that hole. This opportunitie seemed to be favourable to his desire ; whereupon he brake with Scintila, and intreated her, that she would stand his friend ; telling her : Since (Scintila) my good fortune hath beene such, that I have found you well affected

to our Loves, and willing to pleasure me all that you can, and to afford me your best furtherance therein ; I will not refuse to put my selfe into your hands, assuring my selfe, that you wil alwayes and in all things have that care, which the love you beare to your Mistresse, and the desire you have to doe me any courtesie, doth oblige you unto. You know, that since the time that I surrendered up my soule to Clorinia, and put her into the possession of my heart, making her the true Lord and Owner both of it, and of my life, I have got no other thing thereby, save a correspondencie of affection expressed only by lookes, having as yet no other interpreters of our mindes, but the eyes, and all for lacke of better commoditie, and more fit and convenient meanes. Which the more I am debarr'd of, the more it augmenteth my desire. For evermore privation ingendreth appetite.[1]

Now, there is a thing come into my head, how by your good helpe, my desire may rest honestly satisfied. You cannot but know the hole, that is underneath the Window ; this must be the place, and thou the instrument of my good fortune. Thou shalt speake unto Clorinia, (intreating her as from me) that she will be pleased to correspond with me in this my just request ; and in case she should refuse, as not daring out of feare to venture so farre, thou mayst then labour to perswade with her, and so guide and rule her will, to be brought to yeeld to this so easie a condition ; and that this night, seeing that the darknesse thereof is so much our friend, when all the people of the house shall be a bed and asleepe, she will be pleased but to speake with me at that hole. As for any other thing, I neither intreat it, nor pretend it.

This suite seemed to Scintila, very easie, and without any danger in the world ; she puts him in good hope, promises him to sollicite it, till shee had effected it ; she comply'de with her obligation, and pointed him the houre when he should come ; giving him a certaine signe, what he should doe, when he came to the Window.

[1] *Privatio generat appetitum.*

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER X

Dorido, when night was come, disguising himselfe, went to the place appointed, where he stood waiting for a good occasion.

When all those of the house were sure and safe enough, as sleepe could make them, Scintila went to the Window and opened it, taking occasion to throw out a little water. Which being seene by Dorido, who had got upon the Wall, standing there to wayte a good houre, and knowing that it was Scintila, he said softly unto her, Here I am. Shee willed him to stay awhile, and shutting the Window, in she goes.

Doridos heart in the meane while fell a leaping in his bosome, beating and thumping thereat as if it had sought to get out, being ready to burst with desire, inflamed with the fire of love, fearefull of the various successe of things, lest some crosse accident might interpose it selfe betwixt him, and this his glory, whereunto he was now so neere, studying with himselfe what words he were best to use unto her, and in what kinde of phrase he should begin his Court-ship. His thoughts ranne through a thousand severall things, and his eyes were never off from that hole, looking as farre there-into, as that ill-placed stone would permit him.

He might one while heare Clorinia talking with Scintila; another while with her father and mother; now perceive how shee rose from the place where she sate, and by and by againe past to and fro, one while to this, another to that side of the house, till that (her Parents being abed) he saw her approching to the place appointed, whither she came so troubled, (such a conflict was there betwixt Love, and Shame; Modestie, and Affection) that she was about to goe backe. But inforced there-unto by Scintila, at last she came.

Now, when they were come to this inter-view, and saw themselves thus happily met together, Dorido was so transported therewith, that although he had premeditated before-hand what he would say unto her, he was strucken quite dumbe, and had not a word to say. And she no lesse

trembling, not having any by in that conjuncture, which might give breath either to the one or the other, to bring them to pronounce but so much as one word either good, or bad ; at last by little and little, when their frozen tongues had recovered a little warmth, they made a shift to exchange some few words on both sides, where-with they saluted each other.

Dorido intreated her hand, and she willingly gave it him ; he tooke it, and kist it againe and againe, blessing and stroking his face therewith, never suffering it to depart from his mouth. After he had thus taken his pleasure of her faire hand, he stretcht forth his to her, pleasing his touch with the delicate softnesse of her beautifull countenance, unable to enjoy any other pleasure, nor could that place and time affoord him any farther content.

In this sweet exchange of mutuall love they intertained themselves a great while. And whilest their hands did speake, themselves were silent. For the talke of the one, did hinder the speech of the other. And because Scintila made haste to part them, for feare of being discovered, if they should dwell any longer upon these complementall kindnesses, Dorido with many indearings of his love, tooke leave of his Clorinia, intreating her, that the next night following, at the same houre, and the same place, he might injoy the same *Regalo*, and sweet comfort againe. She promist him he should. And so for that time, they tooke leave of each other, both of them remaining wonderfull well contented. But much more he, who was ready to leape out of his skinne for joy. And wishing that night and the next day would post away apace, hee went home to his lodging.

Where offering to sit downe, he could not rest himselfe there ; and seeking to ease himselfe by rising up, he sought some place where-against to leane ; and when there likewise he could not be at quiet, hee romed up and downe the roome, walking to and fro on the unsteddy legges of Disrest, and Desire ; so that nothing could give him ease and content.

CHAPTER X

Thus did he suffer, and thus weare out that wearisome time, till the night following, and the time appointed, whose minutes he measured out by those glasses which distinguish the houres, giving himselfe over to this idle curiositie.

The houre being come, he went to the place appointed, expecting when the signe should be given; he had placed himselfe in the hollow nooke of an old gate, which joyned to the wall neere unto the window; and being about to get up to the hole, hee saw two Gallants passe by, which were in love with a couple of Gentlewomen in the same streete, who walked there up and down, giving many a turne to and fro, waiting when the street should be cleere, that they might make benefit of the like occasion. They were Doridos very good friends, and were not ignorant that he was inamoured of Clorinia. They were well acquainted the one with the other. But because Dorido was some-what more reserved in the love that he made to Clorinia, he would not discover himselfe unto them, for feare of giving suspition of that, which he was not yet Master of. And therefore whilest they continued walking there, he durst not mount the wall, lest haply they might chance to see him. For albeit that the night was very darke, yet the bulke of his body might, like a confused lumpe or masse, be discerned by those that walkt up and downe in that still and prying fashion, though by those that walkt along the streets at large, and minding no such matters, it was not so easie to be perceived. And therefore, because they should not know him, getting him thence, he removed himselfe a little farther off, looking still when they would be gone, or else intertaine themselves in their owne standings, that he might betake himselfe to his.

But when he saw that they stayd there still, and that his houre was now come, he thought with himselfe, that if his Mistris should come, and not finde him there, not knowing the cause thereof, she might taxe him of too much carelessnesse; or accuse him of his lacke of love.

This drave him, (holpen on by choller) into that desperation, that he was fully resolved to set upon them, meaning to chase them away, if they did not make head against him; and if they did stand to it, and seeke to defend themselves, then to kill them if he could. Which he might well have done, as well in regard of the greatnesse of his strength and courage, as also for that he was every way well provided for them. Besides, that his anger, which had now set him all on a raging fire, (being the whetstone, that sets an edge on Fortitude), would have added greater force to his Valour, especially when he should set upon them (which is no small advantage) unawares.

But considering, not so much the perill of his owne person, as the present estate of his businesses that he had now in hand, that they might not be overthrowne by being ill managed, and by rash and inconsiderate courses, he pawsed on the matter, and grew a little cooler, biting his lips, wringing his hands, casting his eyes up to heaven, and beating the ground with his feet like a madman.

And when he perceived, that the time was past, he was now as sad and melancholly, as the night before, he was merry and jocond.

The very next day after, these two Gentlemen went to looke out Dorido, whom they had no sooner met withall, but they told him; You know, Sir, that we two are your friends, and that we truely love you; and being such, (as we unfeignedly professe our selves to be) it is neither fit, nor just, that wee should conceale any thing from each other, but be free and open-hearted to one another: And it is likewise meet, (if you be the same to us, as wee be to you) that you doe the like on your part, telling us the truth of that which we shall aske you, if it be no way unlawfull, or prejudiciall unto you so to do.

Yesterday, some foure houres after night was in, we two, walking through our street (for so we may tearme it) in regard that both our hearts have there their abode: seeking, I say, our adventure at that time of night, we might perceive a third man, which dogged us all the

way, following us almost close at the heeles, scarce losing sight of us all the while, so long as a man might say his Pater-noster.

We had a great desire to know who this should be, but we let him alone, because we would not cause any scandall. Wee could not so much as suspect, much lesse conceive, who this should be, till we were afterwards certified (by that which succeeded) that you were the man. And the assurance that wee had thereof, was; that we having staid awhile about your Mistresses window, we might heare it open, and perceive Scintila put forth her head, who seeing our outward Bulkes, and not knowing who we were, spake in a low voice, and said:

Dorido, why do not you come up? When we heard her say so, out of an impertinent curiositie (relying on your friendship) I answered; Which way? This word was no sooner uttered, but without replying farther unto me, she clapt to the window, and away she went. From whence we imagine you had made some set match, and because we would not hinder you of your purpose, we presently departed thence, and went to looke after you, but could not finde you. So that wee could not till now acquaint you with what had past.

But because we desire to serve you, and that (by conserving this good love and friendship betweene us) our particular pretensions may the better proceed, without any hinderance or impediment each to other, let us divide the night betweene us.

We will take our time from mid-night, till it be day, leaving the former part of the night free to you; and if you will exchange turnes with us, liking, perhaps, better of ours, then your owne, be it as you please, and take which of the two you have most minde to, for to us it is indifferent, being all one in the reckning.

Dorido would faine have dissembled the businesse with them; but finding himselfe by these pregnant proofes, and forcible reasons, too fast ty'de to get loose from them, he could not so shift them of. And therefore accepting their

friendly offer, he made choise of the former part of the night, according to their owne agreement.

And with this plaine proceeding, he prosecuted his Visit the third night, though without hope of obtaining it, doubting shee would not doe him that favour, in regard of that unlucky accident that fell out the night before.

But for that Clorinia lov'd, (and that she truely lov'd) nothing could detaine her from him, but with a great deale of care, was still inquiring, whether her Gallant meant to come againe, to glad her heart with his cheerefull and comfortable lookes, being very inquisitive to know what should bee the reason, that caused him to faile the last night of his promise.

Now, whilst her Father and Mother were at supper, rising from the table, she went to the fore-said hole, which she might safely doe, for that the chimney, neere whereunto they supt, stood on the one side of the Hall, (being a very large one) and the window where the hole was, on the other side, neere adjoyning to the corner; in the midst whereof, were certaine things placed betweene, which did shadow and hinder the sight from the one side to the other. Her father and her mother sate so, that she might easily goe thither, and speake softly, without being heard of any.

The truth is, shee watcht an occasion (having well advised with her selfe what might happen) to make quicke dispatch, and to rise from table as soone as possibly she could. Who came thither so opportunely, and in so good a time, that Dorido was there ready expecting her comming; for from out the street, he might heare the footing of certaine steps in the Hall, which was a sure signe unto him, that those paces were troden by his Mistresse, so that he made all the haste he could to get up to see her. And because this was the second time of their meeting, they were a little better flesh't, then they were before, and met not with those stopages, which heretofore had hindred their speech. So that they now discoursed more boldly, and more freely, as farre forth as the time would give them leave, (which that night was but short, and in a manner

stolne) and afterwards they tooke their leaves with a great deale of tendernesse on either part, having agreed betweene themselves, that as long as the Moone was in her wane, they would injoy the fulnesse of their loves, which increased now apace, till some better meanes should be found for their freer accesse.

In this *interim*, a yong Gentleman, a very great friend of Doridos, called Horatio, fell in love with Clorinia: He courted her, he serv'd her, and observ'd her, as became a Lover, notwithstanding, that he knew, that shee was his friends Mistresse. But he knew withall, that hee did not treat with intent to take her to wife, but himselfe did.

Relying therefore upon this their great friendship, the justnesse of his request, and the honesty of his cause, he intreated him of all loves, that he would desist from making love to Clorinia, and give way to him, seeing their endes were so different.

Horatio's affectionate words, and lawfull request, were of that power, and prevailed so much with Dorido, that he told him, that for his part he was well contented therewith, promising him, that if his Mistresse should so like of it, and that she could finde in her heart to fancy and affect him, hee would give over his suite, leaving the field open unto him to take his pleasure, without any contradiction in the world; and that he should rest himselfe assured, that he would no way stand in competition with him. For the better effecting whereof, he would doe two things: The one, to dis-deceive Clorinia, by delivering plainely unto her, that by reason of a certaine Vow, that hee had made to himselfe, it was not in his power to be married unto her, which he would not breake for all the world. The other; the better to make her forget him, he would goe about to make love else-where. Yet, for that great friendship, that was betwixt himselfe, and Valerio, he must hold him excused, if he did not forbeare now and then to visit her, which might turne much to his good, but no hurt at all; being that his true intent and purpose was,

to favour his pretension, upon all occasions that should offer themselves unto him.

Herewith Horatio rested content, and was wonderfull well satisfied, and gave Dorido many thankes; not considering, that having left it to Clorinias choyse, and putting himselfe upon her Election, till that he knew her minde, and had gained her good will, he had negotiated little or nothing at all. And the offer made by Dorido, was upon the confidence that he had that to speake thereof unto Clorinia, was no other, then the tearing of her heart from forth her breast. But Horatio carried away with vaine confidencies, and various hopes, intreated Dorido, that he would speake a good word for him. He promised he would, that he might still maintaine his friendship with Horatio, and not give any note or scandall to their love.

To comply therefore with his promise, and to make good his owne offer, when he met with his Mistresse, he made a long discourse unto her of all that had passed betweene them; Telling her, that if she could finde in her heart to love Horatio, and be brought to settle her affection upon him, God forbid that ever he should goe about to hinder so honourable an intent. But in case she could not, yet at least was she bound in thankfulnesse to accept of this his good will, by not shewing her selfe coy and strange unto him; and if he past by the street where she was, shee should not scornfully shut the Window against him, and flie from his sight, and should shew him a cheerefull looke, though it were but feigned.

To this Clorinia answered betwixt anger and scorne, telling him; that hee should surcease, to lay any such command upon her, and that he should speake no more thereof unto her; for if for this cause, he should leave and forsake her, she would rather be content to be hated and abhorred by him, then to wrong either him, or her selfe, by placing her love else-where: Who as hee had beene the first, so he should be the last as long as she liv'd; which life of hers, she would presently sacrifice unto him, for to take away all occasion from him of commanding her to

love another, or to forget him; as for the rest, he might doe as he saw cause, she would not hinder him, let him take what course it pleased him, so as it liked him, she would not stand against it. CHAPTER X

Dorido tooke wonderfull contentment in hearing this answer come from her; for these words of her, were that true Chrisole wherein the Gold of their loves was refined, and that touchstone that tryde the purenesse of their affections, and gave assurance that it was not counterfeit metall. So he treated of this matter no more, but followed his wonted Visits both day and night, having first given an account to Horatio of what he had done. Hee would not beleeve it, yet waxed wondrous sad, when he heard it. But for all this, he did not leave off to serve her, but could never finde her in disposition to doe him the least grace or favour, but rather to use him with all sharpnesse and rigour.

Whence it came to passe, that seeing himselfe disdained, and Dorido preferred before him; furie provoketh his patience, setting his heart on fire with an infernall rage; insomuch that his love was now turned into hatred. And whereas before he was alwayes desirous to doe her service, from that time forward he laid waite to doe her a mischiefe, beating his braines, and bending all his wits and studie to worke her overthrow; or at least to put some foule disgrace upon her. So that this Horatio, having dogg'd Dorido divers times, till he had learned the houre, the place, and the meanes how he got up upon the Wall, and the manner of his carriage and fashion when he came to speake with her, and she with him.

One night amongst the rest, he did anticipate and prevent the comming of the true Lover, and feigning himselfe to be Dorido, he clambred up to the place, and made a little noyse, by jogging the stone that was in the hole of the Wall, as he had observed him to have done the like divers times heretofore. Now Clorinia taking notice of the signe, but not considering the great anticipation, and prevention of the time, came presently at this call, and taking out the

stone, with many sweet and kinde words, she received this feigned Lover, who remained silent all this while, which loving language of hers, did but the more incourage Horatio in his intended treason; and putting his hand into the hole, tooke hold on Clorinias faire hand, and tooke it forth, feigning that he much desired to kisse the same. And holding her fast thereby with his left hand, and with his right, plucking out a sharpe knife, which for that purpose he bare about him, with little difficulty, but a great deale of impiety, he cut it off, and carryed it away with him, leaving this poore afflicted Damsell lying in a swoune upon the floore, by striving to suppresse her sorrow, which she ought to have vented with her voice, and with her cryes and lamentations; but she did smother them, offring force as it were to this her womanly weaknesse; and did shut them up close in her heart, and so offending the vitall spirits, she remained in a manner dead. And there questionlesse would she have breathed her last, if she had not had present helpe; for her Father and her Mother missing her, and not seeing her in the roome where they were, they called unto her, and because she returned no answer, they marvailing much thereat, went forth to seeke her: they found her weltering in her owne bloud upon the ground, hard by that hole, which was left open in the Wall, and trickled downe with the bloud that came from her, which streames of bloud were as so many proofes and evidences of the cause of her death; for so they deem'd her to be, because they could not finde in her any signe of life.

Her sorrowfull Parents, seeing this cruell and dolefull spectacle, and the trunke of her arme without a hand, being unable to bridle their griefe, fell downe in a swoune close by their unfortunate Daughter, no lesse breathlesse then she was. But comming presently to themselves againe, they began with the greatest lamentations that were ever heard, to bewaile this so great a misfortune that had befalne them, being able to move any other eye to pitie, and to powre forth teares in aboundance, to see so

young and handsome a Gentlewoman so butcherly and so inhumanely abused. But in the midd'st of this their excessive sorrow, they began to consider with themselves, that if the life of their Daughter should be lost, with it they should likewise lose their honour, which in their discretion, they held not fit to hazard together with her. They resolved therefore with themselves to keepe this deed secret, and so leaving off their lamenting, drying their eyes, and smothering their sighs, they likewise quieted those of the house, and bearing Clorinia from thence, after many remedies, which they applyed to her, they had somewhat brought her to her selfe: Who, when she saw her selfe in the midst of her mournefull Parents, and in that pitifull manner, her sorrow redoubled upon her, which receiving increase from her shame, shee swouned anew. Wherewith her Parents griefe was a-fresh renewed in that terrible manner, as if their hearts had beene rent from their bodies by the roots. And with the tendrest and kindest words they could use, they did seeke all they could to comfort her; speaking unto her in the sweet and loving language of such a Father and Mother, that so dearely lov'd a Daughter, indevouring by those soft and gentle phrases, to cure the wound of her minde, which was more then that of her body. With this, poore wretched Clorinia began to gather breath, and bewailing her misfortune (which till then she was not able to doe) she did move the very stones to compassion, and to take pitie of this her wofull and miserable condition. CHAPTER X

Then they presently began with great secresie to treate of her Cure. Valerio her brother went forth-with to fetch a Surgeon, a friend of his, of whose secresie he was confidently assured. The night was exceeding darke, and therefore he took a Lanthorne along with him; and as he was crossing the street, it was his hap to discry Dorido a farre off, who in a carelesse kinde of fashion was comming along the street, with purpose to goe see his Mistresse, being ignorant of what had passed. He began to call unto him with a sad and mournfull voyce, and when he drew

neere unto him, with a heavy cheere hee sayd; O my true friend! Whither art thou going? Goest thou peradventure to condole with us our great disaster, and that Tragick sorrow, which must shorten our life? Hast thou either seene, or heard of the like mis-hap unto ours, and of the unfortunate accident that hath befalne our dearest sister Clorinia? Woe is me; yet to thee, that art our true friend, I cannot conceale that, which we must hide from all the world besides. For I know assuredly, that thou wilt beare a part in our sorrow, and be a Companion of these our miseries; nay I know thou wilt, as one of us, use all diligence in revenging this wrong, and labour all thou canst to finde out him, that hath beene the cruell murtherer of my sister. Wilt thou Dorido? I am sure thou wilt.

Dorido, whilest he was hearing this sad storie, stood amazed, like a man that had beene bereft of his senses: And it was a wonder that he was able to stand upon his legs, being so word-strooken to the heart as he was, but recollecting himselfe by degrees, which was holpen on by the desire which he had to understand how the world went, striving to fortifie himselfe against this fierce assault, which had already shaken the very Walls of his heart, with a troubled voyce he began to inquire what the matter was.

Valerio, from point to point delivered unto him all the particulars, and told him that he was now going to call a Surgeon; intreating him, that he would goe along with him, fearing lest the life of Clorinia, through too much delay, might runne some hazard. Dorido accompanyed him; and albeit hee had more need of comfort himselfe, then to give comfort unto others, yet notwithstanding, framing himselfe thereunto as well as he could, at length he brake thus with him; Friend Valerio, this dolefull misfortune of yours, and the lamentable case of your unfortunate sister Clorinia, doth so neerely touch me, and workes that true sense of sorrow in me, that no lesse then to your selfe, they may give me the *Pésame*: and

come and condole with me this disastrous mischance, for I am so truly sensible thereof, that I dare avow, you have no advantage of me, nor can your sorrow exceed mine.

But seeing our griefe can doe us but little good, and that it is to no end to weepe, and take on for that, which cannot now be holpen; My advice is, that you would consult what is to be done in this case; and if I may perswade, I would have all diligence used for the finding out of that Traytor which hath done this villanous Act, to the end that vengeance and full revenge may be taken of him, which was never yet executed upon any other. This taske you shall put upon me, I will take this charge to my selfe, and doubt not, but by one meanes or other I shall come to finde it out. Goe you, and call the Surgeon: For it is not fit, where so many things are to be done, we should be all busied about one and the same thing, especially, that which belongs to my charge, being a businesse, which will require much labour. Let every man take his Qu, and perfect his owne part. Follow you yours, and I will follow mine; and so farewell; for I have not the patience to deferre it any longer. And so they parted.

Now Dorido had a strong beliefe, and did confidently assure himselfe, that Horatio, and none but Horatio, could be the author of so great wickednesse and falsehood, induced there-unto by those many reasons, which did concurre to confirme this perswasion, the least whereof was a manifest token, and apparant evidence, that it was onely his Act, and none but his. Whereupon he resolved with himselfe, to inflict such a punishment upon him, as should be equall to that his just disdaine, and answerable to the heinousnesse of his offence.

With this determination he went home to his owne house; and being entred into his lodging, shutting the doore to him, he let loose the reines to his teares, grievously lamenting this sad mischance that had thus unhappily befalne his Mistris.

O Clorinia (said he) the delight of my eyes, and the joy of my heart, I see what harme thou hast suffered for my

sake; I (unfortunate I) was the cause thereof. It was that Traytor Horatio, that thus deceiv'd thee, whom thou supposedst to have been beloved Dorido.

O unhappy Mistris of my life, I have brought thee to this miserable passe, it is I that have kill'd thee, and no body else; for it was I that did disturbe thee of thy rest; it was I, that drew thee out from thy retyred and reserved course of life. O accursed chinke! O accursed eyes, that ever yee peep't thereinto! O accursed tongue, that madest the motion, that we should there meet, and talke together. O my deare Clorinia, Clorinia, my life; yet not my life, but my death: since that mine must follow thine: I was the cause of all this ill. Yet will I spare my selfe so much life, as to live to revenge this notorious wrong; and live thou too, Clorinia, till thou see the vengeance that shal be done upon this Traytor, which shall be as exemplary, as just: that it may remaine as a memoriall to all succeeding Ages.

And I heere solemnely vow to sacrifice to thy sacred and innocent ashes, the impious bloud of this vile Traytor Horatio. For that one hand, which he hath taken from thee, I will give thee two of his. Hee cut off one, that was innocent and harmelesse, and I will cut off two, that were wicked and sacrilegious. Let Heaven lengthen thy life so long, till I effect this my purpose, and suffer thee to enjoy that recompense, which I doe owe unto thy love.

And thou (sweet Clorinia) pardon so much of the fault, as was in me. And if my death will doe you any pleasure, or that it stand with your liking, mine owne hands ere this, should have made way there-unto, and laid it downe at your feet.

With these and other pittifull complaints, did he bewaile this heavy accident, worthy of eternall teares; and surely sorrow would there and then have made an end of him, so extremely had it seazed upon him, and with that violence of passion, if his afflicted soule had not beene under-propt with the desire of revenge; and thus betweene death and life did hee spend that night.

The next day following he went to visit Clorinia ; whither when he was come, her Parents, and her Brother began afresh to renew their teares, imbracing and weeping one over another, till at last the father of Clorinia began, as well as his griefe would give him leave, to say ; O sonne Dorido, what misfortune can be so great, so miserable as ours ? What rigour of the heav'ns hath conspired against us ? What infernall fury ever invented the like mischiefe ? What thinkest thou of this sad chance ? What deem'st thou of our honour ? What cloake will cover so foule a spot ? And what revenge may mitigate so great a wrong as this ? and give satisfaction answerable to these our sorrows ? Tell us (I pray) what comfort can we looke for ? Or how can we live without her, who hath given us life ? Dorido, not being able to abstaine from teares, comforting her afflicted Parents, and Brother, told them : Wee are not now to spend the time in teares and lamentations, but in that which may import us most.

And albeit, that which I am willing to propose, ought rather to proceed from any body else, then my selfe, yet the occasion, and the secresie wherewith it is fit it should be carried, obligeth me there-unto :

You all know very well, and have seene to your griefes, the generall misfortune that hath befalne us all ; being as well yours, as mine ; and rather mine, then yours, for that your sorrow is joyned unto mine ; which addition makes but the heape of mine owne the bigger. Besides, I see the thred of my life cut off before my face, that now I expect a death as bitter, as I thought it would have beene pleasant unto me, if it had made an end of me, before Clorinia. Ye are not ignorant what I am ; and I likewise know your great worth and quality ; which if it shall not over-sway mine, it is the singular love and friendship ye have borne me, that must equall the scales, laying an everlasting obligation upon me to deserve the same. This case then I make to be mine owne ; I challenge it as a thing proper unto me.

And that the world may so understand it, and so take it,

that which here-after I shal intreat you for by a third person, I will now demand of you by way of grace and request: Which is; That you will be pleased to give me Clorinia to wife. Wherein ye shall doe these two things: First, ye shall thereby recover your honour. Secondly, ye shall execute your revenge by this hand of mine. If heaven shall be so propitious and favourable unto me to blesse me with her life, she shall live and remaine with me, though not according as her worth deserveth, yet answerable to that desire which I have to serve her; making that up in my love, which is wanting in my meanes. And if ought succeed hereafter in the righting of this wrong, it is fit the world should take notice, that her husband did that where-unto he was obliged; and not Dorido, her parents friend. Make good therefore this my request, for the good which from thence may redound to us all.

To the Parents, as also to the Brother, this did seeme to be a very just and honest motion, and gave him many thankes for this true testimony of his love, both to them, and their house. But because there was one as yet un-askt, which was to be a principall party in this busines, which was Clorinia, they would see if they could draw her to consent there-unto. Which when it was broken unto her, the teares gushed out of her eyes for very joy, and she said unto them:

That is that alone, which I hope, will keepe life in me: and if I should buy it at as deare a rate, as death, yet I should thinke it cheape inough, and that I had a good penny-worth of my bargaine. I trust in God that I shall live contentedly, and dye comfortably. And therefore, I beseech you, that I may bee espoused to Dorido, according as he hath desired. Presently here-upon they call'd him in, and (when they came to see each other) for a good while, they were neither of them able to speake a word, both their hearts were so full, and their soules so overwhelmed; hers with joy, and his with griefe.

That fit over-past, they plighted their trothes, and were made man and wife, using those diligencies therein with the best secresie they could, till the time should come, that they might be openly espoused in the Church.

Three dayes were spent in this Solemnity, and with this content Clorinia seemed to be upon the mending hand. But it was but a lightening before death: for through the store of bloud which she lost, she liv'd not long after. Dorido perceiving, that it was impossible that his Spouse should escape with life, to the end that she might die fully contented and satisfied, (if there may be any such thing in death:) on the fourth day, holding it now a fit and convenient time, to put that in execution which he had devised and plotted with himselfe, on the fifth he invited Horatio to his house, as he had done at other times heretofore. Who trusting in the secresie wherewith he had committed this foule offence, and that there was no talke thereof in the Towne, nor so much as a word spoken of it, went thither as securely and as boldly, as if he had done no such matter, and without any suspition or jealousie at all.

Dorido, to lull him the more asleepe, and to make him more secure, feigned not to know of any such thing, he entertain'd him with a cheerefull looke, laught, and was merry with him, that growing thereby the more confident, he might the willinger accept of his invitation. Dorido had put such a kinde of Confection into one of his Bottles of Wine, that it should cast him that drunke thereof, into a most deepe and profound sleepe. Which he secretly commanded he should be served withall at the table, as oft as he call'd for any Wine. And as he had commanded, so was it ordred. And when he had even now dined, the last morsell being scarce out of his mouth, he sate me in his Chayre like one that had beene dead.

Dorido, when he saw he was sure enough now in his hands, and that the Fowle could not escape the snare, binding his legges and armes as hard as he could for his life, to the legges and armes of the Chayre, and having

made fast all the doores of his house, he put to his nose a kinde of little round ball (like a Pomander) made for that purpose, which he had no sooner smelt unto, and taken the sent thereof up into his head, but that he presently awaked from that deepe sleepe, wherein hee had before beene buryed. And finding himselfe bound in that fast manner, without being able to wag, he knew then that his punishment was at hand, for that hand which he had so cruelly cut off. Dorido was as quicke in cutting off both his hands, as he was nimble in un-joynting that of hers. That done, throwing a cord about his necke, making use of one of the corners of the Chayre, he gave him the Garrote, wherewith he was strangled to death. The next morning, before it was peepe of day, he drove him along before him in the Chayre upon a Horse, till he came to the house, where Clorinia dwelt, and putting a piece of Timber Gibbet-wise, into that hole in the Wall, where he had committed this odious and un-manly act, he left him there hanging with his hands ty'd about his necke in a string, (like a childes payre of Mittens,) and some Verses hanging at his Hempen chayne, to give satisfaction to the world, upon what reason this was done. And so Dorido, when he had thus revenged himselfe upon Horatio, left Rome, with purpose never to see it againe; thinking with himselfe, that without his Clorinia, neither Countrie, nor life, nor any thing else could be comfortable unto him. And about the breake of day, when this spectacle began to be seene, and talkt of, Clorinia within a little after finished her life.

This lamentable Accident caused great both sorrow and admiration in the Embassadour. But his houre was come, that he must to the Palace, which made them breake off for that present, and to take their leaves. I thanke God a thousand times, that he made me not a Lover: And if I had not beene a Gamester, peradventure I should have done worse, as you shall see in the second part of my life, whereunto (if my first have pleas'd thee) I invite thee.

DE ALFARACHE

The Verses, which were hung about Horatios necke, turned into our vulgar tongue, sound thus : CHAPTER X

I was rash Hee ; blinded with jealous love,
Seeing my friend, preferr'd in my Loves choyse,
(Counterfeiting his Signall, cloathes and voyce)
Whom deepe Disdaine did to foule Hatred move.

To Heav'n and Men, I cruell Traytor grew ;
Faire Clorinia (with innocence bedeckt)
I wrong'd, (urg'd by my Love, and her Neglect.)
Whose Storie, may all eyes with teares bedew.

Her Hand and Life (that I on her might wrecke
Revenge) I did cut off : Cause of her end,
Her Hate to mee, and Love unto my friend,
Hee hung these hands of mine about my neeke.

Was Party, Witnesse, and Judge : Whose sentence
Was too small a punishment for my Offence.

THE ROGUE
OR THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE

The First Booke

Wherein, he recounteth what befell him, from the time that he served his Master the Lord Embassadour, till hee left Rome

CHAPTER I

Guzman de Alfarache excuseth the processe of his discourse, craveth attention, gives notice of his intent; sheweth, that Lying, of all other things is the worst. He treats of the ill government of Great men; Of Courtiers, and their Vices. Of the Spaniards love to Radishes. Of the order and end of this Worke

OME, let us away. Thou hast now bayted and refresht thy selfe in thy Inne; Come, I say: Arise, and let us be gone, if thou beest willing to have my Company, and that I should doe thee service in this journey; though there is another journey that I must goe through with, for whose happy end I goe travelling through these stony and desart places. Company makes the way lesse tedious

Through these craggy Rocks, and uneven wayes, beset

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

THE FIRST BOOKE

with Bushes and Bryers, I doubt not but I shall make this journey seeme easie unto thee, with that assured promise which I shall be able to make unto thee, of bringing thee safe to the end of thy desire.

The Author goes excusing himselfe

Pardon my bold proceeding, and taxe me not of incivilitie, that I treat with thee in this manner; I confesse that I faile in that respect, which is due unto such a one as thou art.

But consider, I pray, that what I say, it is not spoken to thee, but that thou should'st reprehend others, who perhaps have as much need of reproofe as my selfe.

I goe talking at randome, (like those that play at blind-man-buffe) and thou maist very well tell me, that my tongue runnes ryot, and that I talke like a foole, or a mad-man, because I shoot my bolts without feare or wit, and un advisedly throw the stone out of my hand, not knowing where it may light, or the harme it may doe.

But I shall answer this, with that which a foole once said, that fell a throwing of stones, who as oft as he threw, would cry out aloud, saying, Take heed, take heed, my Masters, for it cannot fall amisse; where-ever it light, it must needs hit right. So I likewise tell thee, *Que como tengo las hechas, tengo sospechas.* That if I have sate upon any bodies skirts, or shall chance to sit closer unto them, I have reason to suspect, that they will pay me home if they can. For he that reprehends other mens faults, cannot but live in feare of being told his owne.[1]

Proverb

I imagine with my selfe, that all men are just such as I am; weake, facill, and full of naturall passions; nay, sometimes strange and extravagant humours. But it were a thousand pities, that all Sacks should be alike.[2] But being bad my selfe, I thinke no man good: such is my wretched condition, and of as many as beare the same minde. I convert Violets into poyson; throw durt upon Snow; and in my thought, trample the fresh and fragrant Rose under my feete. It might in some sort have beene

Proverb

[1] *Chi reprende l'altrui diffeto, vive con sospetto.*
[2] *Mal seria, si todos los Costales fuessen tales.*

happy for mee, that I had stayd when I was well, and had not gone on with this my discourse. CHAPTER I

I know, that albeit I have beene troublesome unto thee, thou wilt hold me excused, and therefore I shall not need to crave thy pardon, and to begge thy good word and attention; the purchasing whereof, is that which I principally pretend: And albeit many, and peradventure all those that have tasted of the Apple, will deeme it to be impertinent and superfluous.

But mee thinkes it is not possible that it should bee so. For albeit I should be as bad as thou wouldst make me to be, or that I were such an arrant Asse and Coxe-combe, as you forsooth in your Idea would forme me to be; yet cannot I perswade my selfe, that thou hadst set thy figure right, or that thy judgement were truely grounded. For no man thinkes himselfe to be the same man, that other men would make him to be; nor judges himselfe by anothers opinion. I thinke of my selfe, as thou thinkest of thy selfe. Every man holds his owne fashion the best; his owne life, the uprightest; his owne cause, the justest; his owne honour, the greatest; and his owne conceits, those that hit rightest. I tooke counsell of my pillow, it seeming unto mee (which indeed is true) that a prudent consideration doth evermore beget happy events; and that too much haste is the mother of various and unfortunate issues; whose Handmaid is repentance. For doe you graunt but one absurditie, and a thousand will follow upon it. And therefore, that the ends may not erre, (as too too usually it hapneth,) it is fit, that wee make a faithfull examination of the principles;[1] which being found out, and well chosen, they affoord us that helpe, that wee may boldly say, that the better halfe of the worke is already finished, reaching forth such a resplendour and fulnesse of light unto us, that afarre off, by naturall signes and tokens, they discover those things unto us, which are likely to happen hereafter.

And howbeit in themselves, they are in substance small,

[1] *Principia prius quærenda.*

yet in their vertue and operation, they are great, and are in a disposition to matters of much importance.

And therefore, when we will experiment them, we must propose all the difficulties, examining them with all diligence, seeking to draw all the good out of them that we can, and the soundest counsell; but when we are once resolved that they are actions of Prudence, and so generally taken and esteemed, they ought in all mens judgements to be bravely followed, and put in execution: And by so much the more, by how much the more noble shall that enterprize be, which we pretend to undertake.

To begin things, and not to goe thorow with them, argues lightnesse

And it is an imperfection, and a notable note of lightnesse, to enterprize those things, which we cannot effect, especially if they be not crost by some sudden and unexpected accident, or some great impediment or other; for in their end, consisteth our glory.

My purpose only was (as I told thee before) to benefit thee, and to teach thee the way, how thou mightest with a great deale of content and safetie, passe thorow the gulph of that dangerous sea wherein thou saylest. The blowes I shall receive, thou the good counsels; The hunger is mine, but the industry must be thine, that thou mayst not suffer hunger. I indure those affronts, from whence thy honour rises. And since thou hast heard it said, *Que a que se te hizo rico, que te hizo el pico.* That is, that he that made thee rich, made thee likewise to open thy beake, thou that mightest be ready to receive a blessing.

Proverb

How a good son in Law ought to carry himselfe towards his father in Law

And therefore thou must strive to imitate that discreet sonne in Law, who knowes by the sweetnesse of his behaviour and courteous carriage, how to gaine the good will of his hard-laced father in Law, and to draw him gently along, to pay his house-rent, to bestow upon him his dyet, and his lodging, to put money in his Purse, and for an up-shot, a faire wife in his bed; And these are those father in Lawes which (like slaves, and common jesters) breed, serve, and entertaine their children.

I am now imbark't, I have set foot a Ship-boord, and I cannot goe backe. The Dice are throwne; my promise

is past, and I cannot recall it. I have begun, and I must goe on. The Subject is meane and base; the beginning small; But that which I intend to treat of, if like the Oxe, thou wilt ruminate thereupon, and chew the Cud, suffring it to passe from thy stomacke to thy mouth, it may prove important, grave, and great. I will doe all that I can to satisfie thy desire; knowing, that I should have rather given thee trouble, then content, in unfolding one part of my life, and hyding the other from thee.

I perswade my selfe, that many will, or have already said it; Better had it beene, that God had never given it thee, and by consequence, that thou hadst never spoke of it; for being notoriously bad and wicked, it had beene better for thy selfe to have smothered it; and for others, that they had not knowne it. Thou art farre wide of the truth; thou hast no good ground for that thou say'st: much lesse therefore can I be perswaded, that thou meanest well, or that thy drift herein is so faire and honest, as thou wouldst seeme to make shew of; But I am rather afraid, and doe shrewdly suspect, that because they touch thee to the quicke, the very wagging of the rod doth (though it ne're come neere thee) much affright thee; thine owne guiltines makes thee to shrinke; and it is the gall'd backe, that makes the Horse winse, before the Saddle touch him.

There is no *Disciplinante*[1] that whips himselfe in the holy weeke, that doth at any time complaine of his owne lashing, nor doth halfe so much feele the smart of those stripes which he gives himselfe, as he doth the paine and anguish of anothers hand, when he comes to dresse and cure his wounds.

[1] Mens whipping of themselves, is us'd by religious persons, for to mortifie the flesh, and in remembrance of those stripes, which our Saviour suffered for us. There are some that lash themselves meerely out of Ostentation. These are fooles, and as abominable as Baals Priests. The Prelates of the Church, and other secular Magistrates should take order to debarre those to goe in Procession, that use it so profanely, and to punish them severely, for those their notorious excesses, which I am asham'd to speake of. In Germany, there was a Sect of Heretikes, called Flagellantes, that were notable Villaines, and Drunkards, and condemned for such. *Vide* Covarruvias, Verb. *Diciplinarse.*

I either tell thee truthes or lyes. Not lyes. Would to God they were lyes. For I know, that out of thine owne naturall inclination, thou wouldst bee well content to heare them; nay, to play, and champe upon that bitt, it would make thee carry a white mouth, pleasing thy selfe with the fome and froth of untruthes. But I deliver truths unto thee; and these are as bitter Pills unto thy Palate. Thou findest fault with them, because they lay open thy faults. Only displeased, because they please thee not. If thou finde thy selfe sound and in health, and thy neighbour sicke and weake; if the Lightning shall light upon another mans house, and thine owne scape the flame, thou wouldst the better beare it, so as thou be left untoucht, no morsell is unsavory to thy mouth, all is Phesant and Partridge, and I shall be well received, and kindely entertained by thee. But that thou mayest not (like the Eele) slip out of my hands, I will seeke out some Fig-leaves against these your slippery tricks, I will hold you fast while I have you; you shall not for this once, so easily (as you thinke) escape my hands.

Lyes have ever the best attention

I tell thee, (if thou art willing to heare me, if thou wilt not, thou mayst choose) that this generall confession that I make; this publike opening of my Packe, laying before thee all my Knacks, and my Trinkets; I doe not therefore shew these things unto thee, that thou shouldst either imitate me, or my evill actions; but rather, that (when thou shalt come to know them) thou mayst learne thereby to correct thine owne. If thou seest me falne, because I was wilfull, and would not be ordred; looke thou so well to thy steps, that thou mayst hate and avoyd those occasions, that wrought my fall. Set not thy foot, where thou hast seene me slip before thee; but let my trippings and my stumblings, serve as so many markes to make thee more wary. For thou art a man, mortall as I am, and peradventure neither stronger, nor wiser then my selfe.

Take the good, and leave the bad

Looke well into thy selfe; runne over very leisurely and carefully, the house of thy Soule, and see if thou have not made there, even in the greater and better part of it,

Look well into thy selfe, and let others alone

Dung-hils of filth, and all manner of beastlinesse ; and doe not sift and prie so narrowly into thy neighbours, to see if thou canst finde but the feather of some bird at the foot of the Stayres, whereat thou mayst picke a quarrell. CHAPTER I

But heere I know thou wilt tell me, that I preach unto thee, and that hee is a foole, that will seeke his cure, from a sicke Physician. And that hee that cannot helpe himselfe, can hardly give health to others.[1]

What wholesome Medicine, or good Cordiall, can a man have from a Vipers tooth, or the sting of a Scorpion ? How shall he, that is ill himselfe, advise another not to be ill ? I doe not denie, that I am such a one as thou sayst : But that will befall me with thee, which betideth some nimble and cunning Carver at his Lords table, who curiously cutteth up the Brawne, the wing, or the legge of some dainty Fowle, and having respect to the qualitie of the Guests, whom he is to serve, gives every man his severall Plate, studying to please and content them all ; They all eate, all rest satisfied and well contented, whilest he himselfe goes away both weary and hungry.

At mine owne cost and paines, I discover shelfes, quicksands, and dangerous rockes unto thee, to the end that thou mayst not fall upon them, and dash thy selfe in pieces against them, or runne thy selfe on ground, where there is never any hope of comming off.

Your Arsenicke is not altogether unprofitable, but that it will serve for some good use or other ; it is worth money, and it is sold in Apothecaries shops. And though it be bad to eate, as it may be applyed, it will prove good. In a word, with it those Wormes and Vermine are poysoned, which bring hurt and prejudice to mans body.

The hurt which ill government, causes in great mens houses

My example might serve as Treacle to a Common-wealth, if these fierce beasts that governe it were poysoned, not excusing house-keepers, though never so much in apparance, seeming familiar and friendly unto us, as being one of the worst qualities that they have. For, figuring forth our selves unto them, to be men of flesh and bloud,

[1] *Medice, cura teipsum.*

Tricks of Courtship

kinde-hearted, and subject unto passions, wee deposit our secrets in their bosomes, and trust them with all that we have, as relying on their faith and their love, and they cunningly shed feigned teares in a seeming commiseration of our miseries, when in the meane while not-withstanding, they rend our flesh, and teare our very sinewes from the bone with their tyrannies, injuries, and violencies.

O that it were in my power to consume and destroy another sort of cruell beastes, as those that looke bigge, and grow proud of their ease and plenty, goe vaunting and boasting of their valour, tearing up the stones in the streets, world-wandrers, Vagabonds from Countrie to Countrie, from Parish to Parish, and from house to house, making them-selves skimmers of other mens pottes, being no way of any profit, or serving for any other use, then the Porters in the *Alhondiga* of Sevilla,[1] to lay in one burthen, and to take out another; venting lyes in one place, and taking them up in another, carrying newes to and fro, reporting those things, that he ought to have silenced, being trusted therewith, and will'd to be secret, uttering them in prejudice of the person to whom he revealeth them, who cannot but take it ill; maliciously causing differences, and relating things worse then they were meant; bearers of false witnesse, raysers of dissension, robbers of mens honours, defaming the good, persecuting the just, stripping men of their wealth, and murthering and martyrizing the innocent. It were a pleasing sight to see all such perish, and to be made a publike spectacle to the world. Nor is there in all Bruxels any such goodly hangings, that doe either so much adorne, or halfe so well become any Noble mans house, as these would the Common-wealth, if they were hung up one after another by the Common Hang-man.

For, it is very fit, that there should be *Pœna* and *præmium*; A punishment and a reward. For if all were good and

[1] *Alhondiga* is a house appointed for Country people, to bring their corne into the Citie, and there to lay it up. It signifieth also a Ware-house for merchandize, where some bring in, and some carry out. *Vide* Covarruvias, pag. 48.

honest, Lawes had beene superfluous and impertinent. And if all men should have beene wise, Writers had beene fooles. Phisicke was made for the sicke; Honours for the vertuous; and the Gallowes for lewd livers. And because I likewise know, that Vice is so powerfull, for that it rises out of a desire of libertie, without acknowledgement of any Superiour either humane or divine, I am much afraid, that these my written labours, and my many indured misfortunes, will not be of force to bridle thy unruly appetites, and to bring forth that good fruit which I could wish; Holding that paines vaine and fruitlesse, which is undertaken upon any respect whatsoever, if it doth not in that it pretendeth, obtaine it's desired end. But because that the Rhethorician doth not alwaies perswade; nor the Physician cure; nor the Pilot arrive safely at his Port; I must together with them comfort my selfe, in that I have performed my dutie, by giving thee good counsell, and by affording thee light, being therein like the Flint, which being strooken, gives fire to others, to bee kindled in this or that place, though it selfe remaine without: In like manner, the lewd liver loseth his life, receiveth punishment, and indureth affronts, making himselfe an example to all those that shall looke upon him.

CHAPTER I

Lawes were made for the wicked

When a mans labour is lost

But here I will betake me to that way, which presents it selfe unto mee in this place; Imitating therein your rude Clownes, as also your nice Courtiers, who passing along by the *Roperia* [1] (which is a publike place where all sorts of cloathes are to bee sold;) if by chance they lift up their eyes, and looke upon them, those Merchants that sell these commodities, (like your Birchen-Lane men) fall presently a balling and plying of them; one drawes him this way, another that, and keepe such a calling, and such a tugging of them, that they know not well which way to turne or winde themselves, they are so distracted by them.

For they having an opinion (if not a thorow perswasion) that they doe all deceive, all coozen, and lye, they goe warily to worke, when they buy any wares of them; and

The knavery of some Trades-men

[1] *Roperia*, i.e. *Locus Vestimentarius.*

THE FIRST BOOKE

I well wot the cause why, which I need not to tell you, because that which they sell, will speake it out alowd, without any other bodies helpe.

Receivers of stoln goods

Well, let us now give them way, and suffer them to passe by, if for no other reason, at least for those favours and courtesies which I have had from them, in the buying of things that were never bought, giving me good money for that which I brought, and sold unto them; and for teaching mee from over-night against the next morning, how to make Cassocks of Cloakes, selling them the shreds for to foot Stockins, and to make soles to keepe the feet warme, and free from wet.

The case of a carelesse traveller

Or shall I here tell thee, that the same is like to befall me, which usually happens to the carelesse traveller; who not knowing the way, goes from home, never inquiring how he may hit it, which hand to take, or what turnings to make; so that when hee hath gone some halfe league on his journey, he chanceth to come to the foot of a Crosse, where he meetes with three or foure severall wayes; and straining himselfe upon his stirrops, writhing his body, he turnes his head about, to see if he can espy any body, that is able to direct him in his way?

But seeing none there at hand, he fals to a Cosmographicall consideration with himselfe, choosing either this, or that, which shall seeme likeliest unto him, to leade directly towards that place, whither hee intended his journey.

I see heere present before me so many divers dispositions, and such various and sundry sorts of tasks, all of them hanging about mee, every one striving to hale and pull mee as it were by force, to come into their shop. But God he knowes, why, and wherefore they doe it.

The divers gusts and palates of men

One would have sweet and pleasant things; another, those that are tart and sowre; this man will have his Olives fryde; that will no salt, no not with an Egge.

And if one man have a minde to eate the legge of a Larke [1] rosted in the snuffe of a Candle, another would not be

[1] The Spanish word, is *pie de la perdis*, but the other fits better with our phrase of speach.

wanting, who shall make no bones to tell thee, that of all the pulse and rootes that God made, there was never any yet that could compare and come neere to the Radish for goodnesse. CHAPTER I

The truth whereof was to bee seene in a certaine Papelisticall [1] Minister, a kinde of Officer (as I may so tearme him) betwixt a Clerke and a Scrivener that is conversant in Paper-businesses; a fellow wonderfull ill belov'd, a notorious lyer, and above all, extremely covetous; who removing from one house to another, after that he had carried his houshold-stuffe, and other old moveables belonging there-unto, he stayd there behinde alone by himselfe, searching and prying very diligently into every nooke and corner thereof, rifling and ransaking it from the floore to the roofe, not so much as leaving a nayle to the walles, for to hang a Hat on, or the like necessary use. A short tale of a covetous Spaniard

At last, it was his hap to come into the Kitchen, where hee lighted upon an odde hole in the chimney, wherein were three or foure Radishes, which had lyen there a long time, being dry, tough, withered, and good for nothing. These hee charily tyes up in one bunch, and very carefully brings them home to his Wife, and with a Black-Smithes face, looking frowningly upon her, he said unto her; Is this your good hous-wifery, this your care of my house and goods, to let things runne to spoyle? Is money so easily come by (thinke you) that you make no more reckning of saving a penny? But as you brought me nothing in Dowry, so you care not (it seemes) which end goes forward; sinke, or swimme, all's one to you. See you this waste of yours? Looke I pray upon these Radishes, they cost money I can tell you. You have done well, have you not, to looke no better unto them? Keepe them I pray against I call for them. I thinke there is not a more wastefull woman in the world; but I am the worse of the two, and may thanke my selfe, that I would be such an unthrift as to bring a whole bunch into the house at once, when as fewer would have serv'd the turne.

[1] *Papelistas; Los que son dados à entender en papeles.* Covarruvias.

His wife laid them up safe, as he had willed her, and that very night (that they might not fall out any more about them) the crafty Hileding, very demurely and with a sober countenance, without any the least shew of choller, or dislike, sets them downe before him, when hee was sitting downe to supper, who falling earnestly unto them, spake to his Wife, and said :

Now in troth (Wench) I sweare unto thee, there is no meat in the world can rellish better, or hath halfe so good a savour and taste with it, as an old Radish. I protest unto thee, I like them better a thousand times, being thus lyther, and withered as you see, then when they are fresh and cripsie. I prethee Wife prove one of them, and then tell me if it bee not as I say.

The Spaniard generally carries a great command over his Wife

The poore woman had as little fancie to make tryall thereof, as shee had faith to beleeve it ; but my Spaniard (carrying as they doe all a kinde of high hand over their wives) forcing her in a manner there-unto, by his sterne both lookes and words, made her to eate one sore against her will, and much against her stomake.

The capriccious humours of some extravagant persons

There are a certaine kinde of men, which are not contented onely to commend that, which they themselves like, (be it what it will) but they will (and are angry and offended if it bee otherwise) that others doe the same, pressing them, as it were, to follow their humour, and contrarie to their owne will, seeme to approve it, at least not sticke to praise it.

And there are likewise another sort of people, which discommend other mens tastes ; not considering, that *de gustibus non est disputandum*, for that they are divers and various, as are the conditions and countenances of men.

For though peradventure two may bee found, that may resemble one another, yet it is impossible that they should be so like, that you may not perceive some difference. And therefore I must be driven to doe that heere, which was my hap once to doe at a Comedy ; where, for that I was one of the first, it was my fortune to be one of the formost before the Stage.

Writers, whereunto they are likened

Now those that came after, being nothing so well fitted,

spake unto me, that I would leane a little on t'one side. I did so; but in this my moving some-what aside, others thought much of it, complaining that I hindred their sight; for whom likewise to give them content, I was forced to shift a foote. So that, both the one and the other, made me to stand where they would have me. For they were all willing to see. Insomuch, that not knowing how to accommodate my selfe for pleasuring of them, I put on Merchants eares, not vouchsafing to give them the hearing: and standing stiffely on my right legge, gave them leave to shift for themselves, to heare, and see, as well as they could. CHAPTER I. Proverb

The Melancholly man, the Sanguine, the Cholericke, the Flegmaticke, the Civill, the Swaggerer, the Rhetorician, the Philosopher, the Religious, the Reprobate, the Courtier, the Clowne, the rude, the Discreet, nay, even my Lady Ninny-hammer would that I should onely write for her pleasure, words finely pleyted, and curiously folded, and that I should apply my selfe to her conceit, and conforme my selfe according to her stile, making her Mistresse both of my pate and Pen. No writer can please all

It is not possible for me to second so many humours, and to satisfie such different desires: For then had I need (besides the making for every particular man his severall Booke,) to live so many mens lives, as there are sundry opinions.

I have liv'd but one onely; and that which they would falsely intitle mee withall, is a testimonie against some, of the great wrong they have done me therein. The Author approveth this to be his true Second Part

My true life, I shall onely set it downe my selfe. I will goe prosecuting of that, though they goe persecuting of me. For there will not another Gill [1] be wanting for the third Part, to come forth against mee, as in the Second; and charge me with that, which I never either did, said, or thought.

That, which I intreat at thy hands, is; That thou wilt neither feare mee so much, nor be angry with me in so high

[1] *Nunca falta un Gil, que nos persigua. Dando à entender, que aunque desista un emulo no falta otro que se substituya en su lugar.* Proverb.

THE FIRST BOOKE

a measure, that (I know not out of what humour) thou should'st wish me hang'd; for I finde not my selfe fit for it at this time, neither indeed doe I deserve it. Suffer mee therefore to live, since it hath pleased God to give mee life, that I might correct my errours; and time, that I may amend my faults.

No sooner one corrivall gone, but another comes in his place. The Authors end and purpose

For my punishments, and my mis-fortunes, if thou wilt truely informe thy selfe of them, will serve thee in stead of a Looking-glasse, whereby thou may'st see how to linke a little better together the past, and the present, with that which is to come in the third Part; to the end, that thou making it all one continued piece of worke, weaving it well and handsomely, running along in even threds, thou maist the better (which is no more then becomes thee) be instructed in the truth of things.

And this is that marke, whereat I have aymed, and the white, which I seeke to hit. Nor am I dainty in discovering my conceits, to those that will bee pleased to save mee this labour: yet, let it bee so carried, that they may boast them of that's their owne. For I hold it as a thing undecent, and unseemely, for a man to deny his owne name, and to put forth his workes under that of another, which hath, and shall upon the like occasion, oblige mee at any time, to write so much againe as this, that I may not bee taken for a Foole, by taking upon mee other mens over-sights. But let this rest, lest I might seeme to some, to speake more out of passion, then reason; though the judicious (I am perswaded) will excuse this my just complaint, and not thinke it in this place to be impertinent to the purpose.

Of the order and end of this Booke: And whereunto it is likened

But to returne againe into the way, whence we have stept a little aside, I say; That I would have every man to make choyse of his owne Plate, and to fall to that dish (amongst those many, that we shall serve into this boord) which hee hath most minde unto; Leaving that unto others, which shall not please his palate, or not agree with his stomake. Nor would I have my guests to thinke, that this booke of mine should bee like unto Heliogabalus his banquet, whose boord was furnished with many and sundry

sorts of meates, yet all of them only serving for the food and sustenance of man, whether they were Peacocks, Chickens, Phesants, wild Boare, Fish, Milke, Sallets, or Conserves, it was one onely kinde of Vyand, but like Manna, differenced by mens severall tasts; howbeit those of Manna, were as every man would have them to rellish as himselfe desired; but these other, according as the Cooke was willing to season them, seeking therein to please the filthy luxurious throat of his Master. With varietie, nature is adorned; this is that, that beautifies the Fields, to see heere Hils, there Vallies; in this place Brookes and Rivers; in that Fountaines sprinkling and sparkling forth their pearled drops.

Let not men be so covetously minded, as to desire to have all to themselves. I have seene the bestowing of many Liveries in my life-time, and the little Page, (I have perceived) was as well contented with his, though it were not so full of Silke, as the tallest man, that had twice as much as he, in regard of the largenesse of his stature. I am resolved to follow that path, that shall seeme best unto me, for the more direct bringing of me to the end of my desire, and to that place, whereunto I intend my journey. And thou (my discreet Host) who stay'st looking for me, since thou doest so well understand and know the miseries, that he suffers and indures, who (like my selfe) goes travelling abroad to see the world; doe not looke scornefully upon me, when thou shalt meet with me in thine owne Countrie, and though I come to thy Gate like a Rogue, poore and pennilesse, dis-favoured by fortune, and forsaken of my friends, yet doe thou vouchsafe mee a cheerefull countenance, and give me that kinde entertainment, which thou owest unto thine owne worth. For my errand is only to thee, thee only doe I seeke after, and for thy sake have I undergone this journey, not for to put thee to any charge; nor with purpose to oblige thee to more then thy good will and affection, which thou naturally owest unto him, who offers thee his love: Which if I shall receive from thee, I shall rest fully satisfied, and remaine besides,

in requitall of thy good will, indebted unto thee in an infinite number of thankes.

But if they which take pleasure in hearing me talke, if they shall likewise be desirous to see me, let them beware, that doe not befall them, which is wont to happen to those that are over-curious, who watch and listen, to heare what is said of them; Which kinde of men doe alwayes *Male audire*, heare no great good spoken of them. For with the finest gold, is the bitterest Pill covered.[1] And often times, that moveth some to laughter, which indeed ought to draw teares from their eyes.

Proverb

Besides, if any man shall long to know the life that I lead, and the place where I live, he shall therein bewray his owne needlesse curiositie, and give me just cause to suspect the unjustnesse of his intent, and the little good love that he beares me.

Let him first apply himselfe to consider my state and condition, and the great miserie, whereunto my disorder brought me. Let such another as I am, be set before him, or let his owne imagination represent it unto him, and then shall he presently be able to goe discoursing with himselfe, what passe-time may be made with him, who doth passe his time (being a Prisoner and laden with Irons) with a *Renegador*, or some ruffianly blaspheming officer, that looks to the sure chaining of the slaves in the Gallies; unlesse happely he will take pleasure in my miseries, and make himselfe merry with them, as some doe with the Bull that is brought in the Market-place to be bayted, whose Dartes sticking in his sides, whose stroakes and wounds glad the beholders; though I for my part, hold it an inhumane act. And if thou shalt twit mee in the teeth, and tell me, that either I cause nauseousnesse in this my Discourse, or that I sell it unto thee at too deare a rate, seeking forsooth to be intreated, or that I straine too much courtsie, or that I am a little too coy, and too nice with you, making my selfe more daintie then needeth, or that by my indearings and flatteries, I should commend it for good unto thee; it

[1] *Con oro fino se cubre la pildora.*

would grieve me, that thou shouldst have that conceit of me. CHAPTER I

For albeit it be well knowne, that I alwayes serv'd my Lord Embassadour as a merry companion, and to make his Lordship laugh at my pleasant and witty conceits ; for I could then make him sport, when I knew not so much as I doe now ; and now that I know more, I can not doe it. For it is a thing that costs a man deare, and the times are not still alike.

But that thou mayst well understand what I say, and know what my jests and merriments were then, and what now shall be thought necessary in that kinde, hearken, I beseech you, with attention to that, which I shall deliver unto you in this insuing Chapter.

CHAPTER II

Guzman de Alfarache tels what place he serv'd in, in the house of his Lord Embassadour : And that Fooles and Jesters, are both fit and profitable for Princes : falling into a description of their conditions and qualities

FROM the great power, and little vertue now a-dayes in men, it so commeth to passe, that faithfull servants are not so much rewarded for their good services, and personall paines-taking, as for the sweet words, flowing from their vaine tongues ; For the one, they thinke to bee due unto them, out of their powerfulnesse and their greatnesse, and therefore are not pleased to accept it in good worth, or thankefully to esteeme and acknowledge it. And for the other, they afford them, (for their wits sake) many graces and favours ;

Why great men respect more a pleasant conceited fellow, then a faithfull and painfull servant

and because they want it themselves, they buy out this default with their money. It is great pitie, that these men should thinke, that Vertue should derogate from Noblenesse; and by their ill-conceived opinion of it, will not (as a thing abhorred by them) use and exercise the same.

Why great men study not vertue

And for that it is likewise to be purchased and gotten with a great deale of difficultie, and by hard and sharpe meanes, (things that are contrary to their sensualitie, and quite repugnant to their power and greatnesse) they are never without flatterers at their eares and elbowes, smoothing up vice, and stroaking their evil actions, with a soft and gentle hand.

This is that milke which they have sucked; these, those swathing-cloathes wherein they were wrapped; They made it their naturall Center by use, and by abuse it continueth still with them. Hence arise those superfluous and excessive expences, those profuse prodigalities, and those vaine magnificencies, which are soone payd, and quickly told out, (when the money is powred forth on the table) but with a great many sighes and teares, when they see how they have fool'd it away.

Why great Lords favour flatterers

It is a lamentable case to see, that a Noble-man should bestow a rich suite of cloathes upon a Foole and common Jester, and scarce give a cast hat to the vertuous to cover his head. But this is a reciprocall kinde of giving, a chop and change, that runnes currant among them. For they apparell their bodies with good cloathes, and these in requitall, cloath their mindes with toyes, and idle vanities: They throw many favours on those, who softly smooth their humours, with sweet and pleasing words, such as shall sound handsomely, and have their cadence and consonancie correspondent to their disposition.

But they buy this their pleasure at too deare a rate, and not unjustly neither, for that their praise passeth thorow the mouthes of such kinde of men, leaving the gate carelessly open, for the better sort to publish their vanities; they falsely conceiving, that that shall redound greatly

to their honour and praise, which in truth and in very deed they ought to esteeme as a reproch and shame unto them. Yet will I not therefore say; that great Princes should not have their Pastimes; it is fit, that they should have their entertainments and recreations; but withall, in their due place and season: For all things have their time and their reward. CHAPTER II

A witty Jester is sometimes as necessary, and as use-full as a wise Counsellour. Nor doe I thinke it meet, that their hands should be bound from giving, gratifying, and favouring of them; For money, (as I said before) *Nunca se goza, sino quando se gasta.* We never injoy it, but when we spend it. And it is never said to be spent, when it is well and wisely bestowed. For I my selfe (in punishment of my sinnes) have had experience of the one and the other; and can make this good unto you out of mine owne proper actions, the smart whereof I have since soundly felt. For, at that time as I serv'd my Lord Embassadour (as you have formerly understood) I was his Favourite, and as it were the apple of his eye; And I can assure thee, that any other corporall labour would have beene of lesse trouble unto me, and not have laine halfe so heavily upon my shoulders: For to utter pleasant conceits, witty jests, and to give a frumpe, or a flout with a grace, that it may take handsomely, there must many things concurre and jumpe well one with another.

Fooles and Jesters, are sometimes necessary. Proverb. **When money is well spent**

A Jester, a painfull kinde of Trader

Hereunto will be required a particular gift of nature, which shall give credit and grace thereunto, with a joynt conjuncture in the carriage of the countenance, shape, and motion of the body and eyes; So that the one may helpe the other, and every one by it selfe, have it's particular grace, that meeting all together, they may move the more.

For one selfe-same thing may be delivered by two different persons; The one after such a manner, that he will make thee unbutton thy doublet,[1] and be ready to burst with laughing. The other, with that ill grace, that thou wilt thinke the doore too farre off, and too narrow to get out

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Quitar el calçado, y desnudar la camisa.*

quickly, and be gone. And let such a one strive all that he can, to give his jestes that life, and that grace, that is fit and necessary for them, yet it is not possible (if they doe not well become him, and come cleanely and nimbly from him) that hee should hit the marke he aimes at.

Necessary things for a Jester

There will likewise be required a continuall reading, to know how, and when, and from what hee is to forme his Conceits. Hee hath likewise need of a strong and able memorie, for the keeping in minde of all those accidents that have, and doe daily happen abroad in the world, and the knowledge of all sorts of persons, that he may know how to apply and accommodate that which is to be said, with that, of whom it shall be said.

He must take a great deale of care in the inquiry of those things, that are most worthy the reproving of other mens lives, and most of all, in those that are most noble. For, neither making of faces, freenesse of tongue, gestures of the body, life and quicknesse of the eye, sundry sorts of *Matachines*, and mimicke actions, nor all the skill and wit in the world shall bee avaylable to move the minde of one that is vaine, if they be not seazoned with the Pepper and Salt of Murmuration.

Tart jests take best

That little touch of tartnesse, that corne of Salt, that drop of Vineger, is that which gives a good rellish, and a pleasant farewell to all the rest, be it never so simple, never so unsavorie. For what is otherwise, is accounted but a dull Picture, a course piece of worke, and the playne artifice of a poore wit.

Jests must not bee unseasonable

It will also much concerne him, to consider the opportunitie, and the time, when, and wherein he is to breake his jests. For, being delivered out of season, and not to the purpose, they utterly lose their grace. For men will not alwayes be willing to heare them, neither are they alwayes, and at all times to be vented; nor they themselves alwayes able to broach them. Aske but this question of him that hath the strongest and ablest wit amongst them; Take the best Jester of them all upon the sudden, and put him to exercise his jerkes of wit, and to play his

pleasant prankes, and you shall finde him frozen, and not able to open his mouth. CHAPTER II

This befell Sisneros, (a most famous Comedian) talking with Mançanos, (who was no lesse famous then himselfe, and both of Toledo) being a paire of wits, not to bee paralel'd in their time; to whom Sisneros said; Thou seest, Mançanos, that all the world doth take us for two of the pleasantest and happiest wits that this present Age affordeth. Sisneros, and Mançanos, Two famous fellowes for their quicke wits

Tell me, doest thou thinke, that upon this fame that goes of us, the King our Master will cause us to be sent for, and to come before him? But say it should so fall out: then let you and I come in together, and when wee have both done him that due reverence that becomes us, if we shall afterwards stand solemnely before him (having sent for us upon the opinion of our wits) it is a thousand to one, that the first question that he will aske us, will be this; Are you Mançanos and Cisneros? Then you shall make answere and say, Yea and it like your Majestie, for I will not speake a word. Then will hee (as it is very likely) say againe unto us; Come, let us heare some pleasant conceits come from you.

Now, I would faine know of thee, what we should doe in this case, and what answere we shall make him? Mançanos told him; Brother Cisneros, when it comes to that, (which God forbid) there is no other to bee made, but this; That they are not yet fryde. So that, neither to all, nor of all, nor at all times are they to be spoken, and when they are to be in request, they are not worth a figge, nor the least haire of thy head, unlesse they be nipping ones, and dipt in the sawce of Murmuration. And I held this to be one of my greatest unhappinesses, that like a setting dogge, I was driven to winde out other mens weakenesses.

But because this was the fifth element, without the which those other foure cannot well subsist: and that repugnancie and contrarietie doth conserve them; I was continually carefull in seeking out that, which to that office A Jester must apply himselfe to please others

which I now professed, was necessarily required, that I might still goe getting of ground, and accommodate other mens tastes to mine owne. For the better and more essentiall part is, to winne the good-will of those that heare him, that they may the more willingly commend that, which by him is eyther said, or done. So that, those indowments which Nature had deny'de me, I was forced to make good by tricks and devices, assuming to my selfe illicit licence of language, and using prejudiciall darings and boldnesse, which were much holpen by a particular kinde of vivacitie, livelinesse, and quicknesse both of wit and spirit that I had in mee, having (God hee knowes) no learning at all. For then I had no more knowledge but of a few languages, which I had learned in my Lord Cardinals house ; and those too were as yet but rawe in mee, in regard of my greene yeeres.

Consider therefore I pray with mee (which you may easily gather out of that I have told you) what I might have in me, and what was wanting unto me, being not left to mine owne liberty, and living in necessitie.

In those my yonger dayes, and in that Spring-time (as I may so tearme it) of my flourishing yeeres, all went currantly with mee ; all that I did, became me well, and to all did I fit and apply my selfe.

Guzman, the onely man with his Master

For these, and other the like things annexed there-unto, I was alwayes well clad, much made of, I was the Favorite, the familiar friend, the Master of my Master, as also of all those that were interessed in his friendship.

I was the principall doore, whereby they entred into his grace and favour, and onely I the Lord of his Will. I kept the golden key of his secrets. Hee had sold his libertie unto me, and I was bound to looke well unto it, and to take care thereof, not onely out of that, but even for charities sake, and the respect I owe to the Law of Nature, as also for the particular love, that hee bare to mee, and I to him. For hee was not ignorant, but had made often tryall of my secresie, and with what great sufferance I did ever silence those things that hee committed to my bosome ; which I

would none should unlocke but himselfe, who onely had that key, to open and shut at his pleasure. CHAPTER II

It comes now into my minde, and so lively represents it selfe to my thoughts, that me thinkes I was then like to a trumpe Card, which every one uses, when, and how hee list; or as a common pack-Saddle, that serves for all Horses. All did make use of mee, though after a divers and different fashion; some, of my actions, for their owne proper interest; and others, of my words, for their pleasure and delight; onely my Master drew in the same yoke with me, both in words, and deeds.

I have taken occasion to speake thus much, that men may not conceive this opinion of mee, that I goe about to taxe those Princes, that keepe Fooles and Jesters in their Palaces, for their intertainment, and pleasure.

Why Jesters are to be permitted in Princes Courts

Nor shall it bee amisse that they intertaine them in their houses, not so much for sport and pastime, as by that conduit-pipe, to draw some-thing to their knowledge, which would not so well and so cleanely bee convayed otherwise unto their eares. And such occasions often offer themselves, whereof these kinde of men may make very good use, by advising, counselling, and revealing grave and weighty matters, under the colour of foolery, which wiser men dare not adventure to utter in earnest.

There are some witty discreet Jesters, which speake Sentences, and are able so soundly to deliver their opinions, that their Masters will not stoope to aske advice of any of his other servants, although it might much concerne them, and were great Statists, and very well able to give counsell.

Why Princes refuse the advise of their Counsellors

Nor indeed will they consent, that they of all other, should give them counsell, that they may not to their inferiours confesse their ignorance, or to seeme to understand lesse then they. For even in this, they would faine shew themselves to be Gods.

And such kinde of servants as these, are those Parrats, which Jupiter desired to have shut up in a Cage; Nor is this mischiefe of a day old, or was borne but yesterday, that great Persons should scorne and contemne the

counsailes of wise, understanding, and well qualified men. So great in these men is their pride, and ambition, that they seeke to aggregate and draw all things unto themselves, making themselves Masters and absolute Lords, both of our spirituall, and temporall; good, and bad, without controulement. Insomuch that they thinke with themselves, that by their onely breath, they give grace unto others; and not doing them any good in the world, they looke to be praised and extolled, as if they were the onely men, of whom they did hold their life, their honour, their wealth, and also their understanding, which is the utmost blasphemie, where-unto in this case their folly can reach.

There is also another great inconvenience, which is this; That as in a chappell of Miracles, wee must hang up, to sooth their vanitie, the spoiles, and Trophees of our miseries. For if wee recover our lamenesse, and bee once able to goe, we must offer up our Crutches unto them, whereof wee made use, when we were be-nummed, and oppressed with povertie.

If we escape any dangerous sicknesse, or mischance, we must sacrifice unto them that winding sheete, which fortune had cut out for us, burne Tapers, and set up Images of Waxe, declaring to the world, that this miracle was wrought by them, and must hang up those chaines in the Temple, wherewith wee came forth from out the captivitie of our miseries, and were now brought home, and landed in a safe Haven.

But this were not altogether so much to be blamed, if these things did onely occurre upon vertuous occasions, and that they had truely done these men good.

A good turne requires thankefulnesse

For there is a kinde of thankfulnesse, due to every good turne that is done us. And then we make it knowne that we have received a benefit, when rendring thankes unto God, we doe likewise publish the vertues of those men, that did doe these good deeds: because with an ardent zeale, and fervent affection, they did use their best industry, imployed their persons, spent their friends, tooke hold of all occasions, let slip no time, and therein wasted and

consumed their money. So that things being thus fairely carried, those that are benefited by them, shall worthily deserve much blame and reprehension, if they shall not render them all fitting and convenient thankes. But they fall as short of these good things, as they doe excell in all filthy and beastly vices; wherein they strive to exceede, and be counted the onely men: CHAPTER II

As was to be seene in a certaine Noble-man, that was exceedingly given to Lying, and lash out so unreasonably in that kinde, as no man could outstrip him, who one day talking in conversation with divers other Gentlemen of qualitie, told them that hee had killed a Stagge, bearing so many branches or antlets on his head, that it did plainely appeare to bee a Lye, though hee carried it very handsomely. They all admired it, they said; (but not gainesaid it) that it was one of the strangest things, that ever was seene, or heard of. A short Tale of a Noble-man, that was much given to Lying

This lik't the Noble-man well; But whilest he and the rest were thus wondring at it; Why (quoth an ancient Gentleman, a neere kinsman of his, that was there then in company, after a pretty kinde of fashion bringing it forth;) doth your Lordship and these Gentlemen make such a wonder at this? This is nothing, my Lord; For, within these few dayes I my selfe did kill one in the same Forrest, that had two more then this that you talke of.

When hee heard him say so, the Noble-man blest himselfe, saying; It is not possible; and looking angerly upon him, (scorning as it should seeme to be out-lyde) said unto him; Sir, speake no more of this, tell it no farther, for it is such a thing, as was never yet seene, nor will I for my part ever beleeve it, though I hold it a courtesie so to doe.

The Gentleman, with a sterne countenance, and undaunted courage, (his Age and Alliance heartening him on) in a discomposed kinde of voice, boldly brake forth, and told him; Zwounds (my Lord) me thinkes your Lordship should content your selfe, that you have

sixty thousand crownes [1] a yeere comming in more then I, without seeking to out-strip me in Lying, as you doe in Living. Let me (I pray) though I am a poore man, lye as I list: I begge nothing of you, nor any man else; nor doe I rob any man either of his wealth, or his honour.

There are likewise a certaine kinde of witty-conceited fellowes, that are naturally simple and ignorant; from whose mouth, oftentimes, drop mysticall sayings, and worthy the consideration, which God (it seemes) permits them to bolt forth now and then, making them also to keepe in such things as are fit to be silenced: who (though simple as they seeme) have an extraordinarie grace in the delivering of them. Which happinesse lighted upon one, that was a simple ignorant fellow from his cradle; in whom, one of the greatest Princes in Christendome tooke much pleasure, who for some secret causes, best knowne to himselfe, had discarded one of his gravest, and chiefest Ministers; And this simple fellow, comming one day into his presence, (which was shortly after the other was dismist the Court) hee was no sooner entred in, but the King askt him: What newes in Court? Hee told him, That his Majestie had done very ill, in putting N.D. away: And that it was without any reason, or justice in the world.

An answere of a simple Foole, to a great Prince

The King imagined, (that cause having beene justified by many other of his Ministers) that this had proceeded simply out of his owne mouth, and told him, Thou speakest thus for him, because perhaps he was thy friend, not that thou hast heard any man else say so besides.

The Foole replyd, My friend? In faith thou lyest. Thou art more my friend then he: I say nothing, but what all men say. The King was offended, that any should dare to question his actions, or to examine his brest. And being desirous to know, if any man of worth had presumed so farre to trench upon what he had done, he replyde and said; Since thou professest that so many have said it,

[1] The Spanish word is, *Sesenta quentos*. Now *un quento*, is *diez vezez cien mil*. But that is not likely, he had so much: and therefore we set it 60000. Covarruvias, verb. *Contar*.

and that thou art my friend, name one of those unto me, of whom thou hast heard this complaint. CHAPTER II

The Foole paus'd upon the matter. And when the King thought that hee had beene calling to memory, whom he should name unto him, hee angerly made answer; The blessed Trinitie told it me. Now see which of these three persons thou darest apprehend and punish. The King thereupon thought that it was a businesse of heaven, and so forbore to speake any more of it.

There are another kinde of pleasant Companions, which are good for nothing else but to dance, to play upon Instruments, to sing, to murmure, to blaspheme, to swagger, to lye, and to devoure victuals, good drinkers, and bad livers.[1] And of these, some are only good at one of these qualities; other some at all. Wherein some great ones take such delight, that they shall have what they will of them, doing them many extraordinary graces and favours, which is a most grievous sinne.

The vanitie of some great Men in rewarding Fooles and Jesters

To these, (and only for these Jigges) they give Jewels of great value, rich suits of cloathes, and hand-fuls of gold; which is more then they will doe for a wise, vertuous, and honest servant, which shall treate with them of the ordering of their Estates and Persons, illustrating their names, and honouring their house with glorious Titles. But rather when it so falleth out, that these come unto them about matters of importance, and which neerely concerne them, they reject them, and will not be advised by them.

Why Counsellors of State speake not their mindes truly to their Masters

Your Presidents, Governours, Counsellors, and every other Officer in Court, or that have ought to doe in the Palace, being greedy of honour, and blinded with passion, if they bee called to speake their opinion, they often say that in publike, which their owne private opinion approves not, though it be never so good; because they conceive that in so doing, they shall conforme theirs, to that of their Lord and Master, and so mannerly seeme to runne along in the pleasing of his humour; As also, for that it would grieve them to the very heart, that another should get the

[1] *Buenos bevedores, y malos vividores.*

start of them, in gaining their Princes grace and favour from them. So that many are not admitted thereunto, for that they had not this trumpe in their hand, and would not play the like tricks, these getting more by their foule, then they by their faire play. By reason whereof, many things remaine without remedie and redresse; and great businesses often-times overthrowne.

Plaine speaking speedes not alwaies best

Good labours ill requited

And if consultation shall be had of such things, whereof great profit may redound to themselves or to the State, they will tell the Author thereof coldly and dryly, because they will neither thanke him, nor reward him; Wee knew this before; but there are a thousand inconveniences in it.

But cursed be those Counsellours, who because they were not the first in delivering that sound opinion in such a businesse, blame the Author thereof, and carried away with the winde of their vanitie, and greedinesse of gaine, send him away empty: but using them first as Apothecaries doe their Simples; who first distill or pund them in a Morter, and when they have squeez'd all the juyce, and wrung the substance out of them, throw out the cake on the dung-hill. They will first informe themselves thorowly of the busines, the best that they can; and when they finde they are well and fully informed, they take it to themselves, casting from them the true Author thereof; and that good counsell of his, they sell for their owne; and this they doe *cum privilegio*.

Shallow heads neither good for themselves nor others

Some there are, that are like unto those glasses or other vessels, that have great bellies and little mouthes, they understand things amisse, and fill their stomacke with all that they heare, and whatsoever is said unto them: But although men tell, and powre into them never so much, and though they be as full as they can hold; yet because they know not how to conceive things well, they cause others to apprehend as little. And for this reason their businesses miscarry, and take not so happily as they should; for they can not be so well informed of that they treated upon, as those that were the proper Authors thereof, and had beaten their braines about it many dayes and nights,

breaking their sleepes, and losing many a meale, for the better examining of all the contrary objections, and for the advancing of their pretended profitable ends. Much good may it doe them, let them goe beyond me this way and spare not; for I would be loth in the end to rent such kinde of gettings, or to farme them out of their hands.

For what services the Embassadour made much of Guzman

My Master tooke pleasure in hearing me, and liked me for something else too besides my talke. For like a good Gardiner, he did gather those flowers together, which seemed fittest unto him for the making up of his Nose-gay, picking out the best and the choysest for his particular use, and the rest (which were but as it were the riffe-raffe and refuse flowers,) he reserved only for entertainment.

The Embassadours noble disposition

He treated with me of that in private, which others did not stick to speake in publike. And these his secrets he did not only communicate to me alone; but when he desired to know any thing, and to attaine to the true understanding of businesses, that he might not erre, he would consult with men of wit, and those that had the best abilities, he would make very much of them, favour and honour them; and if they were poore and needy, he would supply their wants as well as he could, and more particularly in those things whereof he knew they stood most in need. And this he fastned upon them in that wise and discreet manner, that it should not seeme to be bestowed upon them by the way of Almes, leaving them thereby well contented, fully satisfied, and above all, exceeding thankfull. It was his fashion, to have two or three of these usually at his table, where were propounded grave politicke questions, and businesses of State; and especially touching those things, which did presse and import him most, and neerest concerned his owne particular ends. By this meanes, without opening and discovering of himselfe, hee received their opinions, and reaped the chiefest fruits that their wits could afford him.

The like course he tooke with the Officers in Court, particular Gentlemen, and some Citizens of the best esteeme in Rome; with whom he holding friendship, came

His course to come to know what was done abroad, and in Court

to know the wrongs they received, the remedies to be applyed, and how and which way they stood affected. And then afterwards having a good judgement of his owne, he did so dispose of things, as might make most for his advantage, and the King his Masters service; so that hee did seldome erre or faile in those things that he undertooke. Hee was very discreet, of a settled and well composed behaviour, vertuous, courteous, well studied, and a great lover of those that had in them such commendable parts of learning as were worthy the recommendation. Hee was indued with all those good qualities, which were to be required in a person of his place and imployment; he was like a goodly roome, furnished with all those rich ornaments which might set it forth, and make it appeare faire and beautifull in the eyes of the beholders, but in the midst thereof, even in the very best part of all the roome, there was a choake-Peare[1] sowen and growne up, which did much blemish it.

This Apple was our generall ruine; this Peare the perdition of every particular. Hee was an *Enamorado*; one that was over head and eares in love. For there is no flesh so sound, that hath not some corruption; nor no body so free, that hath not some one infirmitie or other. And his was, that he did but love too well; yea, even to excesse. But in a matter of this nature, let every man judge, as shall seeme best to his owne liking. Howbeit, many wise men have said, that a man can not bee absolutely perfect, unlesse he have once in his life-time beene in love.

A tale of a Cryer

And of this opinion, it seemeth, was that pleasant-conceited Countrie fellow, that was the common Cryer in his Parish, who having often cry'd an Asse, that another Countrie fellow had lost, and could by no meanes heare any newes of him, (for it should seeme some Gypsies had stolne him, who that he might not be knowne againe, had put new markes and colours upon him) did earnestly in-

[1] The Spanish *Refran. Estava sembrado y nacido un pero.* He had one ill qualitie, which did drowne all the rest. I take that to be the sense, though I have not elsewhere met with the unfolding of this phrase of speech.

treat him, that he would doe him the kindenesse to cry him once more upon the Sunday following, after high Masse was ended; and if he should chance to heare any tydings of his Asse, he would for his labour give him a little young fat Pig that he had at home.

The knave Cryer greedy of the Pig, did as he had requested him. And all the people being met together in the Market place, hee stood in the midst thereof, and cry'd out with a loud voyce; To all manner of people, that are dwellers in this Towne, or borderers thereabout, be it knowne, that if there be any man or woman, that hath never yet beene in love, let them come in, and tell their name, and they shall have a fine young Pig for their labour. And God save the King.

There was placed right against the same, leaning himselfe against the Wall of the Councell house, a lubberly-Lad of some two and twenty yeeres of age, with long shagge hayre, a russet Cassocke on his backe, welted with the same cloth, open about the shoulders, and close before, Breeches of white cottond Bayes, gathered and playted beneath at the knees, a Shirt with a band thereunto, so hard quilted throughout the stocke, that a Turkish bow with a very sharpe Arrow, was not able to pierce it, a poore thred-bare Cloake, a payre of high shooes of Neats-leather, knit together with two strings of twisted Hempe, and bare-legged, who comming in all haste to the Cryer in his Clownish kinde of language, said unto him; Brother Sanz, give mee the Pig: for by these ten bones I vow unto you, that I was never yet in love, never had my head puzled with it, nor ever payd any Tole to that Mill.

Then the Cryer calling the Owner of the beast in all haste, and pointing to this Chop-loch with his finger, said unto him, Anton Berrocal, give me my Pig, and take you here your Asse.

But that this may be proved, and that truly by some Precedent of these present times wherein we live: There was in Salamanca a principall Doctor of the Chayre, one of the famousest and gravest Advocates in all that Universitie, that often visited (for his entertainment) a certaine Gentlewoman, that had profest her selfe a Nunne, very

Another tale of a Doctor of Salamanca

faire she was, well descended, and wonderfull discreet. And he being inforced to absent himselfe from thence for some few dayes, he went his way without taking his leave of her, thinking that he had now attained to the perfection of his love, and that there was no need of these finenesses, and niceties betweene them.

Afterwards, when he was returned from his journey, hee went (as he was wont) to visit her. But when hee saw, that she would not admit of his Visit, hee became very pensive and sad there-upon; because hee could not imagine what should bee the cause of this sudden strangenesse, having alwayes heretofore shew'd her selfe very kinde and loving unto him. But when hee came (by some diligences, that he had used) to know the reason of it, he was wonderfull well contented therewith, it seeming unto him, that this in some sort was rather a kinde of grace and favour of hers, then otherwise.

Well, he sent unto her to excuse himselfe, earnestly intreating her, that he might bee so much beholding unto her, as to see her, using therein the means of such Ladies and Gentlewomen as were friends to them both.

At last (through much importunitie) sore against her will, she came forth to receive his Visit, but with that anger and disdaine, that she could not containe her selfe, but must needs shew it: for the very first words that she let fly at him, were these:

Base, and ill-nurtur'd as thou art; for such base thoughts argue no lesse then basenesse of bloud; which is confirmed by thy ungentlemanly proceeding; whereof, to thy shame thou hast made too open show. For having thy being, as it were from me, and for my sake, and having come thereby unto that height, wherein now thou art, forgetting all the good I have done thee, and all the charge that I have beene at to qualifie thee, and put thee forward in the world, thou hast lost all that due respect and thankefulnesse, which I deserved at thy hands; but since the fault was mine in raising thee, it is no marvell, that mine should be the punishment.

To these she added many other more sharpe and bitter words: so that the poore Gentleman being dasht quite out of countenance, because many were there present when she us'd him thus coursely, and gave him such a sound rattling; incensed with the excesse of this her rigour, he made her this short and cutted reply:

Gentlewoman, touching this complaint of yours, be it with, or without any just cause, I will not stand to dispute it; And for your accusing of my un-mannerly proceeding, let that likewise passe; For, *Cada uno siente como ama.* Every man best knowes, how, and how much he loves. And I acknowledge, that all this ariseth from the many and great favours, that you have been pleased to conferre upon me.

But whereas you touch mee in my reputation, (being forced there-unto by you,) it is fit and necessary that therein I should satisfie those that are heere present, I must be so bold with you as to tell you plainely; That since God hath been pleased to raise me to that I am, I come not thereto either by corruption, or favour, but by mine owne great paines, and continuall studies, have I procured my preferment. She then interrupting him, and not suffering him to goe on, returned him, but with a great deale of choller, this quicke answere:

Thou lyest like a Villaine. Thou rise by thy learning? Thou had'st not come to that great knowledge that thou hast, nor hadst ever had so much wit, as to learne to mend so much as an old shoo, if I had not put spirit into thee, quickned thy wit, and perfected thy understanding, by giving thee leave to make love unto me. This whetstone put an edge upon thy dull sconce; and but for this, thou might'st have sunke, and never beene able to lift up thy head.

Touching love

By this then wee may see, how much it may import a man to love; and that it is not so great a fault as some would make it. Mistake mee not; I meane, when the ends are good, and honest.

But in my Master it was taken in the worser part; for

his ends did exceed and passe their bounds ; and the blame of all that ill was laid upon me ; every man conceiving, that I was the cause thereof : Complaining, that since I came to serve him, I had opened his scull, and put into his head nothing but Hawkes-bels and Rattles : All that he tooke delight in, were merry tales, idle jests, and the like vanities : which till then, he had never formerly been given unto.

It might very well be, that with my heate I might cause some buds or little sprigs to sprout forth. But for to speake the truth (seeing the Parties are not heere to be examined, and I am the man whom they thus accuse) I assure you, that others had the handling of him before, that wrought him this harme.

For when I entred into his service, and that hee came to put his cure into my hands, the Physicians despayred of his recoverie, and had given him quite over, and would have no more to doe with him ; I will not deny, but that I might minister much thereof unto him ; for by reason I was in such favour with him, I had likewise the freedome to use many odde foolish jests, and prejudiciall liberties of speech.

Guzmans course of life in Rome

I was familiarly acquainted with all Rome, I had as free accesse into every house, as into our owne ; excusing my pretensions, that I onely repaired to such and such places, to give lessons to some to sing to the Gitterne, and teach other some to dance.

I did intertaine your young Wenches in good conversation with merry and pleasant jests ; and your widdowes, with whispering tales in their eares ; and entring into a league of friendship with your married men, I got likewise the good will of their Wives, to whom they would bring mee to laugh and make sport, wherewith they were well pleased, for the good contentment they tooke in my harmelesse mirth.

And all this I did, to the end, that from this good ground, my Master might take occasion to declare and open himselfe more freely to me. For I relating unto him, what, and how things passed abroad, it was an easie matter for

me to kindle with the breath of my words, the fire that was in his heart, by blowing first away the ashes from off those coales, that were already throughly tinded, alive, and very quicke within him. He was in a good disposition thereunto, and therefore any the least occasion would serve the turne. He was a kinde of house made all of thatch, so that a little sparke was inough to raise a great flame, having such combustible stuffe to worke upon, being still affectioned to that, which himselfe had most minde to, without having respect to that discreet carriage, which he formerly observed in all his actions.

Guzman an ill instrument to his Masters desires

I doe ingeniously confesse, that I was an instrument of his excesses and flyings out, and that in regard of my being seene to walke here and there to and fro, to enter into this house, and to come out of that, many houses, and women of good qualitie, were spotted and branded with infamy.

But let us heere leave my Master as a man, to whom albeit these things did cause him to be noted, and to have his good name called in question, yet was not he so much to be blamed, as those who did know well inough, what manner of fellow I was.

I would many times demand of them, what honour or profit I did reape, by being interessed in these businesses? Why should Widdowes take delight in hearing of tales, and pleasant jests? Why Parents bring such straggling wanderers home to their Daughters? Or why Husbands make their Wives merry with such dangerous intertainments? What other good can be expected from your neat Pages (such as I then was) who doe scarce touch the ground that they tread on? What doe your Princes witty Jesters, and your Great mens Dwarfes serve for, but to talke with Ladies and Gentle-women, and to indeare unto them their Masters love? who againe inquire of them, what good tables they keepe, how gallantly they live, how much they spend, what in Amber, and other odours and sweet perfumes, what in the pompe of apparell, and what in Musicke that they dayly bestow upon their friends and Mistresses?

Pages and Dwarfs of what use

Why doe they talke and give eare to such things, whereby they afterwards give occasion to others to open their mouthes, and to utter with their tongues all that they either know or imagine? Doe not they perceive, that in so doing, they build but their owne prison, and weave that winding sheete, wherein their good names must be winded and buryed? What benefit can the content they take in hearkening to merry tales bring them? which are to no other end in the world, but to give way unto them, that they may report to their Masters, what they take most pleasure in, besides the questioning of their good name amongst their neighbours? Let these a Gods name make themselves merry with the reward of their errours; and if they be lovers of jests, it is no marvell if they bee jested withall. They desire a life to have musicke play at their windowes, whilest others in the meane while are making Ballads of them, to sing forth their shame at every mans doore.

A lesson to Widdowes

A Widdow, that respects her honour, and will have a care of her credit, must keepe her doore shut, her daughter chamber'd up, her casement close, and above all, not suffering her to have her owne will, and to doe what she list; that shee be visited but seldome, but be alwayes occupied; for, of idlenesse, growes wantonnesse.[1] And it stands with good reason, *Que la madre holgazana, saque hija cortesana*: That a light mother, should breed a loose daughter. And if she love to have her traine plaid withall, that her daughter will prove a Wagge-tayle. And if she hap to be married, she will turne ill hus-wife, because she hath beene ill taught.

Proverb

A lesson to Parents

By this you may see, what obligations the Parents have to looke well unto their Children: Let them take away all occasions of scandall; Let them weigh with themselves, what (upon the like occasions) they murmure and whisper of others. And then let them consider, how much better it were, that their Wives, Sisters, and Daughters, should rather learne to handle their Needle, then to play on the

[1] *Del oçio naçe el negocio.*

Ghitterne; to governe well, rather then to dance well: For hence it commeth to passe, that many women, not knowing how to looke so well as they should, into the corners of their owne houses, busie themselves, in working strange alterations in those of others. CHAPTER II

Speake I truth, or no? I know, ye will tell me that I doe. For such truthes as these are not to be treated, or mentioned, but upon necessitie, and urgent occasion.

I confesse it to be so, and for my part, I approve it. But because that which I have said, toucheth none of those that heare me; it is therefore well said, to the end that when it shall be needfull, and men see their time, they may be the better able to give good counsell unto others, when they see them step out of the way, and goe awry.

Malo es lo malo, que nunca puede ser bueno. Ill is that ill, that never can be good. It was not good, I confesse, that I should bee a Bawd to my Master: But every man would faine live. And this Office I performed by those tricks and devices I told you of before, taking occasion by my familiar and generall acquaintance in Rome, to goe as boldly into every mans house, as I would into mine owne, excusing this libertie of mine, by those pretensions I made, of teaching some to play upon Instruments, and some to dance; intertaining in the meane while Maidens with merriments; Widdowes, with old wives tales, and what was whispered abroad; and entring into amitie with married men, good honest kinde Cuckolds. Proverb

Guzman, his Masters Bawd

But I was in some sort to be excused, (if not borne withall) for that my wants and necessitie drave me to doe as I did, and opened that doore unto me, whereat I might get forth to seeke my living.

But what excuse can they have, who for the light toyes of this world, will venture the losse of their reputation upon earth, and those rich treasures that are laid up in heaven for those that live well? which two things every man ought most to esteeme, and have ever before his eyes. But what I did herein, was to wedge my Masters affection unto me, and to worke my selfe into his favour, both which

I came to be possest of; and not with intent and purpose to reclaime him from this his weaknesse, and to perswade him unto better courses, but rather to spurre him on in this wretched race that he ran.

But he that would trust me in such like businesses as these, and communicate himselfe unto me in this kinde, what could he looke or expect from me? I know there are many men, who thinke it is a great credit unto them, that they doe nobly, and get a great deale of reputation and esteeme, by these their visits, their ingresses and their egresses, when indeed, it is quite contrary.

For your women that entertaine chat with your crack-rope Pages, with your giddy-headed Poets, that never goe without a muske Comfit [1] in their mouth, or chewing the rinde of a Lemmon, with your flat-Capt Citizens, your countrie Lads, and the like; some perhaps may hold them discreet; but I am sure they lose the name of chaste, which as an inestimable Jewell they ought highly to esteeme, being for their labour ever after accounted fooles.

Now the profit that I made by this my occupation, trading with this person, and with that, with t'other and t'other, this my conversation being so generall, it was the only meanes, that kept me from being discovered to be a Bawd.

But (to say the truth) they might very well have put the implumed Hat upon my head, which I have seene worne by many others in my dayes, who did lesse deserve it then my selfe, in token they were Love's Embassadours, whom he imployed in his chiefest and most secret affaires.

Here, in me, may you see how misfortunes fall to men by inheritance. Hitherto it hath beene delivered without any disguise or masking, how I led my Master along, never suffring him to take any rest or quiet; and how hee made me another Adonis, in the neatnesse and gallantry of my cloathes, and delicacie of Perfumes, for the great

[1] The Spanish word is, *Alcorça*, i.e. *una costa de açucar resinado con mezcla de polvos cordiales. Alcorcillas*, we call *Pastillas de boca. Vide* Covarruvias, verb. *Alcorça.*

care and diligences that I used in these and the like businesses. CHAPTER II

But true and certaine it is, that murmurings and whisperings attend such Actions. And if a good man be now and then bitten, what wonder is it, that a bad man should be bruised and crusht therewith to pieces? *Y que aya sospechas, donde no faltan hechas*; And that there may well bee suspition, where deeds make confession. False murmuration bites, true kills. Proverb

It were a great deale of simplicitie and ignorance in me, and other such as I am, for to seeke after any better name, or to goe about to make (as they say) a stone Wall of mudde;[1] thinking to stop mens mouthes, and to hinder their ill imaginations and bad conceits of us, when as we our selves give them such evident occasions to conceive amisse of us.

None can impose, or set any sessing or ratable fine upon mens censures and opinions; for that were, *Poner puertas al campo*, to set up gates to shut in such a vast circuit, as is Salisburie-Plaine. Mens censures not to be avoyded

Thou canst no more limit a mans thoughts, then thou canst number the sands of the Sea. It is not I that can make them to thinke, or not thinke as I would have them; I cannot be master of their thoughts; nor will it boote any one man to deny that which all men affirme. It will be but trouble without profit, a needlesse and endlesse piece of worke; wherein we shall shew our selves as foolish as he was, who went about to locke up the smoake, to make doores to shut it in, and to keepe it close prisoner.

But what shall we now say of our foolish Masters, who perswade themselves, that this their businesse passeth secretly and falsely thorow our hands? Shall I deale truly with you? I will. Take it then from me, and I know it to be true, *Que no ay çiençia, que corrija un enamorado*. There is no scourge of wit or learning, that will lash a wanton Lover out of his lust. Proverb

For matters of Love, there are no Bartuli, no Aristotles, no Galens; their counsels faile them; their wisdomes are Love hardly removed

[1] Proverb. *Tapiar a piedra lodo.*

too weake; and their Medicines can doe no good upon them. Nor there is not any thing, that doth more publish and manifest this truth, then mens solicitude and care in these things, from the which none (that are taken therewith) can containe themselves. For with two Visits of ours, and one intercourse of theirs, or but a passing by their doore, make the little children (those shrill trumpets of truth) to sound forth their lightnesse aloud thorow the streets.

The greatest punishment that lighted then upon me was; that my hayres began to sprout, and my Chinne to put on a beard, the which the more I shav'd, because I would not have it perceiv'd, the thicker it came, and grew the faster. And for that it is a peculiar Office belonging to handsome and witty Pages, to be Venus and Cupids chiefest Ministers, the more diligence I used in tricking, adorning, trimming, and setting my selfe forth in lascivious manner, the more occasion I gave the world thereby to talke and judge of me accordingly. I studied to be neat and handsome in my cloathes, but tooke no heed how foule the fashion of my behaviour was; and therefore it was no marvell if they threw durt upon me with their tongues. In a word, either actively or passively, every one would bestow upon mee *El nombre de las pasquas*, and force me to weare their Livery, you know what I meane; And though I told them they lyed like a company of Rogues and Villaines as they were, they would laugh, and hold their peace, giving by this their mysticall kinde of silence, a more open way unto the truth. Their taunts against me were true, and strooke deepe, but whatsoever I reply'd upon them, they made but a jest of it; my words were but as the pecking of strawes, theirs as the piercing of Dartes.

Proverb

There are a kinde of considerate and discreet men, which take the sayings of men, not as the words sound in themselves, but as they are, from whom they come; regarding more the speaker, then the thing spoken. And this is a great point of wisdome.

Againe on the contrary, there are some (I know not

whether I may be so bold to call them fooles or no) who from some dis-favour of their Mistresses, forme an injury, and as if it either were, or might be so, they will be revenged of them; and laying some imputation upon their honour, seeke to scandall and defame them, without any reason or cause in the world. I was not able to stand against so many, nor could my Sword cut out his way thorow such a multitude that set upon me: I saw they had reason on their side, and therefore I was willing to bee-hush, and to pocket up these wrongs with patience.

A cunning tricke to defame in this manner

And albeit it be an Act of true humilitie, patiently to suffer reproach; yet in me it was cowardize, and dejection of the minde. For that I held my peace and said nothing, there was good cause why; because I knew all the speaking in the world could not helpe it. It might well have made matters worse, but never a whit the better. And seeing that I had not one sparke of shame in mine owne house, I would not for shame goe seeke it else-where; the fire of my zeale to good was quite out, there was no recovering of it. And therefore (making a vertue of necessitie) I was forced to passe over all these bobs and jerkes they had at me, some-times with a smile, some-times a jest, and some-times with both.

In conclusion, howbeit I ought rather to have indured any the greatest hurt that could come unto me, then submit my selfe even in the least degree to base gaine; yet not withstanding, I had, like the Melon, my bed made for me,[1] I saw I could not well be worse thought of then I was already, and therefore casting aside all thought of amendment, I counted it a credit unto me, and tooke rather a pride in it then otherwise, and so making light of it, and jesting it out, I did set a good face on the matter, when they said any thing to me, that I might not seeme to be dasht out of countenance, or bound to give them an answer, which would but have made them to vexe me the more, and done my selfe no good. So that by this they persecuted me the lesse, and I past the more quietly along by them.

To passe things by with patience

[1] Proverb. *Tenia como el melon la cama hecha.*

And why should I take (seeing this did serve my turne, and that I past well enough with it) any other course with them? Which in these dangerous cases, if I should have attempted any other way to pacifie them, I should never have beene able to doe it; and should thereby have but made the fire more to flame, by seeking to asswage it with Flaxe and Rozin.

Let him therefore, whosoever will take upon him to set open a shop to Vice, provide himselfe of a Tortoyse shell, arme his backe with patience, and keepe his eares, and his mouth shut. And let not any man flatter himselfe, that having foule conditions, he shall get him a faire report.

For, *El nombre sigu al hombre*; As is the man, so is his good name. And as every one deserves, so shall he be esteemed.

CHAPTER III

Guzman de Alfarache recounteth that which hapned unto him with a Captaine and a Doctor at a banquet, which the Embassadour his Lord made

Of deceiving and lying

THERE is so thinne a Pale put betwixt Deceiving and Lying; and are so neere kinne the one to the other, that I know not who can tell, or is able to distinguish and difference the one from the other: for though they are different in name, they are one in identitie, and of the same paritie in effect, and in essence alike. For there is no Lye without Deceit, nor no Deceit without a Lye.

He that will lye, doth deceive; and he that will deceive, doth lye. But because they are commonly received after

a different manner, and for different purposes, I will take them as they stand in use, and accordingly discourse thereof. CHAPTER III

Deceit then, in respect of Truth, is as Truth, in regard of a Lye: or as the shadow of a Glasse, and that naturall forme which it representeth. It is as aptly disposed, and is made as facill to effect whatsoever great hurt, as it is hard and difficult to be found out at the first; for that it is so like unto good, that representing the very selfe-same figure, fashion, motion, and proportion, it doth the easier destroy it. It is a most subtill net, wrought of the slendrest and smallest threds, in comparison and likenesse whereof was framed that other, which the Poets feigne, was made by Vulcane, when hee caught him that cuckol'd him.

It is so imperceptible, and so fine, and thinne, that there is not any sight so cleere, any judgement so subtill, nor any discretion of that discerning, nor any wit of that nimble apprehension, that is able to discover it, nay, scarce to perceive it.

It is so artificially wrought, that though it bee spred out abroad, and laid forth as plaine as may be to our view, yet are wee not able to escape it, in regard wee walke on securely, not so much as once dreaming of any fraud or deceit. And by this meanes it is so strong, that few or none doe breake it, without leaving some signe of the harme that they have taken. And for this cause, it is justly called *Maximum vitæ damnum*, the greatest hurt that can happen unto us in this life. For under a tongue of Waxe, it carries a heart of Diamond; it cloathes it selfe with Hayre-cloth, though it never come neere the skinne; it keepes a chupping and sucking in of the cheekes, for to make it seeme leane and meager, when its belly is ready to cracke with good cheere. And having store of health to sell to others, it speakes pulingly, and pittifully; and onely that it may seeme to bee sicke, it puts on a sorrowfull countenance, powres out its teares, offers us its bosome, and with open armes, runnes to receive us, but as Joab did Amaza; imbrace, to kill.

Of all mischiefes, deceit is the greatest

And as Birds give the Empire to the Eagle; Beasts, to the Lyon; Fishes, to the Whale; the Serpents, to the Basiliske; so amongst all other mischiefes, there is none greater or more powerfull, then that of Deceit. As an Aspe, it kils us sleeping; it is that Syrens voice, whose delight (like a Butchers Curre) first seazeth on the eare, and next, on the throat; its ravishing, is murthering; it offers a faire assurance of peace, and with a great deale of smoothnesse, professeth friendship; but neglecting all humane and divine Lawes, breakes them at her pleasure, leaving us with as much wrong, as scorne.

She promiseth cheerefull contentments, and certaine hopes, which she never performeth, nor doe they ever come to passe, because she goes chopping and changing them from Fayre to Fayre, to make her owne market. And as a house is built of many stones; so one deceit is an addition of many other; and all of them serve for one and the same end. It is the Headsman of all goodnesse, for with a seeming kinde of sanctitie, it makes every man secure, and there is none that are either aware of it, or feare it. It comes unto us in the habit of a Hermit, the better to execute its ill intents.

This contagious infirmitie is so generall, that not onely men, but Beasts and Birds doe likewise therein suffer with them. Also the Fishes in the Waters exercise deceits; and this they doe, the better to preserve themselves. Trees and Plants doe deceive, promising pleasant flowers and fruits, which fayle us at their time, passing bravely away with it. Stones, though they bee but stones, and without sence, trouble our sence, with their counterfet splendour, and lye, in that they seeme to be that they are not. Time, occasions, and our sences deceive us; and above all, our best and most considerate thoughts. In a word, all things deceive, and wee do all deceive, one of these foure manner of wayes.

Foure manner of wayes of deceiving

The first

The one is, when one useth a deceit, and goes cunningly away with it, leaving the other deceived: As it hapned to a certaine Student of Alcala de Henares; who, when the

CHAPTER III
A Tale of a Scholler of Alcala

Feast of Easter was drawing neere, and having nothing where-with to make himselfe merry against that good Time, hee called to minde a neighbour of his, who had a Court or yard, with great store of Hens in it, with the which hee did himselfe no good at all.

Hee was a poore beggerly fellow; and as hee was very poore, so was hee extreme covetous; an erranter mizer was there not in all the Country. He fed them with the bread that was given him of Almes; and a nights he shut them up in the same lodging where he lay.

This Student went plotting with himselfe, how hee might steale them away, but lighted upon none that did yet like him. For in the day time it was impossible, and in the night they roosted in the same roome where hee himselfe lodg'd.

At last he bethought himselfe of feigning a packet of Letters, and to put there-upon two Ducats Port,[1] directing it to Madrid to a certaine principall Cavallero, and a Gentleman very well knowne: And before the breake of day, he very secretly laid it on the threshold before his doore, that as soone as hee opened it, hee might presently finde it. Hee got him up in the morning, and as soone as he saw it, not knowing what it was, he tooke it up.

This Student past that way in the meane while, as it were by chance. Whom this poore man espying, came unto him, and intreated him to tell him what those papers were. The Student told him; Marry such (said hee) as I would bee glad with all my heart I could light upon the like.

These (quoth hee) are Letters directed to Madrid with two Ducats Port upon them, to a rich Gentleman that resideth there, who shall no sooner receive them, but will see you truely paid for your paines.

The poore man beganne to looke up, and was so over-joyed therewith, that the teares did trickle downe his

[1] In Spaine, they doe not pay for the carriage of their Letters before-hand, but put so much Port under the Superscription, to bee paid by him that receives it.

cheekes. Hee thought with himselfe, that one dayes travell was a thing of nothing; especially being that he might performe this journey by noone; and though he went thither afoot, he might in the evening, without any trouble, returne home in some one Cart or other that was to goe for Alcala. Where-upon, he went and fed his Poultry, shut them up safe, leaving out such food as he thought sufficient for them, and so hies him away with his letters.

The Student that night made a shift, by getting over some back-sides, and out-Courts, to get into that yard, where the poore mans house was, and heaving the doore off the hindges, hee gets mee in, taking nothing away thence but the Hens, leaving no more but one onely Cocke behinde, with a mourning-hood on his head, and a Mantle of blacke Bayes, so surely sowed on, that they could not fall off; which done, hee with-drew himselfe home-ward to his lodging.

When the poore man was come home to his house the next morning, and saw the mis-fortune that had befalne him at home, and that hee had bestow'd his labour in vaine; for there was no such Gentleman to be found in all Madrid; hee, and his Cocke did bitterly bewayle this their solitude and widdow-hood, making lamentable moane each unto other: the good man with his mournefull words; the poore Cocke, with his mourning weeds.

The second

Another kinde of deceit is: When together with the deceived, the Deceiver is also deceived. As it hapned to this Student in this very case. For, he being not able to effect this businesse alone by himselfe, and that he must needs use the helpe of some body else, hee tooke unto him one of his *Camrades*, whom he acquainted with the businesse, promising if hee would assist him in this theft, he should share halfe with him.

This his Companion discovered it to a friend of his; he, to a third; so that the word past from one to another, till it came to the eares of certaine madde Waggs of Andaluzia; And for they were old Castilians, (and their Opposites for

this cause) they agreed together to strip them of their Hens, by another pretty device. CHAPTER III

They knew the house from whence they were to come, and the streetes, through which they were to passe ; They fained themselves to be the Justice, and they watcht till they should returne, at the turning of the street : whom they had no sooner espyed, but they issued out upon them in forme of a Circle, hedging them in on every side, with Lanternes, Swords and Bucklers, having appointed the formost man to aske, Who goes there ? What are yee ? Stand.[1] Upon this, they verily thinking, that hee was one of the Justices servants, and beeing loth to bee either knowne or taken with that badde word of bidding them Stand, they threw downe their Hens, and beganne to take them to their heeles, as hard as they could drive. So that there were not some wanting, who did also coozen, and deceive them.

The third kinde of deceit is ; When it is without pre- The third judice. Neither deceiving others, together with themselves, nor deceived, when they goe about to deceive. And this may be done two manner of wayes : Either by Workes, or by Words. Words, by recounting Stories, telling of Tales and Fables, and other things of intertainment. Workes, as by juggling, sleights of the hand, tricks on the Cards, and other the like devices, which are done without any harme or prejudice to any.

The fourth kinde is ; When hee that thinkes to deceive, The fourth is himselfe deceived ; that tricke that he would put upon another, being put upon himselfe : As it befell a great Prince of Italy, though some report the same of Cæsar : Who, that he might grace one of the famousest Poets of his time, carried him home to his house, where at first he us'd him wonderfull kindely, made exceeding much of him, did him many favours, and bestow'd many gifts on him, as long as his humour was pleased with those Poems that he presented unto him.

A pretty passage betwixt the Prince of Italy, and a Poet

[1] This is the fashion, and language of the Justice in Spaine, when they walke the Round.

But this lasted not long, the Princes affection falling off by a little and a little, till at last the poore Poet was faine to content himselfe with his bare lodging, and some short allowance. So that he suffered much want and necessitie; and was growne so poore both in his purse, and his apparell, that hee durst not goe abroad for shame, because he had not where-withall to cover his nakednesse.

The Poet weighing and considering this his unhappinesse; and seeing himselfe shut up as it were in a Cage, and that neither (which is permitted unto Parrats) the Prince himselfe, nor any about him, would vouchsafe to heare him speake, hee resolved with himselfe to rowze up the Princes long sleeping favour, and waiting an opportunitie to doe it, understanding such a time, that hee was to goe abroad, hee attended at a certaine place, which hee thought fittest for his purpose, and when the Prince drew neere, hee made toward him, and kneeling on his knees, when hee came at him, hee presented him with a Poem that hee had made; which the Prince receiving, hee thought by this meanes to revive that remembrance of him, which had so long lien dead. Hee continued in these kinde of diligencies so long, that the Prince beeing wearied out with these his importunities, was determined to put some jest or other upon him, to make him to desist from giving him farther trouble in that kinde.

And having himselfe made a Sonnet, and going out to walke one Evening, when he saw the Poet was comming towards him, preventing him in the presenting of his Poem, he drew the Sonnet out of his bosome, and clapt it in the Poets hand; the Poet understanding the tricke, as one that was discreet, feigning to have read it, highly commending both the Verse, and the Invention, put his hand in his pocket, and pluckt out a Royall of eight [1] which he had there, and gave it to the Prince, telling him withall; Such a good wit well deserves a reward. I give you all that I have, had I more, you should have it.

With this the Prince was fast, being caught in the same

[1] A Royall of eight, is foure shillings English.

snare, and paid with the same tricke that hee purposed to put upon him. And from that time forward he favoured him, as he had done before. CHAPTER III

There are many other kindes of these deceits; and one above the rest, which is a very dangerous one; which is that of those, who would make us to beleeve that for Gospell, when as our owne eyes and knowledge doe both see, and know the contrary. Many other dangerous deceits

A fellow that is basely both bred and borne, and well enough knowne to be such a one, will seeke by his hawtie carriage and proud lookes, to gaine unto himselfe the name of a great man, though (God he knowes) he is scarce worth foure Maravedis; giving (by his ill proceeding) occasions to others, to scoffe and laugh at him: And to say, what fellow is this? What was his beginning? Of what continuance his Auncestors? Whence doth he fetch his Pedigree? What did his Gentilitie or his Office cost him? What trade was his Father of? and of what occupation his Mother? These men thinke to deceive others, and they deceive themselves. For not by this meanes (that is to say, by pride) but by humilitie, affabilitie, and faire behaviour, they goe by degrees, throwing in their earth, till they come in time to fill up those ditches, and to be levell and equall with the best. Proud fellowes

Others seeke to deceive with their fierce lookes, thinking thereby to be counted valiant, as if wee did not know, that they are the only men, that dare not meddle with a Mouse; or tread upon a Worme, if hee should but offer to turne tayle. Swaggerers

Others with their too much prattle, and quoting of Authors, seeke to bee held wise men, and learned Clearkes, not considering that many Stationers have farre more in number, who notwithstanding in matter of knowledge are meerely ignorant men. For neither the long Gowne, nor the broad-brim'd Hat, nor the Mule, for all his grave Foot-cloth, shall bee sufficient to cover the disease they are sicke of, but at three or foure shakings of the Urinall, wee shall discerne those raggs, and cloudie streakes that are in their Urine, and then they will plainely bee discovered what they are. Talking schollers

Stationers

I have said of some, that they repute themselves wise and learned, because they have store of bookes, and that your Stationers have many more then they; but many of them are worse then these block-headed Doctors, who with a great deale of paines, and by tradition, understand the Frontispices of bookes, and yet notwithstanding, being often therein deceived, they fall headlong into the pit of ignorance; now would I have thee to tell mee which of these two doe deceive most? I shall tell it thee. They are both of one graine, sowne and reaped under one and the same Moone, bread of the same meale whereof most men doe eate, and is their onely nourishment.

Printers

But out of the number of these, doe I except Paulus and Aldus Manutius; Henricus, Robertus, and Carolus Stephanus; Adrianus Turnebbius, Franciscus Sansovinus, and many others like unto them, not only meere Stationers, and Printers, but learned and famous Schollers, and of great note in the world, whose workes and labours doe and shall ever render thereof a perpetuall testimonie. There have beene divers other worthy understanding men in this their profession; who in their life-time, have published and brought to light many most noble and excellent Authors; who, if they had not by them beene revived, had beene buryed for ever in the Church-yard of oblivion. Whereas now many of them by these mens great paines and industrie, are raysed from their graves to immortalitie.

Old men

Others are growne so foolish, (and indeed are accounted no better) who being now growne old, decrepit, and unable for any kinde of use or exercise, and this their weaknesse being notorious and well knowne to all the world, and this their rotten building ready to fall, yet are they willing to deceive themselves, and every body else (if they could) contrary to all truth and reason, by dying the haires of their heads and beards, as if any man were so ignorant, and did not know that there are none of these changeable coloured beards, but at every motion of the Sunne, and every cast of the eye they present a different colour, and never a one perfect, much like unto those in the necks of

your Doves and Pigeons; for in every haire of these old Cox-combes, you shall meet with three divers and sundry colours; white at the root, yellow in the middle, and blacke at the point, like unto one of your Parrats feathers. CHAPTER III

When women doe the like, there is not any one haire of theirs, which hath not it's different colour. There was a certaine Gentlewoman in the world, that shall be namelesse, (which of mine owne knowledge, I am able to affirme) who did use this dying and colouring of her hoary haires, which one day I did diligently marke and observe; and beleeve me (for let me not live if I lye unto you) some of them seemed greene unto me, some blue, some yellow, some vermilion, and others of divers other colours; and in some one odde haire, all these colours did conjoyne and meete together. So that seeking thus to deceive Time, and to dissemble her Age, shee discovered her folly, and became a laughing stocke to as many as lookt upon her. Old women

That some young folkes should use the like deceit, who by inheritance have beene borne with gray haires, (who like the fruits that grow in the fields of Placençia, grow ripe before their time) it is no great marvell. Yet even these too (though better to be borne withall) give occasion of having that freely spoken of them, which they willingly would avoyd, whereby it comes to passe, that as they increase in yeeres, they decrease in credit. Young folkes

O thou unfortunate, miserable, and wretched old Age, thou sacred Temple; thou Sanctuarie of safety; thou stop to the desperate carreeres of this life; thou Inne of rest to our weary bones; How is it that thou art so much abhorred in this life, being that thou art the Haven, which all men desire to attaine unto? How is it that they, who respect thee a farre off, when they come neerer unto thee, sticke not to prophane thee? How is it, that thou being the vessell of Prudence, thou art derided as foolish? How is it, that thou that art honour it selfe, respect and reverence, art by those that are thy best friends reputed infamous? How is it, that thou being the Treasurie of knowledge, art despised and contemned? Either there is Old age, a venerable thing

Old age necessary, yet not regarded

some great defect in thee, or some evill disposition in them; whereof the latter is most certaine. They come unto thee (wanting the ballast of grave counsell and sound advice) like a Ship without sand or gravell in the Keele of her, to keepe her steady; through lacke whereof the Barke goes roulling and tottering to and fro, because their shallow braines want that due weight and counterpoyse, that should ballace their understanding, and keepe it straight and upright.

To this purpose I will tell you a tale, worthy of long consideration, though the discourse be short, and feigned for this effect.

A pretty Tale

When Jove had made the fabricke of this Universe, it seeming unto him, that all was faire and perfectly good, before he created man, he formed all other living creatures; amongst the which, the Asse being desirous to be the most remarkable and renowned of all the rest, (which had he not done, he had not beene an Asse) as soone as he had scarce newly opened his eyes, beholding this glorious and beautifull frame, he was wonderfull jocund and merry; began to leape and to skip from one place to another, and to bray (as they use to do) aloud (being the first trumpeter, that ever was in the world) till being quite wearied out, and glad to take his ease, being a little gentler and cooler then hee was before, it began to come in his minde; How, from whence, and when he was an Asse; for that he had not beene an Asse from the beginning, nor begotten by an Asse. Which made him to examine with himselfe why, and to what end he was created, and what place should be provided for him, where hee might take his rest; it being a thing proper unto Asses, to take the ends of things into their consideration, when they are already past all remedie, and (as we say) at the last cast, when the jollitie of their youth is past, their merry dayes spent and gone, and their pleasures at an end.

And yet would to God, that some would come to this amendment, and persever therein, *Que temprano se recoje, quien tarde se convierte.*[1] For he recals himselfe in time,

[1] *Temprano se recoje, quien tarde se convierte.*

that returnes at last. In this melancholy humour, my honest Asse comes me to Jupiter, humbly beseeching him, that he would bee pleased to reveale unto him, who he was, and for what end hee had created him? Jupiter told him, For the service of Man, and told him by piecemeale one after another, all those duties and services belonging to his charge, and what manner of burthens he was to beare.

CHAPTER III

Jupiter and the Asse

Which newes was so unpleasing unto him, that upon the very hearing of it, there suddenly came bruises and gallings upon his backe, and hardnesse of hoofes, with his head and eyes hanging downe to the ground for very griefe. And out of a conceited feare of his future labour, (for evils not yet indured, out of the noyse and rumour that they make, doe, at the first nomination of them, feare us more then when we afterwards prove them) he remained in that sad and melancholy dumpishnesse as we now usually see him, conceiting that to be a most yerkesome and painefull kinde of life whereunto hee was destinated.

Whereupon he farther intreated of Jupiter, that hee would be pleased to tell him, how long he was to lead this miserable life? Jupiter told him, he was to continue therein, the full tearme of thirtie yeeres.

The Asse hereupon began to mourne and grieve anew, it seeming unto him, to be as it were a perpetuall and eternall slaverie, if it should last so long: And therefore once more he humbly besought Jupiter, that hee would have compassion of him, and not suffer him for so long a season, to indure so hard a servitude. And being that he had not yet dis-merited of him, by any fault that he had committed against him, nor would (if otherwise he could choose,) ever offend him, that ten yeeres might suffice for his living in this base fashion; all which time he would faithfully promise unto him, to serve man wel and truly, like an honest Asse, with all meeknesse and fidelitie. And those other twentie, which were over and above remaining unto him, that he would bestow the over-plus of those yeeres upon some one, that were better able to beare them.

THE FIRST BOOKE

Jupiter being moved with these his humble and earnest intreaties (looking, poore silly foole, most pitifully,) granted him his request. Whereupon the Asse was not al-together so sad as he was before.

Jupiter and the Dogge

The Dogge, whose nature it is, to winde and sent out things, stood all this while attentively hearkening to all that had passed betwixt Jupiter and the Asse. And being desirous likewise to know something concerning his good or bad fortune; albeit hee carryed himselfe herein like a Dog, seeking to nose out that which was not lawfull for him; to wit, the secrets of the gods, which are only reserved to themselves, (of which nature are future things, and such as are to fall out hereafter;) yet notwithstanding his errour therein was worthy some excuse, because hee had the manners to crave this kindenesse of Jupiter, and did not, as some women doe, and some of those peradventure that now heare me, who without God, (but not without the Devill) seeke after Witches and Gypsies, to tell them their fortunes.

Witches and Gypsies, full of fraud and deceit

But how can they tell thee any good, who them-selves are so bad? They tell them a thousand lyes, and fraudulent inventions, and steale from them (be it good or bad) all that they can finger, leaving them afterwards amazed, ashamed, mocked, and deceived, and laught at for fooles as long as they live.

But to returne to our Story that wee have in hand; The Dogge came to Jupiter, and besought him, (seeing that he had proceeded with the Asse, his Companion, so graciously, giving him upon the hearing of his Petition, satisfaction to his demaunds) that hee would likewise affoord him the like favour.

The Dogs office

Who made him this answere; that his Office must be to runne a hunting, and to kill Hares, and Conies, but not to touch or eate one bit of them, but with all faithfulnesse to resigne them up unto his Master. And after wards, when he should returne home weary and stiffe with hunting, and following of his Game, he must be content to submit himselfe to be tyde to a post, to guard the house,

where he should wait the eating of late and little suppers, feeding on a few cold scraps, and bee glad to gnaw upon a bone, that had been already pickt and throwne away. And besides, (which was worse then all the rest) he should have many a bang about the loynes with a Cudgell, and many a spurne and kicke with the foot.

Then did he aske him againe, for how long a time hee should indure all this paine? Jupiter told him, thirty yeeres.

The Dogge, when he heard this his doome, was very much daunted, and discontented, as thinking it too intolerable a thing to be indured: But relying on that grace and favour, which Jupiter had shew'd the Asse (hoping that he should taste as much of his goodnesse, as his fellow before him) intreated him to take pitie of him, and that hee would not permit, that hee should receive so much wrong, and bee so hard and coursely used; for hee was the workman-ship of his hands, and no lesse his creature then was the Asse; and besides, he was more loving and faithfull, then all the other beasts of the field. And that therefore hee would vouchsafe the favour, if not to lessen the time of his troublesome life, yet at least to equall him with the Asse. Jupiter condescended. The Dogge, in token of his thankefulnesse, bowed his nose to the ground, remitting into his hands the remainder of those his other twenty yeeres.

Jupiter, and the Ape

Whilest these things were a doing, the Ape did not sleepe, but lay close, and listened very diligently to all that had past, longing to see what would be the end and successe of these their supplications. And because it is a peculiar propertie belonging to the Ape, to imitate that, which others doe, he would likewise in this follow his fellowes, being desirous also to know, what should become of him? Perswading himselfe, that hee that had shewed so much mercy to the Asse, and the Dogge, would take no lesse pitie of him.

Here-upon, he goes me to Jupiter, and humbly intreats him that hee would deigne to give him some light of that,

which was like to befall him in the passage of this his life, and for what end he had created him; for it was not a thing to be doubted, that he had made him in vaine.

The Apes office

Jupiter signified unto him, that it should for the present bee sufficient for him, onely to know, that he must goe trayling of a chaine upon the ground, with a great clogge at the end of it, that should continually accompanie him, and be bound as a Surety for him, in case he were not ty'de fast to some Post, or the barre of a Window; where, in the Summer hee should suffer heate, and in the Winter, cold; indure hunger and thirst; eating his meat, leaping, and skipping, and fetching many a friscall. And that for every bit they gave him, he must first make a thousand chatterings with his teeth, and as many mowes and mops with his mouth, in requitall whereof he should receive so many lashes with a whip, onely to provoke others to laughter, and to make them merry.

He thought this was hard teaching, he did not halfe like it, it was too curst a Schoole for him to bee trayned up in, and would then, (if he could) have made show thereof by his many teares; but putting a good face on the matter (as your Apes can when they list) and patiently brooking his hard fortune, he would faine likewise know, how long he must be ty'de to this hard course of life? He received that answere from him, as the rest had before, to wit, thirty yeeres.

Grieved with this answere, but comforted with the hope that he had in the all-mercifull Jupiter, he besought him that they might not be more then those of other beasts, and even those few, he thought were too many to be indured.

Jupiter made good his request, and granted him what he desired; and the Ape kissing his hand (as if hee had beene borne a Courtier) with a low Conge took his leave, and went away with his other Companions and friends; the Asse, and the Dogge.

Jupiter and the Man

After these things were thus finished and set in order, Jupiter at last created Man, making him a more perfect

creature then any of the rest, giving him an immortall and discursive Soule; He gave him power and dominion over all that he had created upon earth; making him the usu-fructuarie Lord thereof. Man was very well pleased therewith, and tooke great delight in beholding how goodly a creature he was; how faire and beautifull; how curiously organized; how handsomely shap't; how strongly set; how great and powerfull a Prince; insomuch that hee beganne to thinke with himselfe, that such an excellent fabricke, was worthy immortalitie. And therefore he intreated Jupiter to tell him; not, what should become of him hereafter, but onely, how long he was to live? Jupiter replyde; That when he first determined the creation of all kinde of living creatures, and more particularly of Man, hee was then resolved to have given every one of them thirty yeeres of life apiece. CHAPTER III

Man here-upon, beganne much to marvell, and wonder at the matter, that for so short a time, he had made so admirable a piece of worke; for in the opening and shutting of the eye, like unto a Flower, his life should passe away, and should scarce bring his feet from forth his mothers wombe, but that he is entring with his head into that of the earth, rendring up his body to the grave, not injoying his age, nor that delightsome and pleasant seat, wherein he had been created.

And therefore considering with himselfe what had lately passed betwixt Jupiter and those other three beasts before-mentioned, hee humbled himselfe before him, and with a lowly (but pleasing) countenance, bespake him thus:

How man should treat with God

Supreme Jupiter; if my demand shall not be troublesome unto thee, and against thy divine Orders and Decrees, (for my intent shall never extend it selfe to any the least breach of the least of them; nor shall I ever require any thing of thee, but what shall be fitting for me to crave, and shall stand with thy willingnesse to grant, alwayes conforming my will to thine) I humbly begge this boone at thy hands, that thou wilt bee pleased, (since that these brute beasts, unworthy of these thy favours, have refused that life which

thou gav'st them, the happinesse whereof, as being deprived of reason, they did not well understand, in that they have every one of them surrendred twenty yeeres of those, which thou granted'st unto them,) to bestow those yeeres upon me, which they have refused, that my life may thereby be inlarged ; and thou, by me, the better served.

Jupiter gave eare to this his Petition ; and granted unto him, that (as Man) he should live but his owne thirty yeeres. Marry when they were spent, hee should inherit those of the other three in their order.

First, he should enjoy the Asses twenty, supplying his Office, in moyling and toyling in the world, tumbling and tossing to and fro, first to one place, and then to another, carrying and re-carrying home and out againe, carking and caring to provide for the necessaries of this life. This thou must doe, (if thou meane to live another day) from thy thirty, to fifty.

Now from fifty to seventy, thou shalt live like a Dogge, barking at one, snarling at another ; grumbling at this, and growling at that, vexing thy selfe, and offending others.

And lastly, from seventy to ninety, thou must play the Ape, counterfetting those thy defects of Nature, and using of tricks and toyes, and I know not what foolish and fantasticall devices.

The folly of some old men

And hence is it, that wee often see in those that come to this Age (for all they be so old) would faine seeme young ; Tricking themselves up so neatly and so sprucely, jetting it (like yong Gallants) up and downe the streets in gay cloathes, visiting this Lady, making love to that Mistresse, and undertake, I know not what impossibilities, that they may be accounted jolly stout Gentlemen, representing that, which indeed they are not, even just for all the world, as the Ape doth, who is never quiet, nor thinkes himselfe well pleased, but when in his actions he is imitating man, though he can never come to be a man.

It is a terrible thing, and not to bee indured, that men will, in despight as it were of Time, (which discovers all deceits, and ought likewise to put them out of this their

errour) apply themselves to runne a course contrarie to the truth, and that with their tinctures, playstrings, lees, and slibber-slabbers, should play as it were with a Jugglers boxe, to coozen others, and discredit themselves.

As if by these Artifices, they could eate the more, sleepe the sounder, live the longer; or be troubled with the fewer infirmities and diseases; or that by this course they take, the teeth which they have shed, would come againe, or to keepe those from falling from them, which are yet remaining. Or as if by this meanes, they could repaire their feeble limmes; recover their naturall heat; quicken anew their old and frozen bloud; or as if thereby they did thinke they had the power in their owne hands, to make themselves what they list, and as lusty as they list: In a word, as if they were ignorant what the world talkes of them; when as they themselves talke of nothing else, then which is the better lye, and which the better dye; which either this, or that other man makes. Nor is all this, which I have now delivered unto you, much amisse from the purpose; being that I am to make my conclusion touching this point, the propositions consisting of two Gentlemen, both free-men of this foolish Company, for whose sake you have had the Premises.

A Tale of two Gentlemen, that dined with the French Embassador

My Lord the Embassador (as you have already heard) kept a free Table, was rich, and tooke greate pleasure in keeping a good house. And because all guests doe not alwayes give content; it one day hapned, that hee made a feast for the Spanish Embassador: and amongst divers other Gentlemen, there came two to dinner unto him, that were principall Persons: the one a Captaine; the other, a Doctor of Law: But to his Lordship both troublesome and wearisome alike, for the great pleasure that they tooke to heare themselves talke. Of whose impertinencies, and frivolous discourses, my Lord had in private some speech with me heretofore.

For albeit he tooke great delight and contentment in hearing men of wit and learning, speakers of truth, and such as were discreet in their carriage and behaviour; so on

the contrary, could he by no meanes indure any kinde of falsehood or lying, though it were but in jest and merriment.

Lyers and Flatterers, hated of all good men

He could not abide an Hypocrite, or a flatterer; plaine dealing with him was a jewell; He would, that mens words and workes should be simple, without sophistication, and truly noble, without any manner of doubling, and dissimulation.

And howbeit in these two men, there were very good motives and reasons to cause men to hate and abhorre them, yet I am of the minde, and hold it infallibly true, that in the liking, or disliking of this, or that man, one more then another, there is some Celestiall influence conspiring there-withall; and on these two had it wrought with great efficacie, and strong effects; for there was no man but did hate them.

My Master would faine have rid his hands of them, and have shak't them off, but he could not; for that they met him in the street in his way homeward, and would needs waite on him to his house, as men that did much honour his Lordship, and did owe him a great deale more service, then this their willing attendance upon his person, whereunto they owed all respect. So that my Lord (being so noble a Gentleman as he was) was driven by force to invite them to stay dinner, who had as it were by force accompanied him to his house. Nor is there any vexation, that can vexe a man more, then such petty vexations, which a man would faine put off, but knowes not handsomely how to doe it. O this incroaching kindenesse, what a crosse it is, when it shall be inforced upon a man whether he will or no, unlesse the one will be as uncivill as the other is impudent!

As soone as I saw my Lord enter within the gates, I perceived presently by his countenance, that something, what-ever it were, did trouble him. I looked earnestly upon him, and he understood my meaning. Hee told me what it was, (speaking unto me with his eyes, by casting them upon those two Gentlemen;) and I needed no farther instruction to direct me, what I had to doe.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER III

I held my peace for the present, and dissembled my anger, beginning to cast about with my selfe, what course I were best to take, to make these men, (who had so distasted my Master) a sport and laughing-stocke to all the rest of the company, and so make them pay dearely for their dinner.

I had no sooner entertained this thought, but there came presently into my head a pretty odde pranke, that made fit for my purpose. Nor did I take much paines in the finding of it out; for they came thither handsomely interlarded, and the jest, themselves had brought it along with them ready drest, and very well seazond. Only I expected a fit occasion, to set it before them, which was now neere at hand. But I did deferre it, till the last course should bee served in, and al-most ended, that it might take the better. For the mouth, that will be filled with laughter, must not have it's bellie emptie.[1] A merry heart, and a hungry maw, seldome meet. *Tanto se rie, quanto se come.* As a man likes his fare, so hee laughes; proportioning his mirth, according to his meat. The Cloth was laid, meat on the boord, the Guests were merry, healths went round, and when I saw their blouds grew warme, and that they were set upon the merry pinne, talking and laughing on all hands, some of one thing, some of another, a little before they were to wash, the Towell being not yet throwne on the boord, nor the Bason and Ewer set downe, I came close to the Captaines side, and rounding him in the eare, told him a notable *non sequitur*; He laught heartily at it; and being bound to requite me with another, made me bend downe my head towards his bosome, that he might the better tell it me in mine eare; and so in secret, we made two or three passages one upon another; and when I saw my time, and that it served fit for my purpose, I began to raise my voyce a note higher, and with a cheerefull looke, smiling merrily upon him, as if we had talked all this while of that which I shall now tell you, when (God he knowes) we had never a word of any such matter, I told him, No, my

Proverb

[1] *Que la boca se hincha de risa, no ha de estar el vientre hazio de vianda.*

THE FIRST BOOKE

Guzman puts a tricke upon the Doctor and the Captaine

Señor Capitan, no, you shall pardon me, I will not; if your Worship will vent it your selfe, you may better doe it then I, for you have a good tongue to put it home, and a better arme to maintaine it. I will hatch none of your egges (good Captaine) forth with them your selfe. For these are no fit and savory Jests, for such a poore Youth as I am, and being so great a servant of Master Doctors, as no man in the world can be more.

With that, my master, and all the rest of the Guests besides, began to crie out unto me at once, How now, Guzmanillo, what's the matter? I know not, Sir, unlesse my noble Captaine here long to see my crowne shaven, and to have me to take my Degrees, which it seemes, hee would faine have me to doe, seeking to set the Doctor and mee together by the eares, and put us to the paring of each others nayles, till wee bee both toucht to the quicke.

The Captaine, when he heard me say so, was frost-bitten, and marvelling what the mystery of this roguerie should be, suspected there was some knaverie in it, though he knew not what. And not knowing what to doe, fell a laughing, without speaking any one word at all.

But the Spanish Embassadour call'd unto me, and said, Friend Guzman, now by my life, you shall not smother it; what's the matter, I prithee? Let us know of thee, why at one and the selfe-same time, thou laughest, and yet seemest angry? It must needs be some good conceit or other, and therefore out with it.

Seeing your Lordship hath laid downe so great a pawne as your life, I shall (though loth, and much against my will) tell you what it is; and I protest unto your Lordship, that I had rather have held my peace; and had you not sworne by your life, I would sooner have had my tongue drawne backwards out of the nape of my necke, then to utter the least sillable of that which I shall now fully deliver unto you. Your Lordship shall therefore understand, that my Captaine here laid his Command upon me, that I would breake a jest upon this Doctor, my worthy and noble friend; girding at the cut of his beard; for he saith that

the fashion of his beard, is just for all the world like one of those upon your Flemmish Jugges, and that a-nights he puts it in a Presse, made of two thinne Trenchers scru'de wonderfull close, that no Ghitterne can be closer shut up in it's Case, that it may come forth the next morning with even corners, bearing in grosse the forme of a Broome, narrow above, and broad beneath, his Muchatos, Ruler-wise, straite and levell as a line ; and all the other haires, as just and as even, as a Privet hedge, newly cut ; answering each other in a uniforme manner, having the point thereof in forme of a Quadrant, drawne neatly out, that it might make the fairer and larger show. For such a goodly Beard accompanied with a Roman Bonnet, (like your Briefes and your Larg's in a Singing-mans Booke,) doth grace his lesser and grosser notes. As if this were sufficient to make him be held a great Scholler ; As if this faire out-side, were a qualification for him ; as if men had not seene your *Cavallos Argeles*, some horses with one only white foot on the farre side behinde, having all the other parts of their body of another colour, and yet come of a very good race. And some great block-heads, (though bred up in Universities,) whose ignorance is a great deale larger then their Gownes ; being like herein unto some kinde of Melons, which coozen us with the gloriousnesse of their colour, seeming to be good Melons to the show, but indeed are worse then Pompeons ; no stuffe, no goodnesse in them. And this is that, which my Captaine would have had mee said, as from my selfe. And this was it which made mee cry, No, no ; and that he should tell it himselfe, and he would, for I would none of it. This is all, my Lord : if there be more behinde, your Lordship may be pleased to lay your Command on the Captaine, who (I know) wil be ready in this, or any thing else, to doe your Lordship service.

The Captaine blest himselfe, when he saw whither I had driven the nayle, wondring at this my subtilnesse of witt, and cunning conveyance, himselfe and all the rest of the company laughing at it, but none of them witting whether it were a truth or a lye, that had past thus betweene us.

But my Doctor, having his head well warmed with Wine, knew not whether he were best to be angrie, or to turne it to a jest. But because they lookt still more and more upon him, and every ones eye was fixed on him, he pawsed a while, and carrying a countenance betwixt anger and shame, at last he vented himselfe, and spoke thus unto them :

My Lord, if my profession would permit it, that I should give my selfe that satisfaction, which such an impudencie as this deserveth, your Lordship might easily beleeve, that I would comply with that obligation, wherein I stand bound to my Progenitors, and the honour of my House.

But being that your Lordships presence doth priviledge this insolent boldnesse, and that this place will afford me no other weapons then my tongue, your Lordship may be pleased to give me leave to demand of this Captaine, How old he is ? For if that be true which he sayes, that he served the Emperour Charles the fifth in his warres, being with him at the battell of Tunez, how comes it to passe that he has never a white haire in all his beard, nor blacke one in his head ? And if he be so young, as he would seeme to be, why doth he say, that he was present with him, at such an ancient piece of service, and so long agoe as that was ? Let him tell us, I pray, in what Jordan hee hath washed, or to what Saint recommended himselfe ; to the end that we may all offer up Tapers to his shrine, and have recourse unto him for helpe, when we shall have the like need ? Let him first declare this, and then let him goe on with his game, and I will play mine as well as I can. And since he hath first trumped about, let us trie, who can soonest beate out one another and winne most Tricks. For there is no reason hee should so carry it away, nor shall he get any thing by his crossing of me, while I have a trumpe in my hand.

All the whole boord fell a laughing a-fresh, but especially my Master, for that two things were then treated, which of all other he did hate and detest, and desired the reformation of them, as no man more.

And having well observed all that had passed herein, hee said unto thee; Now tell me, Guzmanillo, what thou doest thinke of this? Since thou hast proposed the Argument, I will have thee to resolve the Question.

I then told him, All the Answer that I can make your Lordship, is only this: That they have both said Truth, and yet both of them lye in their beards.[1]

CHAPTER IV

The Doctor finding himselfe aggrieved, that Guzmanillo had wronged him in the presence of so many Gentlemen, would bee revenged of him. The Spanish Embassadour takes up the quarrell: The French causing another of the guests, that was there at Table, to relate an accident that befell the Constable of Castile, Don Alvaro de Luna

THEY did all highly commend the jest, and some did indeare it so farre, that the Doctor thereby was the more inraged, insomuch that they were sorry they had prest it so farre, and given it so great an applause.

But the Embassador of Spaine, through his great wisedome, threw in his Warder,[2] and tooke up the quarrell, making it (by his

[1] The Conceit consists in the word, Lye; for that they did colour the haires of their Beards, with lees made of purpose for that use.

[2] The Spanish word, is *meter el baston.* A metaphor borrowed from a Master of Defence, who when his Schollers grow hot and angry at play, throwes in his cudgell betweene them, whereupon they hold their hands. So that *meter el baston* signifies metaphorically, the reconciling of friends, when they begin to grow cholerick one with another.

discreet handling of the matter) a merry meeting onely of friends, where no exception was to bee taken at any thing that should merrily passe amongst them.

The Captaine was a good natur'd man, well behav'd, an old beaten Souldier, and a good fellow, who laught heartily at it, let it passe as a jest, and blessed himselfe, vowing and protesting, that hee never spake any one such word unto mee, nor was it ever in his thought to touch upon any such point. And though he were nipt, yet because he was a discreet Gentleman and a Souldier, (amongst whom now and then jests are broken, as well as Lances) should the Doctor have us'd him worse then he did, he would either not have heard it, or seeme to set light by it, for that he thought he had some reason so to doe, because what he then spake, came from him, as one that had beene much injur'd and abused.

The Doctor grows very angry with Guzman

But when the Doctor certainly knew, that I had been the onely Author of all this mischiefe, he did set upon mee in that fierce and terrible manner, that he did cut his words with his teeth, not being able to pronounce them plaine, through his too much eagernesse, and heat of choller. And hee would faine have risen from the table to have had me by the eares, and to have pummeld me soundly about the head and the nose, and to have buffeted my cheeks ; but they would not suffer him so to doe.

And seeing he could not be revenged of me as he would ; and having no other weapon left him to beat me withall but his tongue, he roundly laid about him, and letting the reines loose to his rage, he bestow'd his Livery upon me, calling me by all the vile names, that hee was able to reckon up ; whereof I made little reckoning ; but did rather helpe him on, by teaching him what he should say.

This madded him more then all the rest, to see mee thus mocke and scoffe at all that hee said, which made him breake out worse then before, and to grow farre more violent and outragious with me. For, as if this bitter jest had beene some Excommunication, that by a joynt consent, and generall Councell as it were, had gone out against

him, and that every one of us had a finger therein, he car'd not whom he paid; and almost, nay, more then almost, (if my Master had not stopt him in this his furious course, as one that knew well, what a huge dust, a foolish cholericke fellow will sometimes raise, both to his owne and others hurt) this businesse had growne exceeding foule.

The French Embassador seekes to pacifie the Doctor

He sought to pacifie him with the best reasons hee could then use unto him, as one that would faine turne the water another way, and divert these his evill intensions towards me; Which that hee might the better doe, hee beganne to shuffle the Cards anew, sundring the one from the other; and that hee might wholly cut off all that former offensive conversation, hee turned himselfe towards Cæsar, that Neapolitan Gentleman, who had told him of that sad accident, that had befalne Dorido and Clorinia (who was likewise one of his guests) and said unto him:

Señor Cæsar, since the hard hap, and untimely death of the faire Clorinia is now knowne to all Rome, and to these Gentlemen that are heere present, let us intreat you to doe us the favour, to deliver unto us, what became of constant Dorido; for I have a great desire to know how hee sped. That, and it may please your Excellencie (said Cæsar) you shall heare in its due place and time; for this is no fit season for it; it being not meet to mingle such mis-fortunes amidst our merriments, nor will it sute so well with this day of feast and jollity, especially considering what hath passed heere already to the disturbance of this good company, that are met heere of purpose to bee merry.

But since that wee have now dined, and the time of each mans taking his nap[1] drawes on, I will recount another Story unto you, which this present occasion represents unto me: Which for that it is a true one, I doubt not but yee will bee much delighted therewith. They all kindely entertained his proffer; and when he saw they were attentive to heare him, hee thus began:

The Constable of Castile, Don Alvaro de Luna, in the time of his greatest Greatnesse (his Honours increasing

[1] The Spanish word is *Siesta*.

THE FIRST BOOKE

A Tale of divers and sundry accidents of Love

dayly more and more) residing in Valladolid, tooke great pleasure in the Summer to rise betimes in the morning, to goe abroad to use some exercise, and to take the fresh aire of the fields. And after that hee had beene walking thus abroad, hee would (before the Sunne should bee able to offend him) with-draw himselfe home to his house.

But having one day amongst the rest inlarged his Walke, and intertained himselfe longer then he was wont to doe, in a pleasant garden, neere adjoyning to the River Pisuerga, recreating himselfe in beholding the varietie of the Walkes, the beautifull Flowers, the delicate Arbours, the shadie Trees, and savourie fruits, the heate entred in so farre, before hee was aware of it, that what out of his feare of not returning backe with conveniencie, and the content that hee tooke in this his sweet and delightfull recreation, he was resolved to remaine there, and to take his full pleasure of that place, untill such time of the evening, as the heates should bee over-past.

And whilest his other servants were busie in providing all things necessarie for his dinner, that he might the better in the meane while passe away the time, he intreated two Gentlemen, that accompanied him thither, the one Don Luys de Castro; and the other, Don Rodrigo de Montalvo, that each of them would tell him some Love-Story, whose successe had beene full of dangers, and full of cares, as none could bee greater. For, he very well knew, that these two Gentlemen were the onely Gallants then in Court, and great Lovers of Ladies, being both of them, besides Noble in their Name and Blood, discreet, valiant, active in their persons, of faire both feature and behaviour, curious in their cloathes, witty in their jests, un-offensively pleasant; in a word, so generally well qualified, and so adorned with all those ornaments, that might grace either their speech, or their actions, that they were very well able to give him that satisfaction upon this subject, as more could not bee desired. And the better to animate them on, he promised, in reward, a rich Diamond Ring, that hee then wore upon his finger, to him, whose tale, for the strange-

nesse of the successe, should best deserve it. Don Luys de Castro was first to beginne, and thus hee proceeded : CHAPTER IV

It may bee (my Lord Constable) that other Lovers, in the recounting of their misfortunes, goe painting and setting of them forth, with feined sorrowes, Hyperbolicall amplifications, such delicacie of phrase, and tendernesse of words, to worke compassion ; that with the smoothnesse of their stile, and the meltingnesse of their language, they move many to pitie ; and of these in this kinde much hath been written. But that really and truely stript naked of all kinde of dressing, and the neat cloathing of eloquence, there should happen in these present times a businesse of the like nature, as is mine, that I have now in hand, is a thing impossible. For it is one of the strangest, and the most to be wondred at, of all that ever I yet read, or heard of. And because your Excellencie is to bee my Judge in this case, I am very well perswaded you will acknowledge as much, when you know my sufferings.

Don Luys de Castro his Love-Story

I loved a certaine Lady of this Kingdome, that was a Virgin, and ful-filled with all those laudable and noble qualities, which might be found in any other who-soever ; being as faire and beautifull, as she was discreet and honest : whereof, (and much more then I will now speake,) I make Don Rodrigo de Montalvo heere present, my Witnesse ; as the onely friend, that bare mee company, and was thorowly acquainted with all that which past betweene us ; I serv'd her many, (and those the best part) of my yeeres with that punctualitie and secresie, that there was never any the least notice taken of it, yet still observing her with that diligence, as the like was never knowne ; and indevouring alwayes to give her all those contents, which she could possibly desire from me. For her I ranne at the Ring, and ever made my selfe one, at the *juego de toros, y cañas*, maintained Turneys, and Tiltings, ordained Royall Feasts, and Maskes ; and what not. And for to quit all suspition, and to carry the businesse so handsomely, that none might finde me out, and discover this my love ; nay, that they might not have any the least presumption thereof ; at all

these great and solemn meetings, my eyes were never placed upon her, but some other of the Ladies that were there, though shee notwithstanding did really and truely know, that those of my soule were never off on her, but still waited upon her, and that shee was the sole Mistris of my heart, and that for her sake onely, and none but hers, I invented all these honourable pleasures, and delightfull intertainments for her.

Upon these kinde of Feasts and Sports, and other the like occasions, directed onely to this end, I spent so much, that I wasted and consumed a great deale of wealth, letting my money fly the faster, in hope it might make her come the sooner; and selling away my possessions, that I might compasse the possessing of her; which was to me a treasure of more worth then all the world besides.

My father (it is well knowne) left mee wonderfull rich, both in goods, and in lands, but in short, I sent it packing; and past away one thing after another, till in the end I became so poore, that your Lordships favour is the onely prop that doth uphold mee, without the which I must have falne. And though this (I must tell you) be none of the least griefes, to see a Gentleman of such parts and qualities as my selfe, to be outed of all that hee has, to become so poore and needy, that necessitie must tye him to serve, who was wont heretofore to be served; (howbeit, I acknowledge it a happinesse unto me, that I am your Lordships servant.)

A free contented life the best

Though I must confesse withall, they are the happier men, and the more beholding to fortune, who leade a quiet and secure life, free from other mens commands, not beating their braines, nor breaking their sleepes, in seeking meanes, how to creepe into this mans favour, or to scrue himselfe into that, or t'other Lords good grace and opinion.

But of all my misfortunes, the greatest that ever befell me, and which sits closest to my heart, and doth fret the very soule of me, and fill it with anguish, was, That my Mistresse having intertained me with false hopes, and vaine promises, vowing, that she would never bestow her favours upon any other, but that in recompence of my constant

love, she would be married unto me, where-unto she plighted me her faith and troth. But whether these were the words of a woman, or the workes of my short fortunes; now when she saw my meanes were spent, and my selfe growne poore, un-mindefull of all those indearements, vowes and protestations that had past betweene us, shee shooke off that hand of hers from mine, to whom she had first given it, and gave it to another, and forsaking me, married him; failing (false as she was) in her faith, and qualitie: for scorning my poore condition, and not esteeming those my other good naturall parts, she made choyse of those goods of fortune, taking a Husband farre unequall to her selfe; for, as he exceeded in wealth, so he did in yeeres. But such is the force of money, that it can supply all defects, and drive unequall matches, to draw in one yoke. CHAPTER IV

Thus have I briefely discoursed unto your Lordship touching my love, shewing you how happy the beginning was, and how disastrous the end. And although (that I might not weary and tyre out your Lordship, I have beene so briefe, that the shortnesse of my Discourse may seeme to lessen my misfortunes, and the miseries that I then indured;) yet I presume, your Lordships discretion will supply that want, and fully conceive what, and how great they were; As also take into your consideration, how many troubles they have suffred, and how many perils they dayly runne thorow, who wing their thoughts with such high-flying feathers, and who use such great diligence and secrecie in the carriage of their love, to the end that nothing on their part should be wanting, which they thought belonged to their dutie, in that behalfe. Which my selfe had speciall care of.

I doe not thinke that either Don Rodrigo, or any other Gentleman whatsoever can instance in a successe of more misfortune then this of mine; for that loving her with that firmenesse and constancie, (as I did) and serving her with that love and faithfulnesse, (as none possibly could be more;) I lost my time, I lost my meanes, and last of all

(to make the roll of my miseries the fuller) I lost my Mistris. Only there is left unto me by fortune, (in exchange of these my many mischances) the receiving of this Ring, by way of reward.

And here Don Luys made an end of his amorous discourse, and Don Rodrigo de Montalvo entred upon his, in manner following :

The Ring (Don Luys) is none of yours, you have lost it, and I ought of right to have it. And turning himselfe towards the Constable, he thus went on in his speech :

Most noble Sir, Though I confesse that to be true, which Don Luys hath delivered unto your Lordship, for that I was an eye-witnesse of all this businesse, in regard of that great love and friendship, which was ever betweene us ; yet now at this present, he hath no reason to pretend the Diamond ; for if he would but free himselfe of passion, and put on temperate consideration of the passages in this his love, and that he and I might but change places, I doe assure my selfe, that he would judge this cause in my favour, and give sentence against himselfe. But being that he is now blinded so with passion, that he can not discerne things with indifferencie ; your Excellencie may be pleased to judge first of his Love, and afterwards to censure the bad successe of mine : which shall take it's beginning from the end of his, which your Excellencie hath already heard him recount. And thus (may it please you to give me the hearing) did things passe.

It is not long agoe, that he and I went walking abroad neere to this River side, where now we are, talking and discoursing of some things farre out of the reach of our hopes ; when unlooked for, there came to Don Luys, an ancient servant belonging to this Gentlewoman his Mistresse, from whom he secretly delivered him a Letter. Which he having opened, and read it over, when he had done, he gave it me, that I likewise might peruse it. Which I did againe and againe, wondring very much at the Contents thereof. For which cause, (as also having a reasonable

good memorie,) I carried it all away ; which speaketh after this manner : CHAPTER IV

Deare Sir, you have little reason to accuse me of ingratitude, only because it seemes unto you, that you have some just cause so to doe. For it is not possible that any one should forget (as you have thought of me) him, whom he truly loves. And since I know mine owne Obligation, and your constancie, I would have you likewise to understand (though perhaps you will not acknowledge so much) that I neither now doe, or have heretofore committed any fault against you. And that my Actions did not correspond with your deserts, the reason was, because they could not stand with that Decorum, which was due to my Mayden-state, and the danger that might insue thereupon. My Marriage with you (which I desired more, then I did mine owne life) the obedience of a Daughter did disturbe, and the Commands and earnest importunities of my Parents, who were violently carryed away, moved thereunto by vaine interest, and the Title of a Countesse, which I hold against my will, since they did force me to yeeld my body unto him, to whom I could never surrender my soule, being in condition and yeeres so contrary unto me. I have beene yours, I am yours, and shall be yours all the dayes of my life. I shall give you to understand, that the Count my Husband is to undertake a long journey ; hasten hither unto me as soone as you can, and bring no other person along with you save your friend Don Rodrigo. And when you shall come to this Towne, you shall finde in a Heremitage adjoyning thereunto, order given you for that, which you are to doe. Love me with all your heart (as you were wont) and as I doe. And live you as happily, as I wish you ; Concluding my Letter with deare imbracements, which attend your comming.

These were the Contents of the Letter ; which Don Luys having well seene and considered, did expect nothing lesse, then what was therein contained, which was the only thing he wished and desired above all other happinesse in this world. So that if I would, yet I should not be able to

expresse unto you, those amorous passions that he then felt. He read it over and over, dwelling upon every word and sillable of this Letter. He looked upon every line, more then once or twice, weigh'd them as a man would weigh gold; and when he had ballanced them in his judgement, and found they were not light, but bare their full poyze, putting them to his mouth, hee kist them a thousand and a thousand times over. Hee first look't earnestly on the Letter, then on the bearer, and my selfe, as if he stood expecting that wee should speake our mindes, and with a loud voyce proclaime the certaintie of this his promised good, and the great content that he tooke in this fortunate, but unexpected newes. For as yet he doubted thereof: but at last, when he had recollected his spirits, which had beene all this while a wool-gathering, with somewhat a troubled, but more cheerefull countenance, he said unto me, What is this (Don Rodrigo) that we see? Am I out of my wits? Or is this a dreame? Art thou sure, that it is thee and I, that have read this Letter? Is this happely the Countesses Letter, this her owne hand? and that, her old Servant? Doth my judgement peradventure faile me? Or, as an afflicted Lover, growing on to desperation, doe I feigne imaginations to my selfe, to deceive my phantasie?

After that he had thus continued a while, driven to and fro with these distractions, as a Boat that waves this way and that way, having the tyde with it, but the winde against it; I assured him, that these were not illusions, or idle apparitions, but things really true, and that carried along with them assured hopes of recovering and injoying his lost Jewell. And thereupon I heartened him on, that he should hasten his departure with all possible speed, that he might comply with that, which his Mistresse had given him in charge. This was presently put in execution; for we streight tooke horse, and away we went. And when we came to the Heremitage, we found therein a very grave and reverend Dame, who, for that she had notice given her before hand, of the day and houre that we

were to come thither, stayd there, expecting of our comming. CHAPTER IV

Now, when she knew that we were the men she looked for, she delivered us a Message, the effect whereof was this; That her Lord, the Conde, was gone forth upon his journey, but was now newly returned, by reason of a certaine indisposition of body that seazed on him upon the way: But intreated us notwithstanding, that we would have the patience to stay there, till she went to the Palace, to acquaint her Lady the Countesse, of our comming. She went; we staid; I much amazed, and Don Luys quite out of heart; I for those difficulties, which might offer themselves; He in considering his crosse fortune, which did never leave off to persecute him.

Now, while this good woman was gone upon her errand, in the meane while, till she should make her returne, we ranne over many stories, and I know not what idle tales and discourses, which being of different subjects, are not fit to be inter-serted with this that we have now in hand.

Well, about eleven a clocke at night, shee came backe againe unto us, and told us, we must follow her. We did so. The darknesse of the night did much befriend us, so that by this good helpe, she brought us unseene, and with much secrecie, into a Lodging in the Palace, where we no sooner were, but the Countesse comes forth, and receives us with extraordinary tokens of joy and gladnesse. And after that some few ceremonies were ended, and that the *Para-bienes* had past to and fro of this long desired interview, which Compliments were very short and briefe, the Countesse said unto mee, Don Rodrigo; the time, that is now offred unto us, to injoy this faire occasion, you, in your owne discretion may judge, how soone it will be gone. You know likewise the obligation of true friendship, and the firme affection, which you have alwayes made shew to beare unto Don Luys: but say, this should faile (which I no way mis-doubt,) yet for my sake, who beg it at your hands, you are bound in courtesie to grant me my request.

THE FIRST BOOKE

You have already understood, how the Count my husband not finding himselfe halfe well, returned (being well advanced on his way) backe from his journey, who came home so weary, that he presently got him to bed, where I have left him fast asleepe. But because it may so fall out, that in turning or waking, hee should stretch out a legge or an arme, towards that side of the bed where I lye, and should finde my place empty, and no body there, it must be a great deale of danger, that I must runne, besides the great scandall, that would grow thereby to the house, that therefore, whilest your friend Don Luys and my selfe shall entertaine the time in talke, (which at the most shall bee but some quarter of an houre, or there-abouts,) you would be pleased to goe lye downe in my place, and remaine there in bed, that I may in the meanewhile abide the safer here. And I will assure you on my honest word, that you shall not thereby incurre any danger. For besides that the Count is old, and that he never wakes a-nights, untill it be broad day, and doth seldome or never turne above once, and then presently fall asleepe againe; Hee is so tyred with his journey, and of that indisposition of body at this present, that there is no feare to be had, that hee will so much as but offer to stirre, or move himselfe at all. But say hee should, and that he should turne and touch you, for the foresaid reasons, he will not dreame of any bodies being there but my selfe.

God he knowes (and your Excellencie may conceive) how much it troubled mee, that the Countesse should put mee upon such a perilous piece of service. But because the actions of cowardize are so foule in themselves, and so ill-beseeming a Gentleman, it seemed unto mee, that if I should now fly off, and refuse to undergoe this businesse, I should not give satisfaction either to mine owne Honour, or my friends Love, or the Countesses request, I told her, I would very willingly, and with all my heart doe her this service: but withall, did very earnestly intreat them, that they would not stay too long in the intertaining of their loves, seeing they were not ignorant of the danger, where-

into for their sakes I did thus voluntarily thrust my selfe. They promised, nay swore unto me, that they would not; and that at the most she would not tarry away above halfe an houre.

The Countesse put mee into a night-dressing, and a Smocke: and when I had put off all my cloathes, shee led me along to her With-drawing chamber, and afterwards made me to lye downe in her bed. There was no light at all in the Chamber, all was as darke as hell, and in a still silence. I softly laid my selfe downe upon the very edge and brimme, as it were of the bed, as farre from the Count, as I possibly could devise, and in that manner, I remained there, not a quarter, or halfe part of an houre, but five good long houres and more, till it was breake of day.

Now let every man consider and thinke with himselfe, in what a poore case I was, being in such a place as this, and at such a time; with what a deale of care that I might not be knowne, and with what a deale of feare, lest this deceit should be discovered, and did least of all thinke on that, which did most concerne me, which could bee no lesse then death, if the Count should chance to awake. For in regard that I went in thither naked, and unarmed, I must fight it out with my fists onely, and try how the strength of my armes would helpe me; and admit I should have struggled with the Count, and had the fortune to escape his hands, yet could I not those of the servants of his house, because I knew not how, nor which way to order my flight.

But these were not all the griefes I then indured, they went on a little farther. For Don Luys and the Countesse, did laugh and talke so loud, that I might heare every word almost that they said, as I lay in the bed, where-with my feare was much increased, lest happely their dis-composed carriage might chance to awaken the Count; and it did mightily vexe me, and almost mad mee, that I could not call unto them to keepe lesse noise, seeing they would not yet breake company, it grieving me to the very soule, that

they should seeme as forgetfull of themselves, as they were of mee. This made me to bite my fingers ends for very anger; as also, that I durst not for mine eares stirre a jot from the place where I lay, for feare of spotting mine honour; and lesse did I dare to call unto them, for feare of waking the Count.

After all these lingrings, and fearefull passages, when they saw that day was now so nigh, they came both of them laughing hand in hand to the beds side, with a light in their hand, (I being frighted almost out of my little wits) where they sportingly frisked and skipped about me, making a great noise, as well with their tongues, as their feet.

Then I beganne to imagine with my selfe, that through too much content, they had both runne madde. So that now, I was as sorry for their misfortune, as mine owne; for that the infamie and punishment was like to be generall, and to light upon us all, not permitting any to escape; upon them, for offending; upon me, for consenting. I was in that pittifull taking, that within a very little space, I had a thousand imaginations in my head, but not one that could doe me any good, or stand me in stead.

And whilest I was thus puzzled, in the midst of my greatest conflict, they drew neerer to the bed it selfe; and the Countesse drawing the Curtaine, that we might now plainely see one another, then was I quite out of my sences; insomuch that I would have faine fledde away, had I well knowne whither: but I quickly came to my selfe againe. For I, who had hitherto thought, that I had the Count lying by me; the Countesse lifting up the cloathes of the bed, cleered that errour, and gave me to understand, that it was not hee, but the Countesses Sister, a pure Virgin, yet as faire as Venus. Whereat, as likewise the jest, (which I now perceived they had put upon me) I was so ashamed, and dasht out of countenance, that for my life I was not able to speake a word, nor knew not what in the world to doe, but to rise up in my smocke (for in that case was I

then) and to get me out to looke my cloathes; so that my feare before was not halfe so much, as my shame was now. Let your Excellencie therefore be pleased now to consider into what danger I did put my selfe, and then to give your judgement, which of us two doth best deserve the Ring.

The Constable, laughing heartily hereat, said in the end, That Don Luys had no reason to complaine of his Love; seeing, though late, and with a great deale of cost and trouble, yet at length hee had obtained his desire; so that hee could not be a deserver of this promised reward. And Don Rodrigo, as little; for that hee was not in any danger by sleeping with the Count; howbeit, the jest they had put upon him, was a witty and a good one. And therefore his Sentence was this, that neither of them deserved the Diamond; yet, taking it off from his finger, he consign'd it to Don Rodrigo, with condition that he should send it as a token to this Gentlewoman, by whose side he lay; for that shee onely had incurred the danger, and had also runne the hazzard of her honour, if she had beene knowne what she was.

With this, they gave an end to their Love-Discourses, they all remaining very well satisfied. And it being afterwards discussed, whether the Constables Sentence were discreet and just; all the Courtiers highly commended it.

And so every mans businesses, calling some one way, some another; this conversation was broken up, and taking their leave of my Lord Embassador, they went whither their occasions call'd them.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER V

A Romane Matrone, not knowing how to free her selfe (without suffering in her Honour) from the perswasions of Guzman de Alfarache, who sollicited her in his Lords behalfe, the French Embassador, put a jest upon him, which was the occasion of a second disgrace that afterwards befell him

The nature of Lightening

THEY that write of Lightening, report, (and wee see the same confirmed by experience,) that so great is its pride, that scorning the weaker, it workes its effects on the strongest. It breakes the steely hardnesse of the Sword, and leaves the scabberd whole : it splits in sunder, and rendeth up by the rootes the strong and sturdy Oake ; and not once toucheth the feeble and yeelding Cane. It over-turnes the tops of your highest Towers, and levelleth your stately buildings with the ground ; and pardoneth your poore Shepheards humble Cottage, that is made of ill composed twigges. It killeth your biggest beasts, and cracketh man, as if hee were but Potters Clay, in pieces ; it bruiseth and breaketh the bones, and leaves the cloathes untoucht ; it melteth Silver, Gold, Metall, and Money, and yet hurts not the Purse wherein it is put. And albeit, it be of this proud nature, and haughty condition, yet is its force broken, in its comming to ground. This onely is that, which makes its resistance against it. And therefore, in such tempestuous times, those that doe feare its terrible effects, doe use to get themselves into Caves, or to hide themselves deepe under ground, because that they know, they are there safe and free from danger.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER V

The violence of Youth is such, that wee may truely compare it unto Lightening; for it never bends its force against things that are fragile, soft, and gentle; but doth commonly aspire to things of greatest difficultie, and such as are beyond all reason of atchievement; it observeth no Law; it excuseth no kinde of Vice; it is a Horse that runnes on in his Carreere, without an eye to its way, or once thinking on the place, or the end, where he is to take up himselfe, and make his stop. It alwayes followes its owne furie; and like an untamed Colt, will not suffer himselfe to bee saddled by reason; and without it, disturbs both himselfe and others, not induring any burthen, bee it never so light: In such sort it flyes out, that it will not (no though you let it have its owne will) be at quiet with it selfe. And yet this being so furious a beast, as wee have heere set forth unto you, it is onely corrected by humilitie; this (and nothing but this) tames and keepes it in order. This is that earth, against which its force cannot prevaile; this that Dock, that drives out the Nettle; and this that Fort, where it findes its safety. Insomuch, that there is not any good to bee hoped from that young man, who shall not be humble. For that youth in its selfe is the entrance to evill, and the doore that opens unto sinne.

The violence of youth, compared unto Lightening

The defects and various effects of youth

I was wantonly bred up, suffered too much to have mine owne will: I would not indure reproofe, much lesse correction. And for that Wisedome is the Daughter of Experience, which is gotten by the trans-cursion of Time, it was not much, that I should erre as being a Youth. But that having befalne me (which you heard before) in the love that I made at Malagon, and Toledo:[1] And being that I should, like the Dogge which is scalded with hot, feare also cold water; after all these faire warnings, it may seeme somewhat strange, you will say, that I should give any more credit unto women, and that I should suffer my selfe to be taken anew in their snares. That I should be such an Asse, as not to know, by my many the like experiences, that they alwayes goe subtilly to worke with us, and deale

Ill education, the cause of all Vice

He is a foole, that makes himselfe a prey to Women

[1] See the first Part.

deceitfully; which must either be imputed to our too much simplicitie, or must otherwise be attributed to the intemperate passion of our appetite. And would to God this foolishnesse of mine might here make it's stop, and here in this Port set up my *Plus ultra*, by erecting the pillars of my wofull proofes, and often skarrings, without (as you shall see here-after) my frequent fallings into the like weaknesses; being unable to make my vaunt, that I had once got of them by the hand, and made my party good with them. But because he that loves, doth alwayes make a free donation to the partie, whom he loveth, of his will, and of his senses, it is no marvell, if being stripped of them, multiplying my errours, I commit a thousand fooleries.

A story of the French Embassadours love

My Lord Embassadour fell in love with a principall Gentle-woman, nobly descended, whose name was Fabia; her husband, a Gentleman of Rome; before whose house I did often use to walke; whereof, no small notice was taken, and he himselfe began to conceive some suspition of me, though without any just cause; for she for her part never gave consent thereunto. But because every man may love, protest, and runne his head, if he will, against a Wall, and none shall hinder him; my Master did that, which his passion did dictate unto him, and she, that which was befitting both her owne, and her husbands honour.

Proverb

True it is, that we were not so blinde, that we could not see thorow the holes of a sive;[1] for although we were deprived of the cleerer kinde of light, yet we had some glimpse and glimmering thereof, though it were but little. Her husband was old, poore, and ill accoutred; three strong and powerfull enemies against a woman, that was young, faire, and well brought up. For these reasons, and by the helpe of a Maid of hers (which had beene a Virgin heretofore) but was now my sweet-heart, and mine owne deare Love, I was verily perswaded, what by the meanes that she, and what by those, that my selfe should use, as also by making benefit of the fore-said occasions, we should

The greatest enemies, that a faire woman hath

[1] *No estavamos tan ciegos, que dexassemos de ver por la tela de un cedaço.*

easily get the game. But who, (save such an unlucky and unfortunate Rogue, as my selfe) could have lost so faire a set, having such store of sound Trumpes, and other good Cardes in my hand? But I had wonderfull crosse-Carding, and every tricke that I plaid, fell out to the worst; so that, *No es todo façil, quanto lo pareçe*; A man may be deceiv'd, when he thinkes himselfe most sure. Vertue will trip up the heeles of Vice, and winne the Goale away from him, play he never so cunningly; Nor is there any thing in the world, that can make a vertuous woman to spot her honour. CHAPTER V Proverb

When this Gentlewoman understood, what had passed betwixt my selfe and her servant, she began to devise with her selfe, how she might be revenged on us both, without any hurt to her selfe, but as much prejudice as might be, both to my person, and the plot that was laid betweene us, for the effecting of my Lords desires. And this she did the rather, for that she saw, that her waiting-Gentlewoman, for my sake, did so earnestly sollicite this cause, and that for my interest, and to doe me a pleasure, she did follow this businesse with all care and diligence, taking her fit times to put her often in minde thereof, not suffring a Card to passe without a Vie, and some-times making many false ones, using many other tricks, as she was well skill'd in them, and knew handsomely how to put them home: Insomuch, that when this honourable Matrone saw, she could not be in quiet for her, but was thus hardly set upon in her owne house, and barked at abroad in the street by a company of malicious mouthes, she made no Vociferations, nor Out-cryes, no squeamish replies, no cunning impostures, which some women use to doe, for to qualifie their honestie, that under that shield, they may ever after the more safely offend. For, an honest woman will, by honest meanes, manage her affaires; not beating the ayre with her clapper, nor ringing out the bell that hangs in her mouth, so loud, that all men may heare the sound thereof, and censure her accordingly, and give every one occasion thereby to construe her Actions, as they list themselves. For in regard the good are the fewest, the most doe judge amisse: And The wickednes of some servants

the reason of this ill is, beeause they themselves be ill. And this eommon voyee ehoaketh a good name, as your Tares doe corne.

The different carriage of a woman tempted to lewdnesse

Now, as this Gentle-woman was a Romane, so did she performe a Romane Act. She knowing, that we went about to worke her overthrow, she wisely sought to prevent it, feigning her selfe to be somewhat touehed with Loves passion, and that she was now upon the point of yeelding, if not wholly overcome.

One day, when her Maid was making of her ready, and was instant with her in this businesse, looking upon her with a smiling and cheerefull countenance, she said unto her, Nieoleta, (for so was she ealled) I assure thee, that if thou hadst not wrought upon me, using so many strange inventions, and hadst not spent so many elaborate and well studied words in this suit of thine, thou hadst e're this made that will of mine to yeeld, whieh hath hitherto stood out so long. For I wish well unto Guzman, and approve his discreet proeeeding in this businesse. Besides, his Master is of that merit, that any woman whatsoever, be she of never so honourable qualitie, without being so mueh sollicited, as I have beene, ought to imbraee his love and friendship, and offer her service unto him. But as thou thy selfe both knowest, and seest, I doe not know how it will be possible, that this our Treaty shall be seeure from seandalous tongues, being that now upon no just eause given, and I for my part having as yet yeelded no consent unto that, whieh perhaps I so mueh desire, that is whispered already in every eorner, nay thorow all Rome, whieh neither in mine owne house, nor with thee, (whieh canst only be the instrument of our pleasures) did I ever yet eommunieate. And sinee it is now eome to this passe, that the popular voyee runneth on with so great libertie, and that I am not able any longer to hold out in withstanding the love of this noble Gentleman, all that I will intreat at thy hands, is; that thou wilt dispose and order it, with the greatest seereeie that may be. Speake therefore to Guzman, that he waite and attend here-abouts for some few nights, for I

will finde opportunitie some one night or other, to give him entrance, that I may see him, and talke with him concerning the carriage of our loves.

Nicoleta fell downe upon her knees to the ground, not knowing, which she should kisse first, her feet or her hands, with a face set all on fire with too much joy : for a great while together, she never left giving of her thankes, qualifying the easinesse of effecting it, and disgracefully laying open the faults of her old Master. Then did she reduce unto her remembrance those former distates, which she had received from him ; in what wretched estate, through his miserie, she liv'd in ; his base kinde of carriage, and what drie fodderings he did give her, and all, that she might incourage her the more to goe bravely on in this her resolution, which she did simply beleeve, she had now entred into.

Hereupon she came forth-with flying unto me, flinging her armes abroad, and strongly twining them about my necke, she claspt me as hard as she could for her life, demanding *Albricias*[1] at my hands. Which when she had received, she would relate unto me what had past betweene her and her Mistresse. I tooke her by the hand, leading her along with me, (as those that carry with them the spoyles and trophees of some famous victorie) into my Masters withdrawing Chamber, where, with a great deale of joy wee celebrate this gladsome newes ; plotting and contriving with our selves touching the houre, how and where I might best finde entrance to speake with Fabia. And my Master giving to Nicoleta a little Purse which he had in his Pocket, cramm'd with Spanish Pistolets, she made as if she were unwilling to take them of him, but did not all this while cloze her fist, nor pull backe her hand, but out of modestie held it betweene forward and backward like a Phisician, when he is offred more then his fees, and with a jocund smile, gave him thankes for this his courteous liberalitie ; and with this, she tooke her leave both of him and me. But my Master continued with me, rendring me

[1] A reward for good newes.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

an account of his love, and I giving him the *Para-bien* thereof, in which kinde of discourse, and the like, we spent all that Evening. And when it was night, at the appointed houre, I tooke up my standing, gave the watch-word, and made such signes, as were ordred betweene us, but neither that night, nor some three or foure more following, could this agreement made betweene us, take effect.

One day amongst the rest, there hapned to fall a small, but withall a shrewd driving raine, wherein at my wonted houre I was to make my accustomed walke, being dabbled (as they say) up to the girdle.[1] I came thither reasonable well wet, the night being very darke, which suited not amisse with my fortunes. It was my hap (but would to God it had never hapned) to have the end of my desires. And for that, in things of interest, and matters that concerne our pleasure and content, it importeth much, to cast off all feare, and to undergoe all difficulties with a daring resolution, I did shew more courage at that time, then became discretion, in that I was so forward to come to the Call, beating my fore-head against the Walls and corners of the house, when the raine powred downe on my head from heaven, and my feet stood up to the ankles in durt. As soone as I had given the signe, it was knowne who was there, yet notwithstanding they made me to waite a good while in the raine, till I was so thorow-wet, that the water that came in at my Pole, dropt out at my knees, and went guttring downe into my shooes: and then at last, after I had beene a long time in this cold bath, they called unto me, and willed me to have the patience to stay yet a little longer.

Proverb

In the end, when all my cloathes and my selfe were dung-wet, and that I had not a drie thred about me, I might perceive the doore to open very softly, and Nicoleta to call unto me. And then (mee thought) that very breath which came from that voyce, brought that comfortable heate with it, that I was thorow-drie all over on the sudden. Now did I no more thinke on my fore-passed troubles, being cheered

[1] *Con lodos hasta la cinta.*

up with the sight of the *Fregonçilla*[1] of my soule, and the comfortable hope of injoying the beloved Fabia. Nicoleta and I exchanged but a few words; for she had scarce bid mee welcome, when lo, her Mistresse came downe, and calling to her servant, said; Doe you heare (Nicoleta?) Get you up, and see what your Master is a doing, and if he chance to aske for me, come and call me, whilest I in the meanewhile stay talking here with Señor Guzman. CHAPTER V

Now, all this *interim* we were in the darke, so that we could scarce discerne one another, and if we did, it was as much as possibly we could doe. Then did she begin to question me concerning my health, and how it was with me, as if she had seemed to wish very well unto me, or as if my welfare had beene a matter of importance, and much to her contentment. I replyde unto her with the like demand. That compliment performed, I delivered her a large message from my Master, in acknowledgement of those many thankes which he did owe unto her, for the undeserved favours which she had vouchsafed to shew unto him, and how great a servant hee was of hers, inlarging this Theame with an elegant Oration, which I had studied of purpose only to this end. But before I was come to the conclusion thereof, and when I was in the greatest force of this Argument, and my words began to gather strength for the gaining of her good will, I could not fasten her farther attention, nor like Waxe, worke her as I would; because she seeming to be amazed and startled with some sudden perturbation, abruptly said unto me:

Guzman notably mocked by Fabia: And in what manner

Señor Guzman, as you love my life, let mee intreat you to hold me excused; for with a conceived feare, that at this present instant hath seazed upon mee, me thinkes, every bodies eye is upon mee, all in the house watch and observe me. And therefore for Gods sake, let me intreat you to enter in heere this way, and there right over against you, you shall finde a lodging Chamber, get you quickly

[1] A Maid servant, that washes and starches, and does the like services of keeping all things cleane. *Muger de buen fregado. La dishonesta que se refriega con todos.* Covarruvias, p. 413.

into that, and tarry there till I have given a turne or two about the house, to see if the coast bee cleere, and all my people safe, and I shall presently returne againe unto you ; but I pray have an especiall care in the meane while, that you stand still, and make not any the least noise in the world. I gave credit unto her, and went straight on as she had directed mee, and thinking that I had gone athwart a little open entry, making more haste then good speed, I lighted ere I was aware, into a huge beastly Hog-sty, that stood in a filthy durty Court,[1] where I had no sooner gone some two or three steps, but I stumbled (through too much haste) upon a great dung mixen, and fell with my head just against the wall, giving my selfe such a sound knocke, that I lay there for a while senselesse. But with that little life that was left me, by little and little I came to my selfe againe, and scrambling up as well as I could, I went groping along the walles with my hands (as children doe that play at Blind-man-buffe) to see if I could finde out this appointed Chamber : but I could finde no other out-let, save that whereby I had made my entrance. I rounded it once againe, imagining with my selfe, that by reason of my new received blow, I could not haply meet with it so upon the sudden.

And wandring thus up and downe this Maze, it was my hap to light upon a little narrow Lane, as it were, whereat there was no going forth, having a house of Office at the end of it, ill covered, and that not wholly neither over-head, where was onely the t'one halfe of an old broken great Pitcher, which was full of Ordure, beeing fixed fast to the ground, and beastly berayd round about, yeelding no very sweet sent, whereby I began to conjecture the danger I was in, and to consider with my selfe the many mis-fortunes that had befalne me.

Well, when I saw how the world went, I sought to get out where I came in : but I found the doore was shut fast upon mee, and that there was no hope of getting forth. It

[1] The Spanish word, is *patio, la parte de la casa descubierta.* Covarruvias, verb. *Patio.*

rained extremely, and showred downe so fast upon me, CHAPTER
that I was forced to shelter my selfe under that poore V
miserable old ruinous open, I cannot tell whether I should tearme it rather Hovell, then House, standing up to the knees in durt, whose perfume was none of the pleasingest.

There did I passe over the remainder of that night, which was farre worse, then that I indured at Toledo, and of no lesse perill to my person, then that which I was put to in the house of the proud Genoves, my kinsman.[1] Nor was it onely the falling of the raine, that did now afflict mee, which came not drizling or mizling downe upon mee; but with a full and open gutter, and when at least, with drops as bigge as Pease. But I beganne to thinke with my selfe what should become of mee; for I could not but imagine, that she that had made that Mouse-trap for me over-night, would the next morning deliver me over to the Cat.

After this conceit had runne a while in my head, I entred into other discourses, wherewith I might comfort my selfe, saying; Free me (O God) from the stormy blustring Northerne windes of this tempestuous night, and give me leave to escape with life till it be day, that when the Master of the Ship shall finde mee heere, all that I will say unto him, shall be, that his Maid brought me hither, and that I am her husband. For it would be the lesser harme unto mee of the two, to be married unto her, then to see my bones marr'd with torment, to make mee to confesse what I made there; and I would rather seeke to content them with this answere, then that they should kill me, and bury me afterwards in this stinking Church-yard, and so end my life in this miserable manner.

Thus I went beating my braines about, discussing to and fro, what would be the issue in the end of this businesse; when lo, anon after two of the clocke in the morning, I perceived that the doore was opened, where-with all the misery that I had suffered, was turned into joy, and flowers of comfort, thinking that Fabia was now returned. But when I came to the doore, and found it unlockt, and no

[1] These two misfortunes of his are mentioned in the first Part.

body living there-abouts, I beganne to bee more afraid then I was before, and my heart beganne to misgive me, conceiving, that behinde some wall or doore of the house, they staid waiting for my comming forth, that they might with more ease and safety rid me of life. I unsheathed my sword, and taking that in one hand, and my Dagger in the other, I went by little and little, taking notice (by that poore little mornings light) of all those steps which I had trod (which were not many, nor very hard to bee hit againe) by which I entred. So that, with more feare, then shame, I got at last to the street doore, which I likewise found was open.

When I had once set my feete upon the threshold, I opened my eyes, and then plainely perceived, that what had already past, was in punishment of my over-boldnesse ; and albeit this tricke that had beene put upon me, was not so easie to be digested, yet this jest might have falne out far worse. I comforted my selfe as well as I could, looked into my errour, and acknowledged my fault ; and champing upon these things, as I walked along the streets, I came at last home to our owne house, and opening my Chamber doore, I put off my cloathes, and got me in betweene the Blankets to recover some heat, which through the waters and the windes I had lost.

In this manner did I lye, till it was about ten a clocke in the morning, tumbling and tossing, not being able for very shame to fall asleepe, thinking and devising with my selfe, what answere I should make unto my Master. For if I should deale plainely and truely with him, and acquaint him with the whole passage of this businesse, it would be a great affront unto mee, and that I should be plaid upon every moment with whole Vollies of jests, and move even the very children of the street to scoffe and laugh at me. And to deny it, and intertaine his Lordship with vaine and idle hopes, me thought that likewise was not fitting. For Nicoleta had already recovered her *Albriçias*, and was well rewarded for her good newes ; and therefore this might seeme unto him to bee a meere invention to defeat

him of his money. *Todos eran matas, por rozar.*[1] All the fat, I saw, was in the fire; and that this businesse did not goe on well and handsomely, but had many inconveniences in it; it went ill on the one side, and worse on the other. Which way so ever I sought to winde me, was but a leaping out of the Frying Pan into the fire.[2] CHAPTER V Proverb Proverb

And whilest I was thus musing with my selfe, how I might invent some meanes to set all right, one of the servants of the house came knocking at my doore, and told mee, that my Lord would have me come to him. O wretched and unfortunate man that I am (said I to my selfe) what shall I doe? For they have now found me with my finger in the Creame-Pot;[3] they have taken mee in the manner, the theft is discovered, I am put to my shifts, and must answere for my selfe as well as I can. *Coragio* then (quoth I) *Coragio*, Guzman! When were thy spirits wont to faile thee in this manner? When wert thou ever as yet put to that plunge, from which at length thou didst not fairely come off? The Sunne is as yet clouded; and Time will discover the true path. And who tooke thee by night out of the yard, will bring thee as well out of my Lords with-drawing roome. Proverb

Well, I got mee up, shifted my cloathes, and put on a fresh sute, the best that I had; and being then as fine and as gallant, as if no such disaster had hapned unto mee; I hy'de mee up unto my Lord, who expected my comming, and had no sooner seene mee, but presently askt mee, how the world went, and how chanced it, that I had no sooner come to give an account of what had past betwixt Fabia, and my selfe? I told him; That they made mee stay waiting in the street untill it was midnight, expecting a faire birth of this businesse, but it prov'd in the end to bee a shitten-ars'd Girle; so that I was dismist with a *non licet*; telling me, that she could not possibly either speake with mee, or open the doore.

[1] *Todo lo veo matas, y por rozar. Del negocio, que no esta bien compuesto, y tiene muchos inconvenientes.* Covarruvias, verb. *Mata.*

[2] *Saltar de la sarten, y dar en las brasas.*

[3] *Traer las manos en la masa. Andar metido en algun negocio.*

I also then signified unto him, that I would goe and lye downe a while upon my bed, to see if I could take some rest, for I did not finde my selfe halfe well. Hee gave me leave so to doe. Where-upon, I went to my Chamber, put off my cloathes, got mee to bed, and there fell to my victuals, where I remained till it was almost night, hatching a thousand conceits in my head, wasting my wits, and Limbeking my braines, without drawing any juice or substance thence at all. And because, what in regard of my rage and anger, as also the sundry thoughts and imaginations that troubled my minde, I was not able to take any rest on either side, but lay tumbling from t'one to t'other; If I lay on my backe, I straight-way waxed weary; if I sate up in my bed, my Hips were too feeble to beare up my bodie. Whereupon, I resolved with my selfe to rise. And I had no sooner taken my cloathes into my hands, and put my feet out of my bed, but one of the Groomes of the Stable came into my Chamber, and told mee; Señor Guzman; There are some pretty Wenches beneath at the staires foot which inquire for you, and stay waiting your comming in the Portall within the gate. A pocks upon them, quoth I: What have I to doe with them? The Divell take them for mee. Goe downe, and either bid them goe to the Stewes, or else tell them, that I am not within. For I imagined with my selfe, that all Rome by this time had rung of my disgrace, and that these were some roguish harlotries, that came to laugh and scoffe at mee, and to make themselves merry with my mis-fortunes. I was very jealous, that they came of purpose to play the Wags with mee, and therefore willed him to dismisse them: and so they went their waves.

That night my Master willed me to continue my wonted Station. I told him, that I found my selfe not halfe well; whereupon he advised mee to get mee betimes to my lodging, and that I should call for any thing that I wanted; and if need were, he would send a Physician unto me. I kist his hands, thanking him in the best fashion I could, for this his great favour and love towards mee; and got mee

forthwith to my lodging, where I remained retired, and all alone, as I had done the rest of that day. CHAPTER V

The next morning, I was no sooner up, but I received a Letter from my Nicoleta, complaining of mee, that having come to visit mee the day before, I would not bee spoken withall, nor give her notice of that, which had past the other night betwixt my selfe and her Mistresse, and what great businesse I had, that I did not round that street the next night following, telling mee that shee had waited there for my comming, till it was after mid-night.

Unto these, she added some other words, which left me no lesse perplexed, then confounded. And that I might cleere all doubts, I wrote her an answere; telling her, that I would not faile sometimes that Evening to come and visit her in the back Lane, that was behinde the house. For Fabia's house stood as it were betweene two streetes; on the back-side whereof, right against the principall gate, was a little Posterne doore, and over that a pretty little lodging Chamber, with one little window belonging unto it, from whence Nicoleta might very conveniently talke unto me even in the day time, for that the Lane was little frequented, as being scarce passable, for that it was very narrow, and full of durt and mire. And even then at that time, it was so bad and so foule, that very hardly and with much adoe, (considering the late raine) could I get to that place, where I was to speake with Nicoleta.

Well, when I was come thither, and she ready to receive me, shee began to aske mee; what was become of mee? What great occasions did hinder me, that I had not come and seene her the night before? And if not for her, yet for her Mistresses sake, I might have taken that paines. She formed many complaints against me, accusing the inconstancie of Men, who made love unto Women, not so much for any good affection that they bore them, as to get the conquest, and Mastery of them; And when they had gotten what they desired, and received some Pledge from them, they did quickly slight them, if not wholly forget them. The inconstancie of idle young men

By this, as likewise by that profession, which she made

of her love unto me, I knew her innocencie, and Fabia's subtiltie, who went about to deceive us both. Thereupon I told her; My Nicoleta, thou art quite out of the way, and so mightily deceived, as no woman can bee more. For I would have thee to know, that thy Mistresse hath play'd the Jacke with us both. Then I up and told her all that had befalne me, and how vilely she had us'd me. Shee blest her selfe, crossing and crossing her selfe over and over, thinking it to be a thing impossible. I stood thus talking with her, being gallantly clad, and in my best bravery, strutting my legs abroad, stretching out my necke, and discoursing of my misfortunes, being carelesse of that present disgrace, which my evill fortune had too neere at hand for me. For it so fell out, that whilest I was thus discoursing with her, by that little Posterne; (thorow which there was a way to goe in and out to the Stable) it hapned, that there entred in thereat (whilest the Groomes had led the Horses forth to water,) a huge big Bore; this Bore one of the Groomes found nuzzeling in the litter, which he had made ready for his Horses, turning it topsie-turvy, and scattering it all abroad the Stable. He being much moved thereat, tooke up a great bat in his hand, and belaboured his backe and sides, as hard as he could lay on for his life. It was a fat rogue and a great; and like a Bull that is bayted, came running forth, as hard as he could drive. And for that these kinde of beasts, either out of custome, or nature, use to runne alwayes fore-right, and seldome or never turne aside, he came directly upon me, and tooke me so on the sudden, that I could by no meanes avoyd him, and perforce made his way just betweene my legs; so that I rode as it were a-stride on horse-backe, but the cleane contrary way; and to keepe my selfe from falling, I tooke hold on his tayle with both my hands, using that in stead of a Bridle, which I held as fast as possibly I could. I was not able all this while to recover my selfe, and had my life laine upon it, I knew not for the present how to quit my selfe handsomely from his backe: and whilest I was devising with my selfe how I

might come fairely off, he ranne with me thorow the midst of a durtie puddle, that was nothing but myre and filth, so that for to save my selfe from falling, and that he might the better beare me thorow the durt, I was forced to let goe his taile, and to claspe my armes about the sides of him, with all the might and force I could. And as if we had playd at binding of barrels, or *à punta con cabeça*,[1] giving him many a rap at the wrong doore, flinging up his snout, and huffing and puffing with his nostrils, he carried me (in spight of my teeth, for I was forced to hold fast, for feare of falling in the durt) in his hoggish kinde of gallop, some three or foure streets from off that place, grumbling and grunting as he went along, and with his whining and crying, calling the people together to see what he ayld, whilest I perceiving the shame and danger I was like to runne, fell off from his backe of mine owne accord, not regarding when, or where I should light. And much better had it beene for me, had I done this before in mine owne little durty Lane; for besides that I should not have there received so much harme, the disgrace would not have been so publike, and I should have met with a remedie for this mischiefe neerer at hand. CHAPTER V

Well, I got me up as well as I could on my legs, but all bemyr'd, and berayd with durt, being hooted at by the people, and affronted by all the women and children in Rome, my face being all besmeared with durt, and my cloathes from top to toe, all playstered over with myre, that I seemed to have beene throwne out of the belly of some Whale. The people from out their doores and windowes shouted out so loud, and the boyes did so flocke about me, that as one that was out of his wits, and deprived of judgement, I sought where I might best hide my selfe. At last I spyde out a house hard by, where I thought I should finde some good entertainment. I entred thereinto, and made fast the doore, and so barrocadoed my selfe up close against all that company, that were desirous to see me. But it did not fall out so well with me, as I could

[1] *Juègo de niños.*

have wisht; For it is not fit, that any thing should succeed well with the wicked.[1] It is a punishment of his fault: and so it fell out with me, by that bad entertainment which I there received, as you shall heare more at full in the chapter following.

CHAPTER VI

Guzman de Alfarache recounteth, how in the house, where-into hee had withdrawne himselfe, to make himselfe cleane, another disgrace befell him, and many other misfortunes. And that which passed afterwards, betweene him and his Lord the Embassadour, with whom hee discoursed of politicke and grave matters

THE night was now darke, but much more my heart. Every house was full of lights, but my sad soule was fuller of darkenesse. I did not weigh and consider with my selfe, that it was now late, nor that the Master of the house was not willing that I should stay there, but reviling me with odious tearmes, sought to drive me out with evill language, thinking every houre a yeere, till he had thrust me out of doores. For, he was jealous of me, and began to suspect, that this was but some tricke or stratagem of mine owne plotting, having taken hold on that occasion to get into his house, and to bring my purpose more easily to passe. Nor was this my honest Gentleman much out of the way. For the Gentle-woman his wife wore the Breeches, she was Master of the house, a friend to her owne will and pleasure, very head-strong,[2] and not sure of foot. So that it was no

Guzman makes every one suspicious of him

[1] *Al malo, no es justo, suçeder le cosa bien.*

[2] The Spanish word is, *Serrada Sienes.* I would be glad to be informed of the propriety of this phrase, if any can render it better.

wonder that her husband should see Visions, and dreame of strange apparitions, taking every shadow to be some fearefull ghost, and conceiving, (out of his jealous humour) that all the world went about to coozen him. So that every the least apprehension (though of never so farre-fetcht a supposition) made him presently to take the Allarme. Whereupon, he no sooner saw me within his doores, but he called all his people about him, and leaving me all alone in the outward Porch to the great Gate, would not suffer his servants to doe me so much kindenesse, as to afford me a bucket of water to wash my selfe withall. So that I (poore man) with my cloathes all to be-myrd, my hands all to be-durted, and my face so fouly besmear'd, that there was not one white spot to be seene, I went intertaining my going forth with a great deale of feare, lest some might chance to be still waiting at the gate to looke upon this my new Livery, which might better beare the name of Leprosie. And for that they, who beheld this my misfortune, were not a few, the company increasing, and standing in a round thicke together, they related it a-fresh to them that were newly come into their companie; and for that they had a generall dislike of me, they detained all that past by, relating unto them the disgrace that had befalne me, whereat they all laughed out aloud, making great signes and tokens of joy. And it may be, that most of them had reason so to do; and by this their rejoycing, did revenge them-selves of those wrongs, which they had heretofore received from me. There might you see that verified of me, which is commonly sung up and downe the streets.

CHAPTER VI

Guzman laughed at by common people

Mas enemigos que amigos tienen
Su cuerpo cercado;
Dizen unos, que lo entierren,
Y otros, que no sea enterrado.

Romance

More foes then friends, his body have
Incompast round about;
Some crie, to put it in the grave,
And some, t'shall lye without.

THE FIRST BOOKE

Guzman hated and persecuted

The street was full of men and boyes, which did persecute mee with shrill shoutes, and lowd cryes, calling in a sharpe and high key; Thrust him out; Thrust him out; Why doe yee let this foule beast abide with you? put out this same pickled pigge amongst us. O these base Raskals, how had they almost made mee to lose my patience, and my judgement! There were some honest folke amongst them, that tooke part with mee; and all those that were such as I was, shew'd themselves on my side. These sought to defend me from their fury, labouring to pacifie that rude rabble with threats and menaces; for they were growne so shamelesse, and so impudent, that they began to throw stones against the gate, being very desirous to have me come forth amongst them.

Curiositie admits no respect

But I neither blame them, nor excuse my selfe. For I would have done the like my selfe, upon the same occasion, against mine owne father. For, those things of curiositie, which doe not (like Shrove-tide) come once a yeere, I doe not hold it any great excesse to bee desirous to see them. And I assure thee (nor doe I speake this, to make the matter seeme more then it is) that if for to make profit, I would have suffered my selfe to bee seene, I might by this meanes have got a good summe of money; For I was nothing all over, but a meere lumpe of durt, having like your Negro's, no more white about mee to be seene, save onely my eyes, and teeth; this mis-fortune befalling me in the most liquid kennell, and rottennest mixen that was in all the street.

True it is, that with the knife that belonged to my Sword, I scrap't away as much of it as I could, but all was but as a thing of nothing, being either little or nothing the better; for the myre, by reason of its liquidnesse, had soked it selfe quite thorow my cloathes, so that they remained as wet about me, as if they had beene steeped in some bath. And I held it some happinesse unto me in this my misery, that I did not goe dropping through the streets, like a basket of Buck-cloathes, when they are taken from the washing-Bole, and carried forth to be dryed in the Sunne.

In this pittifull manner, it being now late, and all the

people gone, I sneaked out in that lamentable pickle, as I would have wisht them to have beene in, who tooke most pleasure therein. If there bee happinesse in unhappinesse, in regard of the comfort which we receive from thence; this day it should seeme that fortune did play the wanton, and went sporting her selfe at the *juego de Cañas* with me; for, though shee had disfavour'd me with these the like troubles, that you have heard; yet did shee afterward assist mee with the night; yea, and with such a darke night, that the people went their way, giving me leave to depart thence, sound, safe, and free, from the clamour of the boyes and children, which stayd watching for mee. I got me forth, throwing my Cloake over my face, without being knowne by any, and making large strides, seeking (if it were possible) to fly from my selfe, in regard of that store of durt, and that evill savour which I bare about me in my cloathes. But this could not be dissembled; for which way so-ever I went, I left some signe thereof behinde mee, beside the heat of the sent, which might very well bee followed afarre off, it was so strong. And none that past by mee, would turne backe to looke upon me, because they did suspect no harme. And if any did chance to finde fault with me, others would excuse me, and say; Let the poore fellow alone, it is but a little slipperinesse of the Guts, a loosenesse of the Hilts, a little laxative oyle that is come from him, which upon occasion may bee every mans case, as well as his: He would have holpe it and he could, and therefore you must pardon him. Others would say; Inquire no farther into the matter, make no more doe about it, but give over the haunt; for the Crow cannot be blacker, then are his wings.[1] Others, stopping their noses as they went along by me, would cry out Foh; There hath more store of raine falne, then we were aware of. Others, This *Disciplinante* must needs have given himselfe some great wound, he stinkes so vilely, (for they saw mee muffled up in my Cloake, like those, which come from whipping themselves in the Holy Weeke.) Let me advise you, friend, to make

CHAPTER VI

Those that are unfortunate, seek to shun the sight of all men

Proverb

[1] *No puede ser el cuervo más negro, que las alas.*

all the haste you can, and call quickly for some water, before you begin to swound.

I had matter enough for all of them to worke upon, and there was not any that past by me, but had a fling at me. And some would not sticke to aske me; Tell me (friend) how sell you a pound of this Waxe? And others; What's the price of your Honey-combes? And a third; Sure this must needs be some perfumer or other, since he smels so sweet. I answered them all with silence, and replyde not a word unto them, by which meanes I past the better along by them, though ever and anon they would bee girding and scoffing at me. But for those that cryde a pocks on mee, and bid the Divell goe with me, calling me Pole-Cat, and the like stinking names; mumbling softly to my selfe, as your young Novices doe their Mattens in a Monasterie, I payd them againe in their owne coyne: And so hanging my head in my bosome, I hy'de me homewards as fast as my durt-loaden legges would carrie me.

That, which did most trouble me, was, to see the Dogges in every street come barking after me, who the faster I went, did so much the more fiercely set upon me, and especially your Mongrell Curres,[1] which followed me close at the heeles, and would now and then give me a nip at the Calves of my legges. I would faine have fraid them away, but I durst not, fearing lest by making that defence, greater Dogges and more in number, hearing the noise that they would have made, would thereby have been drawne forth of doore, and come mainely running upon me, and have torne me (like another Acteon) all in pieces.

[1] The Spanish word is, *Gozquejo*. A kind of Dogge, which at first was in great esteeme, when they were brought out of Gothland into Spaine, a Country in Europe, which confineth upon Denmark and Norway, called in the Almane tongue Gott, from whence come the Gothes, which came into Castile. This race of Dogs is now bastardized, and in a manner lost. So that now your *Gozques*, are a kinde of Mongrell Curs, which your poore and baser sort of people breed up and keepe. They are short-legged, long sided and headed, balling and barking at their neighbours, troublesome to your Gallants, and abhorred of theeves. They sleepe all day, and this makes them wake, and barke all night long. And your Tradesmen and Shop-keepers, will rather indure that you should strike his Sonne, then kicke his Dogge. Covarruvias, verb. *Gozque*.

CHAPTER VI

At last, after these my many misfortunes, like a Ship that comes from the West-Indies, beaten at Sea, and rent and torne by Pyrats, I arriv'd safe at Sevill. I was now come to my old home, and being unseene and unheard of any, had got me up to my lodging. And I should have held it no small happinesse, if I could have got in as soone as I came to my Chamber doore. I put my hand in my Pocket, to take out the Key, but could not finde it. Then did I feele for it in the other Pocket, but could not meet with it. I cut two or three capers in the ayre, hoping to heare it gingle ; but all was one ; then did I fall a searching of my breeches, to see if happely it had got in betwixt the linings of my Hose ; but the Divell a Key that was there. I rummaged every corner about mee that I could suspect it to be in, but all to no purpose. For questionlesse I lost it in that house, whither I had with-drawne my selfe, when I tooke out my Handkerchiefe to wipe my face and my hands. This was a great griefe unto mee, and did vexe mee more then all the rest ; in which agony and anguish of minde, lifting up my eyes to Heaven, as a man in desperation, I breathed forth these words of complaint.

Guzman laments his misfortune

Poore, miserable man, as I am ; What shall I doe ? or whither shall I goe ? What will become of mee ? What course shall I take, that my Masters servants, and other my Companions and fellowes of the house, may not come to the knowledge of this disgrace that hath thus unluckily befalne mee ? How shall I cloake and dissemble this businesse, that I may not bee made a laughing stocke amongst them ? I may boldly tell all the world besides, that they lye, but I cannot doe so to those of the house, if they should hap to see mee. To others I might deny it, either in part, or in whole, as shall seeme best unto mee : But here, if they chance to light upon me, I am openly taken in the manner, the theft found about mee, the cause opened, and my mouth shut, not being able to alledge any thing in mine owne defence, nor can I invent that Lye, that will bee able to give them satisfaction, and make good what I shall say in mine owne excuse. Those that envy my

inwardnesse with my Master, will bathe themselves herewith in Rose-water; it will bee meat and drinke to them, and they will not sticke to call their friends about them; who, like swarmes of Bees, will fly in presently upon mee, and come buzzing about mee, to worke my more shame and amazement. I am utterly undone, my Barke lyes all a t'one side, and is ready to bee drowned, because it hath no Pylot to set her upright, and to steere her in her true course, nor any Master that is able to governe her.

With these exclamations (wretched as I was) I rent the ayre, and was ready to runne out of my wits: but was not so wise at that time to call to minde, what an ill name I had gotten in Rome, and yet with out-cryes and lamentations must thus pittifully bewayle an accident of fortune. O would to God, that (considering the great troubles of this world) wee would bee as sensible of the adversities of the minde, as wee are mooved with the afflictions of the body! But that doth happen unto us, which is wont to befall those, which sweepe all cleane before the doore, and when they have done, throw the dust into the house. Thus did I stand, making funerall lamentations over my mis-fortunes, when lo, there came a thing into my minde, which had hapned some few dayes before, which was of great comfort unto mee, adding new courage and strength unto mee against all such accidents as might hereafter succeed unto mee. And thus it was:

The revenge that a Romane Curtizan tooke of another woman, for being to lavish of her tongue

There was a Curtizan of Rome, who caus'd another woman, because shee had beene some-what too lavish of her tongue, to bee slasht over the face, cutting her athwart the nose, from one cheeke to the other, the cut running equally on either side of her face. And while the Surgeon was a dressing of her, after that hee had given her some sixteene or seventeene stitches, she weeping said; O what an unfortunate woman am I! Gentlemen, let me intreat you for Gods sake, that my Husband may not know of this. A waggish fellow, that stood there by, told her, If this slash had beene upon your buttocks, as it is upon your face, it might haply have been hidden from him; but seeing

there is no Vayle to cover it; why doe you injoyne us to keepe it secret?

In like sort, it seemed simplicitie, and meere foolery in mee, to use such a deale of nicety in the businesse. And the rather, for that this mischance was publike. And because, (by reason of the generall knowledge thereof) it could not bee conceiled, I thought it the best way for mee, to get the Game by the hand, and to speake of it first my selfe, telling as many of it, as I should meet withall, making a jest of it, and recounting the whole Story thereof unto them, before they should receive it from some other hand, and so at last come to know what a badde and long voyage I had made. Which if they should have done, it had beene better for mee, that I had beene out of this miserable world.

The best way to shake off a nick-name, is to set light by it. *Haga nombre de mal nombres quien dessea, que se le cayga presto*

Let him indure the title of a badde name, that desires to have it dye quickly. For, with the more violence wee seeke to shake it off, so much the closer it cleaveth unto us. Insomuch, that it continueth many times to the fifth generation; and then those, which succeed them, doe glory and boast themselves thereof, and blazon that for their Armes, which their Ancestors held for an affront. The like hath befalne this my poore booke, which I having intituled with the name of *Atalaya de la vida humana*,[1] The Watch-Tower of mans life, they have put the nick-name of *Picaro*[2] thereupon, and now it is knowne by no other name.

I was much perplexed, and as yet unresolved what I were best to doe. And for that I thought with my selfe, that in our miseries, there is no other Sanctuary on earth to flye unto, but those that are our friends; though I must confesse I had but a few, and amongst those never a true one, I held it not amisse, to have recourse to some one of my Companions, that had profest much love unto me, and had made me the fairest showes of friendship.

This being now concluded on, I got me to his lodging, and knockt at his doore, which he presently opened unto

[1] *Observatio vitæ humanæ.*

[2] *Picaro*, is a Rogue.

THE FIRST BOOKE

me : where I did remaine, while the locke was ript off from mine. You may conceive with your selfe in what a wofull case I was, that I durst not sit downe upon a trunke that was there in the roome, for feare of leaving therein the print of this my errour. This unhappy Accident could not be kept so secret, but that it must needs be knowne. And it is a miserie, that followes great mens houses, that there is not a servant therein, that doth not strive and labour all that he can, to flatter and soothe up his Lord and Master, although it be with merry jests, and fained tales, when as there is no such matter. For they deale with him, as those that play booty, seeking to serve one anothers turne, using all their art and skill to coozen and deceive him : Whereby every Master knowes, how and to what end his servants love him, and with what affection they serve him. And hee is a kinde of unfortunate man, and in a miserable and wretched taking, if he thinke to winne them by rigour, and to worke them to love him for feare. For few or none have ever beene able to bring this to passe. For the heart of man, is a noble thing, and must be wonne with gentle usage ; it must not be roughly dealt withall, but stroaked with a smooth and soft hand.

Servants given to flatter their Masters

Love, is gained by love, and not by rigour.

Mans heart, a tender thing

I had scarce shifted my cloathes, and washt my selfe cleane, but that my Master knew I was all bedurted. They had told him in what case I was, but none of them could tell him the cause of it. This was all they could say of me, and so they left me, as they found me ; so that by this meanes, I had a faire white to shoot at, and might make my ayme as I would my selfe. Hee demanded first of one, and then of another, how this came about, but none could informe him farther, then what they had seene.

Afterwards it was told me, (which was no more then I heard from his owne mouth) that he conceited with himselfe, that they had caught me in Fabia's house, and that knowing my tricks, and cunning carriage, they had turned the keele of me upwards, and had thus trimm'd and pitcht me over, as your Sea-men doe your ships : and that I seeking to escape their hands, fell by misfortune into some

durty puddle, or filthy dung-hill: Or else, that wrestling and striving with some of the servants, that were sent out after me to catch me, they had throwne me downe in the durt, bemoyling mee in that beastly manner, being more willing to doe me shame and reproach, then to take away my life. I likewise at the same time was casting up my Account with my selfe, making me a wedge out of the same piece of wood,[1] that I might drive this businesse the better, and come home unto him, by jumping with his conceit, and cleaving the same blocke, that hee had already entred upon, hoping thereby to give him the better satisfaction. And though his Cardes and mine were not the same, yet were they both of a sute, and the Trumpe was turn'd up right for either hand; and by different wayes[2] we hapt both to meet at one, and the same place: only wee did differ in this; that he by his wisdome did conjecture, what was the most likely; and I, out of a vaine and idle humour, made report of that, which might be least prejudiciall to my reputation. He had all that night beene busie a writing, and making his Dispatches for France; but laying his Papers awhile aside, out of the great desire that he had to know the truth of the matter, he presently sent for me in. But when I was come, and had presented my selfe unto him, he said not a word unto me, till he had retired himselfe into his withdrawing Chamber, and dismissed his servants, and that we two were all alone.

CHAPTER VI

Proverb

Proverb

Then did he begin to aske me, how I came by my fall, and where? I told him; that I stood at a neighbours doore, that was right over against Fabia's house, watching very diligently, if I could have the opportunitie to speake with her; and whilest I was carefully attending this businesse, her Maid Nicoleta came forth, making signes unto me, that I should quickly come away. And being overjoyed with this unexpected good fortune, I would needs crosse the Lane, where the way was worst and foulest, (because I would not lose time in going about by that which was the

[1] *Haziendo cuña del mismo palo.*

[2] *Por caminos diferentes, y homos ambos à un parador.*

cleaner) fetching a nimble leape, thinking to pitch sure with my foot upon a stone, that was not so firmely laid as it should have beene, it tottred aside, and so my foot slipt; I sought to recover my selfe, but could not, and so fell into the durt, where I was most pittifully bemyred. Whereupon, Nicoleta, the people that passed by beginning to flocke about me, with-drew her selfe, and went in. So that I was inforced to come home, without effecting what I went for; Which did much more grieve me then my fall. But all things doe not alwayes fall out as we would have them. He then said unto me, I suffer more in this, then thy selfe. The harme is more mine, then thine.

This businesse (Guzmanillo) goes not luckily along with thee. It was a worke of darkenesse, thou wentst about it late in the Evening, in an unfortunate houre, and upon a Tuesday: this disgrace could not have befalne thee, in any mans service, but mine, nor have lighted so unluckily upon any but my selfe, such is my misfortune.

Whereunto I reply'd; I would not that your Lordship should make this ill construction to your selfe, nor would I have you to reckon this in the number; but I am rather perswaded, that it would have beene worse with us, if this mis-fortune had not befalne me. For we have a Pro-

Proverb

verb in Castile; *Que breme un pie, quiças por mejor.* I brake my legge, and it may be, it was all for the best. And I am the bolder to tell you so, for that her Husband was at that time at home in the house, and therefore it makes me to suspect, that there was some trap laid for me, and that I was called into some ill end; but suppose it were otherwise, and that the winde had blowne faire in the Poope, and that I had entred into the Haven; say, that the servants of the house should either have spy'd me, or over-heard me talking with their Mistresse, what doth your Excellencie thinke, would then have become of me? Assure your selfe, they would have cudgell'd me soundly, and have us'd me so hardly, that I should not have scap't their fingers, till they had broken all my bones, and sent me home without a nose. For my so often rounding of that house, hath

caused some notice to be taken thereof; and albeit that some doe thinke that I only doe it for Nicoleta's sake, yet many, that doe not know the good love that is betweene us, are apt to conceive the worst. And I have of late observed, that the good old man, Don Beltran, hath lookt askew upon me, as if he were not well pleased with me. Hee was wont heretofore to speake kindely unto me, asking my opinion concerning the Ladyes, and Gentlewomen of this Court, and if I knew of any good Spanish ware in that kinde; but now he passes along by me, not so much as once offring to speake to me: and if I put off my Hat and salute him, he lookes another way, as if he did not see me, and goes along by me like a logge, without any life or motion towards me at all.

This was the effect of that which I then said unto him; my Master all this while being very attentive unto me, and ever and anon knitting his brow, and casting up his eyes, whereby I knew, that I had stung him, and made him to sit musing, as one that had beene amazed upon the report of some strange and sudden accident. I saw all his Cardes, and knew what game he had in his hand, and how he would play it, and found by him, that he was afraid both of his reputation, and his person, and that it would be little for his honour, if any disgrace should befall him in that house, in regard it was one of the greatest, and the noblest allyed in all that Citie. I taking hold of this occasion, came in a little closer unto him, helping to turne the Key about, when I saw which way it was winding; and so thinking it fit to strike the Iron whilest it was hot, prosecuting my purpose, I spake thus unto him; There is not any thing now in this world, that can worke astonishment in mee, nor make me to abate one haire of my courage; for I am well acquainted with misfortunes, know how farre Disgrace can throw the barre, and the utmost harme she could doe me. For he that shall tread in my steps, and runne those courses that I have done, shall hazard both the losse of his life, and honour. But I have armed my selfe with patience, to indure any misfortune whatsoever. I have learned long agoe

THE FIRST BOOKE

From Fortune, we are to suspect the worst

couragiously to suffer and abide the changes of Fortune with an undaunted minde, for I alwayes suspect the worst, looking for the hardest measure she can give me, and prevent her better usage, by expecting no good at her hands. Her effects are never so great, as are her threatnings; and if I should have beene cowed with them, they would have followed me still close at the heeles, as the Greyhound doth the Hare, and never give mee over, as long as shee could wagge her taile, or fetch her breath.

No great heed is to be given to that which hath succeeded in this businesse, nor that I entred into it upon a Tuesday; For I am neither wedded to superstitions, nor thinke that your Lordship is descended of the House of the Mendoças,[1] that you should be taken with these vaine and idle toyes of the Spaniards, as if all other dayes had a particular priviledge, and Tuesday only had receiv'd a curse from heaven. And if Fortune should fall upon me, with all the forces she can make, come what can come unto me, be it never so bad, all her rigorous dealing towards me, shall not wring one word out of my mouth, that shall be prejudiciall to any man. Your Excellencie may doe well to dissemble this businesse, and to seeme to take no notice of what hath past, nor to care a pinne for it. For mine owne part, I shall ever truly serve you to the death, fall backe, fall edge, hap what will hap, all is one to me. Yet withall, true it is, and I shall make bold to tell you so, that if the Case were mine, as it is yours, I would not only desist there-from, considering how crosse things goe; for of a thousand dayes, I cannot get one day of Audience; so that it is likely to prove an endlesse piece of worke, and an immortall kinde of businesse, like unto that of your *Mayorasgos*,[2] or Primogenitureship, which your fathers settle upon their eldest sonnes, but shall not come to injoy their estate, till they be dead. Besides, I may not well set my foot any more in those parts, by reason that my haunting of that place is

[1] Tuesday observed to have been an unfortunate day to the house of the Mendoças.

[2] *Mayorasgo*, is the heire of a house.

now generally noted, and some sticke not to talke too liberally of it. CHAPTER VI

There are not wanting in Rome as good, and better ware then she, which may be had with lesse danger, at an easier rate, and give your Lordship more content, and lesse trouble. I know not how it is with others, but my love is not so fervent, as to love for love, but for fashion sake to laugh and be merry, and to make sport, as they use to doe in my countrie. I am like a Melonmongers Knife, cutting here a slice, and there a slice, now at this corner, then at that, changing and altering my markes, roving sometimes at one, sometimes at another, here to day (as they say) and to morrow in France. I take thought for nothing, nor am I wedded to my will in any thing, nor am I constant in my purposes, especially in matters of love. For if one will not, another will. I eate, and sleepe at my due houres; I sigh not, when I am out of my Mistresses sight, but in her presence, I fetch many a grievous groane, and utter my complaints. And this is that mill, where-with I grinde. But your Excellencie runn's a cleane contrary course. For you doe all that you doe, with a great deale of gravitie, and with a Lordly kinde of carriage and greatnesse. And being a great and powerfull man, you have those things in chase, which are hardest to be atchieved, and like the Falcon flye at the Hearne, making wing after her, till she be quite out of sight; pursuing your game to the utmost you are able, cost it what it will cost, or come what will come of it, you care not. For as you have force and strength to make resistance, so you accommodate all things handsomely by your discretion and wisdome; you have a good staffe to trust to; and good legges to beare you up.

You doe not well understand (Guzmanillo) what you say, said my Master unto mee; but is rather all quite contrary to that, which thou hast spoken. For there is nothing now at this present more prejudiciall, nor more noted and observed, then any the least spot or weakenesse in a publike person. For men of my qualitie are bound to weare such cloathes as befit such Ministers, and not as shall fit best

Every little spot, a foule blemish in a publike person

with our owne fancy. Otherwise, wee shall bee taxed by those that cast an eye upon them. And every little indecencie in them, turnes to a staine at least, if not a foule blot. A little breath (you know) will make the biggest Organs goe. And your greatest men sound lowdest in the eares of the world, when the noise of their actions are blowne abroad by the bellowes of the peoples breath. And I sweare unto thee, that if I had not ingaged my selfe by my word, and more particularly im-pawned my credit to Nicoleta, by giving my faithfull promise, that I would come and visit Fabia in person (besides it would grieve mee, to bee accounted inconstant, or cowardly, blaming mee of lightnesse, that my love should be like that of children, or like water in a Sive, or that I went about but to try of what metall she was made, and then to laugh and scoffe at her coozening of both her and my selfe of these our good hopes, and that it should bee said of mee, that I did then turne tayle, when I might have seazed on my game, and had the Partridge in foote, which I might have trussed, if I would my selfe) I would not have car'd a button. Besides, being (as thou saist) that this businesse goes on so slowly, and so coldly, I doe not finde my selfe so fast intangled in her love, and so transported with passion, that I doe not understand and consider with my selfe, that shee hath a husband, that is one of the principall, and chiefest in Rome, rich, and noble, out of which respect wee ought to walke very warily, as professing to have some honourable beginning, and not to dis-honour the house wee come of, for which cause I ought to keepe a good Decorum, without doing wrong or injury to any. And although shee be young and faire, (and as such a one obliged to take hold on those faire occasions that are offered) yet ought I not to follow her blandishments, and perhaps to my too great cost, but with a great deale of caution and heed ; as shall best stand with that duty which I owe to my noblenesse of bloud, and to the honour of their house and kindred.

Many times, without due consideration, wee un-advisedly will see a mans game, and upon badde Cards (though wee

have little reason for it) set up our rest, and when wee are once in, we cannot give over the Vye, unlesse wee will be accounted simple, cowardly, and weake.

But since that on our part, wee have used all possible diligencies, and that they prevaile so little, and cost us so much, (as the case standeth now with the honour of this Gentle-woman;) if my sensuall appetite, like Gunne-powder, hath with its fire scorched, if not burnt my reason, by acknowledging now the ill, which I have taken in hand, that furie is now over-past, and prostrating my selfe on the earth, I confesse my fault. I will goe no more (as thou sayst) following of that, which flyeth from mee. But with this Lady, which was in a manner in my hands, I will deale with her, as doth the generous Hawke, by letting this Bird goe; by which noblenesse of mine, that ill name shall bee quite buried under-ground, which for my sake hath beene raised of her; taking therein the best course that I can, that may make most for both our reputations.

This was that hee said unto mee. And mee thought that this his resolution was my salvation. For therein, I found the Paradise of my desires opened unto mee; and praising this his good purpose, the issue was the easier, not so much for his intention, as for my reputation. And therefore I said unto him, Your Excellencie shall herein doe like your selfe, and proceed in that which you both say, and doe, with that correspondencie, which is most agreeable to your wisedome. For albeit it bee a great happinesse, to obtaine that which wee desire; yet I hold it a greater, not to desire that, which our sensualitie suggesteth unto us; much lesse, if it incite us to the hurt of others, and more especially towards persons of qualitie.

This is a Christian consideration, and a Daughter worthy the birth of your Lordships braine; and therefore fit that you should father it, and not cast it off. And for the manner how you shall come off from this businesse, leave that to me. For a faithfull servant, although for to maintaine himselfe in his Masters love and favour, hee is wont to give a heat unto that appetite which he findes to bee in

What a servant ought to doe to maintaine himselfe in his Masters favour

him, yet is he bound, when hee shall see this humour corrected in him, to turne the reines, incouraging him to continue in this his good purpose. This being said, he licensed mee from him, saying; Farewell (Guzman) and thinke upon this businesse, which I put into thy hands, as I have already done mine honour. And so we parted.

CHAPTER VII

The jest being publikely knowne through Rome, which befell Guzman de Alfarache, together with the ill successe that hee had with the Boore; for very shame he departs from thence, and goes for Florence. In which journey, a Thiefe enters into friendship with him, that he might the better under that colour, rob him of all that he had

Passion blindeth Lovers

HAVE often considered with my selfe, how much Passion blindeth him, that is in Love. And I begin now to thinke upon my Master, that hee should recommend his honour unto me, as if I knew how to handle it, without soyling it. It comes likewise unto my remembrance, (nor can I choose but laugh, when I thinke upon it) how it was possible for me, beeing so notorious and offensive a Lyer, as I was; to stand in such favour as I did with my Lord: and that his Excellency should treat with mee, more then any other, of matters of importance; as also, that he should trust mee with his secrets, and his substance, admit of my opinion, and give credit to all that I should say; and that I being such a one as I was, from whose mouth never came any Truth, which

was not adulterated by mee in its going forth, yet I could not indure a Lye in another.

A Lyer loves not a Lye in another

And for that very cause did I hate that man to the death, and could never afterwards abide him, that should abuse me (though but once) in that kinde. Nor was this any wonder in mee, beeing that it is naturall to all those that negotiate businesses, to be much offended, if they be not in all things punctually dealt withall; when as they themselves know not how to speake a true word, and are never weary of lying. They begin with the highest, and end with the lowest. For what can bee more noble then Truth? and what more base then Lying? If you are to receive any courtesie from them; or that you would have them to doe you a favour (though this kindnesse shall cost them nothing) how many sleights; how many tricks; how many delayes, and puttings off from one day to another, and from this, to the next morning, which morning never comes; beeing like unto that of the Crow, which cryes still *Cras*, promising that which she never performeth?

The effects of a Lyer

But if you are to give them any thing, and that you doe not keepe touch with them at the time appointed, (and which is the fault now and then of your best Watches) that you misse but one minute, if you faile never so little of your promise, if you doe not justly make payment, and delay them but one houre, you are no man of your word, nor doe you know what belongs to good dealing, nor are so honest as you should bee. I did the like with those that I had to doe withall. I did consider (but foolishly I must confesse) with my selfe; What will it benefit mee to tell truth? What does it concerne mee, that it is the Vice of those that are vile and base, and the repast and food of beasts? What harme shall I receive, if men will not give credit unto me, if I have got the same already, although they apparantly see that I lye, and that such is their passion, that they will not dis-deceive themselves of my deceit? What honour have I to lose? How can I faile in my credit? I am well inough knowne, and the world is now come to that passe, that onely for this

Lying, the food of beasts

cause of my lying, they uphold, maintaine, favour, and esteeme me.

Notable instructions for great Princes, and men of qualitie

Lying, and Flatterie, is meat alone for great men, it is the onely dish that pleaseth their palate, the onely musicke that delighteth their eares. But you are no welcome man unto them, if you come and tell them, that it is time for them to leave off gaming, that they have wasted and consumed their estate, and that their Vassals and Tenants are growne poore and beggerly. That they should not play the *Fanfarrones*, roysting and swaggering where e're they come: nor shew themselves dissolute, and loose in their behaviour, either in the open streets, or in the Church, which must needs give occasion of much both hurt and scandall. That they should not bee such lavish and prodigall spenders, as to ruine themselves, and to breake their neckes through too much haste, by taking Post-horses, as it were to runne out of their estates. And seeing that they can finde in their hearts, and make no bones of it, to foole away such a deale of money as they doe, and that so vainely, and so idly, that they would yet make a conscience to pay their servants their wages, and not to let them goe totter'd and torne, and ready to starve for hunger. That if they bee rich, and in favour with their Prince, that they dispence a part of these their good fortunes to the poore. That if they have their Kings eare, and are inward with him, that they should make benefit of this their privacie, by procuring themselves good and sure friends; for there is no firmenesse in Fortune; nor no Princes favour so fixed, but it may fall off. That at least, on Festivall dayes, they should rise betimes and get them to Church to heare Masse. And that they should truely and sincerely make confession of their sinnes, and not onely for fashion sake, to cumply with the Parish, being therein onely nominall, but not reall Christians, having the name, but not the nature of true Christians; for there are a kinde of men, that make a show of having faith, and that observe the precepts of the Church, but for no other end, least they should bee punished, if they should doe otherwise. That they should looke well

into themselves, and learned to know that they were but men. CHAPTER VII

And in that case that they should bee old and strooken in yeeres, that they are now wrestling with death, who is ready to trip up their heeles, and throw them into the grave, which lyes ready open to receive them; Their sentence is already notified unto them; and as they that are to be executed, take leave of their friends, and have those Ensignes borne before them, which are prepared for that conflict; So must they at last take their farewell of all those things, where-unto they living bare most affection: As their taste, their sleepe, their seeing, their hearing, and the like; To which sweet Sences sentence of death is dayly, if not hourely notified, by the Reynes, the Kidneys, the Liver, the lesser Guts, and our Urine: The stomake begins to languish, the strength of it waxes weake, its naturall heat begins to faile; heere the eye-teeth drop away, there the gumm's fall on aking: all which are as a mouldring away of these our clods of earth, and that the timber of this our house is rotten, and the roofe ready to fall about our eares, and that there are no buttresses to uphold this tottering wall; from the foundation to the very top, it is wholly runne to decay, and the ruine thereof is at hand. Deaths sentence, what manner of thing it is

Admonish a young man of these, and the like things; or some rich yong Gallant, who is as daring, as he is indiscreet, and so head-strong, that hee will not bee ruled; represent, I say, unto him, that hee doth not know his friends from his foes, that for speaking thus, looking there, commending that, and peradventure for but walking by, if not entring where hee should not, hee will bee suddenly stab'd at one time or other, not having so much time as to receive the blessed Sacraments, nor to call upon God, to helpe him in this his extremitie; or to advise him to consider, that his bloud is corrupted, ill humours abound in him, that hee lives disorderly, as given to all excesse and ryot, that he useth little exercise, and that his often surfeitings will bring him to an Apoplexie, or some other dangerous disease, that will quickly make an end of him, Necessary lessons for yong Gallants

or that the Lambe goes as soone to the Shambles as the sheepe; and that he should not flatter himselfe, because hee findes himselfe strong in his armes, sound in his feet, lusty in his legges, able in his body, and free from all aches, either in his head, or those his other parts, that therefore he is safe, is priviledg'd from sicknesse, hath an established health, and assurance of long life.

The poore reasons that the rich alledge against the poore

And here (me thinkes) I heare this young gallant say; Such poore Rascals as thou art, must come to die, and suffer such mis-fortunes as these; For I am rich, strong, valiant, discreet, and nobly descended. I have a faire house to dwell in, a soft bed to lie in, I eate what I list, I want nothing that my heart can desire, I live at pleasure, and doe what I will, with-out controlement; and where there are no troubles, nor no care-taking, there is no sickenesse, there no doore open for old age to enter. Ah, poore silly foole that thou art! Samson, David, Salomon, and Lazarus, were more good, more discreet, more valiant, more gallant, and more rich then thou, and yet they dy'd, when their time was come.

None live for ever in this world

There have beene many millions of men from Adams time to thine, and yet there was not any one of them that liv'd for ever in this world. He then that shall tell them this Truth, or any thing else that may be for their good, they will take him to be a foole. Who then will adventure to tell them their faults? Or who dare speake their minde freely unto them? Let Vargas speake to this point.[1] He must be either desperate or foolish, that shall presume to tell Princes and great Persons of these things; for if thou be a man of understanding, and have any thing in thee worthy commendation, they will presently call thee into

[1] There is a Spanish Proverb that sayes, *Averiguelo Vargas*. Let Vargas approve it. Which is to be understood, when a businesse is very intricate and hard to be decided. This Proverbe grew first from the *Licenciado Francisco de Vargas*, of the Colledge of Santa Cruz in Valladolid, a man of a strong braine, and of a quicke dispatch, whom King Don Fernando made choyse of to be his Secretary. And because hee did remit all his Memorials to his scanning, and to give him an account of them, he would usually say, when any made suit unto him; *Averiguelo Vargas*. Covarruvias, Verb. *Vargas*.

the Court, and frame a bill against thee, executing that Statute upon thee, of *Scandalum magnatum*. And if thou beest a Buffone and common Jester, they will send thee to the Porters Lodge, and there have thee whipt. Therefore thou must neither jest with those that are rich and mightie, nor yet be so plaine with them, as to tell them the truth. For, I am not bound to speake the truth, where I know it will not bee accepted, and whence I am sure I shall get great hatred, if not harme, for my good will. It shall be sufficient for my understanding, and all such as I am, to know that all things in this world passe away, and that we shall passe away likewise with them. I could be content to say this over and over a thousand times together, and repeat no other lesson ; For, to understand this truth alone, is that which most importeth us, and doth most neerely concerne us. And why should we promise that unto our selves, which we can not accomplish ? Hee that holdes himselfe to be the strongest man, of the soundest constitution, of the best composed humours, and the purest mixed elements, this man, I say, (for all his well ordered frame of nature) hath no assurance of his long continuance, but is more apt to fall, then those other houses of Clay, which are lesse substantially built. There is not any mans strength, be it never so great, that can resist but a puffe of sicknesse ; the best of us all are but dung-hills, and heaps of dust, which a little blast of winde will scatter away, and lay us levell with the earth. Let no man flatter and deceive himselfe : let him not feigne that to himselfe, which is nothing so : nor intertaine that, which his lying sensualitie shall dictate unto him. For she will speake that unto thee, which she utters to all the world besides. Shee will tell thee ; Thou art great and powerfull, and may'st therefore doe what thou list. That thou art a Gallant, and mayst therefore goe up and downe, and take thy pleasure. Thou art faire and rich, and mayst therefore be dis-honest, and dissolute. Thou art noble, and mayst therefore lawfully scorne thy inferiours, and thinke none to be equall unto thee. And if thou receivest an injury,

Wee must neither jest with great men, nor tell them the truth

Wee are all of us but weakelings

Wee ought not to flatter our selves

it is not for thine honour to put it up, but to revenge it to the full. Thou art a Governour, and set in authoritie over others, and therefore mayst governe according to thine owne will, and order businesses for thine owne best advantage, though it be to the hurt of others, let them maunder their worst, or come what will come, thou need'st not to care. Thou art a Judge, and mayst therefore judge in thy friends favour, mayst tread justice under thy foot, and pervert the Lawes at thine owne pleasure. Thou art favoured by the King, and art able to shew favour unto others; thou mayst therefore use this thy favour, as thou shalt thinke fit, and shall sute best with thine owne liking, and blow smoake in the noses of the poore,[1] not regarding how thou doest offend, and distaste them. For it stands not with thy reputation, thy Office, thy Dignitie, nor thy honour, that they should aske thee that which thou owest them, nor speake to thee for that his cloake, which thou hast wrongfully taken from him.

Proverb

None is so good as he thinkes himselfe to be

Man is but dust; and what kinde of dust

But, in good faith (my Lords) I must be so bold to tell you, that be yee never so great, or bee ye so great as yee imagine your selves to be, (though you can never be so great, as you conceit your selves to be) yet the very best of you, when you are at the best, are no better then a little dust. Make your choyse of which dust yee will; be it earth, or ashes; for there are no other sorts of dust. If of earth; let it put yee in minde, that your beginning was dust, though tempred with a little water, giving yee thereby to understand (if your greatnesse make yee not like beasts, that understand not) that you should make your selves fruitfull for heaven, by entring into a due consideration of your selves, and an acknowledgement of your owne unworthinesse. Yee know well enough, that the earth cannot, without water, yeeld any fruit; And if this earth of yours become drie through your vices, and that it bee not watred with the deaw of heaven, with holy inspirations, and with good workes, that it may fructifie and bring forth fruit, by

[1] *Dara un humo à narizes*, i.e. *disgustarle, y enojarle.* Covarruvias, Verbe *Humo.*

pardoning of injuries, asking forgivenesse for those wrongs which yee have done to others, by paying those debts that yee owe, and by shewing true repentance, yee shall be but as heapes of Ashes, good for nothing, and cast out upon the dung-hill. And that in the end shall befall ye, which we see to happen unto Ashes, wherof that Sope is made, that serves to take out the soyles and spots that are in cloathes, and are afterwards as things of no use, throwne forth upon some one filthy-stinking mixen, or other. Yee shall by your bad examples, so terrifie others, and make them so afraid of following the evill courses, that they shall thereby be saved, and yee damned to the pit of hell, that everlasting burning coale-pit, whose fire shall never goe out. These I tell yee, are truths, and now it is time to tell yee them. And if I told yee lyes in my youth, out of a kinde of pride and bravery that I tooke in them, now experience teaches me another lesson, and riper yeeres have brought me to the knowledge of those many errours, which I then committed.

We must not deferre our amendment upon hope of long life

Nor let any man indanger himselfe, for to thinke, that that may happen unto him, which hath befalne me; to wit, Long-life; and relying there-upon, grow slacke and carelesse of their amendment, hoping that they may doe that time enough hereafter, when they begin to waxe old; for a sharpe Easterly winde shall come upon thee on the sudden, ere ever thou art aware of it, and nip this thy flower of youth, with the cold bitter frost of death, and sheere thee downe to the ground in this thy greene and flourishing state, as grasse is cut downe by the Sithe of the Mower, and thou shalt presently wither, and be carried cleane away, never more to be seene. I was never sure that I should come to live thus long, nor can any man else warrant his owne life. For we are all of us but as Birds that flye abroad in the fields singing and sporting, while in the meane time the Eagle comes, and seazeth upon one of them, which seemeth best unto him. Or else comes the Owner of those grounds, using a thousand tricks and devices to take them. None of us know the set houre of our death, but all of us

THE FIRST BOOKE

know this, that we must goe one after another. I likewise, have followed mine owne idle humour, not thinking upon any settled course in this world; but because the end which I intend, is to build up a perfect man, still as I meet with stones fit for this building, I goe setting of them up; these occasions, are my Center, and by them, as by so many lines, I come thercunto. But here I will lay downe this load of stones, and when time shall serve, I will returne againe with another, and it shall not be long e're I gather more, and bring them in place.

The Authors intention

Returning therefore to our present purpose; I say, that I was wholly compacted of lyes, as I had ever beene. With some I would be a Martyr, with other some a Confessor. For all things are not to be communicated to all. And therefore I would never truly impart my troubles to any, nor punctually publish them; but when I was forced to manifest the same, I would tell one man one tale, and another, another; and no man had it without it's comment. And because a Lyer (they say) had need of a good memorie; I, that had none of the best, to day I would recount the case one way, and to morrow another, and so many times, so many different wayes did I varie from that which I first delivered: So that, bearing my selfe in this manner, I gave occasion to those that knew me to be a Lyer, not to give credit so much to me, as to the generall voyce and report that went abroad. For they did all of them truly and really agree upon the thing it selfe, they did jumpe in the matter, but not in the manner. For every one did either take away, or adde thereunto, as he thought best; and as thou thy selfe perhaps art wont now and then to doe.

Guzman, a notable lyer

A lyer had need of a good memory

Now, for some few dayes, as a noveltie that had beene newly set abroach, there was no other thing talkt of in all Rome. My mis-fortune was the theame of their Discourse, and my being be-myr'd, the salt that seasoned their conversation. It came likewise to my Masters eare, but he being wise, gave it the hearing, but spake not a word of it. For a Master is not alwaies bound to take notice of all that is done; for then he should be ty'de (by the Law of good-

CHAPTER VII

A Master is not bound to take notice of every flim-flam tale that is told him

nesse, and out of the noblenesse of his nature) to remedie what is amisse. Hee did dissemble it all that he could, but not so cunningly, but that by some inter-smilings, and casting of his eyes, he made it knowne. He plough'd with me, and therefore knew what furrow I had turned up. And as it was fit for him to dissemble it, so was it for me to denie it. We were silent on all sides, but not very long, for the Devils cloven foot at last brake out at his shooes. There was a certaine friend of his, and consequently my enemy, who taking him one day all alone, told him, how much it imported both his qualitie and credit, to rid himselfe of me, in regard of the publike and open language, which I used of those things which his Lordship had in-trusted me withall, and that every one might scrue what he would from me, and draw all those secrets from me, which he had committed to my bosome. That Gentlemen of his place and profession should proceed according to that, which represented it selfe unto them, and that his Lordship doing the contrary, it would prove very prejudiciall to his owne reputation, and his masters service. This discourse is mine owne; and though happely these formall words were not delivered just in the same phrase, as I have now delivered unto you; yet I verily beleeve, they were like unto these, if not more effectuall then what I have here set downe. But howsoever they were the same, or not the same, I am sure that none of them all could tell him more, then he himselfe already knew, nor advise him better then he was able to advise himselfe. And I make no question, that he was not well pleased with that which they said unto him. But he spake not one word thereof unto me at that time, nor made any shew of alteration, or carryed any other kinde of countenance towards me, then he was wont to doe. Only, because Lent was now newly come in, hee made use of that occasion, to live a little more retyred, and not to talke of prophane and idle matters, and particularly, not of women.

An Embassadour must have a care as well of his Masters, as his owne reputation

Thus did things runne along. But in regard that I was become the common Table-talke of all the Towne, those that

waited on my Lord in his Chamber, his Pages, and other his ordinarie servants, tooke a little more libertie and licence of language unto them, then did well beseeme them. For, to make themselves merry, and to intertaine the time, what betweene jest and earnest, they did so nip mee with their witty jests, and pay mee home with their Satyricall lashes, that your Mariners doe not more straine their tacklings in a tempest, then they did wrest and wring the very bowels within mee. So that now at last, neither at home, nor abroad, had I any place, wherein I might rest secure; nor any wall, where-against to leane, and from whence some Eccho did not sound, that did voice forth the sinnes that I had done.

I had now so lost all patience, and was so in a manner besides my selfe, that one day as I past along the street, I was almost inforced to have committed many fooleries. He said well, who being ask't, in how long a time, a wise man might turne foole? Answered; That is according as the boyes in the street shall flocke about him, abuse him, and hoote at him. This was it that brought the water up above my chinne, and was ready to drowne me; this was it that made me to for-sweare all sufferance, and to renegue my wonted patience.

How a wise man may be made to turne Foole, or mad-man

Many little children, as well as the greater lubbers, did persecute mee, wheresoever I went, laughing and scoffing at mee, with strange out-cryes, and loud showtings, making a most hideous noise. I tooke up stones, and would have throwne at them; but a yong man, of mine owne stature, qualitie and yeeres, well-behaved, but some-what hot and cholericke, came running in upon mee, and held my arme so fast, that I was not able to move a finger to doe them any hurt; yet did hee deale so honestly with mee, as to take part with mee against them all, and to defend mee against this their rage and fury, drawing in two or three other of his friends, that came along in his Company, making resistance both in deeds, and in words, against those Hobber-de-hoyes, which like so many Hob-gobblins, or little Divels, did haunt me up and downe from

Guzman persecuted by boyes and children

street to street, and from house to house. And having now quieted and laid these unruly sprites ; he tooke mee by the hand, bringing me himselfe alone home to my lodging, leaving his Companions behinde to keepe backe the boyes.

When he had brought me thus home, I would faine have had him to stay with mee, that I might have fastned some kindnesse upon him, and have done him all the courtesie and honour the house could afford : But could by no meanes get him to accept thereof.

Then did I intreat him, that he would tell mee his name, as also where was his lodging, that I might come to kisse his hands, and give him thankes for the un-deserved kindnesse I had received from him ; but hee would neither acquaint mee with the one, nor the other ; promising to returne some other time to visit me. Onely he told me, that he did beare particular affection as well to my person, as my Country ; for that I was a Spaniard, and that hee was as sensible of this disgrace of mine, as if it were his owne. And with this we tooke leave each of other. I came home with my colour so changed, my eyes so inflamed, and my understanding so confounded, that (not considering well what I did) comming just in the nick, when dinner was a serving up, I would needs goe up with the rest of the Pages to wait at his Lordships table. But when I was come into the dining roome, and found what Gentlemen were there attending on his Excellencie, I then saw my simplicitie, and saw how egregiously I had playd the foole ; and would faine have holpe my selfe, by getting forth from amongst them : but it was too late ; for my Master had already perceived by my countenance what I ayled, and (without casting my water) that all was not well with me, and that I was inwardly much troubled. Whereupon he demanded of mee, what was the cause of this my perturbation ? I beeing taken thus on a sudden, having no leisure to fall then a coyning, and having never a new lye in store, went plainely to worke, and told him all the whole truth of the businesse, and every particular passage thereof ; which was all out, before I was aware, telling that, which

Guzmans indiscretion

The first truth, that ever Guzman told

I was not willing to utter. And this was the first Wine, that came out of my Taverne without water, and the first truth that ever I told in my life. My Master said nothing to it: but those that waited at the boord, not beeing able to forbeare laughing, one claps mee the cover of the Cup that he held in his hand before his face, another the Plate that he held betweene his Thumbs, a third the Napkin where-with hee serv'd as Server, and those that were empty-handed, laying one hand on their face, and with the other stopping their mouth, their hearts being ready to burst in their bellies, hy'de them (for feare of blurting in my Lords face) as fast out of the roome, as their legges would carry them. And they past so farre therein beyond the bounds of modestie, that his Excellency was some-what mooved thereat, and call'd out aloud unto them to be quiet, rebuking them with sharper words then ever heretofore he was wont to doe, reprehending them for this their over-boldnesse in his presence. Where-with I was so ashamed, and so quite altered from that I was before, as if I had been sensible of the tearmes of honour, or had some signes thereof still remaining in me.

It is good sometimes to fall into an errour, that man may learne thereby to take better heed hereafter

O how many things doth Rigour correct, which Love is not able to effect! O, how much doth it import oftentimes, for to take a good fall, that a man may the better learne to looke to his feet hereafter, and to know how to walke more steddily, and more surely! Then did I take notice of mine owne deformitie, in that glasse did I see every spot that I had about me; and was so quite dasht out of countenance, and so confounded in my selfe, that for all the Masters, and women that were in the world, I would never more take upon mee to treat of their Love-matters, nor be a Broker in that kinde for the greatest Prince in Christendome. O, what a brave resolution was this, if it would have held!

The storme being now laid, my Master remained very sad, leaning his cheeke on his hand, and his elbow on the boord, holding his Pick-tooth in his mouth betweene his teeth, beeing much discontented, that these things of mine

should runne on in that manner, that he must be forced to doe that, which he never thought to have done; how-beit it was requisite for him so to doe, for the avoiding of a greater mischiefe; seeing himselfe now so farre ingaged, that hee should give some notable touch to his Reputation, if hee should declare himselfe in my defence; especially, considering that mens servants are the reall and true marke of what goodnesse and finenesse is their Masters cloth. He will'd me to get me downe to dinner. And from that time forward, neither I, nor any of my fellowes did for many dayes together, see his countenance so cheerefull, nor finde his tongue so affable, as heretofore it was wont to be.

Now I durst not goe (as before) out of doores, but by night. So that all day long I kept my selfe close in my Chamber, spending my time, either in reading good bookes, or playing upon some Instrument, or talking with my friends. Insomuch, that this retiring of my selfe, wrought in those of the house a new respect; and in those abroad, silence; and in my selfe, another course of life, differing from that which I led before.

Now every mans tongue was still, and now by absenting my selfe from their sight, all these my businesses were forgotten, as if they had never beene. The Yong man came often to visit mee, that had taken my part, when I was so vilely mockt and abus'd by the Boyes. He made mee many offers of his Purse and his Person; hee acquainted mee with his Country, his Name, and the cause of his comming to Rome, which was to get a Dispensation of his Holinesse, and that hee had spent therein a great deale of money and time, and yet was as farre from effecting his businesse, as the first houre that hee set foot in that Citie. I held my selfe bound to doe him all the good offices that I could to further this his pretension, giving credit to all that he told mee. And because I did desire, that some faire occasion might bee offered, whereby I might repay part of that debt, wherein I stood bound unto him; I intreated him, that hee would acquaint mee with his businesse, and I would petition my Lord Embassador in his behalfe, and negociate it with

all the speed I could. Hee returned mee many thankes for this my kinde offer, and told mee that hee had now hit into the right path, wherein hee was to walke, and that he had now very good and assured hopes to bring his purpose to passe. But in case this course should faile him, whereinto hee had now put himselfe, hee would then intertaine that courtesie whereof I had made him so willing a tender. And thus wee past the time a while in complement, giving and taking by turnes some Ceremonies of Court-ship, till at last he askt mee, whether I would take the paines to walke along with him to the Palace? I excused my selfe unto him, and told him the cause why I had retyred my selfe, and how well it sped with mee; for by my not going abroad, mine owne minde was now quieted, and the noise and hurry of the Towne very well allayd.

This yong fellow was as very a Wagge as my selfe, much of my age, and his Beard (like mine) newly budding forth; he presently caught hold of these words, as those, which he most desired to heare to come from me; and when I had herein satisfied his longing, he said unto me:

Señor Guzman, you have carried your selfe with that discretion, as is proper unto you, and may truely bee termed your owne. And I hold this for as good and sure a remedie, as I find it difficult for you to put it in practise, and to make continuall use of it; For sometimes such necessarie occasions represent themselves unto us, that men are inforced, whether they will or no, to breake these their firme purposes, and religious resolutions. If I, Sir, were in your case, rather then I would bee thus mewed up, and for so long a time, I would weare out this disgrace by travelling abroad, rounding all Italy, before I would returne. In which your travell, you shall not onely take singular content, but you shall likewise obtaine your intended end, and with more advantage, then you can possibly pretend, by this your private shutting up of your selfe in your Lords house. For Time and Absence, weare out all things, and are the best Physicians that can bee found for such kinde of diseases as these.

Travell yeeldeth much delight

He went likewise leading me along with the relation of divers and sundry curiosities, presenting unto mee the great excellencies of Florence, the beauty of Genoa, and the incomparable government of Venice, and other things of great delight, which did so dispose mee to undergoe this course, which (after that hee had taken his leave of mee) wrought so upon mee all that night, that I could not take any rest, nor thinke upon any other thing. Me thought, that I had already pluckt on my Bootes, and put on my Spurres, and that I was now onward on my way. Whereupon I got mee up as soone as it was day, and brought my Lord his cloathes; to whom, while hee was making him ready, I gave an account of this my resolution. Hee liked very well of it, holding it a commendable, and an honest course, that it would make much for my good, and stop all those mouthes, that were now so clamorous against me. He then told me, what others had said of mee; and that, which hee sate musing on at boord, when he shew'd himselfe so sad, how he was then beating his braines about my good, and how much he did desire to see me well accommodated, for the great affection that he bare unto me, and that he had set his wits aworke for me; but seeing that mine owne invention had hit so well; he told me, that if I had a minde to goe into France, I should have Letters of recommendation to his friends there in my favour; or if that I should make any other choyse to my better liking, he would not be wanting unto me, but deale well and worthily with me, as one that had done him true and faithfull service.

CHAPTER VII

A loving Master, what manner of man he is

I had a great desire to have gone into France, for the great state and Majestie that I had often heard of that Kingdome, but much more of that their noble and renowned King; But things were not then in that case that I could conveniently execute my longing. I kist his hands, and thank't his Excellencie for these his favours towards me; and told him, that (if it might stand with his good leave and liking) I was very desirous to travell first thorow all Italy, and especially see Florence, whereof I had heard such large commendations; and from thence goe to Siena,

where Pompeyo did then reside, one that was my especiall good friend, and well knowne to his Lordship, for we did ordinarily converse together by our Letters, though we had never seene one another. Which correspondence had knit a strict knot of friendship betweene us.

My Master was very glad of this motion ; and from that day forward, began to set things in order for my journey. Purposing with my selfe to make hereafter a new Booke, washing away by my vertues, those spots, which Vice had stained me with all.

CHAPTER VIII

Guzman de Alfarache, discourses of Deceit. He departs from Rome. Hee desires to see Siena, where certaine theeves meet with his Trunkes, which he had sent away before, and robbe him of all that he had

Seneca's saying, touching deceit

THAT most famous Philosopher Seneca, treating of Deceit, (whereof we have said somewhat already in the third Chapter of this booke, though all that shall be spoken thereof, will be too little) in one of his Epistles saith; That there is a deceitfull kinde of promise, which is made to the Fowles of the ayre, the Beastes of the field, the Fishes in the waters, and men themselves upon earth. Deceit comes unto us in that submissive kinde of manner, in so lowly, and so humble a fashion, that they that doe not know her, may be condemned of ingratitude and incivilitie, if they doe not set wide-open the gates of their soule, and runne out to receive her with open both armes and heart. And for that the arte thereof, which is now a dayes professed, the studies, the

The nature of deceit

watchings, and the diligences, which are used therein, are all done with a double minde, and set themselves a-worke with a false intent; by how much the more the thing that is treated of, is in it's nature of that qualitie, that we may therein easily commit many errours, that may turne much to our prejudice, by so much the more secret subtilties, crafty Counter-minings, cunning Stratagems, strong Artillerie, and war-like munition, she fortifies her selfe, furnishing her selfe with all necessarie provision, when she meanes to come into the field. And therefore wee need not so much to wonder, that we are now and then, but that we are not alwayes deceived. And the case standing so, I hold it a lesse evill, to be deceived by others, then to be the Authors of so sacrilegious a sinne.

It is better to bee deceived, then to deceive

Amongst other things which King Don Alonso would (who was surnamed the Wise) in-discreetly reforme in nature, this was one amongst the rest; that he did blame her, that she had not made a Window in mans brest; that we might see that, which he was plotting in his heart, and whether his manner of proceeding were faire and sincere, or whether his words were feigned, or whether (like Janus) he had two faces under one hood? And the cause of all this, is Necessitie; for if a man finde himselfe laden with obligations, and knowes not how to ease himselfe of them, he goes about to seeke all the helpes and meanes he can, to lighten himselfe of this load, and to come off as handsomely as he can. Necessitie teacheth us the way to all this, and makes the hardest and most untrodden paths, to appeare even, and easie to be hit. It will breake thorow the thickest Briers, and clamber up the roughest and steepest Rocks. It is in its owne nature (as is before mentioned in our first chapter) full of daringnesse, and of Lying. And for this cause, even your simplest and most innocent Birds have their tricks and their subtilties. The Dove flies with a strong and swift wing, seeking food for her tender young ones, whilest another of her owne kinde, from the highest top of some one Oake or other, cals her, and invites her, that she will intertaine her selfe there awhile to ease and

Necessitie makes men bold

Birds and Beasts seeke to deceive

refresh her selfe, and only to the end, that the cunning Fowler may come the more conveniently to make his shoot, and kill her. The poore harmelesse Nightingale, in a wilde and carelesse fashion, goes thorow the Woods sweetly thrilling forth her love-sicke complaints, when lo, another Bird of the same feather, that is clapt into a Cage, awaking new jealousies, deceives her with a false call, and brings her into the Net, by meanes whereof, shee becomes a perpetuall prisoner during her life.

The tale of an Asse, that sought to deceive

Avianus the Philosopher tels us in one of his Fables, that even your Asses have also a minde to deceive, and he maketh mention of one, that had put on a Lyons skinne, to make all the rest of the beasts of the Forrest afraid; who being sought after by his Master, when he saw him in that kinde of cloathing, not being able therewith to hide his huge long eares, he presently knew this his Asse, and soundly basting his backe and sides with a good cudgell, and stripping him of his counterfeit skinne, he remained as very an Asse as hee was before.

All use deceit

Of all creatures living, there is scarce any one, but will, for the effecting of his purpose, use some deceit against him, who is carelesse thereof, and thinkes not on it; As is

An Impresse of the Snake, and the Spider

expressed in that Impresse, of a Snake that lay asleepe, and a Spider, that came secretly downe for to nip him by the head, and strike his poyson into him, and so worke his death; whose Motto speakes thus: *No ay prudençia, que resista al engaño.* No wisdome can withstand deceit. It is folly for any man to thinke, that a wise man can foresee, and prevent those deceits, which like so many Traps

The qualities of a cunning theefe

and Gins, are laid in his way. I was not so circumspect, as I should have beene, I suspected no trecherie, I received good deeds, I heard good words, I saw a man in an honest and fashionable habit, who sought to give me good counsell, and seemed to favour me, who had put his life in danger, to save mine, who visited me (as I thought) without any hope of interest, or particular profit to himselfe, not being able to fasten upon him (so unwilling did he ever seeme to receive any courtesie from me) so much as a Cup of cold

water. He told me, that he was my Country-man, an Andaluzian, borne in the Citie of Sevill, a principall Gentleman of the house of the Sayavedras, and one of the noblest, the ancientest, and best qualified of all that Familie ; and who, from one of such a qualitie, would have suspected such deceit ? But all were lyes that he told me ; for he was of Valençia, whose name, for some just causes I conceale ; but he spake the Language of Castile excellent well, and had the true tone thereof, that it was not possible to discerne him to be other. Hee was a handsome well-favoured young man, well spoken, of a faire behaviour, and a fine Companion in his conversation ; Who would have once suspected, that he should have prov'd such a Conny-catching Rascall, and that with such ceremonious and feigned friendship, he should thus deceive me ? But all this cuning carriage of his, was but like a Peacocks dressing, making this so faire a show, that therby he might the better deceive me, and that he might have the freer accesse into my Lords house, and into my Chamber, to filch from thence whatsoever he could handsomely finger. I had no mistrust of him in the world, but rather held him so honest a man, that I durst have pawn'd my life for his truth.

CHAPTER VIII

Sayavedra, a notable theefe

He came the other day to visit me, and finding that I had altred my habit, and put my selfe into another kinde of fashion of cloathes, differing from my wonted weare, he startled and stood afterwards as one amazed, not knowing what he might thinke of it, or what might be the cause of this change. At last he askt me the reason of this sudden alteration ? I told him, that I had taken his counsell, and that I was resolved to goe to Siena, where I should meet with Pompeyo, a great and intire friend of mine, and from thence to passe for Florence, and so afterwards to visit all Italy.

Sayavedra visits Guzman, only that he might rob him of that he had

When he heard me say so, he began to take fresh breath, and seemed to be very glad thereof, much commending this my resolution, and altring withall his owne determination : for if his designe untill then, were only to seeke out some fit occasion to steale thence an odde sute of cloathes, some

trifling Jewels, or some odde pieces of Gold, not worth the talking of; having now heard this newes of my sudden departure, no lesse would now content him, then my whole store. Hee was very diligent in observing how I did make up my Trunkes, putting his helping hand thereunto. He marked where I had laid a set of Gold Buttons, a Chaine, and other Jewels that I had; and above three hundred Spanish Pistolets that I carryed along with me. For my Lord Embassadours house, being I did not now use to play, but to hoord up what I got, yeelded me, in the space of some foure yeeres that I serv'd him, good store of money, what in gifts; what for good lucks sake, Gamesters bestowd upon me, when they had a good hand; what by Cardes, which I was ever ready to furnish them withall, and what with other Presents, that now and then came unlook't for unto me.

When I had lockt, and maled up my Trunkes, I laid the Keyes upon my Beds-head, whereon Sayavedra had set his heart; for then did he desire nothing more, then to meet with some fit occasion, how he might come to the fingring of them, and finde meanes to falsifie them. And it fell out just, as hee would have it.[1] For, as hee and I were talking of my journey, and telling him that I purposed to send away my Trunkes before, and that I would stay some sixe or seven dayes in Rome, to take leave of my friends, by which time they would be at Siena, where I should finde them ready for mee, when I came thither; in that very instant there came one of my Lords servants unto mee, and told me, that there were some beneath did inquire for me, and did much desire to speake with me. And because my Chamber was out of order, unswept, and not fit, by reason it was so foule, to receive any visit, I went downe to see who they were.

Sayavedras craft in coozening Guzman

In the *Interim*, Sayavedra had opportunitie to take the print of all my keyes in certaine pieces of some Waxe Candles ends that lay about the Chamber, if hee had not purposely

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *A que quieres boca*, That is, *Darle todo lo que quiere, y quanto pidiere.* Covarruvias, Verbe *Boca.*

brought some along with him in his pocket. Those that sought for mee, were certaine Muleters, or Carriers, which came for my luggage; they came up, I delivered it unto them, and they carried it away.

This businesse dispatcht, my friend and I continued talking together: and because hee did not offer to goe away, I thought hee did it out of courtesie, and the friendship that was betweene us, and that it was out of his love to keepe mee company, for that little while that I was to stay. Whereas indeed he onely stayd in Towne, till these counterfetted keyes were fashioned by the Smithes hand, and to make me to breake my sleepes, as by and by I shall tell you.

Hee continued his Visits with mee for three or foure dayes together: and when hee thought hee had made all cock-sure, and that the Bird could not now escape his hand; hee came one evening unto my Chamber, where hee had not sate long, but that his face changed colour, and beganne to put on that feigned hiew, which hee was willing to give it, hanging his head in his bosome, making show as if hee had beene taken with a great paine in his head, an extreme Ach in his shoulders, a strange kinde of sowrenesse or bitternesse of his mouth and palate, and above all, with a wonderfull heavinesse in his eyes, that hee was scarce able to hold them up. Hee seemed to bee as it were in a Lethargie, or the like drowzie disease; complaining, that hee was scarce able to stand upon his legges, desiring mee that I would give him leave to goe home to his lodging. I was very sorry, and held it as a great unhappinesse, that my Chamber was not fitted for to lodge him, and to give him that friendly intertainment, as my heart desired: Intreating him, (when I saw hee would needs bee gone) that hee would acquaint mee with his lodging, that I might come and visit him, and send him some physicall curiosities, fit for sicke folkes, to relish his taste, and comfort his stomake, or that I might serve him in any thing else, wherein I might bee use-full unto him. Hee told me, that hee lodged in the house of a certaine Gentle-woman, that liv'd

very secret and private; but in case this his sicknesse should not suddenly leave him, or that he should chance to grow worse and worse, that then hee would advise mee thereof, that I might come and visit him. And so taking his leave of mee, that very day hee tooke Post, and rode towards Siena, where hee found his Companions, that went along with the Muleters, that they might see where, and to whom these Trunkes were consigned.

Sayavedra rides Post to Syena, and finely robs Guzman of his Trunkes

When hee was come to Siena, the people seeing a Gentleman come in that good equipage by Post, tooke him to bee some principall Spaniard. Hee alighted at the chiefest Inne that was in all the Citie, where presently his Companions came about him, who had there attended his comming, and giving it out that they were his servants, they waited diligently upon him.

That very day, as soone as hee was arrived, he sent one of them to Pompeyo, to give him to understand, that hee was newly come to Towne. And when my friend had received this message, and knew that I was in the Towne, hee was so over-joyed, that going to put on his Cloake, it was a good while, ere hee could finde the way to unfold it, and to set it right upon his shoulders. And hee himselfe afterwards told mee, that hee first threw it one way, and then another; one while with the wrong side outward, another with the cape doubled in, and out of order, and in the end, when he could not hit the right, through his too much joy, hee carelessely flung it onely upon one shoulder, and in this unmannerly kinde of manner, he came from home in all haste, stumbling and tripping in the streets, and some-times ready to fall upon his nose, through his too much haste, and the longing desire that he had to see me.

Being come to the Inne, where Sayavedra had put on my person, hee tooke it very unkindely, complaining much, that I should make him such a stranger, and deale so unfriendly with him, as not to alight at his house, which I might command as freely as mine owne. Which Sayavedra having excused as well as hee could; they afterwards fell

into discourse, talking of his journey, and some other things of Rome, untill it was night.

At which time Pompeyo, for the present, taking his leave of him, that hee might leave him to his rest: Sayavedra gave (in his presence) the key of one of his Trunkes, to one of his servants, saying unto him withall; Doe you heare, Sirrha? Goe you along with Señor Pompeyo, and take mee out such a sute, which you shall finde in such a part, for I will put on that to morrow.

They went away together, and his servant punctually performed that, which his Master had commanded him; un-cording, in the presence of Pompeyo, the very self-same Trunke, where-unto hee was directed, and taking forth the fore-said sute of cloathes, hee lockes me the Trunke, and putting up the key in his pocket, hee comes his way. That night Pompeyo sent him a very good supper, a neat collation of Comfits, and sweet meates, and admirable rich Wines: Wherewith when Sayavedra and his fellowes had supt, and had eate and drunke their fill, they got them to bed, where they so soundly slept, that they did not wake till the next day.

That morning Pompeyo came some-what early to visit him; but his servants intreated him to hold their Master excused; for he had not taken any rest all that night, and was now newly falne asleepe. Hee told them, he was very sorry hee had so ill a night of it; hee would not therefore now trouble him, but would goe his way and come againe anon. But they would by no meanes give way to that, telling him, that their Master would bee very angry with them, when hee should know that hee had beene there, and that none of them had either so much wit, or manners to tell him of it. Where-upon, they went presently up into his Chamber, and signified unto him, that Señor Pompeyo was come to see him. Hee was very glad of it, and commanding one of them to set ready a Chaire for him, sent down another to intreat him to come up.

Pompeyo, as soone as hee came in, asked him how hee did, and what was the cause of his last nights indisposition?

He told him, that for want of use, hee was so weary with his riding Post, that hee found himselfe somewhat distempered, his body being over-heated, and that hee had a purpose to be let bloud.

Pompeyo was very earnest with him, that hee would change his lodging, and take his house for his Inne. Sayavedra excused himselfe, telling him, that his servants were unruly, and given to disorder, and that hee was resolved to put them away, and to take new within these eight or nine dayes, and that then he would promise him to receive this courtesie at his hands, which he had so kindly offered unto him: Intreating him in the meane while, that he would doe him the kindnesse, as to send his Trunkes by one of his owne servants, because hee had no great trust in any of his owne; and fearing, that giving them the Keyes to fetch such things as hee needed, they might put some tricke upon him.

Pompeyo liked well of it, and thought that hee did therein very wisely and discreetly, onely hee seemed not to bee so well pleased, that he should treat of taking Physicke in an Inne. But resting contented with the promise that hee had made him, hee performed what hee desired, and was no sooner come to his lodging, but hee laded certaine Porters with his Trunkes, and sending one of his servants along with them, hee saw them safely delivered to Sayavedra. Hee sent him that day a very dainty dinner; and those two friends having taken leave of each other for that night, that they might goe to bed in a good houre, Sayavedra and his Companions convayed secretly into another house that which they had brought thither, and taking Post, departed presently for Florence; whither, when they were come, they divided the spoile amongst them.

Sayavedra and his companions Post away to Florence, where they divide the Spoile

These copartners with Sayavedra, were their crafts-Masters, subtill fellowes, and stout Rogues; and the principall plotter and contriver of all these pilfring projects, was a Bolonian borne, hee was a great Scholler, and a very learned Doctor in this kinde of Art; his name was Alexandro Bentivoglio, the sonne of a Doctor in that

Universitie, who was a rich man, and a great projector, but of no extraordinarie Discourse, but one that did build Castles in the ayre, and frame in his imagination mighty matters, and things of great intertainment. CHAPTER VIII

This man had two sonnes, in condition quite opposite, and contrarie one to the other. The elder was called Vicencio, an ignorant yong fellow, a silly Asse, the laughter of the people, with whom your Noblemen and Gentlemen made sport; he would bolt you out the famousest fooleries that could bee devised; One while, hee would boast his Nobilitie, another while his Valour; sometimes hee would take upon him to be a great Musician, and then falling off from that, hee would bragge of his Horsemanship, and his Poetry; and above all, hee would professe himselfe to bee the onely *Enamorado*, and perfectest Love-proficient in all the Country. So that of him, it might bee said, *Dexalas penen*.[1] Suffer such to dye in their folly.

The other was this Alexander, a notable Thiefe, nimble finger'd, and of a strong and able body. Who, though hee were well borne, yet was he ill bred, and for want of good education, became an excellent Vagabond, and a notorious Rogue, by keeping of evill company. This mans Companions, were other such like ruffianly fellowes as himselfe. For like will to like; and all sorts of things have recourse to their proper center. Ill company hurtfull

Now, because hee was their Ring-leader, and the onely principall man amongst them, and that did all in all, hee made Sayavedra content himselfe with a little, giving him some, but the worser sort of my cloathes. And thinking that he could not remaine there in safety, he got him into the Popes territories, where his father was Alcalde. So that he posted to Bologna, carrying away with him the Buttons, the Jewels, and the Pistolets, retiring himselfe home to his fathers house. And the rest of his fellowes, that shared with him, fled to Trent, as they afterwards told mee in Bologna, and there they dispersed themselves.

[1] *Dexalas penen*, is some phrase tending to that purpose, as I turne it; or some catch of a Song. I would be glad to bee better informed.

THE FIRST BOOKE

When Pompeyo returned to visit mee, not finding my *Statua* there, nor any of his fellowes, hee askt mine Host of the house what was become of them? He told him, that the night before, they went away from thence with their Trunkes, but whether they knew not. Hee tooke this for an ill signe; and suspecting what this might chance to prove in the end, used great and extraordinarie diligences in the search of them; and having notice that they rode Post by the way of Florence, hee sent Hue and Cry after them, with a warrant to apprehend them. But leaving them to this their businesse: let mee returne now unto my selfe, and God grant, that in the meane while, they may have the good lucke to meet with these Theeves, and recover my lost goods.

Those few dayes that I afterwards stay'd in Rome, I was jocund and merry, and did not so much as once dreame of any such roguerie intended against me. And out of a great desire that I had, to know how my sicke friend did, whether he had recovered his health, or were in worse case, then when he left me; I staid foure dayes waiting for him, but seeing he came not at me, nor sent unto me, I continued foure dayes longer in Towne, making inquirie after him amongst some of his Country-men, giving them al the markes and signes, whereby they might know, or at least ghesse at the man, but this was to aske for *Entunes*[1] in Portugall, or to looke to heare a Magnificat at Mattens, or to seeke after the man in the Moone, for there was no such kinde of thing to be heard of. All the diligences that I could use, were to no purpose. I did verily beleeve that he was very sicke, if not dead. I likewise thought with my selfe, that since he had concealed his lodging from me, that the reason thereof was, because he had not a convenient Chamber to receive the visits of his friends. I did as much as lay in me to looke him out: but when I saw it was all lost labour, and that I could not possibly heare any newes of him, I left a large recommendation of my love unto

Proverb

Guzman is sorrie that hee cannot see Sayavedra before his departure

[1] *Preguntar por Entunes en Portugal*, where there is no such thing to bee found.

him in my Lords house, and so taking leave of my Lord Embassadour, I resolved the next day following to begin my journey. CHAPTER VIII

My Lord grieved much for my departure, clapt both his hands upon my shoulders, and taking a chaine of Gold from off his necke, which he did usually weare, and putting it on mine, he told me, while he was doing me this honour ; Guzman, I bestow this upon thee, that thou maist, as oft as thou look'st upon it, have me in thy remembrance, as one that wishes thee all good. He gave me also, besides that which I had of mine owne, good store of Crownes, which would serve conveniently to defray my charges for some reasonable while very well, and plentifully, that I needed not to want any thing that was needfull and fitting for me. The Embassadours kinde usage of Guzman at his departure

When hee had thus furnisht me, hee laid his Command upon mee, that where-soever I should hap to be, I should from time to time give him an account of my health, and how things did succeed with me, assuring me, that none should rejoyce more in my well-doing, then himselfe ; hoping, when I had made an end of my travell, to see me againe in his house, whither I should alwayes be most welcome.

These his words and kinde usage of me, savoured of so much love, and the advice and counsell which he gave me at this my farewell, was so sweet and so sound, and delivered with that tendernesse, exhorting me to good and vertuous courses, that I could no longer hold from bathing my eyes with teares. I kist his hand, kneeling on the ground ; he bestowd his blessing upon mee, and with it a good high-way Nag. This done, downe I went, got up, bid my fellowes farewell, and rode my way, making use of this Nagge in all my travell, which did never faile me.

My Lord and his servants were ready to melt for the sorrow they had conceived of my departure. He, because he lov'd me, and saw he must now lose me, and would doubtlesse finde a want of me for such services as I could best doe him, and himselfe tooke most content in : And they, because, albeit my actions were ill for my selfe, and

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

THE FIRST BOOKE

How a servant should behave himselfe, to bee belov'd of his fellowes

turned much to mine owne hurt, yet were they never prejudiciall to my fellowes : and when occasion served (if they had beene put to the triall) I dare sweare they would have hazarded their lives in defence of my person, rather then they would have seene mee take any wrong. I was alwayes their good friend, never did them ill offices, told no tales of them, never nourisht any quarrels amongst them, never crost their pretensions with my Lord, or hindred them in those their suites, wherein they were interessed, but did further them all that I could ; so that I was generally well beloved of them all. For by doing them these reall courtesies, and in that free and friendly fashion, I could not but gaine the greater love thereby, if not profit. For they were reckned of by my Lord but as servants ; but I was unto him, as if I had beene his sonne : So that I received from them the commendation of a good brother, and from my Master, of a faithfull servant. Insomuch, that neither my servise dis-merited with my Lord, nor their friendship failed me at my need.

And if that publike fame which was spred abroad of me, touching that which so unfortunately befell me in Fabia's house, had not beene divulged abroad by that Aspine-leav'd tongue of Nicoleta, who to as many gossips, and friends as she had in Rome, babbled forth the jest, which was put upon mee by her Mistresse in the backe Court of her house, I had never forsaken that commoditie, which I found in my Lords house, nor his Lordship have lost so good a servant, who had so well and faithfully serv'd him. See what mischiefe a wicked womans tongue can worke ; who, without doing her selfe any good (playing the tattling huswife) discredited her Masters house, and disordred ours.

Much mischiefe in an evill womans tongue

Let no man trust a woman with a secret, no (if it were possible) not the wife of his owne bosome. For upon every light offence, that she may be revenged of thee, to plucke out one of thy eyes, she will be content to lose both her owne ; making of a little bracke a great hole, and working thee much trouble upon small occasion.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VIII

I went out of Rome like a Prince, well intreated, and better provided, having store of Crownes to spend abroad, till the durt I had taken should become drie, and be rubb'd out. For when such unluckie chances as these doe light upon us, there is no such remedy for them, as Time and Travell to weare them out. Mingo never went abroad with more contentment, then I did now; I was gallant, rich, out of the gun-shot of ill tongues; with a full resolution, never to returne the same man I went forth, but like a new Phœnix, receiving fresh life from these my old ashes.

I was now on my way towards my friend Pompeyo, who lookt for me every houre, having provided for me a neat lodging, with a handsome bed, and Table, and all other furniture fitting thereunto. I came at last to Siena, and inquiring after him, they directed me to his house; thither I came: I found him within, he received me, I cannot say whether more cheerefully, or more heavily, sometimes shewing a joyfull, sometimes a troubled countenance; not knowing either what to doe, or what to say, concerning the forepassed ill successe of my Trunkes. Hee was inwardly very sad, as well for the value of that I had lost, as also for the tricke that was put upon him, and the ill account that he should make me of those my goods, which I had consigned unto him. Hee said never a word to me touching my Trunkes, and would faine have kept it from me; but it was not possible. For I had purposed with my selfe, to shew all my braverie the next day, and like the Peacocke, proudly to jet it up and downe the streets of Siena, and for that purpose, requested him to helpe me to my Trunkes, that I might change my cloathes.

Hereupon he was inforced to open all the whole businesse unto me, putting me in good hope, that there were such diligences used, and that good course already taken, that he did not doubt but that I should have all againe, and lose nothing of that which they had thus cunningly stolne from me. I was strooke with this blow to the very heart; and was thereupon so sad, as thou thy selfe wouldst have beene,

hadst thou beene in my case, being thus stripped of all that thou hadst in a strange Countrie, farre from thy friends, and forced to seeke new, having but little store of money in thy Purse, and no more but one sute of cloathes to thy backe, and two Shirts in thy Port-manteau. God deliver us from the hands of theeves and robbers, and from the frauds and deceits of wicked men. It was now too late to looke after them; the harme was already done, but no remedy to be had. *Que forçoso lo aveys de bever, y no lo aveys de verter.*[1] Whether I would or no, I was constrained to drinke of this cup; there was no avoyding of it.

Proverb

Well, when I saw how the world went, and that there was no helpe for it; I pluckt up my spirits, set a good face on the matter, and drew strength out of weaknesse. For, if I should in publike have expressed my griefe, and made open shew thereof, I might, in private mens opinions, beene held base-minded, and a man of no metall; and might thereby have hazarded Pompeyos friendship. Nor, had I kept never such stirre, never such a coyle and a-doe about it, should I thereby have repayred my losses, or done my selfe any good by it.

Adversities stoutly to be withstood

And therefore sound was that counsell; that we should incounter adversities with a cheerefull countenance. For thereby our enemies are overcome, and our friends recover breath.

[1] *Darsela á bever*, i.e. *dar disgusto, y dar un mal trago. Nadie diga, desta agua no beveré.* Covarruvias, Verbe *Bever.*

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER IX

Guzman de Alfarache, not recovering his lost goods, shrewdly complaines of the small punishment that is laid upon theeves. Wherein he delivereth many things worthy the noting

HREE dayes (according to the common saying) I continued booted and spurd, expecting what newes I could heare from those, that had these theeves in chase, and whether they had had the good lucke to finde the track of their footing, and so follow them upon the heate of that sent, till they had them in view, and should come to over-take them.

While my friend and I were sitting at table, anon after we had din'de, as wee were talking of this mis fortune of mine, and the cunning carriage of these theeves that had thus robd me, I might heare a great trampling of the servants of the house and some others, who making haste up the staires, came in and told us ; We have him, we have him, the principall thiefe is taken, and the theft confest.

The joy of the heart, cannot but expresse it selfe in our lookes

This put new courage into me, quickned my bloud, and the tokens of my inward content, shewd themselves in my face. For it is not possible, that any mans heart should dissemble a sudden joy. Though it sometimes so hapneth, that excesse of joy, doth suffocate the naturall heat, and deprive it of it's life. You might now have lighted a Candle at mine eyes, they did so sparkle, and were growne so quicke ; me thought then I was giving *Albriçias* to as many as demanded it of me, and that I ranne with open armes to receive this welcome newes. We rose up from the table, (where we sate talking before on this businesse) to goe and meet and salute this Officer, that had beene imployd in this service, who (as if he had beene no lesse affected

therewith then my selfe) came towards me with his mouth full of joy, and having kindely imbraced one another, I askt him how the world went? He told me, it was like to goe well. Then I farther demanded of him, In what manner? Hee replyde, that one of the theeves was taken, the rest he could not meet with, but that this would discover all.

What the effects of sorrow are likened unto

Thou hast haply observed, that when store of water hath beene suddenly throwne upon quicke burning coales, there hath risen up at that very instant a thicke and sowltrie hot smoake, yeelding almost such a steame of heate, as the coales themselves gave before they were quenched. Even in the like case did these his words leave me. For all those manifest signes of joy, which had before diffused themselves thorow-out my whole body, were quite quenched with the water of this bad newes, and at that very instant, there was stirred up in me an infernall smoake of choller, which I had much adoe to suppresse; but because I knew it would not helpe mee, I dissembled it the best that I could.

Pompeyo call'd for his cloake, and went presently to the Judge of the Court, to intreat him, that he would use therein the best diligences he could, (which was no more then was fitting to be done.) But all this did me no good. For, he neither denyed the theft, nor confessed that he was in the fault. He said that the others had committed it, and that he was but their servant, and that they had only bestow'd upon him one poore suit of cloathes, which he sold and spent partly in Florence, and partly upon the way in his returne to Siena.

The condition of wicked people

And this is the common course of such kinde of wicked people; They further, and favour each others evill workes and counsels, but when they have wrought their purpose, and effected their intent, they forsake one another, leaving every man to shift for himselfe, some going one way, and some another.

Upon this Confession, (because it was the first theft that ever he had beene taken with, together with that which hee had alledged in his own defence, and for those other

considerations, which offered themselves unto the Judge) he was sentenced to publike shame, and afterwards to remaine a banished man from that Citie for a certaine time. CHAPTER IX

Now while this businesse was a handling, one of Pompeyos servants stood diligently waiting there, expecting the issue of this businesse, that hee might come and advise mee thereof. And when hee had his Sentence given him, as if he had brought my Trunkes along with him, hee came running up in all haste to my Chamber, laughing all the way as hee came, and as jocund as a Pye, crying out aloud unto me; O Señor Guzman, laugh and be merry; the Thiefe that holpe to rob you, is condemned to open shame, I saw him up on the Asses backe, before I came away: if you will see him, hye you to the window, and looke out quickly, for it cannot be long ere hee come. O, how much would I have given, that this Foole, this Block-head, this Coxcombe had beene mine owne servant, and in mine owne house, or in some other place, where I might have had my will of him, that I might have pumeld him about the pate, bob'd him about the nose, strooke out the teeth of him, and beaten the jaw-bones of this Asse so sore, that hee should not have beene able for a moneth after to fall to his feeding. I was mightily out of patience at these his foolish words. O thou Traytor, (said I to my selfe) seest thou in what poore case I am, and in a manner quite undone, and doest thou goe about to comfort me with such a poore satisfaction as this? I was ready almost to burst with choller; but even then, when it was in its greatest force, there did offer it selfe unto my remembrance just such another comfort as this; which was told mee for a truth had passed in Sevill; which made my sides to tickle againe with laughing, the very thought whereof, had made me quite forget my former anger. And this it was:

Guzman telleth a tale of a stout Judge, and a foolish Attorney

A Judge of that Citie, by especiall Order from the supreme Councell, tooke a delinquent, that had beene a famous falsifier of Deeds, had often counterfetted his Majesties hand, and fained many false Patents, by meanes whereof, hee got a great deale of money in divers parts, and

at divers times ; for the which hee was by the said Judge, condemned to be hang'd ; notwithstanding that this Offender did alledge for himselfe, that hee was *de Evangelio*, a kinde of Church-man, and therefore did appeale from his Sentence, challenging his priviledge of beeing tryde by the Ecclesiasticall Power, as by his competent Judge. But the Judge being resolv'd, not to reverse his Sentence, being perswaded, that he likewise falsifide these his Orders, stood to his tackling, and hastened the execution thereof, willing him forth-with to bee ledde to the Gallowes, commanding those that were to see the sentence executed, to hang him out of hand ; charging them to let this be first done *de facto*, and hee would answere the matter afterwards as well as he might.

The Ecclesiasticall Ordinarie, was not in the meane while wanting on his part, using all the power that hee had, to save this man from death, aggravating and heaping his Censures upon the Judge, threatning him, that in case he proceeded therein, that there should Excommunications goe out, and that in the Churches there should bee *Cessatio à Divinis*. But being not able there-with, nor all that hee could doe, to hinder the Sentence ; the Delinquent was brought to the Gallowes, and when hee was up upon the Ladder, and had the Rope about his necke, there came a certaine Notary to the foote of the Ladder, who had sollicited his businesse, and laying his hand upon his brest, said unto him ;

Sir, you see, all possible diligence hath beene used, and not any one essentiall thing left out, that might make for you ; but this (you see) will not hold water, nor doe us that good wee thought it would have done ; For, as you may perceive, the Judge (out of a wilfull humour) hath proceeded *de facto* with you. But I vow and sweare unto you (by that my Place and Credit, which I hold in the world) that hee hath done you therein a most notorious wrong, and contrary to all Law and Justice ; but seeing it cannot now bee otherwise, and that for the present there is no helpe for it, I shall wish you, Sir, to arme your selfe with

patience, and to take your hanging quietly : And put your trust in mee : for I will stay with you to the last, I will not leave you till I see you hang'd. And leave it to mee, to right the wrong he hath done you.

Consider now, I pray, and tell me, what comfort can it be to those men that are to suffer death, to heare such idle and foolish words as these to come from a mans mouth ? What pleasure can that miserable wretch, that is forthwith to bee hanged, take, that he hath left a good Sollicitour behinde him, to follow his businesse, when hee is dead and gone ? Mee thinkes, this poore Clyent that suffered, might very well have said to his Attourney, I should like it much better (Sir) that you would come up heere and take my place, and give mee leave to goe and follow mine owne businesse.

To such a one as I, who was rob'd of all that I had, and left so poore as I was, what credit or comfort could I take in it, to see a Thiefe ride upon an Asse, to have his hands bound, and his backe whipt, and to bee put to this open shame ? Will his disgrace doe mee any honour ? Or will the repeating either of the case, or his punishment, procure mee meanes to live, or furnish mee with those necessaries that I want ? I got mee out of that, into another Chamber, thinking upon the ignorance of these men, and the losse that I had sustained by those that rob'd mee ; for that was the thorne that did so sorely pricke and grieve mee. And as I was thus discoursing with my selfe of divers and sundry things, one while of this, another while of that : And amongst many other things, that I went examining with my selfe, one (amongst the rest) was : Of what small importance, and how light were these kinde of punishments ! For what shame can either bee put into, or taken from a Thiefe, who hath no shame at all, nor makes any reckoning of it ? And who, before that hee begins to play the thiefe, doth resolve with himselfe to receive that punishment for his theft, whereunto he shall bee condemned, and shall (by the Lawes of the Land) bee inflicted upon him ? A thiefe (forsooth) shall robbe a private house ; and all his

Theeves know not what shame is

punishment must be, to walke his publike Stations up and downe the Towne. A pretty piece of Justice. For mine owne part, I have no great store of wit, and lesse judgement, and therefore I know not well what to say against those Lawes; which before they were made, I make no question, but they were wel weighed and thought upon; and with sound and mature counsell ratified and confirmed. And that before their publication, they were throughly scann'd, and approved by the generall opinion of those, that were learned in the Lawes; yet notwithstanding it will not sinke into my head, that this is a sufficient punishment for a Thiefe to leade him onely through the Citie, for to doe him shame, by making him a publike spectacle to the people, or to banish him from thence. But it seemeth unto mee, to bee rather *præmium*, then *pœna*, a reward, then a punishment. For thereby, in my judgement, they doe nothing else, but secretly say unto him; My friend, you have hitherto made your benefit of our goods, and have made your selfe merry at our cost. You shall now doe well to get your living else-where, I pray therefore get you gone, leave off to doe us any more harme, and goe robbe some other of our neighbours. I cannot bee perswaded, that this mischiefe lyes in the Lawes, but in those that execute them; for that they are either ill understood, or not well executed.

To carry a Felon through a Citie, riding on an Asse, and to whip him, and banish him the Towne, is no fit punishment for him, but rather an incouragement to returne to his former roguery

A Judge ought to understand and know, as well the man, as the matter for which hee condemneth him. For banishments were not made for theeves that were strangers, but for the Citizens of the said Citie, the naturall Inhabitants, and such as were noble, and well borne, whose persons were not to suffer any publike punishment, nor affronts. And to the end that the faults which they committed, should not bee exempted from punishment, therefore your Divine Lawes did ordaine these your banishments, which without doubt, was the greatest punishment of all other, that could bee inflicted upon such kinde of persons. For thereby they are inforced to forgoe their friends, their Parents, their Kinsfolke, their Houses, their Lands, their ancient acquaintance, their Wives, and their Children, their pleasures, and

Wherefore banishment was first invented

delights, and their businesses both private, and publike; being to goe, they know not themselves whither, and to live and converse with they know not whom. Which was certainly a great punishment, and no lesse then death it selfe.

The first inventer of banishment, banished himself

And it was the permission of Heaven, and will of God, that he that made this Law, and was the first Inventer thereof, should be paid home with the same punishment that hee had ordained for others, beeing banished himselfe by his owne Countrymen the Athenians. Many were much grieved thereat, and indured a great deale of sorrow, accompanied with infinit inconveniences, and perill of their persons; and many of them likewise did take it no lesse heavily, then if they had suffered the bitter pangs of death.

Demosthenes banished to his great griefe

It is reported of Demosthenes, that famous Grecian Orator, and Prince of Eloquence, being banished by his Citizens, left his Country like a man in desperation, shedding many a sorrowfull teare; and the more in regard that his fellow Citizens had so cruelly proceeded against him, considering that hee had alwayes protected, favoured, and defended them, both with his head, and his hand; his wit, and his strength; and therefore hee did the more risent it, making these his troubles and afflictions to seeme the more intolerable to be indured.

Demosthenes cherished by his enemies

And as hee was wandring abroad in the world, it was his hap to come to a place, where hee lighted by chance upon some of the greatest and mortallest enemies that hee had: Who then made no other reckoning with himselfe, but that they would surely kill him; but they did not onely give him his life, and pardon all former injuries, but seeing him in this miserable and afflicted state, taking pitie of him, they comforted him the best they could, treating him with all courtesie and kindnesse, and furnishing him with such things as were necessarie for him in this his banishment. Which was, as it were, a throwing of oyle into the flame, and the meanes of augmenting his sorrow, to see that hee should bee more kindely used by his enemies, then his friends, as did plainely appeare, when beeing comforted

by them in this his banishment, he returned them this answere :

Demosthenes his answer to his friends

How would you have me to carry my selfe ; how beare my banishment with patience ; how not complaine of my hard fortune, having so great cause, as I have to bemone my mis-hap ? Being that I am banished from that Citie, wherein I was borne and bred, and am forced by you to seeke my fortune in forraine Countreys, where I meet with such enemies, that I doubt to finde (and I shall account it a great happinesse unto me, that I have made so good a purchase) the like friends else-where. They likewise banished Themistocles, who being graced more in Persia, then in Greece, told some private friends of his ; *Periissemus, si non periissemus.* We had beene undone, if wee had not beene undone.

Themistocles banished, and his saying

Cicero banished

Publius Rutilius banished. He is recalled, but will not come home

The Romanes banished Cicero, induced thereunto by his enemie Clodius, anon after that he had freed his Countrie from ruine. They did likewise banish Publius Rutilius, who was so valiant, and of that stoutnesse of courage, that afterwards, when those of Syllas faction (who were the cause of his exile) would have reversed his banishment, he would not accept of this their faire offer, but said ; I will make them blush for shame, by neglecting this their kindenesse ; for by this meanes, they shall come to see their owne errour, and to acknowledge the wrong they have done me, by this their unjust persecution. They also banished Scipio Nasica, in requitall of those benefits and good services that he had done them, in delivering them from the tyranny of the Gracchi. Hannibal the Carthaginian dy'de in Exile. Camillus the Romane, a man of that worth and valour, that it was said of him, that hee was a second Founder of Rome, for that he had freed it from it's enemies, when the whole State lay at stake to be wonne or lost ; yet notwithstanding this meritorious Act of his, he was banished his Countrie.

Scipio banished

Camillus banished

Licurgus banished ; beaten out with stones, and his eye strooken out

The Lacedemonians banished their Licurgus, though a grave and wise man ; and one that had made them very wholsome Lawes for the good of that Common-wealth. Nor

CHAPTER IX

Solon and Thrasibulus banished

did they rest contented with this wrong they had already done him, but they threw stones at him, and strooke out one of his eyes. The Athenians very impudently and unjustly banished their Solon, and confined him to the Iland of Cyprus ; as they did likewise their great Captaine Thrasibulus. These, and infinite other the like were banished ; and anciently they inflicted this punishment upon the noblest and principallest persons ; as one of the greatest and grievousest punishments which they could impose upon them.

A just punishment inflicted on a little young thief

I my selfe have knowne a thiefe, who because he was under yeeres, and not capable of greater punishment, having beene often-times banished, but never went forth of his Countrie to finish this his Exile, and his thefts likewise being of no higher nature then matter of victuals, for his greater punishment, the Justice commanded, that he should have a coller of Iron clapt close about his necke, which should be riveted so fast with an Iron pinne, that it should not possibly be taken off, hanging thereat a little Bell, to the end that the ringing thereof, as oft as he did stirre or move, might give the people warning to take heed of him. This may truly be called a just, and a witty-conceited punishment.

Now, by this that hath beene said, thou maist know, how grievous a punishment banishment is to the good, and how ridiculous a thing to the bad : To whom all the world is their common Countrie ; and who account that to be their Countrie, where they can best filch and steale. For wheresoever a thiefe comes, he enters into that place, as a new Commer, and unknowne ; Which is no small advantage for him, for the better exercising of his Office, the people not thinking any harme of him, nor suspecting him to be such a one as he is. I know not, how they understand this, who doe punish them thus. It were the lesser evill of the two, to let them goe among the people with the fore-said Coller and Bell, that men might beware of them ; and not to send one thus abroad, where he is unknowne, with letters as it were of credence, to robbe all the world. No, no, this

is no good course, it is not profitable for the Commonwealth, nor is there any policie at all in it, to doe theeves so great a favour. But for every light theft, it is fit they should be soundly punished : As to condemne them to the Gallies, to confine them to some Garrison Townes, and there to serve, and to inflict other the like punishments upon them, for longer or lesse time, according to the nature and qualitie of the offence. And in case they shall be of an inferiour kinde, and not deserving the weight of your heaviest sentence, I would have them branded, as the use is in other Countries, with a hot Iron in the shoulder, that may leave the print of the marke behinde ; whereby, upon the second theft they be taken with, it will plainely appeare, what lewd livers they be. By this course they beare not only the marke about them, but the cause thereof. This will be accusation enough, to give in evidence against them, both what they are, as also their course of life. And I would have this re-incidencie and relapse of theirs to be severely punished. And many (I make no question,) this course being taken and duly executed, will for feare, turne over a new leafe, and that this their first correction will keepe them in a great deale the more awe, lest the continuance of their lewd courses, might chance to bring them to the Gallowes. This, and only this (I say) is justice ; all the rest is *Fruta regalada*, delicious Fruits, and minister only occasion to your *Escrivanos*, to be as arrant theeves as they ; and I know not whether I may be so bold to say, that they are willing to set them free, that they may goe abroad, and steale afresh, whereby they may afterwards have occasion to take that from them, which they have stolne : and so of the two, prove the greater theeves. But I will hold my peace, and harpe no more upon that string. For I am a man, and may erre, and I have beene already under their hands, and have suffred too much through their false dealing, and I know not whether I may chance to come againe under their lash, and then they will use their pleasure upon me, and revenge themselves on me without controlement : for I know not who can hinder them, when

they are disposed to worke their will. My thiefe was freed, he had confest, who were the principall Offenders, and which way they went; for which cause, as also that he had rounded the Citie on an Asse, and had beene put to open shame, he was set at libertie; leaving me (poore man) in the wretched prison of povertie: Where I must now take my leave of you, and bid you all Good night. To morrow morning, if you be desirous of the rest, and would faine know, what in the end was the issue of this businesse; you shall have it with all my heart, which I shall truly and faithfully deliver unto you.

THE ROGUE
OR THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE

The Second Booke

Wherein Guzman de Alfarache, treateth of that which befell him in Italie, till he returned into Spaine

CHAPTER I

Guzman de Alfarache, leaves Siena, and goes for Florence. He meets with Sayavedra, whom he takes into his service. And before he comes to Florence, he recounts unto him on the way, many admirable things concerning that Citie. And when he was arrived there, he shewes him all, that was worth the seeing

Phocion, and his povertie

Dionysius the Tyrant

PHOCION (a famous Philosopher in his time) was so poore, that though he tooke a great deale of paines, he could hardly get wherewithall to hold life and soule together. Whereupon, as oft as any in the presence of Dionysius the Tyrant, and his mortall enemie, made mention either of himselfe, or of the manner and course of his life, he made a scoffe and a jest both at it, and him, flouting at his povertie, and deriding his miserie,

thinking with himselfe, that he could not doe him any greater disgrace, nor injure him more, then to mocke at the meannesse of his fortunes. As if he would have inferred thereupon, that if he had beene a man of that great learning, as the world held him to be, he might therewith have gained bread to put in his mouth, and not needed to live in that want, as now he did. CHAPTER I

When this came to the Philosophers eare, he was not only not grieved thereat, but laughing at this his follie, he answered him, that reported this unto him ; It is true sir, that Dionysius sayes of me, in terming me poore, for I am truly so ; but, I must tell you withall, that he is much poorer, then my selfe, and hath a great deale more reason to be asham'd of himselfe, if he shall but consider his owne wretched estate and condition. For though I lacke money, I want not friends : I abound in the more, and faile in the lesse. But as for him, though he be rich in money, he is poore of friends. For I know not any one that he hath. This Philosopher could not satisfie himselfe better, nor with a righter or fuller blow hit out his eyes, then by stiling him, *hominem sine amicis* ; A man, that had not so much as one friend in the world, that he could truly say, was his friend. And albeit, it oftentimes so falleth out, that they are purchased with money, and that this is a principall meanes to winne and wedge them unto us, yet this Tyrant had never yet the wit either to get or keepe them. And it is no wonder, that he should, of all other, want them. For he, that sayes friend, sayes (in that one word) Goodnesse, and Vertue ; comprehending in that all the good, that speech, or thought, can reach unto. Whosoever therefore shall desire to conserve friendship, and to continue in his friends love, and that the bond of amitie be not broken betweene them, must have a care, that his workes correspond with his words. But Dionysius, being tyrannie it selfe, and of too ill a digestion to keepe friendship long, and his conversation being worse then his concoction ; and for that friends are not so much gotten out of the greatnesse of our fortune, as our vertue ; wanting that, he wanted them.

Phocions censure of Dionysius

Friends are the greatest treasure

How friends are often got, and kept

THE SECOND BOOKE

He that hath friends, hath all things

For mine owne part, ever since I had the use of reason, and knew what discretion was, I made it my chiefest studie, to get me friends, though at never so deare a rate, thinking no cost too much, to purchase so great a treasure. They seeming unto me (as indeed they are) our greatest helps and comfort, as well in prosperous, as adverse fortune. Who doth enjoy the content of contents, but he that hath true friends? What doth so much lengthen and preserve our peace, our life, our honour, and our wealth, as to see our friends to joy with us in our prosperitie? And in adversitie, from whom, but from them, can we finde any refuge, kindnesse, comfort, helpe, and a fellow-feeling of our miseries, as if they were their owne? A wise man, ought to want all whatsoever goods, rather then good friends. For they are better then our neerest kinsmen, or our owne naturall brothers.

Friends better then kinsfolks or brothers

Of the qualities, and conditions of friendship, many have spoken much (and one day, God willing, we shall say something thereof:) but in my opinion, where friendship is professed, there must be all true and plaine dealing, and such a faire and even cariage, that it neither leane to alteration, nor give any offence, nor cause any trouble, nor to adventure (through our rash and inconsiderate actions) the loosing of a friend. Two friends ought so to love one another, as each of them doth severally love himselfe. For that I, and my friend, are as it were all one. And as you see, how quick-silver dealeth with gold, how close it adheres unto it, how it workes it selfe into the very entrailes and bowels of it, and being two divers mettals, are so incorporated, that they become but one masse or lumpe, nothing in the world being able to sunder and divide them but the pure fire of the furnace, wherein the quick-silver is consumed: So a true friend, who is now become another mans selfe, and by an intermixture of their hearts and mindes made as it were one selfe-same thing, nothing ought, nor can indeed dissolve this union, but death, which is the Chrysoll, wherein we must at last be all melted one after another.

True friends what they are like

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER I

How to make choice of our friends

Men ought to make the same choise of their friends, as they doe of good bookes. For their happinesse consists not neither in the greatnesse of their number, nor the curiousnesse of their binding, but rather to have a few, and those good and approved Authors. For oftentimes, it so falleth out, that many friends are rather a hinderance, then a helpe to true friendship: For he is a friend to none, that is a friend to all. Nor are we to choose a friend for our entertainment only, and merrily to spend the time withall, but to make choise of such a one, as may benefit both our soule, and our bodie: one that without respect of humane interest, will advise him to observe the divine precepts. Not only to represent them unto him, but to speake to the purpose, to admonish him to the observation of them, and to instruct him in the true knowledge of them. And if he be called a true friend, who meerely out of friendship, tells his friend the naked truth without masking or disguising it, not as to a third person, but as to one, that is properly his owne, and as freely as if he should treat of any thing belonging to himselfe, or that he himselfe would desire, his friend should say the same to him, on the same occasion, of which sort of friends, that carry that sinceritie and plainenesse with them, few are now a dayes to be found, in whom a man may have that assured confidence, and entire satisfaction.

Bookes, true friends

Then questionlesse (and that with very good reason) a good booke is a good friend; nay I dare boldly say, there cannot be a better. For from thence, we may draw that *utile et necessarium*, that good and necessarie counsell, which we stand in need of, without incurring the shame, of that vaine and idle humour, which is too common now adayes, to be rather content to continue still in ignorance, then by asking the question, to seeme to doubt of any thing. But to bookes, we may boldly put the question, and never need to be afraid, that they will bewray our ignorance: And besides, we shall receive this satisfaction from them, that they will faithfully, without flatterie, deliver us their opinion. And this one advantage

THE SECOND BOOKE

(and it is a notable one) bookes have of friends: That our friends, dare not alwayes tell us what they thinke, and know; for feare of particular interest, or out of tendernesse to offend (as we shall by and by briefly tell you) their friends. So soft a hand hath Love, when it comes to touch, where it loves. Whereas on the contrary, the counsell that is given thee in bookes, is downe-right and plaine, and stands before thee starke-naked, as bestript of all manner of vice. And therefore (these things considered) it hath ever beene held one of the hardest and difficultest things in the world, to finde out a true and faithfull friend.

Of which sort, many are spoken of in ancient stories, and we finde a great number of them recorded of olde, and painted forth unto us in your feigned fables; but that there either now are, or have beene such heretofore as are there decyphered unto us, I doubt it very much, at least I am fully perswaded, they were very rare and few. One only friend have I found to be true, and is of the same nature and condition, as we are. And this friend of ours, is the best, the bountifullest, the truest, and the faithfullest of all other; for this is never wanting to it's friend, but continues firme and constant for ever, nor is at any time weary of giving: And this good friend of ours, (that I may not hold you any longer in suspence) is the Earth.

One only friend. And what that friend is

This affords us pretious stones, gold, silver, and divers other mettals, whereof we stand in need, and so earnestly thirst after. It bringeth forth grasse, and all sorts of herbes, wherewith are not only fed our flocks of sheepe, our cattell, and other beasts for the use and service of man, but those medicinable simples, which conserve our health, free us from diseases, and if we fall into sicknesse, set us upright againe, preserving this life of ours, in a sound and perfect state of health. It yeeldeth us all sorts of fruits, that are either savourie to the taste, or nourishable to the bodie. It gives us wooll, and flax, and by consequence, all kinde of woven stuffes, wherewith we cloath, and adorne, this

A commendation of the Earth, and its faithfull love, and true friendship

naked flesh of ours. It opens its owne veines of its owne accord, whilest from its full brests, sprout forth those sweet and delicate waters, which we drinke; those brookes and rivers, which get the fields with childe, and make them fruitfull, and not only that, but doth facilitate commerce, and make an easie way for trafficke, bringing the strangest and remotest parts of the world to shake hands, and to communicate their commodities one with another, and to live in a league of love and friendship together. Nay more, it is so good, and so sweet a friend, that it suffereth, and willingly consenteth to all that we will our selves. Be shee well or ill used by us, all is one to her, so as we be pleased. Shee is like a sheepe, from whom you shall heare no other language, but *Omnia bene*: All is well. Leade her forth to feed, or bring her to the waters to drinke; shut, and penne her up, or let her loose; take her lambkin from her, her milke, her wooll, nay her very life, to all shee alwayes answers *bien*: all is well. And all that *bien*, or good that we have on earth, the Earth gives it us. And for an upshot of all, when we are now dead, and lye stinking above ground, when there is neither wife, father, sonne, kinsman, nor friend, that will abide and endure our companie any longer, but doe all of them utterly forsake us, and flie from us; then, even then, doth not shee refuse us, but huggs us, and makes much of us, and opening her owne wombe, takes us in unto her, where we quietly lye, as it were *in deposito*, till shee render afterwards a faithfull account of what shee hath received, and delivers us up to a new and eternall life. And amongst many her other excellencies, one of the worthiest things in her, and deserving most commendation, is; That shee doing so much for us, as shee doth, and that so continually and without ceasing, being so generous, and so franke-hearted, that shee is never tyred out, never growes weary, yet doth shee not looke for anyrequittall, shee neither askes, nor expects any returne of kindeness, nor doth shee talke and tell of it, nor twit thee in the teeth with it; which some kinde of friends, more usually, then commendably, doe.

THE SECOND BOOKE

Amongst so many friends, as I had, and did daily converse withall, I found very few, who had not an eye to the north-starre of their owne proper interest, and shap't their course by the Compasse of their owne private ends ; having only a desire to deceive, not having any respect at all to the friendship they profest, being devoide of all love, truth, and shame : I was of an easie and tractable nature, my condition was facile and apt to be mis-led, their tongue was all honie, but their heart was very gall it selfe : whose bitternesse, I had too often tasted to my cost.

Considering therefore the falshood that now adayes is used in friendship, and mens craftie and subtle cariage, we are not so much to wonder that we are, as, that we are not deceived. For I finde them, as liberall in promising, as niggardly in performing ; as facile in their words, as difficile in their deeds. There are now no more Pilades, nor Orestes ; they are dead and gone ; and with them, almost the remembrance, that there were ever any such kinde of men. I only speake this for my Pompeyos sake ; whom I therfore condemne the more, for that I lov'd him more then any other, and tooke him to be my especiall friend. For, most of my friends, I gained by my words, but this man, I presum'd I had purchast by my deeds. When I was in my prosperitie, I had many friends, all men did desire my love, made much of me, feasted me, and did offer their service unto me : But my moneys failing, they also failed ; so that their friendship, and my money had an end at once.

The greatest miserie that can befall man in this life

And as there is no misfortune, that toucheth us so neere, as to call to minde the happy estate, wherein heretofore we did live ; so there is not any sorrow, that equals that, of being forsaken by those friends, whose love and friendship we did ever desire to conserve. That little wealth that I had, was stolne from me, which was my undoing. I continued some dayes (though but a few) in my friends house, howbeit he thought them too many ; in which short time, he fell off from me by degrees, by a little and a little unwedging himselfe from me, and unloosing those knots, which had knit us in friendship together ; finding at last,

CHAPTER I

A feigned friend, compared to an Eele

that I had but a slipperie eele in my hand, who when I thought I had surest hold of him, slipt when he saw his time from me, leaving my hand empty. He was a Cordovese, in the freenesse of his offers; and would say unto me after that we had dined; Sir, is there any thing else, that you would be pleased to command? If there be, I pray Sir make as bold of any thing this house affords, as if it were your owne. But these were but generall words, and matter of complement; for he went not upon certainties, nor promised me any thing, that I might trust unto, but did rather seeme to proffer this his kindnesse doubtfully and fearefully, lest I might chance to take him at his word. And that little curtesie, which he shewed me, was not so much out of any hearty good will, that he had to doe it, as for feare lest I should seeke to recover my lost goods of him, by course of Law.

I read his thoughts in his lookes: And as mine were alwayes noble, so on the contrary, his were base and vile. And as oft as he spake of my losse, if he used any complement with me, it was all dissimulation, and counterfet stuffe. Well, whatsoever it were, either better or worse, I was much offended at it, and thought that he did me therein a great deale of wrong, and did seriously risent this his double dealing, and these faire but false showes of his love. But he, on the other side, did as earnestly persist in the pursuit of his simulations, as if he had meant nothing lesse, then to play upon me, and abuse me; or as if they had some ground of truth with them: And because I stoutly stood to it, and bore out this businesse as well as I could, that he might not perceive any dejectednesse in me, he tooke heart thereupon, and made sleight of it, as a matter of little, or no importance. For the losse was mine, and not his; and therefore he made the lesse reckoning of it.

Wherefore, that I might not give him farther trouble, perceiving how much perplexed he was, and how willing to be rid of me, I resolved with my selfe to free him of that feare, and to goe for Florence. I imparted this my purpose unto him, telling him, that I much desired to see that Citie,

for the great commendation, that I had heard of it, and those famous sights that were there to be seene. And because this my determination suted with his desire, he tooke hold on this occasion, relating unto me many memorable things, worthy my sight, wherewith my will was the more inflamed, and the desire which I had to see it, much increased. But he did not doe this so much, to commend it unto me, or out of any good desire, that he had, that I should see it, but only that he might see me no more in his house; and for that he is an unwelcome guest, that is a mans guest against his will.[1] After that I had thus broken my minde unto him, he began to blow the winde afresh of his kinde usage of me, that he might oblige me thereby to get me the sooner out of his house, and to depart from thence peaceably and quietly; for he was not a little afraid of me. He then signified unto me, how sorry he was that I would needs be gone; but used no intreaties, nor any the least resistance, to have me to stay. He demanded of me, when I was minded to begin my journey, but never asked, what I wanted; which he might have done out of good manners, though he had no meaning to pleasure me. Which proffer, had he made it me, it should not have beene performed by him so much out of complement and ceremonie, as that he might thereby learne, how long, or how little a while I meant to stay with him, not knowing as yet the houre, when I meant to be gone. It is an easie thing, to see; more easie, to speake; but it is a hard thing to fore-see.[2] For all that see, doe not know; and all that speake, doe not doe. And for that he now saw, that he should have no farther necd of me, for that I like a foole, told him ere I was aware, that I was not minded to returne any more to Rome, he began to cast with himselfe, What good can this cocks-combe doe me now? or of what use and profit will this foole be unto me hereafter? And so from that time forward, he used me accordingly, which was no worse, then

Proverbe

Proverbe

Many make reckning of their friend, no longer then they have need of him. And when he can serve his turne no longer, he turnes him off

[1] *Es triste huesped, el de por fuerça.*

[2] *Facil cosa es, el ver; y mas lo es, el hablar; pero muy dificultoso el proveer. No conocen todos los, que miran, ni los que hablan, hazen.*

mine owne indiscretion deserved. Then did I learne to my cost, how a man may come to know a generous and noble minde; which is seene in nothing more, then in a thankfull acknowledgment of benefits already received. CHAPTER I

In this alteration of fortune, there were set before mine eyes a thousand dangers, that I never dream't of. But because I had as yet so much spirit left me, as was able to put me forward, I was not utterly dismaid, nor quite dishartned. I studied to forget that, which I could not helpe; making my meanes, the thinking on my journey. And because noveltie, and things of a strange nature, doe draw the mindes of men after them, out of the desire that they have to know them, I made all the haste I could to get me gone from Siena, as well out of this respect, as also that I might leave Pompeyo well pleased therewith; who, I knew, would never thinke himselfe well at ease, till he were well eased of me. For albeit men commonly say to their guests; I pray fall to your meat, and be merry, for I assure you, you are heartily welcome; yet whether you may be merry, or not merry, welcome, or not welcome, they thinke you are bound unto them for a meales meat, and put every morsell to account, that goes downe thy throat.

This hoggishnesse of his, this his uncivill cariage, this dissembled care of his, and this his great feare that he had, that I would continue longer with him, did much trouble me. Well, I took my leave of him; and because I was still the same man, as I was wont to be, as also in regard of that love and friendship, which I truly bore unto him, at the time of this our departure each from other, I did so grieve thereat, that I was not able to speake a word, no not so much as to bid him, farewell; yet could not this my inward sorrow, draw so much as one teare into his eyes, or to make any the least show of griefe. And so all alone, I set forward on my journey, but more then well accompanied with a world of melancholy thoughts, nor slightly attended by a multitude of cares, wherewith I was so over-laden, that my horse was ready to sinke under me, as unable to beare so great a burthen. And therefore I rode plotting and devising

Guzman leaves Siena, and goes to Florence

THE SECOND BOOKE

with my selfe, how I might make them lighter, and so ease both my selfe and my horse of them.

Guzman meets with Sayavedra

I had not gone thus musing many miles, but it was my hap to light on Sayavedra, who had left Siena to cumply with his banishment. Whom I no sooner saw, but my kinde heart began to melt, and I could not chuse but take compassion of him, and withall I must needs salute him; placing my eyes, not upon the hurt, which he had done me, but on the harme, from which he once had freed me. Esteeming more of that kindnesse I then received from him, then of all that, that he had rob'd me of. And he is a bad pay-master, and doth ill deserve a curtesie, who doth not with advantage requite a received kindnesse. Besides; Liberalitie, supposeth a generous and noble spirit, and is of that high esteeme, for that it is originally descended from heaven, that it is alwayes found in those mindes, that are destinated thereunto. I could not for my life refraine from speaking lovingly unto him, nor he abstaine from receiving me with teares, which guttring downe his cheekes, dropt downe upon my feet, as he bowed him-selfe to kisse my stirrop, whereof he taking fast hold, fell downe on his knees, craving pardon for this his error, humbly and earnestly beseeching me, that I would be pleased to forgive him; rendring me likewise thanks, that during the time of his imprisonment, I never offred to accuse him; excusing himselfe also, that he had not, as soone as he was set at libertie, come to visit me, laying the fault thereof, in his lacke of boldnesse, and the largenesse of his offence. Yet, for to make satisfaction and payment of this his debt, he would become my slave, and doe me faithfull service all the dayes of his life; I, who ever knew him to be a man, that had both a strong braine, and a nimble wit, which did him rather hurt, then good, because he did not well imploy them; yet, for that these did adapt him, and make him fit for any imployment whatsoever, I was the more willing to accept of his offer. And so taking him into my service, we joggd on along by little and little like a couple of good fellowes, talking of divers things on the way.

Curtesies are to be returned with advantage

Sayavedra asks Guzman forgivenesse

Guzman entertaines Sayavedra for his servant

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER I

And albeit I was not ignorant, that he was a notorious theefe, and a notable cunning rogue, yet I held it the lesser inconvenience of the two, to have a knave, then a foole, to my man. For foolishnesse did never yet but walke hand in hand with wickednesse. And both of them being joyned together, are sufficient to undoe not only a private house, but a whole Common-wealth. For the simple, or foolish man, cannot keepe counsell, nor knowes when and where to hold his peace; nor the wicked and malitious man, to judge of things aright; and if either of them, uttereth what he thinketh, (for commonly their tongue blabbeth, what their heart conceiveth) scandals and troubles are already entred within the doores of our house, and like impudent rogues, sticke not to presse into our privatest roomes, to see what they can get from thence. I thought with my selfe, if I would have any one to serve me, (good servants being so few, and so hard to be got) that this would be lesse bad then any other, because by those his cunning tricks, that he had plaid with me already, he made me the more warie of him, and taught me (as if I had beene some Lacedemonian) to throw my beard over my shoulder: [1] that is, to have an eye unto him, and to be the more circumspect and warie of him, and to take the better heed, looking still behinde me, as those doe that have enemies, turning their head one while this way, another while that, that they may not be set upon un-awares. And therefore knowing him so well as I did, I thought it as good, if not better, to entertaine a knave that I knew, as a knave, that I knew not. For I knew well enough, that I must looke narrowly to his water, and watch him at every turne, wherein I meant not to be negligent: Whereas, in taking of another, that should seeme to beare the face of an honest man, and make show of being faithfull and trustie unto me, I might haply grow carelesse out of the confidence that I have in him, and by this my credulitie be coozened of all

Better to have a knave, then a foole, to ones servant

Proverbe

[1] *Traer la barba sobre el hombro. Vivir recatado, y con recelo, como hazen los, que tienen enemigos, que van volviendo el rostro, à un lado, y a otro, de onde, naçio el refran.* Covarruvias, verb. *Barba.*

that I had, and afterwards be left to looke after moone-shine in the water.

As well in this respect, as also for that I had not much now to lose, nor was my condition or qualitie such, that I should stand so nicely upon these points, I admitted him into my service. He askt me (as soone as I had entertained him) which way I meant to take? I told him, I was for Florence, led thither out of a desire that I had to satisfie my longing, by seeing that Citie, whereof I had heard so much. Whereunto my servant replied, and said; Sir, whatsoever you have heard thereof, I make no question, when you come there, but your selfe will confesse, report hath beene too short with you. For I assure you, there are so many admirable things therein to be seene, that they cannot sufficiently be commended. For the naked relations of things, that are curious and good indeed, never fill the vacuitie and emptinesse of our desires. I have lived there some time, yet all the while as I remained there, as if I had beene but come that very day to towne, wheresoever I went, new things were still offered to my view: and I would never with my good will have left that Towne, if my friends had not forced me from thence.

I began to aske him some questions, touching the foundation of that Citie, and whence it had its first beginning? Sir (said he) seeing we have day enough before us, and that we may talke and walke faire and softly, and that the relation, which I am to make you is but short; I shall, for the better satisfying of your desire, acquaint you, and that truly, with all those curiosities, that did then offer themselves unto my knowledge.

Sayavedra discourses of Florence

Then did he forthwith begin to discourse of those civill warres, which were occasioned by Catiline, betweene those of Fiesole, and Florence; the overthrowes, which one while those of the Romane faction received, another while their enemie, Bela Totile. How in the time of Pope Leo the third, the Emperor Charles the Great, sent a great Armie against the Fiesolani, leaving Florence re-edified in the hands of the Florentines, till that Pope Clement the

Leo 3, Pope
Carolus Magnus, Emperor

seventh, and the Emperor Charles the fifth recovered the same, for to restore it to its ancient possession, from which the house of the Medici had beene put out. Which succeeded in the yeere of our Lord, 1529. Ever since which time, the Florentines have alwaies been governed by one sole Prince ; which, though it seemed somewhat harsh unto them at the first, yet now they see their error, and finde now at length how much more quietly they live under the protection of their owne Prince, and with how much more safetie, both of their lives and goods. It is said, that the first Prince, that ever they had, was Alessandro de Medici ; who, for his sweetnesse of nature, his magnanimitie, and valour, though violently he lost that principalitie in the very flower of his youth, yet might he justly be termed Alessandro. After him, succeeded, that wise, and worthy Cosimo, great Duke of Tuscanie, whose memoriall, for his heroicall actions, and great vertues, as also for his courteous behaviour, his religion, and good government, shall live eternally in the mindes of the living. This Prince was succeeded by Francesco, who, for that he died without issue, the Crowne came to that famous Ferdinando his brother, the lively image, and true picture of his father Cosimo, being as well heire to his Vertues, as his Estate. Who governed so worthily, and so wisely, that I doe not know any other, with whom I may equall him, for the love that his subjects bare him.

CHAPTER I

Clement 7, Pope
Charles 5, Emperor

Alessandro de Medici

Cosimo, great Duke of Tuscanie

Francesco 2, Duke of Florence

Ferdinando 3, great Duke

If the relation, he then made me, had beene a little longer, he must of force have deferr'd it till the next day ; but it seemed, that he had measured it out just with the time : for wee were come as neere night, as we were to our Inne ; whereinto we went to lodge. And having there well rested and refresht our selves, we got up betimes in the morning, and that we might the sooner get into Florence, we did set the best foot before, and made a little more haste, then otherwise we would have done. But when we came within sight of it, I was so over-joyed, that I am not able to expresse it, so faire and so beautifull did it a farre of present it selfe unto me. For though I could not take a full view of it,

The beauty of Florence

yet from the one end to the other, and from almost the bottome to the top, I might reasonably well discerne it; and a more pleasing sight, did mine eyes never see. I did examine the pleasantnesse of its situation, I beheld the beauty of many great and goodly buildings, the inexpugnable strength of its stately walls, the majestie, and firmnesse of its high, and well formed Towers. In a word, the whole pile thereof, seemed such unto me, that I stood amazed at it, and could not (me thought) too much admire it. I would not willingly, have mov'd out of the place where I stood, nor have drawne neerer to the Towne, but have kept my selfe at that very distance; as well, for that mine eye was wonderfull well pleased therewith, as also for that I would not wrong that delight, which I now received, when I should draw neerer thereunto; if peradventure (as it usually falleth out with most things) it should lessen it selfe, and fall short of that goodly prospect, which I did here enjoy.

But when I did consider with my selfe, that all this glorious show, was, but as it were the outward case of it, my judgement did then begin to instruct me, that the jewels therein contained, must needs be richer, and farre more glorious, as indeed they were. For, when I was entred thereinto, and saw the spatiousnesse of the streets, how streight and levell they were, how plaine and smooth, paved all with cleane hewen stones of goodly faire marble, and their houses built with beautifull stones, so costly, so curious, so neatly polished, so artificially wrought, and with such a deale of skill and cunning, in the architecture thereof, I was so confounded, that I could not tell what to thinke of it. For I could not imagine with my selfe, that any other Citie in the world, could have compar'd with Rome for beauty: But having well viewed this, for its bignesse, it goes farre beyond it. For those buildings that are in Rome, the best of them are gone to ruine, and few of them left standing; and those that are now remaining, are but meere shadowes, and the very ruines and fragments of those, that were so famous in former times. But Florence, is the flower

of the world, all is therein so flourishing, so costly, and so well set forth, that I said unto Sayavedra ; Certainly, if the inhabitants of this Citie be as curious in the tricking of their women, as they are in the adorning, and beautifying of their houses, they are undoubtedly the happiest men in the world. I was so strucken with admiration, that I was desirous to have dwelt a long time in contemplating and beholding every particular peece of building ; but because night was now growing on, and that the day would not befriend us any longer, I was faine to retire my selfe to my lodging. And we were not slacke in hastning to our Inne, whither when we were come, we were so neatly and so daintily entertained, that I cannot so much indeare it, as it truly deserveth. Such plenty of provision, such cleanlinesse in their lodging-chambers, such sweetnesse in their linnen, such diligent attendance, such affable language, and such good usage, did I never meet withall elsewhere in all my life. I was so taken there-with, that it made me almost to forget that which I most desired. I slept so soundly that night (thankes to the good bed, that was under me) that it seemed unto me scarce halfe an houre, since my first lying downe. CHAPTER I

When the morning was come, (though with a heart full of sorrow, for that was then my Mount Tabor) I call'd to Sayavedra, to give me my clothes ; and for that he was so well acquainted with that Citie, I will'd him to make himselfe ready to goe along with me, that he might show me all, whatsoever was of any note, and held (as curiosities) to be worth the seeing. And that first of all he should bring me to the chiefe Church, where having heard divine service, and recommended our selves unto God, all things would prosper afterwards the better with us. Thither he led me, and having ended our devotion, I stood like one amaz'd in beholding that most famous Temple and fabricke del Zimborio,[1] which they there call Cupula,[2] which in my opinion, may be better termed Copula, for that it seemed

[1] *Zimborio, es el hueco del chapitel.*

[2] A high Arche, or round vault of any high Church or steeple.

not only to my selfe, but as many as beheld it, that therein was copulated, and joyned as it were together, all that curious Architecture, which the writings of the best and skilfullest professors, in that profession, either theoricke, or practicke, have published to the world, so admirable a peece of workmanship, such a deale of greatnesse, strength, and curiositie, (without any wrong or injurie to any other fabricke of Europe) may justly challenge the name of the eighth wonder of the world. Let him consider with himselfe, who hath any knowledge in Architecture, it being foure hundred and twenty handfuls high, besides the spire that is on the top of it, what diameter,[1] this Cupula will require ; and by this he may come to guesse, what manner of thing it is.

The Cupula of Florence what a curious peece of building it is

From thence I went to the Annunciata, a Church so called, to see the image, that was painted there upon the wall, which might more properly be termed Heaven ; so admirable a peece of worke, is that picture of the Incarnation of the Sonne of God : Insomuch that it is held there for certaine, that it was drawne by one, that was no lesse excellent in his Art, then holy in his life. For, when he had made an end of that which there you see painted, and that there remained no more to be done, but to finish and make up the face of our blessed Lady the Virgin ; being wonderfull timerous and fearefull, much misdoubting and musing with himselfe, whether or no, he should be able to give it its true life, and to fit it every way in its age, in truenesse of its colour, its complexion, in its honest and sober countenance, and in the demure and modest posture of its eyes, in this confusion of his, and these his distracted thoughts, not devising with himselfe, what he were best to doe, he laid himselfe downe a while to sleepe, and awaking anon after, and minding to betake him to his pensill, and to put his hand (by the helpe of God) to that peece of worke, he found it made to his hand. And therefore, it needs not our farther commendation, for it being to be

The Annunciata of Florence, wonderfull worth the seeing

[1] *Diametro*, of the Greek word διάμετρον. *Linea dimetiens, seu per medium secans, recta in longitudine ducta.* It is a Geometricall terme.

presupposed, that it was there miraculously wrought either by Gods owne hand, or some one of his Angels, it can be said to be no lesse, then an Angelicall picture. And for this cause, the rest of that peece being considered, which the Painter made, we may easily conceive, what kinde of spirit he had, who could finde so much favour, as to have the hands of heaven (as if for the time, they had beene bound prentises to his Trade) to helpe him to grinde and mixe his colours, and to make an end of his worke for him.

So many miracles doth it daily worke, such a concourse of people doth continually flocke thither out of devotion, and so great are the almes, that are there distributed and given to the poore, that I did much wonder, that all the beggars were not wondrous rich; which put me in minde of that poore man, who (as I was told, and you have heard) made in this Citie, that his famous last Will and Testament, wherein he bequeathed his Asses pack-saddle to the Great Duke; That seeming now unto me but a little small summe, in comparison of that, which such a one as he, might very well have gained in that place. And for that it is a knowne truth, *Que el hijo de la gata, ratones mata*: That the sonne of a Cat, will kill his Rat. Or (as our English Proverbe hath it) Cat will to his kinde; a thousand, and a thousand times, did I bethinke my selfe of many things that I had done in my younger dayes, and did now as it were plainely perceive; that if, as I went to Rome, it had beene my good hap to have lighted in this Citie, what with my roguish tricks, my counterfeit scurffs, leprosies, and sore legs, I might have come to be a *mayorazgo* amongst them, and to have purchased some great Lordship.

Guzman scoffes at the rogues and beggars in Florence

I did likewise observe, that few of these rogues, were curious, and cunning, or that they were their crafts-masters; but were, for the most part, fooles, meere block-heads, and had little or no wit at all, in comparison of those in my time. And when I did perceive, what poore counterfeits they were, and how sillily they did order their affaires, it was sport alone to me. I tooke a great deale of pleasure in looking on them, and I did secretly wish to my selfe, that

I might have had the opportunitie, to reforme a thousand imperfections, which I presently saw in them. Who did ever see, that an honest poore beggar, that was a good proficient in his trade, nay, say he were never so meanely bred to it, would when he had most, (unlesse he were a very cocks-combe) have more then six, or seven Maravedis, or some such like trifle, and not above, in his hat? nor to have such a summe of money lie open to the peoples eye, that they may thereby be taught to tell him; you need no more, you have as much there already, as will very well serve to supply your wants for this day, and to put bread enough in your belly; and therefore, that he should get him gone, and give way to other poore folkes, that had more need, then he had? When was it ever knowne, that there was ever seene any beggar, of that poore understanding, though he were but a new beginner, that would beg, having a loafe of bread under his arme? or to stand, as I saw another, with a tooth-pick in his eare? Which I no sooner saw, but I said to my selfe: O thou poore silly theefe, thou traitor to thy profession; Art thou such an Asse, as to let every man know, that thou hast eaten so much, that there are some remnants yet left behinde in thy teeth? I saw not one amongst them all, that could play his game handsomely, nay scarce know how to set his men in their right place, nor to take their due time for the hitting of a blot; I saw no order, no decorum amongst them; they had no skill in this kinde of musicke; many of them could say their Gammoothe, (and that too they had learned by rote) but knew not how to prove a note; others there were, that had a little paltry skill in plaine-song, but would bawle it out so scurvily and so untuneably, that no eare was able to endure it: And none of all this dunghill crew, that like Chaunticleere, could chaunt it out lustily, descant and divide at pleasure, and so to relish and melt their notes, as to make their hearts to melt that heare them, and to move them to compassion of them.

There did I spie a young man, one of my old acquaintance, who was now a pretty well-growne man; this was the only

CHAPTER I

beggar (I meane compared with the rest) that knew any thing amongst them. And would to God (thought I) that I might be so happy, as to come once to set my hands, where he had set his heart. For questionlesse, he could not chuse but be rich. He was the sonne of such parents, as were able to leave him much. His father was a notable cunning rogue, and could his craft wonderfull well. And this his sonne, was every way like unto him. He was leane visag'd, lanke bellied, spindle-shank'd, and so alike suted in all the rest, that a man might truly say of him; That, t'was fathers n'owne sonne. But because every thing hath its time appointed, and takes its course when it comes, and for that the Justice did not there permit, the having of an Academie, for the trayning up of these fresh men, what through want of exercise, and not trying of conclusions, and putting them in practise, they may now throw away their caps, whilest themselves with their breviaticke Art, may lie wallowing in the durt. I knew him, but he did not know me: He might well say unto me, *Tal te veo, que no te conosco*: The world is so changed with thee, that I doe not know thee. O, what a terrible conflict had I with my selfe, what a shrewd temptation, to goe and speake to him: but I durst not. I said to Sayavedra: Seest thou that poore fellow? That rogue is able to make me rich. He then said unto me; Why doth he then goe a begging? I told him; When men have once began to open their mouthes to crave an almes, and have shut their eyes to all shame, and bound their hands from all labour, and that their feet are benum'd, and wax stiffe from taking any paines, or care to live in a lawfull course, their disease is beyond all cure, and there is no remedie to redresse this evill.

Guzman spies one of his old acquaintance amongst the beggars in Florence

Proverbe

Why beggars cannot give over their lewd course of life

The experience whereof I saw in a poore young wench in my time, who comming to Rome poore and sicke, fell a begging for God's sake. And when shee was well recover'd of her health, and as strong of her bodie, as any bull, shee still continued her trade of begging. They, whose almes shee craved, told her, it was shame for her to beg, shee was

A notable tale of a roguish wench

young, and lustie, and was able to serve, and worke for her living. Shee answered; that shee was often troubled with a cruell paine and griping of the heart, which when the fitt tooke her, caused her to fall downe to the ground in a swound, beating her feet and her hands against the earth, renting and tearing all that shee could lay hand on, and kicking and spurning at those that came neere her. In this sort, did shee cozen the world a long time, and spent many yeeres in this lewd fashion, till at last one of her owne Countrymen being askt, whether he knew her father, and her mother? Answered, He did; And that they were both dead, and had left her a great deale of wealth. Whereunto (as lawfull Inheretrix) shee laid claime. Whose estate was now such, and so great, that many principall men became Sutors unto her, and sought to have her to wife, and some of them exceeding rich (for there is no yron so foule, that it will not be guilded; gold hides and covers all, be it never so rustie[1]) shee was penny-white (as we say) and so was married in the end to one of an honest condition, and well to live, and an handsome man withall. But this wife of his, seeing shee was now deprived of her wonted libertie of begging, grew within a little while after desperately sicke, daily withering and wasting away, the Physitians not being able to search into the nature of her disease. And thus shee continued for a good while, till shee became her owne physitian, and cured her selfe, by playing the hypocrite, making solemne profession, that meerely out of humilitie, shee would goe a begging, and eat not any thing, but that should be given her of almes, wherewith shee would sustaine this sinfull carkasse of hers. And to this end, would she go up and downe her house amongst her servants, first to one, and then to another, craving and begging some thing of them. And because all did give her almes, and none denie her, that did not fully please her, but did much trouble her; wherefore, oftentimes, shee would steale up into a private roome that shee had, and there

Proverbe

[1] *No ay hierro tan malo, que no puede dorarse. Todo lo cubre, y tapa el oro.*

shut her selfe in, where shee had some pictures of certaine great persons, that were fairely hung up in frames, and even of these (to satisfie this her ill habit, and to keepe her selfe in ure) would shee likewise demand an almes.

Sayavedra marvelled much at it; Who brought me from thence, to the outward Court belonging to the Palace; in the midst whereof I might see a brave Prince, mounted upon a beautifull horse of brasse, so curiously cut to the life, and so well proportioned in every part, that they both seemed to have life and motion. My apprehension, could not discerne, and therefore durst not presume to judge, which of the two were better, either this, or that at Rome; yet inclined in the end with that short understanding of mine, to give the praise to that which was there present; not for that it was present, but because it did deserve it. I askt of Sayavedra, whose statua that was? He told me, it was the great Dukes, Cosimo de' Medici. Of whom I went discoursing unto you upon the way. And here, great Ferdinando, his sonne, (who lately was, but is not now alive) caused it to be set up to perpetuall memorie. I would needs know out of curiositie, of what height it might be, and not being able to reach thereunto to take the measure of it, I was informed, that from the very bottome to the top, was about some fiftie handfuls high, little more, or lesse. Round about the said place, were many other delicate peeces cast in brasse, and some, of substantiall, yet very fine marble, so artificially wrought, that they did drive the beholders into great admiration; leaving even the best judgements in suspense, and staggering those wits most, that were most acute; excepting only such, as had some inckling afore-hand, what manner of things they were.

The Statua of Cosimo 1, great Duke of Tuscanie

Afterwards, we visited the Temple of S. John Baptist, as being most worthy our particular remembrance; for I may truly say of it, that there is scarce the like in the world for all in all. Which glorious fabricke, I then learned, was founded in the time of Octavianus Augustus the Emperor, and consecrated to Mars. There did I entertaine my selfe

S. John Baptists Church in Florence

in observing its antiquitie, and foundation, wherein I tooke much content; and the more, for that it is reported of it, and received by tradition, as also grounded upon reason, (in regard of its foundation) That it is to last and continue, to the finall consummation and end of the world. Which we may the rather be induced to beleeve, for that neither length of time, nor those continuall warres, accompanied with so many calamities, have as yet had the power either to deface, or destroy it. All the Citie besides being left desolate and laid levell with the ground, only this Temple remaining still untoucht. The bodie of it, consists of eight angles, all spatious, strong, and marvellous beautifull to behold; especially those its three great doores, which are shut up with six halfe doores, all of brasse, cast in curious molds, and all of one entire peece, wrought with Histories of embossed worke, so daintily handled, so finely raised, and so proportionably equall in every point, as may well be presumed from the Artizans of that Citie, who beare away the bell from all the rest, in that kinde, that are in the world.

The Churches and Convents in Florence

This Temple hath likewise another greatnesse belonging unto it, which is this; That there being in Florence one and forty Parish Churches, two and twenty Monasteries of Fryars, forty and seven Nunneries, foure Colledges or Houses for those that are willing to retire themselves from the world, eight and twenty Hospitals, and two bearing the name of Jesus; yet there is no baptisme used in any of these, save only in that of S. John, and in that Church, are all the children of this Citie baptized, from the meanest amongst the commons, to the principall Gentlemen, and the great Dukes owne children. For that time, that we stayed there, we visited all the Churches one after another, which were of that admirable workmanship, and set forth with such singular and rare curiosities, that it is not possible to relate no not the least part thereof, in regard of the muchnesse of them, (the number of them being so infinite,) nor is the understanding capable of apprehending them, much lesse our outward eye. For he that should

goe about to make a memoriall of so great a *Machina*, and such a masse of things, whose admirable parts are so numberlesse, and every one of them accompanied with sundry peeces of such singular Art, and exquisite workemanship, besides so many excellent pictures, some in tables, and some ingraven in brasse, and other mettals, had need to make thereof a huge great Volume, and to seeke out some other Chronicler, that shall be better able then my selfe, to present these things to the eyes of the Reader, and to give them their due commendation. CHAPTER I

The Dukes Palace

The great Duke, hath a Palace in the Citie, which is called Il Palaggio de Piti ; whose excellencies, greatnesses, and curiosities, as well in gardens, as fountaines, mounts, groves, sports for hunting, and goodly roomes, may (without indearing) be truly said to be a princely and royall seat ; and such a one, as may compare with any other whatsoever in all Europe.

The circuit of Florence

I would not omit to know and see the circuit of this Citie, which containeth in it such store of wealth. And I found it to be much about five mile compasse : it hath ten great Gates, and one and fifty Towers. The Citie is seated all within the walls, and hath no suburbs adjoyning thereunto. Through the midst of it passeth the famous river of Arnus, upon which stand foure most stately bridges, all pav'd with stone, and very strongly built, being large and spatious withall. And all these things, being thus done in perfection ; the like perfection is also to be found in their government, their behaviour, and in the generall fashion, and cariage of that people. And therefore justly, and with a great deale of reason,is this Citie called Florencia, as being *flos florum*, the flower of flowers, and as it were the only nose-gay of all Italie. Wherein all things, as in a curious garden, doe flourish joyntly together, but more particularly these especiall and singular good things ; As the liberall Arts, horsemanship, all kinde of learning, militarie discipline, true dealing, faire proceeding, sweet behaviour, plainenesse and sinceritie in their actions, and above all I must recommend unto thee, their love and

kindnesse towards strangers. Shee like a true mother, imbraces them in her bosome, huggs them, makes much of them, and favours them more, then shee doth her owne children ; to whom, in respect of them, shee may be termed a mother in law.

Florence a friend to strangers

The time, that I stayed there, I came to know the Causes by their Effects : to wit, by knowing the nature and condition of the inhabitants, and the politicke lawes, by which they were governed, and their due observation of them, not erring a tittle from them. There they apply themselves truly to know and esteeme every mans merits, rewarding them with just and due honours ; to the end that all may be incouraged to vertue. And let not Princes thinke it a small glory unto them, for they ought to acknowledge it for one of the greatest, that can be given them, when it is truly said of them, that their noble and renowned actions, doe jumpe and concurre with those of their subjects.

The good government in Florence

I likewise knew that to be true, which Sayavedra had told me about the factions in Court, and the crossing and thwarting one another. I saw somewhat of that, which did exceed in other places, as Envie, and Flatterie, whereof no Princes Court is free, which alwayes raigne there most, where is desire of favour, but more especially, when they labour to increase it, and to keepe themselves in grace with their Soveraigne. Which oftentimes turne to the great hurt of both the one and the other. They are fine and witty relators of other mens actions, and subtle Mathematicians, for to delineate and measure out that which other men can doe, and sometime that, which others cannot. But let these things rest, without farther entring into them. For having painted forth unto you, in so great a perfection, this illustrious and noble Citie, it is not fit that I should blemish it with so foule a blot, and dash as it were with a cole, that faire commendation, that I have given it.

Envie, and Flatterie, two great Courtiers

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER II

Guzman de Alfarache goes to Bologna in pursuit of Alexandro, who had stolne his trunkes from him; Whither, when he was come, going about to imprison Alexandro, himselfe was clapt up

IN Florence, I did eat out that horse, which my Lord Embassador had bestowed on me at my departure, and made me one morning a breakfast of his shooes. I say; To the end I might sell him the better, I caused him to be new shod, giving order to Sayavedra to make money of the old ones; whereof we made our breakfast. If this heretike, Necessitie, had not kickt me out of Towne, and thrust me out by head and shoulders, I should never while I liv'd, of mine owne accord, have gone from thence. And this thou maist as certainly beleeve of me, as of any one Article of thy Creed. For I had now well taken salt, and was throughly seasoned, and had sounded that Citie to the very bottome, yet I know not, how my minde might have altered, and what I should have done hereafter. For in conclusion, *todo lo nuevo aplaze*: See what is newest, that we still like best. This rule, holding more especially in such as I was, who had *spiritum ambulatorium*, a wandring humour of mine owne, and was a great lover of novelties. But then I was of that opinion, for those many reasons I had on my side. For it was my hap to come thither, when they were full of their sports and pastimes; and other young fellowes of the same yeeres with my selfe, led me to these their delightfull pleasures along with them from house to house, from feast to feast, and from bridall to bridall.

Guzman sells his horse, and breaks his fast with his old shooes

Guzman loth to leave Florence

Proverbe

The sports and pastimes that are used in Florence

In one house you might finde them dancing; in another, playing upon instruments; in a third, singing; and in a

fourth, making merry with their friends. All was delight, and more and more delight still; one sets up his rest at Primera, another vyes his game at Tic-tack: some at one game, some at another. In a word, in all places of the Citie wheresoever we came, we met with nothing, but laudable exercises, and honest recreations. There might a man see many young gallants, pompous in apparell, and richly clad, and many faire Ladies, and hansome Gentlewomen, who wanted no setting forth for curious and costly dressings, with whom these young blouds did dance. Whose tyres on their heads were so daintily adorned, their gownes on their backs so richly imbroydered, and their Chapines to their feet, so plated with silver, and beset with pretious stones, that they did ravish both the eyes, and the soules of as many as did looke upon them. I leave it therefore to thee to consider, what kinde of dressings those were, that had so much power to move the beholders. See how I have seasoned this dish, that I may not disgrace the goodnesse of the meat. Tell me; hath it not a good rellish? is it not pleasing to thy palate? Though I goe not into a Taverne to drinke, yet I take delight to talke of it, and to looke upon it, and to peepe in at the doore as I passe by, and sometimes slip in, to make my selfe merry.[1] No man is wise on horsebacke; much lesse, in the unbridled yeeres of his youth. In a word, I was young. And as old age is cold, and dry, so on the contrary, youth, is hot, and moyst. Youth, hath strength, and old age, wisdome. Thus are these gifts divided, and yet every one hath that which is fit, and necessarie for him. And though for the most part, we see that all old men turne to be young, if not (as we say) become children againe; yet it were a wonder, to see young men grow old. And I say againe, it were as great a wonder, to see a young man in yeares, to be an old man in discretion, as to see a Peare tree, to beare fruits in the heart

Proverbe

[1] *Sino bevo en la taberna, huelgome en ella. Deve ser entretenimiento ver en la taberna unas monas tristes, y otras alegres, ver cantar unos, y llorar otros; y todos con muy poca firmeza en los pies, y gran modorra en lo cabeça.* Covarruvias, verb. *Taberna.*

of winter. But I speake this in Spanish, that some of other Countries, whom I know, may not finde fault with me. And I would have all men take notice, that I alwayes speake according to the use and fashion of mine owne Country: for I doe not know after what manner others dance in theirs. CHAPTER II The Authors protestation

But that I may returne to my former discourse; it grieved me very much to leave Florence, (yet did it much concerne me to be gone) flying as it were from my selfe, not knowing to what end, nor whither to goe; nor yet knew I, why I should stay any longer there, unlesse it were to spend that poore little store of money, that I had yet left me, and that chaine, which the Lord Embassador my master, gave me at my farewell as a token of his love, and to thinke upon him, as oft as I chanc'd to cast mine eyes upon it. And I must truly confesse unto you, that he was never out of my minde, whensoever I did thinke upon that houre, wherein I must ere long be forced to turne it into money. And as it was given me with a great deale of love, so did it exceedingly grieve me that I must shortly part so unkindly with it. I would, if I could, have kept it rather then my life, and never have parted from it; but there are some such occasions, wherein parents may impawne their owne children. Patience, (quoth I to my selfe) I will doe the best I can; and more, I can not. And therefore (my masters) I pray pardon me; for he, that hath no other meanes to helpe him-selfe, and is constrained thereunto out of meere necessitie, is driven many times to commit many a greater error, and that shall prove farre more prejudiciall and hurtfull. I had a great wrestling and strugling with my selfe; and my thoughts had a cruell sharpe warre with themselves, as well touching this, as other the like businesses. I considered with my selfe, what would now become of me, and what course I were best to take, for to supply and releeve my wants. God helpe me; How heavy is the heart, when the purse is light! And therefore we say; A heavy purse, makes a light heart.[1] What little comfort doe we Guzman begins to consider with him-selfe Proverbe

[1] *Apretado se halla un coraçon, quando no lo está la bolsa.*

THE SECOND BOOKE

Money cheeres mans heart

take in the world? And how faint and feeble, are the pleasures of this life to him, whose purse-strings are too weake? And more particularly, to one that is in a strange Country, and that hath put on a resolution with him-selfe to forget his lewd courses, and not to live, as he had done, by tricks and by shifts; yet not knowing how to gaine a penny, and wanting the meanes, how to come by money; having no neere acquaintance with any, to presume of such kindnesse from them, being farre from my friends, and farther from any the least intention or purpose to cheat or cozen any man. For, if I would have runne that course, and set my minde unto it, I needed not to have taken such a deale of care and trouble in the businesse. For I had my wits about me; and a hand, that was able to finde me worke all the yeare long; I could not want, (if I listed my selfe) to picke out a living where-soever I should come. For (thanks be to God for it) what I had once learned, it was mine owne for ever: I never lost it, if I once had it. Only, I might at first be a little to seeke, for want of use, but the tooles of my trade were never out of my hand, but alwayes carried them with me, whither-soever I went. I departed from Rome with a full purpose to become an honest man; and fall backe, fall edge, come good, or come bad, all welcome, as it pleas'd God; for I had a great minde to continue these my good desires, and to remaine firme in this so honest a resolution. But seeing, that Hell is full of these, what good could my holy deliberations doe me, if I did not put them in execution? For faith, without workes, is but a dead faith.

He that is used to command, will hardly be brought to obey

Now, I had gotten me a man to waite upon me; Where by the way, I pray let me ask you, what a good direction this was, to addresse me to a Master? What a Letter of recommendation to bee received into service? I had beene now accustomed to command; how would you then, that I should submit my selfe to obey? I verily thought with my selfe (as perhaps many more doe, for I doe not thinke that I am the onely man of that minde in the world) that I should have beene an honest man, if answerable to

that glorious show that I made, and the height whereat I liv'd, I had had wherewithall to spend accordingly, and that I had not wanted meanes to uphold this great spirit of mine, but had had money enough to maintaine and inlarge my generous disposition. But the summes (I feare me) which must have serv'd to supply my wants, must miraculously by some holy Saint or other, be subministered unto mee: for no other hand could doe it. And certainly, I know not how it then fell out, that I was so honest, as I was; I verily beleeve, that this also was a Miracle, considering the condition of that present time, and mine owne evill inclination. I was young, left to live at mine own liberty, suffered to do what I list, and rather accustomed to seeke occasions, to doe, then to shunne ill; and I could hardly by the helpe of my good desires, either lose, or lay aside my bad conditions.

Want, and honesty, can hardly stand together

Such a Lady, or such a Gentlewoman saith (which is their ordinary kind of language) I would faine be a good woman, I desire to lead an honest life, as no woman more, if that necessity did not force me to doe that, which I doe. Indeed Madame, by your leave, your Ladyship lyes. For, that you doe ill, it is onely, because you are willing to doe ill. O what a poore excuse is this? I confesse that I offend thus and thus, but it is against my will; for I am not of my selfe given to such, or such a sinne, nor have any inclination thereunto in the world. In good faith it is otherwise, for I reade it in your eyes. And they consenting unto sinne, who can be said to be the cause thereof, but your selves? For if you would but turne your eyes from your windowes, and throw them on your distaffe, or your cushioner, certainly necessity would not constraine you to ill. Womens hands are not of that length, nor so quicke and so nimble, that they should sodainly reach so farre, as to finde you food, apparrell, and house-rent: yet are they long enough, to put themselves forth to service; and they that set you a worke, will bestow house-roome on you, and put meate in your mouthes, and money in your purse. But I expect you should say unto me; Thou, that art a man, giv'st me

A good discourse of Guzmans

this counsaile ; Thou art loath to serve thy selfe, and yet thou wouldst have me to serve, that am a woman ? Indeed, thou hast hit the nayle on the head ; And this is that, which I say ; That your Mistrisse-ship, and I, and this, or that other woman (bee shee what shee will) are all of us unwilling to doe our selves good. We will put to no helping hand of our owne, but would, that what we stand in need of, should be put into our mouthes, and that it should miraculously be ministred unto us.

Youth, what a kind of thing it is

Twenty years of age, is a terrible beast : O how head-strong, and how wild it is. There is no battaile so bloody, no skirmish so hot, and so hard to come off cleare, as that warre, which wee wage with our youth. For if it goe about to make its retreat from Vice, it hath many fierce enemies that sharply set upon it, never ceasing to assaile it, galling it here, and wounding it there, which wil hardly bee repell'd, more hardly overcome, by reason of those many occasions of advantage which offer them-selves ; it being besides a thing proper unto youth, to stumble, if not to fall, at every step : Youth hath not (beeleeve me) any strength in its legs, much lesse know they well how to goe. It is an untamed beaste, it is full of fury, and voyd of patience ; and if it entertaine any good motion, a hundred ill thoughts disband the same by and by, and put it to route ; not giving it so much leysure as to set foote to ground, nor to put it in the stirrop, nor to seate him-selfe sure in the Saddle. Every one cannot get up to it ; and few that can bridle this beaste. It will not be so soone over-mastered, as some doe thinke, nor be easily brought to goe that way as a man would have it. I was ever, like the Hog, up to the very eyes, nousling my selfe in the mud of vice and wickednesse, (for albeit I did not alwayes practise ill, yet I never lost the sight of it) and I was loath to kick and fling against it, lest by my too much stirring, I might loosen my lading, and cause it to fall to the ground ; if not spraine, and hurt my selfe.

A Bullocke, or young Steere, when he is to bee tamed, they first halter his legges, throwing him downe on the

ground, then they fall a shooing of him, after that, they binde a rope or a cord to one of his hornes, which they suffer him to traile after him for some fewe daies ; and when they are minded to bring his necke to the yoake, they yoake him with an old Oxe, that hath beene long used to the plough, and so by little and little disposing him thereunto, they teach him by these degrees to beginne to draw handsomely, and in the end to be as perfect as the best of them.

Instruction, necessary for youth

That young man therefore, that hath a desire to be old, let him leave to follow my steps, and let him strive to subdue his passions ; let him prepare, and dispose himselfe to labour, and in dispight of his owne will, let him strongly struggle and wrastle with his idle and foolish desires, and throw them flat on their backes to the ground, that they may never rise up any more to make resistance against him : And when he hath thus gotten them downe under him, let him binde them fast with that double twisted cord of Patience, and Humility ; and let him traile after him, for some certaine daies, these his strange and dangerous appetites, spending his time in vertuous exercises, and many shall not passe over his head, before hee be brought to bow his necke to that holy yoake of repentance ; and by yoaking him-selfe with good company, hee shall quickly be inured to the plough, wherewith he shall breake up the earth of his evill inclinations ; But let no man thinke, that hee shall bee able to doe this at the first dash ; and that once trying what he can doe, shall be sufficient to make him grow perfect. Some (I know) will not sticke to tell me ; I would doe this, and I would doe that, my will is to it, but etc. Let him speake this to such another as him-selfe, and to one that is of the like quality and condition, as he is. For I know well enough already, that he is not willing to doe this, nor to doe that ; For they, that are willing indeed, use other more effectuall meanes. And nothing is hard to them, that will set them-selves hard to it. Peradventure such a one thinkes, or expects, that God should open the heavens, and miraculously strike him to the ground, as he did Saint Paul ; But let him not looke to

This same but, or *Si non,* is the cause of much harme

have the like course to be taken with him; lest he be accounted a foole for his labour.

God threw him to the ground, and humbled him sufficiently, when he afflicted him with sicknes, when he laid troubles upon him, and when he suffered him to be toucht in his good name; if either then, or now, thou wouldst accept of grace, while it is offered thee, thou shalt be sure to finde it. But thou wast never willing to entertaine these good motions, much lesse to humble thy selfe with Saint Paul, and to cry out with him; *Domine, quid vis, ut faciam?* Lord, what wilt thou, that I doe? What is thy divine will and pleasure? Thou wilt not like Paul be for God, and yet thou look'st that God should be for thee. And if he dealt thus with Saint Paul, it was because God knew the earnest desire that he had to know and search out the Truth: and that it was his zeale to the Law that did thus oversway him; the current whereof being turn'd another way, he would be as fervent for the Gospell. And you can instance but in a few that have beene saved by a bare intention, without any good worke. These two are to concurre in one, intention and action; I say, if we have any time left unto us for action, or wherein we may doe any good worke. And then shall a firme intention of amendment of life, and a hearty sorrow for our sins past, be accounted a good worke, when the night of death shall sodainly overtake us, and shut us up in darknesse. But having day enough to worke and labour in the Lords Vineyard, both these ought to goe together, I meane intention and action. For neither the spade alone, nor the hand alone, can digge, and dresse the ground; but hand, and spade, must both worke together.

If we will be saved, our good intentions, must be seconded by good actions

But who hath put me into this theame? Was not I in Florence even now to my great content? Thither doe I returne againe. I assure thee, that the more I walked up and downe that Citie, the more desirous I was to plant there my Pillars, and not to seeke for a *Plus ultra*. For it was even as I would have wisht it to be, all very beautifull and delightsome. And if therein resided either flattery

or envie, I tooke no great heed thereof, but let it runne to others account, for I was none of those, that were comprehended in that Decree. I had nothing to doe (like Judas) with the almes of the poore; nor could any prejudice thereby come unto me, being that I pretended nothing in Court. And if they would any way have holpen me, I had no need to use them. Or had I stood in need of them, I would not have made any use of them; they evermore seeming unto me the greatest meanes of mischiefe, that ever came yet within my knowledge. For one onely flatterer is sufficient alone of him-selfe to overthrow a Commonwealth, if not a whole Kingdome. Happy is that King, and fortunate that Prince, whose Subjects serve him for love, and who out of his wisdome leaves now and then an eare open to the peoples complaints, as also their advice; for onely by this meanes shall he come to know truthes, whereby hee may redresse those things, that are amisse, and keepe off flatterers from abusing his eares.

Envy, and flattery, hurtfull to a Commonwealth

There would I have liv'd all the daies of my life, and have past away the time, like a Duke, had I had wherewithall. But I was in a manner blowne up, and all my money was almost spent. I need not to confirme this unto you with an oath, for you may very well (if you will) beleeve me on my bare word. The River now began to grow drie, and my store to faile me; for, *Del monton que sacan, y no ponen, presto lo descomponen.* Pull from your heap, and put nothing to it; you, or your heape (if not both) may rue it. So that my moneys still going out, and none comming in, if I should have staid any longer there, I should quickly have runne my-selfe out at the heeles, and it would have beene a great disreputation for me, to have come in a horse-backe, and to goe out a foote. I thought it good counsell to uphold mine honour, and to depart from thence, both to my credit, and content, before that being forced thereunto by necessity, I should come to discover my wants, and be bound to stay still there, for lacke of meanes to be gone. I acquainted Sayavedra with this my purpose, and plainly opened my minde unto him; For by this time, I knew well

Proverbe

enough, that he was likely to be my onely helpe at a pinch, my strong forte, and the onely trench whereunto I might with safety retire, and that I could not have met with such another companion in all the world for my purpose. I went preparing him by a little and a little, working and disposing him by degrees, that he might not afterwards thinke that he had seene strange visions, and vaine apparitions, and that whatsoever should hereafter befall me, might not seeme new unto him, or accounted as a novelty.

Sayavedras counsell to Guzman, for the recovery of his stolne goods

When I had thus moulded him, he said unto me; Sir, There is one remedy, that offers it selfe unto me now on the sodaine, neither chargeable, nor hard, but very easie to be effected, and that may make much for your profit. Seeing there is no remedy, but wee must be gone, it is not much materiall which gate we goe out at; for at any one of the ten, we may travaile out on our ten toes, to goe abroad, and see the world. Let us (if you will be rul'd by me) take the way, that leads to Bologna; for besides, that it is neere at hand, and that we shall there see that famous University, wee may chance likewise to have the good lucke to meete with Alexandro Bentivoglio, that Master of mine, who went away with the most part of your goods. For if we hap to find him there, (as I verily beleeve we shall,) It will be an easie matter for you to recover your owne. For, upon that information which was made of the theft in Siena, it is not to be doubted, that though you get not what you lost againe, yet he or his father will at least be content to give you good satisfaction.

I tooke this to be no bad counsell, but was very well pleased therewith, not thinking on any other thing then the force of Law, and the justnesse of my cause; and let justice deale never so indirectly with me, I could not conceive the least cause of doubt, in regard of the cleare notice I could make of the theft, which would, if not all, yet have allotted me the greater part of my goods: perswading my selfe, that this party, who was principall in this theft, knowing him-selfe guilty therof, would have come unto me upon his knees, desiring my pardon, and that he would

voluntarily have offered to make me amends for the wrong he had done me, and to come upon any termes to agreement with me; as well for that his parents, and kindred in that Citie, were persons of principall note; as also, for that notwithstanding all the meanes they were able to make to bolster out the matter, yet would they never permit, that so foule a fact should come to publike hearing, and be judicially tryde, nor that they, and their house, should be blotted and blurr'd with so foule a staine, and dishonour, as this could not chuse but prove, if it should once come to be ripped up.

Will you heare a strange kinde of humour in me? you shall then know it by this. It is not long since you heard me say, what a delicate and delightsome place Florence was, and what a deale of pleasure I tooke therein. And now upon the sudden, I was growne out of love with it, the very name of it was growne so hatefull unto me, that it was ready out of a loathing that I had taken to it, to turne up my stomach. It began now (me thought) to stinke, I could not endure the sent of it; every thing seemed so foule and so filthy to my sight, that I did now long to be gone, and till then, every day was to me a thousand. You may see (my masters) what wonders want of money can worke! You will in a moment hate those things, which you lov'd most, when you lacke wherewithall to maintaine both your selves, and them. Now my minde gave me, that there was not such another Citie in the world, as Bologna; wherein I should no sooner set my foot, but I should recover my stolne wares, and have wherewithall to spend, and to keepe company with your young Students, lads of the right stampe, merry greekes, much of mine owne size and marke, with whom I might play three or foure venewes, when I were so disposed, without any great disadvantage of weapon. And the dice might haply have given me so lucky a chance, and have hit so right, that I might have had the good fortune to have followed my studies: for that learning, which my Lord Cardinall bestowed upon me, I had not as yet forgot it, but was very ready and perfect in

Guzman minds to leave Florence, and to goe to Bologna

all that had been taught me. And questionlesse, with that little learning, that I then had, I might very well have proceeded Master, and made a shift to live by that profession, if that kinde of course had been fitting for me, or that my selfe had beene willing to apply my minde hereunto.

But stay a while Guzman, be not thou too hastie: Wilt thou offer to traile a gowne after thee, being so weake that thou canst scarce hale a halter at thy heeles? Hold thy hand, this is not a taske for thee to undertake. There is no talking of commencing Doctor, till the bowe of preferment be drawne home by the strong arme of angels. What canst thou hope for then, who art so poore, that thou art scarce able to wagg the string.

Guzman, and Sayavedra being come to Bologna, are puzled, not well knowing what course to take

I was now fully resolved to begin my journey, and to make all the haste I could. And so in an instant I put this my intention in execution. Away goes Sayavedra, and I together, making directly for Bologna. And because I had flying thoughts in my head, I was willing to put wings to my horse: making such good speed, that we came thither that night; but slept very little, for we spent the most part of it in plotting and casting about how we should beare our selves in this businesse; and whilest we were discoursing to and fro, what were best to be done; Sayavedra (having looked well as it should seeme on his owne cards) sayes unto me: Sir, I hold it not so fit, that I should be seene herein at all, especially now at this my first flight, but rather to lye close awhile, till we may see, where it will be best to give the wound; and when wee shall come to know, where the game lies, and that there is any hope of doing good, then let us let flie, and strike it dead. For if Alexandro be in the towne, and should know that I am here, (which he cannot choose, if I stir abroad, being so well knowne as I am,) he will question me, wherefore I am come hither, and with whom? And that knowne, he will absent him-selfe forthwith from the Citie, and so we shall be defeated of our purpose. Or if he chance but to suspect, that I had a finger in this businesse, and that I was the cause of this journey, and his shame, there is no way but

one with me, he will surely kill me ; so that neither of these two will advantage us any thing, nor is fitting for us to be adventured on. Besides, if this web must come to be woven in the Loome of Justice, I must bee the master-thred to be wrought upon, there is no avoyding of it : And therefore you have no reason to suffer me (considering that I can stand you in no stead, if I be taken and clapt by the heeles) to receive any farther harme, then what I have already endured. The best course then to be taken, I conceive to be this ; That to morrow morning you make inquirie after him, and by one meanes or other (with the best secresie you can) seeke first to know him, and to take particular notice of his person ; That done, wee will consult thereof afresh, and governe our selves therein, according as occasion and time shall serve.

I did not like amisse of this, me thought it was good wholesome counsell. Well ; as he had advised me I set my selfe to worke, I walkt up and downe the Towne, and after the treading of some few steps, not being troubled (as fortune would have it) to tyre out my legs in the search of him, it was my good hap to have him pointed out unto me with the finger, telling me ; Loe, that's the man. Which direction I needed not, for the cloathes on his backe did speake what he was, and without others teaching, could tell me, This is Alexandro. He was standing amongst other young men at the Church doore ; nor doe I beleeve, that his devotion was such, as to goe in and out to heare Masse, but I was rather of opinion, that hee stood there registring those that went in, offering great scandall, but showing small respect, to that sacred place. It is a foule shame, that this is so commonly used as it is in most parts of the Christian world.[1] I know what I speake ; Would to God I knew as well how to reforme this abuse. Are there not store of streets, and other publike places in the towne, for to make love in, which wee scandall too much already with

Guzman finds Alexandro with his cloathes on his backe, that he had stolne from him

[1] An ill custome, that is too much used in many great Cities in the world. Especially in Madrid, where to prevent this Church-courting, the men are to goe in and out at one doore, and the women at another.

our lewd steps, wanton lookes, dishonest signes, and tokens, and perhaps other things of a worse condition, to intimate our loose and lustfull affections, but that wee must wrong Gods holy Temple with this our uncivill and beastly behaviour.

But let us proceed in our former argument, that wee may not leape from a Masse, into a Sermon. It seemed unto me, that hee stood not there with any great devotion, for he talkt apace with his hand,[1] and now and then he would breake out in a loud laughter. He had at that time a doublet of mine on his backe of cloath of silver, and a jerkin drest with Amber, and other rich perfumes, cut and slasht cleane through, and lined with the same cloath of silver, sutable to the doublet, and richly laid with lace after the Sevillian fashion, and eight buttons of gold wrought upon Amber, to make it fit the closer to the collar, all which a Gentleman of Naples presented mee withall, for a certaine dispatch that I had procured for him, by soliciting his businesse with my Lord Embassador.

Proverbe

When I came to know mine owne, and saw another man wear it before my face, I could have found in my heart to have stab'd him, and to have presently stript him of it, so did it grieve and vexe the very soule of me, that such deare pledges as these of my friends love unto me, should thus sore against my will, be in another mans possession. My blood rose against him, and I was often tempted to have gone and stab'd him, but I held my hand, and said with my selfe; No Guzman, no; This must not be so; Better it were, that this thy thiefe, should be converted, and live. For if thou let him live, he may chance to pay thee; but if thou kill him, thou art sure to pay for him. And of the two, it is better to take, then to give. And safer it is for thee, that others should be indebted to thee, then thou indebted to others. And it will bee more for

Guzman in a great rage; and why

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Hablava por la mano.* That is, he talkt with his hand. Now to talke with the hand, is an ancient fashion of speaking, by forming letters, and by putting your fingers in divers and sundry postures, whereby a man makes his mind known. Covarruvias, Verb. *Mano.*

thy ease, and more easily compast, to get in a debt, then to pay a debt.[1] Make not thy selfe the defendant, if thou maist be the plaintiffe. Goe on faire and softly, be not so hasty, for there is no body that runs after us. And if there be any order or Law in gaming, and if the dice runne true, if the cards bee not packt, but are well shuffled and cut, and that there be faire play, unlesse the divell be in it, or my lucke exceeding bad, all the world cannot winne the game from me. For I have cards enough in mine owne hand to carry it. We are sure the bird cannot now get from us; which is that which importeth us most. Let us not feare the Chase, but hunt lively, for the Buls are safe enough; they cannot escape us. He is taken in the manner, the theft found about him, hee cannot possibly deny it. I sweare I will put him to his neck-verse, and see how well or ill he will come off, and make him to confesse upon the Racke, who put him into those fine cloathes, or in what Fayre or Market he bought them. CHAPTER II Proverbe

Having consulted thus with my selfe, I got me home to my lodging, acquainting Sayavedra with what I had seene. Hee had provided me my dinner ready for me, and had set it downe on the table, as soone as he saw I was come; And when we had din'd, we pitcht the hay wherewith we were to catch this Cony. We discoursed one while of this course, another while of that, many designes we had, many meanes propounded to come by our owne; but Sayavedra (poore man) did stagger at them, and was loath to give way unto them: He repented him now of the counsell hee had given me, fearing therein his own danger. But we concluded in the end, that of all other meanes, Peace (if we could draw him to some reasonable composition) were the best. For it is better to have one bird in the hand, then two in the bush.[2] And a bad Proverbe

[1] *Mas facil cobrar, que pagar.*

[2] The Spanish proverb is, *Mas valia paxaro en mano, que Buey volando.* Better a bird in hand, then a Vulture flying. Signifying thereby, That what a man hath safe and sure in his power, is much better then the uncertaine hopes of great matters, by reason of those many accidents that may interhappen. Covarruvias, Verb. *Bueytre.*

Proverbe

Accord, is better then a good Plea :[1] Lesse harme ever comming of agreeing, then suing. So that at last, we grew to this conclusion, that I, by a third person, should use some meanes, to have his father talkt withall, making him acquainted with the businesse, and the whole manner how it was carried, giving him a large account of every particular thing, remitting my selfe to his good will and pleasure, how he in his owne discretion should thinke meet I deserv'd to be dealt withall, and that he would not enforce mee (considering my faire manner of proceeding with him) to recover mine owne by rigour of Law, being there was *Evidentia facti* ; besides many other pregnant proofes to be produced, that these goods were mine. And so I did, as we had devised ; having made choice of a discreet person, who should secretly and with fitting language, deliver thus much unto him. But because Power is commonly accompanied with Pride, and Pride is still attended with Tyranny, he was so farre from compounding the businesse, that he made little reckoning of it, taking it ill at his hands that treated with him about it, wishing him that hee should speake no more of it, deeming it as an affront done unto his honour, and a meere defamation. He feigned him-selfe to be greatly wronged, though he knew well enough that I was he, that was injur'd ; and without giving us either good hopes, or good words, he dispatcht my messenger.

The tyranny of great persons

When I receiv'd this answere, I hatched a thousand evill imaginations in my heart. But because I would not returne evill for evill, I resolved to talke with some one Lawyer or other of that University, that should be recommended unto me for the nimblenesse of his wit, and soundnesse of judgement ; to whom I opening my case (fearing the successe thereof, for that my adversaries father was so powerfull) might crave his opinion, and that hee would assist me with his best advice and counsell, for the better prosecuting of his businesse. Hee plainly told me ; Sir, it is well enough knowne in this Towne, what manner of man Alexandro is, as also his lewd and idle courses, which

[1] *De menor daño mal conçierto que buen pleito.*

in some other place, would be a sufficient information against him. Besides, there is so much truth in that, which you urge against him, that it is manifestly apparant to as many as know him, or shall heare you. You have right on your side, a just and a good cause, and therefore I would advise you to frame an information against him, and to desire justice. All Bologna, hath taken notice already of this theft of his ; for, as soone as he came hither with it, it was presently knowne, that these clothes were none of his owne ; as well, because he caused them to be altred, and fitted to his owne bodie ; as also, for that he carried hence with him no lambes to sell, nor any other kinde of merchandize, whereby he should make so rich a returne. Besides, another companion of his, in whom he put much trust, stole a good part of these goods from him, that he might likewise gaine thereby a part of his Pardons, and Indulgences. You see now, what course you must be faine to take, what lyes in me to releeve you, you may be assured of the best furtherance and the best counsell that I can give you, for the countenancing of this your cause.

Whereupon, I being very desirous, that a bill should be exhibited against him, he presently (according to my information) drew one out, which I forthwith presented to the *Auditore del Torrone*, who is there the Judge in all Causes Criminall. But, be it as it may be, whether it were immediately from the Judge him-selfe, or from the Notarie, I know not which, nor from whence, nor how it came to passe, but sure I am, that this businesse of mine was instantly over all the Towne, and particular notice was given thereof unto Alexandro's father. And for that he was a man of authoritie in that Towne, and carried a great hand there amongst them, he hyes him in all haste to the Judge, and there accusing me for this my bold attempt, and inconsiderate rashnesse, (as it pleased him to terme it) he formed a complaint against me, that I had defamed, and dishonoured his house, and that therefore he was of purpose come unto him to desire his lawfull favour, and that he would be pleased to doe him justice, to the end that I might

be severely punished for this my presumption. I know not how, but the matter was so carried betweene them, that it had beene better for me, to have held my peace. He was a powerfull man in that Citie, and the Judge (it seemed) was very willing to pleasure him. I began now to feare, that occasions of quarrell would be pickt against me; mole-hils made mountaines; and this my losse, turne to my greater losse; making my undoing, an occasion of my farther undoing. For Love, Interest, and Hatred, are ever maine enemies to the Truth. And in many places, As a man is befriended, so his Cause is ended. But he that hath both money and friends, is sure to worke out his ends. Money is of no great thicknesse, yet it dulls the double edg'd sword of justice, if it but once offer to touch it. Gold, is a heavy mettall; and that makes the ballance of Justice so light. I did spit as it were against heaven, the drivell whereof fell upon my owne face; I shot my arrowes up into the ayre, and they returned backe againe upon mine owne bosome; the innocent paying for the nocent; and the just, for the unjust.[1]

Truthes enemies

What abates the end of Justice

Proverbe

Much money does much harme;[2] But much more, the evill intention of an evill man. And therefore where an ill-minded man, and a great masse of money meet together and shake hands, there is much need of helpe from heaven, to free an innocent soule out of their cruell clawes. Good Lord deliver us from out their clutches, for they are more griping and tyrannous, then those of Tygers, or of Lyons. Their will is a law; what-soever they desire, that they doe; right (when they list) shall be wrong; and wrong, right: And no man must controll them for it; nor dare to say, blacke is their eye; lest he chance to lose both his owne, for prying too neere unto the secrets of these earthly gods. O that there were men of that goodnesse and courage, that would not sticke to tell them, and plainly give them to understand; that the money, they thus unlawfully take, shall last with them but a while; but the fire,

[1] *Pagan los justos, por peccadores.*
[2] *Mucho daño, el mucho dinero.*

wherewith they shall be tormented for it, shall continue for ever. CHAPTER II

The Judge did limit me a prefixed time for my proofes, but so short, that it was not possible for me to make my information according to that scantling. In this you may see the injustice that he did me. Who did ever till now know a Judge restraine the Plaintiffe of lawfull time to make his proofes, as he did me, especially when I did alleage for my selfe, that the information was to come from Siena, where the theft was committed, whence I was to procure it, for otherwise I could not have it. But to alleage this, or not alleage it, all was one. I must be content, will I, nill I, to sit downe with this losse. There was no sence for it. And to this purpose, before I passe any farther, I will tell you what hapned in a little Village of Andaluzia.

A short tale of an Alcalde

There was a certaine sessing to be set in a ratable proportion, upon the Towne-dwellers, and borderers thereabout, for some publike peece of worke, that was to goe in hand; and the Collectors that were appointed to gather the money, had put into their rolle (to contribute thereunto) a Gentleman of as ancient a house, as any in those parts; who taking himselfe therein to be greatly wronged, made his complaint against the collectors. But for all that, they did not strike his name out of the rolle. Now, when the time was come for the levying of these moneyes, they went unto this Gentleman to demand so much of him, as he was rated at in their note; He refused to pay it. Whereupon they distrained on his goods, and paid themselves. The Gentleman being much offended with this their proceeding, goes forthwith to his Lawyer, asks his counsell, who (in conclusion) drawes me a petition for him, grounded upon all both Law, and Reason, wherein he layse open his ancient Gentry, and the noblenesse of his House, and that in regard thereof he was priviledged from all manner of sessings, and such other the like payments, and that therefore he did humbly petition the Court, that they would be pleased to give present order, that what the Collectors had forcibly taken from him, might againe be

restored, and be delivered backe unto him, as in all equitie it ought. When this petition was by them delivered unto the Alcalde, having read it, and heard what they could say for themselves, he called to the Register, and said unto him; Mark well, what I shal say unto you, and see you set it down in the very same words, as I shall deliver it unto you. This Petitioner (then said he) as he is a Gentleman, I will by no meanes debarre him of his privilege, God forbid I should denie him his just request; but as he is a poore man, his House growne now to decay, and himselfe (as you see) in want, I hold it very fit, that he pay as others doe.

That I had justice on my side, no man doubted it; it was so publike a thing, that all the world tooke notice of it. But I was poore and needy, and therefore it was fit I should pay for all, and there was no reason (in that respect) that they should doe mee justice. I presently smelt a rat; I saw this was a bad signe, and was shrewdly afraid, that all my labour would be lost. But I could not for all this perswade my selfe, nor could it sincke into my head, that I should be that man, of whom it is said by way of proverbe;

Proverbe

Paçiente, y apaleado:[1] That I must goe away with the wrong, and the blowes too. First be made cuckold, and afterwards knockt for my prating. Well; such was my hard fortune, that being not able to bring in my proofes in so short a time, it so fell out with me, that my Bill of Complaint, was throwne out of the Court, and held as a thing of no validitie or force in Law, and that of the adverse part, tooke place against me; declaring there in Court, that I by this my petition, had framed an infamous Libell against his sonne, by meanes whereof his House, and his honour was much defamed; adding and interserting, *in majorem cautelam*, I know not what a world of words, and what strange and intricate termes. That I did *sponté*, *indubitaté*, etc. That I did it wittingly and willingly, impudently and malitiously, aggravating the matter against

[1] *Cornudo y apaleado*, is proverbially spoken of those, who besides the wrong they have received are themselves condemned as faultie. Covarruvias, verb. *Apaleado*.

me with all the odious termes they could devise, that if I should set them downe one by one, they would take up a whole sheet of paper. Alleaging farther against me, that forasmuch as his sonne, was a quiet, honest, and peaceable Gentleman, and of a good both report, and life, I did deserve I know not what exemplarie punishment, hanging, burning, and drowning, all was too little, that I knew not what to make of it, nor what a Gods name, they would doe with me. Which things, when they were read unto me, I said to my selfe; These men may have healthy bodies, but I am sure they have sicke soules; They may have good purses, but I finde (to my cost) they have bad consciences. I was carelesse, (as one that was confident of a good cause) I never shrunke aside, and as I was afterwards going about my businesse, that my sute might not fall, for want of following, I was taken up in the midst of the street by an Arrest, and presently carried away to prison, without any other information against me, save only the putting up of my petition, and acknowledging it to be mine. CHAPTER II

Guzman clapt in prison

There is no sword, that hath so keene and sharpe an edge, as Calumnie, and false Accusation: and then cuts deepest, when it is in the hand of a tyrannous Judge; whose force and power is such, that it is able to overthrow, and lay levell with the ground, the best grounded Justice that is, though it have never so sure, never so strong a foundation. Which it doth then most, and most easily, when a poore mans cause comes in his way, who suspects (poore harmelesse soule) nothing lesse, then to receive hurt from him, to whom he flyes for helpe. My businesse was plaine, no tricks, no giggs in it, I did only set downe the naked truth, but they made it I know not how, by their quillets and devices, knotty and uneven, though there was not a man, neither within, nor without the Towne, that did not know, all was true, that I had delivered; and all this did plainly appeare to the Judge to be so, and that I had sufficient information.

Little reckning made of the poore

All this is very good; yet for all this (goodman Guzman) give me leave to tell you, that you are a goose-cap. Thou art poore, thou wantest favour, and friends; and therefore

art neither to be heard, nor beleev'd. These are not Cases, that are to be brought before the Tribunals of men; but when thou hast occasion to have thy cause tryde, goe get thee to God, petition him, where the truth shall appeare face to face, without any need of the favour of thy friend, nor an Advocate to plead thy cause, nor a Register to record it, nor a Judge to wrest it. But here they made a sport of Justice, and like Juglers plaid *leggerdemaine* with me. They punisht me, as an unmannerly man of my tongue, a lyar, and a lewd companion. I had spent my moneyes, lost my goods, put in prison, gyves clapt on my legs, treated with evill language, upbraiding mee with many foule and uncivill reproches, unworthy my person, without suffering me to open my mouth in mine owne defence. And when I would have answered their objections, and given them satisfaction by writing, when they saw how the world went with me, my Proctor forsooke me, my Solicitor would not come at me, my Advocate refused to plead for me, so that I only now remained in the power of the publike Notarie. The only comfort that I had, was the generall voice of my wrong, comforting me, that that terrible and fearefull day, would one day come, that the powerfull shall for all his power, be condemned to Hell, and that there, your *potentes*, *potenter punientur*, your mighty men shall be mightily punished; for that they are accursed of God for perverting of Justice. And that which he shall leave behinde him, shall not continue to the third heyre, though he tye his land never so fast, nor make never so strong a conveyance, that it shall not goe from the house: For he cannot (though he would never so faine) tye the inclinations of those that are to succeed him; nor is there any prevention, that he can use, of that force as the least haire of his head, to make any resistance against Gods divine will and pleasure. And it is to be beleeved as an article of thy faith, that their lands and estates must be spent and consumed, for that they are the grindings of the face of the poore, ungodly gaine, the bloud of the innocent, gotten in rage, and maintained with lyes.

But thou wilt say unto me; Trust them with so much more, till that day come, and you shall see whether they will make any bones of either taking the one, or thinking on the other. Where-unto I answer, that how sleight a reckoning soever thou mak'st of it, and that it seemes so long a day to thee, that it will never come, I doe not know what these kinde of men may thinke of it; but I know very well, that it will come, and that quickly, and sooner perhaps then thou art aware. And then it shall seeme so short unto thee, that thou wilt say; I am but newly come forth with my feet from out my bed, and the night is already come, and I must shut up my eyes in darknesse.

But perhaps, thou wilt reply unto me; I pray how cam'st thou by so many good suits of clothes, so much money, and other things of value? Thou didst not get them by the spade, nor the plough, thou didst not digge, nor delve for them. What didst thou make in that street, upon that occasion and accident you wot of, when you serv'd your Master the French Embassador? Is this (quoth I) the rod, you seeke to beat me withall? Thou art caught in thine owne trap; thine owne words doe condemne thee. For thou would'st liken these goods of mine, to those that are gotten by lewd women, whereas thou doest not, but oughtest to understand, that their gaine is lawfull, though the act be unlawfull; and thou art in conscience bound to recompence her, if thou hast had thy desire of her, and didst make use of her for thine owne interest. Besides, the case is not alike. For it is publikely knowne to all the world; that though a corrupt Judge commit never so many mischiefes, never so unjustly put men to death, never so wrongfully rob a man of his goods, and undoe him by his partiall and corrupt dealing, thou shalt have little or no remedie against him, nor canst thou take that from him, which he hath stolne from others. For thou art not his competent Judge, nor of that power as to adjudge against his will that to others, which he hath taken from them. For though it be true, that he is culpable therein towards others; thou shalt be sure to be found culpable towards

him. And howsoever he scape, thou shalt be sure to smart for it. Beleeve me, I tell thee what is true, nay, I tell thee truth it selfe ; truth upon truth.

But what good does this doe me ? My name is Pero Garzia, I am a kinde of Tom-Tell-Troth. A free Aruntius, that must utter my minde plainly, though perhaps I may chance to smart for it. If we should all strive to heare truth, and to make satisfaction for those wrongs we have done, we should see the Hospitals to be quickly fill'd. And now in good sooth, I bethinke my selfe, that it is better to enter into Heaven with one eye, then into Hell with two. And that S. Bartholmew, had rather have his skin pull'd over his eares, then to sleepe (as they say) in a whole skin, and to goe therewith to eternall torment. And that S. Lawrence made the better choise, when he chose rather to be burned here, then there. But (alas) we cannot be all S. Bartholmewes, nor S. Lawrences, so as we be saved, that is sufficient. For mine owne part, I should be glad of the like good fortune. For he shall performe no small peece of worke, that shall worke out his salvation. But to be saved, many things are required. And it shall be impossible for thee to be saved, by keeping those goods in thy hands which thou hast stolne, when as thou art able (if thou wilt) to make restitution. Which thou art loth to do, or dost not at al, that thou maist leave it to thy heires, dis-inheriting those, that are the true owners thereof : And therefore doe not thou seeke to trouble either thy selfe, or us, to excuse these thy robberies and unjust actions, by cunning shifts, to cozen thine owne soule, and by lessening and mincing of them, as though they were matters of nothing, and therefore need not much to trouble thy conscience ; for this that I deliver unto thee is the Catholike faith ; and those other thy tricks and devices, the sleights and subtleties of Satan. Miserable, and most wretched is that man, who for the maintaining of his pride and pompe in the world, and that he may leave either his children, or his nephewes great titles, and rich revenues, hath heaped up riches by indirect meanes, and hath filled his house up

to the top with ill-gotten gaine, contenting himselfe, so as he may leave a name here behinde him upon earth, to leave his soule, to live hereafter for ever in hell. These (I assure you) are no jesting matters, they are not to be made sport withall; for ere long, thou (to thine owne cost) shalt finde that to be too true, which I now tell thee. I call thee thine owne selfe, to be a witnesse of that which I have said; I desire no other. And let me tell thee withall; That thou thy selfe doest not know when thy dayes shall have an end, or whether thou shalt have so much time of life lent thee, as to reade out these good lessons, which I reade unto thee, howsoever foolish they may seeme unto thee. But in that other world, thou wilt be of another minde. Nor doe not thou flatter thy selfe, That thou hast built such a Chappell, and maintainest so many Chaplaines to pray for thy soule, but at mine, and other mens cost, stripping one of his coat, another of his cloake, where-unto thou hadst no right in the world. For Masses (though S. Gregorie himselfe should say them) cannot benefit the damned, there is no redemption when the sentence is once past. CHAPTER II

O good God! When shall I make an end of troubling thee with these, and the like discourses? For I know thou doest not looke for these Sermons from me, nor any other kinde of wholsome doctrine, but expectest only such things, as may serve to entertaine the time, or to bring thee asleepe. I doe not know how to excuse this terrible temptation, that I have to talke in this fashion, save only by telling thee, that it is with me, as it is with drunkards, who no sooner get a penny, but they goe, and spend it at the Taverne.

There is not any shavings,[1] of metall, stone, or wood, that I can meet withall, good or bad, one amongst another, but that I seeke to make some use of it, and studie to serve my

[1] The Spanish word is, *Ripio. Cerca de los canteros, son las piedras menudas que saltan de las pieças que van labrando, ò otro genero de piedras menudas, para rehenchir las paredes, bezimo, meter uno mucho ripio, quando la materia que va tratando, ingiere algunas cosas frivolas, à semejança del que haze paredes, que poniendo en las dos hazes piedras grandes, todo lo en de medio hinche deste cascaxo y riyio.* Covarruvias, verb. *Ripio.*

selfe with it, only that I may the better serve thee. And if that which I have said, seeme unto thee to be well said, it is well that I have said it: but if it seeme ill unto thee, reade it not over any more, nor goe therein a jot farther. For it is all mountaynous matter,[1] rough and craggy, wherein perhaps, thou shalt meet with more paine, then profit, yet doe thou but write the like, and I shall patiently endure whatsoever thou shalt say. But I will conclude this Chapter with telling thee; That when misfortune shall follow a man, no diligence, nor good counsell shall availe him; but shall, where hee thinks to gather wooll, goe away with his fleece shorne.

CHAPTER III

Guzman de Alfarache, discourseth on the injustice, which some Judges doe, blinded by gaine, or by passion

CAME out of prison, as out of a prison. I need not to indeare it more unto you. For, the least I can say of it, is; That it is a true and lively picture of Hell it selfe. I got forth, out of a desire that I had to enjoy my former libertie; and had I not (think you) great cause to desire it? For he, whom they had so unjustly bereaved of it, had good cause to feare greater dangers to ensue. For if so just and so faire a businesse, as this was, did fadge so ill with me at the first, and that my Adversarie had the better of the day of me, when I thought my selfe surest of the victorie; I might very well, and with a great deale of reason perswade my selfe, that in negotiating

[1] *Todo es matas, y por rozar*, id est, *Todo es trabajoso, y difficultoso.* Covarruvias, verb. *Rozar.*

the rest, I should finde much difficultie. Perhaps these men thinke, that God sleepeth. But doe not withall consider, that even those, who had no knowledge of him, both did, and doe feare him.

God exalts the humble, and humbles the proud

Æsope asking Chilo, what God did: How he spent his time: And in what he did busie and imploy himselfe: Told him; In exalting the humble, and in bringing downe the proud. I am a sinfull man, a lewd liver, and a naughty fellow; and sithence they did inflict punishment upon mee, sure I must be in some fault. For it is not to be supposed, that an honourable Judge, one that professes knowledge, and holinesse of life, will be wonne either by favour, by gifts, or by feare, to pervert the course of Justice, or to lay so heavy a burthen on his tender conscience. Especially considering with them-selves; That every man shall be rewarded according to his workes. But let them goe as they are. For the Judges of the earth must be judged; and therefore I will not judge them, nor grinde them any more with this stone. I had now beene taught experience to my cost, and sufficiently beaten with mine owne rod, insomuch that having beene once scalded with hot water, I was now afraid of cold. That from that day forward, I would neither passe by the *Torrone*, which was the place of Justice, nor by the prison, nor scarce come within foure streets where they were. Not so much for my imprisonment, but for the wrong I received therein, contrary to all Law, and reason. I did not see a hackney-man with a wand in his hand, nor a Carrier with a cudgell under his arme, but I presently thought upon the *Vare*,[1] or rod of Justice. Ever after I resolved with my selfe, rather to sit downe with losse, then to goe to tryall of Law; at least to use all the meanes that I could to the contrary, till I saw there was no other remedie, being compelled thereunto rather by force, then necessitie. The reason moving me there-unto, is that counsell which I gave another in the time of my imprisonment.

There was a certaine fellow brought to prison, for that

[1] *Vare*, quasi *Virga*.

he had bought a mandillion, which they said, was stolne, the owner whereof was my very good friend. Who told me, that albeit he knew, that the partie imprisoned, was a person not to be suspected to be consenting to any such base kinde of pilfrings, yet at least, he would make him, to bring forth him, that sold it him; for when that mandillion was stolne, he lost many other things with it, and therefore, though he might have his mandillion restored unto him, he would not rest so contented, but would either lose it, or recover the rest.

No good comes of going to Law

I told him; Sir, you are my friend; The Law is costly, and therefore let me advise you not to enter into it; you are fairly offered, and therefore (if you be wise) take your mandillion, lest you spend your cloake, to recover your coat; you will get nothing in the end by the bargaine; cloake, and coat, and whatsoever else you pretend, will goe all away in fees, so that the Lawyer at last will have all, and your selfe nothing. He would not be ruled, and being (as all self-will'd men are) strongly wedded to his owne opinion, he flatly told me he would goe to a tryall with him, and see what would come of it. For he assured himselfe, that he had a great deale of reason on his side, and that his Proctor, and his Advocate had told him, that he needed not to doubt of his cause, and that it would surely passe on his side. In conclusion, he had spent some fifteene dayes in following the sute against him; in all which time there was no fault to be found against the prisoner; but prov'd himselfe in the end to be an honest man; whereupon, he was presently freed out of prison; my friend perceiving at length, how he had play'd the foole, repented himselfe of the lost time and charges, which he had spent in the sute. So that he was forced to sell his cloake, and was yet never a whit neerer the recoverie of his mandillion; and I doubt not, but the Lawyers stript him to the very shirt, before they had done with him.

The nature of Law-sutes

Let those therefore, that can excuse it, leave off to goe to Law; for your Law-sutes, are like unto your Mats; whereunto, they that make them, goe adding one by one,

rush to rush, and never make an end, till they cut them off, or cleane rid their hands of them. CHAPTER III

Law-sutes, belong properly to great persons, and for great and important causes ; for they have wherewithall to hold plea, and are able to maintaine it. To these, the doores are set wide open, they are usherd in by the officers of the Court, all shew respect unto them ; and if they spend their money, they have money to spend. But as for thee, and me, we must for the recovering of five Royals, spend fifteene, and lose a hundred more in the losse of our time, besides a thousand troubles, and as many enemies, which we shall get thereby. And worse will it goe with us, if we shall chance to goe to Law with one, that is mightier then our selves ; for, that a poore man, should goe to Law with a rich man, is all one, as if hee should offer to wrestle and try his strength with a Lyon, or a Beare. It is true, some such there have beene, that have given them the foyle, and sometimes quite overthrowne them, but this hath seldome happened, and when it doth, it is held so strange a thing, that it is accounted as a wonder, or some rare miracle. Those jestes are unsavory, that turne to a mans hurt.[1] It is no sporting with edge tooles. Doest thou not see, and know, that these kinde of men, will make the Sunne to shine at midnight ? And that they cast out devils in the name of Belzebub ? But as for us, poore soules, *La lechona, nos pare gozques* ; All things goe crosse with us ; especially, in causes criminall, where the street of Justice, is of that great bredth and length, where the Judge may easily winde himselfe, whither, or which way he will, goe on this, or that side of the street, or to keepe the midle way, as hee himselfe shall have most minde to. He can either lengthen, or shorten his arme, and reach out his hand, either to helpe thee, or to hurt thee, according as it shall have a feeling of the businesse.

Law-sutes, for whom they are fittest

Proverbe

Proverbe

And therefore, to him, that will not wilfully cast himselfe away, but desires to have a faire end of his businesse, my advice is ; That he guild the Judges bookes, and present

Good counsell, for those that goe to Law

[1] *No son buenas burlas, las que salen à la cara.*

the publike Notary with a silver pen; So may he quietly lay him-selfe down to sleepe, and take no farther thought for the matter, nor stand in need of Doctor, or Proctor, to plead and solicite his cause. If that course were taken in many Cities of Italy, which is used in diverse other Provinces, yea also among the very Barbarians; with whom, when any one is absolved or condemned, the Judge sets downe in his sentence under his owne hand, the cause that moved him to give such sentence, and upon what grounds hee did it; surely, there would a great deale lesse evill come of it; for, if he could show good reason for that which he did, he need not be asham'd who sees it, and the party thereby, whom it concerneth, shall remaine well satisfied; But in case he shall not have proceeded therein according unto Law, but hath dealt unjustly in sentencing the businesse, some other superiour Judge shall bee appointed to rectifie that wrong, and to amend the others errour. And I knew a Judge my selfe, to whom a Merchant paid a round summe to have him passe a sentence on his side, thinking thereby so to affright the adverse party, that despayring of any hope of good in his sute, he might draw him to what composition it pleased him; Which a particular friend of his understanding, came unto the Judge, and told him; I wonder, Sir, how you could sentence this cause in this manner, being so contrary, as it is, to all Law and reason. To whom, the Judge answered, That it made no great matter. For he was but a sub-alternall Judge, and that there were other Judges, that were his superiours, who might (if they would) reverse that sentence, nor should the other lose any thing at all by that, which he had given against him.

A Judge on an ill condition, and a worse conscience

Such kind of men as these, will not stand much upon committing these and the like errours, nor examine themselves, whether they doe well or ill in it; for with them it is not accounted a fault, though it may truly be call'd *Error de præsenti*, an error in the Indicative Mood, a most foule fault: for in so doing, he doth rather deceive, then judge. But in my poore opinion, he is a foole,

CHAPTER III

that may, and will not shunne Law-sutes; And in good Philosophy, *Minus est damnum, unum sufferre, quam multos*; It is lesse harme, to suffer at one then many mens hands. When thy adversary does thee an injurie, it is one alone, that does it; and by him onely dost thou suffer. But if thou goe about to revenge it, goe which or what way soever thou wilt to worke, thou leap'st (as we say) out of the frying-pan into the fire;[1] and seeking to avoid one inconvenience, thou runst headlong into another; nay into many, one upon the necke of another. Wilt thou see the truth of this? I will show thee the wayes then, wherein thou must walke.

Wise is the man that avoids going to Law.

Injuries to be borne withall

Proverbe

First of all; Thou maist chance to light upon an Alguazil (who is a common Catch-pole, or apprehender of mens persons) a fellow, that hath neither soule, nor shame, who but the other day, was a *Tavernero*,[2] a seller of wine, as his father was before him, though happely now they keepe no shop. And if the father were a thiefe from the beginning, the sonne is now the greater of the two. Who either bought that *Vare*, which he beares, to finde him meate to put in his mouth; or else hath hired it of another, as a man doth a mule; He is such a kind of poore, yet unsatiable creature, that he must either steale, or starve; and doth therefore steale, that he may satisfie his hungry maw. And under pretence that he is the Kings officer, and carries the Kings white wand, or *Vare* in his hand, throating it out, wheresoever he comes, *Alguazil soy, traygo la vara del Rey*; I am an Alguazil, and carry the Kings staffe: he neither feares the King, nor keeps his Lawes, but both against the King, against God, and against all law, will he offer thee a hundred excesses, a hundred indignities, both in deeds and in words, that he may move thy patience so farre, as to make thee ready to run out into resistance of justice (which is the trap, he sets for thee) and bring thy offence to be

Alguazils are to be avoided

What kinde of fellowes they be

[1] *Saltaste de la sarten al fuego.*

[2] Your *Taverneros* in Spaine, are not of that credit as your Vintners with us, being for the most part poore base rogues. Into whose Tavernes, no man of fashion will come, as holding it to be a discredit so to doe. They have but one poore lower roome, and dresse no meate.

criminall; and though thou didst not make any the least stirre, nor hadst any such meaning, yet will he enforce it against thee, and perswade others (all that he can) to beleeve it.

A Tale of an Alguazil of Granada

I knew an Alguazil in Granada, that had two teeth, that were false and counterfaite, and fastned by art to those other that he had in his head. And in a certaine broyle or quarrell that sodainly arose in the street, he comming in among them, he secretly puts his fingers into his mouth, and cunningly pulling them out, causing his gumes wherewithall to bleed; did not shame to say, that comming in to make peace in the Kings name, they were there beaten out. And albeit this businesse did not succeed so well with him, as he could have wisht it, nor tooke its intended effect, for that the truth thereof came to be knowne; yet did he not give it over for want of following, but used all the diligences he could, to possesse the Judges with this falshood. It will lie in his hands, if thou but speake a word, or wag but a finger, to prove that thou didst give him either ill language, or blowes; and then will hee presently deliver thee over to his *Corchetes*,[1] with command to carry thee to prison. Behold now, what an honourable calling this is, what a gentle craft, what honest men forsooth, are these your *Corchetes*, your Sergeants Yeomen, infamous Villains, Traytors, Thieves, Drunkards, shamelesse Rascals, nay impudency it selfe. Insomuch, that a witty Lackay said of himselfe, when they had angred him; He that saies the word Lackay, saies a vittailing house; hee that sayes the word Lackay, says a Taverne; hee that sayes the word Lackay, sayes *Cloacam immunditiæ*, all the uncleannesse that man can imagine. And that woman, that hath taken the paines to bring forth a sonne, that proves a Lackay, there is not that wickednesse in the world, which may not be presumed, to have proceeded from her. So doe I likewise

[1] *Corchete*, quasi *curvachete*, which signifies a claspe, that fastens a garment, and shuts it close. And by allusion, those Ministers of Justice, which hang about a man, and hale him to prison, are called *Corchetes*, because of their taking hold like hookes. They are the same with your Sergeants yeomen.

say ; that he, that saies the word *Corchete*, (that is, Sergeant or Sergeants Yeoman) there is not that vice, that villanie, that wickednesse, which doth not utter it selfe in that one word. For they have neither soule nor conscience ; And are the onely true pictures, and most lively images, of the Ministers of hell. So close doe they cling unto thee, when thou fal'st into their clutches ; and if they doe not drag thee by the collar, haling and tugging thee as if they would pull out thy throat, (which thou must acknowledge for a great and singular courtesie) yet at the least shalt thou be so basely used by them, that the Eagle will carrie away the fearfull Hare with a great deale more clemency and mercy in her sharpe tallons, then these Hell-hounds will thee. They will punch thee, and kicke thee, and elbow-beate thy backe if thou goe not forward as they would have thee, and will revile thee with such base and bitter tearmes, as if thou wert as bad as they : And for no other cause in the world doe they use men thus scurvily and uncivilly, save onely to please their master, who they know likes well enough of it ; as also for that it is a butcherly and beastly custome that they have long kept, and therefore either cannot, or are loath to leave it. Deeming themselves, both then, and at all times, to bee the onely Lords and Masters of the world ; not considering in the meane while, that neither hee, nor they, have any farther power, then to put thee in safe custodie, and that without offering thee any the least wrong or injurie in leading thee thither.

The wicked conditions of these kinde of men

Just after this manner as I have told thee, will they violently (though thou be never so willing to goe quietly along with them) thrust thee this way, and that way, never leaving off to trouble and torment thee, till they have brought thee to prison. Now, will you that I shall tell you, what manner of house this is, what the usage, what you are there to endure, and what kinde of life you must leade there ? you shall meet with it hereafter in its proper place ; Let it suffice for the present, that if it shall one day be thy hap to come thither, (which God forbid) after that they have treated thee ill upon the way in bringing thee thither, and

Prisons, and their keepers, what kind of things they be

peradventure pickt either thy purse, or thy pocket, and rob'd thee of such moneys as thou hadst about thee, they will put thee into the hands of some churlish Jaylor, or some under-keeper of his, (as dogged a rogue as his master) who, as if thou wert his slave, will accommodate thee in that ill favoured filthy manner, as he him-selfe shall thinke fit, nor canst thou hope for better, unlesse thou come off lively, and pay well for it. Be it better or be it worse, thou must take all patiently, and pocket it with silence; for thou art in his house, not in thine owne; and in another bodies power, etc. There, neither bravings, nor threatnings, great words, nor bigge lookes, will stead thee any thing at all; for they are such bug-beares them-selves, that they awe all, but feare none.

The hard condition of prisoners

Then will they bring thee before the Alcayde, or his Deputie, or some such like imperious officer or other, before whom thou must be faine to come with cap in hand, crowching and creeping unto him, studying new inventions of doing reverence and respect unto him; making new kind of legges, and other unaccustomed courtsies and congies unto him; though I count this no such great matter, being rather more troublesome, then hurtfull. For I must truly confesse unto you, that there are some Alcaydes, that carry them-selves as fathers towards those that are brought before them; and for mine owne part, I ever found them so towards me, so that I cannot justly complaine of them. True it is, they will live by their Offices, as other men doe; they have no other meanes to maintaine them, it is the trade, whereunto they must trust. Besides, they come not *gratis* to these places of government. If they will come by them, they must buy them. Wherefore they doe thee a great favour, if they doe thee justice; if by their meanes thou come to recover thine owne, and if they give way to thee, either to escape with life, or to sustaine it, or quietly to order thine owne house, or to live setled in thy owne estate without disturbance, or to defend and make good thy plea. But in fine he is thy Alcayde, he that must judge and censure, either thee, or thy cause; He may, or

Judges, doe a great favour, if they doe thee Justice

may not, wish thee well; He hath the Law in his owne hands; thy liberty, or imprisonment lyes in his power. Well; when thou com'st to follow thy cause, thou must goe adoring thy Proctor, or thy Lawyer; but beare this in minde too I pray, that I now say unto thee, that I say nothing of him; for that hath its When, and its Where, its time, and its place, as your Savalo [1] pyes for the holy weeke; its weeke shall come to, when it shall be best in season.

In briefe, that I may not trouble my selfe twice with one subject, and one and the selfe-same kinde of people; I plainly tell thee, that they will be thy masters, and that thou must suffer them, and beare with them, and not only be a slave unto thy Lawyer, but to thy Solicitour, the Notarie, the Master of the Office, the Clarke of the Pleas, the keeper of the papers, and the boy, that is to goe with thy Plea to thy Lawyer. But in case, thou goe home to his house, or his office thy selfe, and thou finde him retired into his chamber, or some other private with-drawing roome, dispatching of others, and thou stand waiting, looking still when it will come to thy turne to be called in, like those, that standing on the bancke of a River, expect a boat to come over unto them from the other side, thou wilt be so tyred out with knocking thy heeles against a forme, that thou wouldst rather stay the comming forth of some furious Bull, then of him. After all this, when thou hast made a large relation of the whole businesse unto him, and how the case stands, he will tell thee, that hee will burne his bookes, and give over the Law, if thy businesse goe not with thee; This is their common language towards all their Clients, but they neither satisfie their expectation, nor performe their owne promise; for I never saw any of them, when their causes miscarried, either burne their bookes, or leave their practise. And will have one thing or other to excuse themselves; As that the businesse was not

He that hath to doe with lawyers must dance attendance

[1] *Savalo*, a knowne fish, and of a very good relish. And may be cal'd quasi *Sapalo à Sapore*. In Latine they call it *Alopa, trissa, clupea*. It usually dies, when it comes into fresh water. Vide *Rondelecius de Piscibus*, lib. 7, cap. 15.

well followed, that diligence was not used therein, which should have beene, or that it was his Clarkes fault, and none of his, who was out of the way, when his businesse was to be done, being either gone, at that very instant, with his children to Schoole, or to wait on his Mistris to Church, by whose default the opportunity was lost of drawing the Petition. Your Advocate, hath some smacke of the Law, but little of learning. He dictates, but does not write; and the reason is, because they take them too soone from Schoole, that they may with as little losse of time as they can, apply them to these studies, whether that they were sent thither somewhat of the latest by their friends, being kept too long from Schoole at first; or whether out of a covetous desire that they had, to have them fall presently upon the Digests,[1] leaving the Principles indigested. As if good writing should not presuppose good reading, and good reading, and good writing together, beget good Orthography, and bring forth at last a good Latine-tongue, which like linckes that belong to one chaine, ought both to be learned, and joyned together.

But of this enough: Let us now passe on to some other Theame. For here, we doe but eate out our cloakes, and spend our time to little purpose, and lesse profit. Let us come to your ordinary Judge, of whom I have said something unto you already, nor know I well, what I should say more, save that he makes open sale of Justice, hucking with you, to bring you up to their price, and if you refuse to give them, what they require of you, they will plainly tell you, you shall looke for no Justice from them; for it is worth more then they aske, and that such a one, that stands there by thee, payd a great deale more for it, then he now demands of thee.

Your ordinary Judge, what manner of fellow he is

But say thou shouldst appeale, and come to some superior Judge, which seldome happeneth, in regard the fish dies here first, or is at least so starv'd in this shallow brooke,

Your superior Judge, what manner of man he is

[1] The Bookes of the Civill Law, which being in many huge Volumes, and scattered peeces, Justinian the Emperor caused to be digested into a lesser number, and better forme, whence they were called Digests.

before it can recover that sea, that it comes thither without any Spawne, poore, and unprofitable. Thy money is all gone, thou art needy, and not able to wage Law, for want of meanes ; There thou shalt not find those private interests, and particular profits which they make to themselves ; but thou shalt meet perhaps with passions, which sometimes prove as bad. And as their purses, have not paid for thy breeding, so what care they whether thou be whipt or hang'd. Six yeeres, more or lesse, for which terme thou art condemned to the Galleyes, what is it to them ? It hurts not them ; They are not sensible of it ; they feele not that, which thou feelest ; nor suffer that, which thou sufferest. These, I tell thee, are the Gods upon earth, they goe to their goodly houses, where they are well attended ; they passe through the streets, where they are honoured, and adored, and feared of the people. What care then canst thou thinke, or conceive with thy selfe, that they should take of such a poore soule as thou art ? It is in their hands, to save thee, or condemne thee ; and so they will deale with thee, as their owne passions shall incline them to thy good, or hurt ; or as some great and powerfull friends shall perswade with them.

A horrible sentence of a Judge of Sevill

I knew a certaine Judge in Sevill, who condemned a fellow *in pœna pecuniaria*, to pay such a summe of money by way of mulct for his offence that he had committed. Out of which he awarded two hundred ducats to be paid into the Chamber of Sevill by way of fine : with this command or proviso in the sentence ; That not being able to pay in the said summe, he should be sent to serve in the Galleyes for ten yeeres, and to rowe at the Oare like a slave, of free cost, without receiving one penny of pay. And when the terme of those his ten yeeres were expired, he should be brought backe againe to prison to the said Citie of Sevill, and from thence to the market-place, where he was to be hanged on the common gallowes.

Had it beene my case, before I would have given such a foolish sentence, I should rather have ordered it thus ; That he should have beene hang'd first, and afterwards sent unto

the Galleys; sure, the cart, in this case, should have gone before the horse. Jumping for all the world with that which was said to an ignorant and unskilfull painter, who talking one day in company, that ere long he would white his house, and afterwards paint it; nay, said one of the standers-by, you shall doe much better, if you paint it first, and white it afterwards.

The answer of a country Clowne, to an ignorant Painter

There are some Judges, whose tongues, so out-runne their discretion, that whatsoever comes first to mouth, it must out, nay, and must stand for good, though his owne judgement upon its better consideration, chide his tongue for being too forward. And if he that is Assessor with him, and is joyned as his fellow-Judge in Commission with him, shall take upon him to moderate the matter, and seeme but the least way to crosse what he hath done, or shall but abate the least tittle of what he hath decreed, or in any manner at all to mitigate the rigour of his sentence, it is as if you should take a thing from the Altar; so sacred, doe these unhallowed Judges, hold their owne actions; Taking it as an indignitie, not to be endured. Looke well into the businesse then, and consider with thy selfe, how much the lesser evill it is of the two, that he that hath offended thee, should goe away with this his insolencie, and thou thereby remaine free from some great inconvenience. Which thou oughtest to permit, not only (as hath beene said before) that thou maist not be subject to so many; but also, that thou maist not hurt thy selfe, by putting thy house out of order, and (by consequence) thy honour and person in perill, as also that of thy wife, thy children, and thy whole estate.

It is a good thing in any man, to neglect an injurie

But perhaps thou wilt say unto me: O, it is not fit, that this Villaine, that hath thus wronged me, should carry it away so, and laugh at me when he has done. I confesse it is not fit, nor is there any reason, why it should be so; yet, if thou must needs be laught at, it were better but one should laugh at thee, then many. For if thou wilt but hold thy peace, and seeme not to be moved at it, but to let it passe, and take no notice thereof, only he can laugh at thee

in his sleeve that hath done thee this wrong; but if thou seeke to right thy selfe by Law, and be afterwards overthrowne, thousands will laugh at thee, that thou shouldst be such a foole, to cast away thy money so wilfully amongst the Lawyers, having bought nothing therewith but meere smoake, and a little of their unprofitable breath; and that Lawyer, will scoffe and deride thee most, that hath put thee in most hope, because by that meanes he hath most pickt thy purse.

Well, you will say, it may be so, I care not for all this; Let the worst come, that can come, there are many Churches to flie unto for shelter, and the world is wide enough for us all. Tell me (thou ignorant man) thinkest thou to excuse one error with another? Suppose the best that can befall thee in this case, it is no more but *temporis dilatio*, a little gaining of time. Neither there (no not in the Church) wilt thou be able to endure either the Priest, or his Curate, or that worshipfull master his Sexton. And what thinkst thou, that thou must suffer, that they may beare with thee, and give thee leave to stay amongst them? Thinkst thou, there is no more in it then so, to say, I will goe to some Church, or other, and there take Sanctuary? Thou wilt meet with more troubles there, then thou art aware of. This incommodate accommodating of thy selfe, will cost thee money, nor canst thou continue there for ever. Thinkest thou it so small an inconvenience, to leave thine owne home, and so to goe seeke thy fortune in forraine Countries? If haply thou be a Spaniard, (as I my selfe am) wheresoever thou shalt come, thou art sure to be an unwelcome guest, thou shalt be ill received amongst them, how faire a show soever they make thee; for we have this advantage of all other nations in the world, that we are more abhorred in all places, and of all persons, then any other people under the Sunne; but whose fault it is, I know not. Thou goest wandring through desarts, from Inne to Inne, from a private lodging, to a common vittayling house. Thinkst thou, that they are all honest people, that have for their Patron the good King, Don Alonso? Inne-keepers, and Vittaylers,

The Spaniards hated in all places, and of all persons

thou knowest not (poore silly soule) what kinde of vermine they are, and therefore thou set'st so light by them, and seek'st not to flie from them.

The inconveniences that befall Travellers

Lastly, thou shalt endure many inconveniences in these thy travels abroad; suffering heats and colds, winde and raine, bad weather, and bad wayes, and with it the distastfull company of divers distinct Nations; one while it raines, another while it snowes, the rivers rise, and thou canst not passe, night is neere, and thy Inne farre off, it growes dark as pitch, and the clouds furiously discharge upon thee their lightning and thunder; and for that thou art of an impatient spirit, thou hadst rather dye a thousand deaths, then endure it.

Good counsell for those that will live at quiet

Goe to then; goe thy wayes at last; leave off these thy idle thoughts of going to Law; sit downe rather with losse, and live in peace. For it is better that the world should say of thee, that thou art a patient wise man, then a revengefull foole. What have they either done, or said unto thee, that thou keep'st such a coyle, and that no man was ever so wrong'd, as thou art? If that be true, which they have spoken of thee, it is thou that hast given them cause so to doe; and if they lye, a lye is a lye, and he that lyes, let him goe like a lyar as he is. And therefore he did not thee so much wrong as himselfe, nor hast thou any reason to be revenged on another by indangering thy selfe. Neglect him, and let him goe for a knave, as he is; for thou canst not take a fuller revenge of him, nor punish him more, then to let him passe for an idle foole, and follow thine owne businesse. I have spoken enough of this, thinke upon it, it may make much for thy good, if thou wilt well weigh, what I have said unto thee. But I must returne againe into my old way, and now I am entring into it.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER IV

Guzman de Alfarache, being freed out of prison, falls to gaming, gets money; Whereupon, he resolves with himselfe to goe to Millayne

CAME out of prison, and got me to my lodging, being as sad and melancholy, as I was poore and miserable: saying to Sayavedra; What doest thou thinke of the good market, that we have made in this fayre? We may make merry with the gaines we have got, this will serve for once to keepe us out of beggerie, we need no money now, let us spend, and be lively. Consider now I pray with your selfe, upon what a sure ground they goe, who seeke to recover their owne by Law. He told me, Sir, I see how things are carryed, for I have beene an eye-witnesse of all that hath past; but what remedy is there to be had, against the passions and private interests of Judges, and the force and power of the potent? But that which toucheth me neerest, and grieves me most, is; That you will finde fault with me, and be offended with me, that I have beene the instrument of this your wrong, and more particularly at this present by that counsell and advice, which I gave you, to recover your goods. Which though it were done all for the best, hath unfortunately fallen out to the worst. *Sed homo proponit, et Deus disponit.* Man proposeth one thing, and God disposeth another. Who would ever have dream't, that things would have fallen out as they doe? What should one say unto it? There is now no helpe for it. For as a man cannot avoyde the stone, which a foole throwes by chance over a house, and kills him therewith: So, much lesse was it to be imagined, or once to be suspected by us, that such a businesse as this, so faire, and so full of truth, should

Guzman comes heavy and melancholy out of prison

prove so disproportionable, and so quite opposite to our understanding.

Whilest we were thus talking of this matter, there com's me a couple of guests that were strangers into the Inne, challenged by a young man of that Citie, to play at Cards. And in a little square roome, that divided their chamber from mine, they had set up a table, and to play they goe. Now I walking up and downe that way, in my passing to and fro, seeing what past amongst them, I was desirous (for to entertaine the time, and to drive away melancholy) to draw neerer unto them, and to looke upon them. I did so, and pulling a stoole unto me, taking that which came first to hand, I sate me downe, viewing one of their hands for the space of some two houres, or more, in all which time there was little or nothing lost on either part. The money went to and fro; losing one while, and getting another; Fortune had show'd her selfe so equall, that shee had made them in a manner all savers; what was wonne, was not worth the speaking of, there being no difference to be discerned in that they had drawne before they began. Every man entertained himselfe with his owne money which he drew at first, expecting a lucky pull, whilest I in the meane while had a shrewder pull in mine owne bosome. They had not that griping them-selves, yet did they cause it in me, without any other why, or wherefore, save only by my looking on his cards, by whom I sate, when either he lost through want of good carding, or well-playing of his game.

The nature and condition of those that stand by, looking upon Gamesters

O what a strange nature are we made of, which I speake not only of my selfe, but of all in generall; for not any one of these men being knowne unto me, nor having ever seene them before in my life, (for this was the first flight I had made of comming abroad since the time of my imprisonment) having never conversed with them heretofore, being all alike strangers unto me, yet me thought I was much joyed, and was glad with all my heart, when he did winne, my affection inclining to have fortune show her selfe more favourable unto him, then the rest; and on the

contrary was sorry, when I saw he lost. See what a kinde of sinne this was in mee; how unprofitable to my selfe? how foolish and to no purpose, to desire that the other two might lose, that hee might rise the winner, and goe away with their money, as if my selfe had beene interessed therein, or as if they had got it from me, or were bound to let me have it.

O, what an indiscretion, what an ignorance is it, to lay other mens burthens on our owne shoulders; which are neither of any moment in themselves, nor of any benefit unto us! One stands peeping out at his window, and another with his head halfe out at his doore, watching only to see, who went out of his neighbours house before day, who came in at midnight, what they brought in, and what they carryed out, led only thereunto out of an idle and needlesse curiositie; by reason whereof they runne into a thousand suspitions, a thousand jealousies of such things, which never were, nor could be, much lesse to be gathered from them, or any way in the world to be imagined by them. Brother, or Sister, who ere thou be, get thee gone, leave off thy prying into others actions, God helpe us all; thou doest not know, whether such a one sinneth, or not sinneth; whether he doth this, or that other thing, or doth it not: and it may be, that he doth not sinne, but I am sure that thou doest sinne in doing as thou doest. Tell me, what doth his death, or his life, his going in, or his comming out, concerne thee? What good doest thou get by it, or what reward doe they give thee, for that thy nights watching, so ill bestowed on thy selfe, and others? What honour, shalt thou reape by his dishonour? What contentment canst thou take therein? Say, by this diligence of thine, thou maist haply have occasion to doe him some friendly office, and bestead him in time of need. It may be so. But this is so contrary a thing, to men of such base condition, that I assure my selfe, nay I dare to seale it with an oath, that thou wouldst not doe it.

Needlesse curiositie

Men ought not to prie into other mens actions

If thy neighbour, fearing some thieves would come that night to rob him, should speake unto thee to take the

paines to sit up and watch his house for him, and should very earnestly entreat thee so to do, tell me, and lye not, what wouldst thou say unto him? what answere wouldst thou make him? Certainly, thou wouldst tell him, That thou hast enough to doe, to looke unto thine owne, that every man is bound to respect himselfe first; and that thou wilt not stand freezing in the cold, nor indanger thine owne health for to benefit another. How comes it then to passe, that to doe thy neighbour a good turne, and to exercise thy charity towards him, thou wilt not watch a quarter of an houre with him, and yet, that thou maist bring his faults to light, and lay open his spots to the Sunne, thou wilt thus play the foole to sit up a whole night to see if thou canst light upon any oblique action, that thou maist lay in his dish hereafter? Doest thou not perceive by this time, how ill this doth become thee? Seest thou not, that I say the truth? Thou canst not (if thou wilt but examine thy selfe) but know, that it were better for thee, and would stand a great deale more with thine owne health, to get thee to bed betimes, and to looke how things goe at home in thine owne house, and to let those of thy neighbour alone. Wilt thou, to doe him a despight, charge thine owne soule with those sinnes, of which thy neighbour is free, whence his comes to be saved, and thine to be damned? Such a one plaies to winne, and to increase his stocke, and it grieves me forsooth, that such a one should win, or such a one lose. Just so it goes, and no otherwise. If thou take pleasure in looking on those that game, looke on (if thou canst) without passion. But thou canst not doe it; for thou art, as I am; and thou wilt doe, as I doe. Of the two, I should hold it the lesser evill, that thou shouldst play they selfe, then looke upon anothers game with such like passion; For he that plaies, it is well enough knowne, that he desires to winne; and this is a battaile, that is fought betweene two wits, or foure. Thou, being confident of thy good fortune, doest adventure thy money, at least thou desirest, that they may not carry it away from thee, thou seek'st to defend thy selfe as well as thou canst, and

Profitable counsell for curious observers of other mens faults

Men that looke upon Gamesters must be free from passion

thou settest thy selfe downe to play with that credence and beleefe, that thou maist as well lose, as win, and as well get theirs, as they get thine ; In this thou seem'st to have some reason, and deservest to be excused. But that onely by looking on, a man of reason, and understanding, whom the businesse nothing concernes, should bee so blinded with passion, as to be affected, or dis-affected in that violent fashion, tell mee if I doe amisse, in styling him to be a man deprived of true judgement, and whether I may not lawfully condemne him for it. But to returne to our purpose ; Continuing their play, within a little while after, the Sea began to swell, the waves grew high, and the money began to swimme from one side of the boord to the other, their bloods waxed hot, and their choller began to kindle, they were now at their close fights, watching but advantage to boord, or sinck each other ; they grapled hard for it on all sides, and the Cards likewise they plaid their parts, and laid about them for life, bestirring them-selves lustily, and gave one of them such a blow on the head with his club, that hee was strucken over boord, and he and all his money suncke, having lost in that fight above a hundred Crownes. And this man, that had this great blow given him, was he in whose hand I lookt. Of whose losse I was as sensible, as if the case had beene mine owne ; thinking with myselfe, that I had brought him this ill luck, and that I was the instrument of this his bad fortune. Which did grieve me so much the more, for that I understood, that he was not worth in all the world so much more, as he had then lost.

The effects of game, and gamesters

Gaming ought to be used for two manner of ends ; either for meere gaine, or to entertaine the time. If for gaine, I say nothing unto it, save that those, who bend them-selves that way, are like unto Pyrats, that put them-selves forth to sea to purchase some prize. *Capiat qui capere potest* ; catch, he that can catch ; Let every one arme his own ship, as well as he can, and have an eie to the bullets that flie about his eares, and those other warlike weapons which they use in such kinde of fights. Who goe scouring the Seas a whole yeare, in hope to meet with one lucky day.

Gaming, is used for two causes

THE SECOND BOOKE

They that play for intertainment, should bee onely such, whom the Cards them-selves doe marke and point out unto us; In them, shall we picke out some learning; for if we shall but consider the Kings, the Queenes, and the Knaves,[1] that are there pictured and painted forth unto us, from the uppermost of all the other, to the lowest, which is the Ace, you shall not finde any portraitures or shapes as in the former; giving us thereby to understand, that none should play there-at but Kings, Queenes, and Knaves. I can assure you that in all the whole packe of Cardes, you meete not with any Merchants, Trades-men, Lawyers, nor Divines, for they are not befitting their professions. The very Aces, speake as much unto us; for from the Knave, or rather Sota, which is the Souldier, downe to the Ace, which is the least and last Card, thou shalt see nothing else but spots, admonishing us thereby, that all (except the aforesaid) are but Asses, that shall offer to play at Cards. And such another Asse was this my adoptive sonne, in losing that, which perhaps was none of his owne, nor had wherewith to pay, at least could hardly spare it.

But I will not straine this string so hard, that I should quite debarre men of these noble entertainments; for I will not call him a gamester, who plaies but now and then for his recreation, once, or twice, halfe a dozen, or halfe a score times in a yeare, for this cannot hurt him much; especially if he doe not play out of a greedy desire of gaine, but onely for sport and pastime. Howbeit I hold it a thing impossible, that a man should set himselfe to play, without a desire to winne, though it should be but for a pinne, and that he play, with his wife, or his sonne. For although a man doe not stake money (and so cannot be said to play for covetousnesse of the coyne) yet the opinion of a mans understanding and judgement, lies then at stake, and there is no man so meane spirited, and of that weak-

All gamesters desire to win

[1] The Court-cards are called in Spaine, *Rey*, *Cavallo*, *y Sota*. The first is the King, as with us; The second signifies a Knight, which is all one with our Queene; And the third a Soldier, which is the same with our Knave.

nesse of nature, that would willingly be beaten by another, if he could otherwise chuse. CHAPTER IV

This my man, I told you of, was one of the guests to the house, where I lay, the winnings were divided betweene his companion and the Citizen ; the quarrell ceased for that time, and a fresh challenge was made against after supper. And so they brake off, the winners going each their way, as their severall occasions lay ; and the loser, to looke out more money. I doubt not but hee us'd all the diligence he could to get more (for gamesters seldome want money to game, though scarce ever have any to pay their debts :) but because it is a massie kinde of mettall, and waighes very heavy, it sinkes downe still to the bottome, and is long and hard a getting up againe ; hee could not (it should seeme) get any money, yet he came thither, though without it ; more offended with those that would not lend it him, then with those who had got it from him. He went walking and raging up and downe the roome, puffing and blowing like a Bull ; all the whole chamber was too little for him. One while he walkes athwart it, another, stalkes along from one end to the other, then againe flings me from one corner to the other corner, huffing and chafing, nothing could content him, all was vexation of spirit, he railes upon the Citie, and upon that traytor, that was the cause of his comming thither, that that was no Country for honest men to dwell in, but for thieves and cut-throats, being that he had in that towne, a hundred knowne friends, and all of them rich and well moneyd men, yet could he not borrow one Royall of them all, and began to sweare that he would doe this, and that, and I know not what, if it should be his hap to meet with any of them in his owne Countrie. I gave him the hearing, and held my peace. And when he went into his chamber, I might heare him sit downe on his bed-side, and might from mine, heare likewise the blowes which he gave with his fist upon the table that stood by him.

Money, hard to be got

Losers grow impatient

I cal'd Sayavedra aside, and told him ; Occasion is now offered unto me, either to get out of my troubles, or to get

THE SECOND BOOKE

me to an Hospitall. And seeing that small store of money which is remaining unto me, is not so much, as to sustaine us any long time, let us sup well, or goe to bed with a jarre of water, all's one, as good to day, as to morrow, for hold out much longer wee cannot. What thinkst thou of this? tell me thy opinion, whether I shall play the foole, or the wise man in doing that which I intend? Shall it not bee well done, that after supper, when the same company shall meet againe together, wanting a third to maintaine the combat, I should come forth as a challenger into the lists, adventuring to runne my Lance amongst the rest, putting my selfe upon fortune either to lose, or winne the honour of the day, by hazarding those few Crownes that I have? Sayavedra made answer unto me, That I should have him ever ready at hand upon all occasions, being that he had now set up his rest to doe me service, and that hee would carefully doe whatsoever I would have him, spake I in earnest, or in jest, and were it good, or ill that I should undergoe, he would alwaies sticke close unto me, and be still at mine elbow, to performe that which I should be pleas'd to command him. Yet notwithstanding, that upon this occasion, I might not come off with dishonor (for wee were then driven very low, and almost brought to beggers bush) it were good to secure the businesse. Wherefore he would marshall things in that manner, that both safely, and subtlely, he would range all over the field, and evermore give me advice of my adversaries forces, and how and where their strength lay, and when I was to charge them home, as likewise to make my retreat; so that he keeping a true account of their Cards, and the numbers wherewith they were to set upon me, it was not possible that I should lose. When hee had said thus much unto me, a man might have pul'd my skin over mine eares, and I should never have felt it, for I was for very joy, ready to leape out of it my selfe; for my ability at play, and the skill and cunning that I had in handling the Cards, being holpen by his advice, there was no doubt to be made, but that I might easily convert three parts of their money to mine

Guzman means to venture all his money at play, and to make him selfe either a man, or a mouse

Sayavedra offers to discover to Guzman the others games

owne use. Saying secretly to my selfe; *No ay mal, que no venga por bien*: There is no ill, which doth not turne to our good. And it may bee that by this meanes, I might recover my selfe of those losses, which I had so lately received. I did long my selfe to have told him as much, but I did desire this base action, should proceed rather out of his mouth, then mine. For I was willing in this to keepe that decorum which beseemeth a Master with his servant. For otherwise, if this tricke should have beene plaid out of my hand, Sayavedra would happely have said to himselfe; See, what a fine master I serve! I have rid my selfe of a thiefe, and have lighted upon a cheater. What a tree have I taken, whereunto to leane? Had it not beene better for me to have gone and leaned against a wall? Yes certainly, for that would not have thus deceiv'd me. Stay, stay, (Sayavedra) for all you were my friend, it was no part of my meaning, to open my minde unto you in that straine, doe you enter first, and you will, upon the point of my sword, and if you have a mind to it, come on a Gods name when you please; for I promise you, you shall first confesse your selfe to me, before you have any confession from mee; I will have a pawne first from you, before you have any pledge from me. But when we have once unmasked our selves, and cast off all disguises on either side, let us come off freely, deale plainly one with another, I will speake what I thinke, and thou shalt speake what thou thinkst; Let us jumpe as well in bredth, as in length, and then there will be little ods and difference betweene us in the reckoning. There he and I were disputing a great while with our selves, which signes would be best, whereby we might come to know both the others hands; And at last it was resolv'd on, that the best manner of doing it, would bee by the buttons of his jerking, or the joynts of the fingers, according to the arte of the Gammuth, when we learne first to sing. And having made triall thereof some three or foure bouts, we grew so ready and so perfect therein, that wee now understood one another better by these our tokens, then our tongues.

CHAPTER IV

Proverbe

Masters must keepe a decorum with their servants

Guzmans and Sayavedras drift

THE SECOND BOOKE

Now were the challengers entred the lists, whilst I was walking up and down there in the roome with my *Rosario* in my hand, like a Hermite, my servant being in the meane while in my lodging. They began to talke of falling afresh to play; whereupon, the third man told them what had passed, and that hee could not meet with those his friends that should have furnisht him with money, but if they would trust him upon his word, till the next day morning, see whatsoever he should lose unto them upon the ticket, he would truly pay them. The Citizen sayd, that he should be well content therewith for his part, but told him withall, there was no heart in it, and that it was a kind of dull and tedious sport, and that he had never any good lucke, but did alwaies lose, when he plaid upon the Ticket. But the other would by no meanes give way thereunto. Whereupon their gaming was at the best, the company was upon breaking off, and every one going his way; but when I saw this good conversation was upon dissolving, leaving my Beades to keepe their owne reckoning, I stept forth, and said unto them; Since this Gentleman doth not play, so as you will not play too great play, but onely for entertainment, and no more, but to passe away some part of the night, and that so holy a worke may not bee left off for want of a third, if it please you, I will put my selfe upon the Cards, and trie for a while how well they will deale with me. The other two, were very glad of this, the motion pleas'd them passing well; for they took me to be some young Thrush, that was new crept out of the shell, and had not my bill growne out, and was not able to pecke at any thing. Making reckning, that all was their owne, if they got me in to play, and that my money was as sure theirs, as if they had had it already in their purse. And for that they thought, if I should chance to lose my money, I would also venture my chaine (which I of purpose discovered unto them by unbuttoning my jerkin) and if I were once bitten, and began to bleed, being a young man, as I was, I would not have the patience to give over, but throw the pot-hookes after the pot, and

the helve after the hatchet, and lose all, that I was able to make.

The cheating tricks that are us'd in gaming

Well, we were now set downe, and ready to goe to the businesse, whereupon I called for Sayavedra, and said unto him; Goe fetch me some money, if you have any silver left, bring it me quickly. He presently drew out a hundred royals, which I had given him before, that he might have them in readinesse, when I called for them. He abiding a while in my chamber, till our play grew a little warme, and then calling him to snuffe the candles, I said unto him, seeming as if I had beene angry with him; Are we to be used thus by thee? Have you so much businesse to doe in the chamber, or are you so drowsie-headed, that you cannot stay here in the roome, if we should at any time have occasion to use you? He said never a word, but stood still, and held his peace, insomuch that no man in the world would have once suspected any harme from him, for he never offered so much as to cast but an eye upon me, nor did he at any time remove his hand from his bosome, by which meanes he gave me true knowledge how their games went. And howbeit, we understood one another well enough, I would sometimes of purpose seeme not to understand him, nor would I make use of his warie advice, but when I had wonne two or three hands, I tooke pleasure now and then to lose a little. I did suffer them now and then to draw my money, but neither much, nor often, lest when they had me on the lift, they might have left off: I was content they should touch it, but not enter upon it; and afterwards I would charge them home, that I might, having once netled them, egg them on the more. I did skirmish with them in that cunning manner, that I made them still come on more and more eager upon my money. But when I began to suspect, that they would give over the fight, and sound a retreat, and that they were to leave the field, and be gone, I then thought fit to pursue them to some purpose, and to follow the chase a little more hotly, till I saw them safe in the net, and had them in my hands, to doe what I would with them, and then did I set roundly upon them and

their money, bringing it all under my subjection in a very short space, few blowes being strucken in the battaile. I had got of those two, all that they had gained of the other before. Whereof they were so ashamed, and so stung withall, that they swore they would have another bout with me the next day, challenging me againe at the same game. I willingly accepted of it. They came, we playde, and I was willing to let them winne some thirty Crownes of me, which they carried away with them, giving over play for that time; for, this losse, was but a bayte that I laid for them, knowing that this would flesh them, and put them in heart a-new, and make them come on bravely at our next meeting. Yet one of them was willing to continue longer, and said; Let us play greater game, for that the night growes late. Nay (quoth I) by the same reason, it were better that we goe now to bed, and meet againe to morrow, which if you like of it, and be at leysure, we may come together somewhat sooner, and taking the day before us, we may play at pleasure, and as long as we list. They were wondrous glad to heare me say so, and that they had yet lost somewhat unto mee, hoping in the end that they should get more by me.

The next day they came, with their purses well arm'd with double pistolets, well appointed for warre, they threw downe whole handfuls of them upon the boord, some being peeces of two, some of foure, and some of ten, seeming to make no more reckning of them, then if they had beene so many peeces of copper coyne. Saying, as they flung them downe; *Coraggio*, *coraggio* (Señor Soldado) see you what here is, to be spent in your service? I told them; Although I am not so rich, as to be able to doe you service with so large a supply of money, yet at least my good will shall not be wanting to attend upon you, as your servant. I was about to tell them, that I did not doubt ere long to see this faire companie of these glittering men at armes to come and march under my colours. We began to play, and I went wearying of them out by little and little, giving them line enough to runne them-selves out of breath, and

when I saw, that I had now brought them even with me, and that I might strike them both dead at once, I let flie a whole volley of shot at them, and in a few hands, I saw in these hands of mine about five hundred Crownes, which yeelded themselves up to my mercy, whom (out of the pittifulnesse of my nature) I tooke into my protection. The maine battaile being thus overthrowne, my two Captaines were faine to forsake the field, after these their bravado's, and to try if they could levie fresh men, and raise new forces to encounter me againe the next day, promising to bid me battaile, if I durst abide it. I was not a little glad to heare them say so, as well for that I had let them blood both alike; as also, for that my heart was now pretty well at quiet; holding my selfe very well pleas'd with that which I had gotten of them, being as well contented, as if I had wonne all that they had beene worth. For I had now enough to serve my turne, and what should I desire more? But I cannot expresse unto you how glad I was, that they should give over first; for it was a rule, which I ever observed in my play, that I would not willingly give any the least occasion of difference; and therefore did evermore leave it to the losers owne good liking, to play, or not to play; referring it to his choice, as he himselfe had most minde to. They went away in a good houre; and I fearing, that this Townes-man, might put a Towne-tricke upon me, and that the stranger, being in need, and in want, might doe me some wrong (for I was lately, to my great cost, too well acquainted what good justice a man was to looke for in that Citie) I told Sayavedra, when we were alone by our selves, that without any word speaking, or telling any body, whither we intended to goe, we would take horse betimes in the morning, and poste with all speed to Millayne. And so we did, leaving them full of sorrow, but not so much as one crosse of silver, wherewith to blesse themselves.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER V

Guzman de Alfarache, travayling towards Millayne, Sayavedra upon the way, recounts his owne life unto him

WE rode towards Millayne, with as great haste, as feare. For Bologna standing so high as it does, it is to be discerned a great way of, the very shadow whereof, did make my heart to tremble, fearing the danger, whereinto it had lately put me. For I was ever of the minde, That there is no fault, but hath his punishment; no ill, but hath his chastisement. Now did I wish, that horses had beene borne with wings, that mine might have flowne away with me. But miserable wretch that I am, what good would that have done me? it had beene all one to me; for then others, would likewise have had the like horses, to have over-taken me. What way so ever I tooke, I found it all full of thornes, bushes, and brambles, which did scratch, and pricke my guilty conscience; which way soever I went, I was fearefull of danger; and the more slownesse, the more feare. And he never thinks he flyes fast enough, that seekes to flie from a mischiefe. I, accompanied with my thoughts, and Sayavedra with his, went jogging on along, but both as mute as fishes; though his were farre different from mine. For my care only was, to see my selfe in some place of safetie; and Sayavedra was thinking with himselfe, how much of this money would fall to his share.

The condition of feare, and fearefull men

We rode on a great while in this manner; at last, that I might bid feare farewell, which thus troubled me, I sought to shake it off, and if I could, quite to forget it, by entertayning some one thing or other, to turne the streame another way; it seeming unto me, to be no lesse foolish,

for a man, to be too silent upon the way, then to babble and prate too much, in the street. And therefore, that I might be the first to breake the yce, I call'd to Sayavedra, and said unto him; Come, let us talke of some thing or other, to passe away the time; or doe thou tell me some storie upon the way, to give me content; it will make our journey the shorter. He then, finding his bowle flung in amongst the rest, and that he was not shut out for a bungler, seeing there was occasion now offered unto him, to speake that, which he longed to utter, he began to breake his minde, and said thus unto me. CHAPTER V

I wish Sir, that I could tell you a tale, how glad I was, and what a deale of good it did doe me, to taste of the sweetnesse of your gaines. But I am so confident of the noblenesse of your disposition, that this my comming to serve you (seeing you have beene pleased to entertaine me for your servant) shall not be only for satisfaction of that debt, wherein I stand bound unto you, but also make much for my profit. I was glad to see this arrow flie forth of his quiver, and that he had touch't mee upon that string; whereupon, I thus replyed unto him.

Friend Sayavedra; What is past, is past; and there is no more to be said of it; for there is no man, so much man, and master of himselfe, which either here, or there; this place, or that; this, or that time, doth not slip in one kinde or other. We live all in the flesh; and all flesh is weake. Others, have this weaknesse, some other wayes: Every one committeth his errour, one in one sort; another, in another. As thou hast in this thing, wherein my selfe am likewise faulty. God helpe me in my judgement; for I know not what will become of me. For I finde, I have as much cause, as he that hath most, if not more, boldly to undergoe any desperate attempt whatsoever. And let him be who, or what he will, (had he found himselfe in that great want and miserie, as we were) he would have done the like, as we have done: which was no better then plaine theft, to cozen these poore men, of that little which they had, which perhaps was all, that they had wherewithall to

All men, spotted with one Vice, or other

live : Nor would I at that time, (being in that poore case as I was) have spared any purse whatsoever, had it had a thousand Crownes in it, though it had beene of an Orphane, that had neither father, nor mother, to helpe it.

Guzmans craftie dealing

And seeing, that we are fallen into this errour, and for that I perceive thou hast understanding and judgement to apprehend any thing, and to go through with it, I perswade my selfe, thou doest likewise comprehend, that I am no Trader in the Indyes, nor any of your rich *Fucaro's*, but a poore young man, (as thou art) rob'd of his substance, and deprived of his necessaries, by such meanes, as are best knowne to thy selfe ; nor have I any greater or better profession to live by, then that which thou hast seene in me. Now, because I would not doe any thing, that might savour of basenesse, or unlike my selfe, and to beare the same port I did heretofore, I must endevour to maintaine my selfe (at least) in some reasonable fashion, as every honest man ought to doe, not falling a jot from that state and condition of life, wherein my parents left me, and whereunto my fortune had rays'd me. For albeit I serv'd that Lord of mine, the French Embassador, and liv'd in house with him, it was out of that love, which he bore unto me from a childe, and upon the earnest intreaty, that he made unto my friends, my father, and he, being of ancient acquaintance, and having liv'd and conversed long together in Paris. And so he begg'd me of him, saying ; he should take no farther care for me, and that he would one day make me a man.

But since that things have so fallen out with me as they have, (as in part you your selfe know) and that I have left his house, and am now come from him, I am not minded to returne thither any more, till I have seeme somewhat of the world, and that I may come home rich and in plenty, and be able to live in ease and pleasure, all the rest of my life.

Proverbe

Every place affords good bread ; [1] and that of Rome, agrees not with my stomacke, for it doth not digest very well with me, but turnes to rawnesse and crudities. And it is no

[1] *Donde quiera, se amasa buen pan.*

marvayle, that all men should seeke out some meanes or other to live; especially, seeing they, that have lesser abilities, endevour the like. CHAPTER V

Every man would fain live

Turne thine eye aside, and looke upon as many men, as now live in the world; view, and consider them well, and thou shalt finde, that they all goe seeking to encrease their estates, to advantage themselves the best that they can; and failing in those obligations, whereunto they are tide both in honor, and honestie, by one device or other, this or that tricke, every one seekes to advance himselfe and his fortunes, as high as he can. The King, seekes to augment his State, and inlarge his Kingdome; The Gentleman, to raise his House; The Merchant, to encrease his wealth, and to drive such a trade, as may turne to his great profit; And the Trades-man, to gaine by his Trade: And that not alwaies (by their leave) in that conscionable and lawfull fashion as is fitting they should. For it happeneth so with some of them, that first growing knuckle deepe, and afterwards up to the elbowes in ungodly gaine, and unjust dealing, they never leave off till they be up to the very eyes, nay over head and eares (I will not say) in Hell, doe thou say it for me, whose tongue is bolder then mine, to lay this censure upon them. In conclusion, all the world in this case, is as it were another Rochelle; Every man lives for himselfe; get hee, that can get; Onely they, that are unfortunate, as thou art, pay the punishment of their sinne. If thou hadst beene a thiefe of the largest size, I say one of those great ones, that shouldst have gone away with three or foure thousand Duckats at a clap, thou mightst peradventure have made thy peace, bought out favour and justice, and mightst have past well enough with them, and have come off cleare, as they often doe: But those poore wretches, which know not how to negociate, nor have any set rents, no receipts, nor Bils of exchange, nor know how to get a great deale of money into their hands (compounding afterwards for a little) paying backe a third part, and that slowly, ill, or never; these poore rogues, I say, that neither have the wit to invent, nor the

All seeke to make their best advantage

power to aspire to any great bootie, nor to undertake great matters, are (as infamous thieves) sent to the Gallies, and sometimes hang'd, not for thieves (for thieves are not hang'd) but because they did not well know what did belong to their office, and were not their owne crafts-masters. And I will here by the way, tell thee what I heard of a Slave, that was a Negro, *entre boçal y ladino*, one that was a novice, and was better skil'd in his owne, then the Country language wherein he liv'd, being scarce perfect in either ; which story will fall in here very fitly.

A short tale

In Madrid, in the daies of my child-hood, where I resided some time, there were adulterers led to execution ; and although this sin be very common there, and much used amongst them, yet it is seldome punished ; for there are never wanting good meanes, and good moneys ; by meanes whereof these kinde of crimes are well accommodated : but at this time, and with this womans husband, they could worke no good. A world of people went forth to see them, especially your women, insomuch that the streets, and the windowes were wholly taken up with them, making great moane for that miserable and unfortunate woman. Now when her husband had cut off her head, this Negro spake out aloud, and said ; O God, how many here doe behold this sad spectacle, who with a great deale of reason might have the like measure !

The saying of a Negro

We likewise, may very well say ; How many, are there now adaies, who condemne others to the gallowes, whereon they might better, and with more reason, be hang'd themselves. I wonder at nothing in this age, nor am I of that queazy stomacke, that any thing should offend mee ; I will dance to the sound of that Pipe, after which I see others dance ; let things last, as they may last ; and hold out as long as they can, and then there is an end of them ; like unto spoones made of a crust of bread, which wee have no sooner supt up our pottage with, but we send them presently packing the same way with the other. And since thou saist, that thou lov'st my company, and tak'st much contentment therein, and that thou lik'st so well of it,

I hope, it shall neither bee hurtfull unto thee, nor hard to brooke it. For I am so good a fellow, and of so ingenious a disposition, that I know how to value and make a true esteeme of those kindnesses which are done unto mee; the thankfull acknowledgement thereof, I shall referre to my actions, which in their due time, shall testifie, what I now professe. But because reward is the spurre, which puts vertue forwards; and the onely whetstone, that sets an edge on mens affections; making them to goe on bravely and couragiously in all that they undertake; And that it argues a basenesse of minde, not to reward, when from thence some glory, or benefit may arise; And that a man doth not cumply with his duty, when hee doth not take any paines for his living; for to that end was he borne, and therewith is he to sustaine himselfe; it is fit, and no more then what is just, that every man should have a proportionable and equall gaine, according to the quality of his adventure: And I am very well content to give way hereunto, making this the first stone in this our building; and will treat farther hereafter of that, which is to be ordered and set downe betweene us, in these, or any other the like occasions, that shall offer them-selves unto us.

CHAPTER V

Vertue encouraged by rewards

All that, which shall fall, or come unto our hands, as well those fruits already fallen, as those that are to fall hereafter, shall be divided into three equall parts; of all which thou shalt have one part for thee, and another for me, and the third shall goe for to defray the charges of *averige*, for it will not be alwaies faire weather; nor shall wee still saile before the wind; nor make evermore a speedy voyage; as it happens when men are becalmed at Sea; and when we shall land and come ashore, it is not fit that we should want cloathes, and other necessaries, nor must we, if the enemy should set upon us, bee un-provided of munition to defend our selves, and offend him; nor, should wee chance, by some storme or other accident, to bee cast upon some shelfe or quick-sand, must wee lacke a boate to put out, wherein to save our lives, though we lose our goods. This third part, we will still lay apart by it selfe,

Guzman purposes to provide for a deare yeare, and showes how it may be done

that shall be, as it were the *Ærarium*, and publike Treasurie, our common purse, for to supply and relieve our necessities. For, if we goe wisely and discreetly to worke, and be not rash and inconsiderate in our actions, seeing we want not understanding, and have some skill in navigation, (at least are both of us good Coasters,) I for my part will content my selfe with no lesse, then some good place of command in my Countrey, and such good store of wealth, that I may afterwards live happily all the daies of my life. And all this will I bring about, before I be sixe yeares elder. Be therefore of good courage, and take heart unto thee, for thou shalt make the like purchase, wherewith thou maist returne with credit to Valençia. I would not have thee busie thy selfe in base thefts, nor be none of those sneaking thieves, that steale Primers, Horne-bookes, and Ballads; for from such kind of thefts, thou shalt reape no other profit, but infamie, and reproach. In a word, let us bravely

Proverbe

resolve, *Morir ahorcados, ó comer con trompetas*; Either to hang together for company, or to have our dinners serv'd in with Trumpets. Let us dye like dogges, or live like men. For a mans life is ended in a day; but poverty, is a daily death. And if we goe on as we have begun, and use these, and the like trickes, we shall with a little practice, grow to greater both cunning, and wealth, and bid a fart in Feares

Proverbe

teeth; For all moneths are alike, bee they faire or foule, every one hath his thirty dayes,[1] and no more; Every man must live out his time, how happily, or how miserably, I cannot say; every one must be content with his fortune:

Proverbe

And for as much, as in the darke, all Cats are blacke,[2] and Jone is as faire as my Lady, we will so carry things in the clouds, that wee may not appeare in our right colours. Wee two will joyne together, keepe counsell, and deale fairly one with another, dividing the spoile equally, that there may be no falling out betweene us: For, as it is in the Proverbe;

Proverbe

Un lobo á otro nunca se muerde; One Wolfe, will not bite another. Loe here, if thou wilt, thou shalt presently,

[1] *Todos los meses de a treynta dias.*

[2] *A oscuras todos los gatos negros.*

before we goe any farther, have a third part of what is already got; for it is not just nor honest, to debarre any man of his right, or to with-hold that from him, which is his. Much good may it doe thee; and thanke God, that with so fortunate a foot, and so propitious a starre, thou hast lighted thus happily into our company; desiring him, that we may not fall into the hands of Pyrates, who have an eye to nothing else, but to runne away with the meat, that others have drest, to licke away the creame, that others have laboured for; and to skimme away all the fat from off the pottage, not leaving us any thing that good is.

With this kinde of language, and my liberall carriage, dealing thus kindly and bountifully with him, I went securing his person unto me, that hee might not forsake me, but stay, and live with me. For if I should have sought over all the world for a Mariner, I could not have met with a better Mate for my Barke, nor one, that would so well have suted for my purpose, as Sayavedra. Besides, he being my equall, and every way as good a man as my selfe, was contented to become my servant, and to acknowledge me for his master, it being no small advantage to have the hand, in most games that you play at. He, upon these good words of mine, was so overcome, that he rested no lesse contented, then conquered by me. And so falling, in our future discourse, from one thing to another, (as men use to doe when they talke upon the way) I hapt at last to aske him the cause, that mov'd him to rob me? Sir (said he) though I would, yet I cannot now forbeare, to acquaint you with the whole course of my life, and truly and faithfully to deliver unto you every particular passage thereof, as well for those favours which I have so liberally received already from your hands, as also for that it is well enough knowne to the world, and therefore requires no such secresie; As likewise, for that with those with whom we keepe company, and are daily to converse and live withall, plaine dealing must bee used, and all matters fairly laid open, without the concealing or hiding of any thing: For, not onely to our Confessors, our Lawyers, and our Physitians,

Free and plaine dealing, holds friends together

THE SECOND BOOKE

are we to tell the truth, but to those also that are of our owne profession, birds of the same feather; nor was this vertue ever yet wanting amongst us, which is a powerfull meanes for the maintaining of friendship, and the faster wedging of one man unto another. But that I may at length cumply with those many obligations, wherein I stand bound unto you; I shall give you (Sir) to understand, That I am of Valençia, borne of honest parents, (whom report may one day make knowne unto you) for they (God be praised) are now both dead; onely, their fame liveth. We were two brothers, and both unfortunate; whether it were, because from children, conversing continually together, wee ran courses alike, and did in all things sort and sute each with other; or whether it were, that suffering our selves to be carried away with the fury of our vaine appetites, without striving to make due resistance, we did give way to this temptation, by consenting thereunto, (or to say more truly) fell into this weaknesse, not thinking on those future dangers, that were to follow thereupon, but drawne along with those baytes, that for the present pleas'd our taste, being now inured, and accustomed thereunto, wee could not (though wee would) goe backe. My other brother, is somewhat elder then my selfe, and though both of us were of a reasonable good capacitie, and had (as they say) our wits and judgements about us, and were not put (as other men are) to seeke for them, yet could not this understanding of ours, put a bridle upon our unruly affections; such is, or was the force of our malignant starre, and so great the power of our evill inclination, that we could not avoid it. In so much, that laying aside all respects of honor, and to apply our selves to any set course of life, more out of a desire to see strange Countries, then to get some honest meanes, whereby to live, we went out into the wide world to seeke our fortunes. But because things might not chance to fall out so luckily with us, as we did frame to our selves, and that if we should come in trouble, we might not be knowne, nor dishonor our house, we did agree betweene our selves, to change and alter our names.

Sayavedra discourseth to Guzman of his course of life

DE ALFARACHE

My brother being a good Latinist, and a fine Scholler, fetcht his name, I know not from whence; His owne name being Juan Marti, of Juan, hee made Luxan; and of Marti, Mateo; and turning it by inverting the words, he cal'd himselfe Mateo Luxan. In this manner, did hee wander through the world; and the world saith, that it gave him the same payment, as it did mee. But I, for that I had no learning, and knew no more then a young Novice in a Monasterie, I would not trouble my head with these curiosities, but going the downe-right way to worke, and knowing that the Sayavedra's were of principall note, and ancient Gentlemen of Sevill, I styled my selfe to be of that City, and tooke their name upon me. But I was never in Sevill, nor know any more thereof, then what I have said already. CHAPTER V

Being thus new christned, we set forth both on one and the same day, and began our travailes together, but went each of us a severall way. Some have told me, who knew him by sight, that they have seene him in Castile, and in Andaluzia very hardly used; and that from thence, he went to the Indyes, where it also went ill with him. I shap't my course another way; for I got me to Barcelona, where in the Galleys I past over into Italy: I had spent all that, which I had brought along with me from home, and at last became exceeding poore. And because Necessitie, doth oftentimes (as they say) drive a man to doe that, which he never dream't of, tost thus up and downe, and cruelly encountred with hunger, I chanced in the end to arrive in the kingdome of Naples; where, I had ever a desire to reside, for the great good which I had heard of that Citie.

I traveld all over that kingdome, spending that which I had not, till I came to be a notable Picaro, and began at length to converse with as arrant Rogues as my selfe; and from one round to another I grew up by degrees, to be a fine nimble-fingerd Fuller,[1] I could teazell cloathes singular

[1] The Spanish phrase is; *Oficial de la carda. Por traslaçion dezimos carcar á uno, quando le dan alguna fraterna, y es tratado asperamentè.* Covarruvias, verb. *Carda.*

well, I could picke a pocket very neatly, and cut a purse handsomely, and doe many the like fine feats. I made my selfe a *Camerade* with those that were the Masters of our Company, and had recourse alwayes unto them, that they might cover mee under their wing in time of adversitie; I was but their servant, and one of those ordinary Souldiers as it were, that fought under their Ensigne. For my povertie was so great, that I could never get me into a stocke to put me into cloathes, or to be able to set up shop for my selfe. Nor was it an inability or insufficiency in me, that I came no better forward in the world; for there was not such a cunning sharker amongst them all, as I was; my sheeres, would finde an edge, when theirs could not cut; they were all bunglers to me; I was able to have read unto them all those foure cursory Lectures of thieving; and those other two of cony-catching and cheating, which I read for my degree, when I proceeded Batcheler in that Art. For I was so well read in those roguish studies, and from the time that I first learn'd them, had them all so perfect at my fingers ends, that I was not to seeke of any one of them. I was that singular Saker, that excellent Jerfalcon, that never mist my prey, but tooke all that I flew at either in Citie or Countrey. No game came amisse to me. None of them understood halfe so well as I, the Art in cutting of a purse; nor to dive into a pocket, so deepe, as I could. I was dogge at it, and could dispatch my businesse in a trice. My eye, and my hand, went both together; they were here and there, and every where, with a *presto* be gone. I was of all occupations; a mariner, a miller, a baker, a scout, a crosse-biter, one of your upright men, a cheater, a cozener, a fox, that was full of craft and subtletie; none of my standing, no nor six yeeres elder then I, but would strike sayle to me, and acknowledge himselfe as farre inferiour to me, as the fowle is to the Falcon.

But by reason of their ancient standing, and the reputation they had got in those former dunsicall times, they tyrannized and usurped on the name of famous professors:

These were the Cæsars ; and we the poore rogues ; whom they sent abroad, from house to house, to scowre dishes, to cast an eye in every corner, to make one excuse or other wheresoever we came ; demanding in one place, whether such a Gentleman were there or no ; and in another, whether they wanted a young youth, that was willing to serve them. Asking such a Gentlewoman, whether shee would buy a very fine paire of Twizes ; which but a little before, we had cut from another Gentlewomans girdle, and having new ground and whet them, and made them very neat and cleane, and fitted them with a new cace, and a new ribond, we sold them afterwards away for new ware. Sometimes, we would make show to goe into some house to make water, and if we found, that there was a stable there, or other by-roomes belonging unto it, in thither would we goe, where we should meet with a horse-cloath, a curry-combe, a syve, or the horse-mans cloake ; and when we could not come to finger any thing else, we should evermore be sure of bridles, and collars, and stirrops, and the like kinde of tackling for their Mules and their Hackneys, and if by misfortune, any one should come in, and see us there, loosing presently our cod-pisse point, we would quat us downe in a corner of the stable, as if we had beene driven in thither by necessitie to doe that service, which no body can doe for us but our selves. And in case they should say unto us (as now and then they would) you rogue, you thiefe, what make you here ? We would then presently rise up, and pulling up our breeches to make them fast, and be gone, we would while we were a trussing, mildly make answer ; I pray Sir be not offended ; take heed to whom, and of what you speake ; for here is no such kinde of man, as you talke of, no thiefe, no rogue, but one that is true and honest, and meanes you no harme ; I was over-taken in the street, and forced to come in upon meere necessitie, and therefore I hope you will hold me excused.

Some did beleeve us, and some not, but how-soever we past well enough with it. Sometimes, we would presse farther in, and rummage as it were all the whole house,

from one end to the other, till we found somewhat that we might finger, and carry away; and if by chance we were spyde by any, we would come crowching unto them with teares in our eyes, beseeching them for Gods sake, to give us an almes, being even ready to starve for want of food. With these, and other the like cunning shifts, there was not so much as a nayle in any mans wall, which we did not keepe a reckning of, and tooke away when we saw our time. I was a pretty little wagg, slender of growth, rather leane then otherwise, very witty, full of invention, and above all, as nimble, and light-footed as a Bucke. I alwayes laid wait in the day time, how and where I should compasse my exployts in the night, never imbroyling my selfe in any businesse at unseasonable times, for the better avoyding of all suspition; and taking little sleepe when I had any thing to set my selfe about. In the day time, wee did (like good Christians) visit Churches, goe to Masse, heare Sermons, frequent your Indulgences, Jubiles, Feasts, and Processions. Wee were present at your Play-houses, and Courts of Justice, at all Executions, and all other publike meetings and assemblies, where there was any concurse of people, any pressing or thronging in the streets, striving to be alwaies in the thickest of the croud, entring in and out amongst them, passing to and fro a thousand times. For every bout afforded us worke enough, making upon every returne a good and gainefull voyage. One while we brought away daggers, stolne from mens backs; other-while handkerchers pickt out of their pockets; purses, rosarios, twizes, jewels worne by women; and such odde toyes, as your children weare about their necks. And when all fail'd, and that I could not make that purchase as I would, with my sheeres (which I had ever ready in my hand) looke where the best and fairest cloake was in all the companie, I did whip from behinde, or the one side of it (if by chance it slipt off from his shoulders in the throng) as much as would make three or foure payre of soles, or some such odd knack, or other. Wherein, besides the profit, I tooke exceeding great pleasure, in seeing these gallants afterwards

looke like the picture of S. Martin, with little more then halfe a cloake; which was a ridiculous thing to behold, and did often move me to much laughter. And when they them-selves had found it out, they began to winde and turne it this way, and that way, putting the part offended, either under or over their arme, as would make best for the hiding of that blemish; and the people when they once began to perceive it, they straight way flockt about them, who blushing to see their garment cut short to their waste, discovering those parts which shame bids us hide, they went flinching away, and got them home through by-lanes, and such places, as were least frequented.

And when this would not fadge with us, we would cunningly steale to your silke, or cloath of gold hangings, for we never stood upon termes of courtesie, or were more dainty with these, then the rest; for the greater was the value of it, the greater was our gaine; and from the lower part of these hangings, would we snip off a peece or two, according as occasion, or time, would give us leave; endevouring ever to cut in the best and choisest place, and in the turning of a hand, we made thereof either womens bodies, mens *monteras*,[1] purses, pinpillowes, sleeves for little children, and a thousand other the like fidling things; still ordering and husbanding it so, that we would not lose the least thread, but did alwayes contrive it in that manner, as might make best for that use, whereunto we would put it.

By little and little, we came approaching neerer and neerer unto the Citie, drawne thither upon the fame and report, that there was a new Vice-Roy already come thither, or would be there very shortly. For at such solemne feasts as these, where there is running of Buls, bayting of Beares, and the like pastimes, besides your great Fayres and markets, we will not sticke, for a need, to come a hundred miles off, that we may be present at them. Our expence upon the way, was alwayes very little; for we still made our provision,

[1] *Montera*, is a cap made of stuffe with little or no brims, to weare for ease within doores: your Clownes have them of cloath.

as we went along, and what we got in one place, that we spent in another, taking up hens here, capons there, in such a village chickens, and such a dove-house pigeons, pigs, gammons of bacon, and any thing that was tame, and would come to hand, never escapt our hands, furnishing our selves with all other necessarie implements, that might serve for the conveniencie of our journey, were it for our dyet, or our lodging. And as a man that desires to have a good lodging in his Inne, must have a care to come there before the Sunne be set: so in that short time which we had to spend untill it were towards night, and that the houre was come, wherein we did usually retire our selves, we did runne over all the open places about the Countrey, and if we found any breach in any wall of a house, we would prie what we could proule from thence, and seeke to make our entry; Which that we might doe with the more conveniency, and lesser hazard of our persons, we would begin to beg an almes, saying; That we were poore Students, and being driven to great necessity, could not for want of meanes returne handsomely into our owne Countrey. Which we did not so much demand of them, to the end they should give us any thing, as thereby to seeke occasion to steale something from them, having an eye still towards the hen-roost, casting with our selves how we might dispeople that house of its pullen.

Besides, for your Innes, and your Farmers back-sides, I carried alwaies with me a good angle-rod with a strong hooke and line, baited with a crust of bread, or some sixe graines of wheate, to catch there-with whatsoever came in my way, and I seldome put in my rod, but I pluckt out a fish as long as mine arme. But when it fell out so unfortunately with us, that we could not get any booty, and that (as it is in the Proverbe) *Se caya la casa*; the house was fallen downe; and that there was no victualls there to be found; yet come the worst, that could come, wee should be sure to meet with as good and fat a Calfe, as any man need to eate, the world could not afford better Veale. As soone as we came to Naples, at our first comming we drave

Proverbe

for some few dayes, a very good trade, and made very quicke returnes, with a great deale of profit to our purses, and all things did succeed very well with us ; we tooke great paines, and we reapt great gaines. I had put my selfe into such apparrell, that my presence might promise the reputation of an honest man ; so that any man might very well be cozned by this Carde, (this outside I meane of mine) so faire did I colour for it. So that if the entrance which wee made, like to our *juego de cañas*, glittering in gold, and all kind of braverie, had not through my lacke of patience received in the end a foile, I might have continued there in very good fashion. But I had worke enough to doe, to save my skinne, from being pluckt over my eares, and to keepe my bones from being broken. It was mine owne fault, that my egges prov'd addle, and were not so well hatcht as they might have beene. I may thanke no body for it but my selfe. But God be thanked, that it was no worse with mee ; for I might have receiv'd much more harme thereby, and therewith did I comfort my selfe.

One of my Camerades was of that Countrey, servant to a Regent of the Collaterall Councell, whose father had also serv'd him heretofore, he was desirous to make himselfe knowne unto him, whereupon hee went to kisse his hands, nor did his owne returne empty from him ; But (being very glad to see him) offered to doe him any kindnesse that lay in his power ; nor were they Courtiers words, sprinckled with holy-water, for he did as well doe, as say ; For seldome, and to few, doth it happen in Court, to eate together in one plate, and at one boord ; But when the minde is generous and noble, it evermore takes delight to give ; and by so much the more is encreased, by how much the more we crave. For it hath alwaies beene a peculiar property belonging to giving, to make the doner famous and renowned to the world. And the more subjects they light on to conferre such courtesies, so much the more glory doe they gaine unto them-selves. Presently, without any more adoe, hee employ'd him in some businesses, and those of some worth and moment, and well deserving a worthier

Noble minds are ever liberall

subject. Under his protection we went up and downe the Citie, as if we had beene so many Vice-Kings of the Country, living without controlment, and no man daring to meddle with us.

Being thus seated on the warme side of the hedge, pre suming upon his favour and countenance, we did lash out a little too much, in undertaking such and such things, as were beyond the reach of our braines, and would require stronger wits then we had any. He was the tongue, where-with we spake; he did direct us, whither wee were to goe; and what wee were to doe; at what houres, we might with most safety be abroad; where we might best make our entry; whom we might best trust; and of whom we had most reason to be afraid. For (as we shall tell you here-after) they that commit the greatest robberies, and such thefts, as are more famous then any other, more cunningly carried, of a higher straine and nature then the rest, and of the greatest importance, are those that are nearest in their attendance about the Ministers of Justice. For these men feare nothing, they are in favour with their Lord, necessity oppresseth them, occasion is offred; God blesse every good man from such authenticall thieves, who thinke themselves authorized to steale, and that the Law either cannot, or will not, take hold of them.

Proverbe

I went one day a wrestling *á braço partido* [1] (as they say) with my thoughts, that is to say, upon equall tearmes, without any manner of advantage of my fellowes, out of a desire that I had to seeke out something wherewithall to entertaine my selfe; for it was almost high-noone, and wee had not yet threaded our needle, nor wrought one stitch of worke. And to come home empty handed, that I would not; I scorn'd not to send in my provision before-hand, as holding it a great disgrace unto me. For if my companions should chance to have wrought their honey-combes, and that they were to bee found at home in the hive, where we did all meete, if I should bring nothing in, but feede upon

[1] *Luchar a braço partido es proceder ygualmente sin ventaja de uno á otro.* Covarruvias, verb. *Braço.*

their store, they would upbraid me therewith calling me idle Drone ; Titting and flouting at me, that I should offer to sit downe at boord with cleane hands.[1] Meaning thereby, that I had not laboured for my living as the rest had done, nor taken the paines to foule my hands, and yet must sit downe and eate at other mens cost. Holding him for a base minded fellow, that would come to a well furnisht table, and sit downe to dinner, not having before-hand provided some provision of his owne, whereon to feed. I had cast mine eye upon a very faire house, which at the first sight seemed unto mee, to belong to some honorable person, or principall Gentleman of that Citie. I entred as boldly into it, as if the house had beene mine owne. For (as it is in the Proverbe) *nunca el timido, fue buen cirujano* ; The fearfull man, never makes good Surgeon. Which kinde of Phrase, your old women in Spaine use to their children, when they goe sneakingly and fearfully about any businesse. *Anda, anda, que pareça que vas a hurtar* ; Get thee gone, get thee gone, thou goest logging and dreamingly about it, as if thou wentest a filching. So that alwayes, and in all places whatsoever, or wheresoever I came, me thought I went into mine owne house, or that I did enter as it were by authority, with the Vare of Justice in my hand, or the whole power of the Country.

CHAPTER V

Proverbe

Proverbe

Proverbe

I lookt about on this side, and on that side, longing that mine eyes might light on some-thing or other, that I might lay my hands on. At last it was my fortune to spy lying on the top of a little side-table, a faire blacke velvet Kirtle, richly embroydered, which would very well serve to make three severall sorts of garments, cassocke, and hose, and something else besides ; for there were full fifteene yards in it, and might very well beseeme the wearing of the neatest and bravest Gallants in the Kingdome. I stood looking and peering on every side of me, if I might goe cleanly

Sayavedras stealing of a Kirtle

[1] *Vienese á sentar á la mesa con sus manos lavados Dizese del que no ha trabajado como los demas, y á la hora de comer, no haviendo enzusiado sus manos, se viene con los demas á la mesa, y come de mogollon.* Covarruvias, verb. *Lavar.*

away with this booty, that it might not cost me the laying on, and escape without danger of being beaten for my labour ; and by good hap I did not meete with any to hinder me in this my purpose ; Whereupon I tooke it up, and clapping it under mine arme, fetching two or three nimble friscals, my feete were presently upon the threshold of the doore, making their way to goe forth into the streete : But I was no sooner come thither, but there I met full butt with the owner of the house, who was Master Datario,[1] a man of great place and authority in that City, who seeing me come forth with this fardle under mine arme, asked mee what I was, what I made there, and what was that I carried away with me ? I being thus put to my shift, made a vertue of necessity, and was not long in consulting with my selfe for an answere, and with an untroubled, or rather cheerefull countenance, said unto him; Sir, it is my Mistresses pleasure, that I should untucke these pleats a little, to make the folds fall a little handsomer, and that I should lessen it a thought in the waste, for that it fits not well before ; and hath given me in charge to dispatch it presently. Doe so I pray (my friend) quoth he, see it be done quickly, and let it be your owne hand-working, that it may not bee done amisse, and make all the haste you can. I then said to my selfe ; I have done this with mine owne hand, and I will make quicke worke with the rest. And with that I hy'd me downe the street, fetching more turnings and windings then a Snake, sometimes this way, and sometimes that way, now here, and now there, and all, that they might not find any footing of mee, if hee should chance to uncouple his hounds, and send them after me to follow mee upon hot sent.

Anon after (as ill lucke would have it) hee came to know how the world went, for he was no sooner come into the house, but hee found it all in an uprore, some in the hall, some in the kitchen, some in one roome, and some in another, the maids of the house some unbraced, some their haire about their eares, some with one sleeve off, and

[1] *Dataria*, a great office in Rome, as also in other places.

another on, some in one posture, and some in another, but all in a combustion, brauling and calling one to another, give me the Kirtle, give mee the Kirtle, where is the Kirtle, what is become of the Kirtle ? but the Kirtle appeares not : you tooke it from my mistresse, (saies one) I laid it here, (says another) I left it here, (sayes a third). Then falls the Mistresse of the house a chiding, asking who came in, or out ? No body could tell of any ; Then (quoth she) it is likely, that some of the house must needs have it, therefore looke it me out, and that quickly too, or else you shall soundly pay for it. There was such an out-cry, such exclamations, such a howling, such a bawling, and so hideous a noyse, as if the whole house had beene fallen to the ground, in so much, that they could not one understand another.

In this hurly-burly comes me in the Master of the house, acknowledging now the error, that he had committed, in letting me goe away in that fashion ; and going to pacifie his wife, he told her that a thiefe had got into the house, and carried away her Kirtle, recounting unto her, what had passed betwixt him and my selfe, when he met me comming forth of doores. Hee presently made search after me, but I so bestir'd my stumps, that he could not then finde me out, having by this time both secured my person, and the Kirtle.

Sayavedras theft at the Constables house

That night, I got me to the house of the great Constable, out of a desire that I had, to finish a peece of worke, which some few dayes before, I had drawne out ; but my pen did so blur, that I did despaire at that time to come off cleanly with it, and though I had taken a great deale of paines that it might bee neatly and handsomely done, yet could I never compasse (for want of a good opportunity) to have it fall out fairly and fitly as I would till now. Many Gentlemen, were there met together to play, who had ordinarily three or foure tables set ready for them, and a page or two appointed to sit up, and attend upon them, till they gave over. Every table had his silke carpet, and two silver candlesticks ; I carried thither with me a couple that were

counterfait, made of the purest Tinne I could get, and just of the same fashion and proportion, and so like in every respect, that you could not for their finenesse, distinguish them from the other, jumping so truly, as well in the colour, as the making, provided of purpose, for the better effecting of what I intended, I carried likewise two candles along with me, and using close conveyance, that they might not be seene about me, I leaned against one of the corners of the wall, as I had used to doe heretofore, waiting for a faire occasion to bring my project to passe, giving those that were there to understand, that I was a servant to one of those Gentlemen that were at play. Two, were playing at *cientos*,[1] at one of those tables, they call'd for lights, there was not any body there but one Page, and hee so sleepy and so drousie, that having call'd unto him twice, hee did neither answer them, nor well minde what they said unto him ; I made presently in to them, and having my candles and candlestickes in a readinesse, which were not long a lighting, throwing one end of my cloake over my shoulder, as if I had beene one of the servants of the house : I shifted the candlesticks, putting the lights into those that I had brought with me, clapping those other of silver under mine arme ; and so turning nimbly away from them, walking as Cats doe, softly and without any noyse, I got me quietly to my lodging, where I mixt them together with other peeces of plate, which I had in the like manner at divers times gathered together ; And for to take away all occasions of quarrelling and wrangling, and that I might not be askt whether these are thine, or mine ? Let me see the marke ; Compare it with this or that other peece, and the difference will soone be decided ; How came you by it ? Where did you buy it ? What was he that sold it you ? To avoid these and the like cavills, I thought good to make sure worke with it ; so I melted it (that it might not be knowne by its eare-marke) all into one masse, and putting it into a fine earthen pot, I carryed it to my Captaine, that he out of the authoritie

[1] *Cientos ;* a witty game at Cards, much used in Spaine.

and credit that hee had abroad, might the better sell it for me. CHAPTER V

He did so; and taking out a fifth part for himselfe, he gave me the rest in very good Royals of plate, without defrauding me of one farthing, or the least haire of my head. It was an order amongst us, that to him, as to our Chieftaine, we should bring all whatsoever we got, whereof the fifth part was his fee, which we truly and justly paid unto him, as a tribute that was as due to him, as that of the Indies, is to his Catholike Majestie. No Prince in the world had more punctuall payment. And for this taxe, tallage, impost, or custome, (or whatsoever in that kinde you shall be pleased to call it) we were in all our dangers, protected and defended by him. Let no man thinke to Proverbe chew his meat on both sides of his chaps at once;[1] and to have all the water runne through his owne mill, and none passe besides. For there is no dignitie in this life without a pension; and nothing that a man enjoyes of his estate, but he must part with some portion out of it. Every one hath his double rowe of teeth, together with his grinders, all would faine eat. Every poll, hath his polling. There are certaine rights and duties to be raised out of all things whatsoever. Imposts, and Interests, must passe to and fro in the world. One hand washeth another, and both Proverbe wash the face.[2] If one give me a Capon, it is fit I should bestow the brawne thereof upon him. And there is no money can be better imployd, then upon such a good Angell as this to guard us. There are some kinde of people so cruell and unconscionable, that they thinke of nothing but deceit and cozenage, scooping like shovels all to themselves; they will have all the bread, and the meat Proverbe too;[3] both a mans paines, and his profit; leaving us nothing but the *periculum*, and the *pœnam*, the perill, and the punishment, if it be our misfortune to be caught. They

[1] *Mascar a doz carillos i Hazerse á ambas partes contrarias con dissimulacion.* Covarruvias, verb. *Mascar.*

[2] *Una mano lava la otra y entrambas la cara.*

[3] *Quieren el pan, y las maseras.*

will highly praise and commend us, that they may incourage us on to greater matters, as Pizarro did his people in the Indies. But when they give us most, and reward us best, they thinke they doe us a great favour, if they give us the scraps and fragments, and what themselves know not well what to doe withall, reserving the best and greatest part of the profit to themselves; as Alexandro dealt with me. But afterwards, when they see us in distresse, and that we have need of their helpe, they will not so much as know us; they presently strike sayle, and will not stirre a foot to succour us.

But we, and this our Milanese (whom we made our Commander) kept very good quarter; for he would by no meanes have any more of us then a fifth part, which by agreement belonged unto him. And if at any time, he having need of money, did intreat us that we would lend him some, and put it to account to be paid out of his fifth part, as prizes came in; when we had furnisht him, he would presently set it downe in his booke, with an Item so much due unto such a one, to be paid out of my next Vales, and when that debt was satisfied, he would either crosse it, or write repayd in the margent; so that there was evermore an even reckning kept betweene us. No, no, he was none of these shuffling companions, he was wonderfull honest in sharing the spoyle with us, levelling all accounts, and still keeping an even reckning with us; and so as we had the fortune to make a good voyage, for the rest, we needed not to feare. My fellowes did not loyter but bestirred themselves lustily, and like good husbands, never came home with their hands in their bosomes,[1] nor dragg'd out an empty net.

Proverbe

We were foure of us in the whole; three adventurers, to enter upon all kinde of enterprizes, and one Captaine to fight in our defence. We would somtimes take him along with us, and put him formost, to the end that if any one of us should be taken napping, and the theft found about us, he might serve to mitigate the matter, when we were

[1] *Con las manos en el seno.*

thus taken in the manner, making us to restore that which we had taken, (that I may not say stolne away) giving us two or three boxes on the eare, and as many kicks on the breech, dismissing us from thence in a divels name, saying withall; Get you gone, you rogue, be packing I say like an arrant rascall, and false thiefe as thou art, sirrha, let me see your backe, and I advise you let me never heare or see, that you fall any more a filching, leave your stealing, and live honestly, else I sweare unto thee by the faith of an honest man, I will cause thee to be whipt, or sent to the Galleys. Being thus curstly used by him, first kickt and beaten, and afterwards roundly rated, they that were present, taking him to be a good honest Gentleman, and a mercifull minded man, they were content to let us goe, and so did we scape that storme by his meanes, whereas otherwise wee had beene overtaken therewith.

But some againe, were such hard-hearted people, and of that stubborne and perverse nature, that they did set upon us like fierce dragons, and were so full of rage and choller, that nothing could pacifie their wrath, but did still presse us more and more, and nothing would content them, but our imprisonment, whipping, hanging, all was too little for us. They would first see us clapt up safe, and afterwards talke with us at leysure. To such rough-hewen natures, and boysterous dispositions, our Captaine would come to the parties, whom we had wronged, and tell them; Doe not soyle your hands with such a filthy rogue as this is, give him a hundred kicks, and let him goe like a villaine and thiefe as he is, but doe not cause him to be apprehended, you see he is a poore rascall, and if you commit him to prison, there will he starve, and be eaten up with lice; and what pleasure can you take in the destruction of such a ragged snake, who in himselfe is so wretched a soule already? And with that, crying out; Thou ungracious unlucky villaine, they would give us such jobs, such pushes, such shocks, and justlings, and thrust us with that violence from them, that they would make us to root up the earth

with our noses, and only thereby to free us out of their hands, who had us in hold.

But if any one should be so stiffe, and so hard laced, that nothing could move him to pitie, nothing worke our inlargement, we used our best endevour to get from them ; if that would not serve the turne, we would stand upon our justification, and not sticke (and that stoutly too) to tell this or that other to his teeth, that he lyde in his throat, and that wee were as honest men as he, or the best of them all : And whilest we were thus striving to be gone, our Captaine would interpose himselfe under colour of pacifying the matter, and would helpe to part us, by his comming in betweene us, and so free us from out their clutches, and set us at liberty. And if need were, (when all this would not serve the turne) hee did throw a bone amongst them,[1] and would seeke some occasion or other, provoking them by words, to fall to blowes, quieting the lesser tumult by the greater, and so made a shift to scuffle away, and to disimbroyle our selves of this troublesome businesse.

Proverbe

At other times, when we were running away with that which we had stolne, and were hardly followed, even close at the heeles of us, one of our fellowes would come athwart him that pursued us, and stepping out just before him, would detaine him for a while, asking him what was the matter, and what troubled him, that he made such haste, who it was that had done him wrong, together with the nature of the injurie, and so would not suffer him to passe on, as if he had desired to make peace, and to pacifie both parties. And albeit he would not give him any answer, (for that his businesse required haste) yet were it more, or lesse, that he thus entertained the time with him, every the least delay, were it never so little, was enough to make us, to our great advantage, gaine ground of him ; howbeit they that flie, have alwayes the start of them that follow ; and feare, in such cases, doth evermore clap wings to our feet. Whereas they that runne after others, doe naturally grow

[1] *Deromavan el poleo*, says the Spanish phrase ; Latin, *pulegium* ; English, *pennyroyall. Quæ herba excitat oues ad balatum.*

quickly weary, and beat themselves out of breath, partly being stifled with the heat of passion, and partly out of the minde that they have to doe another a shrewd turne, which doth much puzzell them, notwithstanding that they strive and labour all that they can to overtake him: but it is impossible to strive against nature, which doth ever favour those, that desire to save themselves. Thus by one meanes or other, they were still detayned, and mist of their purpose. CHAPTER V

Other-whiles, they would be bound for our forth-comming, give their words for our truth and honestie, and though we had gone sheere away with that which we had stolne, they would plead our innocencie, especially, not being taken with the theft; for by this time we had convay'd it some three or foure streets of, where there was no more newes to be heard of it. So that by their good words, their intercessions, and their being bound for us bodie for bodie, we were freed from that evill opinion, which before was conceived of us. So that by hooke, or by crooke, this way, or that way, one or another, we went through-stitch with our businesse, *maugre* all the world, or though spite should have done her worst; for we had still one tricke or other, when it came to a dead lift, wherewithall to serve our turne.

But once, being more carelesse, then I ought to have beene, I would needs goe forrage alone by my selfe, without ever a skout to scoure the coast, and though I should have taken one along with me, I perswade my selfe, as the case then stood with me, he would have steaded me little, or nothing at all. And thus it was.

Sayavedra's stealing of shirts

My sinnes (for it could be nothing else) had drawne me one day forth of the Citie to walke abroad and take the ayre, and comming neere unto a river side, where in a medow upon the grasse were laid out a great many linnen cloathes a drying, and the woman that lookt unto them, sitting close, to shade her-selfe from the heat of the Sunne, in a little hollow cleft of an old wall, that was not farre off; me thought the linnen needed no more drying, and whether it did or no, it was all one to me, wet or dry, it made no

great matter, either way (so I might have what I look't for) would serve my turne well enough. I had a moneths minde, to folde up two or three of the finest and newest shirts, that were there, thinking with my selfe, that they would fit well with my bodie, and so very easily and fairely I tooke them up; but fearing lest any body should come in the meane while, and spie what I was a doing, I lapt them up in haste, not being willing to stay to folde them there, but to doe that at more leysure, when I came to my lodging. The good woman did not see what I did, for her backe was all this while towards me; but there was not one wanting, who shrewdly complayning of me, not running (to make me the more secure) but walking a good round pace towards her, advised her thereof.

This poore woman, when shee heard how the world went, sets me out a throat, whose shrill sound did ascend as high as heaven. And leaving a little girle, that shee had there, to looke unto the rest of the linnen, shee began to runne after me. So that I seeing my selfe in this strait, I dissembled the matter as well as I could, and without either turning my face towards her, or mending my pace, I walked soberly and demurely along, as if shee had nothing to doe with me; letting (as I went along) my ware fall to the ground, going on still as I did before, without any perturbation of countenance, or inlarging of my steps; thinking with my selfe, that when this wicked woman had recovered that which she lost, she would therewith have been contented, and rested quiet: but shee did not leave me so; for if shee cryde out before, now shee made such a noyse, and sent forth such a loud clamour, that the whole field did ring of the peale, which that shrill clapper of hers made. And for that we were not farre from the Towne, nor in a solitarie place, that was free from company, the out-cryes that shee made, were heard by many; insomuch that great store of all sorts of people came running in, especially boyes and little children, besides a great number of dogs, barking and bawling, as if they had beene mad, comming about me as thicke as bees; being con-

founded, and ready almost to have runne out of my wits with that tumultuous hurry, and horrible stirre they made. And some young lads, which fell in with these lesser beagles, to make the cry the fuller, when they understood of the businesse, were ready to swallow me up alive, from whose power (so violently were they bent against me) it was impossible for me to scape. From that day forward, I began to stand in feare of this little frye, which heretofore I was never afraid of. These little minowes, were they, that by persecuting of me, did undoe me.

A short tale of a drunkard

When I heard Sayavedra say so, there presently came into my minde a famous drunkard in Madrid, who being kickt and spurn'd, and mightily abused by the Boyes that had got about him ; when hee came to the end of the street, hee stoopes mee downe and takes up a couple of stones, and holding one in the one hand, and the other in the other, leaning himselfe against a wall, hee said thus unto them : No more, no more (my good Boyes) it is enough ; stay here, stay here (sweet Children) for it is not fit you should goe any farther. And therefore (my pretty hearts) let mee intreat you to goe backe, and not trouble mee, or your selves any longer : for I am very well satisfied with those courtesies I have already received from you ; for the which I kindly thanke you. Otherwise, I have nothing to returne you in requitall, but these stones, which I shall freely bestow upon you, though it cost mee the laying on ; so that some of you, I beleeve, will be better paid for your paines then you expect. Whereupon they seeing him thus resolute, they sneakt away one by one, and let the poore man alone, who afterward went quietly along about his business. If Sayavedra had taken the like course, he might peradventure have had the like successe.

But he, continuing his discourse went on and said ; surely where this rude rabble once bands and lincks it selfe together, no good man can doe ought that is good, nor any honest man passe in quiet for them. I sought now to flye from them, as a man would fly from the gallowes : and I was in a good way towards it, and wanted little of comming

thither. For, by seeking to flye from their hands I fell into those of the Justice; who had now caught me in their net, whence there was no hope to scape.

When I saw this misfortune was fallen upon me: I made no more adoe, but sent presently to my Captaine, advising him how the case stood with me, who as soone as hee understood of it, made all the haste he could unto mee, was with me (as they say) ere a man could say *this*; and well instructed mee what I should both say and doe. That done, hee went to the Notarie, telling him that hee knew mee to bee well descended, that I was honourably borne both by Father and Mother, and of as ancient and noble a House as any was in Spaine: and that it was not possible, nor was it to bee beleev'd, that such a Gentleman as I was, would commit so foule a fact.

But say (which cannot sinke into my head) that it should be true, it is not a thing so much to be wondred at; for that he might either doe it out of youthfulnesse (which is incident now and then to play such kinde of idle prankes) or out of want, lacking money, and being loath to begge or borrow, or forced thereunto out of pure hunger; and therefore chose rather to hazard than famish his person. Besides, it is a matter of no moment, a toy, a trifle, a thing not to be made any reckoning of, as well in regard of its small value, as also in respect of the Gentlemans qualitie, and the noblenesse of his house. What with these good words and something else that he did besides, within some two houres after I was freed out of Prison: and (had God beene pleased so to have it) I could have wisht I might not have come out then, nor three houres after that; nay, not till darke night: but since it was his good will and pleasure that it should succeed as it did with me, blessed bee his name for ever, good or ill must be welcome from his hand. Sinne, that Catchpole of Conscience, that churlish Porter that keepes account of our actions, and has an eye to what wee doe, who had still persecuted me at the very thresholds of the dores wherinto I entred, was not unmindful to do the like by me in that of the prison, when I was

ready to come out: for even as I was putting my foote over the threshold, who should I meet full butte, but Maister Datario? who came thither to free a Prisoner. CHAPTER V

As soone as hee saw mee, hee presently knew mee, and withall pusht me so violently backe, that I fell flat upon my backe to the ground; and then comming fiercely upon mee that hee might hold me, while hee had me at this advantage, and calling to the Keeper, committed me anew, and followed the accusation so hard against me, that neither intreaties nor any offers to make him satisfaction for his kirtle, were able to make him to surcease his sute. Hee was a powerfull man, I used all possible diligences: but neither did my pleading that I was a Gentleman, nor the tendernesse of my yeares, prevaile so farre, as to bring mee fairely off. And, as if they had done me a deed of charity, and bestowed an almes on mee, by way of transaction and agreement, as if they had shewed mee all the favour in the world, they gave mee such a heavy sentence that I shall never forget it while I live. I went for shirts, and they stript mee of mine from my shoulder to my waste, banishing mee from thence for ever. I had my payment, but the blockhead had not his Kirtle: see how a wilfull foole, such a one as this was, stood in his owne light; being more willing to doe me a mischiefe then himselfe a pleasure; and to lose his goods, rather then to let mee loose: which hee might easily have recovered of me, if he would have suffered mee to stay in that City.

Well, I was forced to forgoe Naples, and with it, all my old friends and acquaintance: I packt up all my trinkets together, and that poore pittance that I had pickt up by mine owne industry, and departed from thence, wandring up and downe Italy, till I came to Bologna, where Alessandro received me into his service: who did usually go out of that City, to fetch in some booty or other; and having sped well hee returned home in safety. When wee were in Rome, and came in unto you, when you were in that thrust and throng of people, we did not so much intend your good, as expect that some farther quarrell would have growne

thereupon, whereby wee might with the more safety have got some Cloakes or Hats: but that occasion being taken away, missing thus of our purpose, wee began to plot how wee might commit this theft, making me (as their manner was) *Cabeça de Lobo*,[1] the Wolfes head, the instrument of their profit; whilst they kept their owne fingers out of the fire, and would be sure to be out of the danger of Gun-shot. This Story was he telling me, when wee were now come to our journies end. And so ceasing to talke any farther of it, we came into our Inne, where we presently had that provided for us which was fitting for travellers that were not to make any long stay.

Proverbe

CHAPTER VI

Sayavedra meets in Milan with a friend of his that serv'd a Merchant; Guzman de Alfarache layes a witty plot how to rob him

WITH a great deale of attention and admiration, had Sayavedra all this journey tyed mine eares to his tongue. And during the rest of the way, till wee reacht to Milan, wee were never out of matter; but kept the ball still up; hee tossing one tale to me, and I returning another to him: so that our Discourse never made a fault; but was (being both good Players) well maintained and kept up betweene us. But I had a great contradiction in my selfe, and could hardly bee brought to beleeve that men of noble birth, Sonnes of such worthy

[1] *Cabeça de Lobo.* That is, the occasion that a man takes to benefit himselfe. As he that kils a Wolfe, and carries the head to the Villages thereabout, receiving somthing of every one by way of gratification, for the good hee hath done in killing so dangerous and hurtfull a Beast. Covarruvias, verb. *Cabeca.*

Parents, should suffer themselves to bee thus violently haled by their Passions; that, forgetting the respect due to their bloud and Gentry, (the remembrance whereof should cause them to goe on in an honourable and civill course of life) doe notwithstanding commit base and infamous actions, by robbing others of their goods and honours: for in very truth, hee that loseth his wealth, loseth both the one and the other; for every man is so farre forth esteemed and honoured, as hee is rich and wealthy. Whereupon I said secretly to my selfe; surely if Sayavedras father left him so rich as hee himselfe reporteth hee did, how comes it (quoth I) to passe, that hee is turned thiefe? and that hee takes more pleasure to follow this lewd kinde of life, and to endure these shamefull affronts, then to live in esteeme and reputation in his owne Countrey? If wee doe ill, wee therefore doe it because it carries a faire appearance with it, and shewes unto us a certaine shadow, or a kinde of resemblance of some goodnesse or other; but in suffering such indignities as hee hath done, there is no hope thereof, no colour at all for it. But I presently recall'd this rash censure, and sodainly taking up my selfe, I fell to excusing of him, and began upon better deliberation to say with my selfe; It may bee hee went from home being a childe as I did. And so, considering the relation that hee had made unto mee, mine owne proper steppes represented themselves unto mee, and those lewd courses that my selfe had runne. But I afterwards came againe to my selfe and said: But suppose all this to bee true which hee hath said: Why did hee not turne over a new leafe when hee had the use of reason, and came to bee a man, taking upon him the profession of a Souldier? He might answere likewise for himselfe and say; Why did not I so too? I see a mote in another mans eye, and cannot behold the beame that is in mine owne.

Monie makes man to bee esteemed

Men sooner see other mens faults then their owne

Military Profession is a pleasing thing, and hath many motives to draw a mans affection thereunto. They have good pay, they passe well enough with it; it teacheth a man hardnesse, it maketh him to forget his dainty fare at

The sweetnesse and sowrenesse of warre

home, and boldly to adventure his life to winne honour, and to doe his Countrey service. But they pay dearly for it, they have too hard a bargaine of it, it is a kinde of taking up of money at extreame rates, and excessive interest, for to satisfie a debt of lesser value. They must serve long before they can come to any thing, rise betimes in the morning, watch all night, have his shoulders pincht with the heavy weight of a Musquet, stand Centinell for the space of full foure houres, and two at the least, when hee is *Centinela perdida*,[1] without budging or moving but a foote from that place where they have once set him : let it raine, thunder or lighten never so fast ; freze, snow, or blow the windes never so hard ; let the weather be as sharpe as sharpe may be, all is one, he must stand to his tackling. And when hee hath done all this, like a souldier and a brave fellow, when hee shall returne home safe to his lodging (not reckoning those that miscarry by this meanes) hee hath not so much as a Candle to light him to bed, nor fire to dry either his wet or frozen carcasse, nor bread to put in his mouth, nor wine to wash downe those crummes, being hunger-starv'd, all mire and dirt, all to bee rent and torne, but not a ragge of comfort. And therefore considering the hard life that a Souldier leades, and how ill they are rewarded, hazarding their owne lives to save other mens, I doe not much blame Sayavedra that hee did not turne Souldier.

But for his elder Brother, Señor Juan Marti, or Mateo Luxan (leaving him to make choyce of one of the two, as shall stand best with his Worships liking) who was of age sufficient, when his father died, for to discerne betwixt ill and good, who had a good house to put his head in, and good meanes to maintaine it, and to have liv'd richly and plenti-

[1] *Dixose Centinela á Scintillando. Porque ha de estar con los ojos abiertos, y viuos, como çentellas. Otros dizen, que está corrompido el vocablo de çentinela, á sentiendo. Por la viueza que ha de teneren todos los sentidos ; especialmentè en la vista, y en el oydo. Centinela perdida*, is hee that is put out of a Castle, or out of a Campe into the open field, where in case of necessity, he cannot bee conveniently relieved : and so he must stand to his adventure. The French stile him, *Centinelle perduë*. Covarruvias, verb. *Centinela*.

fully, and in good reputation and credit in his owne Country, what a Divell mov'd him, or what hellish temptation came into his minde, to neglect his owne busines, and so foolishly thrust himselfe to intermeddle in other folkes matters, and to fall at last to stealing of cloakes. How much better would it have beene for him to have employd his person in some honourable entertainment or other? Hee was a good Gramarian, hee had studied the Lawes, and might (if hee would himselfe) have easily come to be a Doctor. CHAPTER VI

But happely, these and the like doe thinke, That there needs no more to make a thiefe, then to say; I will be a thiefe. And that all shall succeed as happily with them, as themselves could wish it. But in good sooth, I must beate them out of this errour, and plainly tell them; That there is more in it, then so. That it will cost them no small labour, and withall they must incurre a great deale of danger. Besides, I cannot well tell you, whether or no, there be so many rules amongst the Lawyers, as he needs to have, who meanes to prove a good thiefe indeed. For say, that there be two in a Towne, that emulate one another, and contend for the victorie, and that the one after a great deale of strife, and stiffe standing out, will at last concurre with the other, who hath gotten him the name and fame of all that perfection that belongs to your *Cocoquismo*, and *Germania*,[1] the true Art of filching and stealing, and hath show'd himselfe an excellent Proficient in that Science, I can assure you, on my credit, hee had need carry a close hand, and looke narrowly to his businesse. For, to my seeming, if that be true, (as I thinke it was) which Sayavedra delivered unto me; he was a poore unfortunate pilchard, a kind of shotten Herring; and I, in comparison of him, a great goodly Whale. Yet for all this, did not I dare, (fearing I should prove my selfe a dunce, when I came to be examined by the masters of that faculty) to stand for

Thieving is a trade, that is full of trouble

[1] Termes of Art amongst theeves and rogues. *Germania, el accento en la penultima, es el lenguage de la rufianesca; dicho assi; ó porque no los entendemos, ó por la hermandad que entre sitienen.* A canting kind of language. Also taken for a fraternitie, or brotherhood amongst theeves. Covarruvias, verb. *Germania.*

my grace, nor pretend the Cap and Hood, as doubting, how I should be able to answer for my degree, if I were well canvast by those that should oppose me. Sayavedra, and his brother (doubtlesse) did flatter themselves, and were truly perswaded, that with these poore dry petty thefts, ill seasoned, without any good taste, sweet savour, or any the least pleasant relish in the world, they might boldly goe into the Schooles, and there read in the Regis professor[1] his chaire, their solemne Lectures for their Doctorship. They did happely thinke with them-selves, that there was no more in it, then what a good plaine Country-fellow said, that was a kinde of poore silly Alcalde, in a little Village, called Almonaçi de Curita,[2] in the kingdome of Toledo, who having made a watring place for the towne Cattle to drinke at, when he had finisht it, and made it handsome, having fitted it with cesternes, and whatsoever else hee in his wisedome held to be necessary, hee call'd the wisedome of the towne together, the whole body of the Councell, where in their presence, he caus'd the conduit pipes to be opened, and to let out the water, that they might give their judgement and opinion, how they lik't of it? One said, the trough stood too high; another, too low. The Alcalde, seeing his worke found fault withall, was not halfe well pleased with it, but scorning to be dasht out of countenance, and over-borne by his inferiours, he steps himselfe to the trough, and there his worship drinkes: And when hee had done, stepping backeward about some two strides, or thereabouts, looking angerly, yet gravely enough upon them, he first spits, then wipes his mouth, and lastly sayes unto them; Gods nigs, (my masters) you need not find such

A tale of a Country Alcalde

[1] The Spanish word is; *Catedra de prima. Valetanto, como silla puesta en alto, qual es la de los Maestros que leen; con obligaçion de leer á tiempo senalado*, etc. Covarruvias, verb. *Catedra.*

[2] *Almonaçi de Curita*, is seated between Alualate and Zorita. It is an Arabicke word corrupted, of *Almunasi*, which signifies a place of oblivion; seeming to have its root, from the Hebrew word *nasas, oblivisci.* And in that Towne there is wine of that strength and goodnesse, that Travellers set their journeyes so, as they may lodge there at night, where some of them forget themselves, like Ulysses souldiers, before they get thence. *Otros dizen, que vale tanto como, huerta del Rey. Vide* Covarruvias, page 56.

fault with it, there is no more to be said in this matter: for being that I can make a shift to drinke at it, there is never a beast but may do the like, if he have a minde to drinke. CHAPTER VI

Even just so is it with your young thieves that are fresh-water-Souldiers, and not well beaten to the businesse, who thinke all things easie, that they take in hand, and when they heare of such a famous thiefe, and that he hath done wonders in that kinde, will not sticke to say; Tush, this is nothing: We can doe as much as this, and more too. But I promise you on my honest word, that such as these, who have so good a conceit of them-selves, that may bee said of them: which another Country fellow, not farre from thence, dwelling in Mancha, said to two other fellowes, who earnestly contended about the foale of a Mare; One said, it was a Horse; No, said the other, it is a Mule: Then a third person, that was in their company, drawing neerer and neerer, and rounding about the beast, and viewing, and viewing him againe, after hee had throughly marked his musle, and his eares, hee cryes out aloud; Gods-bores, what a deale of doe is here about nothing? You are a couple of coxe-combes both of you; for I can assure you, this is as very an Asse, as my father. He that will boast himselfe to be a thiefe, and desires to bee listed in the rolle of those that have gotten greatest fame, let him endevour to doe things bravely, let him be an honourable thiefe, and not of that basenesse of minde, as to stoope so low, as to rob an hearbe-wifes shop of a rope of onions, or Tops and Gigs, and such other toyes as little children use to play withall, which serve but from hand to mouth, to feed other thieves withall; who will use thee no otherwise, then men doe their slaves: you must pay them daily tribute, or else you must be packing; they will not care a pin for you. And yet for these petty thefts (though thou thinkst to scape with them, as things of nothing,) they may chance to chaine thee to the gallies, if not halter thee at the gallowes. A man should not (me thinkes) so much under-value his owne worth, as to prostitute his life to danger, and to lay open his shoulders to shame, for bables

A tale of three country fellowes

and trifles; nor, is it fit, that for so little, a man should pay so much. That a man should bee such a foole, as to indanger his necke for a Kirtle, or a couple of shirts.

Proverbe

Quien camisas hurta, jubon espera;[1] He that steales a shirt, lives in hope to have a doublet too. Let such a white-liverd-whoreson, doe that, which that valiant Captaine Capin Vitelo adviseth; *El mercader, que su trato no entiende, çierre la tienda*; That Merchant, that understands not his trade, let him shut up his shop.

But to let these thieves alone, and to come home to my selfe; what could I now doe, if I should come to be put to it? What's become of all my cunning thefts? I doubt me, I should be to seeke, how, where, and which way to begin. The Art of it, is gone from me, but not the feare. Every thing hath its course, and its time, it is now a great while agoe since I finger'd my fleame or lancent, or that I did let any man blood, my hand is nothing so nimble as it was, it is growne slow and dull, and knowes not well where to picke the veine. Beleeve it, There is no such Master as Practice. Use, and exercise, are excellent things, to keepe the hand in use: Which when it is wanting, the understanding gathers mosse, waxeth mouldy, and growes rusty.

Practice, a great master

Guzman comes to Milan

When we were come to Milan, we kept vacation for three or foure dayes. For I durst not as yet adventure to play. I was loath to have any thing to doe with your men of warre, for they alwayes play very warily. Your Souldiers are subtile cunning gamesters, and above all, beare a most malitious minde against a mans money. They are never quiet, till they have it. All, or the most part of them, would seeke to play upon some one advantage or other. I could not make use of my trickes, nor would they permit me to put them upon them, yet I must, whether I would or no, be forced to give way to theirs. Besides, of them I was sure to get but little, but might be in election to lose much. I was not minded to doe any thing there, save onely to

[1] There is also (which the Justice bestowes on rogues) *jubon de açotes: porque se los ajustan á las espaldas.* Covarruvias, p. 492.

round the City, to see what a manner of thing it was, what their trafficke, and such other greatnesses as it should afford our sight, and so afterwards to bid it farewell. And being thus resolved, I went to walke all that day from shop to shop, where I saw so many curiosities that I was taken with great admiration in the beholding of them, as also in the great trade, that was there driven, even in lesser things, that were of meaner value. CHAPTER VI

Standing one day in the midst of the Market-place, there came to Sayavedra, a handsome young youth, honestly clad, and well behav'd, and both in his garbe and fashion, a very fine Spaniard. But because his backe was towards me, I could not then discerne, nor understand more of him, but that they went a little aside off from me, where alone by them-selves, they entertained talke a good while : which put me in a great muse, thinking with my selfe, what might be the cause, that these two should treat together with that secresie, not having (as I did imagine with my selfe) ever seene one another before. Notwithstanding, that I might not breake off their discourse, to the end that I might see whither it tended, I stood still, and did not move from the place wherein I was, having still an eye, lest they should get out of my sight, observing their proceedings, and that if they should chance to go towards my lodging, I might (taking the start of them,) be there before them. And ever and anon, mine eye was upon them, but yet kept me still where I was, to the end that they likewise might not shift a foot, and so slip from me.

For, I did consider with my selfe ; if I should now call him unto mee, and aske him, what it was they talked of, Sayavedra might take occasion to make what excuse he list himselfe, and might make me this answer ; that by reason of my calling him away, they had not finished their discourse, nor as yet entertained talke to any purpose. Whereupon, for my better satisfaction, I thought it my best course, to continue there a little longer, and to leave them a large field, wherein to expatiate their minds, for I had no such earnest businesse elsewhere, as might presse

THE SECOND BOOKE

me to be gone. Now when it was almost dinner-time, this young youth tooke his leave, and went about his businesse ; And I was likewise willing to doe the like ; for all this while I was wonderfull jealous, and had a strong suspition, that they had plotted together to put a tricke upon me. And Sayavedra, not saying a word to me, nor I to him, my feare was thereby the more increased, and began more and more to doubt what their drift might be. Watching him with no lesse care then a Cat would watch a Mouse. For Suspition, is a shrewd worme, which lies still gnawing at the heart ; nor is it to be held a vice, when it setles it selfe upon a vicious man. For, accordingly as the natures and conditions of men are, so have we reason to be more, or lesse suspitious : Fearing every man so farre forth, as his fashion and carriage may occasion this feare. But for as much as the desire that we have after this, or that other thing, makes us to rush violently on, and break through the bars of all difficulties whatsoever, although I would faine have held peace, and did strive all that I could to keepe in this tongue of mine, yet could I hold no longer, (no though my life had layen upon it) but I must needs aske him ; who that young man was, and what might be the subject of this their long discourse ? yet did I forbeare for the present, making no words thereof till I had dined, and then taking my time, calling Sayavedra unto me, I said thus unto him ; That young man, that was with you this morning, me thinks I have (if I be not much mistaken) seene him heretofore in Rome. Is not his name Mendoça ?

The nature of suspition and jealousie

No Sir, (said Sayavedra) his name is Aguilera ; nor hath he his name for nought : for he is an Eagle that will flie at any thing, nothing comes amisse to him, he is still ready upon all occasions. He is a good fellow, and a fine companion ; he is likewise a brother of the Companie, and such a one, as none of them all can out-strip him, he hath more tricks then a hundred of them, there is more resort to his Lectures, then to all the other Readers beside, put them all together.

Aguilera, a famous theefe

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VI

O, this Aguilera hath tickling tallons, and what he once seazes on, is sure his owne, he goes sheere away with it, and tis never heard of any more. He hath a quicke apprehension, a nimble wit, a strong braine, a sound judgement, he is an excellent pen-man, and such an Accomptant, either for the keeping of a Merchants booke, or summing up of any recknings whatsoever, that I know not his fellow. We have knowne one another these many yeeres, we have travayled together, and endured many particular troubles, and perils. And now he hath beene at me, to put me upon one, which may turne to our exceeding either great good, or hurt, it being with us, as with those that goe to Sea, either a happy voyage, or a miserable ship-wracke. For he that will goe to Sea, must resolve before-hand to encounter with dangers; especially, being that betweene our death, and our life, there is no more then the springing of a planke, or the slipping of a cord.

He gave me an account, how he came to this Citie, with a purpose to seeke out as well as he could some meanes whereby to live. But, because he would not ingulphe himselfe, before he had first sounded the water, and that he might not within two dayes after his arrivall, be taken up for a vagabond, or some masterlesse-hound, he had by good hap lighted upon an entertaynment, which might quit cost without suspition; for he had now placed himselfe with a Merchant of this Citie, who had received him into his service for the goodnesse of his hand, and hath serv'd him now a yeere, and somewhat more very faithfully and truly, looking when he might play the jade with him, and give him a sound kicke with his heeles, and get safe away from him, as your Mules use to doe, when they once come to be seven yeere old; who kicke at those, that have kept them.

He farther told me, that we should lay our heads together, and draw one or two good fellowes into our companie, and joyne together, to knead such a cake, and to make us such a swinging pastie, that we might feed our fills, and free our selves from this poore and miserable kinde of life, wherein

now we live. But I was loath to hearken thereunto, holding it not so convenient, for two respects.

First, because I found my selfe already so well fitted to my minde, that I did not desire to leade any better life, then that I now did with you: And secondly, for that a great deale of consideration is to be required, before a man leape out of one course of life into another. A little (I knew) could not content us; and to carry away much, it was impossible, wanting conveniencie of meanes to doe it. Here, we could not hide our selves out of the way, or keepe our selves secret above foure dayes; nor could we secure our selves by flight, but that we should be taken, before we had gone foure steps out of Towne, so that we should either leave our necks there longer then the marke, or our persons so rack't and so tortur'd, that they would never after be usefull unto us. We gave, and tooke; he argued, I answered: In conclusion, he prest me hard unto it; but I stood off; so that we did not joyne issue, and all that had past betweene us, was to no purpose. Many designes, many devices were tost to and fro betweene us; but I did not like of any one of his propositions. For when the conclusion does not handsomly follow, the meanes thereunto are impertinent, and the grounds naught. So for that time he left me, because his houre was come, that he must hye him home; nor would he willingly be wanting, when his master should have occasion to use him. Hastning perhaps his departure the sooner, because he saw he could doe no good upon me, and that all our talke was to no end in the world.

This, that Sayavedra had told me, did neither secure my suspition, nor worke an absolute unbeleefe in me, because I thought with my selfe, it was not a thing unlikely. I call'd for my cloake, and out of doores we went, with a purpose to walke abroad into the fields to recreate our selves. And albeit, the most part of that evening, we talk't of other things; this feare, was never out of my head, but where-soever I went, or what-soever I did, I was still thinking upon it, and it would never out of my minde;

devising with my selfe, whether I were best to beleeve him, CHAPTER VI
or no; or whether trusting to his honestie, and depending on the profession of his love unto me, he might play the Jacke with me, and strike me, like a shovell-boord peece[1] (being now a ledger) into the box, and himselfe remaine upon the boord in my place. And if he should thus play the box with me, of whom should I complaine, but mine owne folly? or whom can I justly blame but my selfe? A man may beare with one slippery tricke that is playd him, and if he pocket it with silence, or otherwise dissemble it, he may very well be excused; but to be cozened twice one after another, and by one and the same party, he deserves to have the Asses saddle clapt on his backe. What assurance can I have from this man, or how may I dare to trust him, since, (as it is in the proverbe) *nunca buena viga se* Proverbe *hizo de buen cohombro*;[2] a crooked Cucumber, never made straight rafter. He that is naturally given to knavish tricks, will hardly, or never leave them. And were not this a fine one above the rest, that he should put a full stoccado upon me, and goe brag when he had done, that he had beaten a master of defence at his owne weapon? Did I not deserve to be laught at, if I should suffer him to carry away the bucklers from me in this fashion? But as mine Proverbe eye was never off from the doore[3]; so my hand was still upon my distaffe.[4] I was now become another Argos in mine owne businesse; and another Ulysses, to looke to his water. Plotting with my selfe, how (if that were true, which he told me) I might helpe them to come off safely and

[1] The Spanish phrase is: *y me diesse un cabe, que passasse la raya. Cabe en el juego de la argolla, es la distançia que ay de una á otra bola, que para serlo, por lo menos ha de caber en medio la paleta, sin tocar á ninguna de los dos, y de aqui tomo el nombre: y cabe de paleta es el que esta tan junto, que de una bola á otra, no ay mas tierra ó suelo, del que puede tomar la paleta tendida en medio, y errarle, es de ruynes jugadores, y para ser cabe, ha de hazer que la bola de su contrario, tocada con el golpe de la suya, passe de la raya del juego, y vale dos piedras ó pedradas.* This *Argolla*, is an ordinarie play in Spaine. Covarruvias, verb. *Cabe*, 161.

[2] *Tortusque per herbam, Cresceret in ventrem cucumis.* Virgil. 4. *Georg.*

[3] *Siempre tuve los ojos en la puerta.*

[4] *Nunca me faltaron las manos de la rueca.*

cleanely with this businesse, in case it might be a matter of some moment and consideration, and that I might be sure it would free them from beggery, and make them for ever after to live like men. For, to bestow a great deale of cost upon that, which will yeeld but little profit, were foolishnesse, if not meere madnesse. There is no thrift, no good husbandry in it. The imploying of our paines, and our purse, ought to be answerable to the gaines and profits, that will come of it. For a man to limbeck his braines, a whole, nay, many nights, for Moone-shine in the water, or such a poore commoditie, as will scarce pay for a meales meat, is such a foolery, as no wise man will trouble his head about it. But because it might haply prove a rich voyage, and might haply speed better then we were aware of, when we had done walking, and were now come home to supper, seeing Sayavedra looke somewhat sad and heavy, as if something did trouble him, I said unto him; Me thinks (Sayavedra) thou robbest thy selfe of thy mirth, because thou canst not rob others of their money. This Merchants great wealth, doth greatly disquiet thee. Is that which thou musest upon (for I see thou art in a browne studie) some rare plot, one of Archimedes his quaint inventions? I can assure thee, I know a friend of mine, that would make a third in this businesse, and a fellow I tell you, that will not shrinke in the wetting, so as it may be a good fat purchase indeed, none of these leane carrion commodities, but one that may have some good tacke and substance in it.

Guzman falls aboord Sayavedra, concerning the robbing of the Merchant of Milan

What tacke, what substance would you have, sayes Sayavedra? There is twenty thousand ducats, and a better penny to be had, if we can handsomely light upon it. There is cloth enough (Sir) to cut out, to content us all, if we will our selves, which we may order and dispose, as we shall best thinke fit. Well, (quoth I unto him) I pray God, it come not to be cut out for us into shrowds (you know my meaning) and then all will be well. But I prithee tell mee one thing; seeing thou standst thus plodding, and musing on the matter, is it possible that thou hast not

yet setled upon some one invention or other, that may serve the turne, make the game sure, and strike it dead at thy foot ? CHAPTER VI

No in good faith (Sir) not any, replyes Sayavedra ; I cannot hit upon the right joynt ; I have now loytred so long, that I am as farre to seeke, as if I were but newly entred into my A.B.C. I have taken my pleasure, and liv'd so much at ease of late, that through too much idlenesse, those spirits and blood, that should quicken my understanding, and put life into it, are growne dull and muddy ; and my wits, for want of use, as rustie as olde yron. A thousand times, I seeke to fall into my old trot, but I have scarce strucken two strokes, but I grow resty and lazie, and am not able for my life to pace one true step, or to bring my selfe to that perfection and readinesse of hand, to winde you this way, or that way (or whithersoever you would have me to goe) as I was wont to doe. Many projects proffer themselves unto me, but I pitch upon none, as misliking all ; proposing this and that, and t'other course ; but in conclusion, none sorted to my liking.

When I heard him say so, I thus made answer thereunto. Since it is a busines of that importance as thou sayst, what share shall I have out of it, if I shall rid you of this care, and bring you (like valiant conquerors) bravely off with the victory ?

Sir (said Sayavedra) my part, and my person are both at your disposall ; but as for Aguilera, you were best talke with him your selfe, and when you two are agreed, I make account the businesse is as good as ended, and all shall be as we would have it.

Goe to then (said I) goe and seeke him out, and see if you can come to speake with him, but with that secrecy, that you be sure you be not seene by any of his masters house ; and wish him (when his leysure will give him leave) that he and I may talke a word together, and it shall not be long ere he and I be better acquainted, being I know him (by your report) so well already.

He did so: sending a ticket secretly unto him; and when we were met, I began to wyre-draw him, and to question him somewhat more particularly, touching his masters disposition, his condition, and qualitie, what store of wealth he had, in what commodities it did most consist; how, and where it lay; what moneys he had in present cash, and under what keyes? When I had done; he began to make his relation unto me, in this manner, as I here deliver unto you.

Sir, I assure my selfe Sayavedra hath sufficiently informed you of me; yet my selfe shall give you to understand, that I am by my profession a caulker of ships,[1] and a reasonable good mariner, but as poore, as poore may be. And albeit I am not ignorant, that thousands with a great deale lesse wit, have growne to a great deale of wealth in the world, yet I have seene some others more able, and more deserving, to have come to the gallowes, my selfe being none of those, that have least deserved it: for which escape, I render infinite thanks to his divine Majestie. It is a yeere, and somewhat more (which is the time of my abode in this Citie) that I have served a Merchant, and have taken a great deale of paines in his service. And it is about some foure moneths since, that he hath made me the keeper of his cash. All his bookes, are in my hands, but his moneys, in his owne. *Amo et timeo*: I love, and yet I am afraid; nor can I resolve with my selfe, how I may so handsomely rob him, that I may not afterwards come to cut capers in the ayre; and to venture a stretching, for that which is not worth the catching, it were better for me to continue

[1] The Spanish word is, *Calafate*: That is to say; *El que con maço y escoplo aprieta las junturas de las tablas, de modo que no pueda calarlo el agua.* It seems to be a Flemish word. Becanus in his fourth booke *Hermathenæ*, page 74, saith thus: *Caluatem, esse idemque ultimam manum navibus imponere, et efficere, ne aquam per rimas ullas admittant, quod tamen verbum per excellentiam navibus tribuitur; cum alioquin ad quævis vasa integra reddenda spectet, ubi ratio ipsius requirat*, etc. But by Becanus leave, howsoever he would fetch this word from the Flemings; I must be so bold as to affirme, that it is derived from the Hebrew word *Caphar, bituminare.* And from thence, Cafatar, and *Calafatar*, by interposing the letter *l*, whence it comes to be *Calafate.* Covarruvias, p. 172.

still as I am. But where much is to be had, a man will hazard himselfe much. Here is store of gold to be had, and he is worthy to weare it, that winnes it. I have communicated my minde to Sayavedra; for it is more then one man can doe, to manage such a peece of businesse, as is this. He had need to conferre with some confident friend, or other, or more, whom he is assured he may safely trust. For, as mens opinions are divers; and so many heads, so many mindes; every one delivereth (as his judgement shall direct him) which is the best course he thinks to be taken. And sometimes it so falleth out, *Quod bonus dormitat Homerus*: That the wisest man, doth not alwayes hit upon the right: when as a shallower braine, doth now and then wade, and that happily too, through the deepest fords of humane affaires. And when, this last night, I received Sayavedra's ticket, wherein he signified, that he was desirous to speake with mee, I thought it was no idle errand, that he went about, but that there was something in the winde, what ever it were. For I have knowne him a long time; and that it is not his fashion to put forth to Sea, but when he hath some good prize in chase. And I am verily perswaded, that if this matter be wisely handled, and that we finde good firme footing in the passage of this ford, and through our owne indiscretion, doe not wilfully cast away our selves, we may bring this businesse bravely about, and make our selves men for ever.

Touching his wealth, I can truly affirme unto you, (as one that knowes and hath often seene it) that those commodities, which he hath now in cellerage and other ware-houses within his owne doores, which to Gentlemen, and others that want moneys, he sells upon credit [1] at excessive deare

[1] The Spanish word is, *Mohatra*: That is; When the merchant sells upon credit at unreasonable price, and by his brokers buyes them afterwards at easie rates. *Mohatra*, is likewise, when a man buye as aforesaid, and sells cheape. They that are in want, for to satisfie some debt, use these *Mohatras*. Some derive it from the Hebrew word *hatar*, *fodere*. Others say, *Mohatra*, quasi *mofatra*, from *mofar*, to mocke, or delude. This ill manner of buying and selling, is forbid by the lawes of Spaine, and is severely punished, being proved. Ley. 29. tit. 4. lib. 3. *de la nueva recopilación*, and Ley. 22. tit. 11. lib. 5. Covarruvias, page 552.

rates, buying them afterwards at easie prices by the helpe of his brokers, amount to more then twenty thousand ducats. Whereof, oftentimes he delivers me the keyes, out of the great trust and confidence, that he hath of mine honestie. Besides, he knowes very well, that those bales are too big for me to carry away, and therefore will spare the labour to lade my backe, with such unprofitable burthens as my weake shoulders are unable to beare. That which he hath cofered up in two yron chests, in severall sorts of coyne, come to some fifteene thousand ducats, and better. And in his *Escritorio*, or Tye, that he hath in his shop, some twelve dayes since, did he shut up a delicate dapple gray Cat,[1] as gentle, and as tame as my selfe, not with his eyes sparkling, nor his nayles scratching, nor his teeth as sharpe as any razor, but cram'd full with crownes, three thousand crownes, in good, dainty brave ruddocks, all good double pistolets, some peeces of two, and some of foure, not one single one amongst them all. Which he hath purposely laid aside for a certaine Merchant, who is to take them upon use for six moneths, which he will looke to be well paid for. There is not a man in all this Towne that hath so bad a name, or is so ill belov'd, as he is. There is no man, that wishes him good; nor any whom he doth not hurt. There is not a true word, that comes out of his mouth, he hath not one friend in all the world, he is counted one of the Caterpillars of the Common wealth, and such a one as would cozen his owne father (were he living) and negotiates with none, whom one time or other, he doth not deceive. And well assured I am, that whatsoever losse should light upon him, it would be (as they say) *en haz y en paz*,[2] with the good liking of all men. I know not one man that would be sorry for it, but would laugh heartily at it, and make them-selves therewith exceeding merry.

[1] *Gato*, is not onely a Cat, but is also taken for a purse full of money, which is made of a Cat's skin. To a covetous rich miser they use to say; *Ata el gato*. Covarruvias, verb. *Gato*.

[2] *En haz y en paz. Como si dixera, con gusto de todos*. Covarruvias, verb. *Haz*, page 463.

DE ALFARACHE

He acquainted me likewise with his name, where he dwelt, in what place, and on which hand the cabinet stood, as also the box, wherein the Cat lay. He made me so good and perfect a relation of every particular, that I could have gone thither blind-fold, and have clapt my hand upon it. I askt him, whether there would be any matter of difficultie in procuring the print of his keies. He told me, that might easily be done; for that he had them all tyde to one little chaine, as well those that belong'd to the magazine of his merchandize, as those that serv'd to open his yron chests, which I ordinarily brought unto him; when, having occasion to take out some thing that he was to use, hee would call unto me to fetch them. But being (as he is) a most covetous miserable wretch, his suspition and jealousie was such, that he would be sure (for feare of the worst) that his eye should never be off from them, so loath was he to lose their sight. I was glad when I heard that this might be done with that facilitie, wherein I did imagine we should have found the greatest difficultie. Whereupon, I said unto him; That then, which wee must first of all begin with, and must be the ground, whereon we must worke, must be the getting of the print of these keyes in waxe, to the end that I may see the fashion of them, and set some Smith a worke, to make them out of hand, just in every respect according to that impression which shall be presented unto him in the waxe. CHAPTER VI

I moreover mentioned unto him, that it were very fit, that we should agree upon that which we should steale from him for the present, which I would have to be carryed in that discreet manner, that the muchnesse of it, should not so amaze us, as that we should not well know, which way to turne our hands; nor the meannesse, draw us on to adventure our persons for a trifle; where the danger shall be great, and the profit small.

Neither must we forget, that it is worthy our consideration, to determine before-hand, how the spoile shall be divided, that we may not afterwards differ, when we come to sharing. Well, this theft being resolved upon, say we

should come to finger this fine pretty pusse, this sweet cat, with a delicate pudding of three thousand crownes in her belly, and so proportionably reckning alike in the rest, be it more, or lesse, we will goe so much, or so much a peece, taking them out by the tale, as they use to doe, that sell sheepe. And for this money, if we shall rob him smoothly of it, all of us running equally the hazard either of the gallowes, or the sword, in all naturall reason, it ought to be, that as the danger was equall, so the gaine should be equall. And so we being three of us, every one ought to have a third part. But in case we shall play this game safely, and wade dry foot through this forde, and that you shall not be able to lay any fault to my charge, nor receive any punishment by my ill managing of the businesse, every one of us comming off with a good reputation both of his life, and fame, his credit uncrackt, and the nut (as they say) whole and sound, so good an Architect, or Surveyour of the worke, shall very well deserve some reasonable allowance over and above his fellow-labourers, for his good directions, and onely for his cunning contriving of the building, without any relation to the rest of his paines, that he shall take therein. And this meane I to carry away, as in reason I ought, as a due that properly belongeth unto mee. So that if I enter upon this businesse, and be the onely projector to bring it handsomely about, I will have one entire third part, wholly to my selfe, you shall make no scruple of it, but let it come faire and quietly to me, and the other two thirds that remaine, shall be equally divided into three parts, whereof you shall have one; Sayavedra, another; and my selfe, the third. So that in this, we will all share alike.

This was controverted to and fro, and much adoe there was about it. But because I had the major part of voyces on my side, to wit, mine owne, and that of my servant Sayavedra, who was well contented therewith, and for that the goods which we strove about, was not any lawfull partition of a father amongst his children, we quickly agreed on the matter. Well, I had the print of them de-

livered unto me in waxe, and caused the keyes to be made out of hand, and Aguilera instructed us in the meane while, which were which; to the end that wee being throughly informed, which were for the shop, which for the cabinet, and which for one thing, and which for another, wee might know the better how to use them, when we should come to put this our enterprise in execution. I afterwards told Aguilera, that I would come the next morning, and speake with his Master, and that he should diligently observe all, that I did either say, or doe, for the better advancing of our future designes, and that every night we should see one another, and lay our heads together for the better ordering and finishing of that taske, which we had now taken in hand. He said it should be done, as I would have it; and so he went his wayes. CHAPTER VI

On the morrow I went to this Merchants Shop, and in the presence of his Servant Aguilera, after that wee had complemented a little together, and saluted each other, I said unto him; Sir, I am a Gentleman, that am but lately come to this Towne, with a purpose to buy some rarities and curiosities, which this City affordeth, as well for mine owne use as to gratifie my friends, because I am shortly to bee married in mine owne Countrey; and have for that end brought along with me a matter of three thousand Duckats, and somwhat more, which are now at my Lodging: I have no acquaintance here in this Towne; nor doe I know the fashion of this people; nor what their manner of proceeding and dealing is: Money you know is a dangerous commodity, and runnes many hazards; especially, when a man hath it not in that sure and safe custody as hee desireth. I know not what this or that other man is: I lye in a Lodging, where many other lodge as well as my selfe; no lesse then a hundred goe dayly in and out; and though they have given mee a key to my Chamber; yet am I halfe afraid they may have a fellow unto it, and that some inconvenience may thereby happen unto mee.

I have beene informed of your quality, as also of the worthinesse of your disposition, of your plaine and honest

dealing with all men; and therfore upon the good report that I heare of you, I am imboldened to come unto you, to intreat you that you would be pleased to do me that kindnes as to keep them for me some few daies, til I have made choyce and bought such things as shal serve my turne, and I shal returne you many thanks, and shall be ready upon any occasion that shal offer it selfe, to expresse my thankfulnesse unto you; I am a Gentleman, and know what belongs to the acknowledgement of a received courtesie.

My Merchant thought he had this money already in his possession; and I doe still strongly suspect, that hee and I did jumpe both upon one thing; hee, to make my money his; and I, to steale his, and make it mine. He made proffer unto mee both of his person and his house, and that I should as freely command it as if it were mine owne; and that hee should bee glad to serve mee in this or any thing else: hee bid mee bring it when I would, promising to keepe it carefully for mee, and that I should have it as oft, when, how, and in what manner my selfe should demand it of him, as my occasions required: so for the present wee tooke leave each of other; hee, with a resolution to keepe them; and I, with a promise to bring them thither: but I never came to him againe, till such time as we were to execute our exploit.

When Sayavedra and I were come home, he stood stocke still like an Asse, or like a maz'd man that had been garred out of his sleepe, and dreamingly drawes me out his words, asking mee where this money was to bee had, that hee was to have in his keeping? I fell a laughing, and said unto him; Didst not thou carry it him even now? With that hee laught. Laughest thou, quoth I? Is this a matter to bee laught at? I know that in the Cat, and the Cabinet, they are kept safe enough for me. Tell your friend Aguilera that wee must needs see him about an eight dayes hence, and will him to bring along with him his Masters *Borrador*,[1]

[1] *Borrador, el papel, donde primero se escrive o dibuxa por ensayo; y dixose assi, porque emendando, le van quitando, y poniendo, y assi se borra.*

or booke of remembrances, wherein hee sets downe his Solutes and his debts, what hee is to receive and what to pay. In the interim, while wee were tarrying for a good tide, and waiting for a fit time for the effecting of our purpose, Sayavedra having me one night to bed, finding when I had laid my selfe downe, no great desire to sleepe; for the working of my braines (thinking upon old businesses) kept me waking: I called to my servant, who comming unto me, I spake thus unto him.

A short tale of an Asse that made his Will

Sayavedra; I have a tale to tell thee, which though it bee but short, yet it is worth your hearing. I shall give thee therefore to understand, that once upon a time the Asse (that poore silly creature) fell sicke, and finding himselfe much oppressed and weakned with his disease, growing every day worse then other, insomuch that he was now almost brought to deaths dore; at the instance of his Kinsfolke, and the earnest intreaty of his Children, which were very many, he was moved to make his last will and testament; and each of them striving who should bee best left, and goe away with the greatest portion of their fathers goods, the lawfully begotten, and his bastard Children went together by the eares about it. But their honest and well-meaning Father, desiring to leave them in peace, and for avoyding of further wrangling, that every one should know his owne, and what hee should trust to after his death, was content in the end (for quietnesse sake) to make his Will, dividing his goods amongst them in this manner following.

The Asses Legacies

My Will and intent is, that my Tongue (when I am dead and gone) bee bestowed amongst such my Children as are Flatterers and Backbiters: to those other my children that are angry and cholericke, I bequeath my Taile for a cooler: my Eyes, I leave to the lascivious; my Braines, to Alchimists and judiciary Astrologers; my Heart, to the covetous; my Eares, to the seditious and sowers of discord; my Snout, to Epicures, Gluttons, and Drunkards; my Bones, to the sloathfull; my Loynes, to the proud; my chyne, to the obstinate: Let my hinder Legges, bee given to the

Lawyers ; my Fore-feete, to the Judges ; and my Head, to your Scriveners and Notaries. Lastly, I bequeath my Flesh, to the poore ; and my Skinne, to bee divided amongst my Bastard-Children.

I would not for any thing, that Aguilera, bearing us in hand that we should rob his Maister, should come to strip us of all that wee have, and leave us so naked, that wee should bee forced to cover our selves with the skinne of this our Testator. And I assure you, if hee should chance to put such a tricke upon us, he should shew himselfe a very wise and subtile fellow : and how we should be afterwards able to helpe our selves, God hee knowes ; for I doe not. I speake this unto thee, for that for the better prosecution of our intent, and that it may goe well with us, that out of those Doblones of ten, which I have here, wee give him some ten of them, which will amount to a hundred Crownes ; which being no small ingagement, may much further our affaires. But I would not in any hand, that giving us a backe blow, and shewing us a faire paire of heeles, he should slip his neck out of the collar, and by little and little fall off from us.

True dealing amongst thieves

Sayavedra, perceiving the doubts that I began to cast with my selfe ; to free me of this suspition, made mee this answere, Sir, if wee should put all the five hundred into his hands ; nay, say they were five hundred thousand : yet, forasmuch as it is a custome amongst us, and a rule that wee never breake, to use all faith and fidelity amongst our selves, and never to be false one to another, in a thousand yeares they will not deceive you of so much as one poore mite ; but you shall have your owne againe to a farthing. And therefore feare you nothing ; let mee runne the hazard of it, and put it to my account : for I shall bee content to stand to any losse that you shall suffer thereby.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VII

The robbing of the Merchant of Milan, falls out as luckily as Guzman de Alfarache could have wisht it. Aguilera shares so much with him as of right belonged unto him: And hee and his servant Sayavedra goe for Genoa

FORASMUCH as Hope doth not assure us of a true and reall possession, it evermore makes us carry about us a troubled and unquiet minde, our thoughts never taking rest, out of the great feare that wee have, lest wee should faile of that which wee so earnestly desire: Onely, it is *Solatium miseris*, the sole comfort that afflicted soules have; and that safe harbour whereon they relie; being that from it, a certaine shadow (as it were) of shelter and refuge, whereby those cares and troubles are eased and lightened, which our hopes delay, doth lay upon us. And as that hope which is secure and certaine doth dilate and extend our hearts to an assured affiance of that which wee expect; so there is not any paine affordeth greater torment, then that which we endure when we once come to lose it. And little lesse is our griefe, when it defers its comfort. Of Hope

How many and how various thoughts did distract in this short time my two stipendary Pensioners: For, having not given them any more light, then what I have already told you, of my designe; I had onely sweetned their lips, and left them (as it is in the Proverbe) *Con la miel en la boca*,[1] with a smatch of some honey in their mouth; and therefore they could not choose but reele this way and that way, staggering and wavering with their thoughts, and in the severall Maps of their inconstant imaginations, one conceiving this, another that, hatch a thousand strange Proverbe

inventions; chewing the cudde, as it were, and ruminating with themselves, when (a Gods name) they should set themselves roundly to the businesse, what the plot might bee, and how to be effected, longing to see the issue of these promised and hopefull ends, which made them almost at a stand; being (as it should seeme) somewhat doubtfull whether it would goe on or no: and if it did; yet could they not devise with them-selves how, and in what manner this businesse was to be carried.

Guzmans cunning plot, for to cozen the Merchant of Milan of his money

But when they saw the Sunne of that day appeare, no lesse by them, then my selfe, desired; and that Aguilera had brought me that his shop-booke of accounts, according as I had appointed him. I turn'd to one of the leafes towards the latter end of the booke, where I found some memorials booked eight daies before, and in a voyd place, or blanke, where nothing was written, I set downe this that followeth: Left with me by Don Juan Ossorio, three thousand Crowns in gold, some being peeces of ten, but most of them, of two, and of foure. Over and above, he likewise left with me two thousand Royals, in good Royals of plate. Afterwards I drew a line upon what I had written, to shew that the booke was crost: And wrote in a different letter on the margent, *llevolos*, *llevolos*; which is as much as to say; All this money is mine. Afterwards I shut to the booke, and gave it him againe, and together with it ten Doblones of ten; willing him, that when he opened the Cabinet, he should take a hundred other out of the Catt, and put those in their roome. I likewise gave him two billets; whereof the one said; These three thousand Crownes belong to Don Juan Ossorio; And the other said, Here are two thousand Royals in plate, whose true owner is Don Juan Ossorio. I did moreover advise him, that if there were any other bill, or note, in the bag, hee should take it forth, and leave mine only there. And that of the two thousand Royals, hee should clap it into another great bag, wherein Aguilera had already told mee, there were some seventeene thousand more, or there-abouts, for he could not know the just number in regard they did daily

put in other fresh moneyes amongst them. And that he should withall remember, that this great bag of silver, lay in a great chest, next unto his Cabinet, and that the bag was marked with a great spot of inke neere unto the mouth of it. With these instructions, Aguilera went his way, having taken order with him, that he should that night without faile, put every thing in its right place, according as I had given him direction. The day following, as soone as I had dined, I walked leisurely along to the merchants shop, with my man at my heeles, as if I had knowne no such matter, dissembling the businesse very handsomely. When I was come thither, and that his eye was upon me, as soone as he saw me, he was wondrous glad; thinking I had brought that with me, which I meant to demand of him. We did agree both in one, in respect of the purpose that we had to deceive each other; but my plot was another kind of gambol, then he was aware of. We had both one end, but the meanes were divers. Now, when wee had saluted one another, I said unto him; To morrow, Sir, shall I send this my servant unto you with a bag, and a ticket with it, desiring you that you will be pleased to give a quicke dispatch, and to send him backe unto me as soone as you can, because I shall have occasion to use his service. My poore silly Merchant, whose minde was more bent, how he should out-strip mee by his cunning, then fearfull, that I should goe beyond him, and prove in the end the craftier knave of the two; thought that my meaning was, that the money should be brought him the next morning; and so said unto me, Sir, your desire shall be fulfilled: you shall have it when-soever you please to send for it.

With that, I got me out of doores, and had scarce gone twenty paces, but I returned backe againe, and said unto him; Sir, since I went from hence, I have better bethought my selfe, and have present occasion to use this money, and therefore (I pray) let me have it. The mans colour began to change, and seeming to be somewhat troubled, he said unto me; What money, Sir, is that you would have of mee? All, Sir, (said I) all, for I have occasion to use all of it.

Whereunto hee replied; What all? What all, quoth I? All the gold and the silver. He answered me, What gold, what silver? I told him, That silver and gold Sir which you have here of mine. I, any gold, or silver of yours, No Sir, (said he) I have no silver, nor gold of yours, nor doe I know what you meane. Sir, said I, (answering him somewhat roughly) doe you make it so strange, thinke you I doe not know what I speake? I am neither mad nor drunke; this is pretty fine dealing indeed: this tricke will not serve your turne. Nor yours neither, Sir, said he; Me thinkes yours is the prettier of the two, in demanding that of me, which you never gave mee; nor have I any thing of yours. No Sir, quoth I, Take heed what you say. Let me wish you to be a little better advised. Leave off your jesting, and come to earnest, for I can assure you, this is no jesting matter; I must not be so answerd, nor doe I take it well at your hands. Very good Sir, (said he) very good ifaith: it is you Sir that are disposed to jest, and to make your selfe merry with me. No more (good Sir) it is enough, I pray be gone, I have something else to doe, then to finde you talke. How Sir, be gone? Nay, by your leave (quoth I) there is more in it then so. I must not goe hence without my money. Money, (said he) what money would you have of me? What is your demand? Marry, I demand (said I) those Crownes and Royals which I left with you the other day. With me, (said he) you never left any Crownes nor Royals with me: Goe looke your Crownes and Royals else-where; the devill a crosse that I have of yours. Then said I unto him, Are you not ashamed to avouch this before these Gentlemen, that are here present, who but even now before them, when I told you that I would send my man to morrow for them; you answer'd mee, hee should have them; and now that I come to you for them my selfe (having present use for them) doe you deny me them with one and the same breath? Deny you Sir, (said he) I deny you nothing; nor nothing shall you have of me: for I received nothing of you; and nothing shall I returne you. How Sir, nothing? Did not I Sir,

some eight dayes since bring you these moneys, desiring you to keep them for me, and did not you your selfe receive them from me? Give me therefore my moneys, and that presently, for I will not that you keepe them one minute of an houre longer in your hands. In my hands, (said he?) I have not so much as one farthing of yours in my hands: and therefore God be with you Sir, I have no more to say to you. It is the Devill that deceiveth us all. I think so indeed (quoth I:) for sure the Devill did deceive mee when I trusted you with my money. And with that, my inflamed choller, having set my whole face on fire, I angerly said unto him; What meanest thou by this, that thou wilt not restore me my money? before thee and I part, I will make thee lay it downe here on this board, even to the uttermost farthing, or else I will know why I shall not; Be wise therefore in time, and well advise with your selfe (I would wish you) what you doe, for feare of after-claps The poore man was so troubled, and struck into such a feare, when he saw I was so hot and chollerick in the businesse, and so resolutely bent upon it, that he had not a word to say; yet at last, with a kinde of counterfaite smile, seeming to make a jest of my words, hee bid me bee gone, one while in Gods name, another in the devils; saying, that he knew me not, nor who I was, nor what was my name, nor the thing that I demanded of him. Whereupon, turning my selfe about to those (which were many) that were there; Art thou so impudent (said I) as to say, Thou dost not know who, nor what I am, thinking thereby to out-face me, and to cozen me of those moneys thou hast of mine in thy hands? But I doubt not but I shall finde good justice in Milan, and that (though full sore against his will) he should be forced to make mee present payment.[1] My man denies it more and more, telling me, I had much mistaken my marke; and that I might happely have given it to some body else to keepe: for he stood stiffely unto it, that he neither had any money of mine, nor did owe me

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Un pie a la Françesa. Vale, al instante.* Covarruvias, verb. *Pie.*

the value of one farthing, though indeed (he said) he must thus farre forth confesse the truth ; That I came unto him, and that I told him, I would leave so much money in his hands to keepe for me, but that I never brought them unto him, nor that he did either see or touch, one farthing of mine : And therefore, if I had a mind so to doe, I might goe a Gods name, and complaine to the Justice, and that if it should appeare that hee ought me any thing, hee should bee very willing to give me satisfaction. When I saw hee had armed himselfe with this resolution, I did open the doores of my lips a little wider, foming at the mouth for very anger, and straining my throat to a higher key, said unto him ; O thou false traytor, heavens justice over-take thee, and let all the plagues light upon thee that the earth can affoord, (vile and wicked man as thou art) wilt thou thus then rob me of my moneys before my face, and thus injuriously goe about to undoe me ? I must have thy life, or my money. And therefore make no more adoe, but bring me hither presently my three thousand Crownes : bring them I say, and quickly too ; it shall not boote thee to denie them ; for I will either teare them out of thy throat, or make thee lay it downe here, in good gold and silver, as thou hadst it of me.

The house was all in an uprore, and those likewise, which were present there from the beginning, that this difference happened betweene us. Upon this coyle and stirre that was betweene them, there came in many into the shop, as they past along the street, besides a great number of the neighbours, asking one another, what was the matter ? For now were we growne so loud, that we did not well understand one another. All that were there, went enquiring, what was the cause of all this noyse, what wee quarreld about, not so few as a hundred were talking here and there, of it, and every one relating it each to other, some in one manner, and some in another, whilest we within drowned all that the other said, so earnest was the contesting that was betweene us. In the heat whereof comes me in a *Bargello*, an officer of the same nature with our

Alguazil in Castile, a kind of Sergeant or Catchpole, but he bare no Vare or white rod in his hand, as ours doe, and making the people to give way, hee came up where we were, being both (through the heat of our choller) as hot, and as red as coales. When I saw the Justice present (howbeit he was a stranger unto me, and knew him no otherwise then as he was the Justice) I saw my sute at an end, and that the cause was like to goe with mee. And here taking my Cu, I began in a milder temper to speake thus unto those that were by: Gentlemen, you have seene and heard that which hath here passed betweene us, and how, and in what manner, this naughty man hath deny'd mee mine owne money; let his owne man speake the truth concerning this businesse, and if hee (out of his respect to his Master) shall refuse to deliver what he knowes, let his owne Booke speake in my behalfe, wherein shall that appeare to be set downe, which he received of me, and in what parcels, and in what manner of fashion I delivered the said moneys unto him; to the end that it may be knowne unto you, which of us is the honester man, and speakes the most truth. Should I bee so shamelesse to aske a man that, which I never gave him? Into a Cat-skin bag, that he hath, he did put into that Cabinet three thousand Crownes of mine, some of two, and others of foure, and for to make my proofes more plaine and cleare unto you, he hath intermixed amongst them, ten Crownes of ten, which in the whole make up just the summe of three thousand Crownes. And in a bag, which he lockt up within that chest, (wherein he told mee there were at that time I delivered him my moneys, neare (together with mine) about some seventeene thousand Royals) did he put those two thousand, he had of mee: And if this (which I tell you) be not true, I am content to lose it all, and that you take my head from off my shoulders, for the arrantest traytor that ever spake with tongue; And if here in your presence, before I stirre a foot from hence, I doe not make good unto you all that I have said. Onely (Gentlemen) let me entreat (though a stranger) so much lawfull favour from you, that there may

present inquisition be made concerning this businesse (considering how neerely it concernes me) that he may not (by gaining of time) have opportunitie to transport them to some other place. And turning my selfe toward the *Bargello*, I said: See now (Sir,) I beseech you Sir to see, which of us two, treats falsehood, which entends deceit? The Merchant then said; I am content to stand to this motion, and to put my selfe upon this triall, I shall bring forth my bookes, I care not who see them, let them be perused, if any such thing be there to be found, you shall likewise see all the money, that I have in the house, and if any such thing shall appeare as this man would make you beleeve, I will confesse that he sayes truth, and that I am in the wrong. Then said they, that were present; This businesse is now ended, they are both agreed upon the point, and it will straight be seene, which of these two are in the right.

The Merchant commanded his servant, that kept his Cash, that hee should bring him his great booke of Accompts; He did so: but when he had brought it, I excepted against it, and sayd; O thou cozening companion; this is not the booke, it is a lesser then this, a little kind of Manuall, that a man may easily hold in his hand. Then he will'd him to fetch the Manuall that was in the Cashe, being a little thing of some foure sheets of paper, like a note-book. Which when he had likewise brought; No, no, (said I) what need so many trickes and devices? why doe you seeke to deceive us thus with your booke? this is not that which I would have, you need not to beat so about the bush, the bird that I looke for is not here; I askt for your chalke, and you give me cheese; I would see that, wherein you did set downe those particular summes of money, you received of me; it is a little long narrow booke; you know well enough which I meane, if you were disposed to bring it forth. Then said Aguilera, It may bee Sir he meanes that wherein you write your Memorials, for so it should seeme by the description of it; for there is not any other besides of that fashion, to my knowledge in the house.

And bringing it before us, hee turned himselfe towards me, and said ; Is this, Sir, the booke that you would have ? I answered, yes, this is it, this is it, and none but this. Now (Gentlemen) I pray see whether I say truth or no. This will decide the controversie, his cunning can no longer cloake it selfe, and this will make his knavery plainly appeare unto you. They began then (having the booke in their hands) to turne the leafes one by one, and when I spy'd mine owne hand, and what I had there set downe, I said ; I pray (Gentlemen) will you be pleased to looke upon this writing, and to see what it saith ; Reade I pray these parcels of moneys, which he hath crost and blotted out, (though the summes are easie to be seene) and by that which I here perceive, hee hath noted it in the margent to be paid. But this tricke shall not serve his turne, for I will have my money before I goe from hence. They did all looke upon it, and might easily discerne, those very summes, by me before mentioned. Whereat the Merchant was so mad, and so transported with passion, that he knew not what to say unto it, but began to curse and raile, and swearing a thousand oaths, vowd that he did not know of it, nor how it came there, nor who had written it. To cleare that doubt, I answered ; I wrote this my selfe, this I confesse to be my hand, but that in the margent is a different letter, and the quotation as false as God is true ; for hee never return'd me one penny of it ; and in that Cabinet that stands there, if he have not taken it thence, there are my Crownes.

Hereupon, like a furious Bedlam, he began to rage and rave extreamly, so that the standers by did undoubtedly beleeve, that all I had said, was true. And seeking to pacifie me (for I seemed to be very angry with this foule dealing of his,) they wished me to quiet my selfe, and to rest contented, for the crossing of his booke was not materiall, nor his writing in the margent, that he returned me my moneys, if those things should fall out right (as I had said) in the rest. What greater proof, (then said I) or what truer token can you have of my truth and his

falshood, then his late protestations, that he never received any one penny of me, and yet you here see it set downe, though having a purpose to play the rogue with me, he afterwards crost it out. If he received it, why does hee denie it? If he did not receive it, how comes it here? I pray you cause that Cabinet to be opened, where I doubt not but you may chance to finde my Doblones, where you shall light amongst them, upon ten Doblones of ten Crownes a peece? At this, the Merchant fell a fuming and a fretting, and stampt for very anger, refusing to open the Cabinet, and as stiffely striving against it, as if they should have offered to rip up his belly, and take out his heart, vowing and averring with sundry hideous oathes, and fearfull obsecrations, that all was roguery and villany, and that there was no such matter as I talkt of; and for those Doblones of ten, he did there confidently avouch before them all, that he had not one, or not above one, (if he had that) in all his house. Such adoe there was, to get him to open the Cabinet, as was wonderfull; He denied to doe it; The *Bargello* was as instant, as he was stubborne, and said, hee should doe it. The latter insisted to have the keyes; The other resisted, and said, hee should not have the keyes. When the *Bargello* saw this, he began to grow now as hot, as before he was jealous of his double dealing: and swore a great oath, that if he would not fetch the keyes, and open the Cabinet by faire meanes, and that quickly too, he would take it out of his house, and carrie it away with him, and give particular notice of all the whole busines, to the *Signor Capitan di giustitia*, (which is there with them of the same quality and authority as a *Corregidor* in Castile) and there desposite it, that the truth thereof might be knowne. At last (though sore against his will) he gave him the keyes; and when he had opened the Cabinet; Sir, (said I) there in such a Boxe did hee put them in a dapple-gray Cat-skinne: They opened that Boxe, and pulled out the Cat by the eares, and going to tell the money to see if it were right or no, a piece of the Billet shew'd it selfe. When I saw that, with somewhat a

more cheerefull countenance, I reard my selfe up and said : Let this Paper, I pray, bee read ; for that scroll will declare how much there is in the bagge, and whose it is. They read it, the Contents expressing Don Juan Ossorio, to bee their true owner. Well, they fell afterwards to telling of them and found them to bee just three thousand Crownes, with those ten of ten a piece which I told you of.

Things being brought to this push, and falling out so pat as they did, my Merchant was strooke as dead as a herring, he was absolutely now gone, quite overthrowne horse and foote, without hope of recovery, hee had not a word to say for himselfe, nor knew not in the world what to alleage in his owne excuse : it seeming unto him to bee *Opus Dæmonii*, that the Divell had a hand in it ; for hee thought it was impossible that any man should bee able to doe it. Besides, hee considered with himselfe ; that if I could finde hands, to put these things there, I might easier have found hands to carry them away.

Hee was quite beside himselfe, and cryed out, that all was lyes and nothing but lyes ; that his goods were wrongfully taken from him ; that this money was his, and no bodies else, that the Divell had put those Doblones there, and not hee ; that they should lay hold on mee, for I had a familiar, and a great many the like broken speeches.

Let them lay hold a Gods name on me (said I) so that I may have my money out of thy fingers. I gave him very rough and harsh language, telling him ; O thou Impostor, thou cheating raskall, hast thou yet a tongue to talke, seeing how evident thy wicked dealing appeares to all the world : open that chest too I pray ; for there lies my silver, I saw him put it in. There is no such thing said hee ; for all the silver that is there is mine, and so are these three thousand Crownes. How yours, I pray Sir, being you did but now confesse that you had no Doblones of ten ? It was Gods will to cause thee to forget that thou hadst received them, that I might not lose my monies. Hee that will denie another man his owne, had need of a good memorie, as also a care to remember what hee sayes.

When I first came in hither, thou toldest mee here before these Gentlemen, that to morrow I should have them, sending my man for them, and now that I came backe againe to demand them of thee, before the same Gentlemen, thou deniest to have any such thing in thy keeping. Let that Chest therefore (I pray) bee opened, take out all that is in it, and then it shall be knowne which of us two is the honester man, and who it is that lives by cozening others, either hee or I? They opened the Chest, and when I saw the bagge, though there were divers other there, some of more, and some of lesser summes, reaching forth mine arme I pointed out that with my finger, saying; this with the blacke spot is it. In conclusion, they found that to bee true, which I had said. And this truth was the more confirmed, when pouring out that bagge for to count the monies, they met with that other Billet, which said, That my two thousand Royals were in there amongst the rest: then I began to be louder then ever I was before, and cryde out unto him. Thou vile naughty man, thou false crafty Merchant, thou common coozener, thou enemy to God, thou that hast neither truth nor conscience in thee: is this thy honest dealing? this thy faire proceeding? this thy good usage of those that have to doe with thee? No marvell thou bee rich, if thou take this course with others, as thou hast done with mee: and if thou hadst my monies (as is apparant to all the world) how didst thou dare first to crosse and blot out what I had written; seeking thereby to defeate me of my due? And then afterwards so impudently to affirme that I had given thee nothing, and that thou didst not know whence I was, nor whither I would, and that you did not so much as know either me, or my name? What canst thou now alleage for thy selfe? Hast thou any more false money to coyne? any more lyes to stampe? See how thou art overtaken in thy mischiefe, how blinded by thine owne wickednesse, that thou hadst not the wit (which was Gods just punishment upon thee) either to take away these memorandums, or to hide the money? See how his divine Majestie hath beene pleased

to make good my innocencie, and to protect my simplicitie, that downe-right plainnesse, wherewith I committed my moneys to thy custodie, presuming that I should have them againe, when-soever I call'd for them. But I now verily beleeve, that he, that did advise me that I should trust thee with my moneys, was such another sharker as thy selfe; and one of your projectors for your profit, a blood-hound of your owne making, to winde out your commoditie. All they that were present, with this that they had seene and heard, were as much amazed, as offended, at the Merchants base and roguish dealing, being now throughly satisfied, that I had a great deale of reason, and justice on my side. The common voice was wholly in my favour, the proofes, and evidences seene and allow'd, and the ill report that ran of him before, did now ring in all mens eares. Insomuch, that not a man of them, but said; Fie upon him, doe you not see how this greedy Cormorant would have swallowed this poore Gentlemans moneys, which he had delivered unto him upon trust? But it is no such newes, that an usuring knave should like a Harpy, prey upon other mens goods. And had he not used the better diligence, and had his wits about him, it had beene all utterly lost, and damned for ever. The Merchant, who with his owne eares heard not only these, and the like, but far worse words spoken of him, had not so many mouthes, or tongues, where-with to satisfie so great a number, as there railed against him; nor indeed was it possible for him (as things were carried) to justifie himselfe, but stood like one, that did not well know, whether he were asleepe, or awake. It seemed then unto me, that he rub'd his hands and elbowes, to call himselfe to remembrance; or that he began to thinke with himselfe, whether he had lost those two potentiall faculties of his Understanding, and Memorie, and that onely his Will was remaining unto him, considering what had past. He (as I told you before) had gotten himselfe a very bad name, which made much for me, and was as good as halfe a proofe for the clearing of my businesse. And this punishment still lights upon them that leade a lewd life,

that sleight proofes are sufficient to overthrow them, and makes the cause goe currant against them. This onely of it selfe, without any farther adoe, would have serv'd the turne well enough to helpe me to my money againe, which was much strengthned by those that were there present at my first comming thither, who there tooke their oath, That he said unto me, that if I should send my servant unto him the next day following, I should not faile of my money, and that within a little while after, I returning thither againe, and demanding it of him, he denyed it unto me. His owne servant likewise swore, that I in his hearing (as being then present) did intreat his Master that he would keepe three thousand Crownes for me, and the aforesaid summe of Royalls, but whether I did deliver them unto him or no, he could not answer to that, but must refer it to his Masters booke of Accompts, which did not alwayes lye in the shop, but was often carried in, and more he could not say concerning this matter. My servant, he on the other side swore, that he told out the moneys with his owne hands, and delivered them unto the Merchant, in the presence of divers others, that were then in the shop, but knew not who they were, for he was a stranger in that place, and therefore could not have any knowledge of them. So that, what with the pregnant proofes of all that I had said, what with seeing in what manner he had crost the booke, what with finding the summes of money (by me mentioned) to fall out so just, both in their place, and number; as also, that every bagge had his particular billet, which told, whose the money was; they all tooke part with me, and were mainely bent against him, not suffering him to speake a word in his owne defence, nor to heare any thing that he could say, to excuse himselfe. He had spent all his breath in vaine, and had not now the spirit to talke any more; for, being strucken in yeeres, and seeing so strange, and unexpected an accident as this, which he did not so much as once dreame of, thinking it impossible that he should be thus over-reach't, waxed thereupon so pale and so wanne, as if he had beene a dying man, continuing

for a good space in a swound. All that were there, did verily beleeve, that my Merchant was dead, and that it was a just punishment of God upon him for his perjuric and false dealing; but he afterwards came againe unto himselfe, but so stupid and senslesse, that I began to take compassion of him. But in these his swounings, I did comfort my selfe, that if he should chance to dye, I should have had lesse misse of him, then of his money.

In a word, there was not any one, of all that were there, which did not say, Let the Gentleman have his money, give him his money. But I, knowing full well, that it was not the voyce of the vulgar (though I was beholding to their good wishes) that could assigne me my money; but that it must be awarded me by the power and authoritie of the Judge, and by course of Law, I was very warie in advising with my selfe, how I might prevent all future mischiefes, and that the end of this businesse might be answerable to its good beginning. And therefore when they all with one unanimous consent, and voyce, cryde out; The money is his; give the Gentleman his money, give him his money; I answered very mildly, and gently; No, not I; I will none of it, I will none of it; let it be deposited, let it be deposited. So, for the better justification of this businesse, the *Bargello*, that was there present, tooke away the money with him, and deposited it in one of the neighbours hands, that was an honest man, and un-interessed on either side. Which, with a little sute, was within a few dayes after by way of sentence, delivered unto me; My merchant being not onely cozened of his cash, but condemned in costs and charges of Court, besides the generall infamie, which by this meanes fell upon him.

When I saw so much money in these poore and sinfull hands, I did often thinke upon that theft, which Sayavedra had done upon me, which though it were not of that great value, yet was it not so little, but that then it fell out to my great hurt, albeit afterwards, it turned to my greater good. For if that had not beene, I should not have knowne so much as I now doe,nor come off so cleanely with this theft.

Proverbe

And therefore comforting up my selfe, I said; it was the better for me, that I broke my leg.[1] It might have hapt worse with mee, had it not hapt so ill. My marring, was my making; my losse, my gaine. So that all fell out to the best. For from that time, ever since, have I liv'd in greater credit, and better furnished with moneys, then before I was rob'd. I was growne rich, Sayavedra releeved, and Aguilera had well patcht up a broken estate. I carryed my moneys home with me, as merrily as the heart of man can possibly imagine. I clapt it safe under locke and key, I looked charily unto it, and lapt it up very warme, that it might not catch cold. And albeit all things succeeded thus happely with me, yet Sayavedra, though he felt it, had it in his hands, and toucht it againe and againe, yet could he not beleeve it was there. It seemed unto him as a dreame, and thought it an impossibilitie, that this businesse should prove so lucky. He fell a blessing of himselfe with both his hands, as oft as he thought upon my craft and subtletie. For albeit, when he was acquainted with me in Rome, and knew my course of life, and did perceive by my cariage, and manner of proceeding, that I had a subtle wit of mine owne, yet for all this did he not thinke, nor could be brought to beleeve, that I had so much store, as he now found to be in me. Or that I had beene so good an Archer as I was, to kill birds, as they were flying in the ayre.[2] He supposed, I must have come much short of himselfe; for he was many yeeres my ancient, and might very well (for his standing) have beene my master, and I his apprentise some six yeeres at the least, to have learned the Trade. I said then unto him; Friend Sayavedra; This is true knowledge, this is the right skill of it, this the Art, and the cunning, to steale without danger, and to live and thrive well by it.[3] As for those things, which thou didst preach unto me upon the way, they were lessons of the Turkish *Alcoran*, meere

Proverbe

[1] *Si me quebre la pierna, quiça por mejor.*

[2] *Matarlas en el ayre*, i.e. *fer un hombre muy agudo, y cortesano.* Covarruvias, verb. *Matar.*

[3] *Hurtar, sin peligrar, y bien medrar.*

toyes, and trifles to these. To steale a kirtle, and receive a hundred stripes for it, every foole can doe this. Your expences, exceed your receits ;[1] and the gaines, will not quit the cost. And therefore, wheresoever I shall come, such as you may vayle bonnet, strike sayle, stooping your standard to mee, reverencing mee as your king and superiour. CHAPTER VII

Some two dayes after, comes Aguilera for his share, stealing by night unto us. And had it not beene for Sayavedra, I had show'd him Velez his tricke, who ranne away with the bride, and the bride-cake too. The devill a penny he should have had of me. But because I was willing to uphold my reputation with him, and that he might not conceive an ill opinion of me, by leaving so foule an impression of falsifying my word behinde me, and that he might not take occasion to say to himselfe ; Surely, if this man deale so unjustly with another, it is a thousand to one, he will use me in the same manner. I must drinke in the end of the same cup, as he hath done ; I would not hazard much, to get a little. Aguilera told us, that his master was even ready to dye for very griefe, and almost mad with imagining how this was brought about, and that it would not sinke into his head, but that this was the devils doing, and that he, and none but he, was able to bring such a thing to passe. I told him out a hundred crownes, for those Doblones of ten, which he had received of me with his owne hands, and gave him just to a haire, as much as his share came too. Having dispatcht him, I came to Sayavedra, and offred him his part, together with the gaines of the former five hundred crownes. But he told me, that he knew he was sure enough of them, whensoever he should have occasion to use them, and that not knowing well where to keepe them, he was content they should remaine still in my hands, till he should finde some fitter opportunitie to dispose of them.

Guzman shares the theft with Aguilera, and Sayavedra

We continued in Milan, some ten or twelve dayes after this, though not altogether free from feare, lest the winde

[1] The Spanish phrase is ; *Mas es la data, que el cargo.*

might chance to chop about; and therefore we did agree to goe from thence, and to get us to Genoa, making no body living acquainted with our intended journey, nor spake so much as one word of it our selves, for feare of what might follow thereupon. But rather gave out, that wee were to goe for some other place, farre wide of that, faigning a businesse, which did much concerne us, to make all the haste we could.

It was my chance (before I went away) to walke through one of the streets in Milan, wherein there was such choyce and variety of wares, and in that abundance, that I stood amazed at the sight of them; and by chance I espyde a chaine in a certaine shop, which they had sold to a Souldier: which in my eye, was one of the fairest that ever I saw. I had such a great good liking unto it, and was so earnestly affected with it, that I was resolved either to buy it, in case they had not already agreed upon the price, or to take order to have just such another made me. Whereupon, I drew neere unto the stall, and standing by, began to looke upon it, without giving them to understand that I had any minde thereunto; but it pleas'd me so well, and I was so taken with it, that upon the sodaine, in that little scantling of time, taking it to be fine and pure gold, I had presently plotted in my head, how I might have it along with me to Genoa, and that without any great labour. I stood listning, while he was bargaining for it, and while they were thus beating the price, the seller demanded very little for it, which me thought was dog-cheape; whereupon I began to suspect, that what hee asked, was rather for the workmanship of the chaine, then the chaine it selfe: but they, not agreeing on the price, I began presently to pitch my hey; asking him what it might bee worth, and what it weighed. I had no sooner made him this question; but the Merchant casting up his head, lookes upon mee, and falls withall a smiling, telling mee; Sir, this is not to bee sold by the weight; but taking it altogether as it is, wee sell it as reasonably as wee can afford it.

This word alone was enough; for by this I knew that it

was false and counterfeit : and holding it a great basenesse for so slight a toy to hazard much treasure, and that this plot of mine, which I had already cast in my head, might stead mee better hereafter, reserving it for some great occasion, and of more importance then this could bee ; besides, being that no wise man will adventure his person for nifles in a bagge, I forbore to execute my purpose ; wisely considering with my selfe, that if I should have gone on with this, and mis-carried therein, it would have beene a sufficient proofe against mee, that I had plaid the Impostor in my late businesse with my Merchant. I presently therefore came to his price, and paid it him with as good a will as if it had been a thing of great value : and I must tell you, that I made no small reckoning of it, in regard of those designes for which I intended it ; and particularly in that, which (as it afterwards fell out) turned to my exceeding great good and benefit. For which purpose, (having the plot already in my pate) I resolved with my selfe to make mee one of gold out of hand, just of the same making and fashion as that was in every respect, that you should not bee able to discerne which was which : so like would I have them to bee the one to the other.

Guzman plotteth a new deceit

Whereupon I got mee to a Gold-smith, who made it according to my minde, showing himselfe so good an Artizan, that should you have taken them both into your hand, and compared them together, it was impossible to judge which was the true one from the counterfeite, save only by the sound and the weight ; for the false one was somewhat lighter then the other, sounding more bell-like ; whereas that of gold was more massie, and had a more churlish kinde of sound with it : it cost mee in the whole, about some sixe hundred and thirty Crownes, and I should not have beene sory, if I had bestowed a thousand ; for then that counterfeite one should have yeelded mee as much : with them I bought likewise two little curious boxes, as like as like might be, to lay up these chaines in, each by himselfe in his severall boxe, which were fitted and fashioned as I could have wisht them.

And because all the joynts of my body did still paine mee very much, conceiting with my selfe that my ribs and my huckle bones were dislocated and slipt out of their right places, ever since that nights kinde entertainment, which my worshipfull Uncle gave mee ;[1] which I have kept hitherto written in my soule, the inke thereof being not as yet dry : and being now upon the way for Genoa, I imparted some part of my minde to Sayavedra, not recounting unto him all the whole Story of it ; but onely acquainting him, that when I past that way, being but a childe to speake of, some of my friends, had done mee an affront, and put a jeast upon mee ; because I was not either in such good cloathes as might honor and grace their company ; or so flush of money, that they might get something by mee. And I was heart-angry with my selfe that I had told him so much ; because hee should not take mee in a lye, if hee should chance to remember what I had told him before.

But letting that passe, and dwelling no longer upon it, I went on in my discourse, and said farther more unto him : if thou Sayavedra wert that true friend as thou professest thy selfe to be unto me, thou wouldst ere this have beene at Genoa,[2] and have revenged the wrong that I there received. But I must bee inforced to doe it my selfe, supplying thy default, and neglect thereof, by mine owne industry. It will also well beseeme mee so to doe, that I may cancell that obligation, and pay this debt that I owe them, to the end that those good turnes which they did mee, may bee fully requited ; and receive not onely the principall, but use for forbearance. But to remove all suspition, we must doe that which you and your brother did, change both our apparell and our names. I like very well of it (said Sayavedra) and further promise unto thee, that I will inherit thy true name, that I may the better both imitate and serve thee. From hence forward therefore I style my

[1] Turne to the first Part of Guzman, the third Booke, and the first Chapter.

[2] He here taxeth Mateo Luxan Sayavedra, the Author of the false second Part, for his omission of a promised revenge, mentioned in the first part, by our Author, Mateo Aleman.

selfe Guzman de Alfarache : and I (directing my speech to Sayavedra) will invest my selfe with mine owne proper name, which I inherited from my Parents, and untill now, have not hitherto taken it upon me. For, a Don ought to be a gift which comes from the holy Ghost ; because it is admitted, and well received of others, or it must bee derived from the direct line, from father to sonne. For your Dons, that now strut it up and downe Italy, glorying more in this title, then the Peacocke in his painted plumes, are nothing but infamy and shame. For there is not a Spaniard in these parts, (though the sonne of a Cobler) but goes adorning himselfe with the name of Don, that hee may be held a Gentleman. And if it goe there as it doth here, a man may very well aske, without offence ; who keepes the Swine ? Henceforth, I call my selfe Don Juan de Guzman : and with this title will I content my selfe. Then said Sayavedra, with a jocond heart and a cheerfull countenance ; Don Juan de Guzman, Victor, Victor, Victor : [1] which name can become no man better then your selfe ; so well it sutes with your noble actions : confusion light upon that Traitor that shall seeke to spot it. Hee (my brave boy) that shall take it from thee, my curses shall pursue him to death. I had furnished my selfe in Milan, with as much rich silke Grogram, as would serve to make mee a cloake, and a *Sotana* ; [2] and so being provided of all things necessary, wee began our journey for Genoa.

[1] In Spain when a Comedian acts his part exceeding well, the applaudite they there give him, is to cry, *Vitor*, *Vitor*, *Vitor*, such a one, Pinedo, or Fernandez.

[2] *Sotana*, a garment much like our Clergie-men's Cassocks here, which reacheth no farther then the knee : which is common weare of your Grandes, and other Noblemen and Gentlemen in Spaine. *Dizesi Sotana, porque se trae soto el manteo.* Covarruvias.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER VIII

Guzman de Alfarache comes to Genoa, where being knowne by his kindred, he is feasted by them. He perswades every one to live vertuously; And showes the hurt, which Murmurers, Hypocrites, and false Witnesses, bring to mens soules, honours, and riches; He delivereth the great profit, we shall gaine, by avoiding such venemous Basiliskes. And concludes with telling us, who are true thieves indeed

ONG will the vessell keepe that his sent and savour, wherewith at first it hath beene fully seasoned.[1] If the course of my life, the occasions and the chances that befell me, Love, and Feare, had not opened the eyes of my understanding; if these I say, could not awaken me, and rouse me up from the sleepe of my sinnes, and those vices, wherein I was lull'd so fast asleepe, I cannot perswade my selfe, that any other humane forces are of power to doe it. And howbeit, with stratagems, inventions, devices, and divers other meanes, it might be brought otherwise to passe; yet not with that easinesse and facility, (as some may imagine). For it will require a large Discourse, how, and in what sort, a man ought to make his election, by distinguishing profit, from dis-profit; just, from unjust; and good, from ill. And when it once comes to this point, the businesse so stands then with him, That hee that will be but willing to put his owne helping hand to get out of that mire of sinne, wherein hee lies wallowing, and endevour to free himselfe from that muddy sinke of vice, those good inspirations of heaven, shall never be

The force of vertue

[1] *Quo semel imbuta recens*, etc.

wanting unto him, which favouring, and furthering his vertuous actions, will adde strength unto his weaknesse, and raise him up from the death of sinne, to the life of grace. To the end, that knowing and acknowledging his fore-passed errors, he may learne to correct his faults for the present, and for the future, grow up to perfection. But they that are devoid of reason, who like the Bull, shut their eyes, and bowe downe their heads to give a blow, following their owne wilfull appetite, seldome or never, shall come to the knowledge of their owne misery. Because, like they that are blind, they will not see; and like those that are deafe, they will not heare: and out of a headstrong and wilfull humour, will not give way, that any should crosse them in their lewd courses. They take great joy and delight in walking in the path of their owne lusts; it seeming so long unto them, that it shall never have an end, or that this life of theirs shall ever come to be cut off; whose happinesse (they make account) doth onely consist in this their vaine and idle idolatry. These are men of a large life, but a farre larger conscience. They love the broad, better then the narrow way. They know full well, that they doe ill; and therefore doe ill, because they have no mind to doe well. They feigne them-selves to be ignorant of that, which they are not willing to understand; yet wot well enough, that the thred of their life, goes daily wearing and wasting away; and that the string by which it holds, must cracke and breake in sunder, in the end; and then their perpetuall downe-fall, will fearfully and with a great deale of terror, present it selfe unto them.

CHAPTER VIII

Men without reason, and who they be

But because wee see that Gods hands are nayled fast, that they stirre not against us, and that he is much grieved and afflicted for us; we thinke, it would much vexe him, that we should be vexed. Such fooles as these, say to themselves; we feele no paine, nor have any aches, but are sound and lusty; wee want no money, but have the world at will; our house is well furnisht, we have plenty of provision; let us lye downe and sleepe, and take our ease, stretching our selves on our yvorie beds; let us live as

The language of fooles

merry as the day is long, sport while we may; we have time enough before us, we need not to make so much haste to goe unto God, shortning that life, (by lessening our pleasures) which God hath allotted unto us. They deferre their doing of good, and put off their amendment of life, from an houre, to a day; from a day, to a weeke; from a weeke, to a month; from a month, to a yeare; and from one yeare, to many: so that houres, dayes, weekes, months, and yeares, runne posting along by us; but this *quando*, this *when*, is not yet come; this time, that we should repent and amend our sinfull lives; And when it doth come, it shall bee happy for us, if it come not too late. This is that debt which is said to be recovered at three severall payments; but if neither in our youth, our manhood, nor in our elder age, we doe satisfie this debt, the punishment that will light upon us for non payment, will be certaine, sharpe, and sodaine.

An exageration against the enemies of vertue

What meanes the Usurer, that he hath not God in his mind, nor doth once thinke upon him, acknowledging no other God, but his ungodly gaine? What the Wanton, who to please his lust, adoreth her, whom he ought rather to hate? and placeth all his happinesse in that, which he knowes must turne to his eternall torment? What the Epicure, or the proud man, that sonne of Lucifer, who makes it his common practice, to martyr the innocent, being more cruell therein, then Dioclesian, oppressing the righteous, and persecuting the vertuous? What the unprofitable Murmurer, who hoping to make himselfe a fortune, seekes to undoe other men? Scraping, like the hen, to her owne hurt;[1] whilst using diligences to prejudice others, they light upon that, which workes their owne bane?

Proverbe

The man, that is honest, well able to live, and of a good life, and civill conversation, doth not rob, filch, nor steale; for he lives contented with those favours which God hath beene pleased to bestow upon him; hee maintaines himselfe with that, (be it more, or little) that he hath, feeds his familie, and sustaines both himselfe, and others. And such

[1] *Escarua la gallina por su mal.*

as these, are wont, in their contemplations, to lift up their eyes to heaven, and to breathe forth this sweet and thankfull meditation : O Lord, I have as much, as is needfull for me, and somewhat (I thanke thee) to spare, to give unto others. And these good Christians count it an happinesse and honor unto them, when through Gods blessing, and goodnesse towards them, they are able to say ; that they have something yet remaining of their store, to give unto the poore, and such as need their reliefe.

The honest Christian

The thiefe he steales, because it is his onely maintenance, having no other meanes to live. And when all is gone, and that he hath nothing of his owne, he seekes to snatch from others, if he can but once come to lay his hands on it. He that is a noble Gentleman, will ever so farre forth respect his honour and credit as is fitting for him, and seeke to maintaine his port, and to live like himselfe, in a liberall and plentifull manner ; but yet will not sticke to grace, and doe good to others.

The Thiefe

But on the contrary, the Murmurer maintaines himselfe with the honor of his friend, and of his neighbour, robbing him of his good name, and lessening his worth, as much as in him lies ; for, if he rob not others of it, he thinkes he shall not have any for him-selfe. It is as strange, as to bee pittied, that the sea, should breed fishes, that have no tongue ; and the earth bring forth men, that have too much : that the sea should afford us Soles ; and the earth, men that have no soules.

Murmurers

Your Hypocrites, who boast their letters of credit, which they have given to the world : are like unto those that play at Tennis, who strike the ball against the ground, that it may the better come to their hand, and tossing it to and fro in the ayre, keepe it up a good while, till it come to be either a chase, or a losse. But of all other, most wretched, and most miserable are those men, who make long prayers with their lips, and devoure with their mouthes, the goods of the poore, the widow, and the fatherlesse. Wherefore God will severely punish these holy offenders ; holy in outward show, but not in heart. An Hypocrite, is like unto a

Hypocrites

gun, that is charg'd ; for every man doth not know, what is within it, or whether it be charg'd or no ; but if you once put fire to it, the least sparke will send forth a bullet, that shall overthrow a gyant, and lay him on the ground : So, your Hypocrite, upon every little occasion, how-soever hee may seeme for the present to have no harme in him, will vent his malice, and be ready to doe you a mischiefe ; and when you least thinke of it, give you such a blow, that you shall never be able to rise againe.

Dissemblers

There are a certaine sort of men, that are like unto your dry witherd Peare-trees ; leane, tall, and stooping ; hanging their heads in their bosomes, as if they would seeme to bee Saints, and goe lapt up in a long thred-bare cloake, as if they were to accompany a Coarse to the grave, or were them-selves to be interred. These are fooles of the first forme ; and will with this their dissimulation and grave carriage, make us beleeve, that they are wonderfull wise, and of great understanding. These I say are principall fooles ; they will steale you foure or five sentences out of this, or that other Author, whereof they make a Gallimafrie, serving them in, as a dish of their owne making, recommending it unto us as theirs. They feigne their justice, to be equall with that of Trajanes ; their sanctitie, with that of Saint Paul ; their wisedome, with that of Salomon ; their sincerity, with that of Saint Francis ; yet under this cloake, what shall you find ? If you search it well, you shall find, an hypocriticall knave, a seeming *Sanctificetur*, but as arrant a villaine, as ever trode upon a shooe of leather. They carry a leane, and meager countenance, but their workes flourished over with painting ; little breeches, but large consciences ; nothing but yes verily, and indeed, in their mouthes ; but their heart is full of lies ; a publike kind of charity, but an insatiable secret avarice ; they manifest a kinde of abstinence and fasting, as well from meates, as temporall meanes ; but their throats are so drie, and their thirst so great, that they will swallow up the whole Sea, devoure other mens estates, and yet be so farre from being satisfied therewith, that they remaine as thirsty as

they did before. They say, they have enough, and more then enough, and that much lesse would serve their turne, and is more then they are worthy of; yet are they so greedily given, that they are never contented, and nothing can fill their hungry maw. They are like unto your Dates; soft and sweet without, but hard and stonie within. They carry hony-combes in their mouthes, but wormewood in their hearts. They have sweet tongues, but sowre soules. Great pitie is to be taken of these men, for that they suffer so much, and enjoy so little; and are finally condemned to Hell, for this one poore fading vanitie, to be esteemed honest and religious, when indeed they are nothing lesse. So that, they neither cloath their backs, nor feed their bellies, according to their owne content and liking, but goe up and downe in a miserable kinde of manner, afflicted, hunger-starv'd, withered, pale, and wanne, denying themselves ordinarie necessaries for the use of this life, not being able truly to say, that they have had one houre of content in this world, bearing alwayes about them a troubled bodie, and an unquiet minde, their corps, and conscience equally suffering. Now if this, which they thus, and in this manner suffer, as they doe it, and endure it, onely for the worlds sake, and to seeme outwardly holy, that thereby they may gaine a good opinion amongst men; if they would doe this, I say, for Gods sake, laying aside their dissimulation, and not debarring them-selves of those good blessings, which God hath created for mans use and comfort; questionlesse, in so doing, they might leade a happy life in this world, and enjoy everlasting happinesse in the world to come.

False witnesses

Let us say something of your false witnesse; whose punishment doth give satisfaction to the people, and is pleasing unto all men, taking pleasure in their chasticement, in regard of the hainousnesse of their offence. For, for a matter of sixe Maravedis, a thing of nothing, you shall have them sweare sixe thousand falshoods, and take away sixe hundred thousand mens credits, and estates from them, which lies not afterwards in their power to make restitution thereof. And as your day-labourers, and other

workemen, repaire to certaine set-places, appointed for that purpose, to be hired by those that have occasion to use them; so doe these kind of men come to your Courts, your Consistories, your places of publike businesse, even to the very Offices where your Notaries are a writing, to learne how things goe there, and to offer their service to those that have need of them. And if this were all, the matter were not great, but it is worse then you thinke it is; for the very Officers of the Courts them-selves, doe maintaine and countenance these lewd fellowes, that in those causes that occurre (as occasion shall serve,) they may make use of them for their advantage, suborning them to beare false witnesse, for the proving of such, or such a businesse, which they will not sticke to testifie upon oath. This I assure you, that I now tell you, is no jest; nor doe I therefore speake it unto you, to make you beleeve that which is not so; nor doe I lie one jot, in all that I have said unto you. For there are false witnesses enough to be found, if any man be disposed to buy them. And are as frequent in your Notaries Office; as Conserves in an Apothecaries shop. Or like horse-leeches in a glasse, ready prepared for the businesse, when-soever you shall be pleased to put them upon it. Let those that have a minde unto them, goe to D.N. his Office; I was about to name him, before I was aware, but tis all one; for I am sure you all know him, or can give a shrewd guesse whom I meane; there shall you have these Knights of the Poste, at all kind of prices, as you shall have pies in a Cookes shop; some for eight Royals, some for foure, some for two, and some for half a Royall, as choosing rather to play small game, then wholly to sit out.

But if it be a weighty cause indeed, there is also another sort of them, of a higher rank, and at a higher rate, as we see there are pies for weddings, and for great feasts, which will cost you somewhat more then ordinary; these are those, that are Musket-proofe, and will (to strike the matter dead) not sticke to sweare, that upon their owne knowledge, for these foure-score yeares, they remember such and such a

CHAPTER VIII

conveyance was past thus and thus, such a piece of land past over after this or that manner, and a hundred the like.

A Country fellowes mistake: for *ochenta años,* he names *ocho çientos*

Like to that Country-clowne, who being a shallow braind coxe-combe, a very lob-cocke, being brought into the Court by his Land-lord, to witnesse a thing in his behalfe; and instructed by him, that when hee should be askt how old hee was, should answer, he was eighty yeares old. The silly fellow, did not well understand him, but being desirous (as it should seeme) to doe his Land-lord a pleasure, being demanded touching his age, tooke his oath, that he was eight hundred yeares old. And albeit the Notary wondring at this so inconsiderate and unadvised an oath, did advise him to take heed what hee said; he clownishly made answer, Doe thou take heed how thou writest, and stand not a sifting of other mens lives, but let every man bee as old as hee will him-selfe. Afterwards, the Notary reading the report of this witnesse, when he came to the point concerning his age, the Judge apprehended it to bee the Notaries error, and would have punisht him for it; but hee excused himselfe, saying; That he did no more, then what did belong to his office, in setting that downe aright, which he received from the witnesse his owne mouth; and that although he had admonished him thereof, and bid him be better advised, yet he stood stifly in it, and ratified what he had said before, saying; That he was of that age, and that he should so set it downe. The Judges caus'd the witnesse to make his personall appearance; and demanding of him, why hee had sworne, that he was eight hundred yeares old, Because (and it like your Lordships) it was for the service of God, and the Conde, my master.

There are store of false witnesses every where, the streets are full of them, they are to be hyred for money, but he that will save his purse, and have them for nothing, let him seeke out some kinsman or other, that is his enemie, with whom thou wagest law; for he to be revenged of him, will sweare any thing against the whole generation of thy adversarie. But from these malitious minded men, good Lord deliver us. For they doe us the greatest hurt.

THE SECOND BOOKE

But let us leave these kinde of men, and come to those of mine owne occupation, and to that our Companie, or Brotherhood, which is the ancientest and greatest that is in the world. For I would not have thee to tit me in the teeth, that I have a pen for others, and let mine owne stand idle in my standish, or else cause it to runne another way. I will not passe by this doore, without knocking at it, and that soundly too; I will not lye lazing in the shade, nor making my selfe merry in the Taverne.

Of Theeves

A thiefe, what will he not doe, to steale? Which word Thiefe, I apply to such poore sinfull creatures as my selfe.

Who be the brave theeves

As for your great rich theeves, such as ride on their foot-clothes of velvet, that hang their houses with hangings of tissue and costly arras, and cover the floores of their chambers with gold and silke, and curious Turky-carpets, and often hang such poore snakes as wee are, I have nothing to say to them. For wee are farre inferiour unto them, and are those little fishes, which these great ones doe devoure. They live bravely, upheld by their reputation, graced by their power, and favoured by flatterie; These, are of that strength, that they breake the gallowes; hempe was not sowen for them, nor for them were your Galleys built, except it be to beare command in them. Of which command, it may be, that we shall remember to say something in its proper time and place, if we hap to come thither, as I hope in God, we shall. But let us now speake of those theeves, that are not fit to be left out, such as my selfe, and my servant Sayavedra. We will not touch upon those that rob Justice; for there are none such I trow that will doe so, nor is it knowne, who they be. And if peradventure there be any such, that have done so, we have already spoken thereof at large in our first Part. Nor will we speake of your Rulers, nor Governours, nor your Counsellors of State, for we have likewise treated thereof heretofore; besides, their managing of these matters, is not of any importance at all, or worth the talking of. For take them out of their tracke, put them from their whole-sale, and turne them to retayle, or remove them from that pond,

wherein they have liv'd, and they are to seeke which way to winde them-selves ; I will not give a button for the best of them. CHAPTER VIII

But some perhaps will taxe me, and say ; That thou art, as they are ; both birds of a feather ; seeing thou art so willing to smother their lyes, their deceits, and their falshoods. For, if it should be demanded, what meanes hath Master N ? The answer would be ; Sir, He is a *Regidor*. What, is he no more then a *Regidor* ? How lives he then thus gallantly ? How can his Office alone maintaine this bravery, having no set revenues, or other rents comming in besides, considering what a port he carryes, what a house he keepes, what store of servants, and horses, that continually attend him ? You say well Sir. But I perceive by you, that you doe not truly understand the mysterie of it, nor rightly conceive, how this may be brought about. True it is, that he hath no rents, but he hath his renters, and none can execute that Office without his licence, paying him so much rent for it ; whereof the greatest part comes to the *Regidor*, the rest remaines to the renter, to the end, that he also may live, and have where-withall to discharge his rent. But why doest thou not speake freely what thou knowest concerning these men ? I may not, nor I dare not ; for if any man should presume to speake of them, oppose himselfe, though never so little against them, or but once offer to question either their lifes, or their actions, they will make him hold his peace with a pestilence, they will never suffer him to live in quiet, but force him for his owne ease to flie the Country. For being (as they are) men of great place and power, they will presently fall a feeling, to finde a straw in thine eare ;[1] that is, they will seeke a hole in thy coat, and picke some one quarrell or other against thee, and either by right, or by wrong, they will overthrow thee, if not utterly undoe thee. They are like unto your Cupping-glasses ; which (where they once fasten) fit close and hard to thy skin, and never leave drawing and sucking, till they have haled from thee what they would have, nor

Proverbe

[1] *Buscan la paja en el oydo.*

is there any taking of them off, till they be as full as they can hold. I could also tell thee, that no man dares say; Blacke is their eye; or goe about to have them punisht. For whosoever he be, that offers that, it fares with him, as it usually doth with your pipkins; which when they are set full of water over the fire, they no sooner begin to boyle, but the water runneth over, and puts out the fire that was the occasion thereof.

Understand you me now? Yes marry doe I: And, it may be, they passe over these things the better, by reason of their good Angels of guard, which free them from those blowes, that would otherwise fall upon them, and rid them out of all their troubles. I could tell thee likewise somewhat which thou hast left out, that if these men, after they were hanged, should have their causes heard, and see what they could say for themselves, even those very men would then plead stiffely against them, who heretofore were in their favour; but now for the feare, that they have of them, they are well content to eat their meat in quiet, and to hold their tongues. I could tell thee besides, if I would unmaske these men, that they fare daintily at other mens cost, have what they will, either for nothing, or dog-cheape, making the poore to pay for it, who must pay most, and fare worst. But it is now time to make a full point, and to leave them with their *Agentes*, and *Consentientes*, their instruments, and their copartners to them-selves: For in conclusion, they are, as thou art; and worse then thou, and doe much more hurt; for thou doest but damnifie one house alone; but these a whole Country.

O what good counsell dost thou give mee! But let mee wish thee (my friend) to make use of it thy selfe. Think'st thou perhaps to save thine owne fingers from burning, to take the Cat by the foote, and therewith to rake the coales out of the Oven?[1] If thou knowest this to be true, or hast any thing else to say of them, speake it your selfe for me: for I have told thee all that I know, and I would not willingly that they should deale with mee, as thou sayest they deale

Proverbe

[1] *Sacar las brasas con la mano del gato.*

with others : for I have no minde to come under their lash. Suffice it thee, that contrary to that decorum that is fitting for the greatnesse of their place and quality ; I have inlarged my selfe in speaking more already, then may well become mee. Nor am I willing to oblige my selfe anew, to sift their lives, nor dive into their doings, being there is no good to bee gotten by it, if things runne along in this straine there in Italy, God bee thanked, that I am going for Spaine, where no such robberies as these are used. But because I am a Spaniard, thou wilt say, that all the world is my Countrey ; it is true ; and in saying so, thou doest not lye. But shall I tell thee one thing ? I know how all this may be remedied, and that very easily too, to the great augmentation and good of the Common-wealth, and by the generall consent of all good subjects, to Gods good service, and the Kings great honour : but for the better effecting thereof, I must be forced to follow the King, presenting his Majestie with memoriall upon memoriall, Petition upon Petition : and when I shall have brought the businesse to a good passe, and as it were to the very upshot, such a Favourite, or such a great Lord, Don B. buzzes him in the eare, and tels him, that it is an idle and foolish Project, and unable to take effect. For, it reflecting generally upon them all, they out of their great power will trample me under foote, and crush mee, that I shall never bee able to lift up my head any more, leaving mee in farre poorer taking, then I was before. But I am affraid to wade too farre in this deepe water, for feare of drowning. A shallower ford is safer, and fitter for me to dippe my foote in : because I speake the truth, they count mee a base and obscure fellow ; and for that I presume to give them wholesome counsell and sound advice, they call mee Rogue, brand me with the name of Picaro, and thrust mee out of doores by head and shoulders, scorning such a Jack-sauce, and down-right raskall as I am. But they shall not carry it away so. Let them take their course, and wee will take ours, treading in the steps of our noble Ancestors : and (God grant) that they that come after, doe no worse then wee doe. Onely, I will bee bold to tell you

thus much; that there are farre more thieves then there are Physitians. Neither need any man to make himselfe such a Saint, as to take offence when hee heares the name of a thiefe spoken of, shewing himselfe queasie-stomack'd, and seeking to disgrace him, till hee aske this question of himselfe; whether, either here, or there, hee hath not in his life time playd the thiefe himselfe? And to this end, I would have him to know; that to steale, is no other thing then to detaine that which is another mans, contrary to the will of its owner.

What stealing is

For mine owne part, I would make no more reckning, that a man did not know that I had any thing of his, then if hee did know it, and had given it me with his owne hand, so as hee bee not able to hurt mee, and have not the power to take it away from mee againe by force. I learned this Lesson from my Childhood, though I did not alwayes put it in practice. I was like unto a tree, that is cut downe to the very roote, which leaves some live-sap still remaining, by meanes whereof it growes in time to bee a new Plant, and begins to beare the same fruit it did before. And you shall see by and by, how quickly I returne to my old bias. While I left off stealing, I was like unto forc'd-earth, I was out of my proper Center; now, with a little use, I am come to the same lewd course that I ran before. When I was a Lad, I was quick and nimble, I had a facility in filching, and could lay hand on any thing, were it never so hard to come by. But now that I am turn'd Man, me thought at the first, I was growne gowty, both in my feete and hands; I found my selfe much slower, and duller then I was wont to bee: but in a very short time I recovered my former health.

I continued my accustomed thefts, and took such pleasure in them, as a Souldier could not more in his armes; nor a Ginet in his trappings, and other his rich furniture. When any doubts did arise, I did resolve them; if they were to seeke for Plots, I did invent them: and in all weighty businesses, I was their safegard and defence: they would hearken unto my advice, as to the answeres of some Oracle; there being no man that would contradict my rules, nor

withstand my lawes, nor reply to any thing that I should once determine. Those that were best practiz'd amongst them that frequented the Hospitall of Saragoça, and Guadalupe came short of me; though I us'd the trade but now and then, like the intermissions of an Ague: for, when all things else fail'd mee, and that I knew not what shift to make, I had this, my five fingers for a helpe, this did never forsake mee in the time of neede: it was sure money in my purse, and stucke as close to my necke, as my Lord Embassadors chaine did, which a long time escaped many a faire danger. The trade of thieving was as proper to me, as laughing is proper to man; nay, I had almost said, that it was as a Character not to bee blotted out, such deepe impression had it taken in my soule. But when I did not exercise the same, it was not any want of good will; for that was ever ready, and at hand. CHAPTER VIII

I, and Sayavedra went out of Milan well lined, and better provided of all things that were needfull for our journey: so that there was no man but would have taken mee for a very rich man, and one of note and quality. But how many bee there that might very well have said, Sit downe Gallants, and fall to; for this feast is provided for you.[1] For, as a mans apparell is, so is his esteeme.[2] And they that know not a man otherwise, make their censure according to his cloathes. If thou wert Cicero himselfe, and shouldst goe ill clad, thou shouldst be no longer Cicero, at least a scurvy Cicero, whom the world would scorne, and count a mad man. For there is no other wisdome, nor learning in the world, then the having of so much more wealth, and so much more land then another man. And he that is not so, may like a dog, goe shake his eares without doors: he is like money that is not currant; he passes not for any thing where-soever hee come. They will neither offer thee a chaire to sit downe, nor give thee the upper hand, when they shall see thee without a feather, though thou bee rich apparelled with vertue and knowledge; but of such now a

Guzman goes from Milan

Proverbe

Proverbe

Good cloathes recommend a man more then knowledge

[1] *Comé, mangas, que a vosotros es la siesta.*
[2] *Juzgana cada uno, como lo ven tratado.*

dayes, there is little or no reckoning made. But if thou bee gloriously set out, and richly suted, though thou be never so base a Groome, every mans eye is upon thee, every mans hat ready to honour thee. Bee thou as base and vile as any dunghill; yet if it bee covered over with greene grasse, many will set themselves downe upon it, and there recreate and refresh themselves. But Catulus was not of this minde, who when hee saw Nonius riding in a triumphant Chariot, stickt not to say, what a deale of dung doth this Cart carry? Giving us thereby to understand, that dignities doe not grace the vicious. But there are now but few Catuli, though there bee many Nonii. Nay, wert thou but good Alchimie, that shall bee adored in thee, because of its glorious and gaudy glittering. Men doe judge now more by the eye, then the eare; by what they see, then by what they heare: the outside is more looked on, then the inside looked into: a rich rayment sounds louder then a good report. No man considers what thy knowledge is, but what thy wealth is: they talke not so much of thy vertue, as of thy purse: and of thy purse, not what thou hast in it, but what thou spendest out of it. I was well appointed, well apparelled, and growne fowre inches thicke, with other folkes fat.[1]

Catulus his saying of Nonius

Guzman arrives at Genoa

When I came to Genoa, they knew not in my Lodging what cheere to make mee, nor how to please mee in my diet, I was growne so dainty and so curious. I then began to call to minde the first entrance that I made into that Citie, and in how different a manner I was there received; and how I was forced from thence, carrying my Crosse upon my shoulders; and how now they receive mee, spreading their cloakes on the ground. Wee alighted, and fell to our victuals. That day I was willing to take mine ease, and to rest my selfe after my journey. The next morning I apparelled my selfe, *á lo Romano*, no Romane of them all could weare a fairer Cloake, and *Sotana*, in which I walked up and downe the streets. All mens eyes were cast upon mee, as well for that I was a stranger, as

[1] The Spanish word is *Enxundia. Adeps porcinus, interior pinguedo porci inveterata.* Also; *lo gordo, que las aves tienen en la overa.*

likewise in regard I was well clad, and of a presence not to be despised. They askt my servant, who I was? Hee told them, Don Juan de Guzman, a Gentleman of Sevilla: And when I heard them inquire after mee, I would pop up my head, stretching out my necke, some what more then ordinary, thinking with my selfe, that I had some ten pound weight of Bread more in my Belly, then I had before: so Peacock-like was I blowne up with Pride, and such store of this puffe-past of vain-glory had I swallowed downe my throat. Hee told them that I was newly come from Rome. They demanded farther of him, if I were rich; because they saw me come from thence in a differing fashion from the rest: for they that goe to the Court of Rome, and to other Princes Courts, are like unto those that go to the warres, who thinke all the world must now bee theirs, and that they have already finished what they went for; with which vaine hopes they using to flatter themselves; they lash out into extraordinary expences upon the way, as likewise in the Court; till the Court leaves them so curtail'd, that they have scarce ere a ragge left them to cover their breech; returning home afterwards, weary in their bodies, poore in their purses, discontented in their mindes, and driven to that extreame want, that they must either almost starve or begge their bread. They goe thither fresh and lively, flush of money, and rich in cloathes; whom I can liken to nothing better, then to the fish called the Tunny; which, when it is full of spawne, is also full of fish, fat and faire to see to, and is very good meate; but when her Spawne is gone from her, shee turnes lanke, leane, and unseasonable; proving as unprofitable to the stomacke, as it is unpleasing to the Palate.

The effects of Pride and Vainglory

The fruits of following the Court and Wars

They likewise enquired of him, whether I were to continue there for any long time, or past onely along as a Traveller, taking it in my way. To all which questions, Sayavedra gave such answers, as I could my selfe have wisht: Telling them that I was the only sonne of a widow-gentle-woman, of very good quality, being a wonderfull wealthy dame, which was wife to a certain Gentleman of

Genoa, and that I was come thither to expect certaine Letters and dispatches, and then to returne backe againe to Rome; and that in the interim, I would recreate my selfe here in Genoa, taking much pleasure in the sight of this stately City; for that I knew not when I should make my returne, nor for what part, or whither I should ever have the like opportunity to see it againe. The Inne, where I lay, was the best in all the Towne, and is commonly called, L'Hosteria di santa Marta, whither the most part of your Noblemen, and Gentlemen did usually resort. There wee remained, making merry, and spending our money, without doing our selves any good at all in point of profit,[1] nor did we as yet goe about it. And in keeping thus our ground, wee came to gaine ground. The Clocke doth not alwayes strike, but staies till its houre comes, and when by a little and a little the time creepes on, that is limited thereunto, why then it strikes. I playd now and then, but not for much money, with some other guests, that were in the house, more for company sake, and to passe away the time, then any thing else, not using any other helpe then mine owne fortune, and skill in gaming; Sayavedra had now no hand in the businesse, nor did I use to set his plough a worke, save in deepe and fat grounds, where there was hope of a plentifull harvest; I kept him for Holidayes, his attendance was, when there was a great feast, and a full boord; but for such poore pittances as these, not worth the sitting downe for, I was well content hee should spare his labour. For, when the losings or the gettings could not be much, the best course then (me thought) was to proceed plainly and sincerely. Yet, when I plaid small game, I went along with a leaden foot, marking and observing this, and that other Card; and if Fortune did not favour me, and that my crosse-carding was such, that I could not light on a lucky encounter, I would give off with a little losse: but if the wind blew faire, and that I found good fortune was comming towards me, I never left following my good lucke, till I had swept unto me all the money on the boord.

The common course amongst gamesters

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Sin besar, y tocar, en cosa de provecho.*

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VIII

And it so fell out, that having one day wonne a matter of a hundred Crowns, and somewhat more, it was a Captaines hap, that had the command of a Gally, to sit by me, who I perceiv'd, lik't very well of my manner of play, and was very glad that I had got the money; and reading in his lookes, that he had no great store of Crownes in his purse, but was rather in extreame want and necessity, I gave him sixe Doblones of two, which in that conjuncture, considering his poverty, seemed unto him to be sixe thousand.

There is a time, when one single Royall, is more to a man then a hundred; nay a thousand perhaps at another time, will not doe him so much good. For the which he made me such a thankfull acknowledgement, as if the favour I had done him, had beene much more then it was, or some matter of greater moment. And this fell out very happily for me, for having afterwards understood from him-selfe, of what disease he was sicke, and where his griefe lay, at that instant, was mine owne remedy likewise represented unto me, and quickly found out, that I was to make him the needle that must knit my net. In a word, I effected what I desired. He spends nothing, who buyes that he hath need of. I distributed likewise some few Crownes amongst the rest of the standers by, to make them the better devoted, and affectioned towards mee, and that I might leave every man well pleas'd and contented. Insomuch, that by this my affable, franke, and bountifull carriage, I grew into that credit and good opinion amongst them, that I had wonne their hearts, and got the good will and love of all men; and it is an old saying, That hee that sowes well, reapes well.[1] And I can assure you, that as many as conversed with me, would have hazarded their lives for me, if need had beene. Wherewith I found my selfe so jocond, my body so lightsome, my heart so comforted, my blood so cleare, and my spirits so quickned, that my cheekes were as fresh, and red as the Rose, and mine eyes did sparkle, and lookt so merrily, as if they had laught for joy.

Proverbe

[1] *Quien bien siembra, bien coge.*

This Captaine was called Favelo ; not that this was his proper name, but because it was given him by a certaine Mistresse of his, whom hee sometimes served ; which he was willing still to retaine in remembrance of her beauty, and his owne misfortune ; the whole story whereof, hee at large related unto me ; as how dearly she loved him, how much she made of him, indearing the sweetnesse of her disposition, her gentle behaviour, and the gracefulnesse of her person ; all which commendable qualities, poysoned with some vaine and false appearances, were drowned in the end by a desperate torment of jealousie, and such other beastly thoughts, as are still waiting upon it. And from that time forward, he would never suffer me to be alone, but was for the most part continually with me, and did embrace my friendship with the greatest love that could be. Whereupon, I intreated him, that he would be pleased to make use of my person, if I might be any way serviceable unto him, and to be my guest, and take such fare as I had, and though I knew I did bid him to his losse, as keeping a better Table of his owne, yet for my sake, and the contentment I should take therein, he ought in courtesie to accept of it. I omitted no meanes, for the obliging of him unto me, and the continuing of him still to bee my friend. He had me along with him to his Galley, feasted me, and made me take my pleasure in her, all along the coast, plowing daily such deepe furrowes for the better taking root of this our new friendship and acquaintance, that if mine had gone on in the true course of vertue, there it might have found a Haven wherein to have harbourd it selfe. But I was made of nothing but fraud and deceit. Yet would I be alwayes laying a firme foundation, that might well have serv'd for the raising of a better building : but at last it came all to nothing ; being (like that foolish builder) who knew better how to beginne, then to make an end of his building. Wee did communicate many particular accidents and secrets each to other, but hee came not within my shirt, he had not pierced into my bosome, Sayavedra onely kept the key of that Cabinet, and none but hee knew the secrets of my soule.

CHAPTER VIII

This Favelo was of a good behaviour, witty, discreet, valiant, patient, and yet full of mettall, qualities well befitting so valiant a Captaine, and so amorous a Souldier, by meanes whereof he liv'd alwayes in want. And it is a common mis-fortune that accompanies these good qualities, that they are still wayted on by poverty (or to speake more properly) by beggery. Now I, who was not ignorant of his wants, sought in all that I could to releeve his necessities, and to free him from these his extremities, that thereby I might bind him the surer unto me. I carryed my selfe so fairly and so cunningly, both with him, and as many as I conversed withall, that (like Hawkes) I made them all to stoope to my lure. And within a few dayes, my name and credit was so good amongst them, that I could battle largely upon it, and might have received any courtsie in that City, if I had beene willing to make use thereof. Whereupon, partly out of this, and partly the ancient desire that I had to know something concerning my selfe, lest the not knowing of it, might make me take thought, and so sicken, and dye of griefe ; considering with my selfe, that being in that good state I now was in, a handsome young fellow, well clad, good parts, and a good purse, no man whatsoever could hold it any disparagement unto him, to acknowledge mee for his kinsman ; but that which did most sway with me, was the earnest desire that I had to be fully revenged of him, who had abused me in that base manner. This did often trouble me ; nor could I sleepe in quiet, as oft as I thought upon it.

Guzman begins to thinke upon the revenge he meant to take of his kinsman

I had not staid long in towne, but I found out a father and a mother, and came to know all my kindred. Those, which before threw stones at mee, as if I had beene some strange curre, whom they would chase out of their doores, did beginne now to quarrell, who should have me first home to his house, who make mee greatest cheere, who give me the noblest entertainment, one seeking to out-vye another. The very first day that I made this enquiry, my kindred was more (I imagine) then my credit, and might be better knowne then trusted amongst them ; for no man is ashamed

THE SECOND BOOKE

to owne a rich man for his kinsman, though hee be vicious and ill given; but all flye from a vertuous man, if they once have him in the winde, and finde that he stinkes of poverty. I need not to indeare this poynt unto you, it is so common a thing.

Riches compared to fire

Riches, is like unto fire, which albeit it belong to a different place, and is onely provided for one particular roome, yet notwithstanding as many as come neere unto it, warme themselves, though they take not so much as a coale from thence; and the more fire, the more heate.[1] How many shall you see warming them-selves by the fire in a rich mans hall? of whom, if you shall but aske what they make there, or what's their businesse? They will answer you; No great businesse. Doe they perhaps give me any thing? Alas, what doest thou get, by curring favour with them, by soothing them up, by crowching and creeping unto them, by assisting day and night in base and servile offices, mis-spending that time, which thou mightst better bestow in gaining thy meate else-where? It is true Sir, that I benefit my selfe here but little, yet can I not choose, but come and warme my selfe at Señor N. house, as others doe. You, and such others as you be, tell me I pray, what you are? and be not angry with me, if I plainly tell you, you are all fooles.

Proverbe

But to returne againe into our way. Many of my kindred came unto mee, every one desiring to make himselfe better knowne unto me, and offering his service in such complementall manner, as was befitting my fashion; and there was one amongst the rest, who for to honor, and oblige me the more, did challenge ancient kindred of me, even from our great grand-fathers. I would, for curiosities sake, faine know, what was become of that good old man, which put that former tricke upon me; and that I might doe it without any the least suspition or jealousie in the world, I demanded of them, whether my father had any more brothers? or if hee had, whether any of them were yet alive, or no? For, I was ever of the minde, that he that

[1] *Mas fuego, mas calor.*

plaid the rogue with me, was my Uncle. They told me, yes. That there were three of them in all, my Father, and two more: and that the middlemost was dead, but that the eldest of all was living, and that he dwelt here in the Citie. They told me that he had liv'd a bachelor all the dayes of his life, that he was a man of great meanes, and the top of all our kindred, and gave such particular tokens of him, whereby I came to know him. I said that I would goe kisse his hands the next day: But when this was told him, and that hee understood of my qualitie, albeit he were very old, he came trudging with his staffe in his hand, as decrepit as he was, to visit me, accompanyed with some of the chiefest of our linage. I knew him as soone as ever I saw him, though he was now growne very lame and aged. I was glad to see him, but sory that hee was so old, I could have wisht him much younger, that he might the longer have felt the smart of those jerkes, that I was resolved to bestow on him. I count that man a foole, who to revenge himselfe of his enemy, will take away his life; for that being ended, all his paine is ended with it. When I would take a revenge, I would handle it so, as I did with these my kinsmen, that they may not forget it as long as they live, but beare the wofull remembrance of it with them to their graves. I desired to be revenged of this man, and wisht that hee had beene at least in the same state as I left him, that I might in the same, have paid him the debt I ow'd him: who had without any cause or reason in the world, us'd mee so unworthily. He made mee many offers of his house; the very naming onely whereof, made my blood to boyle in my brest. CHAPTER VIII

Now (me thought) the Bats were fluttering about mine eares, that the Gnats began to sting me, and that from underneath the bed, crept out those old Hobgobblins, and fire-spitting devils, which tormented mee heretofore. No, no; once was enough of this jest; I would bite no more at this bait. The Cat hath cozened me once,[1] and is gone Proverbe

[1] *Una fue, y llevosela el gato.* I cannot find whither this *una* is refer'd, and therefore referre it to others to find it out.

away with her prey, but she shall serve mee so no more. I shall take heede of her against another time. Marry, I said to my felfe ; Onely Sayavedra, may put another tricke upon me, but it will not bee much for his profit. But (excepting him) let any man else deceive mee the second time, and I will freely forgive him.

We talked of many things ; and amongst divers other questions, he demanded of me, if I had beene heretofore in Genoa ? Are you thereabouts (thought I ;) I shall watch you well enough for that, you shall not catch me with this trap, as old and crafty as you be. So (lying at my close sights) I answered him, that I had not ; onely I told him, that much about some three yeares since, that I past this way, but could not (though I would) stay longer then one night, because I was going in great haste to Rome, upon pretension of a certaine benefice. Then he told me, with a great deale of pause and deliberation, dreaming perhaps that he had lighted on a story that should please me wonderfull well ; Some seven yeares agoe, little more or lesse, there came hither (my good Cozen) to this towne, a little roguish boy ; whom none that saw him, but would have taken him to be a thiefe, or at least a young disciple of theirs ; who, that hee might the more easily rob me, came to my house, giving mee some particular signes and tokens of my brother, that is now in glory ; as also of your mother ; telling me, that hee was his sonne, and my nephew ; This is true that I tell you (Cozen) thus, and in this manner came he unto me : but hee lookt so like a Rogue, and we had that suspition of him, that not owning him for our kinsman, lest his infamy might reflect upon our family, and turne to our disgrace, we sought to make him leave this Citie, and so he did, by meanes of a pretty plot which we had devised for him. I can assure you (Cozen) that hee went flying from hence, like a dog that hath a bladder, with some few rattling pibles in it, tide to his tayle ; we could never more set sight on him, nor doe we know whether he be dead or alive, as if the earth had then swallowed him up quicke. With the levaltos and high-bounding capers

that he cut, flying finely in the aire, with no other help then a Coverlet, without the which, (you know) your tumblers cannot handsomely doe their feates of activity; I very well remember that he left my bed, (whether out of feare, or what other accident I know not) full of honey-combes. This jest prov'd a very good one; for fearing (if he staid any longer here) to have a worse put upon him, hee got him packing, and so we were fairly rid of him. And I cannot choose but laugh, as oft as I thinke upon it: For questionlesse this Rogue had a purpose to deceive us. But I beleeve he will remember this nights lodging (if he be yet alive) the longest day that he hath to live. And I have beene often angry with my selfe, and have beshrewd my fingers a thousand times over and over, that I us'd him no worse.[1]

All that had formerly past, he related unto me very solemnly, omitting no one circumstance: As the contriving of the plot, his making him goe supperlesse to bed (supposing that might have holpe to save his sheets) and which was worse then all the rest, his tossing in a blanket.

I poore man, that was this little rogue that had suffered all this, and had received such hard measure from them, apprehended it so feelingly, as if I had beene afraid I should have gone to this geare againe: My flesh did breake out (me thought) into chops; and like the wound of a murthered man, did open of it selfe, and began to bleed afresh, (upon the hearing of this tale) as if the murderer were present. And albeit, I sensibly perceived in my selfe, that the colour of my face did receive some alteration, having changed its naturall hew, yet did I dissemble it the best that I could; and then, even then at that very instant, did I whet the razor of my revenge. Not so much moved thereunto, out of my former hunger, that I had to doe it; as this his present boasting, what fine feats he had done; seeming to take a pride and a glory in doing an undeserved mischiefe. For I hold it a greater sinne (and doubtlesse

[1] This Story you shall find more at large, in the first Part, first Chapter and the third Booke.

so it is) to boast an ill, then to doe it. I did itch all the while this tale was on foot, and knew not which way to looke, nor what to say. At last I said unto him; I can not call to minde, who this youth should be that did so earnestly long to have honourable parents; yet are we beholding unto him, (if haply he be alive, and have escaped with life from Ronçesvalles) that of all other noble Houses (whereof there are so many in the world) he would vouchsafe to make choyce of ours, to honour himselfe therewithall. And if such another stripling as he, should chance to come to my house, I would show him all the kindnesse I could, till I had fully inform'd my selfe of the truth, and had assured knowledge, whether he came unto me out of an evill, or good intent. For there are some Cases, and some such strange and unexpected casualties, whereunto mans courses are incident, that even persons of great, both worth and valour, escape in that miraculous manner, and are by their misfortunes, brought to that low ebbe, that they are asham'd of them-selves. But this wag, when I had sifted and sounded him throughly, and found out his intent, I would have dealt with him, as hee would have dealt with mee: For Povertie neither quits Vertue, nor Riches give it. And in case it should not have fallen out as my suspitious thoughts had suggested it, and that (for ought I saw) he had no evill intention towards me, nor any purpose to doe any harm, I should have favoured him all that I could, and have secretly dismist him from me. And in a word, though hee had not beene my kinsman, yet for the good choice that he made, and the good liking he had to our name, preferring it before any other, surely hee should not have fared the worse for that. And if I had not given him any money in his purse, yet would I at least have us'd him civilly, and not sent him away discontented, who (as it should seeme by him) was not very well pleased with his entertainment. Goe to, goe to, (Cozen) (said the old man) had you seene him, as I did, you would have told me another tale then now you do. And for mine own part, (I must confesse unto you) it did me good at the heart, that

I had thus firkt my young Rogue ; and (as I told you before) I am very sory that I did not handle him worse, and give him that condigne punishment, which the heynousnesse of the offence did deserve. For you never saw such a tatterd Rascall as he was in all your life ; and being thus all to be rent and torne, and not a ragge (saving your reverence) to cover his breech, yet this shake-rag, this young impudent Rogue, did not sticke to challenge kindred of us, and that he was lineally descended of our house, and in so neare a degree, as you have heard. And because he brought not his wedding garment with him, but was thus poore and basely clad, we gave him Jacke Drums entertainment, and shut him out of doores, having lapt him first in a blanket, where hee was handsomely canvast ; and with this he went his way. Just about the same time (said I) was I with my mother in Sevill. And it's not yet full three yeere since I left her. I was their onely sonne, nor had my parents any other children save my selfe. It was even at my tongues end, and almost out of my mouth ere I was aware, that I had two fathers ; but quickly mending that fault, I went on, as followeth : My father left me well to live, being neither so much, as there-with to be able to spend lavishly ; nor yet so little, that with good government, I might not live handsomely. I cannot boast my selfe to be riche, nor justly complaine that I am poore. Besides, my mother was alwayes a prudent and provident woman, well govern'd, a small waster, and a great huswife. CHAPTER VIII

All they that were there present, were willing to give me the hearing, and were wondrous glad of it, not well knowing in what Sanctuary they might place me ; nor how sufficiently to feast me, nor could they satisfie them-selves in point of good manners, if they did not give me the right hand, and being two, if they did not put me in the midst betweene them both.[1] Then did I softly say to my selfe ; O vanity, whither wilt thou ? how doest thou runne after those that are fortunate, as long as they saile with a faire wind. But when that fayles thee, how in a moment doe

[1] The middle place esteemed in Spaine, to be the best.

thy friends forsake thee, how many changes doest thou find in an instant? And how truly, did I now come to know that they are evermore favoured and respected, from whom any hope may bee had, that one way or other, they may be benefited by them? and this is the reason why few doe helpe the needy, and all runne after the riche.

We are the children of pride, and rather flatterers then friends. For if wee were true friends indeed, and were charitably minded, wee would have recourse to the contrary. Especially, we knowing how acceptable a thing it is in the sight of God, that every one should be as sensible of his neighbours miseries, as his owne, seeking to doe the same good unto him, as we would have to be done unto our selves, were wee in the same wretched case, as he is. I was now become the idoll of my kindred, so much was I adored by them. I had bought me at an *Almoneda*,[1] a faire Cupboord of plate, which cost mee almost eight hundred Ducats; and for no other end in the world, but to close up this my wound the better, I invited all my kindred together, with some other of my friends one day to dinner. I made them a great feast, bestowed a costly banket upon them, cheared them all up, made wonderfull much of them, and gave them all the kinde entertainment I could possibly devise. After dinner, wee goe to play, I get the money, but gave it almost all away in *barato* to the standers by. And with this conjuring tricke thus I carried them through the Ayre, I was able to doe what I would doe with them. O that I could have then whispered them softly in the eare, and have told them; Know (Gentlemen) that you feed upon your owne flesh; that the wolfe is in the midst of your flocks;[2] and that hee, whom they make so much of, is hee, whom they so much wronged. O, if they did but know so much, how would they blesse them selves, what a world of crosses would they make in every corner of their houses, that they might not be troubled

Proverbe

[1] A publike outcrie: Or an open sale of goods at the second hand.
[2] *En el hato está el lobo.*

with a double labour all the dayes of their life after to doe the same thing againe, a thousand and a thousand times over? For now their mattresses were a quilting, and their beds a making, wherein they were like to take but little rest, and fetch more friscalls in the ayre, then when they tost mee in the blanket; so that they shall have as good cause to thinke upon mee, as I upon them; and remember one another the better as long as wee live. But my paine was already past; and theirs was now comming upon them. O, if they but knew, that he that is thus with them in sheeps-cloathing, shall ere long breake sodainly in upon them, like a roaring and raging lyon, how would they looke one upon another? But it is well as it is; for ere they and I part, we will quit scores, and make them to know me a little better, and what it is to abuse one in that manner as they did me, and to scorne and despise their owne blood. It is a fine stale, or call, to take a bird withall, to have a good *coram vobis*, to spend bravely, to goe gallantly, and to be a Don Juan de Guzman; but it had beene better for them, that I had beene poore Guzman de Alfarache with his tatterd cloathes, then Don Juan de Guzman in all his gallantry. They us'd me with a greate deale of courtesie, and gave me very kinde entertainment, but because I had a queazy stomacke, and was troubled with many qualmes, like a woman that is a breeding, out of that longing desire that I had to be revenged, nothing would downe with me, or if it did, it would make no stay, but I should presently puke it up againe. For in such cases, a mans thoughts are ever of a bad digestion; it being the nature of injuries, not to be easily concocted. So that I did continually beat my braines about it, plodding with my selfe how I should best effect it; and in this vertuous exercise had I set my wits a working, and all these my noble entertainments tended to no other end then this. For it had beene great folly in me, to have made such great preparation to no purpose. And unprofitable is that power, which is not reduced to act.[1] I did but wait for a happy conjuncture,

[1] *Inanis potentia, quæ non reducitur ad actum.*

THE SECOND BOOKE

for every thing hath its *quando*,[1] its when it should be done. For we cannot execute all things, at all times. Besides there are some houres that are unlucky, some starres that are crosse, and some planets that are malignant; whose contagious breath we are to flie from, and keepe our selves aloofe from their infectious ayre, lest they chance to worke our destruction.

Proverbe

Thus then did I leysurely stay, looking for a fit occasion, passing those dayes that I remained there, in feasting and banquetting, and all other delightfull pleasures; one while walking downe to the Sea-side, to take the fresh ayre; otherwhiles, going to recreate my selfe in their sweet and pleasant Gardens, which are very curiously kept; and now and then visiting the faire Dames of Genoa.

My Kinsmen, would faigne have made mee to marry a Gentlewoman of very good quality, but of a small Dowry: but I durst not venture upon her, for the reasons before recited: and being besides to steale away from thence very shortly, our eggs must have beene buried in the ashes;[2] yet did I shew my selfe very thankfull unto them for these their good wishes towards mee; neither accepting, nor refusing their offer, that I might goe entertaining and leading them along till I had hit the marke that I aymed at. For, certaine it is, that a man may then easiliest knock out his enemies braines, when his adversary thinkes there is no such treachery intended against him, and rests most secure. And here will wee rest a while.

Proverbe

[1] *Cada cosa tiene su quando.*
[2] *Aviamos de dar con los huevos en la ceniza.*

CHAPTER IX

Guzman de Alfarache robs his Uncle and Kinsmen in Genoa, and imbarkes him-selfe in the Gallies that were to goe for Spaine

AN injury, never ought to bee slighted; nor he sleepe that does it. For Revenge comes up from beneath the earth, lurking in the secret corners thereof, lying still in Ambush, watching but a fit time to sally forth; and to doe thee a mischiefe. The hare oftentimes starts out of that bush, where wee did least dreame of his sitting.[1] Let not the rich man trust in his riches; nor the powerfull man in the greatnesse of his power; nor the strong man, in his strength; nor the valiant man, in his courage: for Time alters the state of things, and turnes them topsie-turvy. A little hayre in a Pen, makes a great blot; and a little stone in the way, overturnes a great Waine. And when the Offender thinks himselfe most secure; then the offended finds the better opportunitie. I have told you here-tofore, that Revenge is base Cowardise, which springs from a weake womanish minde; to which kinde of Creatures it is commonly competible, and sutes best with them. And albeit I have mentioned some, nay many unto you, that have made their names immortall, by scorning and contemning of it; yet here I shall not omit to tell you a story of a woman, wherein shee well shew'd that she was a woman.

Touching revenge

Proverbe

Revenge a womanish affection

[1] *De donde no piensan, suele saltar la liebre.*

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

THE SECOND BOOKE

A Story how a wronged Gentlewoman revenged the injury that was done unto her

A Gentlewoman, that was young, faire, rich, and of a noble linage, being married to a Gentleman, in every respect equall unto her selfe, chanced within a short time after to become a widdow : who discreetly considering the dangers, whereinto by reason of her tender yeares, shee was like to fall, and what speeches the world is wont to cast out, through a too much aptnesse that men have to whisper and murmur strange tales : for every man judgeth so of things as they represent themselves to his imagination ; and as hee is instructed by his private either fancy or affection ; and taking notice of one onely action of this or that man or woman, it is a common practice amongst them, to varry their opinions thereupon, and give their severall censures. And yet not alwayes doe these tongues of theirs speake the truth ; nor their judgements hit upon the right. She, holding it therefore very inconvenient to put these deare pledges of hers, upon the tips of mens tongues, and to occasion her honour to come in question ; shee resolved (as on the lesser evill) to marry. Two Gentlemen became Suters unto her, both equall in their pretension ; but farre unequall in their deserving. The one, to his as much content, as his heart could desire, the match being in a manner concluded ; but the other rejected and quite cast off, running a contrary fortune to his Corrivall. And besides, that hee was not of that ranke and quality as the other, hee had likewise some other defects, which might very well excuse a woman of farre meaner indowments, to admit him to bee her Companion. Now, the former being made sure to this Gentlewoman, and having past their promises each to other ; so that nothing was wanting but their going to Church, and there to performe those Ceremonies, and Solemnities in that case required. The second, seeing his hopes dasht, and his sute at an end, and that there was no recovering of her ; for that shee was already betrothed to the other : a divellish toy tooke him sodainly in the head, by perverse and indirect meanes, to fetch such a leape, as should put himselfe forward, and cast the other behinde.

Hee resolved with him-selfe to rise up one day very early

in the morning, which he did accordingly; and having hid him-selfe in a secret place, where no body could see him, there did he lie close, till such time as the servants of the house had opened this betrothed Gentlewomans doores; and then presently taking his time, without being heard or perceived by any, he steps mee in, and there stayes mee a pretty while behind the porch, till such time, as to his seeming, the people were stirring in the streets, and all the rest of the houses and shops were open. And then faigning to come out of the Gentlewomans house, as if he had lyen there all night, he stands strutting him-selfe upon the midst of the threshold before the doore, with his sword clapt under his arme, making show as if he were setting and ordering his Ruffe, and buttoning up the buttons of his Doublet; so that as many as past by and observed the manner of his carriage, did verily beleeve, that hee was espoused unto her, and had now injoyed this Gentlewoman.

When this plot of his fell out thus handsomely, that for his purpose hee could not have wisht it to have taken better effect: this businesse was whispered of at first by a few; but afterwards spred it selfe by degrees, and came to be divulged all over the street, till at last the noyse thereof entred into her owne private chamber. This tricke had hee played twice over. And this businesse was so publikely talked of, and the Gentlewoman growne thereby so infamous, that it was the Table-talke of all the Towne: every man admiring this her inconstancy, and wondring at her indiscretion, that shee should forgoe her first bargaine, being so advantageous for her owne good, and make choice of this other, whom she had formerly cast off, and not without cause. But when this newes was thus scattered every where abroad, and every mans mouth was full of the manner of it; as that hee was seene to come out halfe naked, all undrest, and his points untrust: when this (I say) came to the knowledge of her other Suiter, hee did so risent the wrong she had done him, was so overcharged with sorrow, and so inflamed with choller, that albeit he lov'd her before so tenderly, that he desired nothing more then to make her his wife; now did

hee cruelly hate her ; flying now as fast from her, as before hee sought after her : and did not onely abhorre her ; but all other women for her sake : it seeming unto him ; That since shee, whom he so much esteemed, and so dearely loved, accounting her so good, so chaste, and so reserved a creature, that shee should commit so foule a fact, there was little hope of faith to be found in the rest : and if there were any left on whose loyalty men might trust and relye, they were so few, that hee despaired of meeting with that happinesse. Hee weighed their inconstancies, their delayings, their passions, and with them the dangers, the troubles, and the cares whereinto men put them-selves. And passing from these to other discourses which he made with him-selfe, inspired by God, they wrought so upon him, that hee changed the love of the creature, into that of the Creator, resolving with him-selfe to turne Fryer. Which deliberation, hee putting in execution, sodainly entred into a religious Order. This came to the Gentlewomans knowledge, and with it, the report that ran of her, as also the occasion of it, who, when shee saw how things stood, and that it was not possible for her to repaire her honour ; nor to take away that foule blot which the other had laid upon it, shee tooke-on like a mad woman : and how can you blame her, that she should thus lose her selfe in her passions ; having lost at one blow, her honour, her Husband, her preferment, and her chiefest happinesse ? hopelesse for ever, eyther by this, or any other the like meanes, to receive any future content, or to returne to the former state wherein shee stood, or to recover her reputation, which was thus shamefully lost.

Whereupon shee began to bethinke her selfe, how shee might salve this her innocency by some exemplary punishment. And having summ'd and cast up these reckonings with her selfe, shee found her honesty so deeply ingaged, that it was impossible by any other course but this, to clear it : and that such a treachery as this, could not be quitted, then with one no lesse treacherous, though more cruell. Whereupon, shee did put on so infernall a fury, and went on in that violent rage, that shee busied her thoughts in

nothing else, save how she might bring this businesse about. Godd bee mercifull unto us, and deliver us from a wronged womans revenge ; for all of them are commonly such as she, who here presents her-selfe unto us.

The first thing that shee resolved on, was to use her best endeavour to become a Nunne ; (and if shee had stopt there, she had spunne a good thred) and imparting a great part of her troubles to an especiall friend of hers, that was of that Monastery, whither she had determined to goe, after shee had broken her minde unto her ; shee, with great secrecy, effected her desire. Then did shee convey into the Monastery, all the chiefest of her household-stuffe, her Jewels, and her monies, annexing thereunto, by publike conveyances and instruments drawne and signed for that use, the greatest part of her wealth. This being done, she stood daily expecting, that this Gentleman her enemy, should come and renue his suite, and treate with her, touching their mariage ; which (according to her expectation) within some few dayes after, hee did : alleadging in his excuse, the great love that hee bare unto her ; for which cause, being desperate of his hopes, hee used those subtill meanes, that he might obtaine the end of his wished desires. But now, acknowledging his fault, and that hee had beene the cause of this error, that was voyced abroad, craving pardon for the same, he was willing to solder up this flawe, by tendring himself to bee her husband. Shee, who desired nothing more, then that this his wicked intention should come to light, and that her honor thereby might recover its former splendor, made answer unto him ; That seeing there was now no other meanes left unto her for the salving of her credit, nor no better course to bee taken for the recovery of her lost reputation ; she did willingly accept of his offer. But told him withall, that shee had made a vow, the performance whereof would be accomplished within these two months, or little more, and untill that time were expired, shee could not give him that satisfaction which hee desired. But, if hee would bee pleased to have the patience to stay till then, hee should obtaine his suite.

But, if hee were so eagerly bent upon the businesse, that impatient of so long an intermission of time, he longed to come sooner to this his desired end, shee would not stop him in this his journey ; but would have the businesse to be carryed with all possible secrecy, till the terme of the aforesaid two moneths should be fully accomplished ; and then afterwards shee did not care (leaving that to his discretion) how soone this their mariage were manifested to the world.

The Gentleman accepted of the condition, holding himselfe (therein) the happiest man in the world. And having provided all that was fitting and necessary for a businesse of this nature, they were secretly contracted together, by vertue whereof, they were espoused each to other. They continued together on these termes some few dayes, hee entertaining himselfe with that assured hope which hee had of his absolute injoying of her, and she being no lesse contented then hee, with the wished end that shee had to worke her revenge.

One night, after they had supt, her husband went to bed, shee enters into the chamber, and setting her selfe downe neare unto the bed-side, feigning to be busying her fingers about some trifling worke or other, (as women are never without a thousand such idle toyes) she waited by him, till he was falne asleepe, and when she saw that the soundnesse of his first sleepe had seazed forcibly upon him, she softly puts her hand into the sleeve of her gowne, and taking out a keene cutting knife, as sharpe as any raysour, to that first sleepe of his, she added the last minute of his life ; for in an instant she had cut his throat, and left him dead in the bed, wallowing in his owne blood. Afterwards, telling the people of the house, that her husband had had a very bad night of it, and that none should go in for feare of waking him, till he himselfe were willing to call to them, or that her selfe should returne from Masse ; shee shut the doore after her, and hy'd her as fast as she could, to the Monastery, where shee presently received the habit and was made a Nunne, after that shee had thus washt away her infamy, with

his blood, who had bespotted it, giving a notorious token of her honesty, and a terrible demonstration of her cruelty. CHAPTER IX

I will likewise tell you (because it suteth well to this purpose) that which Fuctillos said ; a foole that went up and downe Alcala de Henares ; one whom I afterwards very well knew. This foole, a dogge had bit by the legge, which hurt, though he was afterwards well healed of it, yet his heart was not at quiet : for he had still a spight to that dogge. Whom hee finding one day by chance lying all along before his doore, sleeping in the Sunne, he went to a certaine place neere unto the Church of Santa Maria, and taking up a great stone, as much as he could lift with both his hands, he came softly stealing towards the dogge, without being perceived by him, and lifting it up as high as ever hee could reach, let it fall just upon the head of him. The poore Curre, having received this cruell blow, being in extreame torment, and neere unto his death, began to make a most pittifull howling, and fell (his last pangs being upon him) a bounding in the ayre. Fuctillos the foole, seeing in what case he was, said unto him ; Doe you heare brother, doe you heare ? *Quien enemigos tiene, no duerma* : He does ill to sleepe that has an enemy. I remember I told you once before ; That ill, is alwaies ill ; But of all ills, I hold revenge to bc the worst : For a revengefull heart knowes not how to be mercifull. And he that shall not shew mercy, let him not looke for mercy, neither from God, nor man. For every man shall be meted with thc same measure that he meteth unto others.[1] And in the samc balance that thou weighest thy neighbour, in the same shalt thou bee weighed thy selfe. This, thou canst not deny, but I must have thee also to confesse, That they are in an error, who knowing mens evill inclination, will yet be so simple, as to trust them ; especially those, whom we have formerly injured ; for few or none of your reconciled friends, but prove rotten at the heart ; and how faire a show soever they make, not one of them of a thousand that is sound and good. He doth offer a pleasing sacrifice unto God, who for Gods sake

A tale of Fuctillos the foole

Proverbe

Revenge, of all ills the worst

Proverbe

Trust not a reconciled enemie

[1] *Por la medida que midiere, ha de ser medido.*

THE SECOND BOOKE

A story of a miracle, wrought in San Miniato, and upon what occasion

onely, remitteth the wrongs that he hath received. Few miracles have we seene in this case; Only I was an eye-witnesse of one my selfe in Florence, which happened without the wals of the City, in the Church of San Miniato, that stands within the Castle. Which because it is but a short one, and worthy your memorie, I wil briefly relate it unto you. A Gentleman of Florence, called Captaine Giovanni Gualberto, the son of a noble Knight, that was a *Titulado*, going to Florence with his Company, well armed, and on horse-back, he met upon the way with a mortal enemy of his, who had kild his brother; who seeing the danger wherin he was, giving him-selfe for a lost man, (for that he knew not how to escape him) humbled him-selfe at his feet, and crossing his brest with his arms, besought his pardon, and that for Jesus Christs sake, that was crucified, hee would be pleased to spare him his life. Giovanni Gualberto, had these words in that veneration, that pricked with a charit able compunction, taking pitty of him, hee willingly pardoned this his enemie. And taking him along with him, he made him to goe backe againe with him to Florence, and brought him to San Miniatos Church, to offer thankes unto God. And kneeling downe before a Crucifex, which was a very lively peece, Giovanni Gualberto, kneeling also on his knees, desired of God, That he would so forgive him his trespasses, as he did freely forgive this his enemy that had trespassed against him, in killing his brother. Which words were no sooner uttered by him, but Christ bowed his head unto him. Giovanni Gualberto, humbly acknowledging this great grace and favour there showne unto him in the presence of all those that were there, presently entred into a religious Order, in which holy profession, he continued to his dying day. This image of Christ stands to this day, with his head bowing it selfe downe, even in the selfe same manner as it stood then: and is there reverenced as a great relicke, not onely by the Florentines, but all other Catholickes.

And now (laying Miracles aside) let mee truly tell you, That when a man does pardon his enemie, but takes not this for his ground, it leaves some embers behinde, some

quicke coales covered over with a few ashes, which being stir'd never so little, breakes forth againe, inflaming the soule, and soliciting it to revenge. And howbeit outwardly this fire seeme to bee dead; yet God keepe us from this still water; for many a time and oft, this fire is onely sprinkled over with a little Court-holy-water, which is as good as nothing; or sleightly cover'd over with the ashes of a false forgivenesse. But if you shall but offer to blow it with Occasions bellowes, though never so little, it soone discovers it selfe, the coales kindle by and by, and the flames of their hatred breake forth afresh, and to as deepe a revenge, as if there had never beene any atonement betweene them. And this I am able to justifie unto you, as having made experience thereof my selfe: For I was ever so mightily pricked on to revenge, as if (like a beast) the spurres thereof lay still gagging at my sides. And well may I say beast, for he is no lesse, that is thus beastly-minded. I had still before mine eyes, that dis-joynting and ratling of my bones, when like the winnowing of wheat in a fanne, they tost me up on high, and no sooner downe, but hoist me up againe, every bone of mee seeming to gingle like so many bels. What with this, and that delight and pleasure that they tooke in the recounting of the jest, and the evill intent wherewithall they did it, besides their telling of me, that nothing did so much grieve them, as that they had not us'd me worse, I could not choose but beare it in minde, and say to my selfe; O ye misbegotten rascals, ye villaines, ye enemies to goodnesse, ye dogges: I came to your gates, being poore and needy, and what a fine refreshing did yee give me, that I might the better goe forward on my journey! This their course usage, had stir'd up such store of choller in mee, that I did now desire nothing more, then to cry quittance with all those that had a hand in this conspiracy. And not so much to be revenged of them, as that old dog-bolt, who was the principall plotter, and actor, both of it, and my hurt.

CHAPTER IX
Of revenge

The time passed on, and with it I gained more friends, wedging them closer and closer daily unto me, I knowing

them, and they mee. The proposed mariage was hotly pursued by them, they all very earnestly desiring to have me naturalized amongst them. I visited them, and they me: my friends resorted to my lodging, and I to theirs. Now, as if I had beene a towne-borne child, I had free accesse in all parts of the City, I went and plaid amongst them at their Ordinaries, and publike houses of gaming; and they likewise would come and meete at my lodging; sometimes losing, and sometimes getting, till one night amongst the rest, the Cards fell out so luckily, and shew'd themselves so favourable unto me, that I carried home with mee at one clap above seven thousand Royals: where-with my Gentlemen were so nettled, that the next night after, they were very desirous to play greater game. I misliked not the motion; for the time of my reckning was now neare at hand, if not past; my nine monthes,[1] (as the common saying is) that I had gone with child, looking to be brought a-bed of this birth, begotten of mine owne braine, were now fully expired; and every moment I expected a happy houre. For Captaine Favelo had already told me, that the Galleys were now ready, and that he was fully perswaded, they would very shortly goe for Spaine. This made me bestirre my stumpes, and to get all things ready to goe aboord, conceiving they were now hoysing sayle, fitting their oares, and ready to launch,[2] being resolved, whither-soever they went, to goe along with them; yet I durst not make it knowne, till going out of the haven, they were to put forth to Sea. I accepted that night their challenge, and continued play with them, but to no other end in the world, but to entertaine the time, that I might afterwards be the better provided, to give them a wipe for a farewell, and to tickle them with the latter arrow, or (as they use to doe in Portugall) *darles de pancada.*

Proverbe

That night I lost, but no more then I was willing; for now I did employ all my skill, to bring my purpose to passe.

[1] *Yo estava fuera cuenta: ò, en las nueve meses.*

[2] The Spanish word is *Leva. termino nautico, y vale la partida, y arrancada que hazen las galeras del puerto, à levando.*

DE ALFARACHE

I did float up and downe with a side winde, and got to winde-ward of them, still bestowing *barato* (howsoever the world went) upon my old friend the Captaine ; because I knew he was to returne it backe againe in the end, to my greater advantage. Some few dayes after, I perceiv'd my Captaine grew some-what sad ; I askt him what might be the cause of this his melancholy, and that he was not so merry, as he was wont to be : He told me, it was onely the sorrow, that he had conceived, that he and I, ere long must part ; for that some ten dayes hence the Galleys were without faile to goe away, by expresse order given for their departure. CHAPTER IX

His words were pearles ; and this language of his, as a voyce from heaven, as if I had heard it once more say unto me ; Open this Cabinet, unlocke that chest, and pull out that other Cat by the eares, and carry away with thee, what thou list. So that now, I thought this businesse was in a manner quite ended. And so taking my Captaine aside, when I saw that he and I were all alone, I said unto him ; Sir, you have show'd your selfe such a friend unto me, and I doe so highly esteeme of your love and friendship, that I know not how either to indeare, or requite it. There is offered now unto me by occasion of this your voyage, an absolute remedie to all my desires, and a fit opportunitie to effect, what I have long since intended ; and without your helping hand, wherein it chiefly consisteth, I utterly despaire of obtayning my purpose. And if I have for-borne till now to give you an account thereof (which I ought to have done, in regard of that true affection, and faithfull friendship, that is betweene us) it was because I was loth, out of my love unto you, to cause any disquietnesse in you, which the acquainting you therewith, must needs bring with it. I would have you therefore to understand, that I came not hither, either out of any desire to see this Citie, nor for that kinde entertainments sake, or any other courtesie, that I have here received ; but onely for to dis-oblige my selfe, and to revenge a certaine wrong, which my father being an elderly man, received at the hands of a young

Spaniard, that resideth here in this Citie : who was forced thereupon to forsake his Country, as being ashamed of the affront that was done him. And not being able (in regard he was an old man) to right himselfe as he should, he held it his best course, to lessen it by his long absence ; the griefe whereof continued with him to his dying day. And he that had no respect unto those reverend hayres of my aged father, cannot justly complaine of me, if being his sonne, I lose all respect towards him in the working of my revenge. And because it may so fall out, that after I have satisfied my desire, that his friends, either by the great favour they shall finde in this place, or by the strength of their purse, which is no lesse prevalent, shall goe about to doe me any injurie, that you afford me your best assistance, by which good furtherance onely of yours, without any perill to your owne person, you may by your secrecy secure me, and bring me fairely off. Which friendly office shall binde me so fast unto you, that (during life) I shall acknowledge my selfe to be your slave. For a sonne hath no more honour, then what he inherits from his father : And if my father had none to leave me, this trayterous enemie of his, having taken it from him, I likewise live without it, and must recover it my selfe by these hands of mine, and by mine owne proper industry. Which if my kinsmen have not sought to repayre, it was, for that they were not either willing to hazard themselves, or their fortunes ; or for that after my fathers absence, all was buryed, and not so much as a word spoken thereof, whereby the remembrance of the wrong might have beene revived. Holding it the lesser inconvenience of the two, to let it sleepe thus quietly as it did, then by awaking it, to give occasion to the people to publish this his shame the more.

Favelo all this while hearkned very attentively to every word that I said, and would that I should have remitted this businesse unto him, to the end that hee might make himselfe a party in this revenge, as became a true friend ; not doubting but that he should give me good satisfaction therein, and performe it as well as I my selfe could wish.

And albeit he was very earnest with me, using many violent intreaties, that he might take this burthen wholly upon him, yet notwithstanding could he not bring me to give way unto it; Telling him, that it was neither just, nor fitting; That the injurie being mine, the revenge should be anothers. And that onely for this end, I was come out of my native countrey of Spaine, with a resolution never to returne thither againe, till that I my selfe had given my enemie his payment, and in that coyne, that he should know from whom, and wherefore he receiv'd it. Adding withall, that he should doe me a great deale of wrong, to thinke that I wanted either strength or courage to put my selfe upon such a businesse as this is, considering how neerely it concernes me, and how it toucheth my soule to the very quicke. When hee heard me say so (seeing me thus peremptorily bent) he grew so quiet, that he would presse that point no farther; and though he made no reply thereunto, yet he told me; If I have any thing of worth in me, if I can doe any thing, if my whole estate, life, and honour, may import your service, I lay them downe at your feet, they are wholly yours to be disposed of. And if, for feare of the worst (because a man knowes not what may happen in such a case) you will (for to make surer worke) that I and my souldiers shall assist you, or (at least) give us leave to stand at a gaze, to see how the world goes with you, command us so farre forth as you please; your will shall be ours; and we will not be wanting to the uttermost of our power, to afford you our best ayde, and to give you all the content we can. And I will promise you upon mine honest word, and therefore put that to my account, that if you once but set your foot within the Galley, all Italy (would they never so faine) shall not be able to fetch you thence, and would rather runne all dangers my selfe, though never so great, then that you should suffer the least.

Noble Captaine (said I) I beleeve you both in this, and the rest, and am very confident that you professe no more, then what your true heart unto me, doth sincerely suggest. But I thinke, there needeth not so much water to drive this mill.

First, because my enemie rests secure, and suspects not the revenge that I shall take of him : And secondly, for that my selfe and Sayavedra, shall be able well enough to goe through with that which I pretend. Which being accomplished, my desire is, the businesse may be so carryed, that when his friends would right themselves upon me, and should haply chance to pursue me, or make some diligent search after me, they might by your favour, misse of their purpose, and come too late to lay hold upon me. That which presses, and imports me most, and which I require at your hands, is ; That I may know the set day, when the Galleys are to depart, and when you meane to weigh anchor, that I may not lose either time, or occasion. He promised me, I should : And so we were agreed in the end, that by little and little, and that very secretly, I should by Sayavedra convay my trunkes, and my cloathes aboord the Galley, to the end that I might not deferre the doing thereof to the very last push, and have nothing else to busie my selfe about, but onely my imbarking.

I cannot tell you, how much Favelo joyed, nor expresse unto you the great content he tooke, when he knew that he should have mee along with him ; whereupon, he made very good provision of divers delicacies to entertaine me withall, as if I had beene Admirall of the Galleys. I call'd my servant unto me, and told him, what had past betwixt me and Captaine Favelo, and that it was now time to tucke up our sleeves to our elbowes,[1] because we had much to knead, and a great deale of dowe to mould, to make tarts : and therefore we must roundly set our selves to worke. I had scarce ended my discourse with him, but that he was ready for joy to leape out of his skin, he was all a gogg with content, the tindar had now taken fire, the Deere was rouz'd, and he was set so hot on following the game, that there was no holding of him backe. Then presently did we sit in councell concerning the manner of the revenge, and having well advised with my selfe, I said thus unto him :

Proverbe

[1] *Arremangar los braços hasta los codos.* When a man sets himselfe roundly about a peece of businesse.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER IX

The best, the profitablest, and the least dangerous to our selves, will consist in matter of money. This is that which I desire (said Sayavedra) this chase will be better then fifteene, if we looke well to our play. Besides, the wounds that are given us on the bodie, are quickly cured ; but those that light upon our purse, are long a healing, and paine us a great while after, if not all the dayes of our life.

Guzman goes about his plot that he had laid for the cozening of his kinsmen

Goe to then (said I) that we may fall the more handsomly to worke, the first thing that is to be done, is to buy foure trunkes, two of which thou shalt put in that part of the Galley, which Favelo shall appoint for them. And the other two, thou shalt fill with stones, and letting no man know what there is in them, thou shalt cunningly and unespyde, secretly convay to my lodging, and put them in my chamber. These stones shalt thou wrap up close in some old rags, that where-soever they be, or whither-soever they shall be carried, and tumbled to and fro, they may not rattle, nor make any noyse ; charging him to have a great care, that he leave not any one empty place, but with some trash or other cramme them as close as he can for his life. As also to see, that they be not heavier, then he, in his discretion, shall thinke it fitting, making each of them to weigh some six *arrobas* a peece, which will come to about a hundred and a halfe good weight. I also acquainted him with every particular thing, that he was to doe, leaving him well informed with those instructions that I had given him.

When these wheeles were thus set a going, I got me to Don Beltran's house, that good old man, my Unckle, and being in conversation with him, I began to fall into talke, how fearefull I was to goe abroad a-nights, in regard of the trunkes that I had in my lodging, two of them especially being worth the looking to, for that they were full of plate, jewels of good value, and good store of crownes, and (to say the truth) all the litle wealth that I had. This is your owne fault, Cozen, said he unto me ; and if any harme come unto you, blame no bodie but your selfe. For my house might very well (had it pleas'd you to accept of it) have excused both your lodging, and your feare. For albeit,

THE SECOND BOOKE

that where you are be the best in all this Towne ; yet have you not any Inne, (though you shall travaile all the world over) where you shall finde that goodnesse and that honestie, as to keepe any thing there in safetie. You (Cozen) are but a young man, and know not the world as I doe ; I am an old Lad, and have a great deale of experience of these things, and therefore let me advise you, that you never trust your trunkes, but with a sure and strong locke ; and when you are journeying upon the way, carry along with you in your pocket, or your port-manteau, some good pad-locke, to fasten to the staple of the chamber doore, where you lodge. For either your Hoste, or his wife, or his children, or his servants, have two or three keyes to all the chambers, and you shall no sooner turne your backe, but in the twinckling of an eye, you shall lose all that you left there within, and hardly recover it againe. And therefore be sure, to make all sure. For if you shall call mine Hoste, or any of his in question, and seeke to recover your owne by Law, they will answer to your sute, and after a great deale of cost and trouble, they will alleage for themselves, that either you carryed it away your selfe, or that you brought no such thing thither, or at least, that they knew of no such thing, because you had not, when you came in, consigned it unto them, and committed it to their charge ; so that what was thine before, they will by this meanes make it their owne. Into an Inne, bring nothing in ; [1] for it is no sooner in, then lost, unlesse you looke narrowly unto it. But being a young Gallant, as you are, though it please you not, out of your Joviall disposition, and the love to good companie, to take this for your house, which is most freely yours, yet could I wish you to fetch away your trunkes from thence, and to bring them hither, and not to leave any more plate, or silver there, then what shall serve for your necessarie use. For here in my *Escritorio*, all shall be kept safe for you, so that you shall not need to be afraid thereof, as long as it remaines here in my house. I thank't him as much, as if my trunks had beene worth a Million, and so I

What a Traveller must doe, when he comes to his Inne

Proverbe

[1] *En la posada, no ay cosa posada.*

thinke he did conceive as much, or little lesse. As well in regard that he had seene some of my vessels of silver, as likewise my chaine, my gold, and other things, that I had brought thither with me : As also, for that I seem'd to be so desirous to have them secured in some place of safetie. CHAPTER IX

From this talke, we fell into discourse touching my mariage : He telling me, that I was now of fit yeeres for a wife, and that the longer I staid without, if I had a purpose to settle my selfe and my estate, I did but lose so much time ; for that your elder mariages, were but a leaving of a mans children to be fatherlesse, and to become poore miserable Orphanes. And therefore, if I were not minded to be a Church-man, and to admit my selfe into some one religious Order or other, it were better for me to marry out of hand, as well in respect of mine owne comfort, as the husbanding of my estate. For servants, though they be never so faithfull, doe not for the most part want conduit-pipes, to convey away thy wealth, scattering it abroad like water, upon women, gaming, feasting, excesse in apparell, and divers other things, who seeing them-selves necessited, and put to their shifts, to maintaine these their idle expences, rob their Masters of all that they have, and afterwards flie the Country. He laid before me the manifold inconveniences of a single life, and on the necke of that, he comes upon me, making a large relation unto me of the good parts of this Gentle-woman, whom he wisht me unto. Who (as I understood) was his kinswoman by the mother-side, and more nobly, then richly descended. But that defect was supplied by her beauty. I should have had likewise with her, but Ho-there, (as I afterwards came to discover the mysterie) a young daughter, which shee had by a mischance, begotten on her by a young Citizen of Genoa, who had promised her mariage, but afterwards (cozening the poore wench) married with another. He told me besides, that shee had a mother, that was a very wealthy woman, and one that would be a great stay and helpe unto me, especially in the government of my house, and the bringing up of those children, that God should blesse me withall. And that I should finde her Of mariage

no lesse loving unto me, then if shee were mine owne naturall mother. I did set a good face on the matter, and seemed to like wondrous well of all that which hee had said unto mee ; Telling him, that what-soever came from him, could not but be good ; and that his counsell should be a guide to my actions, without farther consultation from my selfe, as conveniencie should offer it selfe. But that I might not lose a certaine Benefice, that was bestowed upon me, for the making sure of that, I must necessarily resigne it to a Cozen-Germane of mine, my mothers-sisters-sonne, who lives in Sevill. I threw out this baite unto him, to nibble upon, where-with I entertain'd him for that time, hee seeming well contented with my faire answer.

Whilest we were earnestly talking of this businesse, in comes Sayavedra unto me, and rounding me in the eare, made show as if he had deliver'd me a very long message. I then (seeing my time, speaking out aloud) said unto him ; And what answer did you make him ? And he answering me in the same key, replyde ; What answer would you have me make him Sir, but that it should be done. Marry, beshrew your fingers for it, (said I) you did not well, in saying so. Doest not thou know, that I am not now in Rome, nor Sevill ; doest thou not see how rash and inconsiderate thou hast beene, in promising that for me, which I cannot performe ? Goe, carry him the great chaine, give it him, and tell him, that this is all that I have, and that I can doe no more then I can doe : Excuse me unto him, and signifie withall, that I have straind my selfe as farre for him, as my abilitie can reach. You say well Sir (replyde Sayavedra) but how a Gods name, shall I be able to lugg along by my side such a huge chaine as this, that weighs seven hundred crownes in good gold ? I thinke I had need hyre a porter to helpe me. I presently made answer ; No more words ; Doe as I bid you. Get you to some Gold-smiths shop or other, and take the chaine along with you, and make choyce of some Jewell there, or what you shall thinke fit will serve the turne, and leave the chaine there, or some other pawne, which shall be worth more then what you have of him, and

pay him interest for the lone of it: and this, I take it, will be the better course. And if the pawne fall out too short, make it out in Crownes unto him. So shalt thou dis-ingage thy selfe of the folly, whereinto thou hast runne: For I know no other remedie but this.

My Unckle, who listned to all that I had said; What pawnes (said he) will you give him, or for what? To whom I made answer; Sir, he that hath foolish servants, must whether he will or no incurre many inconveniences, falling still into a hundred thousand errours, and as many mischiefes, and sleepe-breaking cares. There is a Gentlewoman here of Castile, that is treating a mariage with a Gentleman of her owne Country, they are both well knowne unto me, and of my especiall acquaintance, and to whom I owe some beholdingnesse. They have requested me, that I would furnish them with apparell and jewels for their wedding; which is now so neere at hand, that I cannot give them that satisfaction, that I would. You see Sir, what tree they trust unto, and what shifts I am driven to, to cumply with them. And the griefe of it is, that this blockhead my man, had not the wit to excuse me, being he knew, how hardly I could doe them this kindnesse. And I am halfe jealous, that he out of his owne kinde heart invited them thereunto, and without making mee privie unto it, hath promised them my best furtherance. For it cannot sinke into my head, that a woman of judgement, should of her selfe request such a courtesie as this. And if it be his owne act, why should not he make it good without me? But Sirrah (said I to my man) seeing it is as it is, and it cannot now be otherwise, goe wait upon her, and doe as shee shall direct you.

The old man, seeing me so much moved, and that I seemed to be much offended with my man, for his indiscretion, said unto me; Cozen, let not this trouble you, it is not a thing worth the speaking of, and therefore let it not disquiet you: you are come into a place, where you cannot want friends for so small a matter as this. I know that very well Sir, (said I) and that my noble kinsmen here,

will doe me any friendly office that lies in their power, and that as long as they have it, I cannot lacke. But because amongst all our kindred, I know not any of those that are married, that can furnish me with such things as shee requireth for this solemnity, I dare not intreat them in a matter so troublesome as this cannot choose but be unto them. And yet on the other side, being so earnestly requested to supply this Gentle-womans occasions, the very demanding of such a courtesie, is a kind of commanding of it, and obligeth me (as I am a Gentleman) to make the best shift I can for her, and to trie all my friends, rather then faile her now at her need. And yet I know well enough, that Jewels are not every where to be met withall, which in publike assemblies, and such solemne acts, as these are, can shew their faces without blushing. Cozen (said he) no more, it is enough ; breake not your sleepe for this, nor take you any farther care ; For I, for my part, and other your kinsmen, on theirs, will trie amongst us, what we can doe, and doubt not but wee shall fit her in that reasonable and convenient manner, as shall serve her turne, and salve your credit. Nay (Cozen) I will not have you sit out for a little, if I can helpe it. And as for your Trunkes, you may send them hither when you please. I kist his hands for this his double kindnesse, returning him both for the one and the other, such condigne thankes, as either my wit could invent, or my words expresse, acknowledging the great and extraordinary favour that herein he should doe me : and so taking my leave of him, as soone as ever I came home to my lodging, I tooke order, that the Trunkes, (each of them having three keyes a peece, being well and surely lockt, and strongly plated with yron,) should out of hand be carried thither without any more adoe.

My Unkle, when he saw Sayavedra enter his house, and the Porters at the heeles of him, so heavy laden, that they were scarce able to creepe along with them, having well considered the strength of the locks and barres about them, and the distrust that I had of mine Hoast, together with the weight and heaft of them, he did certainly assure him-

selfe, that they were full of treasure. Whereupon he asked Sayavedra what was within those Trunkes, that they weighed so heavy? Whereunto he answered; Sir, though my master hath many things in them of great value, yet that which is worth more then all the rest, is a parcell of stones, which he hath gathered together from all parts of Italy, the choisest he could light upon, wheresoever hee came, but for whom they are, or whither he will carry them, I know not. The old man arched up his eie-brows, and wiped his eyes, wondring to see such great store of wealth, and putting them with his owne hands in safe custody, under the keeping (as they say) of seven keyes,[1] the Trunkes remained with him, and Sayavedra returned home. And there (like Pigeons, when they court and woo one another, and have done billing, and murmured out their amarous passions) we two loving companions fell likewise a crookling, and gathering straw, for to build our nest. Wee spent all that night in devising new plots, and in plotting new devices, how wee might fetch off another kinsman of mine, that was young, rich, and of great credit amongst them, resolving to goe home to his house, and there to pitch another net for him, to the end that whilst others should complaine of the harme I had done them, he should not stand by and laugh, whilst others wept, and applaud his wit, that he escaped my fingers. And therefore I was minded to invest him likewise with this new order of a second St. Iago. And so I did: For the Sunne was scarce up, and got out of his bed, when Sayavedra taking with him the two chaines, in those two boxes that were so like one another, gilded equally on every side, neatly closed with your Dutch claspes, with alike vises, or springs, that would shut of them-selves, bearing them closely under his cloake, home we came unto him; where we found him newly up, and making him-selfe ready. But not thinking that a fit time, I was willing to have defer'd my seeing of him, till after dinner. But when it was told him that I was there, he tooke it ill, and seemed somewhat ashamed withall, accusing

CHAPTER IX

Proverbe

Another plot of Guzmans

[1] *Debaxo de siete llaues:* i.e. *á muy buen cobro.*

me of strangenesse, that I would be so dainty with him, as to make scruple of comming up unto him, as soone as I came within the house. I told him I did not doe it out of any nicenesse, but that I was loath to disquiet him, for that I understood he was taking his rest. With these, and the like complements, we past the time a while, questioning each other of our healths, and discoursing of some things (whilst he was dressing and fitting his cloathes) about the Citie, at last hee brought me downe into a closet, or pretty little counting-house, that hee had beneath stayres, and sitting downe, after a short pausing, hee demanded of me, what wind had blowne me thither so early? Sir (said I) none, save onely that I may give a good morrow to the day, to the end, that it may thrive the better with me: For the night hath not beene my friend.

The businesse Sir, that I come unto you about, is to intreat you, that if you have any servant of yours in the house, that is an honest discreete fellow, that you would be pleased to call him thither. Which I had no sooner said, but hee presently rings me a bell, the sound whereof was no sooner heard, but two or three came hastily running in. And having beckned to one amongst the rest, to come unto him; he said unto him; here is my servant Steffanello, who shall doe what-soever you shall be pleased to command him. That then (quoth I) which I shall intreat at his hands, is, That he will take the paines, to goe along with my servant Sayavedra to some Gold-smith, to take the aloy, weight, and value of a chaine that I have here. Sayavedra thereupon presently delivered me the little boxe, wherein was that which I had caused to be made of pure gold; and taking it out, I shew'd it unto him; my kinsman was much pleased with the sight thereof, and was never weary with looking upon it, so handsome a one it was, so beautifull, so massie, and of that extraordinary curious workmanship. Insomuch, that it seemed unto him, that he had never seene the like; for it was all of dainty delicate fine linkes, smoothly polished, without any stones, or inammelling at all. When he had taken his fill in viewing

of it, I return'd it backe againe to my servant, and they two went together to dispatch this businesse, whilst we in the meane while continued talking sometimes of one thing, sometimes another, the better to passe the time. A little while after, they both came backe againe, bringing with them a little scrole of paper, with the Gold-smiths hand to it, wherein it was there set downe, That the chaine of gold, was in finenesse two and twenty Carats, and that it was (according to its weight) worth sixe hundred and three and fifty Spanish Crownes, and somewhat more. Then I called to Sayavedra, and willed him to give it mee, who delivered mee the counterfaite one, first opening the boxe wherein it lay, where once more taking it forth, we fell afresh to looking upon it. And putting it anon after into its boxe, which I still kept open, I said unto him ; Sir, that which I am farther to intreat at your hand, is that which followeth ; Some few nights since, I have beene bitten at play by some Gentlemen of this Citie, but they them-selves worse ; for that I have gotten of them a matter of five thousand Royals : they have challenged me to play greater game, and I am very willing to follow my good fortune, while it lasts, and to make triall of my good lucke ; and it may be, that I may venture little, and get much. But because all kind of gaming doth wholly in a manner consist in the handsome carriage of the businesse, and that we that are gamesters, may as well lose as winne, I would not find my selfe so limited and stinted in play, that if I should chance to lose, and runne out of my moneys, that I should not be able to come againe upon them with fresh supplies, to recover what I lost, and (if lucke serve) to get upon them. And albeit (I thanke God) I lacke no money, having at home in my Unkles house some five thousand Crownes, yet I may not meddle with them, for as soone as certaine Letters shall come hither to my hands, which I daily expect from Sevill, I cannot, no not for an houre, prolong either their payment, or mine owne departure to Rome, for the setling of a good Benefice either upon my selfe, or a Cozen-germane of mine, as it shall stand best with my Unkles liking,

submitting my selfe to his direction, who may dispose of me as he in his discretion shall thinke fit ; so that it is neither just nor convenient, that I should once breake, or offer but to touch that summe, lest I might then want it, when I had most occasion to use it ; which I may so much the rather forbeare to doe, because (if need be) I can make use of my Jewels, and my Plate, which like a dead commodity lie by me, and are good for nothing, but to lay to pawne at a dead lift ; and yet for all this, unlesse some urgent occasion, or extreame want, should force me thereunto, I should be very loath to part with them, much lesse to put them away to losse, as many too often doe. You have here this chaine, you have seene and view'd it, and you know what it is worth, all that I shall now desire of you, is that with all secresie (for I would not willingly incurre the censure of an unthrift, nor if men should talke of it, be forced to give them an account of such trifling toyes as these) you would be pleased to furnish me with sixe hundred Crownes upon this Chaine, paying interest for that short tearme that I shall use them ; assuring your selfe, that whether I winne or lose, you shall not fayle to be paid at your due time. Wherein, if I should chance to faile you, you may pay your selfe out of the chaine, for which end I shall leave it with you, that howsoever the world goe, you may be a gainer, though I a loser. I likewise told him, how upon the like occasion I had once pawned a certaine piece of new Plate, richly gilt, but he that had it of me, had us'd it in that ill manner, that when he returned it unto mee, it was not fit to be served in at any honest mans boord, so that I was forced to sell it, having not one penny allowed me for the fashion. And therefore for the avoiding of such another losse, I intreated him to doe me the favour, that the chaine might remaine still in his owne hands, without being posted over from one to another.

Hee made show that hee did not take it halfe well at my hands, that for so small a courtesie as this, I should offer him a pawne. But I clapping downe the cover of the boxe, shut it sodainly too, and so consign'd it over unto him, forcing

it into his hand ; vowing and protesting, that I would by no meanes receive this kindnesse from him, if he refused to accept of the chaine. For, besides that I did not use to weare it oft, because it was too massie and heavy for mee, he should doe me a courtesie to keepe it for me ; for as long as it was with him, I was sure it would be both safe and well used. Adding further withall, That being we are all mortall, and that many things might occurre unto me, being a stranger, it was fit and convenient, that hee should therein satisfie my desire. Upon these words, and the earnest instance that I made with him, he accepted of it in the end, and promised me, that the first thing that he would doe, should (as soone as hee put his foote out of doores) bee his procuring of these moneyes for me : wherein he was as good as his word. For the very same day, whilest I was sitting at dinner, in comes Steffanello with the sixe hundred Crownes. I thankt him for his paines, and intreated him to recommend my service to his master ; he staid not with me scarce a Pater-noster while, and was but even new gone, but presently in comes his master, and makes directly towards my lodging. Which sodaine approach of his did so trouble me, that I had not one drop of blood in all my whole body, nor could the best Barber of them all, have found any such thing in my veines. Here I lost my stirrops, and knew not what to doe. For having but then, even newly then received the Crownes, and the master following so close at the servants heeles, I did undoubtedly beleeve, that they had opened the boxe, and had found out the false chaine, and that he had made this haste, to hinder his man from delivering the money unto me. But this doubt was soone resolved, and I was quickly rid of this feare, for he came towards me with a chearfull countenance, making many offers of his love and service unto mee, and that if I had occasion to use him in any thing else, I would be pleased to command him ; for whatsoever hee had, it was wholly at my devotion : And that those moneys hee had borrowed of a friend of his upon interest, but that it would come to a matter of nothing in the reckning. Then

said I to myselfe, (considering more the future, then the time present) I beleeve this nothing will be some-thing to you in the end; and how light you make of it, will light heavilier upon you, then you are aware. But burying my thoughts within my owne bosome, I told him, that was not much materiall, for the pawne was worth more than the use of the money could come to.

But he had not long staid a talking with me, when loe, whilest hee was there with me, my Gentlemen gamesters enter the roome, and calling to Sayavedra for cards, there was a well-ordered battaile begun betweene us. My kinsman perceiving that we meant to fight it out, and to set close to it, took his leave, and went his way. I was so safely intrencht in my moneys, having Sayavedra then in my favour (for being upon our departure, it was no time now to stand with our hands under our girdle, nor to gather flowres, but to reape the fruits of our labours, and to hoyse sayle, and away) I sallyed safely out upon them, beating them so shamefully, that I put them to flight, leaving behinde as a prey unto me about fifteene thousand Royals in good gold. I gave *barato* to those that were present, and to the Captaine who came thither anon after this field was fought, I closely clapt fiftie Crownes in his fiste, which was all one, as if with them I had bought me a slave, and purchased me such a servant as should sticke to me upon all occasions.

This quarrell being ended, and the Gamesters gone, my Captaine tooke me aside, and we two being all alone, he advised me, that on Sunday night following, being some foure dayes hence, the Galleys were to depart. Whereupon, seeing my selfe thus straitned by time, I began to strike up my drumme, to muster my forces together, and sending abroad my tickets, this way, and that way, first to one party, and then to another, advertising my friends, that the wedding was to be solemnized the Munday following, and that they would be pleased to make me beholding unto them for their promised favour. The Ants doe not come so laden with corne in August, which they gather abroad

in the fields, and bring home into their granaries, as they came tumbling into my lodging with jewels, every one striving, who should send me the most, and the best. Which in a word, were so many, and so rich, that I was even almost ashamed to receive them. But I set a good face on the matter, because me thought they were not deare. My Unckle sent me in a Collar to grace the Brides shoulders, and a girdle sutable unto it, and a feather to adorne her head-dressing, which being all of gold, and set thicke with pearles, and precious stones, the three peeces were valued at more then three thousand Crownes. The rest did furnish me with rich brooches, buttons, bodkins, bracelets, pendents, eare-rings, tablets, carcanets, vayles, coyses, and rings, all very curious, rich, and of great value. All which things, as fast as they came in, the Captaine unwitting thereof, I clapt up closely within my trunks, which stood in a by-corner out of sight. The next three dayes that were left me, I spent in visiting my kindred, thanking them for the undeserved grace and favour they had done me.

When Sunday was come, knowing that the Galleys were to weigh anchor a Munday morning betimes, and to put forth to Sea, I said to mine Hoste : Mine Hoste, I shall be abroad this night at play, at a friends house, where some Gentlemen have appointed to meet, and if peradventure it shall be somewhat late before we give over play, I thinke I shall not onely sup, but lye there too, if we chance to breake off before it be day. And therefore (good mine Hoste) have a care to the chamber, till we returne, though it may be, I shall send Sayavedra home unto you. And so having the night to friend, I went out of my Inne, leaving mine Hoste two trunks, to pay for my dyet, and my lodging, during the time I stayed in Genoa. True it is, that by reason of the great haste we had to be gone, I left them both full, but of fine little pibbles that I had caused to be fetcht from the Sea-side ; being in show, not much unlike to your craggy Christall of the mountaine, which did weigh some twenty pound weight a peece.

All things being done and dispatcht as I would have it,

THE SECOND BOOKE

Guzman leaves Genoa, and carryes away with him his kinsmens goods

I went aboord the Galley, and cabbin'd with my friend Captaine Favelo. I want words to expresse unto you, the great entertainment, the Captaine (that night I came out of Genoa) made me, the costly supper, that he had provided for me, and what a good bed I lay in. He demanded of me, how I had sped in my businesse. I told him, to mine owne good contentment and satisfaction ; and that hereafter, I should give him a more particular account thereof. With this answer he rested satisfied, and questioned me no farther about it. We sup, we sleepe, but I for my part not very quietly, for though I came cleare off, and had not any the least rub, but things ranne as fairely and smoothly, as in such a case I could have wisht it, yet I had a little thing within, that checkt me, and told me in mine eare, that I had not done well, which did much trouble me for the time. I past over that night, as well as I could ; and when the Sunne was up, having not all this while perceived the Galley so much as to wagg, nor hearing any beating of the oares, nor any the least noyse in the world, as if I had beene in the greatest solitude that the minde of man could imagine ; being now fully awakened, and going about to put on my cloathes ; my Captaine comes into my Cabbin, and tells me, that we had doubled the Cape of Noli. So farre we had as faire a winde, and as fine weather, as heart could wish, but it did not still continue thus favourable unto us, but much contrary, and full in the teeth of us, as you shall heare hereafter. For Fortune is not alwayes prosperous ; but with the Moone, hath her Crescents, and her Waynings, and by how much the more pleasing are her smiles, by so much the more sowre are her frownes, when shee changes the copie of her countenance. Onely I had a desire, whilest wee were making our voyage, to know what mine Hoste thought on, when hee saw I returned not the first night to my lodging. And what the second, when the rest could heare no newes of me, thinking with my selfe, what lamentation they would make for me. How many cold shaking fits of an Ague they would have, for want of a warme blanket ; how many coverlets would they cast upon them,

Guzmans conceit of his kinsmen in Genoa

yet give none to the Hospitall; what diligent search they would make after me; what severall conjectures, what should become of me; disputing with themselves, whether some bodie had not murther'd me, to make themselves masters of my wealth; or whether I had beene wounded in some quarrell. But I imagined with my selfe, that they conceived, (and they were in the right) that I was gone along with the Galleys. And then being cleane out of hope of any humane remedie, I began to thinke with myselfe, how shrewdly the fleas would trouble them for many a faire night after. CHAPTER IX

Now did I begin to consider, what haste they made to unrip my trunkes, that they might by them save themselves harmelesse, every one first alledging the *antelation* of time, and prioritie of his debt, and so by the ordinarie course of Law in those parts, pretend as he was the first Creditor, that he might be first paid. Me thought I did likewise see, how mine Hoste did hugg himselfe, how he did laugh and chucke for joy, to thinke how rich I had left him, by leaving him these two trunkes, which being valued according to their weight, might very well have contented him, for a farre longer and larger allowance, then I could possible spend in so short a time. But the worth did not answer the weight: For there was nothing in them, but stones, which if he were minded to hang himselfe, might serve for his sepulchre. And what say you to my old Unckle, doe not you thinke that he was well provided for, with those pretious stones, which Sayavedra acquainted him withall? But that other kinsman of mine, who went away with the chaine, who doubts it, but that he did laugh in his sleeve at the rest of his fellowes, when he saw he had such a sure pawne in his hands, all pure linkes of gold, that he might very well pay both the Principall, and the Interest. But when he found it was not Gold, but Alchymie, light and false Latten, being no better (taking away its guilding, and fashion) then base brasse, course copper, or such mettall, as you make your candlesticks, what man can imagine, what strange mouthes and faces he made? How

hee hang'd downe his head, fixing his eyes on the ground, then lifting it up againe, turne up the white of his eyes towards heaven, not out of any desire that he had to blesse him, that had made him to shine and glitter thus gloriously, but to curse my mothers wombe, for bringing forth such a Picaro, such a base rascall, and arrant theefe as I was. In this pickle I left them, and so we parted. A man might then have said that of them, which one blinde man said to another in Toledo, who being to part companie, and to goe each to his owne house, when they tooke their leaves, said each to other ; Good night (Gossip) till we see one another againe.

CHAPTER X

Guzman de Alfarache sayling toward Spaine, Sayavedra by reason of a great storme, growes Sea-sicke. He falls into a Calenture, or burning fever. He waxes light-headed, and loseth his wits. He cryes out, that he is Guzman de Alfarache, and growing mad, throwes himselfe into the Sea, where he is drowned

E had such faire weather when we set forth of Genoa, that the Tuesday following, by Sunne-rising, we had (as I told you before) doubled the Cape of Noli. And till we came to the Pomas de Marsella,[1] we had as favourable and prosperous a winde, as we could wish. There did we expect that the winde should still blow faire, having all this while show'd it selfe so friendly and loving unto us. For we had a fresh gale from the East,

[1] The word *poma*, is used for a womans paps or dugs, and by way of similitude may be taken for some Promontorie jetting out into the Sea,

which holpe us so well, that the next day towards the Evening, we discovered, to our generall joy, the coast of Spaine. But fortune, having not the strength to stand firme, nor being alwayes one and the same ; but weake and various, began to manifest unto us the small confidence that we ought to have of her ; whereof, too soone to our great hurt, we had sufficient tryall. And now, hearing the Mariners call one to another in those termes and language, which is usuall with them in such cases, Heaven was covered all over towards the North-west, with darke and thicke clouds, which guttered downe upon us huge and great drops of raine. Our good winde had bid us farewell, and our hearts began to be so sad, and so heavy, as if all that same darksome blacknesse had quite over-cast them, such a cloud of sorrow, had like a curtaine, over-spred those late lightsome faculties of our soules. Which being foreseene by the Pilots, and those other watry-Counsellors at Sea, they held a Councell in the poope, debating to and fro, what course was fittest to be taken, to prevent such fearefull threatnings. Every one spake his opinion, delivering what he in his judgement deemed best to be done. But seeing the winde begin to lay lustily about him, beating his brazen wings against our woodden sides, and his forces increasing more and more, without any other resolution, before their consultation could come to a conclusion, they were instantly, without any more adoe, inforced to let fall their maine sayle, which when they had ruffled, and laid as low as the decke would give them leave, they tooke out another lesser one, which they call *Marabuto*, (as they doe the other, *la Borda*) which is a kinde of triangulary sayle, cut out into three corners, after the manner of a womans kerchiefe ; (This they call *la Latina*) and this they set up about the middle of the maste, which stood at the end of the last banke of oares, fitting them-selves afterwards with those other things, that were needfull on such an occasion. CHAPTER X

resembling the forme and fashion of a womans brests. If I misse of my ayme, I leave it to those that have beene in those parts to determine the true signification thereof.

They fastned their oares to the upper deck : The passengers, and their souldiers, they commanded (sore against their wills) to keepe themselves under hatches : They fell a caulking of the Galley, from the prowe to the poope, nor were they wanting in any one of those diligences, that were necessarie for the saving of our lifes.

Whilest they were thus busie, the night grew on, and a pitchy darknesse had (like a pavillion) pitched it selfe round about us, all was clouds, Ægyptian clouds, blacke and darke as Hell ; so that having lost the comfort of the light, we lost likewise with it all hope of safetie ; especially when we saw that the storme was no whit allayd, but rather more and more increased upon us. Wherefore for the better avoyding of so many dangers, whereinto by reason of this tempest, they were like to runne, they gave present order to hang out the lanterne, that they might the better see what they did. The Sea, now began to swell, and lifted one while its waves as high as heaven, and by and by againe, abasing that their pride, they tumbled downe so low, that they opened the bosome of the Sea so wide, that you might see the sand that lay in the bottome. They were faine to appoint another to assist at the helme, that was an expert Pilot indeed, and knew how to guide the Rudder to a haire. The Masters-mate they caused to be tyde fast in a chayre to the post neere unto the poope, as being resolved either to dye in that place without removing from thence, or to keepe the Galley alive, and set her in safetie.

Whilest this skilful Mariner was labouring to put this his deliberation in execution, we often demanded of him, if we were in any great danger ; and much more often then he was willing to heare. See how blind-sighted wee were, that we would rather give credit to that which had proceeded from his mouth, then that which we saw with our owne eyes, which represented nothing but death unto us. But his lying tongue, seemed to afford us like comfort, as doth that of the Physitian to the sorrowfull and afflicted father, who questions him touching the health, and life of his sonne, and whether he be likely to dye of this disease,

or whether he be dead already : Who tells him, That (God be thanked) he is on the mending hand. In like manner, the Masters-mate, making answer unto us, for to cheere us up, and to put us in heart, would bawle out aloud unto us, *Que todo era nada.* Tush, all this was nothing. And therefore be of good comfort (my Hearts). And indeed, in telling us so, he told us but the truth. For all this was nothing, to that which came after. For the winde had torne our sayles to fitters, there was not one whole peece, all was rents, and rags, and it grew higher and higher still, so that we were forced to clap on our *Treo*, which is a kinde of round sayle, which they make use of in stormes. Fortunes hand did not yet grow weary with whipping us ; but as if shee had not punisht us sufficiently already, it was our hap to have an ill guided Galley to fall foule upon us, which striking us with her prowe on the poope, made her ducke her head into the Sea, and had well-nigh over-turn'd her ; and to make this encounter the more unlucky, the blow, and the losse of our Rudder (whereon did depend the hope of our safetie) hapned both at one and the same instant. Wherefore seeing our selves now deprived both of our hope, and helme, wanting a Rudder wherewith to steare, yeelding our selves to the mercy of the Seas, as men despayring of any remedie to repayre this losse, yet that they might not desist to use all the meanes they could, which they thought might make best for our good, (making a vertue of necessitie) they made as good shift as they could, by clapping a couple of oares in the place, guiding therewith the Galley (besides the danger) with a great deale of toyle, and labour.

And how shall I here be able to expresse but the halfe, nay the least part of that unto you, which these eyes saw, and these eares heard ? I doe not know the tongue that can speake it. But say I should light on such a tongue ; yet, I am sure, I shall hardly meet with those men that will beleeve it. O, how many vowes did they then make ! How many Invocations to Saints, every one calling on that, which was the greatest and famousest in his owne Countrey ? What various devotions, what a generall recourse to their

prayers? And some were so childish and so foolish, that you should heare no other word come from them, but, O my mother, O sweet mother! How many abuses, and how many absurdities, were committed amongst them! Confessing themselves one to another, as if they could be their ghostly fathers, and had power to absolve them. Others in a loud voyce made confession of those sinnes unto God, wherein they had offended him; and as if they thought that God were deafe and thicke of hearing, they would stretch out their throats as high as heaven, perswading themselves perhaps, by the force of this their breath, to send their soules packing in that very instant up into heaven.

In this desperate, and wofull manner, did our poore weather-beaten Galley endure this misery, together with those that were in her, till the next day following, when as with the brightnesse of the Sunne, and the clearing of the skie, we began to recover breath, so that now all was joy, and our sorrow was turned into mirth, cheering, and hartning up one another. Certainly, it cannot be denyed, That of all those dangers, that attend upon death, that is alwayes most feared, which is still neerest unto us. For from those other, wee thinke we may well scape. But I did not so much feare this storme, nor so sensibly apprehend the danger thereof, as I stood in feare by a contrary winde, and the new rigging up of our Galley, to be carryed backe againe to Genoa. It was not the Sea, but the shame, that wrought upon me. This was it, that made me to say to my selfe, when I saw how the winds blew, and the Seas raged, that all the rest did fare the worse for my sake, and that I was that Jonas, for whom this tempest was rais'd, that it might raise me up to repentance.

Sayavedra falls sicke of a fever, and runs mad

Sayavedra became so Sea-sicke, that he fell into a shrewd burning fever, and shortly after grew besides himselfe. It would have griev'd a mans heart, and moved much compassion, to see the things that he did, and the fooleries which he uttered; and sometimes, when the storme was greatest, and the danger most, while others were a confessing their

sinnes, he would cry out in a loud voyce, I am Guzman de Alfaraches ghost, I am that ghost of his, which goes thus wandring up and downe the world; whereat he made me often both laugh, and feare. But though he should have vented some thing unhappily, they all saw that he was mad, and so regarded not what he said. Yet for all this, he would not leave his talking, but by flashes would fall a ripping up of my life, and bolt out by fits, all that which I had formerly recounted unto him concerning the courses I had taken, composing a thousand extravagancies. And if by chance he heard any man talke of promising to performe a pilgrimage to Monserrate, thither would he leade me; telling, at what stations, and weddings, he had beene there with me. He did dresse me (like a French Cooke) a thousand severall wayes. But that which was most to be laughed at, (though it much pittied mee to see him in that state) and wherein I tooke most pleasure, was; That he spake all these things of himselfe, as if he had beene true Guzman indeed. CHAPTER X

In briefe, we being all shrewdly beaten, and growne extreame weary with our late storme, the night following we went in a good houre to take our rest, to see if we could recover that old debt of our former lost sleepe. We were all of us so weary, and so drowsie, and our Galley so batterd, and torne about the poope, that Sayavedra rising up in his franticke fit, lept at that open place where our rudder was split from us, into the Sea, on whom we could never after set eye; though the Mariner that kept watch, as soone as he heard the flownce of the fall, presently cryde out, *Hombre a la mar*; There is some bodie fallen into the water. Where upon we began presently to conjecture, that it must needs be he; and upon inquiry finding him wanting, we sought to recover him, but it would not be. And so poore Sayavedra was buried in the Sea; all of them much lamenting his misfortune, and seeking all that they could, to comfort me. I made show, as if I had beene exceeding sorry for him, but God he knowes how true it was. The next day I got me up betimes in the morning, which I wholly spent in

Sayavedra drownes himselfe

receiving the condolings, which they made unto me, which were done in that dolefull fashion, as if he had beene a brother, a kinsman, or the neerest and dearest friend that I had in the world, bewayling the great losse that I had sustained in him ; or as if, when he threw himselfe into the Sea, he had carryed away my trunkes likewise with him. God blesse me from that mischance, (said I to my selfe) as for any other misfortune, I doubt not but I shall very easily over-passe it. They knew not how (more then this) to comfort me, nor what they should entertaine me withall to divert my griefe ; for they did verily beleeve, that I was wonderfull sorry for him, because I had put on a seeming heavinesse. And the more they sought to bring me out of it, the more I feigned to be in it ; at last they called to one that had beene condemned to the Galleys, who was very studious, and a great lover of curiosities, that he should come where I was, and bring a certaine booke along with him, which he had written with his owne hand, which the Captaine taking from him, and turning over the leafes in a carelesse kinde of fashion, he lighted by chance upon a notable storie which hapned in Sevill ; and returning backe the booke to the owner, he will'd him to reade it unto me. He thereupon required their attention ; which being granted unto him, he began to reade as followeth ; recommending it first unto them, as well for its strangenesse, as its truth.

A true and strange storie of a merchant in Sevill

There was in Sevill (the famousest Citie in all Spaine, and the Metropolis of Andaluzia) a Merchant that was a stranger, well borne, rich, and honest, whose name was Miçer Jacobo. He had two sons, and one daughter by a noble Gentlewoman of that Citie. They being carefully trayned up in vertue, in good manners, and in all kinde of learning appertayning to the liberall Arts : And shee bred up to her needle, wherein for curious workmanship, shee did excell, (all the Gentlewomen in those parts, being meere bunglers unto her.) And there was some reason, why shee should be so exquisite, and singular therein, for that from her childhood, shee had beene bred up in a Monasterie

of Nunnes, by reason that her mother dyde in child-bed, when she was borne.

Now in regard that the goods of fortune, are mutable and uncertaine, and more in Merchants then other men, who carry their wealth in other mens purses, and commit their estates to the disposition of the winde and the weather, there being not halfe a foot difference betwixt their making and their marring, their inriching or undoing. It so fell out, that his two sonnes returning home from the Indies, and bringing along with them good store of gold and silver, when they were now come within sight of the barre of San Lucar, and thinking them-selves as safe, as if they had beene (as they say) within the doores of their owne house, there arises a huge storme on the sodaine, and the Sea inraged with the boysterous blustrings of the windes, begins to swell, and looke big upon them with its billowes ; insomuch, that this poore unfortunate ship, set upon by two such fierce and cruell enemies, was miserably tossed to and fro, and so violently carryed out of its course, that at last unable any longer to resist the rage of this terrible tempest, shee desperately ranne her selfe upon a rocke, the terriblenesse of which blow, did not only open her wombe, and cleave it cleane in the midst, but did split all the ribs of her in a thousand peeces ; so that both men and goods were all cast away, and utterly lost, and never after either seene, or heard of.

When the heavy newes of so great a losse (whose nimblenesse lyes onely in its wing) came flying to the fathers eare, such a deepe melancholy sodainely seezed on all his vitall parts, that with the griefe thereof, within a few dayes after, he also dyed. His daughter that remained in the Convent, having lost all her wealth, her father, her mother, and both her brothers, remaining thus abandoned, and left to shift for her selfe, was wonderfully sensible of this her wofull estate (which might likewise have much troubled any man whatsoever, though never so wise) when she saw, that in so short a time, which might in a manner runne in the reckoning (as it were) of one day, shee had lost so many reall

comforts, and with them, that hope of remedie to allay her miseries, (for shee much desired to become a Nunne) shee wept so bitterly, and tooke on so pittifully, that it would have grieved any mans heart, to see the sorrowfull lamentation that shee made. Here ceased her designes, and here began her sorrowes; Here ceased her plenty, and here began her want; Here ceased her *regalos*,[1] and here began her troubles. Which went daily so increasing upon her, that shee knew not in the world what to doe, nor how to be able to maintaine herselfe in the Nunnerie. And albeit all the Nunnes there wisht her exceeding well, and bare her great love and affection for the noblenesse of her condition and qualitie, her affabilitie, civilitie, goodnesse of nature, sweetnesse of behaviour, and other commendable parts, condoling very much this her present necessitie, and povertie; and were very desirous that shee should continue still amongst them, yet could they not possibly bring it to passe. For their wills being subordinate to that of their Superiour, it being in their Prelates, and not their owne choice, neither could they effect what they desired, nor shee continue any longer amongst them. For very shortly after it was notified unto her, that she should either leave the house, or if she had a minde to stay, forthwith to assigne her dowry. But shee not being able (for want of meanes) to cumply with the second condition, shee was forc't to entertaine the former. This poore distressed maid was so cunning at her needle, and had such a curious hand in all kinde of workes, white or blacke, in silke or gold, and in ordering her colours, to give true life and perfection to whatsoever shee tooke in hand, that the same thereof was spred over all the Citie.

To this summe, I must adde the vertues of her soule, and the beauty of her face, both which were in that height of excellencie, (the parts of her bodie, being answerable to those of her minde) that he that had but once seene her,

[1] *Regalo*, is a word of a large extent, and signifies any thing that may give a woman content, be it in meat, drinke, cloathes, sports, or whatsoever else that may delight her.

would verily have thought, nay almost sworne, that two most cunning and exquisite Artizans, had in emulation one to the other, spent all their spirits, and imployde the utmost of their skill, in framing such a singular creature as shee was, being such a perfect peece of beauty, and goodnesse, that shee might draw off the beholders eyes from all other objects (though not unworthy the looking on) and attract them to her selfe. Yet all this put together, being in that (if the word doe not exceed) excesse, was nothing, being compared with her retirednesse of life, her mortification of the flesh, her fasts, prayers, and penance. Shee, not unwitting, that shee was now thrust out into the wide world, that shee had no more any Nunnerie to shelter, but lay open to the venues of Fortune, if shee did not the better stand upon her guard, fearing the worlds murmuring, and those occasions, which might bring some scandall upon her reputation, as one that was wonderfull tender and jealous of her honour, shee had got her a lodging, where shee had the companie of divers other vertuous and religious young maydens; and there, without any suspition, or least shadow of any ill intention, having no other helpe or meanes to live, save the sweat of her browes, and the labour of her fingers ends, shee liv'd there very frugally, keeping her-selfe within her bounds, and giving a good example of her virtue to all the young damosels of her time.

The Archbishop of that Citie, had a great desire to have some curiosities made for him, as certaine wrought Chalice-cloathes, neat towels,[1] handsome napkins, dainty handkerchers, and the like, to wrap the Hoste in, bordered about with some historicall worke, as should best fit with the use whereunto they served, and to have them done as neere to the life as Art could attaine unto. After much inquirie

[1] The Spanish word, is, *Corporales*; which though they signifie those things that belong to the body: yet are they more strictly taken for those linnen cloathes which are laid upon the Altar, whereupon in their Masses, they place the bodie of our Saviour Jesus Christ under the formes of bread and wine; and represent unto us, that *Sindone* or fine linnen sheet, wherein they wrapt the sacred bodie of our blessed Saviour when they laid him in his sepulchre. Vide *Stephanum Durandum de ritibus Ecclesiæ*, lib. 1. c. 22.

made, there being none to be found, that could doe these things halfe so well as Dorotea (for so was this Gentlewoman called) upon the good report they had heard of her, they sought her out, and recommended this worke unto her care, promising shee should be well paid for her paines. Shee considered with her-selfe, that for such a curious peece of worke as this was to be, shee must make choyce of the best, the purest, the brightest, and the finest gold threed that shee could get for money, whatsoever it cost. And because they that know best how to bestow it, know best how to buy it, shee her-selfe, taking some of her neighbours and friends along with her, went to seeke out this ware amongst the Gold-beaters shops, who in Sevill both make and sell these kinde of commodities. It was their hap to come to a young mans shop, that was a handsome fellow, and well behav'd, who had but newly set up for him-selfe, and to get him the better custome, strove to have his shop well furnisht, and indeed, had better and more choyce then the rest of his neighbours, that traded in that kinde. Of this young man, shee was willing to buy all the gold, that shee had occasion to use about this worke (as well because shee found it was fit for her turne, as likewise to excuse her-selfe a labour of going too oft out of doores) if shee had had so much money, as would have done the deed: but having no more store, then that little which they had given her to begin the worke withall, shee told the Master of the shop, that shee would bestow a little money with him now, but shee would come againe for more, as her worke went on, and her moneys came in. This young Occupyer, when he had beheld the beauty, and composed countenance of this young mayden, and had well observed her manner of speech, her honest cariage, and modest behaviour, he fell into that good liking of her, and was so farre in love with her, that the least that he could have found in his heart to have given her, was all the gold that shee had occasion to use, which was no great matter, being that at that very instant, he had delivered up his soule unto her. And perceiving, that shee forbore to buy so much, as other-

wise shee would willingly have done, for that shee wanted money, embracing the occasion, which he had now in his hands, not so much to gaine her farther custome, as to expresse the affection that he bare unto her, and to draw her into a good opinion of him, not suffering her to part upon those termes, he said unto her ; Mistresse, if the gold be good, and such as you looke after, and that it be for your turne, picke and choose where you like, and carry away with you as much as you have use for, or what you please, and pay me now what you can well spare, as for the rest you shall pay me by little and little, as you shall receive it from their hands that set you a worke. The young man seemed to them all, to be very kinde and courteous, and for the ware, they could finde no fault with it, being as good, as them-selves could wish or desire. Dorotea made him present payment of as much as shee had, and having made choyce of as much gold, as shee thought good and needfull for her, shee carried it away with her, leaving with him the name of the street, whither he should either come or send for that which was remayning behinde. That done, they presently went their way, the poore young man being so love-strucken after their departure, and so pittifully wounded with this amorous arrow, that he was as farre from him-selfe, as from all rest, being tossed to and fro with various thoughts, having his braines beaten with many troublesome and unquiet imaginations. Love had almost burst the very heart of him ; He did neither eat, nor drinke, nor any thing else, that might seeme to beare the name of life : so altogether was his soule occupied in the contemplation of that rare and incomparable beauty, and that mirrour of all vertue, that this his troublesome life, was to him as bad as death, not knowing in the world what to doe. At last, it seeming unto him, that shee was a poore young mayden, and that by meanes of mariage, his chaste desires might arrive in the end to some happy port, hee resolved to informe him-selfe what shee was, as also of what life, behaviour, and birth.

The reports which were given of her, were such, that hee

was now more perplexed, and lesse confident then before. Despairing in a manner with himselfe, that he should ever be able to enjoy so rich a jewell, holding him-selfe still more and more unworthy of so great a happinesse, as to obtaine her to bee his Spouse. Hee was now quite out of heart, as knowing him-selfe too meane for her worth : But because it was not possible for him now to goe backe, nor did it lye in his hands (if he would) to have done it ; and for that the passions of the soule, are no lesse prevalent in the poore, then the powerfull, and that all are all alike subject thereunto, and equally affected with them ; howbeit he found him-selfe cast so farre behind-hand, yet did hee never leave striving to trie if he could get before, persevering still in his honest purpose, for that hee put himselfe into Gods hands, who doth alwayes favour our good intentions, and knowes how to accommodate those things, that tend to his service, according to his divine will and pleasure ; presenting evermore in his prayers and supplications unto him, that his desire was no other, then to get him a companion, with whom he might be the better inabled to serve him, and more particularly, that he might be linked in lawfull mariage with this so vertuous a creature, and one that was so much to his hearts-liking and content ; yet not that his, but Gods will should be done, where-unto he should most willingly submit him-selfe, and that he should so farre grant his request (and no farther) as it should seeme best to his Majestie, and make most for his service.

He went likewise discoursing with him-selfe ; and amongst many other, this one presented it selfe to his imagination ; That peradventure her great poverty, her wary discretion, and vigilant fore-sight, would force her thereunto, considering the solitary kind of life she now led, and the remedy thereof, and laying aside those vaine points of honour, not measuring her selfe by what shee was, but what she is, she would happely accommodate her selfe to the condition of her present fortune ; and that, when his honest desire to serve her, should bee truly represented unto her, she may chance to yeeld to my faire request.

Intertaining him-selfe with these thoughts and cares, he was minded to call upon her for the money which she ought him, but not with purpose to presse her therewith, nor to be troublesome therein unto her, but taking occasion rather one while to see this her curious worke, another while, that passing that way, hee was of purpose come thither to know whether shee needed any more gold, and if she did, that she should not want it, whilest he had any that was fit for her ; and so fetching many a walke thither, excusing him-selfe in the best manner that he could, and as he thought would make most for the performing of these his frequent visites, and the procuring of her good will and acquaintance, for that time he pretended nothing else ; to the end, that this being first obtained, he might the better play his game hereafter, and in the interim mitigate some part of that sorrow which her absence did continually torment him withall. In this, the young man shew'd him-selfe as discreet, as solicitous ; and as solicitous, as truly loving. Going on in those good and honest tearmes, that in a short time he gained the good wills of all those that conversed and were companions to Dorotea. Being so farre from disliking his often visites, that they rather receiv'd them as favours and courtesies. Amongst the rest, that liv'd there together, there were foure Sisters, to one of which, as being the gravest and reverendest of the company, they did all shew a kinde of respect, as well for her temper and wisedome, as also for her priority of yeeres. With this grave Matron, our young man seekes to enter into a stricter kind of friendship, by reverencing her, and observing her, and by presenting her with some such tokens and remembrances, as might sute best with the respect (more then love) that he bare unto her. So that in the end, time bringing forth occasion, by degrees he discovered him-selfe unto her, making her acquainted with his desires, not omitting any thing that might make her fully to understand the greatnesse of his affection, and the fairnesse of his pretension. Earnestly intreating her withall, that by interposing her power and authority, she would be a meanes, that his hopes

CHAPTER X

should not returne home empty, and unrewarded, her worth, and wisedome, putting him in good assurance of the contrary. And that therefore she would be pleased to continue her good favour towards him ; and as occasion should offer, that she should goe working and disposing this peece of waxe, to receive the impression of his affection ; leaving it to her, to imprint it in her to the life, that seeing the trueness of the stampe, she might be the sooner molded to entertaine the motion : But in case shee should not finde her plyable, but tough and hard to be wrought upon, shee would seeke to mollifie her by her meeke and gentle perswasions, and remove all those difficulties, which on her part might be a hinderance to these his honest desires ; for on his part, he vow'd and protested unto her, that nothing should be able to crosse it, but that with open armes he would runne to embrace her, submitting himselfe to be in all things ordered, if not over-ruled by them. Good meanes, seconded by good intentions, and which, without any humane respects, treat of honest things (carrying a sound heart in their breasts, and a true tongue in their heads) have alwayes such force and power with them, that they easily perswade, because truly beleev'd.

This Gentle-woman, so wrought with Dorotea, sometimes this way, and sometimes that, now using t'one, then t'other meanes, till at last, shee brought the businesse so about, that shee being convinced by reason, began to yeeld to her perswasions, and to condescend to the motion that shee made unto her ; and obeying her in all things, as if shee had beene her owne naturall mother, shee kist her hands, in acknowledgment of her thankfulnesse, putting her-selfe wholly into her hands. In conclusion, the match was made up betweene them to both their good likings, but more especially on Bonifacio his part (for so was her husband called) for that he was fully perswaded, that in meeting with this jewell, no man was more happy, more fortunate, and more rich then himselfe ; having now got him such a wife, as his owne heart could not have wisht a better, being greater in her condition and qualitie, then he deserved, and

such a good creature besides, that he could leade a secure and honest course of life with her, without feare or trouble of any jealous thoughts, nor of any other thing that might cause his disquiet. They lived very contentedly together, making exceeding much of each other, and wonderfully well satisfied of that chaste and true love, which they bare one to another. He did ordinarily attend his shop, busying himselfe (for both their benefits) in the exercise of his Trade, and shee abiding above in her chamber, either playing the good huswife, in those things that appertained to the good government of the house ; or following her needle, spending part of that gold threed which her husband sold, in working goodly borders, garnishing them with curious flowers in their true and naturall colours, and other the like neat and dainty peeces, wherein shee did excell. Their gaines were great, and to make this their happinesse the fuller, there was that conformitie in their love, and such an equall retribution in their affections, that no two in the world could live more honestly, and more lovingly together then they did. CHAPTER X

But the Devill, who is still waking, and never sleeps, but still watches most how he may breake the bond of peace, and breed brawles in love, against this loving Couple, these who agreed so well together, that there was never yet any the least difference betweene them, prepares his pit-falls, sets up his traps, and spreads his nets with all secrecie, and all the skill and cunning he could devise, to doe them all the mischiefe he could, and if it were possible, to throw this uniforme frame, and strong peece of building to the ground. He followed this poore soule close at the heeles, watching advantage how he might trip her up, and overthrow her, and in case he could not doe that, yet at least to give her a soyle, or make her to stumble. Insomuch, that at her Visites, when shee was at Masse, or at Sermon, yea in her greatest devotion, when shee was receiving the Sacrament, he did still seeke to trouble her, presenting her with the instruments of his malice and wickednesse, young Gallants, discreet in their cariage, neat in their cloathes, and sweet

in their perfumes, who fell a courting her, when shee came forth, following and soliciting her whither-soever shee went: but all these tricks would not serve the Devils turne, he did not reape the fruit he hoped for; for this chaste woman, standing stiffely to her tackling, and giving her enemie no ground, did evermore with-stand these lightnesses, by opposing against them a constant chaste minde, and a setled, and well resolved honestie. And howbeit, for to avoyd all occasion, shee did forbeare, as much as shee possibly could to goe abroad, and when shee did, it was very seldome, and when shee was of necessitie inforced thereunto, at which time shee was likewise haunted and persecuted by them. They did round her doore night and day, they sought inventions, and used all the meanes that might be for to see her; neither did this also profit them any thing.

Amongst those Gallants, that desired to serve her (for all of them were young Gentle-men, of very good fashion, and the chiefest in Sevill) there was one, that was *Teniente* [1] of the Towne, a young man, unmarried, and rich. This Gentle-man liv'd right against the house where shee dwelt, where hee had very faire and goodly roomes, being especiall and principall lodgings, and of so many stories high, and those goodly open galleries, that they did over-top and looke into those lower ones of Dorotea, notwithstanding that they were distanced by a whole street, that interposed it selfe betweene their houses. So that from his Turrets, his Terraces, and his high windowes, he might over-looke her, and see what shee did; and that so plainly, that neither her husband, nor her-selfe, could scarce rise up in the morning to make them ready, or at night get them to bed, without being seene and espyed by him; especially they being carelesse, and heeding no such matter, and the other with extraordinarie diligence, watching and prying what they did. This *Teniente* then, making use of this occasion,

[1] *Teniente*, is one that is substitute to another in an Office. A Lieutenant. *A tenendo.* As having the charge and keeping of some Forts or Castle, which he faithfully keeps and maintaines. Covarruvias, verb. *Teniente.*

with all carefulnesse and vigilancie, accompanied with insupportable passions, and sorrowes, did labour (as if his life had layen upon it) how he might come to have some speech with her, or receive any favour from her hands. But finding in the end, that he lost his labour, and spent his time in vaine, he was forced, as the rest of his fellowes were, to give over his sute,[1] set up his rest, and turne backe the same way he came, without obtayning any the least looke, or favour from her, not being able to perceive in her any shadow of hope, that either now or hereafter (though never so small) shee was likely to graunt him. For this chaste woman did live in that sober and discreet fashion, and did so well and wisely governe her-selfe, that shee put him quite off from any suspition, which might incourage him to pretend any kindnesse from her, or but wash off one haires bredth of gold from this good creatures credit; though it is not to be doubted, he used all the Art he could, to have made her some few graines lighter then shee was.

There went likewise along in the same dance with the rest, another Penitentiarie, that was of the same brotherhood and companie of these foolish *Disciplinantes*,[2] and selfe-afflicting lovers. This was a Gentleman of Burgos, gallant, young, discreet, and rich. Which good parts, favoured by his franke, and bountifull disposition, might (a man would have thought) have digg'd downe mountaines, and laid them levell with the lowest earth. But the chaste Dorotea, neither by this Gentlemans good parts, nor the *Teniente's* great power, nor all the passions of other her Lovers, could be moved one jot from her honourable resolution, not having any sense of feeling thereof in the world, as if shee had beene no woman of this world, or had minded any such matter. Against all these assaults, shee show'd her-selfe a strong Tower, an inexpugnable rocke, against which the continuall beatings of those furious waves of their raging lust and froathy appetite (not being able to prevaile)

[1] The Spanish word is; *Bolver al puesto con la caña.* To pitch downe his standard. To proceed no farther.

[2] *Disciplinantes*, are they that lash them-selves to doe penance.

were broken and dasht in peeces. And it is not to be doubted, but that her honestie, continually keeping watch, like the Crane, that with the stone of Gods love, raising her-selfe from the ground, and her foot standing fast and firme on the steedy affection that shee bare to her husband, did free her from these birds of rapine, these Eagles of Caucasus, that sought to make a prey of her. And it had beene impossible to have wounded either her, or her honestie, if the cunning and crafty Fowler had not spred his net, covering and shadowing it over with the greene grasse of holinesse, and simulated sanctitie, to intrap this simple, harmelesse, and innocent Dove. This *Burgaleso* (whose name was Claudio) had to his servant a dainty fine shee-slave, not swarfe and tawney (as others commonly be) but faire and well-favour'd, of a good presence, a good garbe, and gracefull behaviour, borne in Spaine of a Moorish slave of Barbary. Shee was so cunning, so subtle, so nimble witted, so dextrous in her tricks and devices, such a worker of her-selfe into all folkes loves and affections (were it for her owne ends, or others) so curious in visiting Church-yards, so charitable in accompanying those that were to be hang'd, that shee was able to make water-cresses to grow on the top of a bed.[1] She was such a one, as for such like affaires, her fellow was not to be found. Her Master one day call'd her unto him, and giving her account of this his Love-torment, he craved her counsell, how he might come to compasse his pretension. This his good slave, after that shee had beene well informed of the businesse, and knew how the case stood with him, as if shee had beene in jest, smilingly said unto him; Why how now (my good Master) what mountaines have you to remove? What Seas to dry up? What dead to raise unto life? What great difficultie is there in that which doth thus afflict thee? Or why doest thou so indeare it unto me? Sir, Are not these things that I am well seene in? Little oyle, and lesse

[1] When they will note out a Witch, or the sorceries of an old Hagg, the Spaniards indeare it with this phrase, *Que hará naçer berros en cima de la cama.* That they will make water-cresses to grow on the top of a bed, that is; shee will do strange things, or worke wonders. Covarruvias, verb. *Berros.*

labour, will serve to bring this wheele about, then thou thinkst for. Thou mayest now make reckoning that shee is thine owne, and that thou hast her already in thy hands. Let not this therefore trouble thee any farther, but be of good cheere, and plucke up thy heart; for within these few dayes, I will deliver this Hare into thy lap. And if I doe not, let me lose my name for ever, and call me no more Sabina, the daughter of Haja. From that time forward, shee tooke this businesse to taske, and began from that very instant, like a cunning Chesse-player, so to order and marshall her men, designing with her-selfe how to make her draughts, and within how many removes, to give first the checke, and then the check-mate. Now does shee set her-selfe roundly to her play, and begins this her game, moving first one of her pawnes, reserving her best men for the last push, if the meaner should miscarry in this battaile. CHAPTER X

First of all therefore, shee makes me a fine delicate little basket, of the greene sprigs of Mirtles, Pome-citrons, and Oranges, adorning and setting it forth with Gilly-flowres, Gecimines, Muske-roses, and other sweet flowres, bound in with small tender bull-rushes, which were composed and set together in most dainty and curious manner. This basket shee takes along with her, and beares it to the Gold-beater; Telling him, that shee was servant to a certaine Gentle-woman that was a Nunne in that Citie, and Lady-Abbesse of a Convent; who having notice of the goodnesse of his ware, and having necessary use of some of his best gold, for to flourish over certaine things, which were to serve for some ornaments that were to adorne that Monasterie against Midsommer-day, which was a great Festivall with them, shee had sent him that little basket for a token, intreating him, to send her two pound of his purest and finest gold, that shee might make proofe of it, and that if it be found to be so good, as to her it had beene commended, and that shee found it fit for her purpose, shee would pay him well for it, and he should from hence-forth have her custome for all the gold that should be spent in her House, sending weekly for so much as they had occasion to use.

Besides, shee would be very thankfull unto him, if he serv'd her well, and bestow now and then upon him such dainties and curiosities, as those religious places usually afford. Bonifacio was much gladded with this new occasion of fresh gaines, and no lesse with his little basket of flowers, which he made much reckoning of, being so neatly and artificially wrought, as indeed it was. Which he had no sooner received (having first dispatcht the slave away with the gold) but he presently carryes it up to his wife, putting it in her lap with great joy, which was by her with no lesse received. Shee asked him, of whom hee had bought it: And then he told her all that had passed. Then did shee esteeme it much more then before, because it brought to her remembrance the time of her childhood, when with other girles of her yeeres, and the Nunnes of the Convent, shee did busie her-selfe in the like exercises. Whereupon, shee intreated her husband, that when shee came to him againe, he would send her up unto her, for shee would gladly be acquainted with her.

The next weeke following, being some six dayes after, Sabina returnes very jocondly, boasting how good the gold was, and that shee was come for as much more of the same; bringing with her a large message in the behalfe of her Mistresse the Lady-Abbesse, and presenting him from her, with a little image of the rinde of Limmons, and a *Rosario* sutable to the same, so curiously cut out, that it was well worthy much estimation. As soone as he saw it, he would not himselfe receive it of her, but intreated her, that shee with her owne hands would deliver it to Dorotea his wife.

Proverbe

Now the sop was fallen into the honey-pot.[1] Now had she what she would have. This fell out as pat for her as a pudding for a Fryars mouth. But making strange of this newes, and as though shee had knowne no such matter, shee said unto him. Ah, thou naughty man, doest thou speake in earnest? Art thou marryed indeed? I doe not beleeve it. Thou art bought and sold with us for a single man, we tooke thee to be a Batchelour, and my Mistresse

[1] *Cayo la sopa en la miel.*

talkt of marrying thee with a pretty Lay-mayden that we have in our House, as fine and as fresh as the flowres in May, and is both beautifull, and rich. Bonifacio replyde ; I have one already as rich and as beautifull, as you there can give me any, and with whom I live most contentedly. And if you will not beleeve me, goe up, and see. Sabina then said unto him ; In faith no, not I, you shall not get me up stayres, I am afraid you will play the wagg with me, and that you doe but jest. I assure you, I doe not jest (said Bonifacio) and therefore (friend Sabina) you may boldly goe up. Up shee goes, and having entred the roome where shee was, shee no sooner saw Dorotea, but shee runnes with open armes towards her, and throwes her-selfe downe at her feet, making a thousand ducks and reverences unto her after the Moorish fashion, admiring much her rare and singular beauty, which though shee had heard it much spoken of before, yet this worke of nature, went farre beyond the words that were uttered of it. For it was such an admirable peece, that report was not able to expresse it to the life, but must needs fall short in the praising of it. But shee stood like one astonished, when shee beheld the frames, and those loomes of rich embroyderies, and other the like workes, wherein shee spent her time, wondring at their perfection and curiositie, saying unto her ; How is it possible, that my Mistresse should not have the happinesse to enjoy such excellent good things as these ? No, no, it shall not be long (by the grace of God) ere you two know one another, and be better acquainted, and enter into a strict league of friendship. O sweet Jesus ! When I shall tell my Lady-Abbesse, what I have seene, O how will shee envie my good fortune ? What a longing desire will shee have, till shee see that face of yours, and be made so happy as to enjoy your good companie ? By the life of her, that left me here behinde her, and as her soule is there, where those eternall tapers continually burne, let the pocks consume my jaw-bones, if I be not a Bawd to these your loves, because I have a great minde to bring you together, and that yee should dearely love each other. I will not faile

hereafter to visite you oftner, you are a pearle of that price, that I cannot choose but love you, make much of you, and desire to serve you. After these words, and many other, full of ceremony and complement, she tooke her leave, and went away with her gold. And from that time forward, every second or third day, shee made one errand or other thither, one while for gold ; another, saying that she past that way, telling Bonifacio, that she should be guilty to her selfe of neglect, and that she should commit treason to her owne heart, if she should passe that way, and not performe a visit to that good Angell of his, being the onely Saint of her sexe, to whose shrine shee did owe all respect and reverence. At other times, she would excuse her comming, by bringing her some rarity or other, and whilest shee was talking with her, goe disposing and preparing of her, that she would of her owne accord goe one day and make merry at the Monastery.

Now, when she had moulded things to her mind, and thought that this fine peece of gold was fit for the hammering, she tooke a walke thither on Munday morning, carrying along with her two pretty little baskets, the one having in it some Conserves, and the like toyes ; the other, some fruits of that season, the first and the best that were to be found upon their first comming. Which shee presented her withall, telling her, because they were fruits of their owne garden, and the first they had gathered, her Lady Abbesse thought they could not be better bestow'd on any, then her selfe. And that withall she had a double request unto her ; The first, that the next insuing Munday, being the feast of the glorious Saint John Baptist, and the Sunday before it, their first Vespers, she would be pleased to doe her the favour to stay those two daies with her in the Monasterie, doing penance there with her ; which she might the more conveniently doe, in regard that she had no occasion of businesse during those two Holy-dayes ; and besides, the Nunnes, after they had ended their feasts, were amongst them-selves to represent a Comedy ; And that the Abbesse would take no pleasure nor contentment in it, if she would

not doe her this favour, to come and see it acted ; and that other principall Gentle-women, that were of kinne to the Nunnes, were likewise to come thither, and that they should goe all along together, bearing each other company : The other, that she might have three pound of her best and finest gold, to make tufts and tassels for a rich cloath that was to be used before the Altar ; desiring her, if it were possible, that shee might have the choisest and the finest for that purpose, that was to be got. To this of the gold, Dorotea made answer, she could, and would doe that for her with a very good will ; for this (quoth she) is in my power to performe ; I could likewise be content to cumply with whatsoever my Lady Abbesse shall be pleased to command me, but this is not in mine but my husbands hands. You know (Sister Sabina) that I am not Mistresse of my selfe, I am under anothers command, and therefore in this, you must ask my good-mans leave ; it is hee that can give you an I, or a No, whether I shall goe or stay. To whose will I must, and ever shall conforme my selfe. This were fine in good faith (said then Sabina) if your husband should deny us so small and so faire a request as this ? Let me never thrive, if I goe out of doores these eight daies, unlesse hee give you leave : Say your selfe, doth it stand with reason (to omit the mentioning of common civility, and good manners) that one onely request which my Mistris makes unto you, being (besides the first that ever she made unto you) so earnest a one, and so just, that you should lose all respect towards her person and her kindnesse, as to deny her so sleight a courtesie, desiring (as shee doth her salvation) to injoy such a paradise as your selfe ? Fie Sabina, hold thy peace (said Dorotea) be not so prophane, nor doe not flout your poore friend, for I am old. Old, (said Sabina) yes, yes, you bee very old indeed ; Let mee die of your disease. You might as well have told me, that the Spring is the end of the yeare, and that Lent is Christmas. But let us leave off jesting ; As old as you are, God grant your husband may long injoy you, and give you the fruit of his blessings. And therefore without any more adoe, I pray

grant our request ; for I meane to goe away with this good bargaine, that my mistresse may con me thanke for it. O how much will she make of this pretty little Rogue ? Bonifacio and Dorotea, fell a laughing to see her so pleasant ; while hee (with a cheerefull countenance) not seeing the Snake that lay lurking in the grasse,[1] nor the ambush that was laid for him, suspecting no harme, and the lesse, in regard of the great confidence that he had in his wife, said : Well followed in good faith ; Now (by my life) Sabina hath pleaded hard in this cause, and hath handsomly bestirr'd her-selfe ; shee must not be denyed for this once, especially being it is my Lady-Abbesses pleasure to have it so. And therefore I prithee (sweet Heart) goe and recreate thy selfe there those two dayes, for I know thou wilt be well pleased there-with, and it shall be no small contentment to mee, because it shall content thee. And therefore (Sabina) you may tell her Ladyship that her will shall be fulfill'd as well in this, as in any thing else, wherein I may serve her. And when these Gentle-women that you speake of goe unto the Monasterie, I pray so order the matter, that they may passe this way, and take my wife along with them. Sabina, being a well-spoken woman, returned them thanks in excellent good language, using such fitting phrase as best suted with the accomplishment of her desire. Shee hy'de her home, so well contented, and so proud of this rich purchase that shee had made, that the steps shee set forward, seemed to goe backe againe, and that she should never come time enough to her Masters lodging. Her heart was ready to have burst in her bodie, it was so over-swolne with joy ; and would (had it beene lawfull for her so to doe) have found in her heart, to have cryde it out at the high Crosse. A man might have seene her mirth in her lookes, her blood boyled within her, and her eyes did seeme to dance in her face for very joy ; you would have thought, that through them, and her mouth, shee would have uttered the cause of this her (more then can be expressed) content. When shee came into the house, no ground could hold her, shee fell presently

Proverbe

[1] *La culebra esta entre la yerva.*

to plucking off her *chapines*, to undoing of her mantle, flinging it with all the haste shee could over her head, leaving it trayling at her taile, and holding up the fore-skirts in her hands, lest they might hinder her speed, shee runnes mee, as fast as her leggs would carry her (like one that had beene fraid out of her wits) into her Masters chamber, who attended her comming. And out of meere haste, that shee might tell him all at once, all hung betweene her teeth and her tongue, that shee was not able to speake one ready word. Shee would one while be in the Active, another while in the Passive : Well, or ill, as well as shee could, shee deliver'd her message in that manner, that those eight dayes never had an end, shee in telling him of them, and he in asking her of them, a least a thousand times a-peece over and over. Every moment they returned to treat a-new of one and the same thing, re-iterating the same, I know not how many times over, and fell to make Comments thereupon, discoursing how it could be possible, that this businesse should take effect : It seemed unto them, that that whereof they talked, had fully contented them, and gone for good payment, their beleefe never comming to an end, never being able to perswade them-selves, that the newes of so great a desired good, could be certaine, or that ever they should come to see so happy a day. CHAPTER X

Dorotea and Sabina, being thus agreed upon the point, that this businesse might be the more cleanely carryed, Claudio tooke order, that certaine women should be provided and fitted up, that were of his good acquaintance, and friends and well-wishers to his house, such as he might safely communicate any secret unto, to the end, that by their good care and diligence, they might helpe to bring this his purpose to passe.

Sunday (the appointed day) being come, some of them, apparrelling themselves like married wives, others, being in the habit of maydens, and others after the fashion of grave and matron-like Gentle-women,[1] went along with

[1] The Spanish word is, *Dueña*, and signifieth an ancient Gentle-woman that is a widow : now taken commonly for those that weare large vayles like

Sabina to goe fetch Dorotea. They come to her house, they knocke at the doore, her husband comes forth, who staid at home looking for them : Who seeing such a worthy traine of women, opinionating them to be principall persons, presently call'd to his wife, that shee should make haste, and come downe, that the companie might not stay for her. Downe comes Dorotea, no lesse innocent, then contented. All of them did very lovingly salute her, bestowing many kinde words, and ceremonious complements upon her. And her husband, having consigned her over unto them, they placed her in the midst betweene them, and so with great joy they set forward on their voyage. And as they were walking towards the Monasterie, one of them, that had a vayle on her head, and of more reverend aspect and speech then the rest, makes a stop, and sodainely cryes out ; Ay, me, forgetfull wretch that I am, how hath it slipt our remembrance, that we forgot to goe for Doña Beatriz the new marryed Bride, who stayes at home expecting our comming, who also is invited to the Nunnerie ? Then another of them made answer, By the bones of my father, you say true. As God helpe me, I did no more thinke upon her, then I remember the first smocke that was put on my backe.[1] We can by no meanes goe without her, we must needs have her along with us, and therefore let us turne downe here, for it is not much out of the way, and we shall be there by and by. Then one of those, which was to the rest, as the bell-weather, that goes before the flocke, ruffling betweene her legs a large sided kirtle, and having a *Rosario* hanging at her necke, which served in steed of a bell, leads the way unto them, whom all of them follow, till shee had brought them to Claudio his house. They call'd at the doore ; A slave, putting her head out at the window, askes, who was there, and what they would have. One of them made answer ; Runne in quickly, and tell your

Proverbe

your Nunnes, to difference them from maides. And in the Kings Court, they call those *Dueñas de honor*, that are principall persons, and become widowes, and your Queenes and great Princesses have them still attending upon them. Covarruvias, verb. *Dueña.*

[1] *No me acordaua mas della, que de la primera camisa, que me vesti.*

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER X

Mistresse, that shee would be pleased to make haste, and come downe, for we stay here for her. Shee made as if shee had gone in to deliver her the message, and anon after comes forth againe with this answer, That her Mistresse would intreat them to have the patience to stay a little, till shee had but fastned a pinne or two to her head-dressing and had put on her mantle, which would not be long a doing, desiring them in the meane while to come in, and rest them-selves in the Hall. Whereupon, they entred through a faire Court into a goodly spatious Hall, very well furnisht, where the rest of the women remained, onely two of them past forward with Dorotea, into a midling square roome, which was hung with cloath of silver, and watchet damaske, with a bed sutable thereunto, full of imbossed worke of gold, the chaires, and cushions, and carpets corresponding with the rest. Adjoyning close to the bed was a curious *Estrado*,[1] where these three sate them downe, and had scarce warm'd their cushions, when the two, that were with her, began to complaine, and cry out; Good God, what does this new Bride Doña Beatriz meane to make us stay here so long? Fie, what a tedious thing is this? I care not (sayes the one to the other) if I goe in, and see what shee is a doing, I dare pawne my life, shee is not yet out of her bed. I prithee, Sister, (if thou beest a good wench) goe with me, that we may know, when we shall get hence. Which word was no sooner spoken, but they both went presently out of the roome, leaving Dorotea all alone. In conclusion, they were all vanished, and not any body living to be heard about the house.

When all was hush, Claudio comes in, and sitting downe upon one of the cushions, that was next to Dorotea, he began to make her many faire offers, discovering unto her the plot that he had laid to get her thither, excusing this his manner of proceeding, with the great torments that for

[1] *Estrado* is a place raised halfe a foot from the ground, covered over with carpets, where Ladies and Gentle-women sit upon cushions, and receive their *Visites*. Lat. *Stratus, ab sternendo: sed potiùs à Græc.* στρωτός, etc. Covarruvias, verb. *Estrado*.

her sake hee endured. When shee heard him speake in this language, and now (too late) perceived how shee was betrayed ; poore Dorotea was not a little troubled ; for shee knew him by sight, and was not ignorant of his pretensions. Shee saw her-selfe taken in the trap, shee knew not what to doe, nor how to defend her-selfe, and therefore began with teares and prayers, intreating him with all the Rhetoricke those two good Orators could use, that he would not spot her honour, nor offer her husband that wrong, by committing so grievous a sinne, and so heynous an offence against God. But all would not serve the turne. To cry out, was to no purpose ; for there was no body there to take her part. But say her shrikes might have disturbed Claudio, and have drawne the people in the street to come in, whosoever should have found her there, would questionlesse have condemned her for her comming thither, giving no credit to this tricke that was put upon her, though shee should have sworne out her heart to the contrary. Shee defended her-selfe (poore soule) as well as shee could ; but Claudio courting her one while with many faire and kinde words, and when they would not prevaile, breaking forth another while into actions of violence, with a great deale of resistance, and against her will, he pluckt from her by force such fruits as he could reach to, but not those that he desired ; entertayning him-selfe, and tyring out her, in this his rude wrestling with her. But in the end, when shee saw that shee could no longer hold out against him, and that her breath and strength did both faile her, and that the battaile would be lost on her side, Claudio still getting more and more ground upon her person, shee yeelded up the Fort unto him, for want of succours in convenient time, having fought it out (as they say) to the last man, and keeping out the enemie as long as shee could. They two, were all alone ; the doore fast lockt ; the tearme long, (no lesse then two dayes) Claudio, his friends about him, she a lone-woman ; he strong, and shee weake ; and none can doe more then they can doe. This might have very well beene said to have beene a sportfull contention, and an

amorous combat, befitting S. Johns feast, if the heaven of their pastime had not beene over-cast with a sodaine and unexpected cloud. They fared daintily, did dine, sup, and sleepe together. But this their pleasure lasted but a while, short was their content, and their rest sodainely and unexpectedly interrupted. For the Devill never yet made that pye, whereof him-selfe did not eat the better part.[1] It is a usuall thing with him, when he maketh any such kinde of meeting, to set up a tent, or pavillion, inviting them to goe into it, that there they may cover, and hide them-selves, and none may know of their doings, laying a charge of secrecie and silence on their present actions ; but afterwards, when they are closely shut up, and kept hid from the open eye of the world, in this their greatest, and ill-conceived securitie, he sets the doores wide open, discovers, and throwes these pavillions downe to the ground, manifesting in publike, their concealed sinnes ; and beating up his drumme, and ringing out his Alarum-bell, he calls the people together, that they may come and see what they are a doing, leaving them ashamed and sad, making him-selfe very merry to see them thus caught in his snare, and laughing and flouting at them, he makes him-selfe a Holy-day in Hell, joying and triumphing in his new-gotten victorie. Who would once have thought, that so subtle an invention as this was, so well ordered, and in so short a time, and by so strange a meanes brought about, should come to be discovered ? Who, from such happy beginnings, and meanes, would ever have expected such adverse, and Tragicall ends ? But I say ill, and therefore correct my selfe : For we could looke for no other, considering the dance, and who he was that led it ; and heaven cannot but openly punish such wickednesse, and violence. And though the punishment was not equall to the offence, yet the blow was such that was given them, that thereby every good Discoursist might come to the knowledge of the fault, and repent him-selfe thereof.

CHAPTER X

Proverbe

[1] *El diablo nunca hizo empanada, de que no quisiesse comer la meyor parte.*

THE SECOND BOOKE

Now whilest they were thus in their mirth and jollitie, all that day passed so without account, and order, that there was no heed taken of any thing: The servants in their quarter, fill'd their bellies, tooke away the wrinckles from off their guts, by glutting them-selves full, and pulling the faucets out of the hogs-heads, they did eat and drinke so lustily, that they were faine at last to creepe to their beds, as a Cat doth up a wall,[1] upon all foure; or as a ship-boy up to the top of the maste; leaving the chimney full of fire, and a great deale of dry wood standing by it; The fire takes me hold of the brands, and other dry clefts, and they being tinded, did communicate their flames to their fellowes that stood by them, so that towards mid-night, all that quarter of the house was burnt, and not one bodie in all the house that did perceive it, so fast were they all a-sleepe. It was the Vespers of S. John, and that night the *Teniente* (to see good order) useth to round the Towne, and by the great splendor that the flames did cast a farre off, he saw what a light it gave, and suspected (which was so indeed) that some house was on fire. And so following the clearenesse of this light, the brightnesse thereof brought them to Claudio his house. They call'd out aloud, and knockt hard at the gate; for the house was great, and the people that were within, some were weary, some drunke, and others burnt, but none that did answer. There was a great noyse and out-cry amongst the neighbours, every one seeking to prevent the threatned danger, and to provide as well as they could to save their goods and persons, many people of all sorts, and all parts of the Citie, came hastning and running thither, who by maine force brake downe the gate, and laid it levell with the ground, and entred the house, supposing all those that were in it, to have beene consumed with the fire, or at least choaked and stifled with the smoake, because they could see no body stirring in it. The noyse and clamour was such, that Claudio awak'd, and startled with this so great a rumour, and confused a sound, not knowing what the matter might be,

Proverbe

[1] *Yr a las camas gateando.*

hastning with his sword in his hand, (he and Dorotea being both naked) he opened his chamber-doore, and when he saw the fire, he returned backe, that he might throw some thing upon him, and save him-selfe by flight. The *Teniente* thought that the people that were without, had broke open that doore, that they might rifle the roome ; hasting thither with all diligence, that he might save it from the spoyle and ransacking of the more unruly route, hee found these two lovers running about the chamber, from one corner to another, to seeke out their cloathes, and having them in their hands, neither of them had their owne, interchanging them, through their more haste, then good speed. Now you may imagine in what taking they were, and what they might thinke, seeing them-selves thus naked, the house full of people, and her greatest enemie, the *Teniente* ; who had thus taken them napping. But that we may come to him, who streight way knew Dorotea ; whereat he was so amazed, that of all those three, you could not tell for your life, which of them was most astonied. For the *Teniente*, had any body told him of such a thing, he would never have beene perswaded to beleeve it ; and though he had now his owne eyes to be his witnesses, yet did he seeme to doubt of it. So troubled were his thoughts, so his heart inflamed with jealousies, and disdaynes, so mad and desperately bent, that to be revenged on them both, without any farther consideration, he commanded them to be carried away to prison ; his spleene being more against Dorotea, then Claudio, for that shee had rejected him, and admitted of another, and therefore was resolved to doe her a disgrace, and to defame her all that he could, devising with him-selfe, how he might likewise picke an occasion to commit her husband. For he thought it a thing impossible, that this should be done without her husbands privitie, and that he had beene witting and consenting to this businesse, and that he had given his wife leave to bestow a nights lodging upon this young Gallant, upon some particular interest, that might make much for his profit. Nor is it so strange, that the *Teniente* should take this indirect course: For a Love-passion

or passionate fit of Love, blindes the understanding, and makes the minde of man turne cruell and tyrannicall. They carryed her away, her face being covered over with her mantle, having given expresse order, that shee should not be seene, or made knowne to any, till information should be made against her. And Claudio, he likewise was committed. And howbeit he had used all the meanes he could, to hinder this his harsh proceeding, alledging in excuse the great and many harmes that might happen thereupon, yet neither reasons, intreaties, nor all-perswading Crownes, could allay the rage of this incensed Judge, so bigg was his heart swolne with malice and revenge. They remained in prison, and the Judge fomed at the mouth, till the fire was asswaged, and quite put out; but that of his heart did burne apace. It was now past midnight, and he had endured a great deale of trouble, but much more anger and choller. He got him to bed, and would have slept if he could; but in him was that proverbe verified,

Proverbe

which saith, *Assi tengays el sueño*: So let him sleepe, that troubles another mans rest. He could not sleepe in quiet, nor is it to be beleeved, that he should; but rather it is to be supposed, and true it was, that transported with rage, his head was plotting of revenge, dressing this his rancorous dish of poyson a thousand severall wayes, that they might not escape his hands, at least not come off, with the saving

Proverbe

of their honour. But hee reckoned without his Hoste.[1] For his feet were scarce warme in his bed, when Dorotea was out of his reach. Sabina lay in an inner chamber next unto her Masters, to the end, that if he should need any thing in the night, shee might be ready at hand, whensoever he should call. And for that shee had diligently listned to all that had passed, shee presently bethought her-selfe of a remedie for this disease. For your women, upon the sodaine, are more quicke, and nimble witted, then your men; nor must you give them leave to advise any thing long with them-selves, if you meane to have it succeed well and happily. Shee takes me out of her lodging a good

[1] *Hizo la cuenta sin la huespeda.*

fat Capon, which was left untoucht at supper, and a good peece of a gammon of bacon, which being of a wilde Bore, was held to be a dainty dish, a good flagon of rich wine, a loafe or two of bread, and money in her purse, and clapping a bed, sheets, and a coverlet on her head, and bearing a little basket, wherein shee had put her commodities, upon her arme, away shee trugs along to the prison. Shee intreated the Jaylour, that he would give her leave to carry in that her bed and supper for one of her Masters maydes, who because shee had show'd her-selfe too slow and negligent, upon so urgent an occasion, in bringing a bucket to draw water for the quenching of the fire, the *Teniente* in his heat had committed her to prison. With this slight excuse, and foure Royals of foure, which shee clapt in his hand, he opens the doore, and lets her in, making him a hundred cursies ; howbeit by reason of the luggage which shee had on her head, he could not come to see her face. In this manner, in shee goes to Dorotea, whom shee found rather dead then alive : They two stood talking alone together, for the rest of the women-prisoners were all asleepe, and taking hold on this so faire an opportunitie, it so fell out, that Dorotea was transformed into Sabina, by putting on a greene kirtle that shee wore, who called to the Porter, that kept the prison doore, and giving him the supper, that was provided for that end, told him, that the mayde would neither eat any meat, nor come in any bed, untill shee were released. Hee was so joyed therewith, that he thought he had seene the heavens opened, and when he had tasted of the bacon, and found what a tarte yet pleasant relish it had with it, he takes the flagon of wine in his hands, and gives it a good swigg, reserving the remainder against the next day. Whilest the Porter was making him-selfe merry with his good cheere, Dorotea heaves up the bed upon her head, and so goes out of the prison, leaving Sabina there in her place, and with those two women that bare her company the day before, and staid waiting for her comming forth, shee was conducted by them backe againe to Claudio his house, where shee continued till

CHAPTER X

the next morning, and then accompanied with them, and some other women, shee returned home to her owne house, faining that shee was not halfe well, and therefore made the speedyer returne. The *Teniente* growing now proud upon the matter, thinking the next morning, which was Tuesday, to execute this his revenge, Claudio in the meane while was not wanting, (being advised before hand that his Mistresse was now out of his danger, and safely arrived at her wished haven) intreated a Gentleman, a friend of his, to take the paines to goe and speake with the *Assistente* [1] of Sevill, and to crave so much lawfull favour of him, that he would be pleased to come in person to the Court, and free him of that injurie and wrong, which was so unjustly done unto him. The *Teniente* likewise, when he was going to sit downe to dinner in his owne house, going aside to the window, and looking with a devilish jealousie on those of Dorotea, he had her presently in his eye, and knew it was shee, and might plainely perceive, how her husband and shee sate very lovingly together eating of their dinner. He was almost beside him-selfe, and ready to runne mad, wondring with him-selfe, how this might be. Hereupon, he presently dispatches one away to the prison, to know who had freed the woman, that he had sent thither over night. Answer was made; that shee was there. Then did he beat his feet against the ground, and stampt for despight and anger, and did verily perswade him-selfe, that he was not well in his wits, unless the other had beene a dreame. So that day past on, till the next came, when (at the accustomed houre) comes me thither the *Assistente* him-selfe in person attended with his two *Tenientes*, and when he was sate in the seat of Justice, he will'd that Claudio should be called forth, and the woman which was imprisoned with him. Who, when they were brought before him, and had (according to their owne confession, as also the Keepers) approv'd themselves to be the same, there was no man there but knew Sabina was his slave, and so finding nothing

[1] The principall Magistrate, and chiefe Commander in Sevill, is called there by the name of *Assistente*.

to be said against them, they were set at libertie. Yet were they not so freed, but that Claudio paid soundly for it; for when he came home, he found the greatest part of his house, and his goods burnt, and together with them a sister of his, one of those honest ones, that accompanied Dorotea from her house, who was found dead in the same bed with his *Despensero*, besides some three other of his servants. This affront to his honour (for that it was generally published throughout the whole Citie) did so afflict his minde, and did in that manner oppresse his heart, that with the strong apprehension thereof hee fell grievously sicke. And not desiring his health, that hee might take any worldly comfort in it, but onely that hee might live to doe penance for this heynous sinne that hee had committed, by corrupting so good a creature, hee recovered of his sicknesse, and without making any one acquainted therewith, hee retyred him-selfe to the top of a mountaine in a desert place, where in a holy course of life hee ended his dayes, betaking him-selfe to the Religious Order of Saint Francis. Dorotea remayned with her husband in the same peace and love as before, and the *Teniente*, like a filthy fellow as he was, without *Doblones*, for ought that they gave him; and without revenge, for ought that hee could take of them. And Bonifacio (honest man) untoucht in his honour. For Sabina, and most of them that knew the affront that was done him, dyed within a few dayes after. So just is God in all his workes, and so well doth he know how to punish those wrongs, that are offered to the innocent.

With this Storie, and other entertainments, to passe away the time, we were brought by a faire winde to Spaine, which I had not a little longed for, having lost our Anchors, our Ordnance, our Oares, our Helme carryed away, our sailes rent, and all our tackling torne, having nothing left which the Sea had not swallowed up, onely I was left alive, who ought more justly to have perished. We did dis imbarke in Barçelona, where telling my friend Captaine Favelo, that I had made a vow, while we were in this

storme, that I would not stay three nights in any part of Spaine, till I should come to Sevill, and visit the Image of our Lady del Valle, to whom I had offered up my devotions, and made a certaine promise to consecrate some thing unto her, if I should be so happy as to escape that tempest. It griev'd him to the very soule, that he should lose my companie, but I could not doe otherwise ; for I feared lest they of Genoa would come in pursuit of me in some Skiffe, or the like vessel. I bought three beasts for to carry my selfe and my trunkes, I entertained a servant, and giving out, that I was to goe my journey (no man knowing the contrary) we tooke our leave for ever.

The end of the second Booke of the second Part of *Guzman de Alfarache.*

THE ROGUE
OR THE SECOND PART OF THE LIFE OF GUZMAN DE ALFARACHE

The Third Booke

Wherein he relateth all the rest of his lewd and roguish life, from the time that he returned into Spaine, till he was condemned to the Galleys, where we must leave him

CHAPTER I

Guzman de Alfarache, having taken his leave of Captaine Favelo, telling him, that he was to goe for Sevill, makes for Saragoça, where he peruses the statutes of Gotam College, otherwise called, The Hospitall of Fooles

How men use to grace their lyes

HEN a man (out of some particular end knowne to himselfe) hath a minde to grace a lye, for to bring forth witnesses to credit his falshoods, he seekes out a fountaine, a lake, a stone, some mettall, tree, or hearbe, where-with he proves his untruthes, and presently alledgeth for his authoritie, that he hath said nothing, but what stands with reason, and is made good by all those, that have any in-sight in naturall Philosophie.

And in this manner he quoteth a thousand witnesses; he being the man that tells the lye, and layes the burthen of it on other mens shoulders. But I will runne a contrary course to this; for I (my selfe not lying) shall tell you their lye; not that I affirme it to be so; but because it seemes to be so. And so it ought to be taken. For that Apollonius Tianeus takes it upon himselfe, and sayes; That he hath seene a stone, called *Pantaura*, which is the Queene of all other stones, whereon the Sunne doth worke in that forcible manner, that it hath all the vertues in it, that are to be found in all other stones whatsoever that are in the world, and that it worketh the same effects: And that as the Load-stone draweth the yron unto it; so this *Pantaura*, attracteth all other stones unto it selfe, preserving that partie from all kinde of poyson, that shall beare it about him.

The propertie of the stone *Pantaura*

Of riches

To this stone, we may very well, and with a great deale of reason, compare riches. For see what vertue there is in all other things, the same shall we finde in riches. It drawes all unto it selfe, and preserveth the possessor thereof from all manner of poyson. It doth all in all; it bringeth mighty things to passe; it is a most fierce and cruell beast; it overcomes all; treads downe all, that stands in its way; and commands all. It makes every thing stoope to its power; it subjecteth the earth, and all that therein is. By riches, the fiercest beasts are made tame; no fish, though never so great, can resist riches; nor the least of fishes, that hide them-selves in the concaves and hollow holes of the rocks, though over-whelmed with water, and drowned in the deepe, can escape its force; nor can the fowles of the ayre, though of the swiftest and nimblest wing, flie from its Empire; it exenterates, and pulls out the very bowels from the profoundest parts of the earth, upon which the highest mountaines have their foundation: and it maketh dry the most hidden sands, which the Sea doth cover in her bottomlesse Abysse. What altitudes, hath not it abased? What difficulties, hath not it overcome? What impossibilities, hath not it facilitated? In

what dangers, hath shee wanted safetie? In what adversitie, hath not shee found friends? What thing hath shee desired, which shee hath not obtayned? Or what Law hath shee made, which hath not beene obeyed? And being, as it is, so venomous a poyson, that not onely like the Basiliske, by being beheld by us, it killeth our bodies; but by a bare desire onely (being coveted) destroyeth our soules, damning them for ever to the bottomlesse pit of Hell; yet shee herselfe is a treacle to the harme we receive from her, and a counter-poyson, to that venome, where-with shee infecteth our soules and consciences, if he that possesseth riches, can (as of an Antidote, or some pretious preservative) make good use thereof. Riches, in its owne nature, and in it selfe, hath neither honour, nor knowledge, nor power, nor valour, nor any other good, nor any punishment, nor glory, more than that, whereunto, they that doe possesse it, doe direct it. It is like unto the Cameleon, which assumeth the colour of that thing, on which it settles its selfe: Or of the nature of that water of the Lake Feneo; of which the Arcadians report, that he that drinketh thereof over-night growes sicke; but he that takes it after the Sunne is once up, waxeth well. He that shall live in idlenesse, heaping up treasure by night, that is, secretly scraping a great deale of wealth together, over-charging his conscience therewith, he sure shall be sicke: But he that shall use them in the day time, and show them to the light, that his workes may shine before men, and that he come with a cleare conscience, having the stomacke of his soule empty of sin, and his conscience not over-clogg'd with worldly cares, this man shall be made whole. Neither is the rich man condemned, nor the poore man saved, for that the one is rich, and the other poore: but onely because the rich man abuseth his riches, and the poore man his povertie. For if the rich man treasures up, and the poore covet, neither is the rich man rich, nor the poore man poore; and both are to be condemned. But that may be called the best and the truest riches, which being possessed, is despised. For riches serve onely (at least should) to releeve our owne

CHAPTER I

Of the use of riches

Of the nature of riches

The best and truest riches

necessities, to communicate with the good, and to distribute amongst our friends. The better and greater part, which rich men have of riches, is the lesser part, in regard they are so occasionall in men, inciting them (especially if their hearts be once set upon them) to this, or that other sinne. Ill desires, beget ill doings. Riches in its owne nature, is a very sweet thing: To this, mans appetite hath a sweet tooth, and a greedy gaping after it. And as it is in the Proverbe; *La mançana corre peligro en las pujas del erizo*; that Apple is in great danger, that stickes on the prickles of a Hedge-hogs backe.

Proverbe

Of Gods providence

The Divine providence (for our greater good) being to divide and distribute its gifts, not laying all the weight of them upon one side, thought good to repart them in different manner, and on different persons, to the end, that all might be saved. This Providence made both the rich and the poore. To the rich she gave temporall goods; to the poore, spirituall blessings: to the end, that the rich man distributing his riches to the poore, might thereby purchase Gods favour; and so remaining both equall, might equally gaine heaven; which is to be opened with a golden key; to wit, with riches, by using them well: And sometimes likewise this doore of heaven is to be opened with a pick-locke; that is, by dispensing our goods to the poore: Yet notwithstanding, doth not man, onely for that he has more, thereby merit more: but because he more despiseth then desireth. For, without comparison, much more is the riches of a poore man that is contented, then of a rich man that is never satisfied. He possesseth them, that is not possessed by them; hee is rich that seekes not after riches; and he hath most store, that is the least storer. This is the only man whom we may truly tearme rich, wise, and honourable.

How heaven gate is to be opened

Nature contented with a little

And if the wise man would use his wisedome well, and would measure that which he hath need of, with that which he hath, nature would content it selfe with a little; and even in that little, would hee find an overplus. But because the foole inlargeth the cord, and would imbrace that which

he hath, according to that which he desireth, God so orders this measure, that though he had all whatsoever the world containes, yet should he still be poore. To him that is not contented, nothing is enough; To a having mind, all is too little; wanting much, by having too much. The eye of a covetous man, will never say, no more then will the Sea, or Hell, *Ya me basta*, Now I have enough. Rich, and wise, shalt thou be, when thou liv'st so within thy compasse, that hee that knowes thee, should admire the little, that thou hast, and the much, that thou spendest: and when it shall not cause any wonder in thee, to see what little meanes thou hast to live, and what great possessions other men injoy.

CHAPTER I

The covetous man never contented, and therefore never rich

Thou seest me here now rich, very rich, and in Spaine; but farre worse, then I was before; for if before, poverty made me too impudent; why riches hath now made me too confident. If I could but have contented my selfe, or had I but had the temper of a well govern'd man, I could never have wanted; but because I neither did the one, nor knew the other, for to get money I endanger'd my body, and hazarded my soule. I was never contented, never satisfied, never at quiet with my selfe. And for that I led an idle kind of life, and was not willing to take any paines, (unlesse it were in roguery) I lost that with ease, which I got with much labour. I was like unto that wheele which convayes water to your Aqueducts, no sooner full, but presently empty. I cared little for money, kept it lesse, but alwayes imploy'd it ill. My money was the price of blood, it was spent upon Sepultures for dead bodies, on dead workes, and worldly vices. This was the use I put it to, and therefore it is no marvell, if it thriv'd no better with me. Easily it came, and easily it went. And in the end I lost both it, and my selfe, as you shall heare hereafter.

How it fared with Guzman now he was rich

Flying from that mischiefe, that might follow me, I went out of Barçelona, forsaking the rode-way, going by by-pathes from place to place, betaking my selfe to unknowne trackes. I gave out that I was to goe to Sevill, I framed excuses, to be the better beleeved. I talkt of the Vowes that I had

Guzman, how he goes out of Barçelona

made, and invented a thousand other lyes; and for no other cause in the world, then to defeat the Spies of their purpose, and that they might not know what was become of me, nor find the pricking of the Hare, that was now so farre before the hounds. The Mules were mine owne, my servant a new-comer, and unacquainted with my trickes. I travail'd which way it pleased me, according as my minde served me, or as it came first in my head; here to day, and to morrow in France,[1] without staying in any one set-place; and alwayes changing my cloaths: for I came not to any place where I might change my apparell, but I did it, being of no great charge, not passing a hundred Crownes or there-abouts.

Proverbe

Guzman comes to Saragoça

In this manner did I travaile over all that Countrey, till I came to Saragoça, receiving no small contentment, that I was safely arrived in that noble and famous Citie. According as my youthfulnesse did pricke me on, my money hold out, and the Dames did incite me, so did I continue there some few dayes, though all, and many more had beene too little for to view and enjoy it's greatnesse: So fayre and strong were the buildings, so good the government, so great the provision, all things so good cheape, and those reasonable rates, that me thought it had a smatch of Italy. In one only thing I found it very strange, and to my seeming, at the first sight, somewhat terrible: which was the harder for me to digest, and the worse to be endured, for that I knew not the cause of it. And it was, to see, how men, knowing the condition of those women, and that every little occasion is sufficient for them to make their longings lawes, forming bodies of shadowes, would put a bridle upon them, lest by losing that decorum and respect which they owe to their deceased husbands, assuming too much libertie unto them, they were likely to stumble on a thousand blockes, that might be an occasion of their falling, and cause them to runne on headlong to the utter ruine of their reputation, which in a woman being once lost, is never againe to be recovered.

His like, and dislike of Saragoça

The custome in Saragoça concerning widowes

[1] *Oy aqui, mañana en Francia.*

DE ALFARACHE

It was my hap to walke through a spatious street, which they call, the *Cosso*, which though it made a fayre show, yet was it much graced by a handsome widow, that was young and well-favoured, and to my seeming of good both wealth and qualitie. I made a stand to view her; she likewise stood still, and would not away: she knew well enough of what disease I was sicke, but would take no notice of it, nor made any other semblance or show unto mee, then as if neyther I or shee had beene there, or as if wee had not seene one another. I made more turnes about her window, then a horse doth about a Mill; (for they are not a few, that use daily the like kinde of fooleries,) yet did shee not show her selfe eyther coy or scornfull unto mee, or that she was offended with me for it. Nor did I once offer to speake a word unto her, till at last, shee seeming (me thought) unto me, to waxe weary of this my foolish silence: I conceived that she said to her selfe, what painted timbrell is this? what Peece without powder, that hath made me wait here these two long houres, and making still proffers, as though hee would shoot, hath not yet discharged his musket, nor so much as once opened his mouth. With that shee went her way; and I stood looking when she should returne: being now fully resolved to let flye another arrow, to see if I could finde the former that I had lost;[1] but she came no more in play, and so I mist the marke that I meant to have shot at. I went home to my lodging, and demanded of mine Hoste, what she was; but as it were accidentally, and in a carelesse kinde of fashion, without any the least show that I did it of set purpose, or for any interest of mine owne, giving him such markes and tokens, whereby he might guesse whom I meant.

CHAPTER I

Proverbe

This Gentle-woman (said mine Hoste) is a widow, and that not one, but many wayes, exceeding faire and beautifull. I would needs know of him how. He told me, so many, that every particular fairnesse in her, were a sufficient beautifying to any other woman. She is fayre (as you see) in her face, shee is likewise fayre in her Linage, being of the

[1] *Perder un virote, para emendar el avieso.*

best descent in this Citie ; she is also fayre in her wealth and riches, having much of her owne, and much by her husband ; and above all, most fayre in her discretion, for therein especially doth her beauty exceed. I saw the pot was so full, that I was afraid, it would runne over ;[1] and therefore I said unto mine Hoste, that he might not runne him-selfe out of breath ; How comes it then to passe, if she be of that ranke and quality, as you say she is, that her friends and kinsfolke doe give way, that such a worthy Gentlewoman, should runne such a deale of hazard, as she does ; for youth, beauty, riches, and liberty, can hardly walke out their stations without tripping, if not falling. How much better and safer were it, both for them, and her, to get her another good husband, and cause her to marry, then to suffer her to live in this dangerous state of widowhood. Whereunto mine Hoste replide ; you say well Sir, but this cannot be done, but to her great losse and hinderance ; for that very day, that she shall betake her selfe to a second mariage, shee is to lose all the estate, which shee had by her former husband, which is no small matter. But continuing still a widow, she shall be Usufructuary of all that he left her, and enjoy it as long as she lives.

Proverbe

Guzman argues with his Hoste about this custome

Then said I, O how hard a condition, how rigorous a clause is this ? How much better were it to deale with this Gentlewoman, and such other as she is, as they use to doe in Italy, whose husbands, when they dye, leave their wives a large Legacy, disposing it in that manner, that it be paid unto them at the day of their mariage, declaring thereby, that they meerely left it them to that end. And this they doe, to the end that they may enjoy so great a benefit by a second mariage, whereby their state shall not onely be advanced, but their honor likewise secured, which otherwise might chance to receive some scandall. I was pressing this argument a little more home unto him ; but he interrupted me and answered thus unto me. Sir, hath not your worship oft heard say ; *En cada tierra su uso* ; Every

Proverbe

[1] *Tan llena esta la medida, que ha de vertir.*

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER I

Country hath his custome? This goes currant here, and that in Italy. And that other I am sure is not unknowne unto you; *Cada loco, en su casa sabe mas que el cuerdo en el agena*;[1] Every foole is wiser in his owne house, then a wise man is in anothers. Whereunto I replyde; If here bee no better Law then this, and if people shall suffer them-selves to bee governed in this manner, I know well enough what I say, I tell you plainly, I like not of it, nor can I by any meanes approve it. And to this end it is also said, *Al mal uso, quebrarle la pierna.* A bad Custome is better broken then kept. The legs of it are to be broken, that it may not stand any more in force. A holy, good and just Law, ought to be grounded on reason. I am of your minde (said mine Hoste) but they that are more learned, then I am, would peradventure give you better satisfaction then I can. Yet in my opinion, it seemeth to carry some force with it; and I am verily perswaded, that that which moved them to make this Law, was; not that a widow might not marry, but that being a widow, shee might not live in want; and to take away all occasion, lest for lacke of convenient maintenance, according to the condition of her qualitie, she might fayle in her obligation, and use that ill, which was instituted for good: so that the fault is the womans, though the punishment be the mans.

Proverbe

Proverbe

Bad customes not to be kept

This mine honest Hoste, did not halfe satisfie me with this (as he thought) his sound reason: whereupon, I entred into a discourse, thinking with my selfe, what kinde of creatures these women be; who if you leade them by evill wayes, they turne evill; if by good, worse; and never shall you come to know what to make of them. They are the making or the marring of their house:[2] The establishers, or the destroyers thereof. In their running they trip, and in going they fall. And therefore their name sutes well with their nature; being for this cause, called Woman, because she is a woe to man. She hath a smooth skinne, but a harsh nature; a soft tongue, but a hard heart; silken

Proverbe

Guzman discourseth of women

[1] *Cada loco sabe mas en su casa, que el cuerdo en el agena.*
[2] *Muger, el mal, ò el bien de su casa.*

words, but sowtage deeds. They seemed (me thought) unto me (pardon the coursnes of my comparison) to be like unto straw, which if you let it stand in the field in its naturall place, without laying it in such rooms, where it ought to be kept, it is preserved by the winde and raine ; but if you restraine and straiten it, clapping it up close in some little private lodging, it will shoote it selfe out, and breake through the walls ; nor shall you reape any other good of it, then that sowre juice which it will yeeld you, like unto that of the sowre Orange, affording much bitternesse, but no benefit. They know not how to keepe a meane in their actions, and lesse in their love or hate : Nor ever yet could they use a moderation in their cravings and desirings. That much which they receive, they thinke it still too little ; and that little which they give, they alwaies thinke it too much. They are generally covetous ; yet notwithstanding all these faults, naked is that house where there is never a wife.[1] All will reele, where the Reele goes not. Where there is never a white apron,[2] there is no good order, the meat ill drest, and the table sluttish. As the breath of man doth uphold houses, that they runne not to ruine and decay ; so the steps of a well governd huswife, doth preserve and multiply wealth : And as a good Chine of Bacon, makes glorious porrige ; and as a man becomes the streets ; so doth a woman adorne the house.

Proverbe

Proverbe

But this is not a place to treat of their vertues. I come unto mine owne, which at that time were more then the vertues of Tobacco. I continued a while discoursing with mine Host, who made me a large relation of many things concerning that Citie, as of its priviledges and liberties, from which conversation of his, I received so much content, and was so attentive to his talke, that I would have forgone any other intertainment, to have injoyed this his pleasing discourse. I may thanke my sinnes that had brought me thither. I had taken an extreame cold in the Galley, which I was not yet well rid of; and finding my head stuft, I

[1] *Desdichada la casa, donde las faldas faltan.*

[2] *Donde no ay chapines, no ay cosa bien puesta.*

pluck't a handkercher out of my pocket, and blew my nose, which I had no sooner pull'd thence, but I opened it, and look't thereupon, as if that Oyster had afforded me a pearle, it being the manner and fashion of that Countrey so to doe, (contrarie to the rule of good manners) being a no lesse slovenlie, then common tricke amongst them. CHAPTER I

The crafty Rogue mine Hoste, perceiving why I did it, and that I made, as it were, a scoffe of their customes, being a good speaker (as hee was) a proper handsome fellow, and a pleasant; speaking in a low voyce, and nodding his head towards me, softly said unto me; Flie, Sir, flie; Hide your selfe, as soone as you can: Quickly, quickly, I say. Poore and miserable man that I was, O these his words, how ill did they sound in mine eares! O how my heart was scorcht with them, like the Partridge that is first singed in the fire, and afterwards to be put presently on the spit! My feathers were singed, and my pride abated. Hee had scarce made an end of his words, when at two leapes, I had got me behinde the curtaines of the bed. He being ignorant of my villanies, thought that I had done this innocently, and out of simplicitie, as being startled with the sodainnesse thereof: and so instantly breaking out into a loud laughter, he merrily said unto me; I perceive, Sir, you are not troubled with the Gout: by my faith, Sir, you are a nimble active Gentleman: your Worship may now come forth, if you please; as God would have it, it is nothing: the storme is past, the coast cleare, and you may safely shew your selfe upon the hatches. I came forth from thence as pale as ashes, my colour was quite gone, and death appeared in my face; and did much wonder at my selfe, considering the great feare and perturbation I then was in, that the sodaine astonishment, and the affright it had put me into, had not made me to leap out of the window into the street.

Guzman, put into a needlesse feare by mine Hostes meanes

I came out at last, but whether more amazed, or ashamed, I cannot tell you; but I sought to dissemble it the best I could, that I might not raise up that dust which might chance to put out mine eies. Being now come againe to

my selfe, I ask't him what was the mysterie of this, and what he meant by it : I pray Sir said he, content your selfe, rest you quiet, and give me presently two shillings from you. I put my hand in my pocket, and threw him forth a Royall, and when I saw he was quiet, having by this time laught him-selfe weary, I began a-fresh to aske him, why he demanded two shillings of me, and what was that, that had passed before, when he bid me flie, and goe hide my selfe ? Hee falling into a new vaine of laughing, louder then before, looking cheerily and merrily upon mee, said unto mee : Sir, I have here a Procuration substituted by the Administrators of an Hospitall, for the recovering of certaine duties and rights of those, which come to my house, which I am to challenge of them, if they commit any forfeyture, contayned in the said Procuration. From this time forward, your Worship may goe over all the world by vertue of these my Letters Patent, without any farther molestation to your person, or your purse. With this Royall, you have paid for your entrance, and have free licence to be gone, when you list. When I heard him tell me this, what with that was past, and what with this present gamball, I was so confounded there-with, that that might be said to me, which was to a Gentle-woman, that is well knowne, who having matcht her-selfe with a new Christian, for that he was rich, and shee poore ; who being with childe by him, and finding her-selfe (it being the first that shee had gone withall) out of ease, and in much paine, talking with another Gentle-woman that was an acquaintance and friend of hers ; shee said unto her ; In good faith, I finde my selfe so ill, that I know not what to say unto it. I was never in my life, in that Jewish taking,[1] as I am now in. No marvaile (said the other) having a Jew within you ; and bearing him about you (as you doe) in your bodie. And in good faith, my selfe (like this Gentle-woman) was in that feare at that time, that if mine Hosts laughing and jesting with me, had not quickly rid me of this doubt, I verily beleeve, I should

A tale of a Gentle-woman, that marryed with a new Christian

Proverbe

[1] *Tener el Judio en el cuerpo.* That is, *estar con miedo* : To be in a great feare. Covarruvias, verb. *Judio*, pag. 492.

have fallen downe dead for feare. His breath, put into me; his livelinesse, life: And seeing him thus set upon the merry pin, I said unto him; *Cuerpo de mi*:[1] As I am an honest man; since I have paid the penaltie, I will know, by your leave, what is the fault I have committed. For that Judges sentence is rigorous and unjust, that shall condemne me in charges, for that which I never did, and shall not give me a discharge for it. For it may be, that both parties being heard, my money may be return'd me backe againe. Because your Worship (saies mine Host) seemes to be a worthy discreet Gentle-man, I will reade unto you a bede-roll of such statutes as I have here for the recovery of those amercements, and those penalties, wherewith they are to be punished, who incurre the danger of them. This Royall is a fee, that goes to the Beedle for your entrance. Only I shall intreat your Worship to have the patience to stay a while, till I shall goe runne, and fetch it you. He went his way, and returnes again in a trice, bringing a great booke with him under his arme, wherein he said, he did set downe the admittance, or matriculation of those that were made free of that Incorporation, and taking out some few sheets of paper, that lay loose in the booke, he began to reade some of their statutes and ordinances, whereof I will repeat such unto you, as remaine in my memory, with a protestation which I make unto you, to acquaint you with those few hereafter, which shall occurre to my remembrance. And they speake after this manner.

The statutes and constitutions of Gotam College, or The Hospitall of Fooles.

WE Reason, absolute Monarch, and sole Soveraigne of the world, not acknowledging any superiour, or in any sort equall unto us, for the redressing and reforming of mens manners, against the obstinate and perverse wilfulnesse of folly, and all other her wickednesse, which hath taken such deep root, and multiplied

[1] A common oath, or asseveration in Spaine: English, Body of me.

it selfe in that abundance, to our notable hurt and detriment, the prejudice of our Royall prerogative, and the great damage of all mankinde ; for to avoyd those greater inconveniences, which the corruption of so dangerous and spreading a canker may cause, that it may not creepe more and more upon our loving subjects (whose welfare and safetie we tender as our owne) and that it may not dilate it selfe any farther, to their utter undoing, and finall destruction ; We will and command, have and doe ordaine, as also doe publish and proclaime these our Lawes, to all those that are already borne, or shall be borne hereafter in succeeding ages, by the power of our Regall authoritie, and by the generall consent of our Councell of State, that they be taken and held for such, as are now by us established and confirmed, and that they be punctually kept, religiously observed, and fully cumplyde withall, both in all, and every the least point or parcell, herein specified, or contained, as you will answer it to your perill, and incurre that grievous punishment, which to those that shall violate and infringe these our Lawes, is in that case provided.

Moreover, because the first thing that we are in our princely care to consider of, is, that all due, fitting, and convenient provision be made, for the quicke expedition, and good execution of Justice, we in our wisdome have thought it meet, to nominate and appoint certaine Officers, of good both sufficiencie, and trust, such as shall be requisite and needfull for this so weighty and important a businesse, And therefore we do depute, nominate, and assigne for Judges, good Policie, Curiositie, and Solicitude ; to the end, that they, as if it were us our selfe, and as representing us in our owne proper person, may truly and uprightly administer justice, giving them by vertue of our power, full, and plenary authoritie, to apprehend, set at libertie, and punish, any manner of person, or persons whatsoever upon just cause, referring our said Judges to be ordered and directed by these our lawes and ordinances, and not to differ from the true intent and meaning of them, to the damnifying of the subject, and the dishonouring of us.

Furthermore, both for the present, and ever here-after, do we substitute as elder Brothers of this Fraternitie, and chiefe Wardens of this Incorporation, all those that be jealous observers, every one according to his place and merit, and he that shall be most jealous, shall be most honoured. Our Atturney Generall, shall be Diligence, and our Bedle, that shall warne them to the Court, shall be Fame.

1. First of all therefore, any person, or persons, that shall goe walking and talking to them-selves in the streets, or shall doe the like, when they are all alone, or at home in their private houses, we condemne them for fooles for three moneths, within which terme of time, we will and command, that they abstaine there-from, and reforme this their foolery. And in case, they shall not amend this fault, our pleasure is, that for the better accomplishment thereof, they have a longer and more peremptory time set them downe, of some three Termes, or more; within which limited time, they shall bring in a certificate of their said reformation and amendment, upon paine of being held for approved, attainted, and convicted fooles, and accordingly command our foresaid elder Brothers, and Ancients of the Company to bring in their evidence, and to find them guilty, and to see them afterwards severely punished, as violaters and breakers of our Lawes.

2. *Item*, They that shall walke through any publike or private place, that is paved with bricke, or with stone, and shall goe with a great deale of care and studie, pitching either their toes, or their heeles, in such a direct line, side, or corner of the said bricks, or stones, shall be condemned in the same punishment as aforesaid.

3. *Item*, They that walking along the streets, casting their cloake under one arme, and stretching out their hand, or their finger, shall goe, as they passe along, either patting the wall, or making streakes, and Indentures with their fingers ends, let them be admitted schollers of our said House or Colledge; provided alwayes, that they have six moneths of approbation granted unto them; In which

time, we command them to be reformed. Otherwise, and in default thereof, we have already ordayned, and doe now ordayne; That the Warden, Sub-warden, or Deane of this our Colledge, and in their absence, the Senior-fellow, put his coat upon him (according to the custome of the House) his cap, and his bable, and other ornaments belonging to his degree, and ever afterwards be held a professed foole.

4. *Item*, They that shall play at bowles, or at billiards, when they have throwne out their bowle, if by chance it shall runne awry, and that they with it, shall also wry their body; thinking, that which way they leane, the bowle should run inclining to that side, and governe it selfe, as they direct it with these their mimick gestures, shall dye in this their sin; and we must declare them for brothers already professed. And we further command, that the like be also understood of those, who use the like Apish action, seeing something fall downe from some high place to the ground, shrinking their shoulders, wrying their mouthes, or turning up the whites of their eyes. And likewise of those, who having vizards on their faces (as in masks and revels) shall under those, goe making of strange gesticulations, either by frowning, or smiling, or biting of the lip, as if in so doing, it did really and truly seeme unto them, that these variations, and alterations of their countenances, were taken notice of by some outward appearance, when as being thus masked, it is impossible, that any inward gesture of theirs should be outwardly discerned. And of those, who do counterfeit and imitate the like, not knowing whether they doe the same or no. Or if in cutting out some thing with a bad paire of sheeres, or with a dull-edged knife, or taking paines with any the like untoward instrument, they shall draw their mouth on t'one side like a Plaice; lill out their tongue, like a Calfe; wrinckle up their cheekes, forehead and eyes, like a scorched peece of parchment, and such Idiot-like postures, our will and pleasure is, that they in like manner, shall take the degree of fooles.

5. *Item*, They, who expecting their servant, (having sent him forth on an errand) if in case he be somewhat long a

comming, shall stay waiting for him at the doores, or windowes of his house, thinking that by his staying there for him, he will make the more haste, and come the sooner, we condemne all such to retract and acknowledge their errour, upon paine, that in case they shall refuse so to doe, they be severely proceeded against.

6. *Item*, They that draw their cards with a great deale of leysure, seeking by degrees, by a little and a little, to discover at this, or that other corner, first whether it colour right, and afterwards, discoursing and arguing the case, whether it be such or such a card, they them-selves knowing for certaine, that for all this their laborious lingring and delay, they shall never a whit the sooner encounter, or misse, then if they had presently taken it up, and made show thereof, as soone as it was dealt into their hand; we condemne them to the same acknowledgment, as aforesaid. And for some causes moving us thereunto, we have thought fit, to give them free leave and licence, without incurring any further penalty, to follow their ancient custome; but with this condition; That as oft, as he, or they, offending in this manner, shall see an Ancient of the house, or passe by his chamber doore, he shall make an acknowledgment of this his error, by putting off his hat.

7. *Item*, They that are gotten up into some upper roome, and either sitting or standing in some window, or open gallery, shall from thence spit downe; whether it be thereby to take (as it were with a plummet) the evennesse of the building; or to see, if he can make his spittle to light just upon such a stone, or some one marke or other, which his eye hath chosen out; we strictly charge and command them, that they retract and reforme this their folly, and that upon short warning, upon paine of being taken for publike professors of the same.

8. *Item*, They who travayling upon the way, shall inquire of those passengers, whom they meet withall, how farre it is to such a baiting-place, or to such a Towne, thinking, that by this their asking, they shall the sooner reach unto it, we condemne them in the like penalty, injoyning them for

penance, the badnes of the way, the Carryers jading of them, and mine Hosts cozening of them : Not inflicting any greater punishment, out of the hope of their amendment.

9. *Item*, They who when they make water, goe streaking the walls with their urine, as if they were busie about some curious delineations, or framing some Antick-figures, or shall pisse in the dust, making I know not what scattering angles, and Circles ; or in some chinke in a wall, or little hole in the ground ; We will and command, that they doe so no more, upon paine (in case they shall persevere therein) to be punished by their Judge, and delivered over to an elder Brother, or one of the Ancients of the House.

10. *Item*, They who when they heare the clocke strike, count not the houres, but aske others, what's a clocke ; it being more fit and facile for them, to tell it them-selves. Which carelessnesse of theirs, proceedeth often times from the abundance of a cholericke kinde of humour ; We therefore, strictly charge and command all such, that they have an especiall care of their health ; and in case they be poore, and not able to be at the charge of phy-sicke, that then one of the Masters of our Hospitall, cause them to be carryed thither, giving order that some pre-paratives be provided for them of wilde Cherries, or sharpe sowre Orange, lest otherwise they might runne the danger of losing their wits, and quickly turne either fooles, or mad men.

11. *Item*, They who have but a little meat before them, and many mouthes a going, shall divert themselves from their feeding, to entertaine the company with this tale, or that discourse, taking more pleasure (like a sort of pratling fooles as they are) to fill other mens eares, then their owne bellies ; by which meanes they often rise a hunger'd : For as much, as these are dyde in the woll, and come ready drest to our hands, we remit them to be re-gistred amongst your incurable fooles. And therefore command, that there be an especiall care taken of them. For these are in the 7th degree, and are almost in their full height to be taken.

12. *Item*, They who out of covetousnesse, or any other cause or reason whatsoever, so as they be not driven thereunto of force and necessitie, (for in such cases, Lawes are not to be kept) when they goe to market, buy the worser sort of victuals for the saving of their purse, and spending the lesse in their houses ; as if a Physitian, an Apothecary, or a Barber-Surgeon (who all the yeare long come to your houses, to cure those diseases, which were caused by bad and unwholesome meats) were not dearer by much, then any the best meat they could buy : We condemne them to a generall disgracing of them-selves, declaring them (as before declared) to be professed fooles ; forbidding them from hence-forth to doe the like, upon paine of being committed over to the Curate, Sexton, or Grave-maker of his, or their Parish, to be punished either more, or lesse, according to the hurt that shall grow thereby.

13. *Item*, They who in the summer-nights, as also some in the winter, sit, or stand, till their breech, or their feet ake, in some open Court or Taraffe, gaping and gazing on the heavens, and from the clouds of the ayre, goe forming the figures of Serpents, and the shapes of Lyons, and so of other beasts, we pronounce and declare them to be brothers of this Fraternitie : But if in this kinde of sort, or the like manner, they shall thus entertaine them-selves with these bables, that they may thereby, give place and time in their owne houses, as some use to doe for their owne interest and private gaine, that they may see the signe of Taurus, Aries, and Capricorne, which is a most foule and dishonest case, we condemne them (though accounted of the Brotherhood) not to be capable of the privileges thereof, nor that they be admitted into their Senate-house, nor that they have any waxe lights allowed them on Festivall dayes.

14. *Item*, They who wearing either blacke shooes, or white, or of any other coloured velvet, shall, for to take away the dust from them, or to give them a better glasse, make them cleane with their cloake, as if that were not of a more noble and better condition, and much more costly, and that

for to make them cleane and handsome, they shall leave that foule and dustie, we condemne them for neat fooles. And in case they be Noble-men, for their greater honour, we will have them to be taken for three-piled fooles.

15. *Item*, They who having past some few dayes, without seeing their friends and acquaintance, when afterward, meeting one another by chance, they say each to other; Are you alive Sir? Is it possible, that there should be any such man upon the face of the earth? Which notwithstanding that it be a kinde of indearing of a mans love, yet must we have them inrolled amongst the rest, being there are other more proper formes of salutation, without asking a man, whether he be upon earth, or alive, when as he was never yet in heaven, and sees him stand just before him. And we farther will and command, that all such have a signe, or marke of Admiration, set upon them; and that (during our pleasure) they never goe without it.

16. *Item*, They who after the hearing of Masse, and when they have made an end of their Ave-Maries, at the tingling of the bell, or at any other houre, when a signe is given in the Church, that Service is ended, shall say to such a one; I kisse your hands, Sir, howbeit this phrase of speech is supposed to be no other then an acknowledgment of thanks, the other having bowed his body towards him, or given him the good day, or good night; yet notwithstanding we condemne them for fooles, and command them to abjure this manner of speaking, upon punishment that they shall carry this name with them to their grave, and while they live, be pointed at for their folly, for that they more esteeme of a false and lying *bezo las manos*, I kisse your hands (which they never kisse, nor would kisse them, though they were the Bishops hands, and much lesse those of other inferiour persons, whereof some have them full of scabs, of scurfe, or leprosie, and other some, with nayles either ready to drop off, or full of durt,[1] looking like Caveary, that they would be ready to turne a mans stomacke) then to say, God give

[1] The Spanish word is; *Uñas cayreladas*. The French renders it, *Ongles si lanternés, et si salement coloréz.*

you good night, or good morrow. And the like command, we lay upon those, who make answer with the like salutation, at another mans sneezing, when they may as well say, God bless you.

17. *Item*, They who come to a mans house to inquire for him, and asking whether he be within, or no; it being answered unto him, or them, that he is not within, but is gone abroad, returne a second time to reply: Is he then gone abroad? we condemne them as rebels, and contumacious people, for repeating that demand, whereof they had already satisfaction.

18. *Item*, They who having hit their shin, or their toes against some sharpe stone, by stumbling unawares upon it, and with a great deale of fleame, and full of choller, returne backe againe to looke upon it at leysure with a fixed eye, and a troubled minde, we condemne them in the same penaltie, and command them, either to remove it out of the way, or that they doe not offer to looke upon it, upon paine of farther increasing their punishment.

19. *Item*, They, who blowing their nose, in the taking away of their handkercher, looke steadily upon it, and pry into it, as if some pearles had dropt from thence, and that they would safely lap them up for feare of losing, we condemne them for brothers of our said foundation, and that as oft as they shall offend in this fault, they give an almes to the Hospitall of incurable fooles, grounding our reason of this mulct upon this, that they shall hereafter have others doe as much for them.

When he was come thus farre, me thought he wanted onely the bell to toll him off. I was ready to burst my heart with laughing, and the bede-roll was so long, that I would not suffer him to goe on any further, and therefore interrupting him in his reading, I said unto him; Now (my good Hoste) seeing you have done me the favour to advise me of these things, that I may thereby know how to correct my errors; tell me I pray you, where-abouts this Hospitall is, who is the Principall, and what lands and rents belong unto it. Sir (said mine Hoste) for that there are so many

diseased and sicke persons, and that the Hospitall is incapable, and poore, considering the few that are well, and the many that are sicke ; it was agreed upon, that they should change their lodgings and be scattered up and downe in divers other places, so that now all the world in a manner appertaines to this Hospitall. Where then (said I unto him) shall those discreet and wise men, that remaine yet untouched, be so conveniently lodged, that they may be out of the danger of this infection ? Hereunto hee made answer, I heare (Sir) that there is but one onely man in all the world, that is free from this contagion ; but as yet I could never learne who that one should be. Every particular man, thinkes that he is this sound party, but few, besides him-selfe, will beleeve it.

The certainest newes that I can give you hereof, is, That there is a great Enginer lately found out, that will undertake to put into an egge-shell, as many as shall be absolutely free of this disease, and does farther make offer, that together with their persons, he will likewise thrust into the said egge-shell, all their goods, lands, and rents, and that notwithstanding all this, they shall have so much elbow-roome, that they shall scarce touch one another. I could hold no longer, but must needs tell him ; This (mine Hoste) is a malitious interpretation, and a matter of meere waggerie, and no lesse large then the Hospitall it selfe. But, being well considered, I find that it is very true ; in regard we are all of us but men, and have all sinned in our father Adam. Our conversation had continued somewhat longer, and we should have made an end of reading of the statutes of the said house, if the night had not hasted away so fast. Besides, I had a great desire to have another fling at the widow, and did long to fetch a turne or two before her lodging, to see how the world went there. So leaving the rest to the next dayes reading, I willed my servant to bring mee a very gallant sute of cloathes, which I had in my truncke, and taking my sword under mine arme, I went out of the house, and walkt about the City, seeking my fortune. I went stalking through those streetes in a carelesse kinde

Guzman goes by night abroad about the City

of fashion, with a minde so well pleased, and a heart so contented, that I would not have chang'd my present state, with any Prince in Christendome; thinking my selfe to bee such a tall fellow of my hands, that no man was able to stand in my way. CHAPTER I

At the winding of a corner, where two streets met together, and made a crosse, I met with a couple of young wenches, the one was a reasonable handsome one, and might very well have serv'd the turne; the other, seemed to be her servant. I made towards them, and they did not step aside; I stopt them in their way, and they stood still. I began to talke and discourse with them, and they with me, and in that kind and courteous manner, that I was as it were ravished with their company. I could not put any question to this Gentlewoman, whereunto shee had not a ready answer; shee would not give an inch of her ground, nor let any Card that came from me, passe without a Vye. There was not any one word, that could come amisse to her. I went about to dis-inwrap her hands of her mantle, that I might come to touch them; but the crafty hyleding, seeming somewhat squeamish, straining courtesie, did in a pretty kind of fashion faigne a defending of her selfe from that friendly violence, yet did she not make any great hasty retreat, but did suffer me to come on in that cunning manner, and was so nimble finger'd withall, that in that short space of time, that I was busying my hands about her face, and her brest, she with hers was not idle, but putting them into my pocket, tooke thence that little, that I had. I was hot upon the businesse, and in this heat of mine, I had no feeling of this ache; nor had it beene possible for me to have beene sensible of it, had I taken the best care, that I could. For, at such times, and upon such fits, our memory, and our understanding failes us, onely our will is then occupied. She had no sooner made her market, and stript me of a matter of some hundred Royals, but she said unto me; enough (good Sir) I beseech you no more, for Gods sake, leave off while it is well, and doe that (as you love me) which I shall advise you unto: Let me then intreat you

He meetes with two wenches

His wench cozens him

Sir, that you will have the patience to stay a while at the turning of this street, through which you saw us now come, for the next house save one, at the end of this street, is mine ; we goe but a little wayes off here, to fetch a peece of worke, that I have put forth to doing, I shall make no stay, but come backe by and by, and be instantly with you. We will not tarry scarce the turning of your hand, and then you shall goe in with mee into my house ; for there lodges no body, but I, and my maid, and there you shall see I will bee at your service, as you shall be pleased to command me ; besides, you shall heare me sing, and play in that manner, that you never heard a sweeter voyce, nor saw a better or quicker hand upon a Virginall. Get you thither (my deare) whither I have directed you, that you may not be seene to have come along with me ; for I am a married woman, of honorable parents, well reported of by my neighbours, and generally wel thought of, and I would not willingly lose this their good opinion ; yet you seeme unto me to bee a gentleman of that quality and noblenesse, that I would willingly hazard both my person, my reputation, and whatsoever else is dearest unto me, for your sake. I beleev'd her in all that shee had said ; and did now thinke my selfe as cock-sure of her, as if I had had her already betweene mine armes. I did as she commanded mee, standing close upright against the corner, where I continued from half houre past eight of the night, till the clocke had strooke eleven, and ever now and then me thought I had a glimpse of them, and that I saw the bulkes of them a far of, making towards mee, but I might as well have staid there till this day, for any comming againe of theirs. The devil a Mistresse, or mayd of them, that I could see any more. When I saw that it was so late, and that they staid so long, I imagined with my selfe, that shee had some Gallant to her servant, and that shee being gone to his house, he would not give her leave to returne. For the which I did blame her, but not much ; for my selfe would have done the like by her, if shee had come once within my doores. I perswaded my selfe, that she could not helpe it ; and that it

was not in her hands to do as she would : and said to my selfe ; *Aun, seran buenas mangas, despues de Pascua* : It is no great matter ; A payre of sleeves, will not doe amisse after Easter.[1] What is not to day, may be to morrow ; and as good then as now. There are more dayes in the weeke then one ; as there are more fingers then one, on the hand. Thus goes the world ; one day followes on the necke of another ;[2] but it is the fashion of it, To be all for the present. I tooke notice of the doore against another time, and went walking along another way, as I was led along by my desires. Anon after, I returned thither againe, whither when I was come, all was very hush and quiet ; there was no memory nor signe of any one body in all that street, nor at any doore or window, any noyse to be heard, nor any nose, no not so much as of a dogge, or of a cat, that peeped out. I stood prying and watching from one side to the other ; I fetcht many turnes, I cought, hauk't, and spit ; I made a noyse with my feet, but all in vaine, and to no purpose in the world. In the end, having staid there a great while, and being now growne weary with walking, as well as with expectation, I was resolved to get mee home to mine Inne, as despairing of any good hopes for that night : Which as I was about to doe, I might espie from a little window, a countenance, which by its interpreter, the tongue, seemed to be a womans, who had thrust out her head at a little window, whose face I could not see, or if I had, I could not give you an account thereof, for that it was so darke. I beganne to talke youthfully to her, (or rather foolishly, for such kinde of parlees are but fooleries,) but she told me that she was none of those I lookt after, marry she had a mayde, that I might happely make love unto, that was a drudge of the kitchen, and scoured her pots and her pannes. But be she, as she may be ; what ever she were, she spake so well, and intertained mee so for the time, that I quite forgot my selfe for the space of two houres that we interchanged

CHAPTER I

Proverbe

Proverbe

Guzman talkes with a wench from a window

[1] *Buenas son mangas, despues de pascua.* The meaning whereof, is, when that which we desire, comes to us somewhat later than we could have wisht it. Covarruvias, verb. *mangas.*

[2] *Un dia viene tras otro.*

talke, all that long while seeming unto me but one short minute. But loe, (if it offend not thine eares,) whilst we were thus pratling, comes out a devillish curre, one of Belzebubs whelpes, which as it should seeme, flew eagerly forth of one of the neighbours houses thereabouts, and fell a barking and balling so loud, that it was not possible for us to heare or understand one another: The window was high, the woman spake very low, there was a pretty fresh wind abroad, and the dog did so lay on, and spend his mouth so fast, that being willing to remedy that fault, I groapcd with my feet for a stone, that I might throw it at him, and not finding any, I cast downe mine eyes to the ground, and I might perceive neere unto the wall, a little copped blacke thing, which I tooke to bee a stone. Prc-

How Guzman was besmear'd

sently I catcht it up in my hand, but it was not a stone, nor nothing so hard; but had quickly found that I had besmeared my fingers; I sought hastily to shake it off, and giving a flirt with my hand to fling it away from mec, I gavc my fingers ends such a smart jerke against the wall, that I was much pained therewith; and to ease the tingling that I had in my nayles, I clapt my fingers to my mouth ere I was aware: but I forthwith repented mc of what I had done. My often spitting would not mend the matter, and therefore I sought for helpe with my other hand from my pocket, thinking to take thence my handkercher; but there was no such thing to be found. This strucke me into my dumpes, and made me melancholly, to thinke how the scurvy harlotry had conycatcht me. And I was so angry besides, to see how my mouth, and my hands were inammeled, that with very choller, my eyes were ready to start out of my head; my guts were likewise in a good forwardncs to have leapt out of my mouth, being upon the point to vomit out of my stomacke all that I had within me, as those women use to do, that have a fit of the Mother. And the more to anger me, this scurvy currc did so persecute me with his bawling, that my Gentle-woman was forced to with-draw her-selfe, and to shut to her window, and I driven to looke out some thing, to rid me of this odious and filthy stinke.

I rubb'd my teeth against the wall, as well as I could, thinking that way to doe my selfe good. Well, when I saw it would be no better, I returned in a great rage to my Inne, with purpose to returne the next night to the same place, to see if I could by chance meet with that good wench, that had sold me this Greyhound.

CHAPTER II

Guzman de Alfarache goes from Saragoça, and comes to Madrid; where he turnes Merchant, and is married. He breakes his credit, and turnes bankrupt. He treats of womens subtill trickes. And of the inconvenience of counter-writings; and of their remedy

S soone as I came home, I got me to the well, and feigning that I would refresh my selfe there a while, (because I would not have my servant acquainted with this disgracefull accident) I will'd him to draw me up two buckets of water. Which when hee had done; with the one, I washt my hands, and with the other my mouth, having almost rubbed off the skinne from either, and yet did not rest contented and fully satisfied of my selfe, I had taken such a villanous conceit of this filthy odour, or rather ordure. I could not fall asleepe for my life, nor settle my selfe to rest all that night, for thinking on that truth which the wench had told me, that I should never while I liv'd meete with a quicker or a nimbler hand. See now whether she ly'd or no? I am sure I shall never forget her words, so good cause have I to remember them, for that which fell out afterwards. The Græcian Helen (I assure you) nor the

Roman Lucretia, cannot be more, or oftner remembred by others, then shee by me. And yet, when I was thinking on her, the others conversation would seeke to put that out of my head, one seeking to thrust out the other, so that I was as it were distracted betweene them both. I would have had them (like nayles) to have driven out one another, that I might have heard no more newes of them. And when I began to shut the doore of my remembrance to these, this same scurvy copped pibble stone came flying in at a by-window, the very conceit whereof, began a-fresh to turne my stomacke. What a bad night must we needs make of this, having to doe with so many? For if Duero,[1] did compasse me in on the one side; Peñatajada, did girt me in on the other. But when my hat was come to its colour, and that I had considered a little better on the businesse, I said with my selfe; If this poore tricke (not for any great hurt that it did doe me, but only for that it was a tricke put upon me) I can thus hardly digest, and that it makes my stomacke to rise, as oft as I thinke upon it; how will my kinde kindred in Genoa, digest those gudgeons, that they swallowed? how brooke that famous jest, which sticks so close to their ribs? If such a toy as this,[2] a meere trifle, not worth the talking of, move my patience so much, how would it have wrought upon me, had it beene a matter of moment? Thus did I passe away the night, thinking one while on this, another on that; what I should do with my selfe the next day, how bestow my time, what cloathes I should weare? or whether I were best to put on my great chaine, which I kept in store for high Holy-dayes, and great Feasts? what part of the Towne I should quarter out? what words I should speake, to move her affection? or what present I should send her, to oblige her unto me? Then throwing all these things out of my minde, as if they had never beene in my thought, I should runne by and by backe againe (like a giddy-headed Spaniel) beating and

Proverbe

[1] *Duero. Rio famosissimo en España. Por el qual se dixo, yo soy Duero, que todas las aguas bevo.* Covarruvias, verb. *Duero.*

[2] *Quando aqueste assi duele, que hara con guindas?*

questing upon the old haunt, saying to my selfe: If it should be my good hap, to meet with this young crafty harlotry to morrow, what shall I doe unto her? Shall I lay hands on her? No: Shall I take that from her, which shee filcht out of my pocket? Neither: What shall I do then? Shall I crave her better acquaintance, and desire her friendship? Least of all. Embracing therefore none of these, I advised with my selfe, and said; What should I trouble my selfe to seeke after her? To what end? I know the goodnes of her hand already, and how quicke and nimble her fingers be, be it for Virginall, Harpe, or any thing else that you will put them to. Let her go; God be her good speed; and much good may it doe her with them, *Alla se lo aya Marta con sus pollos*: [1] I could wish they had beene more for her sake. Well may shee thrive with them. For if shee had not stood in need of them, and beene in want, I assure my selfe, shee would never have put her-selfe to so much danger. I began to looke a litle better into my selfe, and when I had well considered what I was, and knew mine owne condition, and the courses that I had run, I whispered my selfe in the eare, and said; What complaints will not the butcherly Wolfe frame against the poore silly Lambe, accusing him of troubling the water when he came to drinke, that he might pick a hole in his coat? A lusty strong Mule can hardly carry the gold, the silver, the pearls, the pretious stones, and the jewels, which I had purloynd, and come cleare away with them out of Italy, and yet sticke not to finde fault with this poore soule, for a thing of nothing, that shee tooke from me, being perhaps urged thereunto out of meere necessitie. O the miserable condition of men! how apt, and how easie are we to complaine? O how much adoe, doe we make about a little! How take on, as though we were undone! What a little losse, and what a deale of lamentation? O the immense and infinite goodnes of God! How much do we offend thy divine Majestie? How little reckoning do we make of

CHAPTER II

Proverbe

[1] *Alla se lo aya Marta con sus pollos. Los pollos de Marta, piden pan, y dan les agua Marta la piadosa*, etc. Covarruvias, pag. 541.

it? and yet how easily dost thou forgive us our offences? What vassalage, and base subjection is that, which men doe yeeld to their owne passions? And because the best of things, is the curbing of them, and to make use of them in their time and place; I know very well, and am able from thence to reade this lecture both to my selfe and others; That we ought to have as much compassion of those that offend, as we have cause to envie those that forgive. For mine owne part, I will follow this lesson: Let her make herselfe merry therefore with the money shee got from me; for I forgive her with all my heart.

Now whilest I was thus discoursing with my selfe, the day began to breake. The light, by little and little, had crept in through some chinkes of the windowes, when together with it, a little sleepe likewise came creeping upon my selfe, being willing to have my senses clogg'd with those soft-lined fetters, in which I lay fast till nine of the clocke, and slept so soundly, that I could not say; This mouth is mine. Nor was I so glad that I had slept so well, as that I found my selfe thereby the better disposed to watch the night following, without being bound to pay that debt to nature, when my game was at the fairest, if fortune should chance to favour me so much, as to offer me a faire occasion, to finish what I had begun. I rose up well satisfied, wishing the houre were come, wherein I might goe to that desired place. I made me ready, and went to Masse, and visited the Image of our Lady of Pilar,[1] which is one of the greatest devotions, that is in Christendome. I spent that day in walking up and downe; I saw my Widow, who came to the window, to wash her hands. I could have wisht, that those drops of water, which fell from her snowie fingers, would have trickled downe upon my heart, to see if they would have beene able to quench the fire, that flamed in my breast. I had not the face to speake a word to her: No not so much as, God save you.

[1] Pilar de Saragoça, One of the famousest Churches in the world, for that our blessed Lady appeared there to the Apostle S. James, and willed him to build a Church there to her honour. Padre Pineda, lib. 10. *Monar. Eccles.* cap. 25. sect. 4.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER II

I stood leaning against the corner of a wall, putting my selfe in a good handsome posture, looking on her with a wanton eye, a cheerefull looke, and a smiling countenance. And shee likewise smilde, and talking with her servants, who attended there on her, after shee had washt, they carryed away the towell, the bason, and the ewer, which when they had set them aside, they put their heads out at the window, and lookt upon me. I having received this favour, thought I had now brought my businesse to an end. I stretcht out my legs, and my brest, and lifting up my head, and bearing up my necke somewhat stiffe, I made two or three short turnes, throwing one corner of my cloake over my shoulder, setting my hat on t'one side, laying my left hand on my sword, and resting the right on my side, treading my steps in state, and turning my rolling eyes upon her, I walk't leysurely before her window, my eye being never off on her. Whereat they laugh't a good; and I rested well contented. They made themselves merry, and I was very well pleased. I assumed so much libertie to my selfe, and behaved my selfe so boldly, as if I had already obtained what I desired; and as though the doores and windowes of the house had of purpose beene set open for me to enter in. And all the while I was using this Courtship, and performing this my Love-exercise, she stood me still, and did not once offer to wagge from the window.

The Spanish posture, when they court their Mistresse

Many Gentlemen past that way, well clad, young, able, and handsome: yet in my judgement, none of them like to me, neyther in apparell nor person. In every one of them I could have found one fault or other; but in me, there was nothing to be excepted against. One came short in the handsome shape and feature of his foot; another wanted a well made legge, the calfe was too little, or the small too big; some were too tall, and other-some too lowe; some too fat, and others too leane: This, went a little limping; that, awry. All had one blemish or other; I only, was compleat; I was *I per se I*; I was like a Rule, without exception. All in me, was in true Mood and Figure; In

a full and perfect symmetry, having a just and even proportion of every particular part, in respect of the whole frame. And being of best both grace and favour in my person, I was graced and favoured more by her, then all the rest : for shee did not shew them the like countenance, as she did mee.

Night drew on, she left the window, but before she withdrew herselfe, she turned her eyes towards me, and so went in. I hyed me home to my lodging, being rich in hopes, and musing upon that which in this case was fittest to be done. Mine Hoste came to me to keepe me company ; but because I tooke no content in any thing but my contemplations, I intreated him to hold me excused, for that I had businesse to goe abroad. I supt, and taking my sword with me, I went out of doores in pursuit of my businesse : you shall see how evill is mans inclination : For notwithstanding that I had made, (as you have heard) that discourse with my selfe, in favour of that woman, which had cozened mee of a few Royals, and had put on a resolution to let it passe, and never to thinke more of it ; yet my thoughts were much troubled therewith, and like so many Bryez or horse-flyes, did make me kick and stampe against my former determination, and would not let me be in quiet, but that I must needs goe and seeke her out. Whereupon, I gave that night a hundred turnes about the very selfe same street, having a conceit with my selfe, that it would be my good hap to light once more luckily upon her in the same manner as before. But not knowing well why, for what cause, or to what end I did it, but walked idly there up and downe, till the houre was come. I had waited long, and when I saw to what little purpose, I thought to make homewards towards my lodging : and as I entred into the *Cosso*, by a crosse-way, right over-against my Mistresses house, I might discerne a pretty wayes off, two severall companies, one on t'one side of the street, and t'other on the other. Thereupon, I returned a little backe, and stepping into a porch, I beganne to thinke with my selfe ; I am a stranger, this Gentle-woman of good ranke

and quality, well descended, and rich withall. There is generall notice taken of her worth and meanes. This flesh need not to have beene hung up upon the hookes for want of a Cat.[1] No man will say that this was not a woman worth the looking after, but rather that there was a great deale of reason, that she should be wooed and sued unto, and to be served and observed by those that had the happinesse to see her. These (said I to my selfe) doe not wait here to give or receive an almes : I know not who they are, nor what they pretend ; whether they be friends and all of one companie, or whether any one of them be interessed here ; if by misfortune I should come amongst them, and that they should hedge me in the midst of them, and make a ring about me, they would not onely muffle me with their cloakes, but make me as full of holes as a Sieve, and pricke mee in the body with their Rapiers points, as Bulls are stucke with darts, when they are bayted in the market-place, and perchance leave me for dead. This Country is dangerous, the men bold and insolent ; their weapons of advantage, they many, and I a poore single man. And therefore (Guzman) looke to thy selfe.[2] And if they be enemies, and have a mind to goe together by the eares, it is not I that can part them, I shall never be able to make them friends, but indanger my selfe, and doe no good. Goe the world which way it will, fall backe, or fall edge, the best course for me, is to get mee home to my lodging, I am sure that is the safest way. And fitter it were for me to goe to mine Inne, and looke to my trunkes, and to get me out of Towne as soone as I can. For I neither know any, nor am knowne by any. Besides *à quien se muda, dios le ayuda.* God helpes those that alter their evill condition.

CHAPTER II

Proverbe

Proverbe

Proverbe

[1] *Estase la carne en el garabato por salta de gato.* Alluding to those women that are retyr'd, and chaste ; not so much out of their owne will, as for want of opportunity, and a naturall respect, and shamefast feare, that the world may not take notice of their incontinency. *Casta est quam nemo rogavit.* Ovid. *Eleg.* 1. And anon after. *Aut si rusticitas non vetat, ipsa rogat.* Also we say ; *Que alguna dama tiene garabato* ; when with her beauty, and other good graces, she draws as it were with hookes, your gallants hearts after her. Covarruvias, verb. *Garabato.*

[2] The Spanish phrase is, *Guarte, no sea nabo.*

THE THIRD BOOKE

I betooke me to my heeles, and came in a trice to my lodging. Assoone I came in, I presently got me to bed, where I rested, with much more sleepe, and a great deal lesse paine, then the night before. For indeed, there is not any thing that doth sooner thrust these love toyes out of our heads, then to see such kind of visions. Whereupon I resolved the next day to leave the Citie, and so I did; By little and little I drew towards Madrid; And when I came to Alcala de Henares, I abode there eight daies, for that it seemed unto me, one of the finest and pleasantest places of any other that I had seene, since my comming out of Italy: and if the love of the Court, had not clapt wings to my feet, I am verily perswaded, that I should have continued there still, that I might have injoyed that fresh and delicate River, their plentifull provision, their rare and singular wits, and many other good intertainments. But because Madrid was *patria communis*, the common mother to us all, and a large field, wherein every man might range at pleasure, I thought it no discretion, to forgoe the Sea, for a River.[1] And for lesser things, to neglect the greater. In fine, every man may there follow that which hee hath most mind to. There no man knowes one another; no not so much as those that live within the same doores, and lodge in the same house. This drew me thither, and thither I came. The face of the Court, as also of the towne, was quite changed, since I left it. There was no Grocer there to be heard of, no memory now, that there was ever any such man. I found the fields peopled with houses, children become men, young folkes growne ancient, the ancient old, and the old dead. The high wayes turned into streets, and the streets altered in their bredth and building; finding every thing in good order, and farre better then when I left it. I lighted on a lodging, that liked me exceeding well; and so well, that I staid full eight dayes within doores, without putting so much as my foot over the threshold, being onely tide thus fast by the legge, by the good company and sweet conversation of

Alcala, an University not above a dayes journey from Madrid

Proverbe

Madrid much altered in a few yeares

Guzman takes a lodging in an Inne

[1] *Dexar un mar, por el arroya.*

mine Hostesse, Who, besides her handsomnesse, had a good fashion of behaviour, and a pleasing kind of entertainment. She was discreet in her cariage, and at boord knew very well how to demeane her selfe. Those few dayes that I staid there, shee made me very good cheere, and did with all possible punctuality, seeke to please and observe mee, fitting my humour to a hayre. CHAPTER II

While I continued there, I went casting up of my accompts, plotting and devising with my selfe, what course of life I should runne, how, and upon what I should live, and in conclusion Vanity weighed downe the scales. And first of all I beganne my businesse with gallantry and bravery; being every day more fine then other. I made me two different sutes of cloathes, with long silke stockings, of the best Naple silke, neate ones they were, and strongly sow'd to my payn'd hose: And I tooke another sute out of my trunke for change; thinking with my selfe, that being thus well clad, and getting me a good horse, and taking two servants to attend me, by shewing my selfe abroad in this good equipage, I might the easier vent my merchandize, and meete with those, that would buy these my jewels of mee. I put this in execution, and beganne to brave it, and to spend liberally. My Hostesse was not short, either handed, or witted, but a gentle courteous dame: she sought in all things to please my palate.[1] She had found out the beating of my pulse, and need not to be taught how to apply her selfe to my malady. It happened, that among many of those her she-friends that did often come and visite me, one of them brought along with her in her company a yong wench, well favoured, well behav'd, having a face like an Angel, and though she were in extreame both faire and beautifull, yet was she far more wily and subtile; it was a notable crafty carrion. To this wench, did I make love, she shewes her selfe coy and disdainfull; gifts molifie rockes,[2] and breake the hardest stones in sunder. The more I did regalar her, and the more courtesies I bestowed

He turnes Gallant

Proverbe

Proverbe

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Dauame cañas a las manos.*

[2] *Dadivas ablandon peñas.*

THE THIRD BOOKE

upon her, the more kind she grew; of a Haggard, she became a gentle Hawke; and though somewhat wilde and strange at first, yet now was she taught to come to my fist; I could play with her beake, cast her, and give her stones, so that now she was managed, as I would have her. I continued this friendship with her for some few dayes, in all which time, (as if she had been some gutter to receive all the raine that fals; or some Chimist, or Alchimist, to melt a mans money, and to extract quintessences) there was not that day that past over her head, wherein she did not begge or crave something of me; peeling, and polling me, as much, as possibly she could; carrying her selfe therein so slily, and so cunningly, as if she had bin a woman of much riper yeares, and well beaten to these kind of businesses; never a Courtizan of them all, could go beyond her. But she was the better verste (I doubt not) in these things, in that she had so good a tutor of her Mother. Once (amongst the rest) I remember she intreated me, that I would buy her a gowne of crimson damaske, which a Broaker had to sell at the Puerta del sol,[1] trimmed with gold lace, and richly embroidered, the price no lesse then 1000 Royals. This seeming in her an excessive kind of liberty, that she had assumed to herselfe, to dispose of my moneys at her pleasure, (for albeit, I was not a little taken with her love, and though I saw her craving nature, yet I had not dealt so ill with her, but that I had bestowed on her above 100 Crowns one way or other, and that if I should suffer her still to untap my vessel,[2] she would suck me so dry at last, that she would not leave one drop in al the hogshead) I would not give it her, but grew somewhat angry with her; she sets light by it, was offended with my denyal, took it to hart, and thought hardly of me, and that I had us'd her unkindly. I would take no notice of it. The mother and the daughter, were both displeased with me. I said nothing, but lookt on, to see, what would become of this businesse. They came not at me, nor did I send to

Guzman makes love to a young wench

Unkindnesse growes betwixt Guzman and his wench

[1] A place so called, in the high street of Madrid, neare unto san Felipe.
[2] The Spanish phrase is, *No quedará bolo en hiesto*,

CHAPTER II

A plot to cozen Guzman

Proverbe

An Alguazil comes to arrest Guzman

Guzman much dismaid

them. They entred into counsell with mine Hostesse. The Wolfe and the Foxe, had both laid their heads together, how they might intrap the poore harmlesse Sheepe; and all three did combine them-selves against me. Now here see their roguery, and what a villanous plot they had laid for me. When I was set downe to my meat, when I was just in the midst of my dinner, not dreaming of any ill, that was intended towards mee, I might perceive an Alguazil de Corte, make towards my lodging. Who, when hee came within hearing, speakes out aloud, Body of me; *Aqui morira Sanson, y quantos, con el son*; Here shall Samson die the death, and as many as be here with him.[1] My end (said I to my selfe) is now at hand. I thrust the table from mee, and rose up much troubled. Then said the Alguazil unto me; Pacifie your selfe Sir, and rest you quiet, we come not to apprehend you for a thiefe. It cannot bee for any other thing (thought I with my selfe;) for he had nam'd the word thiefe before, and I did verily beleeve that he spake in a frumping and scoffing kind of manner; and that for this cause he was come thither to arrest me. That word strucke my heart so dead, that I was not able to speake a ready word, much lesse to save my selfe by flight, but stood as still as a stocke. The Catch-poles had made good the doore, the window was of the least, and too high from the street, from whence I could not get downe so easily, but that they would take hold on me, ere I came to the ground; or if I escapt their hands, it was a thousand pound to a penny, I should breake my necke in the fall. At the last, for all my spirits were thus troubled within me, I did (as well as I could) aske him, what was his will with me? He (having much ado to forbeare laughing, and having no share of the care that I was in) putting his hand into his bosome, pul'd out a Warrant, by vertue whereof the Alcaldes had commanded him to apprehend me upon the breach of that law of theirs, *de viciatione virginum*,[2] of cracking of maiden-heads, and

[1] *Aqui morira Sanson, y quantos, con el son;* A kind of Rodomontado, or proud menacing.

[2] The Spanish phrase is, *Por el virgo de justilla.*

the deflowring of a virgin. The devill take thee for a wicked woman as thou art, and me for an arrant villaine, (said I) if I know what thou wouldst have, or what thou dost meane by this : And let mee never live, if she doe not lie like a hundred thousand divels. I sware unto him, that it was a most sinfull and abhominable untruth, and a testimony of falshood, as God is true. The Alguazil smiling upon me, said, I beleeve you Sir, but told me withall, that he might not exceed his Commission, nor was it in his power to release me. And therefore wisht me to put on my cloake, and to goe along with him to prison. Now I was in the bryers ; I knew not how to winde my selfe out of them ; my finall ruine was before my face ; I had trunkes ; what ones they were, you your selves can imagine ; my servants not knowne, I lay in a lodging where they had made a bed for me,[1] or rather a trap to catch me. I did feare this was but the Prologue to the Tragedy, that would come after, making this but a colour for the better cozening me of all that I had. If I left my trunkes there, they would have beene as safe in the street ; and if I should remove them thence, I knew not whither to carry them ; And to goe to prison is like unto those, who goe to play in a Taverne, that is seated on the top of some cold mountain ; who begin in Cards, and end in drunkennes, falling asleepe with the pot between their hands. Thinking with my selfe, that though I went thither for a trifle, I could not tell, whether these mole-hils would bee made mountaines ; and small occasions breed mighty inconveniences. So that I was at a stand with my selfe, and knew not which way to take.

Guzman treats in private with the Alguazil

I tooke the Alguazil aside, and intreated him, as he did honor one onely God, that he would not be the instrument of my undoing. I told him, that wealth that I had, was like to run great hazard of being utterly lost, and that he would be pleased to devise some meanes, that they might not doe me so great a wrong ; for that I assured my selfe

[1] It is an usuall phrase in Spaine to say ; *Esta hecha su cama.* Such a mans bed is a making ; when there is some matter a working against him for his hurt.

they had a purpose to rob me, and they were minded to make a spoyle and a prey of me, and that this was onely their intent, and nothing else.

He was an honest man (which was no small good fortune, considering his calling) discreet, and courteous, he knew my innocency, as one that was well acquainted with the contrary parties course of life ; and I promised to bee so thankfull unto him for this his kindnesse, that he should have no cause to complaine, or repent him of the favour he should afford me in this case. Hee told me, that I should not need to trouble my selfe any farther in the businesse, for I should find him ready to serve me in all that he was able. He left his servants there to look unto me, and went to seeke out the adverse party, that brought him thither, who was in my Hostesses chamber. He went to and fro between us, with offer of such and such conditions, to accommodate the businesse ; and in the end, he threatned them, that if they would not come to agreement, and make some reasonable end, he would sweare the truth in my favour, and discover their cheatings, and their rogueries, if they would not rest contented with that which was fitting.

The Alguazil wrought to favour Guzman

They, when they saw how ill their cause was like to goe with them, were willing in the end to put it wholly into his hands, and so this quarrell was ended between us, for two thousand Royals. For he having put the mother to her oath, she swore, that I had promised to pay for the gowne, and double the value of it in money, and that if this would not content her, she should have more. But she I know rested well contented, and was glad with all her heart, that she went thus away with these two thousand Royals, because she knew they were not due unto her. Well, I paid downe the money on the nayle, and wee went to the Registers office, and there had the bill dasht : So that the sute was now at an end. It cost me in the whole, a matter of two hundred Ducats ; and within halfe an hour after all was dispatcht it was darke night. But I would not stay a minute longer in that lodging, nor would not so much

Guzman compounds his businesse

Guzman leaves his lodging

as have set my foot within the doores of that wicked house, had it not beene to have away my trunkes, and such other things as I had there. Which done, I presently parted thence, and went to seeke out another. I was not curious, but tooke the first that came to hand, till I could fit my selfe better, and meet with some quarter part of a handsome and honest house, with persons in it of some worth and credit. I bought me some moveables and such household-stuffe, as was necessary for my selfe, and my servants, and provided me pots and pans for the kitchen. Whilest I was making this provision, it was my hap one morning to meet with the same Alguazil in the Descalças,[1] and after wee had both heard Masse, at the said Monastery, we talkt together, and I sware unto him by the blessed Sacrament, that there was there upon the Altar, that I had never made any such promise to that woman ; he told me, Sir, not onely in those things which I know, but in those, which I know not, you might have spared this oath with mee, much lesse was there need of it in a thing of this nature ; for this is well knowne, to be a packt peece of knavery, and a plot laid of purpose to picke your purse. I know this young baggage ; who besides this, which she hath now put upon you, hath exhibited two other severall bils in the Court in this kind. The first, before the Vicar of this towne, against a poore Subdeacon,[2] who came hither about a certaine businesse ; he was the sonne of honest and rich parents, who for quietnesse sake, was content (good man) to have his cloathes torne from his backe by them, and being stript of all that he had, went away (as they say) in his shirt, they leaving him as poore as Job. Afterwards they commenced the like sute here in this towne, making a grievous complaint against a *Teniente*, who was a Catalunian, and exceeding rich : They firkt him too, and fleeced him as well as they could ; but this man hath deeply sworne, that hee will bee fully revenged on her. And now hath she complained on your

The discourse that past betwixt Guzman and the Alguazil at the Descalças

[1] A monastery in Madrid.

[2] The Spanish word is *Cavallero de epistola*, because it is the subdeacons office to sing, or read the Epistle of the Masse. Covarruvias, 358.

selfe to the Alcaldes ; And had it not beene, that I held it the lesser inconvenience to pay them that money, then to yeeld your selfe a prisoner, leaving your goods (as they say) at sixe and seaven, I assure you I would not have given way unto it, but have executed my office. But of two evils, the least is to bee chosen. For albeit you would out of doubt have beene freed in the end, yet would you not have procur'd your liberty in haste ; for much time must first have beene spent in the proofes, and then in the replies to those proofes ; whereas this way, though you were at an unjust charge, yet have you by this meanes, avoided the prison, your shackles, your Visits, your Atturneys, your Proctors, and your Registers, bringing in this relation, and returning that relation, this information, and that information, al which is but vexation of spirit, and prolongation of time, trouble, charge, and discontent. The bargaine was driven cheaper this way, and with a great deale lesse distaste. I vow this unto you, as I am a Gentleman, and an honest man, that in all the time that I have served his Majesty with this Vare in my hand, which is now going upon the three and twentieth yeare, that of all the cases that I have seene in this kind, I have not knowne above three in three hundred, that have beene justly prosecuted in Court : For he that feeds upon that dish, (unlesse hee have very ill lucke) seldome or never payes for it. But when such things come in question, the accuser hath commonly the better of the accused ; the plaintiffe will bee sure to fare well, how ere it goe with the defendant ; he hath that he lookes for, he cares for no more ; for it is in this, as at Best be trusted,[1] amongst Costermongers, the first speaker scapes scot-free. And these kinde of people will never give over this tricke, till they have lighted upon one unluckie bird or other, whom they may rob both of his credit, and his money, or get them such a husband as may supply their

The inconveniences of imprisonment and Law-sutes

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Echar la buena barba*, A sport whereat one payes for all the wafers that he and his fellows eate, by asking the seller this question, Who is the honestest man of all us? which is signified, *por la barba*. By allusion, it is spoken of those, who with set speeches, and flattering phrases, gull a man of his money.

wants, and necessities. It is like unto some botch or kernell, which first begins in the finger, but afterwards breakes out in the arme-pit : And the cause of it is, because the delinquent either sodainly flies upon the accusation, or is so poore a fellow, that he is not worth the looking after.

The fashion of your Spanish queanes

These young queanes, either walke the streets, to see if they can meet with a good chapman, or drop into some friends house, or keepe at home at their fathers or their mothers house : this, or that other young man, enters within doores, comes into the kitchen, where hee hath opportunity to speake unto her, and she to answer him : They are all alone, the doores shut, time enough, will they want not, occasion is offered, and the bargaine driven. But this is practised for the most part amongst the poorer sort ; and the party hath no sooner the sent of those rashers of Bacon, that are making ready for him, but hee presently gets him out of the house, and comes there no more. Now, when their parents come to know it, that they may not lose the fruit of their labours, they give her an admonition, or gentle reprehension. And afterwards they them-selves stand scntinell, and have a nearer eye to the businesse, and so order the matter for her, that shee may fall into such a mans hands, of whom they may make profit of this their merchandize. When, it oftentimes comes to passe, that he that is least in fault, smarts most.[1] Then said I unto him, I pray Sir tell me, if these things never happen, but in secret, and unseene, none knowing thereof but them-selves, who dare to sweare, or can truly take his oath, unlesse shee shreeke and cry out, whereby it may appeare, that he did offer her force and violence, or that the people came in and found them busseling together, or in the act it selfe ? He told me, such an oath is not necessarie, nor in such cases

Proverbe

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Quien menos culpa tiene, à lavar la lana.* And it is spoken by way of proverbe ; *Vos lavareyes la lana de aquel, que la ha caydo la suerte mas trabajosa como los, que trabajan en los lavaderos, que unos son apartadores. Otros tienen los mas oficios, que no son pocos : y los que lavan la lana tienen mayor trabajo, por andar en el agua todo el dia, desnudos.* Covarruvias, 513.

doe they put the witnesse to prove, that he saw them together in that actuall manner, for this were an impossibilitie, the businesse being carryed in that secrecy, as you propound it. It will serve turne, that he, or they, depose, that they were seene to talke together, or to have beene in private together, or that hee was seene to kisse her, or to embrace her in his armes, or that he was in some chamber with her, the doore shut upon them, or that they had seene some such passages, by which it might well be presumed, that such a thing was either done, or in doing. For what with these circumstances, and her owne asseveration, standing stifly unto it, that he had ravisht her, and forced her against her will, it being found upon inspection, by a Jurie of women, that her mayden-head is crackt, and that shee is no more a Virgin, this shall be a strong and sufficient proofe against him. I my selfe (said the Alguazil) saw in this Court, a very rigorous course taken in this kinde, and one of the strangest Cases, that I beleeve you have scarce ever heard of the like heretofore.

A tale of a cunning queane

There was once abiding in this Towne a very handsome and beautifull Gentle-woman, a stranger in this place, who came hither (being baited out of her owne Country) for no other end, then to seeke out some meanes to live. Shee profest her-selfe to be a maid, and in that habit shee went a while up and downe the Towne. A certaine Prince in this Court had a great minde unto her ; he pretends, and procures her love ; he gives her a ticket under his owne hand for to pay her eight hundred Ducats, in which writing, shee would have it set downe, that there should be a respect had unto her honour ; specifying therein, that he bestow'd the same upon her by way of dowry for her advancement in mariage. The Prince did not pay this money at the day, shee put his bond in sute, he answers not unto it, shee gets out an execution against him, and recovers the money.

About some foure yeeres after (being favoured by a certaine great person) shee provided the like pickle for another, that was a stranger, who having had some dealings with her, shee picks a quarrell with him, and makes a

grievous complaint against him. And howbeit the defendant alledged against her the originall writing, and the payment of the principall, together with the interest, yet they condemn'd him, and made him to give her full satisfaction, so that the poore Gentle-man was forced to pay her soundly for her cut Melon, it was argued to and fro, that shee was, and was not a maid ; but not to dispute, whether shee were or no : Sure I am, that shee recovered twice or thrice in Court, that which shee never sold ; and in this manner did shee goe away with the bucklers. And therefore (Sir) you have not beene ill served in this businesse, but have well woond your selfe out of the bryars. For in good faith (Sir) the witnesses did threaten you sore, were violently bent against you, and spake very bloody words (though the wench was not so.) And so we tooke leave one of another, he going his way, and I mine. I did much wonder to heare such businesses to be so carryed. Insomuch, that discoursing thereof with my selfe, I began by degrees to fall into consideration of the sacred Councell of Trent, which so holily, so justly, and so lawfully had made provision for clandestine mariages ; and by which there was a remedie found out for so many inconveniences, stopping so many gaps, and rearing up so many walls, to keepe them out, and hinder their entrance. And I did likewise weigh with my selfe, that if the secular power, would (as in justice they ought) doe as much in these dayes in such cases, (as mine was) I verily perswade my selfe, that there would not be the fifth, nay not the tenth part of those lewd and naughty women, as are now (the more is the pitie) every where abroad in the world, living to their owne, and others undoing. For really, and truly, there is no such thing as this force, which they so much inforce (that we may speake it under *benedicite*) but that which they call force, is rather an accord and consent of both parties. Nor is it possible, that one man alone should force a woman, if shee of her owne will, or with a kinde of unwilling willingnesse, graunt him not that which he desireth of her. And if she give way, and rest contented with it, why doth shee question

and trouble him for it? And here I shall take occasion, to tell you a true Storie, which hapned in a certaine place within the Signorie, or Jurisdiction of Andaluzia. CHAPTER II

There was a Country Clowne, a good honest day-labourer, that had a pretty young wench to his daughter, with whom a young fellow fell in love, that was a neighbours sonne of the same Parish; and in fine, having obtained what he desired, when her father came to know of it, and that this young man had pluckt from her the fairest flower of her garland, he made haste to such a Towne (that was the Head-Towne of that Division) to make his complaint against this his neighbours sonne. The Alcalde hearkned with great attention to all that hee said, and after that the poore man had informed him at full of the case, and had said all that he could, hee said unto him: Well (my honest friend) you complaine here of this young man, that he hath tickled your daughter, and plaid the wanton with her, wherewith you finde your selfe agriev'd; Is it not so (my good friend?) Yes (and it please your Worship) said her father, it is as your Worship sayes; you say very true Sir. And I am much agriev'd with it indeed, for that he did dishonour my daughter by force. Then the Alcalde, spake againe unto him, and said; Tell me (I prithee) how old is thy daughter, and how old is the young fellow? My daughter (said the father) will be (next August) one and twenty yeare old, and the young man (as I take it) is some three and twenty. When the Alcalde heard him say so, in a rage he rose up from the bench, and frowning upon him, said angerly unto him; And comest thou with this to me now? Have I nothing else to doe (thinkest thou) but to heare every idle foolish complaint? He twenty three, and she twenty one: Let me heare no more of this (my friend) goe get you home, and rest you quiet; here's a pretty accusation with all my heart: one, one and twenty, and the other three and twenty, they might very well doe the businesse, they could not choose, but well and willingly goe to it. If others, in the like case, should receive the like answer, and that there were a Law made, whereby it were enacted, That no woman, A Tale of a Country Clowne

from eleven yeares upwards, dwelling in a Towne, should pretend her-selfe to be forced; they would then be good perforce.

A digression to another storie of the like nature

But upon this subject, may it please you to heare a singular accident, and a notable case in this kinde, which hapned (not long ago) in one of the principallest Cities of that most noble Common-wealth of Venice.

There lived in that Citie, an old woman, base in her birth, and poore in her meanes, who had a daughter, that was very lovely, faire, and beautifull. And because shee had not wherewithall to marry her, this crafty Gabrina (being an old cunning Hagg) devised with her-selfe to make sale of the puritie and virginitie of her daughter, and that not once, but many and many times: and these her wicked proceedings did prosper well with her. For she would either be sure to have that before hand, which they had agreed upon, or by the favour of some principall person, this, or that other man, was faine to compound with her, and to make his peace as well as he could. One day amongst the rest, this handsome young wench, being seene and well eyed by a young Gallant, and one of the principall Gentle-men of that Citie, a single-man, and exceeding rich, used divers meanes to winne her affection, and in the end obtained his purpose, and after that he had enjoyed her, he did very liberally requite her for her kindnesse. But the greedy old woman (who was covetousnesse it selfe) thinking this Lordly gift too little, made her moane to a particular Gentleman, complayning how ill shee had beene dealt withall.

He, as it were in a jesting kinde of manner (scorning and hating in his heart the vile and base humor of this wicked and accursed woman) said thus unto her; Thou knowest Lena (for that was her surname) that the most illustrious, and most excellent Segnor Generale, will shortly be here; and thou likewise knowest, what upright justice he doth indifferently administer to every one, without respect of persons, and more particularly in such cases that concerne the good and honor of maydens. And therefore the best counsell that I can give you, is, That you and your daughter

Ricciolina get you both (as soone as he comes hither) unto his Excellency, and plainly deliver unto him how Signor Conde N. hath forced and deflowred your daughter, and falling both a-weeping before him, yee further declare unto him, that after he had had his will of her, he was not so good as his word with her, nor performed the promise which hee made unto her ; which was, That he would eyther give her two hundred crownes, or get her a good husband. And that therfore, seeing that he did not cumply with you neither in the one, nor the other, that his Excellency would therefore be pleased to take this your wretched and wofull case into consideration, and to doe you justice. If you can doe this handsomely (as I know you are not to seeke, and can doe it better then I can advise you) my life for yours, you will have the day of him, and the businesse will go clearc on your side. It was not long after, that the Generall his Excellency came, before whose presence these women being brought, they opened this their false accusation. Upon which relation of theirs, his Excellency was much moved, and caused the Conde to be sent for by one of his servants : who, when hee came before him, was demanded, whether at any time he had had conversation with Ricciolina the daughter of Lena ? He without any more adoe, ingeniously confest, that he had. When he heard him say so, he bestow'd upon him, such a loving and fatherly reprehension, that the Conde beganne to blush, and for very shame, could not for the present expresse himselfe, as he might, and would have done in his owne excuse. Whereupon the Generall perceiving this his tacite confession, caused Ricciolina to be called forth (who by his appointment staid in the next roome) and when shee was come, he gravely spake in this manner unto him ; Signor Conde, if we should punish faults with rigour, a heavy punishment would light upon you. But we, for that we love your selfe, and all other offenders that come before us, as our owne children, and taking pity and compassion of your youthfull fervor, and those violencies that accompany such young yeares, we doe pardon you that grievous and most hainous offence of forcing this maiden,

as farre forth as it may touch your life ; but withall, wee condemne you, to pay the double of what you promised her, which comes to foure hundred crownes : which before you goe from hence, wee command that you presently disburse, and give it to Ricciolina.

To this the Conde, his bloud now waxing warme, which before was frozen, with that respect and decency, which was fitting for him, replyed thus : Most Illustrious and Excellent Sir, I have hitherto held my peace, it beseeming me so to doe, as one that is your most true, faithfull and obedient servant, and most ready to submit my selfe to any reproofe or punishment, that you shall be pleased to inflict upon me, in case this their accusation were true. And if your Excellency out of the greatnesse of your wisdome, shall be pleased to dive into the depth of these subtill womens hearts, and search them to the very bottome, your Excellencie will soone discover, how wickedly false these their accusations have beene against me. And though I have confessed, that I have had conversation with her, it was upon covenant and agreement betweene us, upon such a price, which I punctually paid, giving her more out of mine owne bounty, then she could challenge of me. Notwithstanding, if it shall seeme good unto you, that I disburse this money, I crave no longer time, then that I may goe home and fetch it, wherewith I shall presently returne, and put the money into your Excellencies hands, to be disposed of, as you please ; but not as in punishment of any such error by me committed.

The Generall having heard what the Conde said, replyed unto him, Signor Conde, goe fetch the money, for I shall stay here till you come. And you Ricciolina, see you depart not.

Now, whilest the Conde was going home, and returning backe againe, his Excellency went a farre off, asking this and that other question, one while of the old woman, another of the young, and so talking to and fro of divers things, at last, he said unto her ; Tell me (Lena) have you ever carryed a good hand over your daughter ? have you

alwayes lookt narrowly unto her? Yes marry have Sir (said she). And did you never (replide he againe) leave her all alone by day or by night? No, Sir, quoth she. How comes it then to passe (said his Excellency) that you would suffer your daughter to be forced and deflowred by the Conde? Why did not you defend her from that violence? And you (Ricciolina) having your mother in your company, why would you let him force you, and take that from you which (unlesse you should in some sort consent thereunto) it were impossible for him to get from you? Both of them, then weeping, said unto him; That the Conde was too strong for them, and that they were not able to resist his violence, and therefore besought his Excellency, that hee would not suffer her daughter to be thus abused, and both of them to be left open to such a deale of scorne and reproach: but that he would be pleased to doe them justice.

By this time the Conde was come, and had told out upon a little table of Ivory foure hundred Crownes; which by the Generall were given to Ricciolina, giving her this Item withall, Take them (daughter) and looke well unto them, lest they chance to be taken from thee. And you (Lena) have a care both of her and her money. And so God be with you, I have no more to say to you.

When they were gone, his Excellency turning himselfe towards the Conde, said unto him, Goe, get you after them, and see you take their money from them, either by love or force, by fayre meanes or by foule. And looke that you give me a true account of the passage of this businesse.

The Conde hearing this, moved with rage and disdaine, seeing how basely he had beene used by these infamous women, (not considering the condition imposed upon him, nor to what end it was done) made hastily after them; nor did he goe alone by him-selfe, but made choyse of a servant of his (amongst those many that he had) whom he tooke along with him. And so walking a good round pace, he overtooke them a little on this side their owne house, and comming unto them, after that he had saluted them very

kindly, and by little and little had insinuated himselfe into them, hee continued discoursing with them, till he had brought them home. Where, as soone as he was come into the house, he beganne to demand his money of them. And when he saw he could not prevaile with entreaties, he assayed to get it by force, and went roundly to worke with them. But Ricciolina, who had put the purse in her bosome, stoutly defended both it and her selfe, scratching the Conde with her hands, and biting him with her teeth; who with all the strength that he had, could not come so much as to touch, much lesse to take the purse from her. To make good this quarrell, the mother ran in, and tooke part with her daughter, and they did so helpe and ayd one another, with their nailes and their teeth, and by their loud outcryes and shreekes, that although the house were a lone-house, farre from neighbors, and little frequented, yet notwithstanding many people upon this great noyse and tumult, came running thither, and amongst the common route, one Gentleman, who pressing in, and seeing the Conde all bloody, who fought like a fierce Lyon, set upon by two rather inraged Beares, then women, what with his words, and what with his deeds, being assisted by others, he parted the one from the other. The Conde was so overcome with choller, that hee laid about him like a mad man, and had so lost all patience, that doubtlesse hee had done much mischiefe, if he had not beene restrained by the company. He washt his face and his hands, and having wiped them with his handkercher, he departed thence in company of that Gentleman, threatning those women, that he would be revenged on them: who, no lesse offended then the furious Conde, made no long tarrying, but hasted with all the speed they could to the Generall. But the Conde had got the start of them, and was there before them, having fully acquainted his Excellency with all that had passed, shewing the scratches and the bitings which he had received from them: who had no sooner told his tale, but in come the women, unsheathing their malicious and sharp-edged tongues, grievously complaining of the

Conde, who was there present, declaring, how first with fayre and kinde words, and afterwards by violent and forcible deeds, hee would have taken their money from them, threatning besides to kill them.

Then said the Generall unto them; He hath not taken them from you, hath he? No (and it like you Excellency) said they. How came it then to passe (quoth he) that he tooke them not from you? They answered, Sir, we did so well bestir our selves, with our hands, our nailes, our teeth, and the shreekes that we made, to call in company, that he mist of his purpose and could not doe it.

Very good (said the Generall) and you Ricciolina, if your mother had not come in to help you, could you (thinke you) have made a shift so to withstand the Condes courage, that he should not have taken the purse from forth your bosome? Yes indeed Sir, said she: for I feare him not, nor any thing he can doe, I care not a straw for him, for I thinke my selfe every way as strong as he; yet is it not meet, that men should come in this violent manner into poore womens houses, to take that from them which is none of theirs. Then (said the Generall) you did both of you, helpe and defend one another, as well as you could. Yes Sir, said they. It is very well (replyed the Generall) I like well of it, and I must needs say, you have borne your selves well in the businesse. But where is the purse? I have it here in my bosome, said Ricciolina. Let me see it, said the Generall. The young wench presently pluckes it out of her bosome. Then said his Excellency unto her; Poure them out (daughter) there upon the board, and tell them anew, to see if you have all, and that the Conde hath not taken any of them from you. She did so, and found the number just. Whereupon, she told his Excellency they were all there, and not so much as one crowne missing. Then the Generall (who was a very wise and discreet man) perceiving the Condes goodnesse, and these other womens wickednesse, spake and said: Signor Conde, Take you your money againe, you have fought hardly for it; it is yours, put it up.

Then, turning to this young queane, looking sternly upon her, he said unto her : Thou lewd and filthy baggage, if thou hadst defended thy selfe as well as thou didst thy money, the Conde could not have forced thee ; but it seemes thou wast very wel content that he should have his pleasure of thee, and having consented to his will, you were not forced (Minion) as both you and your mother have falsely accused the Conde, to whom we justly award his re-having of his 400 Crownes. And as for you, get you gone, and let me heare no more of you, and be glad that you scape so, for if you were well served, and punished according to your deserts, I should send you to Bridewell, and have you well whipt, and ring your mother out of Towne, for an old wicked Bawd. The Generall having pronounced this so just a sentence, the businesse was ended to the great contentment of all that heard it, and to his owne no small commendation.

Touching Rapes

But to come into our old way againe : No force of man can prevaile against the woman that is unwilling. But say such a thing might once in a thousand yeares chance to happen ; me thinkes it is no reason, that a businesse of this nature should be compounded withall for money, much lesse injoyne them mariage, (unlesse he had formerly given her his word and faithfull promise before witnesses) but that in this case, the fittest meanes, were personall punishment, either more, or lesse, according to the qualitie of the delict, and that the cause might be handled before the Kings Atturney Generall, that there might be no hope of pardon left, to such boysterous offendors. Assuring my selfe, that by this meanes, men would have more feare ; and women more shame : and would not, so often, as now they doe, commit such like sinnes, and treacheries, as these. For, this refuge being taken from them, and having no hope of remedie, or helpe left unto them, they would leave this lewd course of life, and not be so hastie, to undoe both them-selves, and others. If a wench goe to it with a good will, why should shee urge, it was against her will ? Or if perhaps shee have not where-withall to live, why should

shee picke a living out of such disgracefull, and dangerous deceits? There are a thousand other, and farre more honest wayes, for a woman to live by, then these.

But here pitie (me thinks) comes in, and pleads thus; Alack, poore women, they are weake and simple, and suffer them-selves to be overcome through their too much facilitie and aptnesse of beleefe, and mens too much falshood in their promises; and therefore they ought to be much favoured and pityed by us. I confesse this plea to be true. But if they were either taught, or knew before hand them-selves, that this their facilitie is a fault in them, and that they ought not to be so easily wonne, they would learne the better to keepe their cabinet close, and not to depart with so pretious a jewell, but upon very good tearmes. And this foolish confidence of theirs, hath undone many a woman, and is like to undoe more, unlesse they looke a little better to them-selves. This destroying confidence of theirs, is like unto faith, without good workes, which hath sent thousands packing to Hell. Let no woman therefore (if shee be wise) depend upon mens promises, be they never so faire: for they promise with passion, performe with delayes, and seldome or never satisfie expectation. That woman therefore, I say, that shall trust any mans faith or promise, and shall upon such false assurance, surrender up her Copie-hold into his hands, let her blame no bodie but her-selfe, if shee be afterwards cozened, and deluded by him.

Women, weake creatures

Their facile nature, and mens false promises, have wrought them much woe

There is another kinde of injustice in the world, somewhat neere in this nature, which would require some reformation. You shall (which I have seene oftentimes) have two fellow-servants lodge together in one house, who being agreed upon the businesse, and both very willing to enjoy each other, shee (like a silke-worme) continues her three sleeps [1] with him, till at last their Master comes unawares upon them,

[1] Your Silke-wormes make three sleepes: Awaking after their first, to feed; then falling again to sleepe, till they begin to worke their balls. Never leaving off, till they shut up them-selves in those balls, and consume them-selves, ungorging all that sliminesse, whereof they forme the ball. Covarruvias, pag. 327.

and takes them in the manner: Who, thereupon, layes hold on this his unfortunate servant, who neither tasted the creame, nor the cheese of this milke, but only that sowre whey, which is cast out to the dogs and the swine: He puts him in prison, where he keeps this poore soule so long, till at last growing desperate, he is driven to marry her; and the more to increase his miserie, they condemne him in a pecuniarie punishment, which he, and all his whole linage, if they were sold to their shirts, are not able to pay. When he sees him-selfe thus undone, being first forced to marry whether hee will or no; and then to have all that little that he hath, to be taken violently from him, and torne as it were out of the very throat of him, he goes one way, and shee another: He runnes about the Country, and turnes rogue; and shee stayes at home, and turnes whore. I pray see, what a proper mariage this is, what a wise and worthy sentence, and the great good that comes of it?

O, if there were some provision made for the reforming of this abuse, I doubt not but it would doe very much good, and prove profitable for the Common-wealth. I paid the punishment of that sinne, wherein I had not offended; and the price of that meat, whereof I had not tasted: I had provided me a house, put all things in order, and withdrew my selfe thither, with all that I had; for I was much afraid, lest I might be served with the same sawce by another Hostesse, as I was by this. And because I was likewise jealous, that the Collar and Girdle, which my Unckle had sent me, being peeces of that great value, as they were, might, by the fame that went of them, come to be discovered, I was the willinger to retyre my selfe to an house of mine owne, where I might with secrecy all alone by my selfe deface the same, and so alter the fashion, that they might not be knowne. I did so; taking out the pretious stones, and the pearles that were in them, with the point of my knife, laying every thing apart by it selfe. I did put all the gold into a great Crisoll, but not all at once, for it would not hold it; six or seven such pots, being scarce able to containe it, which in the end I made a shift to melt; and

Guzman provides him a house of his owne

Guzman alters the fashion of his Jewels

preparing it with a little sublimate (for I had some superficiall knowledge in that kinde of Art) having all my tooles, and moulds in a readinesse, befitting such a businesse, I did (when I found my selfe best at leysure) cast the whole masse into severall ingots, or little barres of gold. And I thought I did very wisely therein, lest by saving their workmanship, my selfe might have made worke for the hangman ; and by keeping them in fashion, beene my selfe in no fashion : and therefore thought it better to spoyle that, then that should spoyle me. With these stones, I began to turne Jeweller, first informing my selfe very well of their true worth and value, causing some of them to be set in Crucifixes, some in rings, some in pendents for the eares, and other some in Jewels, as they would sort and fit best, differencing the setting and inchasing of them, as I saw cause : so that of the same gold and stones, I made divers and sundry peeces : whereof I sold some for ready money, others I lent out at weddings with good gaines, and others I rifled away at dice ; insomuch, that I lost little of that which I might otherwise have gained, had I preserved their fashion, and with a great deale lesse feare of danger to mine owne person. My stocke began to increase a-pace, I knew how to sell at deare rates upon trust, and how otherwise to afford a reasonable good penny-worth : I could tell how to turne and winde my money to the best profit ; and I wanted no credit, because I was flush of money.

There was close adjoyning to my house, certaine ground, that was to be sold for the building of houses upon it. I thought good to buy a plot thereof for to build upon, that I might have a house of mine owne to put my head in, making choyse rather of a little corner of mine owne purchasing, then to goe every moneth chopping and changing of our lodging, lugging our bedding on our backs, and being at a continuall charge in removing of our houshold stuffe. Well, I agreed with the owner of the Land, I paid him his full price in good Royals, holding the same for ever, the Lord reserving only for himselfe a yearely rent of two Royals. I built a house upon it, wherein I spent before I was aware

THE THIRD BOOKE

Guzman turnes Merchant

(and now there was no turning backe) above three thousand Ducats. It was a neat pile, handsomly contriv'd, and of good receipt, and stood finely for pleasure and entertainment. There did I live, with that poore trading that I had, like a *Fucar*; and there should I have ended my dayes like a Prince, if my hard fortune, and greedy ill lucke had not crost me, by the unhappy encounter of a crafty knave, with a covetous wretch. For my house being so well furnisht, my person so well respected, and my reputation standing on such good termes, as it did, there was not a foole wanting, who had a moneths minde to make me his sonne in law: Who had a conceit, that I was all good meat, and that I had not (like the grape) some stonie kernels in me, that were to be taken out, and throwne away, as good for nothing.

This also is another great folly (and I feare me too much in use) that men should be so simple, as to marry their daughters, to the sonnes of unknowne parents. Take heed, take heed, I say, how thou bestow'st thy childe: Thinke upon that old, but sound counsell of our fore-fathers;

Proverbe

Al hijo de tu vezino, metelo en tu casa: Match thy daughter with thy neighbours sonne: Thou knowest his breeding,

The care a father ought to have in the bestowing of his daughter

his disposition, his behaviour; what his honestie is, what his wisdome, what his means: but never admit thou a newcommer, or receive him for thy sonne in Law, who is a meere stranger unto thee: For such a one, though thou see him to day in his owne house, may to morrow be led thence to the gallowes if he chance to be knowne, and found out what he is.

Proverbe

This silly foole was a kinde of trucker of commodities as well as my selfe; and birds (you know) of a feather, will still flocke together.[1] He clung so close to me, that he glew'd me unto him: He marryed me to his daughter, having no other childe in the world: He was rich, shee was faire, and of a good and gracefull behaviour. He promised me with her, three thousand Ducats, and I was well contented with it. He, who was a subtle fellow, and

[1] *Acude cada un à su natural.*

knew the dapps of the world, and could winde a penny to the best advantage, had no ambition to seek any higher, then to finde out a man of my making, that knew how to employ my money to profit. And in this he had reason: For better is a poore sonne in Law, that is a good husband, and knowes when to save, and when to spend a penny, then one that is rich, and a great waster. And there is no wise father (I assure my selfe) but would rather have a man without money to his sonne in Law, then money without a man. This man had a wonderfull great affection unto me, we were agreed on the point, the conditions were drawne, the writings sealed, and the mariage solemnized. CHAPTER II

Now I am a marryed man, now am I entred into an honest and honourable calling, I have a mistresse now in my house, well contented with her choice, much made of, and well served. Some dayes passed over, (which were not many) when as my father in law, carrying us home with him one Sunday to dinner, after that the cloath was taken away, we three being all alone, he said thus unto me; Sonne, being now growne old, and having in my life time past through many troubles, and for that I see thou art yet but a yong man, and stand'st now but at the foot as it were of the hill, that thou mayst get up to the top, with the greater ease, and that thou maist not tumble downe backward when thou art halfe wayes up, I will deliver thee my opinion, as one who is so much interessed as I am in thy good; otherwise I should save that labour, and not give thee any part of that which I now pretend to doe. Guzman marries a wife

First then I would have thee to consider, that if thou shalt diminish one farthing of thys tocke, which thou windest and turnest in the world, it will quickly be consumed, be it never so great. You must likewise have a care to uphold and maintaine your credit; And if you meane to bee a Merchant, you must carry your selfe like a Merchant; laying aside all that which is not integrity and plaine dealing, for there is no negociating now adayes, but with it and with money; changing, and re-changing as the market goes; Guzmans father in law his advice

making, according as you see the times are, either more or lesse gaine. I shall stand still by you, and be ever ready to give you my helping hand, and hold you up by the chinne, that you may not sinke, if it be in my power to beare you up. But if at any time (which God forbid) the Dice should turne, and that lucky chance which we looke for, should not come, take physicke in time, purge your selfe while you are in health, of your bad humors, and by a provident forecast, prevent all future sicknesse. This said, he caused two bils of debt to bee brought in, and two counter-bils of credit, and going on in his discourse, hee said thus unto me ; One of these writings shall be to this effect, that you acknowledge your selfe to be indebted unto mee in the summe of foure thousand Ducats, which I have lent unto you ; against which (to save you harmelesse) I will make a Counter-bill, wherein I will confesse a full satisfaction and true payment of the said debt, in such ample manner as you your selfe shall be pleased to devise it. Both which wee will safely keepe to helpe our selves at a pinch, if need should require ; though it were much better, that no such occasion should offer it selfe, nor come (as I hope it never shall) within our doores. The other writing shall be, that I will procure my brother to sell unto you an annuall rent that hee hath, of five hundred Ducats, *de juro*,[1] and it shall be done in this manner, There will not one cash-keeper or other, be wanting unto us, who (out of the acquaintance and friendship that is betweene us) will be willing to make show of so much money, to the end that the publike Notary, may avow and testifie the payment thereof ; or else we will take it there, and they shall lend it us in banke, paying for the use thereof fifty Royals ; and when this bill of sale shall be made over unto you in as absolute manner as Law can devise it, you shall returne the same backe againe unto him, giving him full power to dispose thereof, and by a

[1] *Juro*, is a royall rent raised upon Cities, Townes, and other places of the kingdome, so called *à jure*, which the Kings have to sustaine themselves withall, and to pay the Ministers of his Courts of Justice. And from thence it had the name of *juro*. This kind of Tribute is due unto the Kings of Spaine, for their ayde and maintenance. Covarruvias, verb. *juro*.

writing under your owne hand, you shall acknowledge that this was but a feigned thing, put over unto you onely in trust, and that really and truly, those five hundred Ducats, are, and were alwayes his, and that you can by no meanes pretend any lawfull claime unto them. I liked very well of it; supposing, it might doe me much good, but could doe me no harme. CHAPTER II

I did as he directed me, who had beene an old beaten Souldier in these kinde of businesses, had taken all the degrees of a cunning dealer, and knew the true tracke, wherein he was to trade, by which trickes and devices, he had wrought him-selfe into a fortune, and come to be so riche as now he was.

This foundation, being thus laid, I continued my trading a pretty whiles, being alwayes in all things, very circumspect and punctuall: And because I was not ignorant, that the credit of those that are great dealers in the world, doth depend much upon ostentation, faire showes, and flourishes, I did make the world beleeve, that my house, my wife, and my selfe, were in a fulnesse of plenty, and wanted nothing that was for ornament or necessary use. And in particular, my word, in all my dealings, was like a clocke, it strucke alwayes true, and never went false. My wife had a hole bored through her hand;[1] all ranne out to waste, that was powred into it; an augre had likewise pierced her temples, whereby her hogges-head had taken the vent of vanity. And I (kind foole) seeing the world thriv'd with me, and that my gettings were great, began to give way to her idle desires, and to humour these her womanish appetites, giving her greater liberty, then in discretion I should have done; and she for her part took so much on the other side, stretching every inch to an ell, that she spent excessively, and beyond all manner of measure in the accompanying and entertaining of her friends, in her banquets, feasts, and other inter-mealary intertainments, besides the great pompe of her apparell,

[1] *Muger de mano horadada.* This phrase is still taken in the worser part. Covarruvias, pag. 478.

jewels, dressings, and a thousand other the like gallantries, with as many bobs, and other dingle-dangles, hanging at every one of these, as the Polypus hath tales ;[1] All these things concurring with that dearth and scarcity which befell us in these our first yeares, and that small correspondence which we had in trading, it being a dead world, I began at length to know mine owne weaknesse, and was taken on the sodaine with such a swimming and giddinesse of the head, that I was scarce able to stand on my legges, and lackt little of falling like a lumpish piece of Lead, flat to the ground : So true is that saying ;

Proverbe

Proverbe

No man knowes, (save who by proofe doth taste)
What a good house, and a bad wife waste.[2]

If now in these dayes, there were made a Law ; that whereas in Castile they allow the halfe of that which a man hath to his wife, in way of dowry ; that the husband should not onely not give her that, but should rather take some of their wives dowry from them ; they would then labour to get something, at least, seeke to save what the husband gets ; Whereas now they take no farther care, then how they may waste and consume what the husband painfully brings in.

Guzman begins to sinke

When I was a single man, I had wealth and trading enough to have made my selfe a rich man in a short time ; but now, by having a wife I was growne poore, and ready to goe downe the winde. And because my Father in Law was onely acquainted with my booke of Accounts, and knew as well as my selfe, what was owing to me, and what I did owe unto others, and was true and trusty therein unto me. I could not want credit ; and the rather, for that all men did verily beleeve, that those 500 Ducats of yearly revenue were mine owne. With this prop I bore up the burthen of my debts, till my back was ready to break, and when I could endure the waight of them no longer, I sodainly sunk like unto a building that is raised on a false foundation.

[1] *Traer mas rabos que un polpo.* Covarruvias, pag. 600.

[2] *Nadie sabe, si no es el que lo lasta, lo que semejante casa gasta.*

DE ALFARACHE

Now the time of my paiments drew neare ; and though time of it selfe doth naturally still run along, yet to those that owe money, it flies away with a swift wing, and seemeth shorter, then otherwise perhaps it would. I saw my present ruine before mine eyes, and was so perplexed with the very thought thereof, that I could not take any rest, nor knew in the world what to doe. In this perplexity of mind, I got me to my father in lawes house, that I might break my griefs unto him, and communicate my cares with him ; He comforted me the best that he could, and wisht me not to be dismaid, for that we had a salve for this sore in our owne hands, and that the remedy for this malady, was here at home within our owne doores. He takes his cloake, throwes it on his shoulders, and away hee and I go together to one that was Escrivano de Provincia, the publike Notary of that Province, an especiall friend of his, and carrying him to Santa Cruz, which is a certaine Church adjoyning to the Market-place, and stands right over against the prison, and those Offices belonging thereunto, there we made in secret unto him a private relation, how the case stood with us. Then said my father in Law unto him ; Señor N : This businesse shall be many Ducats in your way ; you know very well how I dealt with you in my last troublesome sute, and how fairely things were carryed betweene us on both sides ; and I must also truly confesse unto you, that by your good meanes, all the decrees and sentences that were published in that cause, came forth in my favour, turning greatly (for the which I must ever thanke you) to my profit and credit, which makes me hope (presuming upon your wonted love) for all good from your hands. My sonne in Law, owes by a former writing to this of mine a 1000 Ducats, and this is already presented, and diligences used therein in another Office ; yet we are both of us very willing, that all this businesse should be brought before your Worship, and that you should have the ordering of it ; in consideration whereof, we hope you will deale well with us, and use us friendly, being so much your servants, as we are ; for I shall not only my selfe requite this your kindnes

CHAPTER II

to your own good content and liking; but my son, that is here with me, shall, when our businesse is dispatcht, bestow 200 Crownes on you to buy you gloves; and I will passe my word unto you for him, and shall see you truly paid. The Escrivano told us; All shall be done to your mind, and as well as you your selves would have it. Let this bil, said he, of 4000 Ducats be first presented, and we shall accord the debt for ten in the hundred, by means of a friend, to whom we will give an account of this pretension, to the end that he may doe it upon any reasonable consideration, that we shall give him, and for the rest lay the care upon me, and leave it to my charge. My father in Law presented his owne bond: In conclusion, I was carryed to prison, al my goods were seazed on, my wife shee brings forth the Indenture for her Dowry, taking so much cloath to them-selves, that there was a greate deal of stuffe wanting to make up my garment. For both of them, having possest them-selves of my house, my bills, and my moveables, there was nothing now left for mee to take hold on with my teeth. And for my Jewels, and my moneys, they were sold, and spent, and that little that was remayning, was too farre out of my reach to come at it.

Guzman committed to prison

When my Creditors saw me clapt up, they came all upon me, entring their Actions against me, presenting their bils and their bonds before divers and sundry Notaries: But when this bond of ours was brought forth, all were to yeeld to that, as one that commanded all the rest, and had already past the Office, as being the most ancient debt, and therefore ought to be serv'd first. For the Alcaldes, seeing it was *res justificata*, a good and authenticall bond, and proved so to be, gave order that it should be first satisfied. When they saw what an ill hand they had of it, and that they could not come to finger my goods, they presently went about to imbarque those my 500 Ducats of that annuall rent, before specified. But the true owner then appears, and defends his owne right, my wifes Unckle claymming those, as belonging properly unto him. Then they fell to Law about it, whose bills, and answers, together with

other writings, processive, justificative, obligative, testamentive, partitive, acquisitive, renunciative, and infinite other the like, being as the body of a great Armie, when they were all joyn'd together, came to no lesse then two thousand and five hundred sheets of paper. Every one, that came to demand them, for to carry them to his Advocate, when he saw, that he must, before he could have them, pay so much money to the Notarie, he did tremble at it. And albeit there were some, that were at the charge; yet there were other some, who seeing that they were like to have a cold sute of it, and that they should but throw away their money in vaine, would not be at the cost to take them out, but did rather desire to come to some indifferent termes of agreement, and to sit downe with losse, then to be at any more charge, and in a cholericke humour, to cast the cord after the cauldron.[1] They well perceived, that albeit they had taken out a Copie of the Processe, they were as far to seeke of their money, as before; And therefore seeing there was nothing to be got by the bargaine, their losse remedilesse, and their debt desperate, they did helpe to negociate for me, and to come to composition with me. I demanded tenne yeares tearme; and some of them were well contented with it. Then began my Father in law to stirre in the businesse, and because his was the greater debt, he wrought so with them, that the lesser debts followed the example of the greater, by which meanes I came out of prison, and was set at libertie, the Escrivano having well lickt his fingers on both sides: whosoever lost, I am sure he got well by the bargaine. After all these stormes, my ship, and goods sunke, I made a shift at last to get a land, I came swimming to the shore in a paire of

CHAPTER II

Proverbe

Guzman released

[1] *Echar la soga, tras el caldero.* *Caldero*, is commonly taken for a bucket, which serves to take water out of a Well. Now, *echar la soga, tras el caldero*, To fling the rope after the bucket, is, when we have lost one thing, to throw the other after it. This proverbe is taken from one, who going to draw water out of a Well, the bucket slipping from the rope, and falling into the Well, in a rage throwes the rope after it; wherewith, if he would but have had the patience, he might have got up his bucket againe. Covarruvias, verb. *Caldero.*

linnen linings, being stript of all the rest, yet were these linings well linde with silver. I had a great deale of wealth of divers poore men remayning still in my hands, who had trusted me with all that they had, being deceived by that credit which I had abroad in the world. I did in this, as I us'd to doe in all the rest of my actions ; I was no changeling ; onely I proceeded herein with a little more credit, and a better kinde of name, which my other had no colour for. For albeit this was no better then theft (to speake the truth of it) and plaine robberie ; yet I continued still with the name of Merchant, and not of Thiefe. By this, I got experience of that, which I knew not before. This roguish tricke, till now, did I never understand what it was, nor did so much as once enter into the reckning of it. This seemed unto me *cautela damnosissima*, a very hurtfull warinesse, a caution too too cautelous, which ought narrowly to be look't into, and some good remedy in this case to be provided. For by these their counter-writings, there is no debt certaine, no assurance good, nor any true security to be had ; being the most prejudiciall thing that can be to a Common-wealth. For, from thence are occasioned most of your Law-sutes ; by meanes whereof, many of poore, come to be rich ; and many of rich, to be poore ; being thereby utterly undone, and driven to beg their bread from doore to doore. And it being the intention and purpose of a good Judge, to averre the truth betweene litigant and litigant, and such as wage law one against another, and duly to administer Justice to every man aright ; yet is it not possible for him in this case so to doe, because things are so intricate and so intangled one within another, that they which are most innocent, are oftentimes most deceived, and by consequence most wronged. And the reason of it is, because when a man doth plot a deceit or cozenage in this kind, he goes warily to worke, and beats his braines how he may secure himselfe, possessing him-selfe before-hand of the ports and passages that lead unto the truth, to the end, that the way thereunto may be barricado'd and blocked up, that no body

Against fraudulent conveyances

may come unto it. So that this light being taken away, the Judge remayneth blinde, and that mans false play, which is not yet found out by Justice, triumphs over truth, and goes away with the victorie. I know there are some, that will not sticke to say, that your counter-writings, for commerce and negotiation, are very necessarie ; but I must be so bold with these men, as to tell them plainely, that they are not. For he that is willing to help another man with his credit, let him stand (a Gods name) as a surety for him, and not as a cloaker of his knaverie. That which I learned in Barçelona, the first time that I was there, and now within these two dayes, since my returne from Italy, is ; That to be a Merchant, is a dignitie, and an honourable calling ; and no man can have that title, unlesse he be first presented before the Prior, and the Consuls ; where he puts in securitie to deale faithfully and truly in the Trading, that he shall undertake. And yet in Castile, where there is such a *Machina* of merchandizing, such a great Trade driven, where there is Contractation for whatsoever commodities, the huge storehouse of the Universe doth in a manner afford, they take this noble profession upon them, when as they are neither men of abilitie, nor able to put in good securitie for that which they deale for ; but are only rich in shifts and tricks, and more cunning in deceiving those, who give them credit, then skilled in an honest course of Trading. Every one now, will take upon him to turne Merchant ; whereas in other parts of the world, he that enters thereinto, had need of a good stocke to begin withall, and a greater every day then other, if he meane to continue in that course. And if perchance it so fall out, that (through want of a strong braine, or a strong purse, or both) their businesses fall out contrary to their expectation, and succeed otherwise then their false imagination did suggest unto them, making use of these their counter-writings, they remaine in better and richer estate, then they did before. I need not to instance in particulars, because it is exemplified unto us by daily experience. With their breaking, they pull a great many others after them,

The order in Barçelona, that is taken with your Merchants

especially all those, that have trusted them with their goods ; who consume that little that is left them in suing for their owne. And if peradventure they be Officers, or Husband-men, the Lord with their losse, loseth likewise his part ; wanting those by this meanes, which should follow his profit, and receive his rents, and his custome ; and the Common-wealth thereby rob'd of the travell and paines of these laborious and industrious day-labourers, and honest husband-men ; who being busied in sutes of Law, cannot apply themselves to follow the plough, and to manure and dresse their land as they were wont to do. Lesse harme it were a great deale, that a few, and those baggage-people, should not be rich, then that a great many good and honest men, should be overthrowne, and undone by them. If it were not for these Counter-writings, and fraudulent deeds, men might more securely trust one another, and there would be much better dealing in the world : For then a man might have certaine knowledge of his estate and meanes, whom he trusts, without having other owners step forth, and challenge all that he hath to be theirs. And because it may be, that at some time or other, there will be order taken for the remedying of this so great a mischiefe, I will onely briefly tell the effects (that I may be as good as my word) of this harmefull cozenage, if they doe not the sooner leave off these their damnable fraudulent tricks and devises. For questionlesse, many men would deale more honestly and plainely, then now they doe, if these fobs and giggs, were not put into their heads by others. And hence it is, that many things lose those good effects, which otherwise they would take, for that these strange owners are not made knowne in time, who do not onely invent, but execute what they have devised, cheating the Creditor of that just debt which is due unto him. I cannot choose but speake my minde ; and if there be no care taken for the reforming of this grosse abuse, I cannot doe withall. It shall suffice me, that I have herein satisfied that obligation and dutie, which in this case is required at my hands. Let others likewise looke to their obligations ; and seeing,

they neither want age, nor discretion to looke into these things, let them not also be wanting in their good will, to redresse that, which is so necessarie for the service of God, and of their King, it concerning so much as it doth the generall good of the Common-wealth.

When a poore Merchant is minded to enter into great trading, he intreats (for the increase of his credit) some kinsman, or friend of his, that he will make over some land of good value, or other his goods in trust, for the which hee makes him a Counter-writing, wherein he acknowledgeth, that notwithstanding these parcels of lands or goods seeme to the world to be his, yet really and truly it is not so, and that he shall be ready at all times to resigne them up into their hands, to whom of right they belong, whensoever they shall demand the same of him. And so with the credit of this seeming stocke of his owne, he gets farther credit of others, and takes up upon trust, what he will himselfe. See now, what a kinde of people we are, and what true dealing there is amongst us! How like unto those Moores and Negro's of Ghinie, an ignorant and barbarous kinde of people, who with counterfeit beads, false eare-rings, bells, and other the like bables, which children weare about their necks, doe with the bare sound, gay show, and glorious glittering of these glassie commodities, cozen and deceive us. If their trading thrive well with them, it is well; for then the Creditor shall receive what is due unto him: If ill, they have a trap, wherein to catch their Creditors, and all goes ill with them. Then he, that made over his goods unto him in trust, comes by a Counter-writing to recover them, and all the rest are defrauded of their due.

When a man will not pay what he owes; before the day of payment comes, that this debt is due, the debtor selleth, or absoluely passeth away all his whole estate in trust by some fraudulent deed, or counter-writing in that kinde. And it afterwards so falleth out, that before the day of payment come, the debtor, who made this cautelous provision, dyes; whereby the true Creditor cannot come to

recover his owne. For the party, whom the debtor trusted with his goods, doth cover and conceale this Counter-writing; so that the Feoffe in trust carryes away all his goods, and the devill the deceased downe to the pit of hell.

When a man hath a purpose to deceive with his person, to get him a wife with a good dowry, the better to cozen both him-selfe and others, he runs the like course. He gets him-selfe to be trusted with a great deale of wealth; and anon after he is marryed, his debts begin to grow upon him, and living at a greater charge then before, he is not able to pay what he owes. So the owner of these goods recovers his owne, and the new marryed couple fall into want. This his cozening of her, comming at last to be knowne, their love begins to coole each towards other, and oftentimes they goe together by the eares, for that the wife will not consent that he shall sell away her dowry, or any way be charged with her husbands debts.

All which inconveniences, would finde a speedy and easie remedie, if there were an expresse command given, that there should be no such kinde of fraudulent deeds, and Counter-writings at all; and if there were any, that they should be of no force or validitie in Law, and that any Act in that kinde should not stand good. And for the present, any such deed or deeds, to be published and made knowne within such a certaine time, upon paine of taking the others debts upon him. If this course were taken, men might then certainly know, what a mans estate were, and whether he were of that sufficiencie to be trusted, and to take up upon credit. And I dare be bold to say, that thereby one halfe of your Law-sutes would be excused; for that most of those, which are here in Castile, are of this nature, or at least, have their ground and beginning from thence.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER III

Guzman de Alfarache prosecutes the successe of his mariage, till such time as his wife dyed. And how her Dowry returned backe to his father in Law. He discourseth of bad wives, and the hurt which they doe their husbands

EADER; Hast thou by this time considered with thy selfe, into what a Labyrinth I was willing to put my selfe? What good can it doe me? or why doe I spend and consume my time in vaine, basting stones with butter, and annoynting flints with oyle, to see if I can supple them, and make them become soft? Doest thou thinke I shall make the Blackmoore white, by my often washing of him? Or doest thou conceive, that any good will come of that which I have said? Will it bring forth any profitable fruit? I rather beleeve that I spend my breath in vaine, beat my braines to no purpose, and lose both my cost and my labour, without receiving either profit, or honour thereby. For I know I shall be tit in the teeth, with that old answer; Why should he give counsell to another, that cannot follow it himselfe? It would have suted better with me, to have told them two or three merry tales, wherewith Mistresse such a one, and my Lady what you call (who are now tyred quite out, and begin to nod, being brought a-sleepe with these fooleries) might have entertained them-selves, and past away the time. Me thinks I heare him say, who is now reading, what I have written, that he will cast aside my booke, and rather get him-selfe into some corner, and there take a nap, then endure the trouble of hearing me talke. I confesse, he hath a thousand reasons on his side, to doe as he does; nor

can I blame him; for, being truly (as they are) truthes, which I treat; they are not so fit for *entretinimiento*, as *sentimiento*, entertainment, as the understanding; being to be respected more, for the sense, then the conceit: These are not things fit for laughter, and to make merry when friends meet; but are to be weighed with a great deale of studie, and consideration; and to be ruminated, and chewed over, againe and againe But because the purge, that I shall give thee to cleanse thee, may not seeme loathsome unto thee, or that thou mayst refuse to take it, *propter malum olorem et saporem*, for its ill both smell, and taste, let us guild over these our pills with gold, or cover them with the papp of an Apple, conserves of Roses, or some thing else, that may please both the eye, and the palate. And so I returne againe to the purpose, from whence I have made this digression.

Now did I begin to lift up my head againe, and to enter a-fresh into the world; I had a new stocke a going, the best I could make, though much lesse then I could have wisht it, and meaner then stood conveniently with my present both necessitie, and occasions. For to beare a good burthen, a man had need of a good backe;[1] and they who build Towers on the sand, see them quickly fall to the ground. Those that have a minde to marry, must have wherewithall to make the pot seethe. The good man must be able to give his wife a dinner; and shee bring wherewithall to bestow on him a supper. There is more goes to mariage, then two payre of leggs, in one payre of sheets. Four naked walls, six carpets, two table-cloathes, and halfe a dozen napkins, are not a Dowry for a wife, when at the first entrance into the house, I must spend upon her in Jewels, and other idle dressings, that out of which I should picke my living. My principall was gone, and I was now in want. For (as it is in the proverbe) *Quien compra lo que no ha menester, vende lo que ha menester*: He that buyes that he needeth not, must sell that he hath need of. What profit can it be for a poore Tradesman, to tricke up his wife in

Proverbe

Advertisements for those that will marry

Proverbe

[1] *Para grande carga, grandes fuerças.*

some six change of gownes, wherein he consumeth his maine stocke ? Can he afterwards continue his Trade with this trash ? CHAPTER III

My Gentle-woman, my wife, was ill acquainted, and lesse exercised in miseries. She had lived well at home with her father, she knew not there what want meant, but had the world at will, there was not that dainty shee desired, which shee had not ; but now in my house, she had nothing lesse, though as long as my wealth lasted, shee lacked not any thing, that shee had a minde unto. But being not able any longer to hold out, shee was forced to worke and sweat for her living, and being not used heretofore to take paines, it seemed the harder unto her to endure it. With that little, which was now remayning unto me, I began to buy at deare rates upon credit, and to sell good cheape for ready money, *sicut erat in principio.* I stood ingaged, and my father in Law bought the wares. I could have wisht the ballance had weigh'd the contrary way. And these commodities that we dealt for, never went out of the house. Our ordinary wares, were gold thread, and sometimes wrought plate, and jewels of gold, handsomly set forth, curiously inchased, and for the fashion exceeding neat and delicate : Some other things we had of little or no value, old moth-eaten ware, which lay upon our hands, and could not be rid away, which were bought at a farre lesser price. And thus out of those small gaines, that we made, we rubb'd out, and made a shift to live as well as we could. But all was little enough to bring the world about, because our stock was so litle : and so by litle and litle, we went eating of it out, it consuming by degrees. And for all we were brought to this low ebbe, my wifes dowry was never so much as once touch't or fingerd by me, that stood still on foot, being laid out upon possessions, which my wife would never consent should be medled with : I could as well take the Moone in my teeth, as to come to lay hold on them ; nay I could not so much as have a sight of them. These our commodities, we did deliver forth upon credit for foure moneths, with condition to have a fifth part of the gaines. And that

Escrivano (whom we had ready upon all occasions, to serve our turnes) did alwayes make testification of the consigning over of these commodities, which goods, a Broaker presently tooke into his hands, who made up the third person in these our dealings, and was all one as it were with my selfe and the Escrivano. And having them in this manner made over unto him, within some two houres after he would bring the money to its owner, to such losse, as he him-selfe should say they were sold (as was ordred betweene us) though he had not sold one penny-worth of them, but had them still in safe custodie, and were never so much as once removed out of the house. We made up the money amongst us: He received an Acquittance for his discharge, and there was an end of this businesse.

Gentlemen in Spaine cannot be arrested for debt

It was a common tricke amongst us, to make use of a most cunning and subtill stratageme, to the end that none might escape our fingers, by alledging his Gentilitie, or any other exception that might bestead him, or free him from arrest. When wee were to furnish any man, wee would first informe our selves, whether he had the meanes to pay us; and knowing him to be a sufficient man, and that he tooke up such or such commodities, only to supply his present occasions, we did willingly give him credit: howbeit, it would somtimes so fall out, that we should come short of this our reckning, and those men faile us, whom we thought to be very good men, and of good wealth. But when wee had no perfect knowledge of the party, and that it did not sort to our purpose, we would demand a Surety, together with the morgage of some house, or peece of land, for default of payment. And howbeit we knew well enough, that this house, or land, thus morgaged was none of his, and that whatsoever he had was extended already for the payment of his debts, and that he had not so much as a tyle or bricke that was in it, which was not indebted in a crowne, yet we did not stand so much upon that, nor was this the thing that we did much care for, and were willing it should be rather so then otherwise: But that which we did ayme at was this, To draw him to acknowledge by a writing under

his owne hand, that this house or land, was his owne fee-simple, free from all kind of incumbrances, morgages, sessings, rents, feoffments of trust, or otherwise obliged for any other debt whatsoever. And with this assurance, when the time of paiment was come, if he brake his day with us, we had an Alguazil still at hand, with whom wee were in league, who made him to give us so much for every tenth part that we delivered unto him, and so wee presently came upon the backe of him, putting our bond in execution.

To resist an arrest in Spaine and to draw his sword against a Sergeant, is a whipping matter, besides a condemning to the Galleys; and if he strike or hurt the Alguazil, it is punished with death

And if at any time they would oppose the arrest, or did offer to make any resistance for to escape the hands of justice, that he might not pay the debt; then came we upon him another way, bringing a criminall action against him, and making a diligent search and enquiry into his estate, we would prove that it was not extended to its true value; that there was some legger-demayne used therein, and that he had dealt falsly and deceitfully to defeat his Creditors, laying to his charge many other his misdemeanors. And thus did we make sure worke for our selves, whilest the poore man slipt downe the hill, without being able to recover himselfe, or to stay the force of his sodaine falling. Using this precaution, we plaid upon sure cards, and without this provision made before-hand, we seldome prevailed in our businesses. Whether this kind of dealing were lawfull or no, I know what I know; but we ranne the same course wee saw others run before us, we did no more then what others did; our consciences were seared, so that we had no great sense or feeling of it. I well wot, that all the while I continued this wicked course of life, I did never truly confesse my sinnes; and if I did come to Confession, I did not doe it as I ought to have done, and performed that duty for no other cause in the world, but to satisfie the Parish, and to avoid Excommunication.

Wilt thou see whether it be so or no? Consider whether I ever promist to make restitution, whensoever it should be in my power to doe it? Or whether I had likewise a purpose to amend my lewd and wicked life, when at that time there were fifteene, twenty, or more bonds a-foot of the

like nature ; and yet did I never goe my selfe, nor use any diligence by others, to acquaint those that were thus bound, that such and such a bond was unlawfull, and that I had grated upon them with a griping and biting Usury ; and that for to cleare my conscience, and that I might worthily receive the blessed Sacrament of the Communion, I would abate them of the over-plus, and make good all that which I had wrongfully and unlawfully taken from them ? And how that I would restore unto them besides, all that which I had, for that it was all stolne, and had nothing that I could justly and truly say was mine owne. And if afterwards, when they came to pay me, I had no relenting in me, nor did not returne them any thing backe againe, what an intention must this be ? Certainly as bad as bad may be. This truly is that which I ought to have done, but I did it not, nor is it in use now-adayes to doe such good things as these. God (if it be his will) give us a due acknowledgement of our sinnes. And I verily perswade my selfe, that if then at that time I had finished this my life, my soule had assuredly gone downe to hell, and beene condemned to fry in that eternall fire.

O, your Usurers, they are a wicked generation of Vipers : they have neyther any conscience, nor any feare of God. O what a brave, and what a sure marke is this to shoot at ! How neere am I now to the drawing of mine arrow up to the head ? And how doe these traiterous villaines, these Caterpillers of a Commonwealth, stand peeping and watching to see how, and where, I meane to hit. O, what a temptation doe I feele, what a strugling doe I finde in my selfe, and what adoe to pull in this hand and arme of mine, from letting fly my whole sheafe of arrowes at them, and so to wound and gall them on all sides, that I leave no part about them untoucht, and no bone in their whole body unbroken. For, in regard that I am (as they say) *Ladron de casa*, a house-thiefe, one of the same stamp, I know them as well as they know them-selves, and am not only acquainted with their actions, but even with their very thoughts, and secrets of their hearts. Will you give me leave to give them a

gentle nip, and that I make them to see their owne perdition, and put them into such a great confusion, that they shall not know in the world what to doe with them-selves. I know that ye will not, and I also know why you will not. CHAPTER III

But if I shall speake the truth, I must plainly tell you, Riches are the cause of all this. But when they are ill gotten, in what misery lives the soule of such a one? Certainly, it is in a very bad case. And hence it commeth to passe, that covetous men too much devoted unto riches, incurre infinite troubles, perils, and hazards. And therefore to free himselfe from this danger, and the better to secure himselfe, Crates the Thebane, that most famous Philosopher, with an undaunted courage, bound up in one pack or fardell together all the gold and other such precious Jewels as he had, and with great fury threw them into the sea, saying: get you gone, O ye riches, into the bottome of the sea, lest you drench me in the deepe. I had rather drowne you then you should drowne me. But this great Philosopher (by his leave) did herein (me thought) very ill. Much better had he done, if he had distributed these his goods amongst the poore: but in doing that which he did, he gave us therby to understand the great trouble that gold bringeth with it; so that to him it seemed a farre lesser inconvenience to remaine poore, then to live in so many griefes and afflictions, as riches occasion in those that possesse them. What other thing is it to enter with consideration into the minde of the rich, then to enter into a fearfull prison, where within we see men imprisoned, laden with irons, bound with chaines, fetter'd, manacled, and girt about the necke with collars of iron, wherewith they are brought before the Judge? And how many then are the afflictions, and the torments, of these miserable and wretched men, thus incarcerated, and compassed in with strong wals, and hard chains? And how much more are they oppressed, and how much heavier are their shackles, who love riches, and those most bound, who most abound in them? And as there is more compassion had of those which are in these miseries, and are thus fast bound, and

This is a digression

Against the greedy desire of riches

Crates throwes his goods into the Sea

painfully laden with bolts, manacles, collars and chaines of iron, about their feet, hands, necks, and their whole body throughout: So much more pitie is there to be taken of the rich, and see how much the richer hee is, and the more wealth hee hath about him, and all those good things which his heart desireth, yet for all this are we not to account him a rich and wealthy man, but rather wretched and unfortunate: For besides the prison, wherein he lives (miserable as he is) he findes himselfe attended and guarded with a barbarous and cruell keeper, which is the love of riches. And if it so happen, that thou fall at any time into their hands, there is no getting out of their clutches: but that they may keepe thee safe when they have thee, and that thou maist not escape from them, they will have three or foure strong doores shut upon thee, and as many great chaines to make all sure, besides locks and keyes, with I know not how many double wards and bits, that all the pick-lockes in the world, that ever have beene, shall, or will be, shall not be able to open these doores, and set thee free from thence. And yet these wretched creatures are so blinded in the pleasure which they take in this their imprisonment, that they never thinke upon it, nor seeke to get out, but are content to continue in it all the dayes of their life.

Bonaventure saith, that he who hath once set his affection on gold, can hardly with-draw his love from it. King David saith, That our soule cleaveth unto the dust, and that our belly trayleth on the ground, and is as it were fastned and glued to the earth: Unfolding thereby the affection which we have to these earthly things. For seldome or never are riches possessed, without a mans setling his affection upon them, it being so easie a thing to have it wedged to the things of this world. And by so much the more, by how much the more strongly the heart of man is knit unto them. The Glosse saith, That with difficultie wee despise them; and with lothnesse leave them. But the safest and surest way is, neyther to love them, nor to keepe them. And therefore that Kingly Prophet said,

DE ALFARACHE

If riches increase, set not thy heart upon them. True it is, CHAPTER III
that they are as hurtfull for the soule, as dangerous for the body. And therefore our Saviour Christ, much pitying and lamenting those who possessing them, did heartily love them ; said : Woe unto you that are rich, for yee have already received your comfort. And S. James likewise with a great deale of griefe and sorrow, doth bewaile and lament these kind of men, saying ; Goe to now yee rich men, weep and howle for the miseries that shall come upon you : your riches are corrupted, and your garments moath-eaten : your gold and silver is cankred, and the rust of them shall be a witnesse against you ; and shall eate your flesh, as it were fire : you have heaped treasure together for the last dayes. Behold, the hyre of the Labourers which have reaped downe your fields, which is of you kept backe by fraud, cryeth : And the cryes of them which have reaped, are entred into the eares of the Lord of Sabaoth. Yee have lived in pleasure on the earth, and beene wanton ; yee have nourished your harts, as in a day of slaughter. Yee have condemned and killed the just, and he doth not resist you. Bemourne therefore the miseries wherein you are, for your riches shall end in anguish and vexation of spirit, and all your comforts shall forsake you : you shall sleepe your sleepe, and when you awake finde your hands empty.

David saith, Rich men turne fooles through their too much wealth : they become ambitious and vaine, they give themselves over to a thousand vices ; they suffer a thousand sharpe journeyes, and as many troublesome toylings, for to get riches ; which when they have got, they have a daily fit of feare and trembling, lest they may chance to lose them. The imagination of their losse causeth extreame sorrow in them : their braines are still working, and their understanding never taketh any rest. For, (as our Saviour said) Where a mans treasure is, there also is his heart. O wretched man, thou dost not any thing in this world, that is so bad for thee, as the love of money. For they, that seeke to make them-selves rich, fall into a thousand

temptations, and into as many snares, which the Devill hath laid to intrap them. For the root of all evill, is covetousnesse. This causeth us to commit sacrileges, thefts, murders, rapines ; it is the author of symony, the causer of usuring contracts, of ungodly gaine, and of a thousand deceits, and frauds, of breakings, both in our deeds, and in our words, of perjuries, and perverting of justice. O, what an unquenchable fire, is the desire of riches ; O how insatiable is this our lust, but much more insatiable our will. Tell me (he that can) who did ever yet see the rich man satisfied ? who, heare him say, That he had now enough ? For, when hee hath got what he desired, he hath no sooner obtained it, but he is as greedy as hee was before ; like unto your hungry Curres, who when you throw them one morsell, stand gaping for another. His end is alwayes on that he desireth, forgetting how full hee is, and the store of wealth that he possesseth. The eye of a lover is never satisfied with looking ; And the covetous minde hath never money enough. But (which is a curse that accompanieth the covetous) he that loveth riches, never reapes the fruits of them. Hell is never satisfied with the swallowing downe of soules ; neither the eyes, nor heart of the covetous, with riches. For these wicked men, have two horse-leaches belonging unto them, which alwayes crye, give me here, and give me there ; let more and more come in still. By so much the more the love of money increaseth, by how much the more our money increaseth. O what a false and unfortunate felicity is that of riches ! because it maketh him truly unhappy, who doth not truly possesse them.

The poore man lives more contented with that little which hee hath ; then the rich man that walloweth in his wealth. O how many have beene deceived with the desire of riches ! Balaam, hearing the ringing and sound of money, which King Balack offered unto him, fell into despaire, and had a miserable end. Achan, being desirous of a rich rayment, and a wedge of gold, was slaine, and stoned to death, together with all his family. King Achab,

out of the desire he had to have Nabothes vineyard, was the occasion of Nabothes death, who by Jezabels order, wife unto Ahab, was stoned to death : For which evill fact, Ahab was deprived of his life, and his Kingdome ; and his wicked wife Jezabel, the inventer of this villany, devoured of dogs. Gehezi, out of a desire to be rich, received so many changes of rayment ; for which hee was cloathed all his life time, with a most loathsome leprosie. Judas, to get thirty pieces of silver, lost his Apostleship, and his body, together with his soule, by becomming his owne executioner. Ananias and Saphyra, out of greedinesse of gaine, were sodainly strucken dead. If thou wilt bee rich, thou shalt not bee without sinne : for such is their miserable and unhappy condition.

Moreover, it induceth men to embrace vice, and to abandon vertue ; it falling out for the most part, that where there is aboundance of riches, there is aboundance of pleasures, and sensuall delights, and of evill company, which are often an occasion of infinite infamies, and wicked actions, with great offence to the Majestie of God. The rich thinke that God hath no power over them ; but they are much deceived ; who with open eyes see them-selves carried headlong into hell. And this misfortune befals them, because the feare of God is not before their eyes ; and for that they love not their neighbour as they ought : But rather on the contrary, love their riches better then them-selves, nay more then their owne soules. O miserable and unhappy men as you are ; looke, and diligently consider that which happened unto Lazarus, that poore beggar, who received more contentment in that his extreame poverty, and in those his ragges and stinking sores, living in the feare of the Lord, then in any other thing in this world ; by meanes whereof, he came to enjoy those rich treasures of heaven, and the continuall and eternall vision of his God. For a man to make him-selfe rich, it is a dangerous thing ; for before ever he is aware, hee drawes upon him an infinitie of all kind of troubles and miseries. It is a wonder to see at how deare a rate they buy hell, who

pretend to be rich ; seeing with how many restlesse travailes, they purchase eternall torments.

Wicked and worldly-minded men, for a litile vaine glory, or rather a smoke that sodainly vanisheth, care not how many tribulations they undergo ; for love of this, they submit them-selves willingly to infinite sufferings, toyles, and sweats, and voluntary stoope their necke to the heavy yoake of so many woes. And why doe they this ? Onely for a little mucke. So that your rich men take a great delight in suffering annoyances, afflictions, tribulations, toylings, turmoylings, travailes, troubles, using diligences, solicitudes, and placing all their care, and their study, in getting wealth, and with it, Hell. By which their carke, paines-taking, and sweats of blood, they gaine unto themselves eternall damnation. Doe ye not perceive (ye wretches) that how much the more care yee take in hoording up of riches, so many the more thieves, and murderers you provide for your selves, that may rob you, and cut your throats ? whence it also commeth to passe, that they who did commit these outrages against you, are likewise for this their wickednesse whipped, sent to the Galleys, if not to the Gallowes, and there hanged and quartered.

That man is a foole, that boasteth him-selfe of his riches ; For why should any man glory in that, which takes away the safety of his life ? Riches deprive us of our liberty. We should be our owne, if these were not our owne : And masters of our selves, if these were not our masters. Riches take not away want, but occasion it ; draw not on content, but withdraw it from us. They are massed up with trouble, possessed with feare, and forgone with sorrow. The rich man therfore hath need of many things, and must submit himselfe to many basenesses, and vile indecencies, being that he is evermore besieged and assaulted with feares, jealousies, and suspitions. They are full of perturbation, and confusion ; the common subject of murmuring and repining. They scratch and scrape all that they can rap and wring from others. They are daily more and more inflamed with the desire of getting. In a word, they will

commit any wickednes, or villanie whatsoever, so as they may be sure to get by the bargaine.

A merry tale delivered in the Pulpit by a Preacher

Hearken to that, which was delivered unto me by a famous Preacher, who discoursing upon this subject of rich men, amongst many other things, I remember he told us at that time of a certaine picture, the upper and middle part of which square, or peece, was taken up by a great rich man, which was there portrayed forth to the life: On his right hand, stood a roaring boy, to fight for him, if need were; and on his left, a foole, to make his Worship merry, and to put him out of his dumps: both which were expressed in such a posture, as fitted best with them. Under this rich man, was drawne a country Clowne; under the Clowne, a Merchant; under the Merchant, a Counsellor at Law; under the Counsellor, a Confessor; under the Confessor, a Physitian; and under the Physitian, the Devill, with a long chaine, whose linkes were made of womens tongues, which kept a horrible ratling. And he farther added, that the rich man had written over his head; These two I keepe: The Clownes word was; I maintaine these three: The Merchants motto; I rob these foure: The Counsellors posie; I pill these five: The Confessors; I absolve these six: The Physitians; I kill these seven: And the Devill had a labell comming out of his mouth, which said; I carry away all these eight with me to Hell.

All these, and many other the like mischiefes doe riches beget, whose possessor purchaseth no other fame, save only; Lo, there goes a rich man: their riches being their totall and eternall destruction. But your true riches indeed, are the vertues of the minde; which like invincible forts, defend those that possesse them. Against these, neither all the men in the world, nor all the devils in hell can prevaile: They may wage warre against them, but they shall never overthrow them. O thou, that doest either reade, or heare me, make vertue the end and center of all thy desires, and there strike in the nayle, that it may sticke close unto thee. And here I will stop my pen, that I may not runne my selfe out of breath, in the praysing of that, which is so

well able to recommend it selfe. But I would have thee withall to know, that as I have purposely and willingly made this considerable digression ; so in all the course of my life, I have not done any thing more unwillingly, then to winke at these men, and to let them goe by, without leaving some pawne behinde them. But because they may not object unto mee, that I spend all my discourse in Reformations, and in prying into other mens actions, I am the more willing to give way unto them, and for this once to let them alone. Another motive, that makes me loth to meddle with these Usurers, is ; That I may have one day need of their helpe ; and I would not willingly make them mine enemies, whom afterwards I must sue unto to stand my friends. In a word, we are so farre forth to keepe some kinde of men our friends, as we may have occasion to use them, and as they may be profitable and beneficiall unto us. And as a faithfull friend is knowne in doing good, in time of need, so an enemie will never hide him-selfe, when he may do thee a mischiefe.

Onely this one thing I will say ; Let a man cast up his reckonings with himselfe, and when he findes, that he comes short of his Account, and that he stands in need of 200 Ducats to make it up, let him but take up so much upon Use, and he shall see them amount in two yeere, to more then six hundred. To how much more then, if a man take up more ? And therefore it is good to have a care to the mayne, and to take heed, that we come not within such mens danger. For there is no such Cormorant, as Usurie ; it devoureth houses, and swallowes downe whole Lordships, as it were at a bit, and makes no bones of it. And if a man cannot get out of this bogg, when he is but over shooes, how shall he doe, when he is over boots ? Or how shall he satisfie a great debt, that is not able to discharge a small one ? But here let your Usurers (for me) rest in peace, and let me returne backe againe to my selfe.

I say then, that men, by not doing that which they ought to doe, come in the end, to pay soundly for that which they do. What doth it avayle a man to gaine much ? What

good to get, if he knew not how to keepe? Especially, seeing we are daily taught by experience, *Que vale mucho mas al cuerdo la regla, que al necio la renta*: That a wise man will goe farther with a penny, then a foole with a pound. His poore pittance (well husbanded) shall bring him in more profit, then all the others rents, though never so great. Such great odds, hath moderation, of revenue. He that hath a time of it, let him take time, while time serves;[1] and not lye lazing, looking for a better, yet let him not be so confident, nor so farre presume upon his strength, that hee doe not keepe a good and carefull watch upon himselfe: He must looke about with many eyes, and that diligently to, having an eye here, and an eye there; it often-times so falling out, that when we thinke our selves safest, and freest from danger, then (when we least dreame of it) we meet with a *Martinus contra*; some pad in the straw, or some Gil to plague us.[2] I had money in my purse; I once was rich, but now am poore. God he knowes, why, and wherefore. I stood looking for a day, to set up my rest, and how to order the remaynder of my life in some setled course; but this day never came: I did build too much upon mine owne strength; it was ever my fault; I presum'd I could recollect, and take up my selfe, how, and when I listed: being verily perswaded, that though I could cozen and deceive all others, I should never be such a foole, as to cozen my selfe. But here in me, you may see, how selfe-confidence, causeth a forgetfulnesse of God, and by trusting more to our selves, then to him, hence it commeth to passe, that we lose not onely our goods, but our soules. The greatest enemie that I had, was my selfe: Mine owne hands, wrought mine owne woe: And as the good actions of the good, are the reward of their vertue; so the bad actions of the bad, are the occasion of their greater torment. Mine owne works did follow me. They were the furies that did persecute me: Whereof mine owne naughty

CHAPTER III

Proverbe

Proverbe

Proverbe

[1] *El que tuviere tiempo, no aguarde otro mejor.*

[2] *Un Gil, que nos persiga.* Giving us to understand, that escaping one thiefes hands, we fall into anothers.

dealing, and other mens wickednesse, were not the least part of this my miserie. And God doth therefore permit, that that, which we make the instrument of offending him ; the same he maketh to be our destruction. Nor did I so much grieve for the losse of my wealth ; for I knew full well, that the goods of fortune come with her, and with her goe their way. And that the more favour shee showeth, the lesse certainty shee assureth. That which did vex me to the very heart, was ; That that, which should have beene my comfort (I meane my wife) she, whom with such earnestnesse her father desired to marry unto me, and used a thousand meanes to effect it, that shee, that was another my selfe, flesh of my flesh, and bone of my bone, that shee should rise up against me, and prove a crosse unto me, persecuting me without a cause, and for no other reason in the world, but only for that I was now growne poore. And that her hate should come to that height, that contrary to all truth, shee accused me of keeping a wench at rack and manger, seeking by this meanes to finde so much favour as to sue out a divorce, and procure a separation betweene us, not wanting a Lawyer to advise her thereunto, firming it with his owne hand, that she might lawfully doe it.

This griefe, of all other, was the greatest unto me ; this wound strooke deepest. For as Matrimonie once contracted, cannot be dissolved ; so when it is ill conjoyned, it is hard to be endured. For a troublesome wife, is like unto a house, whereinto the raine falleth, dripping into every roome and corner thereof. And by how much the more shee shineth in wisdome, and good government, when shee will apply her-selfe unto vertue ; so much the more beastly she is, the more insupportable, and the more to be abhorred, when shee departeth therefrom. What facilitie hath shee, in all those things, that shee hath a minde unto ? What a cunning Scotist is shee, for to compasse what shee longs for ? Put the judgements of a thousand men together, yet shall they not equall the wit of one single woman, for to frame a lye on the sodaine. And although it be

Of good and bad women

commonly said, That when a man shuns company, and desires to be alone, he is *aut Deus, aut Daemon*, either a God or a Devill, either spending his time in his service, or living like a beast; yet doe I say, that the solitude, which he suffereth all alone, is not so great, as is the punishment, which he receiveth, in having ill company, and such as are contrary to his liking. I was rich, when I was not marryed; marryed, I became poore. The dayes of my Nuptials were joyfull to my friends; but those ensuing dayes of my mariage, sad and mournefull for me. They were jocond and merry, and went well contented home to their houses; but I remayned to endure martyrdom in mine owne dwelling; and for no other cause, but because my wife would have it so, and for that shee was too proud, and presumptuous. Shee spent beyond measure, shee had a high minde, and a liberall hand; and shee had beene used to see me come home, like the Bee, laden with much honey; and that I had sweet commings in, bringing her still one dainty or other to please her: Shee could not endure, to see me goe forth in the morning, and bring nothing home with me at noone: Shee lost all patience, and was ready to runne out of her wits, when the world did not goe as shee would have it. But now (ay me, poore wretch that I am) when shee saw that all the oyle was spent, that should maintaine the weke, and that also quite burnt out; and when shee found, that we had not where-withall to eat, nor knew where to get meat to put into our mouthes, and that we were faine to sell our houshold-stuffe to buy us bread; from hence grew all this mischiefe, here shee lost her footing, and with it her patience; insomuch, that shee could not afford mee a good looke; and (which is worse) did ever after hate mee, as if I had beene her mortall enemie. Neither my faire words, nor her fathers admonitions, nor the intreatie of her kins-folke, nor the perswasions of her friends and acquaintance, could winne her to receive me into her former favour, or to recover her lost affection. Shee fled from peace, because shee found it in discord; shee loved unquietnesse, because it was her contentment; shee would be

CHAPTER III

revenged of mee, by retyring and separating her-selfe from me, both at bed and at bord ; and would refuse many times to eat her meat, for that shee knew how well I wisht her, and that it was a death unto me, to see her so to doe. I knew not what to doe with my selfe, nor how to governe my passions, by reason of the great difficultie that I found to give her content, which consisted onely in feeding her with the fulnesse of money, which (God hee knowes) I extreamely wanted. Truly it seemeth unto me, that there are some women, that only marry for to satisfie their owne foolish longing, and to make tryall, what a kinde of thing mariage is ; it seeming unto them, to be like unto an hyred house ; if they finde them-selves well in it, it is well ; if ill, and that it be not to their minde, and fitted as they would have it, all is nothing, nor will they want one excuse or other, and two false witnesses to worke a divorce. And besides other so many inconveniences, if it so fall out, that a mans wife being any thing faire and beautifull, and that some one or other happen to fall in love with her ; but here I will be silent, and say no more. I could wish, that the Advocates, Notaries, and Judges of such Courts, would open their eyes, and consider well with them-selves, that that which they doe therein, is no other thing, then to dissolve a matrimonie, and to open a doore to the Devill, that he may enter in, first to the losse of the wifes life, secondly to the husbands honor, and lastly, to both their undoings. And I dare assure them, in the name of that all-powerfull and mighty God of heaven and earth, that a most grievous punishment shall be powred downe upon them from above, which shall pay them home, and make the smart thereof intolerable. I would have them therefore to know, that these are secret sins, and that the plagues that shall come upon them, shall be also secret. Nor because the husband hath slasht his wife over the face, and given her a whores marke, or hath beaten her (like a slave) with a cudgell, let these men thinke, that this sin shall escape without punishment, for the chastisement is then inflicted upon them, when another taketh away his wife from him, God so per-

mitting it. When he shall see his house full of dissention, infamie, and sicknesses, let him lay it to his soule and conscience, that these come for this cause. I speake not to one, but to all; let them put their hand in their bosome, and take them-selves by the sleeve, as well those that are the occasioncrs, as they that are the favourers thereof, for they all saile in one and thc same ship; and the fault is alike in both; and therefore are to looke for the like punishment. Doest thou not see, how (on the wedding day) all things go trim and tricksie, what a troope attends us at our heeles, what a deale of kinde care and paines every man takes from the bridegroome to the guests, how contented they are, and how well pleased with their entertainment, the tables covered with neat and pure linnen, the boords furnished with dainty fare, the bed handsomly made up,[1] the sheets fine and sweet, and all the rest of the furniture answerable thereunto; all then was delicate, and delightfull unto us. And thus it lasted with us for a while: But now that my moneys are gone, that our gallantry begins to goc downe, and that things go not so well with us as they were wont to doe, the teat with-drawes its milkc, and the love of many yeeres (as if it were a mortall sin) is lost in a moment. It is like to succeed with them, as it did with me, who was quite undone, not out of any insufficicncie in my selfe, or want of care, and paines-taking, for I had wit enough, and knew how to manage my affaires with good judgement. But I miscarried for the reasons I told you but a litle before. This was Gods handy-work, his chastisement was upon me. For, as he is infinite, so hath he no circumscription, his power is not bounded, his arme not limited to punish this man for this, and that other for that. In some things he pronounceth a set and dcterminate sentencc, and for such a particular sin, such a penalty appointed, besides others, which appertaine unto the soule, as also those that arise out of such and such circumstances.

CHAPTER III

[1] The Spanish phrase is; *la cama hecha de lana nueva.* The bed was made of new wooll; or had new wooll put into it. For in Spaine, in regard of their heats, they have no feather beds.

Mine was ill gotten gaine, and therfore could not thrive with me. *Malè parta, malè dilabuntur* : Ill got, ill spent. Now when a woman is married to a man, and afterwards findes her-selfe deceived, for that her husband proves not so rich, as he was reported to be, those goods that he hath, being other mens, and taken up upon credit ; and likewise, that when he was to be married, he ran farther in debt, for the apparelling and setting forth of his wife, and that within a few dayes after, the Mercer comes to demand his money for the silks he had of him, and the Taylor for the making up of the cloathes, and that the Sargeants be on the backe of him both for the one, and the other, there is not any thing wherewith to pay them ; and if there be, yet meat is more necessarie, then the payment of debts. For whosoever goes without, the belly must be served ; though we could cozen all the world besides, the belly will not be cozened. He will daily importune us, and we must daily satisfie him. It is a debt of nature, that must needs be paid : It admits no forbearance : it is a commandement without controlment ; it is a rule without exception. When it comes to this, the peacock hangs downe his taile, as soone as he lookes upon his feet. The pride of his starrie traine begins to flag, and his hoarse trumpet shrikes out his pitifull complaints. The flowers then begin to wither ; their pleasant spring is past ; contentment and patience betake them to their heeles. They presently set a sowre face on the matter, like him that hath tasted sharp vinegar. And if you shall aske them then, what they have, how they doe, how their husbands use them, how like of mariage ? In stead of an answer, you shall have them stop their noses ; it

Proverbe

is fish of foure dayes old ;[1] it is too stale, and begins to stinke. They will not endure the moving of this stone ;[2] and will therefore tell you by some scurvy silent gesture or other : Speake no more of him for Gods sake, let the man alone,

Proverbe

doe not stir the turd, that stinks too much already ; let us talke of some other subject. But how can thy Lazarus (deare wife) being dead in his sins, otherwise chuse, but

[1] *Quartidiano es, ya hiede.*

[2] *No alçen la piedra.*

stinke, and lament his hard misfortune, being buried in the grave of thy miseries, from whence I shall never be raised up againe to life? Doth he not lye intombed in the darke and strong sepulchre of thy vaine thoughts? and in that hollow vault of thy noysome clamours, and pestilent importunities? Is he not shrowded in the winding sheet of thy love, tyed to thy contents? Which he strives all that he can, to give thee, be it by hooke, or by crooke, with the expence of his purse, or the hazard of his person, having my hands bound, showing that I submit my selfe as humbly to thy subjection, as thou (good wife, wert thou good) should submit thy selfe to mine? He that hath charge of a wife, and familie, let him hold his tongue, he cannot be at leysure to talke, he hath something else to doe, he must employ him-selfe in making provision to supply necessarie wants, and perhaps is in want through thee, and is come to all this misery by thy meanes. Doe not thou then complaine that he stinks, seeing that he is putrified with thy impertinencies, finding him-selfe thrust in amongst the wormes of thy wastefull ryots and excesses, which like so many devourers, lye gnawing upon his heart and bowels? Thy boldnes in going abroad; thy liberty in conversing; thy exorbitancies in spending; thy wastefulnesse in scattering; thy vanitie, in vaunting thy selfe, bragging and boasting thy birth and parentage, which hath so many mixtures, as there are differences of keyes, and variety of stops, in an Organ. Hast thou a husband that can beare with all these, and much more; and yet is he fish of foure dayes old? growes he stale with thee, and begins he now to stinke? Tell me (I prithee) by the life and light (I conjure thee) of those thy faire eyes, and doe not lye unto me; whether yesterday thou didst not visit such a Hermitage, such a Chappel, and such and such other places of devotion, making there thy vowes, and thy offerings; but to what purpose, God he best knowes? And is it not likewise true, that since thou hadst the use of reason (nay rather before thou hadst it, because thou yet wantest it) there was never yet any Midsommer night, or feast of S. John, wherein,

without sleeping (for they say, that sleep hindereth the vertue and operation of those, you know what I meane) thou betookst thy selfe to such a prayer, thou knowst well enough what one, but better it had beene for thee, that thou hadst not knowne it (being such a one as it is, and so much reproved) and without opening thy mouth, or speaking so much as one word (for they likewise say, that silence is another essentiall point of that prayer) thou shouldst stay waiting and looking for the first that should passe along by thee after midnight, to the end, that by what thou shouldst heare come from him, thou mightst accordingly judge of thy future mariage, and know him that should be thy husband, having therein a strong confidence and affiance, and giving the same credit and beleefe unto it, as if it were an article of Faith, or one of those of thy Creed, when as in very deed, they are no other then old wives tales, the impostures of witches, and the meere fooleries of foolish women, and such as want judgment. And is it not also true, that there is not that *Beata*, nor that devout and religious woman, that thou hast not either beene with her, or shee with thee, to the same effect?

Is it not true, that thou hast put on thy mantle, walking divers stations with them, only for this purpose? Hast thou not forcibly laid hold on their garments, and torne the mantles of these Saints, who never throw them off from their shoulders, burning tapers, to thou knowst whom? Hast thou not broken the bounds of modesty without blushing, neither setting before thee thine owne shame, or the feare of God? Hast thou left any sieve, without trying thy sorceries thereupon? or beanes lye still in their place, which thou hast not made to leape and dance, by evill meanes, and by words, and charmes, hated and prohibited by our holy Religion? Is there any match-maker, or knowne friend of thine, whom thou hast not been importunate withall, telling them that thou art sicke, and that thou longest for a husband? At last, God sends her a husband (I speake of others, not of my selfe) a quiet man, milde spirited, one that is carefull to live, and an honest man,

who takes paines, and labours hard to get a Royall where-with to feed and maintaine her, not suffering her to want her oyntments, her paintings, and a thousand other toyes and trinkets, as brooches, flowres, buttons, aglets, and the like, for the ornament of her person; and yet for all this, within foure dayes, this man also growes stale, and stinkes. If (poore soule) he doe all that hee can for thee, why doest thou afflict both him and thy selfe, and why should it turne thy stomacke, and cause a loathing in thee, when others shall but name him unto thee? Why dost thou seeke to defame him, by thy obloquies, detractions, depravings, reproaches, raylings, and revilings? Why dost thou grumble at those good offices he does thee? Why misconstrue his kindnesse? Why fashion his affection according to thy false fancy, measuring his heart by thine owne? Thou wouldst not have him digg'd out of his grave, but that the memory of him should sleep for ever, and yet thou digg'st him up with thine owne hands, not sparing the very bones of his Ancestors, and harmelesse ashes of his whole linage, throwing out lies and scandals by shovell-fuls to those that give thee the hearing, laying foule (but false) imputations upon him, proclaiming that (as they say) in the open market-place of him, which neither doest thou know to bee true, neither indeed is he guilty of. To what end then is all this outrage? I will tell thee; It is onely out of her malice towards him, thinking by this meanes to affront and disgrace him. But thou doest therein, like thy selfe, thou showest thy selfe a right woman; full of change and mutability, fickle and inconstant; and would to God, these thy sodaine, and undeserved alterations, doe not arise (taking the course that thou dost) from the offences, that thou hast committed against thy husband, against thy God, and against thine owne soule.

Now that I am come hither, and brought thus, before ever I thought of it, into this port, I will unpacke my commodities, set up a boothe, and make show of all my wares, as your Pedlers and poore Mercers use to doe, that goe from Faire to Faire, and from Towne to Towne, opening

them here to day, and there to morrow, without making any set residence, in this or that other place, and when they have sold all their trinkets, returne home to their owne countrie. Let us here set open our shop, and sell you some of these our good wares, and let us in open market make show unto you of the intentions of some kind of mariages; as well, that we may put those out of their errour, who are led thereunto for those ends; as also for that they may know, that they are knowne, and it is fit, that we should tell them the ill that they doe, because they truly doe ill; and that done, we will presently returne home againe to our selves.

Concerning mariage, and severall ends leading thereunto

Some take this holy state of mariage upon them, out of no other consideration in the world, then to free themselves from the subjection of a Father or a mother, and to be at their owne liberty, it seemeth to your foolish young girle, (be she Gentlewoman, or otherwise) that she shall presently be a free-woman; and that as soone as shee is removed from her fathers house, and received into that of her husbands, she may gad and runne, where, and whither she list. That she shall have the Law in her owne hands; that she shall command with authorite, have where-withall to give, and servants to waite and attend upon her, and to be at her becke. To these kind of creatures, subjection seemes to be too sharpe and cruell a tye upon them; and therefore easily suppose, that as soone as they are married, they shall on the sodaine, be absolute in their Empire, powerfull in their will, and sway all things as they list themselves. They will not sticke to frame this argument to them-selves; that their parents persecute them, that they are their daily torment, never suffring them to bee at quiet, and that they shall finde their husbands more soft and pliable then waxe, and that they will prove kind and loving unto them. The growth whereof springs from this, That their fathers, in the life that they led with their wives, live like bruit beasts, whereby they raise up vaine desires in their daughters, inflame their appetites, and cause them (by their ill example) to runne a crosse course; for, being

(as they are) imprudent, they cannot distinguish of things aright; they embrace all, that is sweet and pleasant, thinking to meet with it, wheresoever they come, not thinking that there is any tartnesse or sowernesse in any, save onely in their parents. CHAPTER III

These, and other the like idle conceits, disquiet their minds, making them not to care which end goes forward, it puts them besides their wits, and leaves them without any judgement. But as they looke and gaze upon this, why doe they not also with a fixed and setled eye, behold that other friend and acquaintance of theirs, who is married to a jealous foole, a rough and bitter husband, who not onely gives her not a good word, but will not suffer her to step a foot out of doores, to take the ayre, and recreate her selfe, no not so much as to goe to Masse, unlesse it be very early in the morning, and that in a cloath kirtle, and muffled up in a poore mantle, as if she were one of the servants of his house: And in a word, not using her as his wife, but as his slave that had fled, and run away from him. It is not so well (my masters) as you take it to be; and beleeve me, that good mariages are not chickens of every dayes hatching; they happen good now and then by chance, or as it pleaseth God to send them; and it befalleth those that are married, as it fareth with him, that buyes a Melon, for one dainty and delicate one indeed, which he may chance to light upon, hee shall meet with a hundred other, which prove gourds and pompeons in their tast and relish. Hast thou not observed that other familiar friend of thine, who hath married a gamester, who playes away all, to the very sheets wherein hee lyes, turning them into table-cloathes, at a common dicing house? Dost thou not thinke upon that other neighbour of thine, whose husband keepes a whore under her nose, and never a morning throughout the yeare, but that he sends her out of the market a good basket full of provision, whilst his poore wife is ready to famish at home for hunger. Nor have they heard (as it should seeme) of some husbands, who are no sooner entred within the doores of their owne house, but that they levell

their eyes with their feet, and never lift them up, unlesse it bee to chide, and finde fault without a cause, and to feed this their peevish and froward humour? Doe these women happly thinke, that all wives are as much respected and beloved of their husbands, as they are of their fathers? I can assure you, that a bad father is to be preferred before a good husband; I have seldome seene a father that hath not still show'd him-selfe a father; but few husbands so kinde, that they have still continued kind. And if any such, hath at any time beene, that hath not beene wanting to those obligations and duties, which belong unto wedlocke, it may well be taken for a wonder. But I never knew a father cease to be a father, though his sonne ceased to be a sonne. There is many a good father, that will make much of a bad sonne; but seldome shall you see a bad husband make much of a good wife.

A second end

Others doe marry, because (having neither father nor mother alive) they desire to be out of their Tutors or Guardians hands; thinking that by them they are sold and rob'd of that they have. They cast up their reckoning, and say with them-selves, that a husband would manage their estate farre better, and looke a great deale more faithfully unto it, then a Guardian, who being loth to be dispossessed thereof, and to render that up into her hands, which is her owne, takes no great care to preferre her, but does all that he can to keepe her from marrying, hoping that to morrow she will fall sicke, and die; and himselfe have all.

And therefore, they say; How better were it, that mine owne children should enjoy that which I have, then to leave it to my enemies, who wish my death, that they may inherit my goods. I will marry, that I will, I will to this geare, though it be with some foule filthy Negro, for my father did not take the paines to get that he did for my Guardian, nor was it his meaning, that he should licke him-selfe hole by me, cutting him-selfe large thongs, out of another bodies leather, especially using me so untowardly as he doth, suffering me to goe all to ragged, and torne, halfe starved for want of good meat, and not so much as one poore

Royall in my purse to buy me a few pinnes. This is that CHAPTER
that makes them runne headlong downe the hill ; and there- III
fore taking counsaile of the first they meet with ; they thinke, that this their friend hath advised them well, and that what they tell them, is out of love, and a well wishing to their good : and being led thus along in this blind-fold manner, they pitch upon a dunghill, where they are so bemired, that they shall never come off cleane from thence, while they live, because they made choice of such a young gallant, that wastes all upon his backe, and his belly, in good cloathes, and good meat ; whose maine care is to pamper his body, keepe his horses fat, bestow rich liveries on his servants, spend in feasts and banquets, leaving his wife weeping at home in a corner ; and that which shee purposed, and desired to leave to her children, to wit, the wealth that she brought with her, having now a house full of little brats, shee hath not one single peny to give, or leave unto them ; for having matcht with an unthrift, the winde hath blowne it all away. And if she were afraid before, that her kinsmen, for to make them-selves masters of her estate, did desire her death ; sure her husband now wisheth it no lesse, for out of a humor of his that he hath, to shift cleane linnen, being now growne weary of so much wife, which never misses him at bed, and at boord, hee desireth, and peradventure also procureth, to put her under ground ; and so this poore soule, deceived by her selfe and others, fayles in the obtaining of that, which her false imagination proposed unto her.

Others, of a lesse staied temper, a kind of giddy-headed The third
Hobby-horses, will needs marry forsooth for pure love ; end
these show them-selves in Churches, and at publike meetings ; when they are at home at their owne houses, their windowes stand wide open, that they may see, and be seene ; and in the night they lye tumbling and tossing in their beds, looking still when some one gallant or other should come under their Balcone, who with the Trin-Trin of his ghitterne, should rouze them up from their unquiet rest.

This or that other young wench, heares him sing certaine

coplas or verses, which Gerineldos made to Doña Urraca, and thinkes that they were purposely made for her. She is more blacke then the Crow, more foule then the Tortoise, more foolish then the Salamander, more ugly then the Rat ; and because there they paint her forth, to be more faire then Venus, not leaving any boxe, or cabinet unsearcht, from which they take not forth for her, Alabaster, Rubies, Turkeses, Pearles, Snow, Jesmines, and Roses, even to the unnailing from heaven, of the Sunne, and the Moone, setting her forth with Starres, and comparing her eye-browes, to the Rainebow, that beautifull Arche of heaven, they are taken as truly there-with, as if they did properly belong unto them, applauding them-selves with these their undeserved prayses : Being as an even so, or rather farre otherwise.

Alas poore silly foole, get thee gone, and sooth not up thy selfe with these glorious (but feigned) glosses ; for he (I assure thee) that made them, did not so much as once dreame on thee ; he made them not for thee ; or if hee did, hee lyde, that hee might deceive and abuse thee with his flattering of thee ; knowing thee to be vainly given, and a lover thereof. Take heed, I advise thee of such a glozing companion ; for he is a meere Emperique, who with one kinde of sirrop cures all sorts of persons, and diseases. He sayes the very same unto others, as he does unto thee. He readeth unto thee (to stirre up thy desires) another Lecture, taken out of Diana, where he tels thee that he saw the burning flames of those faire Shephardesses, the Palace of that wise Dame, with all the riches and sumptuousnesse thereof, the pearles and pretious stones wherewith it was adorned, those delicate gardens, and pleasant groves, wherein they tooke their pleasures and delights, and the dainty musicke which they had made unto them ; and as if all this had beene true, or might have beene, and that the same things might one day happen to them-selves, these poore fooles beginne to melt, and pine away for love.

These wenches are like tindar, any the least sparke that lights upon them, sets them all on a light fire ; they are

quickly tinded, and quickly ended, no sooner in, then out ; they make a blaze, and dye. CHAPTER III

There are some others, that are a little more curious, who refusing to make them-selves ready, and to buy other things more necessarie for them, spend their money in hyring of bookes ; and because they have read in Don Belianis, in Amadis, or in Esplandian, or Knight of the Sunne, those dangers, and ill voyages, whereon those unfortunate Knights went for the Infanta Magalona, which should be (as it seemed) some well disposed Dame, they suppose, that the horse is ready sadled at their doore, and that there is the dwarfe, and that good old wench with Señor Agrajes, to goe and direct them in the way, and to bring them through those thick forrests and woods, to the end that they might not touch upon the inchaunted Castle ; whence they goe to performe some other atchievement. And a head-lesse Lyon, encountring with them, as they were on the way, using many courtesies and ceremonies unto them, with a great deale of willingnesse, brings them, where they are served, and royally entertayned with divers daintily drest dishes of meat, which to their thinking, they now feed upon, and that they finde them-selves afterwards there sleeping in delicate soft beds of downe, not knowing who brought them thither, nor whence they come, for all is inchantment. There they are honestly lodged, and well used, till Don Galaor comes thither, and kills the Gyant, who makes me to shed teares, as oft as I heare tell of the cruelties that he used towards them. Whereas it had beene much better, that by one of these Gentle-women, he had beene sent into Castile, together with his oppressed prisoners, where onely for the very sight of them, they might have got so much money, that would have made up a sufficient Dowry for to marry them, without running so many adventures, and dis-adventures. And so this inchantment is now wholly come to an end. But let them take heed, who reade such, and the like bookes, lest that succeed unto them, which happened unto Don Quixote de la Mancha, who thinking him-selfe an errant Knight, came to be an arrant Asse. But there

THE THIRD BOOKE

is not wanting such another mad rogue as my selfe, who told me the other day, That if such bookes as these should, like a bundle of fagots, be pitcht round about these faire curious creatures, and that fire should bee put unto them, yet were it impossible to make them to burne, because their vertues would extinguish those flames. But I say nothing; and so I protest, because my selfe goes wandring through the world, I know not whither: and if I should say this of others, they would say the like of mee.

A fourth

Other wenches there are, who upon the first sight of some spruce yonker, with a starcht beard, and his whiskers turn'd up, his bodie peradventure being as full of gummes, as a Valençia velvet, and as many issues in his armes and leggs, as Aranivez hath fountaines, yet conceiting him to be another Adonis for his handsomnesse and his neatnesse, are taken with the pretinesse of his person, and apparell, and are ready forsooth to runne mad for love. This dandling, fidling, tender, and wanton young fellow, made of purpose (as they thinke) for pleasure and delight, who makes a profession of neatnesse, and other apish toyes, as conging and kissing his hand, a poppet that one may put in his pocket, is the onely man with them: as if these curiosities, were not the Vespers of some bone-fire, wherein they are to be burned. Let a woman be like a woman; and a man like a man. Though these vanities, and idle superfluities befit neither the one, nor the other, but serve onely as Liveries, to show that they are the Devils followers. But if you will allow fore-tops, curlings of the hayre, lyes, paintings, neat dressings, a soft skinne, and a thousand other things to beautifie both face and body, let women have onely this priviledge, who have need thereof, and know best how to make use of these niceties. It shall suffice man that he expresse him-selfe to be a man: it will well become him, to have a bigge voice, a hard and bushy hayre, a thicke skinne, a manly face, a grave carriage, and a hand that is none of the tenderest. Yet these foolish wenches, thinke that such spruce princoxes as these, are made of such pure mettall, that they have not any naturall passions, nor that they spit

and cough as other men ; and yet for all this their seeming finenesse, they are subject to Sarsaparrilla, China earth, Guacum, *Emplastrum Melilotum*, *Unguentum Apostolorum*, decoctions, sirrops, and electuaries, and many other miseries, and medicines ; for whom these fond things are ready to run mad, and are so hot in their love, that if the bridle of shame did not somewhat restraine this their head-strong affection, they would be worse then any devill, when he is unchained and let loose. And if you shall aske, either all, or any one of them, what they see in this finicall fellow, what reason they have to dote upon him, why conceit him to be such a pretious peece ? This accursed answer (as it is common with them) so it serves then in stead of all other : That it is their pleasure forsooth to have it so ; it is their humour, and they will not be beaten out of it. And if you lay before them their unadvisednesse in doing so, the inconveniences that are likely to follow thereupon, the ill counsaile which they take, and the like, their answer is ; I must suffer for it, and no body for me ; it is I, and not you, that must feele the smart of it : and therefore you were as good hold your peace. If it succeed ill with me, I must be contented with my bad fortune, and conne no body thanke but my selfe, and therefore I pray let me alone, and spare your labour to speake thereof any more, for I am of age, and know well enough what I doe. And yet this miserable maid, neither knowes what she does, or sayes, but if they find them-selves obliged by the sweet-meates, that are sent unto them, a gawdy girdle, a neat payre of Twizes, a silke payre of stockings, garters fringed with gold, perfum'd gloves, or a love-letter brought her by her mayd, or her answer thereunto, if she suffer him to pinch her as she passeth by, or reach forth her hand to him from under the doore, if not perhaps her foot : when it comes to this, Lord have mercy upon her, there is no other medicine for this malady. For she is already toucht with the venome of that herbe,[1] whose infection (without divine helpe) is incurable.

CHAPTER III

Proverbe

There are other women, that doe likewise marry, onely

A fifth

[1] *Tocada esta de la yerva.*

that they may live as merrily as the day is long, that they may goe whither it pleaseth them, as well to see, as to be seene; that they may dresse them-selves to their owne liking, weare this gowne, or put on this mantle, either as it sutes with their fancy, or the fashion: it seeming unto them, that because they saw such a one upon such a festivall day, or all the weeke long, in her bravery and her gallantry, that as soone as she is married, her husband will maintaine her in the same manner, and if not better, yet at least as other husbands keepe their wives: and if such a mans wife trot up and downe all the day long, hee will not deny her leave to walke the streets at her pleasure.

Hence ariseth the quarrell, this is it which maketh the fray; for if her hopes be crost, and that things fall not out according to her expectation, or that her husband doth not like of it, and that he will not have his wife to goe either cloathed, or naked, for any but him-selfe; telling her, that though such a one let his wife doe what she list, and to goe thus and thus, he does not well in it, giving the world occasion to scandall her good name, whereby he must needs be toucht in his honor; and therefore he will not permit her so to doe, for feare of incurring the like censure. Whereupon, and for no other cause in the world, because they will not give them leave to weare what cloathes they list themselves, what shooes, and what stockings, nor to take their pleasure abroad, and to walke the streets, as some other woman doe, nor bee left wholly to their owne liberty, not one stone shall rest quiet upon another in all the whole house; she plotteth treasons wherewith to revenge her selfe upon her unfortunate husband, who being a wise and considerate man, knowing what a kind of woman shee is, and how affected in her disposition, is afraid, that if he should grant her this licence, and give her wings, they would turne to her destruction, as they doe to the Ante.[1] So that he dares not give her leave to range abroad, nor to consent to other her extravagancies. This only coale is enough

[1] There are divers sorts of Ants, whereof some are borne with wings, but to their owne hurt. Covarruvias, verb. *Hormiga*.

to kindle the fire, this single contradiction will serve the turne to make her fall a scratching of her face, and tearing her hayre, calling her selfe the most wretched and unfortunate of all women, and wishes that as soone as shee was borne, it had pleased God, that her mother had strangled her, buried her in a ditch, or throwne her into some deepe well, rather then to live to be subject to so tyrannicall a power ; that she onely of all other married women, is the most miserable ; that such a woman is of this and that quality, and that shee lives like a Queene with her husband, in comparison of her ; that she is no whit inferiour unto her, nor brought a lesser dowry with her, nor would shee ever have married, if she had thought her husband would have us'd her no better. And breaking the bounds of womanhood, she dishonours him, calling him base fellow, dunghill-squire, neglectfull villaine, rogue, rascall, and what not ; upbraiding him, that her father kept better men then hee was ; and that hee was not worthy to make cleane her old shooes. And if her husband chance to overheare her, she straines her voice a note higher, crying out, Wretched woman that I am, was I so daintily bred up, to be fed with this course fare ? Are these the delights I am like to have ? Did they leave me so well for this, that thou shouldst use me in this scurvy manner as thou doest ? Must I bee thy slave night and day, to looke to thy house and children, and to bee made a drudge to thy servants ? See, and there be any griefe like unto mine ? God and the world knowes what I am, of what house I come, and how well I am descended ! Don Fulano, and Don Cutano, such a Bishop, such a Conde, and such a Duke, are of my alliance ; leaving out neither beardling, nor shaveling, high, nor low, whereof she does not make a Letany, and verball processe.

But poore unhappy man as he is, if it should fortune so to happen, (which God forbid should ever befall any honest man) that he have his aged mother at home with him in his house, his sisters that are virgins, or children by another wife ; then will she keepe a racket, and cry out ; That it was for them, that her father got his wealth ; that it is spent

upon them; that they eate it out, whilest I (poore soule) who brought him all this, must bee used like a Negra; Negra (said I) if it were Gods will, would I were no worse us'd then such a ones Negra, which passeth here daily by our doore, as if she were some great Lady; to day in this change of cloathes, to morrow in that. I onely am that unlucky bird, that continue still in these old ragges, ever since I was first married, and have not where-withall to mend them, mew'd up betweene these wals, accompanied with I know not how many spindles, reeles, distaffes, and hitchels for flaxe: What can her husband (poore man) say to all this? What answer can he make her? His best course will bee to let her alone, otherwise hee shall never bring his purpose to passe.

The sixt

There are another sort of women, that marry, to the end that by having a husband to cloake their faults, they may not be molested by the Justice, nor reproached by their neighbours, or any other persons whatsoever. This is roguery, knavery, villanie, beastlinesse, and dishonesty in the highest degree. What should a man say more of them? They are a kinde of kinde wenches, but dishonest and shamelesse. They are like those Gardiners, that clap up a skar-crow in a fig-tree, that the birds may not come and pecke at the figges: which are onely kept for those, whom it shall please the Gardiner to give leave to plucke them; or such as shall pay him well for them: so as the birds doe not pecke them, it is all good and well.

Is there none then, that may correct, reprove, or open his mouth against these kinde of women? No surely. They have a skar-crow in the fig-tree; a husband of their owne in the house. Touch them who dares. They can eyther give or sell, their honour, or their persons, as they will and list themselves, even in the sight of the whole world, and yet by-reason of this their skar-crow, the Justice dare not offer to punish them. For it fareth with them, as it doth with Vine-yards, which have a guard upon them in their time of fruitage; but when the Vintage shall be gathered in, and the grapes carryed away, and put into the wine-

presse, they are no more looked unto, but are laid open, and made a common field, for their flockes and heards of cattell to feede on, treading and trampling them downe with their feet. CHAPTER III

Sister, let me tell thee, that these are the steps that leade unto hell: God will take away this cloake from thee, this husband of thine for thy dissolute life and shamelesse lust, to the end, that this may be the whip to lash thee, by bringing thy secret whorings in publike view: and in that balance wherein thou didst put his honor, thine owne ere long shall be weighed. But I were best take heed to whom I speake, lest I may chance to have my head broken for my labour. She feared not her husband, she was past all shame towards God and Man: and shall I thinke to reclaime her, or such as shee is, by these my fooleries? (for I know they take them for no other,) I shall never be able to doe it while I live, and therefore I will let them alone.

Other some also marry, for that they see their wealth beginnes to waste, they know not how themselves: yet pretend, that the onely cause why they marry, is, for that they are young, and are loth to have their honour lyable to the lavish tongues of evill disposed people; as also, lest their persons might run the hazard of Rapes, and other the like violences. Well, of two evils the least: But because God hath not any part in all these mariages, and that it may be better said of them, that they be the Devils contracts: and for that all things are to be reputed eyther good or ill, according to the end whereunto they are directed: and this being knowne, those actions are determined and defined that leade thereunto; bearing more love alwayes to the end it selfe, then to those things which conduce and guide us unto it. So that mariage is not loved in such as these, for the love that they beare unto mariage, but onely use it as a meanes, for the accomplishing of their desires. And these kinde of women doe not walke directly in the right way, but goe somewhat about to serve their owne turnes, running a by-way to their owne ruine. And therefore I hold it no good mariage, (nor indeed is it) when it The seventh

hath any other end in it, save only to serve God in that holy and honourable estate.

God doth permit (I confesse) all these mariages, but I must tell you withall, that in most of them the devill hath a share, and that not the least. It is a good and holy Calling, but thou makest it a hellish Mariage. It was instituted for quietnesse and for comfort, but thou lov'st it not; thou neyther hast it, nor art willing to have it: but thou dost rather intangle thy feet in it, that thou maist the sooner trip, and fall with it to the ground. Let not a virgin, or a widow, make the butt that she shoots at her lawlesse liberty, nor the freeing of her-selfe from her Fathers, or her Guardians subjection: let her not be led along with vaine love, let her cast away from her all such filthinesse as followes her sensuall appetite. Which if they doe not doe, let them assure them-selves, that it will goe ill both with the one and the other: and if their husbands shall not prove so good and kinde unto them, as they them-selves did thinke, and wish they should, if they shall make slaves of them after they are marryed unto them; if they shall mewe them up like Hawkes; if they shall lead an evill life with them; if they shall waste away their wealth, and yet leave a great charge of children upon them; if their purse shall be still empty; if troubles shall come upon them; if their husband shall be a Gamester, or a whore-master; if they shall be thus abused by them, and shall haply dye under their hands: all this ariseth from those evill ends, which they proposed to themselves, eyther by seeking to advance themselves beyond their qualitie, or to flaunt it beyond their meanes: or those other fore-mentioned reasons, which are the sole cause of their ruine. This Idoll of Baal, whom they adored, in him did they put their trust: this was the God who (they thought) could succour, free and defend them; but in case at any time they should have true need indeed of his helpe, they shall find, that he ought not to be feared, nor that he is able to send downe fire to consume their enemies, or comfort them; for as he hath it not, so can he not give it them. Thou adorest

Idols, but thou shalt be delivered by none of them in the day of trouble : for in a word, they are Idols, the workmanship of our owne hands, fashioned out of wantonnesse, and a longing to be doing of something, and adored onely out of an idle humour, and out of a kinde of pleasure and delight that wee take in these toyes. Fire shall come downe from heaven, and consume the sacrifice, the wood, the stones, and the ashes, even to the waters themselves in the trenches, (like unto that of Elias) though they be filled afresh, barrell after barrell, yet shall all that moysture be licked up by the fire. Know yee then, that those are mariages which God ordaineth, and such as you enter into, onely to shew your selves obedient to his will, and have consulted therewith afore-hand ; leaving it wholly to him, to worke in the rest, as he shall thinke fittest for his service, without seeking after any ill and foule meanes : and then though yee should be dung-wet, and bucketted a hundred times with the waters of persecutions, of hunger, of cold, of imprisonment, and all other troubles and miseries, that may befall the life of man, it is no matter : For fire shall come downe from heaven, that is to say, the love of God and his charitie, which shall consume and dry up, these their many waters of tribulations. This quicke fire makes speedy riddance of all our troubles, presenting them as a sacrifice before his divine Majestie, who will not onely assist us with his grace in this world, but crowne us with his glory in the world to come. And let this serve as an end to this my Sermon. Now let us returne againe to our Mariage, which (and it had pleas'd God) would it had never beene.

I had now serv'd some six yeares in the Mariage-galley ; in which short time (would it had beene lesse) I endured (I thanke my wife for it) a great deale of misery. Howbeit, for the foure first yeares, our wedding loaves (I must confesse) were fresh and new : for as yet, it was but hony-moone with us ; all was of the finest flowre and the purest wheat. But when wee beganne to goe downe the hill, and were now fallen halfe in halfe from that height wherein wee were before, and wanted money to maintaine us at that

scantling: when the cloth-of-gold kirtle, which was richly both bordred and imbroydered, was to be sold, and turn'd into gold; and that not any the least thread of it, though no bigger then a Spiders, escap't the melting-pot, and yet past for a reasonable handsome kirtle still, as the world went with us: when all our old ends were spent and gone; when I could not inch it out any further; when I saw that the water was come up above my chinne, and that I could not long hold out, but must needes sinke, for that she would by no meanes consent, that I should sell any thing eyther of hers, or mine owne, and that my credit to furnish my shop would not reach so farre as one farthing-worth of Radishes, I found my selfe then in that strait, that advising with my father-in-law, I was willing to take some-what a more rigerous course with her. God send us a good night of it. She thereupon began to set out so loud a throat, as if (like a pig) I had offered to sticke her, or that the matter had beene of more moment then indeed it was: insomuch that the neighbours came running in for to helpe her, who were so many that the house could not hold them. But when they saw the truth of the businesse, as God would have it, it was a thing of nothing; and when they perceived I had reason to doe as I did, they rested quiet, and went their wayes: yet for all this did not shee leave off her lamentations, which might very well have serv'd her turne for a hundred holy-weekes. I was inforced that I might not fall further foule with her, to let her alone, and to leave her to her self, that I might not be bound by hearing her, to answer her both with words and deeds. I tooke my cloake, threw it on my shoulder, and got mee out a-doores, leaving her all alone, and giving her thereby free liberty to say and doe what she would, till she should grow weary, and could no more.

This madded her more then all the rest, when she saw mee set so light by that which she said, and that I seemed to make such little reckning of it. And I may truly confesse unto you, that in all that time that I lived with her, I cannot accuse my selfe, nor did she ever taxe me of any the least injury that I had done her, but us'd her with all

the kindnesse that a husband could use a wife. But when God shall bestow wealth upon us ; or when he pleaseth, take it away, this alters the case ; for man cannot then doe withall, it lyes not in his hands, neyther is it in his power, to goe increasing in riches, neyther can he stop them in their course, (no more then a man can the tyde) when they are ebbing from him. Hee cannot be termed an unthrift, or a bad husband, who useth his best endevors, as others doe, for to get where-withall to live in some good and honest fashion, and to provide, as well as hee can, for his wife, children, and family. But he is a bad husband, who spends his meanes upon women, throwes it away at play, wastes it in eating and drinking, and prodigally consumes it in pride of apparell, and other vices of like excesse.

Let my young prodigals hearken unto mee, and doe thou to understand this lesson, thou that art the onely sonne and heyre of some rich merchant : for it is unto thee that I speake, and thou knowest why and wherefore I speake it. And I was also about to say farther unto thee, that if thou doe not take heede, thy rash and unadvised courses, (holpen on by other mens ill counsell) will carry thee hence to hell. Repent thee therefore betime, and have a care to live, that thou maist not dye.

So that I say, it is neyther good, nor bad successe, that should cause any separation betwixt Man and wife ; nor ought marryed folkes to fall out and disagree about the transitory things of this world. For a husband hath no more obligation, then to use all his industry and diligence, and to doe the best hee can : The successe wee must leave to God. Nor is hee to be condemned for a bad husband, who keepes his wifes dowry well secured, and hath rather augmented, then diminisht it, without having eyther sold, or paltred it away. Shee, without doubt, could not confesse so much, or if shee did confesse it, shee did not speake the truth ; or if shee did speake it, shee did adulterate it in that manner, that they might absolve her upon it. Thus (poore soule) did shee deceive her-selfe, whilest shee thought to cozen her Confessor. Likewise, there were not some

wicked people wanting, of base birth, who, upon weake grounds, and a weaker understanding, to flatter and sooth up this her idle humour, did help to further her fooleries, favouring them all that they could, not so much as once giving eare unto mee, nor knowing the justnesse of my cause: And these were they that wrought my woe, and brought her to hell. For she dyed shortly after of a sharpe disease, without shewing any tokens of repentance, or receiving the Sacrament.

Guzmans wife dyes

In two things may I style my selfe unfortunate: First, in this my mariage, though on my part I did use all possible meanes to observe the lawes therof. Secondly, that having done penance so long a time with her, and having lost all my wealth, I had not any acquittance or receipt under her hand, no not so much as a childe by her, whereby I might have recovered her dowry. Howbeit, I have no great cause to complaine much for this: for the unhappinesse of her death, made my life happy. For there is no burthen so heavy, as the insupportable waight of a froward wife.

A short tale of one that threw his wife over-boord

As a certaine passenger plainly gave us to understand, who being upon a voyage at Sea, and a great storme arising, the Master of the Shippe gave order that they should presently lighten the Shippe, and throw the heaviest commodities over-board for the saving of their lives. The passenger hearing him say so, tooke his wife up in his armes, and threw her into the sea. The Justice going afterwards about to punish him for this his offence, he excused him-selfe, saying; That the master of the ship, had commanded him so to doe. And that amongst all the merchandize that hee had aboord, there was not any that waighed so heavy as his wife, which was the cause that hee threw her into the Sea: And it pleased God that they had faire weather after it.

Now, turne your eyes upon my father-in-Law, who never had any difference with me, but did cherish and comfort me, as if I had beene his owne naturall sonne; and taking alwayes part with me against his daughter, and would ever chide and reprehend her; and when he saw his fatherly admonitions could not reclaime her, nor worke any good

upon her, he would never come within her doores. But howsoever he did hate her conditions; in conclusion, she was his daughter; and children are those tables that are sawen and hewen as it were out of the fathers heart. And though they cause their sorrow, yet they love them dearely. He mourned much for her, but we remained friends. Wee buried this unhappy woman (for that must be her name) and did that was fitting for her soule. And within a few dayes after, we parled of parting Company; for he would that I should returne that unto him which he had given me with his daughter. I did not stand off, but gave him all that he had given me, and in better case then he consigned it unto me. He kindly thankt me; we level'd our accompts, remaining still as good friends as ever we were heretofore.

CHAPTER IV

Guzman de Alfarache, being now a Widower, resolves to goe to Alcala de Henares, to study the Artes, and Divinity, that he might make him-selfe fit to say Masse. And having fulfilled all his tearmes, and duly heard his Lectures, hee leaves all and marries againe

FOR to tumble downe a stone from the top of a hill, every mean mans strength will serve, with the touch (as they say) of his little finger, hee will make it to roule to the ground. But if the same stone were to be drawne out of some deepe Well, many men would not be able to fetch it forth, and great diligence must be used for the getting of it up. For to make my selfe fall from that good estate, wherein I was, and to run head-long out

of my wealth and credit, my wifes wastfulnesse was enough to turne me going; but to get my selfe up againe, to the same height wherein I was before, I had need of the helpe of other the like Unkles and Kinsfolke; such another Genoa, and Milane; or that another Sayavedra should come and live with me; or that the same man should rise againe; for I never lighted on the like servant, or companion for my turne; by whose helping hand I might have beene raised up as high as ever I was, and restored to a better estate then before: But wanting these good helpes, I lay buryed and whelmed-over head and eares in a well of miseries.

Riches long a comming, but quicke in going

Goods and riches, the slower they are in comming, the quicker they are in going. They are gathered with a great deale of leasure; but are scattered away in haste. All at this present (whatsoever it be) in this world, it is all subject to mutation; it being fuller of alterations, then any thing else. Let not the rich man therefore rest too secure, nor yet the poore man despaire. For the wheele is as slow in comming up, as in going downe; and as quickly emptieth, as fils the Buckets that it bringeth up. The excessive expences of my house had stript me of all, both my jewels and my money; My wife might with a good conscience (if she had had it) considering what I suffered for her sake, and the troubles which by her exorbitancies, lighted upon me, have left mee some small part of her portion, (which she might lawfully have done) where-with at least I might (had I beene so disposed) being a sole and retired man, have driven some small trade, attended my old occupation of usury, or emploied my selfe in some one thing or other, to have pickt out a poore living, and to beginne the world anew, to see if I could recover this my weaknesse, whereinto by her meanes I was fallen, and now brought so low. But not onely in this particular occasion, but in all the rest, that offered them-selves unto mee, with my friends and acquaintance, I might say that which Simonides said; He had two coffers or chests in his house, and was wont to say, (using to open them at certaine times) that when he opened

Simonides his two coffers

that of cares and troubles, from which hee thought, and hoped to reape some profit, it fell out contrary to his expectation, finding nothing but his labour for his paines; and of that it was brim-full; but that wherein the Graces were kept, who should have recompenced him for his good services, he could get nothing thence, but had the ill lucke to find it alwayes empty. CHAPTER IV

This Philosopher and my selfe, were equally unfortunate; and it seemeth, that the influence of one and the same Starre, had lighted on us both. For albeit, I did evermore labour to helpe and benefit others, not considering the good or hurt that might come thereof, and without taking the counsell of those, who say: *Haz bien, y guarte*: Doe well for others, but yet looke to thy selfe; so may I also say, That I never washt that head, that I had any other reward for my paines, but scabs and scurffe. And albeit I had felt the smart of it, and paid soundly for this my folly, yet I could not hold my hand, but wilfully persisted in mine owne wayes; for, being made drunke with the delight, that I tooke therein, I did not seeke to repayre the hurt it had done mee. For as it is an easie matter to strip a drunken man out of his cloathes;[1] so is it hard to doe the same upon him, that is sober. They may rifle him that sleepes; but not him, that is awake.[2] I did never stand upon my guard; I did never thinke to see the day that I should have wanted; Whilest I had where-withall, I alwaies made this account; But when I saw to what poverty I was brought, I then knew the error I was in. And though I was a naughty man, yet I had a desire to be good; not out of any true love to goodnesse it selfe, but for the shunning of some greater evill, that otherwise might ensue. I had throwne aside my vices, forgetting them for a while, and had applied my selfe to labour and paines-taking; I had tride all the meanes and wayes that might be to work my selfe a fortune, and to come forward in the world; but not any one of them that thriv'd with me. I was an unfortunate

Proverbe

Guzman hurt by his kind heart

Proverbe

Proverbe

Guzman could never thrive by any good courses

[1] *Facil despojar à un ebrio.*
[2] *Pueden robar, al que duerme, pero no à quien vela.*

man in all those better courses, that I ranne. Onely in doing ill was I lucky, I had a happy hand in filching and stealing, fortune only favouring me so far, as to make me unhappily-happy.

Sinne, how she useth her followers

This is a cunning tricke, which sinne still puts upon us, to further us with its counsaile, and to helpe those that are her champions, to the end, that with that heat and warmth they receive from sinne, they may bee the better incouraged and drawne on with the more mettall, to commit more heynous crimes; and when shee sees that they have attained to the height of all villany, and that they cannot well climbe higher, shee tumbles them downe headlong with a witnesse. She makes them to mount by the ladder, but sends them downe by the rope. Differing herein from God, who workes after another manner. For he never sendeth us any trouble, which he doth not accompanie with some blessing or other; from our greatest miseries, groweth our greater glory: leading us by a narrow path, to the broad and spatious way of blisse.

God is alwayes at hand to helpe us

It seemeth unto us, that when we are swallowed up as it were with desperation; and that want and poverty lye heavy upon us, that hee is forgetfull and unmindfull of us; when as indeed, he is but like unto that father, who for to teach his sonne to goe, maketh as if he did loosen his hand from him, faigning to let him goe alone by him-selfe, and for a while to see how hee will shift his feete, stands in some neere distance from him, yet not so farre off, but that hee still keepes him-selfe close by his side, and when walking softly, and with trembling steps towards him, he sees him ready to fall, he runnes in unto him, and catching him in his armes, receives him unto them, and embraces him, not suffering him to fall to the ground. But when the father hath no sooner left him to him-selfe, but that either he makes too much haste, or will not goe at all, nor so much as offer to move a foot, or letting goe his hold, unfastning him-selfe from his fathers hands, he comes to catch a fall, the fault is not in the father, but in the sonnes either too much dulnesse, or too much haste.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER IV

The naughty condition of mans nature

We are of a naughty and an evill nature, wee are not willing to helpe our selves a jot, we doe not endevour to doe our selves good, wee will not use our best diligence, nor put to any helping hand of our owne, but looke (like little children) to have our meat put still in our mouthes, (being now big lubbers) and that all should be put into our laps, without any paines, or care-taking of ours. But God is of that infinit goodnesse, that he never forgets us, nor forsakes us : Hee knowes very well how to take away from the wicked in a moment, many great Lordships and Farmes, which they have beene many yeares a purchasing ; and to enrich Job within a little while, with double so much wealth, and those other good blessings which before he had taken from him.

How God rewards the righteous

Guzman as poore as Job

I never had the grace to be so good ; but I am sure I was as naked as Job. For I had nothing to leane my selfe against, save onely the bare walls of my house. If, when I had plenty, I did pamper up my selfe ; now I did desire, to have only where-withall to hold life and soule together. I was ready to perish for want of food.

A Tale of a little boy

I remember (when I was a youth) that I had knowne in Madrid a pretty little boy, that was very well given, and for his yeares, of good understanding. This little Lad was bred up by a Gentle-woman, that was his mother, not that shee had borne him, but for the love shee bore him ; shee gave him good breeding both for his booke, and otherwise ; shee cloath'd him well, and handsomely ; and for his dyet, if there were one bit better then other at the boord, he was sure to have his part of it. This childe was bred in Granada, where there are certaine little small grapes, which are very dainty ones indeed, wonderfull pleasant, and of an excellent relish ; which in those parts they call *javies*. Now there being none of this kind in Madrid, and for that this little boy would not eat any other save his owne Country grapes, when he saw he had none of that sort given him, seeing your *alvillas* [1] one day on the boord, he askt for some of those little ones, as he was wont to doe ; To whom his mother

[1] *Alvillas:* A kinde of great gray, or whitish grapes.

said ; Childe ; Here are no little ones to give thee. We have none but these : To whom the childe answered ; Then (good Mother) give me some of those. For I can eat also great ones for a need.

He that cannot live as he would, must be content to live as he may

I likewise could now feed upon grosse fare, no meat came amisse, all was sweet and savourie unto mee, nothing did hurt mee, but hunger without meat ; any thing, so as it were a belly full, it was all one to me. For the alterations of times, oblige all, and to all ; and to content our selves with those things, which are quite averse to our nature, and no way suting with our disposition. I was driven to doe that, which I never dreamt to have done, to the end, that I might alwayes be able to say ; That neither selfe-love made me doubt ; nor feare, dread to adventure upon any meanes whatsoever, that might make for my profit. And questionlesse, if I had wholly bent myselfe to some one set course or other, and had setled my selfe close unto it, and constantly persevered therein, I should have done some good in it, and made it a meanes of no meane advancement unto me. But I was hot and cholericke ; I mis-spent my time ; and my beginnings being bad, I failed in the goodnesse of the ends. I had often resolved to be good, but I was quickly weary of well-doing ; I was that rolling stone, that never gathers mosse.[1] And because I could not tame my selfe, time had now tamed me. I saw my selfe abandoned of all humane remedie, and had no hope of any other helpe, then that onely of my house. I began then to consider, and say with my selfe ; What have I now in the house, to stanch my hunger withall ? Shall I bite upon a brick-bat ? that is but tough feeding, and somewhat too hard a crust to gnaw upon. Shall I roste one of my rafters ? That will be burnt away upon the spit : I found that a naked house, without something to maintaine it, could not afford me any kinde of remedie. I could thinke upon no better thing, then to betake my selfe to sacred Orders, and to become a Churchman : Saying to my selfe ; I have humane learning ; I will make benefit of that, by hearing

Proverbe

Guzman resolves to goe to the Universitie

[1] *Piedra mouediza, nunea la cubre moho.*

those Lectures read in Alcala de Henares. I have some little smackering also in the Liberall Arts, and Divinitie, and when I have studyed these a-while, I will take my Degree, then shall I be qualified for the Pulpit, and being able to say Masse, and to preach a Sermon, I shall be sure to have wherewithall to eat ; and if all should fayle, I would turne Fryar at the last, whereby I should not onely live upon certainties, but should also lead a very safe and secure life. For a *Dominus vobiscum*, did never yet dye of hunger. By this course, I shall not only repayre my life, but I shall free it likewise from any danger whatsoever, which I might have incurred by my former misdemeanors. The time, for the payment of my debts, drawes on a-pace, and my wealth goes away as fast ; if by this meanes I did not provide for the storme, that was now a comming, I might afterwards see my selfe oppressed, and in great perill to be utterly lost.

I knew that this came not from my heart, for I was not ignorant of mine owne evill inclination ; but he that hath no other meanes, and is put to his shifts, must doe as he may. He that cannot make choyse of his game, must flie at that which comes next in his way. Now that I am imbarked, I must play the cunning Mariner, and seeing I cannot sayle with a fore-winde, I must fetch boords, and come about with a side-winde. Any one will serve my turne, so it be not such a contrary winde, as shall chop me into the mouthes of my hungry Creditors. This is the key that must make all sure, and keepe them out from comming within me. The money that I shall make of this house, will serve well enough to maintaine me as a scholler ; which being well husbanded, though I should spend yearely a hundred Ducats, or a hundred and fiftie, which will be the most, (and is a good liberall allowance) I shall have store of money for that time, that I shall need to continue there ; so that I may live like a Duke, (if I list my selfe) and yet have wherewithall to buy me bookes, and to take some honourable Degree. I will make choyse of a good Chamber-fellow, a student of mine owne profession, that we may follow our studies close together, heare the Lectures, compare

What a student should doe

our Notes, communicate our doubts, that so by joyning our forces together, and ayding one another, we should be able to quit our selves like brave fellowes, when we came to breake a lance in those lists. In this manner had I made up my recknings with my selfe; this was my consultation, and this was I fully resolved to put in execution. But how ill a consultation, and how worse a resolution, that I should determine to studie Divinitie, more for the nourishing of this my body, then for the feeding of others soules! How a Gods name should it enter into my imagination to be a Masse-Officiall, and not a Masse-priest? Or that I should once thinke of becomming a Religious man, having such a scandalous spirit? Accursed I, and accursed he, who is so unhappy, as not primarily to propose unto himselfe the service and glory of God. And most unfortunate are they of all others, who treat of their owne profit, of their preferments, of their honours, and of the maintayning of their backe and belly, by this so worthy and divine a Calling; and that doe not solely and wholly take the Ministerie upon them, for no other end, but to be Gods Messengers, and to doe him service in his Church; and that shall not worthily performe that holy function; and that shall not desire learning for any other end, then to be a light unto himselfe, and unto others.

Young Divines, what they should propose unto them-selves

What their ends ought to be

Traytor as I was, why did I treat, like another Judas, of the selling of my Master? And I speake it to all, as well as to my selfe; that he shall be taken for no other then a Traytor, that shall treat of being a Priest, or a Fryar, having no other ayme, but to feed his belly, cloath his backe, and spend lavishly. And that father is a Traytor, whosoever he be, that shall enforce his sonne, contrary to his owne inclination and liking, to take the Ministerie upon him, because his Grand-father, his Unckle, his kinsman, or his friend, hath left him such a Patronage, or such an Advouson, if his sonne shall in such a time take holy Orders. When a father casts about with him-selfe to make his sonne a Fryar, or one, or more of his daughters Nunnes, either because hee hath not store of wealth to leave them, or that

Fathers ought not to inforce their children to take Orders

he may leave his other children the richer, or for any other worldly causes, which cannot be but vaine and idle, let him weigh and consider well with him-selfe what hee doth in so doing: For it is a great wonder, if one of a hundred prove good (I say nothing of the Nunnes) the most part of them, roming and rambling through the world, like a companie of vagabonds, and Apostata's, dishonouring their religion, disgracing their habit, putting their lives in perill, and sending their soules to Hell. It is God that must call us to this holy Calling: For it is hee that anoynted David, hee that made choyse of the Priests and the Prophets. The religious man must be religious, meerely for Religions sake; for the very love that hee beareth unto it. This must be the principall end, this the substance, and all the rest but matter of dependance. For it is fit and just, that he that serves at the Altar, should live by the Altar:[1] and it were inhumanitie, when thy Oxe hath plowed thy ground, and laboured hard, to tye him to his stall, and give him no meat. Let every one open his eyes, and looke well about him, before he resolve as I did. Let him weigh well with him-selfe, what charge he takes upon him, and what a deale of danger hee runnes. Let him first aske of him-selfe, what moves him to take that estate upon him? For by walking in the darke, the eye that sees not, must make the feet to stumble. The marke whereat a good Priest, and an honest religious soule should shoot, must be brighter, purer, and clearer then the Sunne. Let not Parents thinke, that for to fill their sonnes bellies, they must needs make them Church-men: nor let them thinke, when they have a lame, weake, sickly, unprofitable, crumpt-back't, or ill-featur'd sonne, to offer him upon Gods Altar, or to make him a Priest. For God will have the best, and those that are without blemish for his sacrifice, being that hee offered up the best that ever was for us, when hee offered him-selfe in his beloved Sonne. Therefore if thou shalt make a bad choyce, thou wilt have the worst of it. For if thou shalt reserve the better for thy selfe, and give the worser unto

CHAPTER IV

Proverbe

[1] *Quien sirve al Altar, coma del.*

God, he will take them both away from thee, so that both thy eyes shall be put out ; hee will bereave thee of the bad, because hee was not good enough for him ; and of the good, because thou thoughtst him too good. You must not change bridles,[1] least you spoyle the horses mouthes : Every horse must have his owne bit : What need a continent man to marry ? [2] Or a lascivious wanton be made a Priest ? [3] The one is not so fit for a wife ; And I am sure the other altogether unfit for the Church. There are many habitations in heaven, and every one hath his right place appointed for him. Let every man take that way, that may direct him to his salvation ; and let him not goe any other way, lest hee may chance to lose him-selfe ; and thinking he treads in the right path, never sees his desire, nor that which hee pretends. It were a pretty kinde of oversight in me, if being to goe from Madrid to Barajas, I should take over Segovia bridge, and passe on to Guadarrama. Or being to goe for Valladolid, I should make for Siguença. Doest thou not see how thou art out of thy way ? Doest thou not perceive thy folly ? Let a Virgin, be a Virgin ; A marryed man, a marryed man : Let the Continent abstaine ; The Religious, be religious : And let every one goe on in the way that is set before him, without turning to the right hand, or to the left.

Proverbe

Proverbe

Proverbe

I was resolved to be a Church-man, and for no other reason in the world, but onely to repayre a broken fortune, to fill my belly, and to be free from my Creditors ; who, as soone as my ten yeares were out, were to come upon my backe. With this, I finely stopt their mouthes, shut the gap whereat they should enter, and left them to shake their eares. I sold my house for almost as much as it cost me : For albeit men doe usually sell houses to great losse, yet mine yeelded mee little lesse then what it stood mee in. For I did value it at somewhat the dearer rate, because it was bettered by the bordering buildings that were round

[1] *No se han de trocar los frenos.*
[2] *No hare buen casado, un continente.*
[3] *Seria malo un lacivo, por religioso.*

CHAPTER IV

An abuse about the rates of houses in Spaine, set downe here at large by Guzman

about it, which time had wrought for mee. When the Scrivener had drawne the writings, and that they were ready to be sealed, and I to receive my money, I said ; That before I proceeded therein any farther, wee would goe to his house, that was the publike Officer for the rating of mens goods, that we might have a Licence from him under his hand, requiring his confirmation of the Contract that was betweene us, and that wee might conclude with him touching the sessing of the rent, as also the twentieth part that was to goe out, and to be levyed upon the sale of the house. When we came thither, and had cast up our reckonings, we found that the sessment came not to above six Royals, but the twentieth part to better then a thousand five hundred. Mee thought this was somewhat cruell, and beyond all reason of policie, that I should give him such a great summe of money, which amounted to more then the Fee-simple of the ground, whereon I built it. I stood upon it, and was very loth to pay him so much, but because my standing out might have hindred the sale thereof, and so I might have let slip the occasion of doing my selfe good, I paid those duties ; but with protestation, to require the same againe by course of Justice, as a thing which in all Law and Conscience, hee could not duely challenge of me.

The Master of the Office began to laugh at me, as if I had uttered some famous foolery. And it might very well be so ; but as then it did not seeme so unto me. I askt him, why hee laught : He told mee, at my pretension. And that he would returne me all my money againe, on condition, that I would but give him halfe a Royall every day, till I had sentence on my side in this sute. I was about to have accepted of it ; it seeming to my understanding, that an ill custome ought not so farre to over-sway reason, but that upon discovering the cunning and deceit used therein, it would easily be abrogated, and broken. Nor would this which I speake of, beene my case alone, but all the whole Kingdome would have put in their plea into the Courts of Justice ; and as well for their private profit, as the publike good, would have declar'd them-selves in my

favour, to the end that there might be some order taken for the redressing of so great a wrong. I was not so wide of the marke; nor did I goe upon such weake grounds; but that with that which I then knew, I thought I should be able strongly to maintayne my opinion, it seeming unto mee *scientiam certam*, a setled knowledge, the certaintie whereof could not be gaine-said.

It might have so fallen out, that I might have defended it with a little coste, and peradventure I might have spent much in it, and so much, that not onely this one, but all others of this kinde, might have beene utterly overthrowne. As it did once happen with certaine Sessings, that were a-foot in those dayes, for that it was found out at last, that there was in the setting of those rates a certaine kinde of Usury, which our State doth not allow. The cause which moved mee to this Defence was, because I saw it grew out of the discourse of naturall Reason: considering with my selfe, that onely from thence, all Lawes had their beginning.

But because this businesse crept in by degrees, and was not so currant and common in the world, as now it is, it was not much stood upon. But if wee shall a little more curiously search into it, and the abuse thereof were well lookt into, I doubt not but it would appeare so harsh and sower to most mens tastes, that it would in some great part, if not wholly, be reformed. For suppose a thing not to bee worth any more then that which is given for it; and that this which is given, ought to bee limited, finite, and certaine. Now, if to mee they should sell that plot of ground for a thousand Royals, with two Royals of perpetuall rent upon it, and that there is not any man that will give more for it, nor indeed is worth any more; and that I have spent in building a house upon it, three thousand Ducats at least in good money: If it bee a truth, and a Rule in Law, that no man ought to make himselfe rich with another mans wealth; why should this prolling Officer inrich himselfe out of my moneyes. For that this, which gives this valew, and inhances the price of the ground, is mine owne peculiar purse, and those moneyes I laid out

my selfe, is a cleare case, and cannot bee denyed. So that, if the same building, which I had reared, should bee taken downe and carryed away, the ground it selfe would remaine upon the very same tearmes, as it did before that I had bought it: So that this twentieth peny to be leavied out of it, seemeth in my poore understanding, to be rather *pœna delicta*, a punishment for the offence that I had committed in building me an house, then *debitum justum*, a just and due debt; because it hath its being from a bad cause.

And so true is this, which I have already told you, that in case even that very day, that I sold this house, I should have placed a pillar in it, or a *Statua* of stone, of some great value, and that buying the same together with my house, hee should give me in the whole ten thousand Ducats, out of which summe, this officer will have a twentieth part; if I, to excuse this intolerable taxe, may take away, and have taken away the *Statua*, and afterwards sell the house for onely one thousand Ducats; I may well justifie the doing of it, and they can demand no more of me, then what accrewes unto them out of the price of the house. But that we may proceed a little farther; If I should afterwards carry away all the yron-worke, the timber, and the glasse; if I should demolish the wals, and should make it, of a house of tenne thousand Ducats, scarce worth a hundred, I may likewise doe it. And I may lawfully sell all that I thus tooke away, and separated from the house, without being charged with the twentieth part.

How then can this hang together, that the parts, every one of them being taken severally by them-selves, doe owe no such taxe, but in whole, and in grosse, should be lyable to this debt? If the master of this office should say unto me; you are to pay me the twentieth part of that price, whereat you first bought this plot of ground, for the which you paid a thousand Royals, and that the charge where-with he charged me, should still runne on in this set and certaine kind of manner, there were some reason for it; as being grounded upon *Dominium rectum*, a true and lawfull claime; for that it was sold with that condition, at such a

set price, with such a reservation of a perpetuall rent upon it, which I voluntarily and willingly did accept of. But how can he oblige me, or I consent to pay that which I my selfe doe not know what it is, nor how much it may come to, and which peradventure may amount to such an excessive summe, that onely with that twentieth part, I might buy a whole Towne. And as those that I bestow'd upon my house, were but three thousand Ducats, they might as well have been three hundred, or thirty thousand, and that house might hap to have beene sold thirty times in one yeare, which would have come to an excessive and exorbitant sessment. And such unreasonable rates as these are neyther ratified in the Civill nor the Canon Law; nor hath any other ground or foundation for it, but that which ariseth from that which wee call *jus Gentium*, or the Law of Nations. And that, not *commune*, but *privatum*, not common, but private: for it is imposed, as it pleaseth the Imposer, nor doth it passe generally in all places, but in some particular parts; and within foure leagues compasse, in some townes they pay it, and in some, not. Especially in Sevill, and in almost all Andaluzia they know no such thing, nor so much as ever once heard of it. The perpetuall Sessment, that was first setled, this, I say, is ever more truly paid, without any other taxes or tallages, though the said possession or house should be solde a hundred thousand times over.

Now, for to make the carrying away of the twentieth part lawfull, it must be by the vertue of a Common-Law, ratified and confirmed by the approbation and consent of the whole Kingdome: but this neyther is so, nor ever was, but onely approved by the ignorant; and such mens errour, cannot make this good. There is no man but knowes the nature and qualitie of your Sessings, as also how and which way they are to bee raised, and with what reason and moderation, and how much is to be paid out of every hundred: And if these bee lyable to the Lawes, and subject to their censure; why should not these perpetuall sessings, as they call them, submit themselves in like

manner to the Lawes? What strange kinde of taxes are these? What new kinde of devices to wrong the subject? What reason is there, that they should be paid in this manner? What ground have they for it? They have but two prices to worke upon: Eyther that, for which I bought it; or that for which I sold it. And why should they not rather pitch upon the price for which it was bought, then for which it was solde? Will they oblige me to pay these duties out of mine owne particular moneyes, out of my proper expences, out of mine owne improving of my estate, and out of mine owne proper industry? CHAPTER IV

So that every way, this Case being nakedly laid open, and duely considered, there being no greater eyther Law or Reason on their side, then I can see as yet, it seemeth unjust, that they should take that my wealth from mee, which I had *bona fide* spent upon it, or from my Wife and my Children, being that the one halfe thereof is ordinarily lost, that is laid out in building. Why then should it be permitted, that my principall, by the benefit of that peece of ground, should not onely become lesse, then before, but that I must afterwards also pay, and lose that which they take from me, and carry away with this their twentieth part?

And in case it must be paid, as paid it is, and that to a peny; let it be lookt into, treated of, and determined: for it being defined and set downe, we will rest satisfied, because it hath beene consulted on, and that good heads had the handling of it, who would not willingly doe any thing but what is just and honest; and therefore ought to like of it. But till that course be taken, the people take great scandall thereat; not a man but talkes, and that liberally to of the great wrong and injury which they receive hereby. Some, holding it for a great peece of injustice; and others, not able to containe them-selves, styling it with worser names.

This past with mee at that time with the Receiver of these Sessments. But hee and I were well met, wee were ene as wise one as another; I knew little, and hee not over-much. Hee would needs reply unto mee, saying; That,

was the condition of the Contract, and therefore was of force: For a man may oblige himselfe as farre out of his owne free will, as if hee had beene otherwise bound. This did not satisfie mee, wherefore I answered that truly, That it were likewise a Condition of Contract, if I should lend an hundred Ducats, which were to be paid unto mee within such a time, wherein if hee fayled, he was to pay mee every day eight Royals, till hee had paid mee the Principall. But this is not lawfull: So that, to justifie a thing, it is not enough, that it is a Condition contracted, and agreed upon; but wee must see whether it be alowable and lawfull.

Then hee turned upon me againe, and told mee: This, Sir, is but a matter of hap-hazard: for, that a house be solde, or not be sold, is a meere venture: and if it be not solde, there is nothing due unto me. O what a good reason (quoth I) is this? As soone therefore as the house is solde, the twentieth part must bee as a punishment of the Contract. And if it be, why doe you binde my hands, and prohibit, that I may not sell it to such and such persons? You your selfe, by your owne confession, condemne the Contract. You open the doore to all that may pay you, you sell the thing for that it is worth, and you will have the Indians to give you the sweat of their browes, and take paines for you, and for no other end, but to better your owne ground, and by securing you of a good round summe of money, they augment your wealth by diminishing their owne: And when they must live thus by the losse, wilt thou have one out of twenty? But say such a thing should be done *mala fide*, yet you may pretend your right; but of that possession whereof you are now deprived, and have made me Lord thereof in your roome, shall I out of those things, which I may, as it pleaseth mee, eyther remove thence, or bring thither; will you have a pension out of that, which I have ordained for my pleasure? Of the Statuas, the Pyramides, the Fountaines, of whose conduits and waters, I alwayes am Lord and Master, and can alienate all this from thee, without letting thee have any part

therein? wilt thou have it adjudged unto thee, because thou saist it must follow with the whole, as a thing that is founded on thy ground?

That *totum* of yours, I doe not well understand (said he) what it is, neither can I beleeve that it can be brought within the compasse of justice, and that you can carry it away by Law. And I am verily perswaded, that they who know and understand these things, and are able to determine of them, will not incline to your part.

I paid him that which he call'd his due, though sore against my wil, and having made my protestation against it, I beganne to follow the sute: but because the Schooles at Alcala were now shortly to be opened, and that the time drew neer for the Reading of their Lectures, I gave that over, that I might goe about that which did more neerly concerne me. And so committing the care of this and some other businesses to a Solicitor, a friend of mine, and to my father-in-law, I prepared for my journey. I got me my money together, and put it out to profit, which yeelded me a moderate gaine, purposing to spend upon my selfe so much as was needful and necessary for me. I made me a cloak, and a *Sotana*, provided my self of bedding and such other implements as were fitting for a students chamber, and so presently got me to Alcala de Henares, where I had so often wisht to be.

When I came thither, I was doubtfull with my selfe, what I were best to doe, not knowing as yet what to resolve upon, and whether it would bee my better and more profitable course, to take a chamber[1] by my selfe, and to bee all alone, or to be under pupillage,[2] and common with others. I had knowne already what it was to keepe and governe a house, to bee chiefe commander of it, to please mine owne taste,

[1] The Spanish word is *camarista*, which is one that hath no house for him-selfe, nor keepes company with any other, but hyres him a chamber in some house, where he lodgeth, and locks him-selfe up, without conversing with the rest of that house.

[2] In your universities in Spaine, they are called Pupils, that are under a Tutor, for their diet, and their government. And this house where they diet and lodge, they call *Pupillage*. Covarruvias, verb. *Pupilo*.

THE THIRD BOOKE

A Student that puts him-selfe in Commons with a Tutor and his scholler, what things he must be subject unto

and to enjoy mine owne liberty. Yet notwithstanding, having respect to the lesser trouble of the two, I was content at last to take my fortune in the Common, amongst the rest of those Pupils that dyeted altogether in one house, though it went somewhat against the haire with me, (I must confesse) to submit my selfe to the poore and slender pittance of a Master over Pupils, who was to command in the house, to sit at the upper end of the table, to divide the Commons, and to give every man his portion upon his plate, with those his filthy, and perhaps mangy fingers, and those his foule and dirty nailes, as crooked, and as long, as those of an Ostriche, tearing, rather then cutting the flesh, out into threads and strings, like the rending of the barbes, from the root of some plant, or young tree, distribut ing the porrige in Lettice leaves, to make it stretch the farther, cutting the bread eaven, and giving every one his slice for the avoiding of waste, allowing us no new bread, but that which was stale and hard, that we might eate the lesse of it; our *Olla*,[1] was nothing but the fat of bacon, whence onely it might take its name, which made a very glorious broth to see to, and more cleare then the light, at least so bright that a man might easily discerne the least Louse that fell from our sleeves in the bottome of the porringer. Which if we did not swallow downe in stead of a crumme, we would take forth with our fingers, and cracke it betweene our nayles. And of these kind of repastes, we had some foure and fifty every month; for on the Saturdayes, we alwaies made our meales of *Mondongo's*.[2] In fruit-time we had some foure Cherries, three sowre Plummes, one or two little Apricocks, halfe a pound of Figges, and now and then a whole pound, according to the number of those that sate at table; but in that minced and curtall manner, that there was none of us so nimble finger'd, that wee could come to vye it the second time.

Our Grapes were divided by little sprigs or bunches, such as they give little children to their Bever, being no more in

[1] *Olla*, is all that meat, whatsoever is sod togethei in a pot. Covarruvias, verb. *Olla*.

[2] The tripes and intrals of any beast.

the whole, then would lie upon a poore little plate, and he that had most, had not above sixe Grapes that fell to his share. CHAPTER IV

And of these, you must understand, that we had not all of all sorts every day, but in one onely kind : for when we had Figges we had no Grapes, and when we had Cherries we had no Apricockes. Our Tutor would tell us, that too much fruit would breed tertian Agues, and therefore for our healths sake, hee would not have us to eate any more, for feare we should be sicke.

In winter time, upon a little plate, thinly scattered, wee should have a few Raisins laid out, as if they had meant to dry them in the Sunne, so farre off were they sundred the one from the other.

For our last course, to close up our stomacke, we had a thinne slice of cheese, which seemed rather to be a Spiders-web then any thing else, or like those thinne shavings which your Joyners planish away with their playners when they shave their wainscoat ; alledging that those thicker slunchins would dull our wits. Besides, it was so full of eyes, and so transparent, that whosoever had seene it, would have judg'd it to have beene the *diaphragma*, or that thin and slender caule of some young little Kid, or some Lambkins mid-riffe ; and for a need might have serv'd in stead of spectacles, so easily could wee see through them.

Other whiles we had halfe a Pompeon amongst us all, and a little thinne cut of a small Melon, nothing so bigge as a mans head, but about the bignesse of my fist, or a well growne Peare. And upon fish-dayes, we had a messe of lentill porrige, such as Æsope was fed withall, being no better then Duckes-meat ; and if at any time we had pease-porrige, (which was very seldome, that we had such Gau-dies) I assure you, that the best and the cunningest Indian diver of them all, that fishes for Pearle, must have been forced to have dived foure times at least, to the bottome of my porringer, before he should be able to bring up one of these pearles ; which how scarce they were to bee met withall, you may judge by this, that the pease had not given so

much tincture to the porrige as would serve to give a colour to a wenches coyse. One day in the Lent, and no more, hee did use to give us chesse-nuts for an Antipast to whet our stomackes, but no honey with them, for that they were sweet enough (he said) of them-selves ; and of those too, we had but a few, for he would tell us, we were as good eate so much wood, they were so hard of digestion.

What shall I say unto you concerning our fish, which was poorer then the worst poore-Jhon, of our withered and rotten ropes of Onions, our pulpe-fish, our dryde pilchards, that had hung I know not how long in the smoake, and a man had as good almost be hang'd as to have eaten of them, being so drye, and so salt, as if they would have fretted out our very guts and bowels. Wee had every one a piece, and had the head also in to the bargaine, if it were a fasting-day ; but on other dayes, we had but halfe a one, and that was slit asunder head and all, and equally divided betweene two of us.

What shall I tell you of that other fish, which the Abbot would not meddle with, because it was so rammish, and stuncke so vilely ? yet they set it before us, and wee must be contented with it. As also of our fride egges, that wee had now and then, like unto those in some base Inne, or poore victualling house, or little better, if not sometimes worse ; for they would buy a great many of them together, that they might have them the better cheape, keeping them in a tub of ashes, or in some great heape of salt, that they might not grow stale and addle ; and in this manner would they preserve them some sixe or seaven moneths, whole and sound.

A tale of a Student

What shall I say to our benediction and giving of thankes both before and after our meales, and how necessarily we were tied to say a solemne grace ? In so much, that a certaine Student, who tooke his diet in such another kind of Ordinary, as I did, comming late to dinner, and being very hot with the haste that hee had made before they should have dined, fell to unbuttoning of his doublet, and to unbrace him-selfe for coolenesse, and when hee was

about to fall to his meat, he might heare them beginne to give thankes : with that hee strucke his hand against the boord, and with a loud voice said unto them ; Silence (my masters) I know not what I should give thankes for, let them give thankes that have cause so to doe, for I see none. CHAPTER IV

At supper we had a sallat, but a very poore one, and a great deale of chopt greene stuffe, (I know not what) amongst it ; for they would not lose so much as the greene leaves of a Radish roote, or the blade of an Onion, whereof they would not make use, powring a little unsavory oyle into it, and a little vinegar, whereof the one halfe was water, the Lettice were onely thinnely spred upon the top, with two or three slices of Carrets, with a little Marjoram or Penny-ryall mixed with it ; they were wont some-times to intermixe with it (but alwayes all the Summer long) a hodge podge of boyled mutton, that was nothing but mammocks.

They would buy of the reffuse-bones, which the Cookes had left out, when they made their pies : they did cost but little, and tooke up much roome. The show being greater then the price. And when we had not whereon to gnaw, we wanted not yet whereof to sucke ; and the hungry savour of our porrige, was a shooing-horne to draw downe the hardnesse of our bread. Wee had also certaine wilde Olives allowed us, because we should not eate too many of them, for feare of setting our teeth on edge. Our wine was like that which they gave our Saviour upon the Crosse, compound stuffe, that tasted worse then sowre beere.

What shall I tell you of the care that our Tutors wife had, to notifie unto us the fasting dayes that were in every weeke, to the end, that we might not looke for our Collation ; nor call for our breake-fast ; and for the more surety, that shee might not erre, shee would usually say there were two, when there was but one. What shall I tell you of the commutation of our suppers into dinners, which being put both together would not make up a reasonable nunchions. Which when they did give it us, was weighed out as just, and as even, as you would weigh out Saffron, allotting to every one his foure ounces, and not a penny-weight over ;

as if this same Casuist, who did thus size us, did know our necessitie, and how much would just serve our turne; or as if in regard of our long studies, and short dinners, (and those none of the best) we had no reason to finde fault, seeing we were us'd all alike, and were now entred like fellow-labourers into one and the selfe-same Vineyard, where every man must have one and the same allowance, not one having more then another. Or, as if the food that they gave us, were well fitted and proportioned for our sustenance; being that all was so limited, so scanted, so little, and so ill drest, that your schoole-boyes, and poorer sort of schollers could not have their dyet in a worse fashion, who have their stomacks pin'd to their back-bone, who have more minde to a good meale, then a good lecture, and a greater will to eat, then to studie.

Marcus Aurelius his saying

This our Tutor that boorded us, would now and then tell us, that Marcus Aurelius was wont to say; That Sots and Fooles onely had poore studies of bookes, and tables plentifully furnisht with meats; stinting their mindes more then their bellies; but that a wise man (showing himselfe therein most wise) doth abhorre full dishes, and will feed very sparingly, that he may the sooner and the better retyre him-selfe to his studies: That hoggs, and horses, fatnesse did well become them; but that it was more commendable in men, to be leane and slender; for that your grosse men are commonly grosse-witted; besides, they have a filthy wallowing gate; they are unfit to fight either for them-selves, or their friends; they are a kinde of unweldie lumpe, an unprofitable masse of flesh and bone, being not able to use any manly exercise; whereas we see it is quite otherwise in those that are leane, and not laden with fat.

I was willing to graunt him this, to the end that he might not denie me a more manifest truth then the other; to wit; That a little meat, and that naught, quickly shortens the life of man. And if I may not live to thrive by my studies, it is but lost labour to drudge at my booke. What Falcon I pray, was ever brought into the field to flie, which was not first fed before shee came there? What Greyhound, or

other dogge, was ever put to course, or to hunt, before they had put victuals into his belly? They must both be kept reasonably high, and not come hunger-starv'd into the field; for then will neither the one maintayne her flight, nor the other his course. They must be kept in good state; and so must we Students. There is a meane in all things; and that meane is the best. We will grant to these meat-moderators, these gut-mathematicians, That it is not fit to feed to fulnesse, nor to cram the belly as full as it will hold: so as they will yeeld againe on the other side, that we are not to fast, till we grow so feeble therewith, that our leggs are not able to support our bodies. And we had one Student there amongst us, who was well knowne to have his guts shrunke, and his excrements growne mouldie through the penuriousnesse of his dyet. Yet notwithstanding I thought good to make choyce, as of the lesser inconvenience, to enter into pension; it seeming unto me, that being (as I was) a man of some yeares, if I should take a chamber-fellow unto me, I must consort my selfe with one that was mine equall, and such another as I am; considering with my selfe, that as our countenances must be differing, so we might differ in our conditions; whereby it might so come to passe, that whereas I had a purpose to profit my selfe by learning, my studies might end in the harmefull exercise of Vices, frequenting them more then the Schooles. Of two evils, I chose the lesse; and so became a Pupill: Though I knew they would play upon me, and laugh and scoffe at me, to see such a Gyant as I was, in regard of the rest, with such a bigge muzzell, and such another great beard, as the good wife of Peñaranda, to sit and converse with boyes. Yet it was some comfort unto mee, that there were likewise some boorders amongst us, that were as bigge Lubbers (almost) as my selfe; so that (to say the truth) wee, and those lesser frye, were mixed one amongst another, like pease and beanes. And this benefit I had by boording my selfe, that I was free from all manner of care and trouble, not being put to make mine owne provision, nor to take thought either for my

CHAPTER IV

dinner or my supper, but remayned free and at full libertie to follow my booke, and such other things as I had most minde unto. For hee that will attend his studies, must first studie to remove all impediments, that may be a hinderance unto them ; and he that will not doe so, may goe shooe goslins, for any great good hee shall get thereby. I did seeke all that I could to avoyd your Innes-of-Court wenches, those your ancient mayds, or more elderly matrones, that make a living of sweeping chambers, making of beds, emptying of pis-pots, and other the like servile offices ; for they are worse then fire, burning and consuming whatsoever is before them.

What we say of these, may likewise be meant of our Mistresses, our Tutors wives ; we may put them all into a packe, and shuffle them together ; Mistresse and mayd, mayd and mistresse, all is one ; there is not a halfe-penny odds betweene them : O, how my fingers ends doe itch at them ! How much better were it to boxe them about the eares, and to tugg them by the hayre of the head, then to doe them any the least kindnesse, or courtesie in the world. I speake of these Governesses over your young Students, who will seeme to take all the care upon them of guiding the house, and ordering all things in good fashion, as if nothing could be done well without them, when as there is not a more rascall, or roguisher kinde of people in the world. O how quicke and nimble in filching and stealing ! how dull and lazie to doe any labour ! O how cleane would they make our chests ; but how foule would they keepe the house !

Our Master had one Governesse amongst the rest, who did commonly steale from us a third part of that which shee should have given us : And when shee could not come to the fingring of our money, or to pilfering this or that other thing out of our cofers, or our trunkes ; shee would rob us of our coales, our spices, our pease, and whatsoever else shee could cleanely lay hands on, and these commodities she kept apart by them-selves, and when they were growne to some pretty quantitie, shee would sell that unto us, which

we had payd for already; faigning to have bought that, which we well knew shee had stolne. If shee were to wash our linnen, shee would cozen us of our sope, and what with the boysterous blowes of her beetle, squashing and beating them upon some stone, or washing blocke, and rensing them in river water with I know not how many lavers, shee made our cloathes reasonable white, though shee tooke away two thirds of the life of the threads, which wee were forced, through ill handling, to turne into tindar, sooner then, had it beene well us'd, we needed to have done. So that we were not onely damnified by that which shee purloyned from us, but shee marred and quite spoyled that which remayned unto us. Now if you would faine know, how shee spent that which she had thus got, hearken unto me, and I shall tell you.

This Governesse, mayd, servant, huswife, kitchen-drudge, or what other name such a vile creature can be capable of, when she did not sell that which shee had stolne, shee kept it for some poore Scholler, or Servitor, that was her sweetheart, on whom with all care and diligence shee attended, furnishing him with all such things as he had neede of; he could not lacke that, which shee would not presently helpe him to. For him would shee steale our bread; for him would shee skimme our pot, reserving the very best, and as it were the very creame and flower of all that was therein for him. And if by chance he were in the house, shee would be sure to give him of the fattest of the porridge, with sippets of bread throughly soaked in it, and flesh without bones, and his linnen cleanely and handsomly washt with sope; and in a word, shee maintaynd him well out of our meanes; for it was our, and not her purse, that paid for it.

In conclusion, such kinde of women, as these, are prejudiciall, untamable, notable lurchers, arrant theeves; farre worse then that souldiers boy, who playd the wagg-pasty with his Masters pastie; and of eight *Maravedis* made twelve. For hee opened the lid of the pastie, that it was not to be perceived, and supt up all the sirrop and sweetnesse that was in it. Afterwards, his Master sending him

Tricks of a knavish wagg

for wine, he kept the eight *Maravedis* that were given him, to him-selfe, and sold the Jarre for foure, presently comming crying home unto him, and telling him, that the Jarre brake by the way, and all the wine was spilt.

There never came a quarter of mutton into the house, but that by little and little, we lost a fifth part of it, and with it the kidney, saying; That for the devotion which shee bare to the blessed Saint Zoilo, shee would not boyle that part; so that the kidneyes never came to our share; they fell to her sweethearts lot. But he was not so devoted unto her, as to offer her all that he had. There was not any thing that we had, whereof he had not a part, nay sometimes all: saying, I put it here, it stood there but now, the Cat hath eaten it, some body or other hath taken it away, and a thousand such excuses to serve her turne, stealing and filching from us at her pleasure. But will you peradventure seeke to restraine these theeves, to limit them, to keep them within their bounds, or to hinder them in any thing contrary to their liking? It is impossible to doe it. Speake but a word unto them, that doth not please them, there is not a house in all that street, not a shop, a taverne, nor an oven, where shee will not make a large relation of your life, reckning up all the miracles done by you, painting you out to be a wretched and unfortunate man, base-minded, a crib, a hunger-starv'd whore-sonne, a miserable wretch, of an ill condition, a grumble-seede, one that is still murmuring, that a Hen cannot lay an egge, but you must be prying into her nest, that you must have an eye to the skimming of the pot, that you will tye your bacon to a string, and put it into the kettle amongst other meat, a fourth part whereof shall serve you a whole weeke, taking it out one day, and putting it in another, making thy meale of one poore morsell, to make it hold out the longer. Will you turne her out of doores, and take another, you shall not finde any that will come at you; and so you must be forced to serve your selfe: for shee that is gone from you, will tell her that is to come unto you, what a manner of man you are, what an ill life shee led with you,

and for what cause shee quit her-selfe of your service. In a word, hee that will be served by them, must winke at all their faults, must make no replyes, and besides, must let them doe what they list, let them have their owne will, and yet that will scarce content them. CHAPTER IV

I remember, that before I was marryed, I received a maid-servant into my house ; and for that shee was a beastly filthy slut, an idle drone, and altogether unfit for service, I turn'd her away after shee had beene some three dayes with me : Then I tooke another, who seemed to be in good health when shee came unto me, but falling sicke of her old disease, shee onely continued with mee two dayes, and went backe againe to the Hospitall, from whence shee came. Presently after I had a third, a neat servant, but a great theefe ; for willing her to roste me a Conie, shee cuts it in peeces, and stues it, and brought onely to the table the head, the leggs, and the wings, disposing of the rest as shee thought good ; for which roguery of hers, shee stayd with mee onely that day, and the next morning I put her away.

When my neighbours saw that I had three servants in sixe dayes, and that every one of them went away mumbling their mattens, and murmuring at mee, a bad report went of mee, they laid a hundred faults to my charge, and did discredit my service in that shamefull and vile manner, that for some twenty dayes after, I was faine to take my dyet in a common victualing house. For no woman would be drawne to my house, by reason of the evill speech that was given of mee, till such time, as a friend of mine, brought mee one, that was worse then all the rest : for shee would be in love with every body, and denie none that would aske her the question : Not any Stallion that came amisse to her : Shee was a wheele, that was easily to be turned with every hand. I would presently have put her away, but I durst not, for feare of being ill spoken of by my neighbours. And I tell you the truth : For this cause I held it the lesser inconvenience of the two, to leave my house, and to hyre me another in some other street that was farther off, keeping her till then with mee, before I would dismisse her.

And so I did. If you were at home, shee would be abroad; if you were abroad, shee would be at home. If shee have nothing to doe, shee will call to you for flaxe; and if you give it her, shee will say you are miserable, and too great a husband. And neither of these, are without their mysterie. But this I leave to your conjecture.

And how can you imagine them to be otherwise then ill disposed in their persons, when as there is not any Governesse, especially amongst these your Schollers, which is not branded with the like basenesse? These kinde of creatures, would not converse with all, nor yet filch from all, they would have little or nothing to doe with your young idle fellowes, that lye loytring in the market-place, nor with your Lackayes, nor steale from some, though they found it lying before them upon the ground.

I did not make any reckoning of it, nor did it trouble me so much, to see that they rob'd me of my goods, or that they were never without one sweetheart or other, that still haunted their companie, though I was not willing to give way to any such things in my house; as they that went about to rob me of my judgement and my understanding, and to deprive me of my senses; for with lyes and teares they would seeke to grace and countenance their villanies; so that though the truth thereof appeared unto me as cleare as noone day, and that with these eyes I plainely perceived their rogueries, their knaveries, and all their wicked shifts and devices, yet they would force mee whether I would or no, and contrary to mine owne knowledge, to hold their conversation, and their cariage to be good and honest. A man must suffer much at their hands, even at all times, and in all ages. If they be old, they are starke naught; if young, farre worse. And if one be so troublesome, what will two be? Happy is that man, that can excuse him-selfe of them, and serve him-selfe with lesse; for no man is worse served, then he that is most served.

Notwithstanding, I protest, that I do not speake this of our Mrs Governesse, or with purpose that shee should heare me, for I know her to be a good woman, and of that

kinde nature, that shee will forget and forgive all, if you will but begin to her in a cup of wine. CHAPTER IV

I was now setled in my Pupillage, which I patiently suffered, that I might not suffer : What was amisse I sought to amend, by some provision of dainties, which I kept still in store in my chamber, with which I past the better, entertayning my stomacke with them, when I saw it was needfull. Wee thought it good discretion so to doe, and our Master was well content with it, that we should roste a good lunch of porke, or boyle us a friendly peece of bacon, and onely out of the hope that he had, that we would invite him unto it. And I doubt not but all Tutors, by a generall consent, would yeeld to accept of such conditions as these, foure dayes in a weeke.

Living in this manner, as I have told you, after I had studied the Arts, and the Metaphysicks, and had duely observed those publike Lectures that were required of me, they gave me the second place ; when I was presented to take my Degree, the whole Universitie crying out, that they had therein done me great wrong, in taking the first place from mee, that they might conferre it on a Gentlemans sonne of good ranke and qualitie, but my Junior.

Having taken my Degree, I began now to fall to my Divinitie, and to frequent those Lectures. I entred into it with a great deale of delight ; for I tooke much pleasure in following my booke, the bayt that drew me on, being that most sweet entertaynment of the Schooles, because it was a kinde of life, that was somewhat neere a-kinne to that, which I had alwayes led. Where doth a man enjoy more liberty, then in the Universitie ? And who lives so merry and so quiet a life, as your schollers ? What entertainments of all sorts whatsoever, have not your Students amongst them ? There is not the thing you can name, that they want. In a word, they have what they will ; and doe what they will. If they will be civill and retyred, they may fit them-selves with companie that shall jumpe just with them : If loose and dissolute, they shall meet with as mad waggs as them-selves. There every birde shall finde some

The commendation of a Schollers life

of his owne feather, such as shall equally sute with them in their disposition. The studious shall have those that will conferre with them about their studies, that will keepe their set houres, write out Lectures, compare their Notes, and punctually performe all those laudable exercises, that appertaine to a good Student: And if they are disposed to walke abroad, they are like unto your Biskayners, those women that live in the mountaynous Countries; who, where-soever they goe, carry their distaffe along with them, that a man may truly say of them, That they plow, spinning. Where-soever you light upon a Student, though he be out of his Colledge, and walkt abroad, with a purpose onely to recreate him-selfe by the Rivers side, in those sweet and pleasant fields, yet even then doth his wit and his memory also goe a-walking, calling to minde what he hath read, arguing and reasoning upon this, or that other point, and conferring with him-selfe on those things, which he hath studied, being never lesse alone, then when he is thus alone. For men that employ their time well, though alone, cannot be truly said to be alone. If once in a yeare, he will take his liberty, and ride into the Country, slacking for a while the stringe of his bowe, fetching some vagaries abroad to make merry with his friends; what sports or what pastimes can be equall'd with theirs? How by their Art will they make a Pastie to runne of it selfe up and downe the table? A Melon, to roll from one end of the boord to the other? Your biskets, and other dishes of sweet-meats to dance as they will have them? Who can so featly doe these tricks as they? If you will give your Mistresse musicke at her window, if you will bestow a posie on her, some fine embleme, or the like device, entertaine her with pretty jests, and witty conceits, will you have them with a stentorious voyce to deliver an Oration *ex tempore*, to maintayne Paradoxes for pleasure and entertainment, to presse an Argument to the proofe, to invent a thousand merry toyes, to passe away the time, to make something of nothing, onely to show their wit, without any reason or ground that they have to maintayne it: Who, where, or how, can these

things be done so handsomly in all the world, as in the Schooles of Alcala? Where have you braver, or more flourishing wits in the Arts, in Physicke, and Divinitie? Where have you Colledges better seene and practised in the three principall Languages? Whence doe there daily proceed so many and so good Students, as from thence? Where is the like concourse to be found of so many well skill'd in the Arts, who conversing together like friends and brothers, yet as if they were enemies, are alwayes one against another in the exercise of learning? Where so many, so good, and such faithfull friends to be had? Where such good fashion, such good fellowship, such good discipline, such good skill in Musicke, in Armes, in dancing, running, leaping, and throwing the barre, making their wits able, and their bodies agile? Where doe concurre so many good things together, besides the purenesse of the ayre, the clearnesse of the skie, the temperatenesse of the heaven above, and the fertilenesse of the soyle beneath, and above all, such a Cathedrall Church, which may justly be called the Phœnix of the world, for the rare and singular workmanship in that most stately and unmatchable fabricke? O my deare Mother Alcala, what shall I say of thee, that may sufficiently expresse thy worth? Or how, without wronging thee, shall I be silent in thy praise? I shall doe thee wrong, and yet I cannot doe it. Though it were better for me to hold my peace, for therein I should lesse offend. It was a rare thing, if not a wonder, to see any Scholler so debaux'd, or so wholly given over to Vice (were it of gaming, or otherwise) that would omit the principall end for which he was sent thither, or neglect those good studies, whereunto hee was to apply him-selfe; for with us, no greater infamie could befall him, then to be accounted an idle loyterer, and mis-spender of his time. O the sweetnesse of a Schollers life! You cannot imagine the many pleasures and delights that they take: O how merry doe they make them-selves upon S^{t}. Nicholas day, when they meet to make choyce of some petty little Bishops amongst them! What sport doe they make with your

fresh-men ? how doe they play the waggs with them, putting them upon a wheele, and twirling them downe into a hollow pit, bring them up againe laden with snow ? How put a little round rolling pinne betweene the lid of their chests, and the locke, taking forth what they can finger, challenging it as a fee for their entrance ? not a booke of theirs that can escape their hands, no nor their very cloakes that are upon their shoulders. What a pleasure is it to see them labour and canvase for voyces, to make up a major part at the election of their Generall ? How close doe those that are Country-men cling and sticke together, how doe they stickle to make their owne man, every one striving to preferre him that is of their owne Shire or Province ? How stiffely and how faithfully will they labour in the businesse ? What a quarter and a racket doe they keepe, posting away messengers to this friend, and that friend ; impawning all that they can rapp or wring, till the next returne of the Carryer ; some of their bookes lye in lavander at the Cookes ; some at this Inne, and some at that : Scotus his workes are in pawne at the *Bunnoleros*, or those that sell Frittars : Aristotles, lye ingaged in the Taverne ; Bartolus, at the Bakers ; Baldus, and all his fellow Civilians, some in one place, some in another : So one thing after another, all goes away ; not sparing so much as the Jacke of male, that lyes betweene our mattresses ; the sword, that is under our bed ; the pot-lid, that hangs in the kitchin ; the covers of the powdring tubs, of the pans, and what not ? In what Comfit-makers shop, had not we a pawne and a score, when our credit began to faile ?

How Guzman was with-drawn from his studies

In this manner, and with these intertainments, did I merrily passe my time, till I was ready to professe Divinity. And when I was upon my last yeare, and ready to proceed Bachelor therein, my sinnes carried me one evening towards Santa Maria del val ; there are some kinde of Pilgrimages, and other the like places for devotion, that a man were better breake his legge, and abide at home, then to gad thither. For we often goe thither, not with any intention to give an almes to the poore, or to powre forth our prayers

unto God, and to praise and thanke him for his benefits; but all cleane contrary. There we commit a thousand offences against our Lord God, that it were better for us not onely to breake our legge, but our necke too, and to die in the state of grace. I know, and so doest thou too, why I speake it. This perambulation or station of mine, was the chiefe cause, and principall occasion of my utter undoing. Hence rose that terrible storme of my tempestuous life, the destruction of my wealth, and the finall over-throw of my credit. CHAPTER IV

I went out of my lodging, with a purpose onely to visit this holy House: I did so: And at my entring into the Church, I espy'd a company of women, and amongst them some very beautifull and handsome; according to my wonted custome, I made towards the Font, where the holy-water was: I dipt in my right hand, and that little I tooke out on the tops of my fingers, I sprinkled on my forehead: But having my eyes and my feet tending towards that faire herd which you heard me speake of. Not so much as once offering to looke towards the Altar, not once dreaming or thinking on the Sacrament, I kneeled with one knee on the ground, putting forth my other legge in that manner of posture, as your Fowlers use to doe, when they lye close to make a shoot. And in stead of crossing and blessing my selfe, I made a hundred love-signes; and that I might the better drive these Conies into the net, I went directly towards them; but before I could come at them, the game was risen; and going away from thence, they tooke downe through a grove of Alder trees, towards the River side; and being come to a pretty little greene meadow, they made the grasse their cushions, and so sate them downe. I followed them afarre off, to see where they did quat, and perceiving that they had there taken up their rest, and meant to sit by it, for they had now taken out of their sleeves such junkets as they had brought along with them. And as they were thus preparing for their bever, faire and softly, and in a sober and civill fashion, I drew nearer and nearer unto them: This good company consisted of a

widow-woman, a good honest Hostesse, and two of her daughters, that were more faire and beautifull then Castor and Pollux, besides some other their friends and acquaintance, that were not much inferiour unto them, as being likewise endowed with those gracefull gifts of nature ; but she whose name was Grace, (for so was the elder daughter to my Hostesse called) did so farre exceed the rest, that they seemed rather her attendants, then her companions ; they were Starres, but my Grace was the Sunne.

I was a man generally well knowne, I had resided in Alcala some seaven yeares and better ; was accounted one of the best Students amongst them, and held to be rich, which was no small addition to my credit ; Attributes, that have the power to draw the hardest hearts to love. And these wenches were the buxomest and the wittiest in all the Towne. Now they were beginning to fall to their *merendar*, or intermealary repast, when jesting with them, I beganne to insinuate my selfe, and to close with them ; wherein I was not so crafty, but they were as cunning.

But before I proceede any further, leaving this businesse on these tearmes you see, I must give you to understand, that what with the charge I was at, for bookes to furnish my Study, for the taking of my Degrees, and for apparell, I, and my moneyes, had in a manner made an even reckoning. I had some left, but so little, that I was not able therewith to take my farther Degrees, and so enter into holy Orders. And because, before I was to proceede Bachelor of Divinitie, I must necessarily take Orders, and this was impossible for mee to doe, because I wanted an Ecclesiasticall Benefice, or some Chaplainship to qualifie me ; I had no other shift to helpe my selfe withall, but to have recourse unto my father-in-law, and to request his helping hand, with whom I did alwayes communicate my necessities, whose friendship had never yet fayled me. Hee did encourage me on in my good courses, by affording me at once his best both advice and helpe. For little doth hee (that is able) who doth not as well afford us his hand, as his head ; his helpe, as his counsell.[1]

Proverbe

[1] *Quien puede, poco haze, quando a conseja, sino remedia.*

Hee told mee, that hee would make a Donation unto mee of the possessions of my wifes Dowry, saying; That hee would bestow the same upon me for the maintaining of a Chaplaine to say Masse for his soule: and that I on the other side, should make a Declaration of the truth, obliging my selfe by bond to returne the same againe, when and as oft, as hee should require it at my hands. Even in these things also are these Counter-bonds starke nought, being that they take place against that which is established by the Holy Councels, running on so insolently and so impudently, devoid of the feare of those grievous penalties and censures, which they incurre by these their Symoniacall Contracts. O good God, how is it possible to cut off the thread whereat this so great a mischiefe hangs, since I cannot reforme this abuse in my selfe.

I kindly accepted of his offer, and gave him many thankes, for that his good will was such unto me, that hee would hand in hand walke with me to Hell, to keepe me company.

Shall I here say any thing unto you concerning this point? Me-thinkes I heare you say, No: And that I should not meddle any more with matters of Reformation, unlesse they might doe more good, and worke more amendment then (for ought you see) they yet doe. I can doe no more then I can doe. But say (Friend Guzman) I could, put that to thy account; for what is this to me? Nothing, I assure thee. Doest thou thinke, that thou art the onely man, that is sensible of these things? that thou art the first that hath found fault with these Abuses; or that thou shalt be the last that shall complaine of them? Doe thou talke of that, which concernes thee a little more neerly, and makes more for thy present purpose: For (if you be remembred) you left those pretty wenches with the meat in their mouthes (feasting, and making merry) and expecting the words that should come from yours. Bring us backe againe therefore to thy former discourse, and let these things alone, for there will a day come, when my Lady Symonie shall have her doome.

Thou sayest well, thy demand is reasonable, and I cannot deny it thee. And since that I am so willing to yeeld to thy request, doe me likewise the favour to pardon this my fault, in falling afresh upon this subject.

I stood upon those tearmes which you have already heard me tell you, I had past over all my Lectures, and in a manner ended all my Exercises, a Chaplainship setled upon me, to qualifie mee for the taking of Orders, being within three moneths after to take my Degree. This was in February, I was to take my Orders the first Ember-weeke following, and my Degree about the beginning of May.

This pretty Soules sayings and doings, name and actions, were all compact of Grace : and all the Graces being put together, (should they come upon comparison) must fall short of this Grace. For her wit, shee was a Cabinet stored with all manner of pleasant and merry conceits : for her beauty, I know not how to expresse it better then by silencing it : she sang delicately, plaid daintily on the Violl, was wonderfull discreet, had a nimble apprehension, but quicker eyes, wherewith (me-thought) shee formed a pretty kinde of chearfull laughter upon him, towards whom shee was pleased to turne them, so sparkling and cleare were they, and so full both of life and love. Glancing with them to and fro, hers and mine met, it seeming on the sodaine, that the visive beames in both, reconcentrating them-selves in this encounter, by a reciprocall repercussion, strucke home upon our soules. I knew it was affection in her, and shee was fully perswaded of the like in mee. Shee had rob'd mee of my soule ; and so I told her then, speaking aloud unto her by my lookes, but not a word of any such matter that came from my mouth. All that I then uttered, was onely this ; That they would bee pleased so farre forth to grace mee, as to make mee worthy their Company, by inviting mee to bee their Guest. They did so, every one of them did offer mee a part of their junkets, and did in a manner inforce mee to receive this courtesie from their hands.

When I had given them thankes for this un-deserved kindnesse they had showne mee, commending much their

faire carriage, I beganne (with a very good will, though seeming to bee constrained by their command,) to spread my cloake upon the ground, and sitting downe thereupon, I tooke my share amongst them, (which was none of the least) for they did all strive, who should make most of mee, and bid mee best welcome. I did gratefully acknowledge this their love, the wine went round, we tooke and gave healths one from another, as they came about to our turne, and made so good a bever, that I might very well excuse my supper. CHAPTER IV

When wee had made an end of eating, a maid-servant, that waited upon them, tooke out a Violl, which shee had brought along with her under her mantle; and Grace putting it with a very good grace into my hand, intreated mee to shew my skill thereupon, for that they were minded to dance: Which they did in that manner, with so much comelinesse and arte, and every way so excellently well, but Grace beyond them all, so gracefully, that I was exceedingly taken therewith, and more inflamed now, then before.

When they were now growne weary, and were willing to rest themselves a while, delivering up the Violl into her hands, from whom I had received it, I besought her to grace that Instrument with a Song: which without any kinde of nicety or coynesse, when shee had tuned it, and accorded the same with her voyce, shee performed both so sweetly, as well for the ayring of her notes, as the vowelling of her words, now towring, then melting them at her pleasure: that for the time, shee seemed to have arrested Time. For before ever wee were aware, shee had no sooner made an end, but Time went away; and hastning to recover that hee had lost there, it was instantly night.

And now was it high time for them to hye them home, homewards they goe; and I in kindnesse would needs accompany them all the way, leading my Love by the hand. I was somewhat abasht at the first, not knowing how, or where, to beginne to speake unto her; till shee taking notice of this eyther my dastardlinesse or feare; I cannot

say, whether carelesly, or of set-purpose, shee tript with her Chapin, but to save her from falling, I presently opened my armes, into which I lovingly received her ; and as I was raising her up, my cheeke hapned (as if it had beene done by chance) to leane a little upon hers : But having set her now upon her feet, (taking my subject from thence,) I sodainly flew backe, beseeching her to excuse that excesse, and that if eyther my selfe, or mine eyes had offended in pressing so neere upon her, they were for their owne unmannerlinesse, most willingly ready to receive such punishment as shee should be pleased to injoyne them. Shee answered mee in that manner, that I was forced to reply. And leading her (as before) by the hand, I did gently straine it with mine, wringing it softly hard, that I might not hurt it. Whereat she smiling, said ; For all your wringing it so hard, you shall never squeeze any juyce from thence.

This put a little more mettall into me, and added farther boldnesse to my words : So that faigning that we staid behind, because we were not able to goe any faster, we went discoursing together of our Loves ; I speake onely of mine owne ; for shee laught at all that I sayd, making her selfe merry therewith, the better (as shee would have it so to seeme) to intertaine and passe away the time.

Her mother was a crafty flye subtill thing ; she sought after sonnes-in-Law, and her daughters were desirous of husbands, nor did they mislike of the man : They gave me line enough, till they had led me along by the nose within their owne doores : whither when we were come, they made mee enter into their private chamber, which was very well furnisht ; they brought me a chayre, and would needs have me sit downe, that I might rest my selfe a while ; and taking out of a Cupboard, neere there at hand, a boxe of Conserves, they brought me with it a jarre of water, which was no more then needed for to quench the fire of that poyson which had so scorcht my heart : but all would not doe. It was now time for mee to take my leave ; I did so : desiring them to give mee leave, that I might now and then

receive the like favours againe from them : They told me, CHAPTER
that they should esteeme it as a great courtesie, that I IV
would bee pleased to command this their house, and to make my selfe no stranger, and that in so doing, they should thereby know that my words did correspond with my workes.

Well, now have I left them, and am gone. Not so. I am neither gone, nor yet have I left them. For my heart staid still there with my deare, that she might the better imprint in it the lively image of her matchlesse beauty. I had already bid them good night : But what a night (trow you) was this to me ? How long were the houres ? How short the sleepes ? What a confusion of thoughts ? What distractions of mind ? What a generall warre ? What a battaile of cares ? What a cruell tempest risen on the sodaine, even in the very Port and Haven where I thought my selfe so surely anchored, the skie being so cleare, the weather so faire, and the Sea so smooth, as heart could wish ? This made me say to my selfe ; How in so quiet a calme, could such a sodaine storme come upon me, without perceiving its approach, or knowing how in the world to provide any remedy against it ? I am utterly lost, and undone for ever ; so uncertaine is my hope of recovery. But now that morning was come, and that I had got me to the Schooles, when I came thither, I knew not whether I were there or no ; nor did I understand any one word that was read unto me all the while that the Lecture lasted. That done, I returned home, the cloath was laid, dinner brought in, I sate downe, and offering to eate, my meat would not goe downe, my morsels remained as it were frozen within my mouth, and seemed so carelesse in all that I did, that it wrought amazement in my fellow-Students, and admiration in our Tutor, who thought with him-selfe, that this was but an induction to some most grievous insuing sicknesse. Nor was he therein deceived, for this was the disease that afterwards wrought my death. He askt me what I ayled ? I knew not what answer to make him ; onely I told him, That my heart did fore-bode some great

misfortune, that was comming towards me; for ever since yesterday, me thinkes I feele it sunke downe as it were into my body, and so shrunke together, that I find my selfe in a manner without a soule. All is Lead and lumpishnesse with me, that I know not what to thinke of it.

He told me that I must not be a *Mendocino*, nor be so superstitious as to admit such idle toyes to my imagination, nor to let such abusing illusions to come within me, but to keepe them off at armes-end; for this ill (said he) which you presage unto your selfe, is nothing else but the abundance of some ill humour in the body, which will quickly be removed.

Now, for that I already knew that my malady, *Nullis erat medicabilis herbis*, was not to be cured by any herbes, or other medicinable drugges, I dissembled the businesse, and that I might not manifest the misfortune that was likely to befall me, I sayd unto him; it may be so Sir, and I hope it shall be so, but in the meane while it paines me much.

I rose from boord, but not from dinner, for I had eaten nothing. And thence got mee to my chamber, where I was so oppressed with sorrow, that suffering my selfe to fall downe upon my bed, wrapping my mouth and eyes in my pillow, I powred forth teares in abundance, burying my sighes within the stuffing thereof. What with this and the desire that I had to see the Physitian of my soules health, I found my selfe somewhat eased: So putting on my cloake, and putting off my Lecture, I went home to her house. I may not omit onely in two words to tell you, That there is not any exercise, but desires a continuance thereof, wherein to faile, though never so little, more then ordinary, is like to the breaking of a stich in a mans stockin, which if it be not taken up in time, will ravell out all the rest.

With this Lecture that I lost, I lost the benefit of all my former tearmes, and with them my selfe. For one after another I left off to continue them, not caring a rush for them. Love had now matriculated me in his Schoole, Grace was my Rector, her grace my Tutor, and her will my exercise. I did now desire to heare no other Lectures, but

those shee read to me, nor any other directions, save what her eyes taught me. I beganne in joy, but ended in teares. I beg'd in jest of them a bit of their bever, but I found in earnest, how (going crosse my throat) I was choaked with this contrary morsell. Besides, I was poysoned therewith, for it had quite taken my understanding from me, having now beene bereft thereof for the space of three moneths and more, it being much pittied, but more condemned in me, that one that had beene heretofore so studious, and so famous a Scholler for his time, as there were few better in the University ; should now when hee was come to the up-shot, rove thus at randome, losing both him-selfe, and that good opinion which the world had of him.

The Rector, when he had notice hereof, taking compassion of mee, sought to apply some remedy to cure me of this my disease ; but therein he rather did me hurt then good ; for seeing my selfe so hardly set upon on all sides, but much more oppressed with mine owne proper passion, not having any power of resistance, I burst forth into open rebellion, following my unruly appetite. The bones of reason, which like so many props, should have serv'd to strengthen my weaker understanding, were all broken, and so strangely split and shivered in sunder, that there is no hope of ever setting them together againe.

Now our Loves went on amaine ; the favours afforded me, great ; the hopes, not small ; for it was left to my choice, whether I would have her to wife, or no. Let us now (my masters) change places ; and let him that is the wisest amongst you take mine ; let him be shut up, as I was, in Loves strongest prison ; let him have such just cause as I had, to yeeld my selfe captive unto him ; let him be crost and thwarted in his designes, all things conspiring together, to hinder the execution of his desires ; then let him sit downe and give me counsaile. For that is the man that I would hearken unto. I knew no better meanes for my good, I left all other for this ; for that I thought this would be my best remedy. Her mother offered me her house, and with it all that she had. Shee was a woman that

had good credit in her kind of trading, and had good and quicke returnes, she gained wherewithall to maintaine both the backe and the belly, she made exceeding much of me, shee was ready upon all occasions to serve me, I could not imagine more kindnesse then she was willing to doe me ; she kept me neat, sweet and handsome, and made that reckning and respect of me, as Lord and Master of all. I thought this world would still have lasted ; I sought to avoid the venome of evill tongues, but all in vaine ; for they had raised that already of me, which if it had beene true, perhaps I might not have miscarried. Pardon me (Gentlemen) I am now a married man, and there is no more to be said of it. Is not this an ill accompt which I have given you of so many yeares studies, so much good learning, and being upon the point of taking Orders, and to attaine to some degree in Schooles, that I might at least have beene able to have read another day Lectures in the open Schooles, as publike Professor, and Doctor of the Chayre : which might have beene easie for me to have done, considering the good conceit they had of me. And being come now to the height of all my labours and paines-taking, and when I was to have received the reward of them, and to take mine ease after all this toyle, the stone rolled downe, and I was forced like Sisiphus, to beginne the world anew, and to fall afresh to my worke. Doe thou therefore consider that now, which I then so often thought upon.

O how often doth God put a spoake in our wheele ! How doth he crosse our designes, making them to prove vaine and fruitlesse ! For the Altar being now made ready, the wood laid upon it, and upon it Isaac, the sword drawne out, the arme lifted up on high, and now letting it fall, to strike the stroke ; even then, and not till then, was it hindred in its execution.

O Guzman, why didst thou sit up so late a-nights to thy booke ? Why wast thou so diligent at thy studies ? Why didst thou rise so early in the mornings ? Why didst thou continue so long in the Schooles ? So many Acts, so many Degrees, so many pretensions, as thou hadst now

on foot, what is become of them all? what good will they doe thee? CHAPTER IV

I have already told you, that the courses which I tooke in my childhood, came to end in the carrying of a basket; and now these of my more manly years, to make their mansion in an Inne, or common Victualling-house. And God grant my troubles may here have an end, and that my foot may be once fixed.

CHAPTER V

Guzman de Alfarache, leaves off his studies; he goes to live at Madrid; hee carries his wife with him; from whence they were both banished

HAVING leapt from a Bachelorship of Divinity, into the degree of a Master of prophane Love; it is now to bee supposed that I am become a Licentiat; and having already so farre proceeded therein, I may with your good licence (as a true professor thereof) be permitted to speake so much as I know concerning the same. For, out of the good experience that I have had thereof, I dare boldly boast my selfe to be one of the best Proficients that was ever bred up in the Schoole of Love. If we should goe about to define it (so many having said so much of it) it were but to repeat that Lesson, which hath already beene said over a thousand times and more. Love then is, *Totum in toto*, all in all: And so contrary in its effects, that the more we say thereof, the lesse we shall be understood. Yet will wee shoote one arrow amongst the rest that have endevoured to hit this marke, and say something of that whereof so many have spoken.

Love is the prison of Folly, borne of Idlenesse, bred up by Selfe-will and Money, and maintained with Filthinesse, A discourse of Love

Uncleannesse, and Dishonesty: It is the excesse of a bruitish and beastly desire; most subtill and piercing, making its way through the eyes to the heart: It is that poysoned shaft, delivered from the hand of the Archer, which never stayes till it come to its Center. It is a guest, whom with a great deale of earnestnesse, we our selves invite, but being once received into our house, is not so easily put out. It is a childe that longs for every thing it sees, fantasticall, and full of Apish trickes; it is an old doting foole, feeble and decrepit. It is a sonne that will not pardon his owne father; and a father which will mis-use his owne sonne. It is a God that hath no mercie, a secret enemie, a feigned friend, a blind but sure shooter, weake to undergoe any paines, and yet as strong as Death. He observes no law, nor is he governed by reason; he is impatient, suspitious, jealous, revengefull, and a sweet tyrant. They paint him blind, because he keepes neither meane nor measure, distinction or election, order or counsaile, constancy or modesty, but evermore erres. They give him wings, to show his lightnesse, in apprehending that, which is beloved by us, by which he bringeth us to an unfortunate end. So that onely he that goes blindly to worke, speeds best; and he that lightly wooes, likely winnes the wench. And though these, and such as these, bee the effects of Love, yet for to bring them to passe, ere ever we can execute them, he will, that we shall want patience in our hopes, feare in the hazarding of our persons, wit in our words, modesty in our demands, judgement in making our choyce, a bridle to restraine our inconsiderate actions, and consideration to free us from dangers.

I fell in love at the first sight, I was taken with a looke, the darts that flew from forth those her eyes, comming so thicke, and with that force upon mee, that I presently yeelded thereupon, and became her Captive. Nor was transcursion of time, needfull in this case, as some would necessarily inferre, which affirmation of theirs, I hold to bee an error. For, ever since the fall of our first parents, with that Leaven of theirs, was the whole lumpe and masse

of mankind made sowre, and corrupted with these their hereditary vices ; the frame of this humane horologe, was so broaken, and put out of order, that there was not one whole wheele left, to answer one another, nor any spring remaining, whereby to give it motion : But was so utterly spoiled, so rent and torne in pieces, and so wholly out of all frame and order, as if it had beene a cleane contrary thing, so differing was it now, from that first setled estate, wherein God had created it ; the alteration of this its truer course, arising from mans disorderly disobedience. From hence, grew that blindnesse in his understanding, that forgetfulnesse in his memory, that defect in his will, that disorder in his appetite, that depravednesse in his Actions, that deceit in his senses, that weaknesse in his strength, and those paines and torments, in his greatest delights, and pleasures. A cruell squadron of sore and fierce enemies ; who, as soone as God hath infused our soules into our bodies, incompassing us on every side, violently set upon us ; and so hotly assaile us with the sweet enticements of sin, faire promises, and the false apparances of foule and filthy pleasures, that they over-throw all goodnesse in us, and so taint and corrupt our soules, that they put them quite out of that good course, for which they were created. So that it may be said of the soule, that it is composed of two contrary parts, the one rationall and divine ; and the other, of naturall corruption. And forasmuch as the flesh, on that side whereto it inclines, is weake, fraile, and so full of imperfection, (sinne having so wholly infected it cleane throughout) hence is it come to passe, that imperfection and disorder, is as it were naturall unto us. And such and so great is this extreame, that man cannot account any conquest greater then the subduing of his passions.[1] Great is his courage, whosoever he be, that can resist them, and bring them under, in regard of that mortall warre, and infernall enmity, which is, and still will be, betweene our Reason and our Appetite. For our Appetite perswadeth us unto that, which is most agreeable to our nature, to

[1] *Fortior est qui se, quam qui fortissima vincit mœnia.*

that which doth best like and please us, and to things of that quality, which we take pleasure to treat of, and have a desire to obtaine them. Whereas on the contrary, Reason is like unto a Schoole-master, who, that she may the better correct us, goes alwayes with a rod of reprehension in her hand, condemning the ill which wee commit. But wee, like little children, play the Truants, and flye from this Schoole, for feare of correction when wee doe amisse, and runne a-mouching eyther to our Aunts house, or our grandfathers, where wee are made much of, and suffered to play the wantons.

Reason many times made subject to our sensuall Appetite

Thus often (if not always) Reason remaineth (which ought not so to be) in vassalage and slavery to our Appetite: Which when it hath once gotten so great a power and dominion over us, that of filthy Love, being so vehement, so violent, so powerfull, so proper to this our being, so solely, and wholly ours, so sutable to our disposition, so glued and wedged to our nature, that to breathe, or live, is not more proper unto us; it must of necessitie follow, that it is the hardest passion to represse, the terriblest enemy that wee have to deale withall, and who with most strength and greatest force comes upon us, assaults us, and subdues us.

And albeit, it be true, that Reason, holding (as shee doth) her ancient place of preheminence, is wont sometimes to hinder, by her great wisedome and valour, the sodaine working of a looke (although it have the power of potent causes, to assist and further the same) that it may not easily, and as it were in a trice, rob us of our will, before wee are aware, putting a man in an instant besides himselfe: yet (as already hath beene said) for as much as the Appetite and the Will, are such sure marke-men, so free, so Lord-like, being never yet taught to obey, nor acknowledge any Superiour, it is an easie thing for them, having Love on their side, to worke whatsoever effects, and in such forme and manner, as shall seeme best to stand with their owne liking.

And because likewise there is not any thing, which doth

not naturally *appetere bonum*, desire that which is good; and that every action which wee undergoe, is in regard of that good, which represents it selfe unto us, or that happinesse wee finde to be in it, wee evermore desire to obtaine the same, and joyne it unto us, side (as they say) to side: nay, wee would (if it were possible) out of this our earnest desire, convert it, and incorporate it into our owne substance. CHAPTER V

From hence then, this Conclusion may be gathered; That, for a man to fall in love, there is no such force or necessitie in it, that there should some distance of time interpose it selfe, that some discourse ensue thereupon, or that there be any election or deliberation had in the matter; but that upon the very first veiw, that onely, sole, single, and primary sight, there may joyntly concurre in both, a correspondence, or consonancie, or (as we here in Spaine commonly use to call it) *Una confrontacion de sangre*, a confronting, or conformitie of the blood, wherin the starres by a particular influence, are wont to worke, and doe often move us thereunto. Men may sodainly fall in love

For, being that these beames doe dart themselves by the eyes from the heart, they take infection from that which they finde before them, especially if those they encounter withall, be like unto their owne, and returning presently backe againe to the very self-same place, from whence they were sent forth, as they draw these in with them to the heart, so doe they portrait and ingrave therein that fayre object, which they saw and desired. And because it seemeth to the Appetite, to be a noble pledge, and well worthy the buying, at any rate or price whatsoever, esteeming it as a thing of infinite value; it presently enters into treaty, how he may come to injoy the same, freely offring for it, and with a very good will, the greatest treasure and riches, that hee hath, which is his Liberty, his heart being made prisoner by that Lord, whom himselfe admitted into his bosome.

And in that very instant, that this *bonum*, or this thing, be it what it will bee, comes to be beloved, and entertained

by us, it is likewise to be considered, that man doth forthwith apply his understanding to esteeme it as its *summum bonum*, or chiefest happinesse : and so desiring to have it converted into himselfe, is himselfe converted into that which he so much desireth.

Whence it commeth to passe, that those very selfe-same effects, which may be wrought by length of time, getting ground upon us by continuation, consideration, and conversation : so also they may be occasioned in that instant, that this contentment, or pleasure, that wee take in that good, which wee in our imagination, figure and fashion to our selves, is caused in us. For, in regard that wee know not, or (to speake in a truer kinde of language) will not hinder the course thereof, nor make any resistance against it ; as also in respect of the corruption of our nature, debilitie of our reason, captivitie of our liberty, and the weaknesse of our forces, dazled, if not blinded, with this light, wee want wings to flye from it ; and like men that are hood-winkt, runne headlong on to our owne ruine : it seeming decent and fitting for us, to yeeld our selves presently thereunto, as to a thing that is naturall unto us.

And this is so proper unto man, as light is to the Sunne, cold to Snow, heat to Fire ; as it is to heavy things to descend, and to those that are ayrie to ascend ; without giving way to the understanding, or any power to free-will, who injoying their priviledges, might exercise their office ; which are now in subjection to the Will, which remaines now no more free, so that in stead of making resistance, wee furnish the enemie with weapons against our selves. Just so, doth it succeed with Reason and Understanding, in regard of the Will. For whereas in that first age, whilest wee stood in the state of innocency, they were absolute Lords, and like Kings, had all things under their subjection, and did conserve and keepe in peace, all that fayre and goodly fabricke. After mans first sinne, they remained slaves, and were made obedient to the Will, and forced to become the ministers and executioners of this her cruell Tyranny. So that now, our passions and affections having

Of Reason, Understanding, and the Will.

got the upper-hand, and wee being furthered and led along with a blinde and depraved understanding, and hungring and thirsting after our owne lustfull appetites, wee doe inconsiderately debase our manly brests, bowing them to the ground, to lappe of those waters, which may please the palate of our lustfull pleasures. CHAPTER V

Wee flye like hooded Falcons, one while towring to the uppermost Regions of the ayre; another while taking through the thickest woods, ignorant of any future danger, nor fearing the assured mischiefe that must light upon us. So that few doe stand upon this distance of time, which is set before them, neyther doe they previse, or provide for after-claps; or if they would, Love will not suffer them so to doe, so impatient is this little-great-God, of delayes. And these the like effects did he worke upon us.

I was now turn'd marryed man the second time, and so well and happily to mine owne liking and content, that I did verily perswade my selfe, *Que nunca por mi se començara el toçino del parayso*, That I should never have fallen from so great a happinesse, and that I should still have continued the happiest man in the world. I did not then consider with my selfe, nor did it once enter into my imagination, that this holy Ordinance, ordayned by God in Paradise, I should solely and wholly have sought after it for the service and glory of God, the augmentation of his Church, and the continuation of mine owne Species or kinde, by a lawfull meanes of succession. But these, were the least of my thought, I did meerly intend mine owne pleasure and delight. It was her beauty, and not my duty, that I minded. Much lesse, did I give place to the Understanding, that hee might advise mee to that which hee knew was best for mee: nor indeed was I willing to hearken to his good counsaile. I did shut mine eyes against those things, that should have done me good. I did put Reason away from mee: I ill intreated Truth, for shee told mee, that marrying with a fayre woman, many cares must necessarily offer them-selves unto mee, for feare shee should become common. Proverbe

THE THIRD BOOKE

In conclusion, being ill advised, I pursued to please mine owne humour, an ill-desired-good : I was blinded with those her naturall gifts, and bewitched with her grace and beauty ; things, as proper to my Spouse, as they were without any artifice or dawbing. Hee erres, who thinkes that any thing can seeme well that is an artificiall composition, or a borrowed beauty : for this fayre tincture that is given to the face, is but a false and counterfeit plaistring ; and when that dawbing is taken off, that foulnesse that was there before, returnes afresh, and becomes more fowle.

Proverbe

I liv'd as merrily as the day was long : And hee, that is not blest with a Mother-in-law, knowes not what a blessing he wants.[1] Shee us'd mee as if I had beene her owne sonne, seeking by all meanes possible how shee might please me, and give me content. There was not any Guest, that brought a good morsell of meat into the house, whereof I had not a part. And if it came not in that wayes, why then her purse should pay for it, buying the best the market would afford.

Wives with great portions looke for large maintenance

And as my wife brought me but a small dowry, so did shee take unto herselfe the lesse liberty of speech, and had the lesse cause to put me to unnecessary and superfluous expence, and to demand a thousand idle toyes of me ; which chargeable fooleries, your wives that bring great portions, too-too often put their husbands unto. Shee was young, and so young, that I easily wrought her to mine owne will, and could bowe and bend her which way I list my selfe. It was a pretty flexible foole, and was willing to be rul'd by mee.

I had got me kinsfolke, who thought them-selves much honoured and graced by my person, because they knew I was every way superiour unto them. For hee that shall linke him-selfe in alliance with those that are of greater ranke and qualitie then him-selfe, shall never lacke Lords, to serve ; Judges, to feare ; and Princes, to whom hee must pay perpetuall tribute. But my Mother-in-law was tributary to me, and my Sister-in-law was my slave, my Spouse

[1] *Los, que no gozan de suegro, no gozan de cosa buena.*

did adore me, and all the house did serve mee. Never at any time, as now, was I so free from taking thought for any thing, or from the troubles and cares of this world. For I thought upon nothing, but eating, drinking, and sleeping, and to passe away the time merrily, without being subject to anothers controlment, nor lyable to any payments, not so much as the value of one farthing, eyther for house-rent, or to the King. All did dance after my pipe, and did foot it as I would have them. But this dance was the blindemans Measure, and my selfe that led them, was the blindest amongst them.

CHAPTER V

Guzman his happinesse

They say of Circes, that inticing strumpet, that with her wicked sorceries, and divellish inchantments, she turned those men into beasts, with whom shee conversed. Some she turned into Lyons ; others, into Wolves, Boares, Beares, Serpents, and other the like bruitish shapes : but withall, left them their understanding quicke and sound ; for in that particular shee did not touch them. But this other whore (which is our blinde Will) takes a cleane contrary course ; for, leaving us the formes of men, shee bestowes on us the understanding of beasts. And (as I have said heretofore) I never saw any alteration of fortune, which was not accompanyed with some disasters, which were never presupposed, or once dreamt of before. And alwayes at the first shee makes show of a great deale of love and kindnesse, that to our greater griefe shee may tumble us downe, from that height of happinesse, wherein wee now supposed wee safely stood. For that which grieves us most in these our worldly losses, is the recordation of the possession of them. So that the more (in injoying them) was our happinesse, the more sensible (in losing them) is our misery. Shee turn'd her wheele, against me, my wife, and all our whole house.

The mutable effects of fortune

My father-in-law (whose soule is now in heaven) though he were an Inne-keeper, yet I can assure you he was a good honest man : for they are not all of them knaves, they doe not all picke their guests pockets, rob their mailes, nor peruse their cloak-bags : and there are many of them that

Guzmans father-in-law, what manner of man he was

doe not will their Ostlers to cozen the beasts of their provender; nor will them-selves pinch their guests in their dyet, and yet make them pay deare for it. For these are things which appertaine more properly unto women, for that they are naturally more sparing and solicitous about these things, then men, and more curious in the ordering of their provision. And if there be any such false dealing amongst them, the fault was none of theirs, nor was any such thing to be presumed from my father- or mother-in-law; for they were good honest plaine people, bred in the mountainous Country, as good Gentle-folk, and as well descended as Cid himselfe, save that through their misfortune and poverty, they were forced to follow that course of life: which shall plainly appeare unto you by that which ensueth. For he being so honest a man as he was, such a friend to his friends, and naturally given to doe other men good, he trusted one of his acquaintance with a certaine rent of Tithes: some would say, that he spent all this Barley and Wheat in his house, but I doe not beleeve it, being it fell out so ill with him; but did rather lose thereby, preferring his credit before his profit. For as it was afterwards told me, both by my mother-in-law, my wife, and my Sister-in-law, hee was a man that lov'd to fare well, and that his table was alwayes well furnisht, his vessels were fill'd with rich Wines, he made much of himselfe, and led as merry a life, as cup and can could make him: for there are a certaine kinde of men whose God is their belly.

A tale of a poore fellow in Sevill, that lov'd to fare well

I knew a good-fellow in Sevill, that was just such another for all the world as hee was, though hee liv'd not in that credit as hee did; who pickt out a poore living by copying out of Sermons, every sheet that he wrote, yeelding him halfe a Royall. This mans helpe my selfe had occasion once to use, for to copy out a certaine Processe for mee at home in mine owne house, and hee having staid somewhat long after dinner, before he returned againe to his worke, I demanded of him why he came no sooner: And he told me that hee was faine to goe a great wayes off to fetch his dinner. But looking a little better upon him, and behold-

ing him to be a man, made of Taylors shreds, composed of a company of patches, and those all to bee tatterd and torne, not having a ragge to his taile, a shooe to his foot, a cloake to his backe, nor a hat to his head, but as poore as poore might be ; I imagined with my selfe, that for his owne ease he might or ought to have dined in some poore victualing-house, or the next Taverne, that was at hand. Whereupon, I said unto him, Are there no Cookes shops, or victualing-houses here-abouts, that you are forced to goe so farre ? Hee told me ; Sir, I am a poore man ; I eate that I get, and I get what I can, that I may live the better. To that *Bodegon*, or victualing-house whither I goe, they are acquainted with my dyet ; and know that I will have to my dinner a pound of the best mutton that is to be bought in the market, and another of Kid : the sawce thereunto being Rocket and Sugar. And this is my fashion of feeding for the winter : for the sommer a little thing contents me, a morsell of veale, or a chicken, or some such light meate. CHAPTER V

Guzmans miserable estate

But to goe on with my former discourse, This friend and acquaintance of my father-in-lawes, beginning to sinke in his estate, and dying within a few dayes after, when the day of payment was come, they came upon my mother-in-law with an Execution, by vertue whereof they ceazed on all that was in the house, and carried away with them whatsoever they found there, and I was afraid that they would have taken me and my wife along with them, as reckning us a part of the houshold-goods. But though they did not, yet was it little better, and in a manner almost all one : for they tooke us by the shoulders, and thrust us out of doores, that we might not hinder them in the execution of their office, or keepe a coyle and stirre with them about the carrying away of the goods.

We saw our selves, like those that are rob'd by pyrates, rifled of all that wee had. We made shift to with-draw our selves, as well as we could, to a neighbors house ; and because the creditors would make the best benefit that they could of the Inne, being willing that they should have it,

THE THIRD BOOKE

that would pay most for it : there were not those wanting, that did seeke to out-bid one another ; for there is no man so great an enemy unto thee, as he that is of thine owne trade.[1] In these kind of men, there is no envy wanting ; they doe repine at anothers prosperity, and seeke to cut each others throat.

Proverbe

This Inne, had beene heretofore in very good credit ; so that they went out-vying one another, (every one striving to have it) still out-bidding my mother-in-law, who was likewise a suter unto them, that shee might rent it of them, for that she, and her daughters, had beene there bred up, and had continued therein so long, which made her the more desirous to hold it, and to offer more for it then it was worth. In conclusion, we had possession againe of the house, in despight of all our enemies, but so inhaunced in the rent (for the which we may thanke others malice) and other by-payments, that were to goe out of it, that we were scarce able to find our selves bread and pilchards. For the Rent, like a Sponge, did sucke up all our gaines, and drunke up so much of our commoditie, that we were ready (being thus over-rented) to perish for want of food.

When I saw my selfe brought to so low an ebbe, I beganne to bethinke my selfe, purposing to make use of my Philosophy, and apply my selfe to the studying of Physicke, thinking to thrive by that course, and to picke a good living out of it ; but it would not fadge with me, nor was it possible for me to doe my selfe good that way ; howbeit I had spent some time therein, to make triall what I could doe : Some little profit I made of it, by reason of those good grounds which I had from the Metaphysicks : For it is a usuall saying with us, That, *Ubi definit Philosophus, ibi incipit Medicus ; et ubi Medicus, ibi Theologus* : Where the Philosopher ends, there the Physitian beginnes ; and where the Physitian, there the Divine. The maine drift of my desire was, to see if I could make a shift to rub out, and by some meanes or other to sustaine my selfe ; but all was lost labour, howbeit that I might the better bring the world

Guzman studies physicke

[1] *Quien es de tu officio esse es tu enemigo.*

about, I permitted gaming, visites, conversations, and other impertinencies in my house, all which did me more harme then good. I sought to shunne Charibdis, and fell upon Scilla.[1] And thinking to mend, I mar'd my fortune. So seeing mine owne error, and perceiving at last, that none of all these would come to take fire, I beganne to consider with my selfe, that some dainty pleasing bayte, that was sweet to swallow, would doe the deed, and prove like unto your Comine-seeds, which being hung up in a little linnen bag in some Dove-house, will onely with the sent thereof, cause the Pigeons to flocke unto it. But herein that happened unto me, which commonly befalleth your Comfit-makers; when as the Flies with the very savour of his sweet meates, resort in swarmes to his shop, and there glut them-selves with feeding upon these his pleasing confections.

CHAPTER V

The property of Comin-seed

At the first I dissembled it a little, and would not seeme to take notice of any such thing; for give you but never so little way to a woman, slacken but the line that holds her in, and nothing in the world will lash out more, or assume more liberty to it selfe. Lay but the raynes on her necke, and seeke not to hold her in, there is no ho with her; then shall you see what friskals shee will fetch, leape, fling, and flie out, that no ground shall hold her. She will take hedge, or ditch, or any thing; nothing comes amisse, though it be to the breaking of her owne, and her riders neck.

Women apt to take too much liberty

All things (as it is with old cloathes) grew worse and worse with us, wee did eate, but (God he knowes) how little it was, to so hard a scantling, and to such a poore allowance, were our hungry bellies limited. But there was no limitation put to our lawlesse liberties, they had now broken all bounds of modesty, they had lost their former sure footing, and had runne them-selves out of all order, without any feare or respect, either to God or man; so that my reputation lay now in the suds, our honour gone to ruine, our house, all on a flaming fire; and all this were we faine to suffer, for want of food. My mother-in-law was content to winke at it, my sister she solicited the businesse, my wife

Guzman driven to base courses, and upon what reason

Want, a great enemie to goodnesse

[1] The Spanish phrase is, *Huy del peregil, y naçia me en la frente.*

was a willing worme, and these three playing booty, they made their game the surer. My mouth was bung'd up, I durst not speake, because it was I that had set open the doore to three, and intertained all occasions ; which if I had not done, we might all have starv'd.

I past a while with this, (still seeming ignorant of what was done, and taking no notice of the meale, that fell into the Mill-chest) but the tolle was so poore, that wee could not live by that kinde of grinding in Alcala. The Students were able to part but with a little ; for their allowances were so small, that they could not maintayne them-selves and another ; and there was not one amongst them all, that was capable to be made a Nominative to rule a Verbe in order of Construction, and whereunto a man might have reference and recourse, when things are necessarily required to be joyned together. But to fare ill, to eat little, and that late, and to part with so much pleasure, for so little profit, that I should see my selfe (like a person that suffereth) put still in the Accusative Case, I could by no meanes endure it ; nor was I willing to give entertaynment in my house to these needy Schollers, who are more for the Vocative then the Dative. I had cast up my reckoning, and found, that the Crow could not be blacker then his wings :[1] The harme is already done : The greatest Gudgeon is already swallowed downe : Things cannot be well worse, then they are. My honour is already impawned, the lesser evill is to sell it outright ; the profit here is small, the infamie great ; the Students crafty, and full of tricks ; and victuals hard to come by : So that now it was not onely fitting to change our bowles, but to doe the same speedily. It goes ill with us one way, and worse another ; and therefore wee must apply our selves to that, which may make most for our profit. And being that something must be lost by the bargaine, let us not be like the botcher, that dwells at the corner of the street, who workes all day for nothing, and then throwes away his needle and thread in a rage. We must not hurle all away with a curse, but carry things in

Proverbe

[1] *No puede ser el corvo mas negro, que las alas.*

that manner, that we may have some-thing remayning to helpe us at a pinch, at least as is necessarie for our *victum*, and *vestitum*; our food, and apparell. Let us leave this valley of teares, before the long vacation come, when all is in a calme, and no winde stirring, to blow us any good. Let us leave this unhallowed people, from whom the greatest things of value, that can be gotten, is a six-penny pye, or two rolls of *manjar blanco*, and when they doe bestow these things, they goe not out of the house, till they have eaten the better halfe thereof them-selves. If their Mothers send them a barrell of Cordova olives, they thinke they doe us a great kindnesse, if they give us a little plate-full of them, and that they make our eyes water, if not cleane put them out, with two smoakie sausages of the mountaine. No, no, there is no such matter, it cost us more then so. I will not sell my honour so cheape to Schollers, where there is nothing to be got, but half-penny loafes, and hat-bands.

Wenches have better trading in Court, then in the Universitie

I knew well enough what had past in Court, and how the world went there: There had I seene many men, who had no other trade to live by, nor any other in-come to maintayne them, but a faire face, and that they would often take in stead of a Dowry; for with them it was held to be a mine of infinite treasure, labouring and suing to marry with women of such worth and credit, that were cunning in their Art, and knew what did belong to the businesse, and could tell without teaching, where their shooe did wring them. I was also acquainted with those their subtle and cunning tricks which they made use of, that they might not be obliged to that, which was unbeseeming them. For when the chamber was occupyed, and that they had a friend with them, whom they were willing to entertaine, they would either take downe the Lettice, or set a jarr in the window, or a shooe, or some one thing or other, whereby their husbands might know that they were to passe by the doore, and not to come in for feare of interrupting their sport. But at noone, the field was left open unto them, they might then freely enter into their owne

houses, where they should finde the table well furnisht, the meat good, and neatly drest, and needed not to take any great care to keepe the chayre warme; for he that sent in this provision, would come thither in person to passe away the time, and to make merry a-while with them. And a-nights, when the Ave-Mary-bell had gone, and that devotion ended, they would returne home againe, they had their supper ready provided for them, then would they goe to sleepe alone by them-selves, till that the houre was come, that their wives were to come to bed to them, it sometimes so falling out, that they would stay away till it were broad-day, for that they had occasion to goe forth to visit some of their neighbours.

In a word, these good men, and their wives, did live in that cunning fashion, that without suffering them-selves to be understood, either by word, or by deed, they both knew very well how to play their parts, and what each of them had to doe. And these kinde of kinde husbands, were well respected by their wives, and honoured with many Visites, in another gates fashion, then they were, who did walke without this disguise: Nay, their wives would be earnest to have them abroad with them, calling and carrying them along with them to those feasts and bankets, whereunto they were invited, eating together at one boord, and sleeping together in one bed.

A base part of a Wittall

I knew one, who because a Gallant, that lov'd and maintaynd his wife, had setled his affection upon another woman, made no more adoe, when he heard of it, but goes presently in all haste to looke him out: And when hee had found where he was, he comes unto him, and asks him, what fault hee could finde in his wife, that hee had forsaken her companie: Which question he had no sooner put unto him, but hee sodainly claps within him, and stab'd him twice in the bodie, but (as God would have it) he did not dye of those his wounds.

Such as these goe to a *Bodegon* for their dinner, for their wine to a Taverne, and to the market with a basket. But those that are of a more honourable and noble disposition,

it will well agree with them, that they leave the house free for all comers, going them-selves in the meane while to see a Comedie, or to get them abroad to play a bout or two at billiards, or some other the like pastimes, especially when their Commissions are out. I would not for any thing doe that, which some doe ; who, when in the presence of their wives, others begin to commend these and these good parts, in such, or such a courted Dame, will never leave till they make their wives discover theirs there before them, preferring and praysing them to be farre better then any that they can show. But for a tacite permission, without any kinde of submission, or yeelding thereunto of mine, I did no way dislike it, but was well contented with it.

I got my bagg and baggage together, made up that little that I had into a fardle, all which a man might in a manner have shut up in a Snailes shell ; for one little olde wormeeaten chest contain'd all the houshold stuffe and wealth that I had ; which being put into a Cart, my wife and I sitting thereupon, we marched on to Madrid, singing all the way as we went, *Tres anades madre*.[1] Before we came thither, I began to cast up my reckonings with my selfe, and when I had well thought upon the businesse, and made up my account, I said to my selfe ; I carry here along with me a morsell for a King, new fruit new, fresh ware, fresh, never seene, nor handled before : And therefore I will sell deare, and set what price on't I list my selfe ; I will make mine owne market : I shall not faile to meet with some one or other, who that he may supply my turne, will employ mee abroad in some profitable businesse ; and a secret molestation may well be dissembled, and fairely borne withall, especially when it shadowes it selfe under the cloake of friendship : So that, what with sparing the expences of my house, and what by getting other wayes, I shall quickly grow rich ; I shall once more come to be

[1] *Tres anades madre, passan por aqui, Mal penan à mi.* It is an ancient and common song in Spaine : And when men travaile merrily on the way, and laugh and be Joviall, we usually say, That they goe singing, *Tres anades madre*, Three ducks, etc. Covarruvias, pag. 67.

Master of a Familie, and to have an honest house of mine owne, wherein I may be able to lodge six or seaven good guests, which will yeeld mee such reasonable profit, that wee shall not want wherewithall to live, but be supplyde with all such things as are necessarie for us. I am privie to mine owne good parts, and know how fit I am for any imployment of importance, wherewith they may trust mee, and how surely they may relie upon me. In businesses abroad, I shall be carefull and diligent; and at home in my house, patient and quiet. I will use all the meanes I can to gaine my selfe credit, and to grow into a good opinion with the world: And when the measure of my desires shall be full, and come to its height, I will bend my courses to matters of greater moment, and leave off my trading; nor shall any other by-occasions necessarily with-draw me from these my designes.

My wife entred into Madrid in the best cloathes shee had, having a gallant hat on her head, set forth with a faire plume of feathers of divers colours, but the devill a jot of any thing else that we had, that was worth any thing, excepting onely our Ghitterne, which wee still carryed with us wheresoever wee went.

We were no sooner come to Court, but presently in an instant, before wee could set our feet on the ground, the fame of our welcome to Towne had spread it selfe abroad, her beauty had mustered together a great number of Voluntaries, that offered their service unto her, and were willing to hazard their lifes and fortunes fighting under her colours; where shee was, there was their rendezvous. The people flockt apace, where shee had pitcht her standard: But the only man that show'd him-selfe most forward at that time to accommodate us, being thus newly arrived, was a rich Fripper or Broaker in the high street, who asking us, whence we came, and whither we would: when I had told him, that we were bound for this place, and had no farther to goe, and that we had no knowne lodging, nor any acquaintance, whither to direct us; he forth-with made profession how willing he was to further us, and how

desirous to expresse him-selfe a friend unto us ; and there- CHAPTER
upon brought us to a womans house, a friend of his, where V
we were kindly entertayn'd, and with a great deale of respect, not for the Asses sake, but the Goddesse, that was borne by the Asse.

This good honest Broaker, when he had seene us in our lodging, told us, that we could not choose but be weary with our last nights ill rest, and our hard journey : And for that we had not any, that could on the sodaine make fitting provision of such things, as were needfull for us, that wee should not trouble our heads therewith, nor take any farther care ; for we should be supplyde by a servant of his, whom hee would send unto us. And so that day hee sent us in good store of meat ready drest by one that kept a Cookes shop, and had alwayes good victuals in a readinesse. And after that he had furnisht us with all things fitting, towards the evening hee him-selfe came to visit us, and after that a few of complements and ceremonies had past too and fro betweene us, I askt him how much hee had laid out for us : But hee seemed to make light of it, and told me (as one that was willing not to heare on that eare) that it was a trifle, a thing of nothing ; telling mee farther, how much he did desire to serve mee, in things of a higher nature then these were, whensoever occasion should offer it selfe ; and that this was not worthy the talking of, and therefore I should speake no more of it, seeming as it were to be ashamed of him-selfe, that I should touch any more upon that string ; yet notwithstanding I did presse him to receive the cost he had beene at ; Telling him, That friendship is friendship, and money is money ; and that I should not esteeme the lesse of his love, if he would give me leave to discharge it, it being enough that I had put him to so much trouble. So at last (to satisfie my importunitie) he told me, that the whole came to a matter of eight Royalls, which I presently paid him : But because I would not have him goe out of the house, I began to use my old occupation, and putting on my cloake, I tooke my leave of him, telling him, that I must needs goe visit a certaine friend touching

A Broaker insinuates him-selfe into Guzmans and his wifes acquaintance

some businesses, that did much concerne mee, and that therefore hee would hold mee excused, and pardon this my unmannerly proceeding. Having thus made my way, I left him in good conversation in mine Hostesses lodging, and got me abroad a walking untill it was night.

When I came home, I found the cloath laid, supper ready, and all things in that good order, and in that plentifull manner, as if I had left store of money in my wifes hands for to make this provision. I spake not a word of it, nor did so much as aske whence shee had it, or who had sent it in ; as well because it was not fitting for mee so to doe, as also for that mine Hostesse had told mee, that wee were that night to be her guests ; as also this honest man the Broaker. And from that suppers acquaintance, hee and I remayned ever after very great and kinde friends. Hee did often come to visit us, and would carry us abroad to walke, and merrily to passe the time, inviting us sometimes to goe downe to sup by the river side, to dine at such and such *quintas* and gardens of pleasure : In the evening he would carry us to Comedies, and bestow a box upon us, and there make us a good Collation ; [1] wherewith we past away the time the better.

And albeit I must truly confesse, that this honest man did all that he could, and that nothing was wanting unto us, yet notwithstanding, all that hee did, seemed little or nothing unto me ; for I must tell you, there were some, who to have had a taste of these savoury fruits, would have past the bounds of honestie, and come to a higher price, and given much more money for a standing in such a Faire. For I knew very well, that women that are faire, and of a good presence, are like unto your meale, which is made of the best wheat ; for from the flower, the purest and finest part thereof, that white and delicate bread is taken forth, whereon Kings and Princes, your *Grandes*, and Gentle-men of qualitie doe feed ; but that which is not of the choysest flower, but is browner, as it comes from the mill, is bread

[1] In Spaine they use at their Comedies to entertaine the women they bring thither with good wines cooled with snow, and sweet-meats.

for the houshold, for Servingmen, travellers, and persons of meane account: and the bran, or reffuse part thereof, serves for dogs-meat, or for the feeding of swine, making lap of it for the one, and washe for the other. But a woman of a beautifull and cheerefull countenance, shee no sooner comes into any place, though shee be there unknowne, but all are ready to grace her, the chiefest and principallest persons, offering, the first thing they doe, to rise, and give her respect, the gallantest and richest amongst them, even to the very Lords, and greatest Peeres of the Kingdome, vayling their bonnets, giving her a faire and civill salutation, desiring to enjoy such a dainty peece, whom Nature hath so adapted for noble conversation. But anon after (when these are glutted, and will no more) the common route rushes in, first our neighbours sonnes, then those that come to the Vintage with a tankard of *arrope* [1] in their hands; a burden of wood upon their backs, to make a Christmas fire; or a basket of figs, according to the season of the yeare; these pay a pension all the yeare long for their pleasure, as duly as they doe to their Physitian or their Barber. But when these will nible no more, but refuse to bite at the baite, the dogges will beginne to barke at her; not a knave shooe-maker, nor poore old Cobler, that will not set upon her, and raile at her; nor a sieve-maker, that will not make her dance to the sound of his bels.

CHAPTER V

This kind hearted Broaker had already bestow'd on my wife a gowne of black saten, trim'd with velvet, and a scarlet mantle, which was daintily set forth with a broad parchment lace of gold, which made a glorious show; we had a marvelous faire bed, a neate little table, and a handsome sute of chaires sutable thereunto; but how, or which way we came by them, I knew not. Wee had foure good pieces of leather-hangings, richly gilt. In a word, the furniture of our house was now so well increased, that with the helpe of a little more houshold-stuffe, we might very well set up for our selves, and kill our flesh within our owne

[1] New sweet wine.

doores, and make our market within our owne liberties, which could not choose but be much more gainfull unto us. On the other side our hostesse did fleece us, it seeming unto her, that she had good reason to licke her fingers, and to dip her sop in our honey,[1] and onely forsooth for her permission and connivence. But this was not a thing that I sought after, I did not so well like of it, nor did it make for my profit. And I did as little like of my Broaker, for that a better and more beneficiall Opponent sought to sit in that chayre, which he now occupied. And although I knew well enough, that hee proceeded in his dealing like an honest Broaker, yet the case was now otherwise with me, it was quite altered, and come about another way. For I would part with that to day for three, for the which to morrow I would not take tenne. Men must sell according to the season,[2] and make their market as the time serves. Nor is it materiall that such a one be an honest man in this or that particular, if I have more need of another for my purpose. For it little importeth, that a Taylor, who is to make me up a handsome sute of cloathes, should be a good Musitian; nor that a Physitian, who is to treat of my health, should be a famous player at Chesse. Money, more and more money, was that which I lookt after, and not honesty, and greatnesse of alliance, or good acquaintance.

Proverbe

Proverbe

That which was not of much profit, was to me tedious, and distastfull. For I could not content my selfe with onely necessary food and apparell; I must live like a King; I was to be courted with extraordinary kindnesses; and that they should buy at its weight in gold, the chaire wherein I should give them leave to sit, the sweet conversation that they were to injoy, the good lookes that were cast upon them, our permitting them to come into our house; and above all, the liberty which I left unto them, by going forth my selfe, to give them the freer accesse. And this our honest Broaker could not doe. Hee was willing to

[1] *Avia de meter sopa, y mojar en la miel.*
[2] *El tiempo es el que lo vende.*

lead us still along by that plaine song, which hee beganne withall, when he grew first acquainted with us: as if it had beene an imposition of some perpetuall tribute, which was to passe for ever, after one and the selfe-same forme. CHAPTER V

I had now found out one, who did farre surpasse him both in wealth, and in merit, and was much more for my advantage; onely that difference did present it selfe to mine imagination, which there is between Having and Wishing; the present possession of a thing, or the desiring to possesse it. As also that I knew not how to goe to this amorous Gentleman, to give him to understand, that I should be very glad to embrace his friendship. And better is one bird in the hand then two in the bush.[1] I knew full well, and it plainely appeares unto me, that he did much desire her, and had a moneths mind to have a fling at her; but he was a stranger, and durst not adventure on the businesse. And for me to animate him on to this geare, had beene to make him the lesse to esteeme of it. And to leave the other, that was taken already in the net, had beene folly, if not madnesse. For better is stale bread, then none at all.[2] So that I durst neither take nor leave. Thus did things passe for a while, waiting still when that happy day would come. Proverbe Proverbe

I did usually frequent your Ordinaries, and houses of gaming, one while playing my selfe, another while expecting something to be given me for good lucks sake, by those that had a good hand, asking now and then, something of those that have beene my ancient friends and acquaintance. And what with that which they gave me, and that which my selfe had scraped together, I took occasion, when the Broaker was with us at our house, to give it to my wife to spend as she saw cause, because he should not know the weaknesse of my estate; or to conceive, that I willingly gave way to his Visites out of meere want, and to maintaine my selfe at his cost; but he was no sooner gone from thence, but I presently demanded the same money againe of my wife, to goe to play. And shee did not onely returne mee

[1] *Tienes, a qui eres.* [2] *Mejores pan duro, que ninguno.*

THE THIRD BOOKE

that, but much more. So that alwayes before him, I bore my selfe like a Lord of mine owne will, without leaving any gap open unto him, whereby he might have entrance to lose his respect towards me.

This stranger on the other side, went for his part sucking-in the ayre, and (as it is in the Proverbe) drinking downe the windes ; [1] using extraordinary diligences to gaine our good will ; and every one of us on all sides, working upon all advantages, to effect our severall intents. But I, for my part, being very carefull to avoid all disasters, especially that might fall out in mine owne house ; and for the better preventing of dis-order, was much afraid, and wonderfull loth, that two should tread together in one and the same path ; as one that knew by experience, that one Kingdome would not admit of two Heads ; [2] nor two birds make their nest together in one hole.[3] Nor durst my wife likewise consent thereunto, being unwilling to have more sacks brought to her mill, then she could well grinde, it going much against her stomacke to bee put in the Grammer rules for a common of three. Till at last, we perceiving that this would make well for us, and that by how much the more the Broaker did slacken his string, so much the more the stranger did straine to shoot home, drawing his bow for that purpose to a good round compasse ; for presents, jewels, moneys, and banquets, like so many arrowes, came thicke one upon another, in hope at last to hit the marke. I began now to looke bigge upon the matter, and to talke in a higher straine, saying ; That I was not minded to pay a rent any longer for my lodgings, being that I was able to keepe house of my selfe. So the siege was raised, my old Hostesse and I parted, and began to set up shop wholly for my selfe.

Proverbe

Proverbe

Proverbe

[1] *Bever los vientos.* To drinke-in the wind, is to desire a thing with great earnestnesse. And because the wanting of it, till we come to attaine unto it, causeth anguish and vexation to the heart, a man must of force fetch his breath thicke, insomuch that he seemeth to sup in the aire, and to drinke downe the winde. Covarruvias, verb. *viento.*

[2] *No sufre dos cabeças un govierno.*

[3] *No se anidan bien dos paxaros juntos en un agujero.*

CHAPTER V

The stranger made me a thousand ducks and congies, saluting me, wheresoever he met me, with a great deale of respect ; and I on the contrary lookt on the Broaker with a scornefull and disdainfull eye, showing as dogged a countenance towards him, as I could possibly put on. And by how much the more the one did seeke to draw me after him ; so much the more I strove to shake off the other.

Till at last, growing weary of him, I came and told him, that if I had now taken a house of mine owne, and had left that which hee wisht mee unto, I had onely done it, that I might bee sole master of mine owne house, that I might goe and come at my pleasure, and be either cloathed or naked, as I saw cause, unseene or over-looked by others. And that hee should doe mee a favour to come now and then and see me, when I should bee at best leisure to receive him, and not when I had earnest occasion of businesse. For neither I, nor my wife could alwayes be in disposition to receive Visits.

Guzman shakes off the Broaker, to intertaine a new Gallant

The poore man was so out of countenance with this answer, and tooke it so ill at my hands, that never after would hee offer to put his foote within my doores, except by the mediation of his friend, she that had beene our Hostesse, and that also very seldome, some once (as we say) in a thousand yeares, when he could doe it handsomely, and my wife was best at leasure, neither my selfe, nor any body else, being then at home.

Now, our stranger being so open-handed and liberall as hee was, I was forced to carry my selfe fairely towards him, for hee was well able to goe through thicke and thinne, and if he held on that round pace that hee beganne, there was great hope that he would quickly bring us out of the mire, and that wee should happely arrive to our intended journey, and so it fell out. For my wife, showing him but a good looke, when they two were alone, hee did so highly esteeme of every slight favour that she afforded him, that he would requite her kindnesses with their waight in gold.

We entred into a great league of friendship ; he invited me to his house, and when I had taken my leave of him,

hee would send home after me many, and those very good, dishes of meat, which served very well to furnish our owne table, taking secret order with those his servants, that carried them thither, that they should not bring them back againe, but leave them there, though they were all of silver.

I was not offended at this, but it did somewhat trouble mee, that he should doe it so openly ; for there is no man so blockish, that doth not perceive, when such things as these are done, it is not *à humo de pajas*, for Moone-shine in the water, nor for a mans good lookes.

Proverbe

It is a brave thing, when a rich Gallant shall intertaine my wife with great presents, and whatsoever else that may give her content, and that I may not know the end why he does it. But I was well enough contented therewithall, and all other Witals doe the like. He sayes not true, who sayes it grieves him ; for if it did grieve him, he would never give way unto it. If I were glad thereof, and gave my consent that my wife should kindly intertaine him ; if I suffered her to goe abroad, and was well pleased when she return'd, to see her come home laden with jewels, or with a new gowne, or with some delicate sweetmeats, brought from the banquet that was made for her ; and if my shame was so little, that I could fall heartily to them, and eate my part of them, and could dissemble all this, and much more ; they likewise doe the like ; neither will they, nor can they clap the hornes on my head, and thinke to goe without them them-selves. For I must assure them, that I understand them, and they understand me.

But this was the mischiefe of it, that when they saw me walke the streets so well clad, with a jewell in my hat, and a hat-band sutable unto it, garnished with stones of good value ; they would say as I past by them ; and that so loud, that I might very well heare it ; What rich stones hath Guzman in his hat ? O what a glorious show they make ; but doe you marke how that same Cornix doth out-shine all the rest ? And perhaps some of these which said this of me, did envie my good fortune ; and others, like

your Goates, did not see their owne hornes, though all the world besides did see them. CHAPTER V

This stranger of ours, did purchase our libertie, and he had such store of wealth, that now my house was for no body else, but him. But I had alwayes a care to keepe my decorum, entertayning his friendship, and maintayning mine owne credit. The goods in my house, did like froath, gather daily more and more increase. I had both winter and summer hangings, peeces of Arras, wrought in Bruxells, others of branched Damaske interwoven with tinsell, beds of Damaske, Canopies, and quilts of the same, Turkie carpets to tread upon, pillow-cushions for my wifes *estrado*, when shee was pleas'd to sit in State; and many other moveables, that might well beseeme some great Lord. The table that I kept, and the house that I maintaynde, did not (I assure you) stand mee in lesse then two thousand Crownes a yeare. And when I was disposed to make my good Master almost ready to runne madde, (which I was sometimes wont to doe, especially upon festivall dayes) I would, as soone as we had din'de, command the Gitterne to bee brought in, and laid upon the boord, and then looking cheerefully upon my Wife; I would say unto her; I prethee (good Grace) if thou beest a good Wench, doe us the kindnesse to bestow a Song upon us, it is a Holiday to day, and therefore I prethee do not stick with us: but let us have it quickly, and with a good-wil. For otherwise, it was a wonder to see her take her Instrument in her hand. And still in my presence, when-soever I caus'd her to sing, (howbeit she knew, that I knew all, and that nothing was hidden from me) shee would carry her selfe very soberly and decently, keeping alwayes a settled and composed countenance, and was as carefull (as if her life had layne upon it) that I might not perceive any thing to come from her, either in her lookes, or her gesture, that might give me any the least cause to interpret it as an affront, or should otherwise force mee to make demonstration, that I tooke any dislike at it. Each of us did understand our selves; and both one another; though we would not seeme to

understand any thing, or make any show thereof to the world. With this Shooing-Horne somtimes we drew on our good Master, which cost him many a faire Crowne.

I liv'd like a yong Prince ; Silver dishes did runne upon wheeles round about my house ; one tumbled heere, and another there. My Coffers could not containe those rich imbroideries, and the rest of my wardrobe ; some of sundry sorts of Cloth of Gold, and others of Silkes, that were full of variety : my Cabinets were cramm'd full of Jewels, precious Stones, and other curiosities ; I never wanted money to game, I did triumph in plenty, and had good Cards in my hand to trumpe about ; And for this cause, our friends did injoy their liberty ; for I perceiving, that it was not fit for mee to enter into mine owne house, (which I knew, as oft as I found the doore shut) I past by it, and went abroad a walking, untill a more convenient time did offer it selfe ; and seeing, when I returned home, that the doore was open, it was a signe unto me that the coast was cleere, and that they had past the time away in good conversation : whereupon I boldly went in, and sitting down, we all fell a talking of some one thing or other, as occasion offered.

Thou seest all this my happinesse ; the fairenesse of the weather ; the freshnesse of the winde ; thou seest how favourable Fortune was unto mee ; how she smil'd, and laught upon me ; how franke, and liberall she was towards me. But it succeeded in the end no lesse unhappily with mee, then all things else which I under-went by evill meanes. Nor doe I thinke, that any man can escape such flawes as these, whosoever hee shall be, that shall sayle in the same Ocean.

The Courtiers court Guzmans wife

Upon the fame of this so rare piece of beauty, and the large licence that I had given her, some Princes, and Gentlemen belonging to the Court, assumed the more liberty to themselves, who had smelt out what a hungry and savoury sent this rasher on the coales had with it ; they walke their Stations before my house, messages are sent to and fro ; how-beit I am verily perswaded, that there was never any

friendship strooken with them, nor any just cause given, whereat our yong Master might deservedly take offence. Yet notwithstanding, seeing himselfe thus persecuted, and as it were out-brav'd by others, that were mightier and more powerfull then himselfe, in wealth, linage, and gallantry; he grew so exceeding jealous there-upon, that he was ready to runne out of his wits, and had almost utterly lost his judgement. He went about at the first to straine himselfe to stand in competition against them all, exercising to this end, extraordinarie liberalitie towards us; presenting us with gifts of great price, amounting to thousands of Ducats; but when hee saw, that hee could not contest with them, nor bee able to resist so great force and power as theirs was, un-constrained, without cause, or any other just exception in the world, save onely what his owne jealousie did suggest to his weake consideration, he by little and little fell off, and began to retire himselfe, frighted thus from us onely with a vaine shadow. CHAPTER V

And sometimes I went considering with my selfe, what a strange kinde of foole this was, that in his heatfull humour, set on fire with filthy Lust, hee should so eagerly follow the chase, and hunt with that violence after such dishonesties as these, to his both so great cost, and vexation of minde. I laught at him, as also at the poorenesse of his wit and judgement. For if one of the Maids of my house had come unto him, craving something of him that was of good worth, hee would very willingly and freely bestow it upon them; but if by chance a poore man should come unto him, and begge but half a Royall of him for Gods sake, he would not sticke to deny it him. All of us received the reward wee deserved, we were paid in our owne coyne: The Master whom wee served, for to inrich us, had made himselfe poore; and we, through our ill government, could not continue rich; so that like ruinous buildings, we fell altogether to the ground. Our first man had left the field and was fled, and now those other Gallants come on amaine: for the greater those persons are, who are privy to their greatnesse, and truely understand their owne strength and

worth; so much the more free they are in that which they pretend, and thinke that all other men must give way to them.

The condition of great men

I could have told them, or demanded of them; Sir, what service doe I owe you? What have you throwne upon mee, whereby to binde me unto you? What good did you ever doe mee? Why then should you expect, that I should wait upon you with my workes, words, and thoughts? And which is worst of all; besides that they are bad Paymasters, they use us harshly, and beare themselves so proudly, as if we were in debt to them, and had an execution to enter by force upon my house, my wife, and all that I had. So lawlesse was this their liberty, so uncivill their proceeding, that within a few dayes after we fell into the hands of the Justice.

A Fable of the Lyon

A grave Minister of the State came to know what had past amongst us; You may haply have heard, how the Lyon once upon a time, having admitted all the other beasts into his Company, and having in a generall hunting kill'd a Hart, when they came to the distribution and sharing of it, he out of his absolute authoritie, and Princely prerogative, adjudg'd it wholly to himselfe.

A Judge fals in love with Guzmans Wife

Just so did this Minister deale with mee. And that hee might have somewhat the better colour to doe as he did, he began (Lyon-like) with a little roaring, as if hee had meant to quarrell with us. When I knew the course whereunto hee tended, I presently had recourse unto him, complaining of such and such wrongs that were offered unto me, boasting my selfe to bee a Gentleman, and one that was anciently descended of the Gothes. And hee (cunning as he was) who desired nothing more, then that I should thus come unto him, gave me kinde entertainment, and causing me to sit downe side by side with him, he began to aske of me what Country-man I was? I told him that I was of Sevill. O (said hee) of Sevill? The best Countrey in all the world.

Then began he to treat of that Citie, indearing it very much unto mee, as if, by his commendation of it, I should

have received a great deale of honour, or profit thereby. Hee demanded of mee what my Parents were, and how they were called? And when I had named them unto him; he told mee, that they had beene his very good friends, and acquaintance, making a long discourse unto me, how when he was Judge there, he had sentenced a certaine sute in his favour. And he farther told mee, that he did assure himselfe, that my Mother was still living, to whom hee was well knowne in her yonger dayes. In a word, hee proceeded so farre with me in these and like kinde of complements, that there was nothing wanting to make it full and complete, but his acknowledging himselfe to be my neere Kinsman. Which I did still looke for, especially when I saw him come to such particulars, and that hee could tell me such and such tokens; which made me to say with my selfe, *Omnia possunt potentes.* What cannot your great men doe?

Of a Judge that was given to wantonnesse

And now I am falne upon this Theame, I cannot but call to minde a certaine Judge, who having most faithfully us'd his Judicature, and exercised his Office with a great deale of integritie, his time of residencie being expired, and that he was to render an account (as the custome is) of his Government, they could not charge him with anything, save only for his wenching, and for being a little too much subject to this humane frailtie; for which, being sharpely reprehended, he made answer; That when he was recommended by them to this Office, they had only given him in charge, that hee should deale uprightly, and truly administer Justice, which he most faithfully performed, and that no man could taxe him of the contrary. Would yee therefore be pleased to peruse my Letters, and to looke upon the Contents of my Commission, and if there (amongst other my instructions) you shall finde that I was by vertue of them, injoyned Chastitie, I shall most willingly submit my selfe to your censure, and indure such punishment as yee shall be pleased to inflict upon me. So that, because this clause was not expresly specified in his Commission, nor any particular mention made thereof; it seemeth unto these kinde of men, that they doe not faile in their dutie, nor doe

THE THIRD BOOKE

any thing contrary to their Office, though they sweepe (as they say) a whole street before them, and doe otherwise undoe a Countrie: As did a certaine Judge, who having deflowred about some thirtie Maidens, and amongst those, the daughter of a poore woman, who when she saw what wrong he had done her, shee went unto him, and besought him, that since he had done, or undone her daughter, that hee would be pleased to returne her home unto her, to the end that her dishonour might not be divulged.

Of a Judge that was a deflowrer of Virgins

Whereupon, he taking a Royall of eight [1] out of his Purse, said unto her: Good woman, I know nothing concerning your daughter; Lo, here be eight Royals for you, take you these, and get you some Masses to be said to S. Antonio of Padua, that he may doe you the favour to recover her lost maiden-head. A very good amends. I doe not know to whom this may seeme to bee well done. Doe thou tell me if thou canst. I am almost at my wits end, to thinke on the small punishment, that is inflicted upon such great faults.

He commanded me to get me home to my house, proffering (out of his love unto me) to doe me many favours, and that hee should count himselfe very happy, if at any time it should lie in his power to doe mee a courtesie. For it was a sufficient motive unto him, to binde him unto me, that I was of Sevill, and the sonne of such parents; and that as well in this, as all other occasions, hee would assist mee all that he could, and afford mee his best favour.

Of a Judge that was in authority

With this faire answer I got me home. And within a few dayes after, when I and my wife were all alone, and thought our selves secure, not thinking on any thing in the world, much lesse dreaming of his comming thither, behold, one night, when he walked the Round, he came to our doore, and commanding one of his people to knocke thereat, upon answer given, they askt for me; intreating a Jarre of water of me for his Worship. I well knew where his thirst lay; Whereupon I earnestly besought him, that he would doe me the honour to come in, that he might sit, and take

[1] A piece of foure shillings.

his drinke, and not (like beggers) to take it without doores. He desired nothing more, this was that which he lookt for. He comes in, and when hee was sate, some Conserves were brought him to sweeten his mouth, which having tasted, he tooke the Jarre and dranke. Then began he to enter into Discourse, telling us, that he had walked himselfe weary, and that he had seene that night many faire women, but none that came neere my wife. He said farther, that he had heard her exceedingly commended for her good voyce. I then will'd her to take her Violl, and seeing his Worship was pleased to give her the hearing, that shee should sing some one song or other, which she thought fit. Which shee did without any coynesse, or straining courtesie ; it seeming unto us both that it would much advantage us, to get so great a person to be our friend, who might be ready to stead us upon all occasions. The man was astonished, as well with the seeing, as the hearing of her, and when he was to take his leave, he willed me to come now and then to see him, and that I should make my selfe no stranger. With that, he went his way ; and I and my wife began to talke as well of this, as other things that had past ; and how farre forth this his favour might be a meanes, to make us hereafter be more both respected and feared. I did visit him sometimes ; and one day among the rest, carelesse of any thing that might befall me, he said unto me ; How happens it (Guzman) whilest I am yet living, (for men are mortall, and I may die before I shall bee able to doe thee any good, if it be not done the sooner) that thou doest not make use of my favour, and sue unto me for some Commission, that may be both honourable and profitable unto thee ? I told him, that I held my selfe much bound unto him, and that I should ever rest thankfull for this expression of his love and favour towards me, but because I was loath to be troublesome unto him, as also for that I had not as yet served him in any thing, whereby to deserve any the least kindenesse from him, I had forborne to move him in things of this nature. He then telling me the friendship of my father and mother, (though this his kindenesse towards me,

Guzman imployed in Commissions, for the Councell de la hazienda

proceeded more from his love to my wife then my selfe) he offred me a Commission ; telling me, that it would be very beneficiall unto me. I thank't him for it, though this was the Induction to all my future mis-fortunes. For within two dayes after, he puts those papers into my hands, with order for the recovery of certaine debts that were due to the Exchequer.[1] The which he had procured (begging it for me) of an especiall good friend of his, a great man in his place, and one that assisted in that Court ; telling him that I was a friend of his, and a well-deserving Person, worthy to be imployed in waightie matters, as should appeare by that good satisfaction, which I should give both of my person and imployment.

When I had my Dispatch, I went from home, but (I must confesse) sore against my will ; I carried along with me eight hundred *Maravedis*, which I had by way of salarie, or stipend ; and for that I had ever beene accustomed to fare well, I knew not how to begin to frame my selfe to live with this poore allowance, much lesse to be able to put money in my Purse, or to hoord up to carry, or send home any thing to my house. But I saw now, that there was no other remedie, and must of force doe as I did : and so for avoyding of farther mischiefe, I held my peace, and accepted of it. *Partime, y perdime*, My departure was my destruction. And when I went away, all went awry. For it seemed unto this kinde Master of mine, that he might get himselfe slaves at other mens cost to doe him service, and that with these eight hundred *Maravedis*, I might part shares with my wife, and maintaine two houses, and that this would be a sufficient recompence for us ; out of which respect, he was not only willing to be exempted from all other taxes and tributes belonging unto us ; but also, that my wife should not looke out to see the Sunne, nor to receive any Visits, but only his. He sought to be so absolute a Judge over any thing that was mine, and did so wring and pinch us, that I and my familie were ready to

[1] The Councell de la hazienda is of the same nature with the Barons of our Kings Exchequer.

starve for hunger, so that we were driven dayly to goe selling some of our hous-hold stuffe, for to put bread in our mouthes. CHAPTER V

My wife (who was now become his Hostesse) could not live by these recknings, it was no good account for her, to indure so much subjection, and to be tyed to so short provision. She first began to shew some dislike of this his imperious, yet base dealing; and also many times of purpose refused to see him; hiding her selfe out of the way, using the helpe of a great friend of hers, who still made her excuse, when she was disposed that he should not come at her; For she thought she should have made her selfe by this market; but it proved otherwise. Guzmans Wife likes not the Judges miserable proceeding

But when this new Master of mine perceived the evill correspondence which she held with him, thinking with him-selfe, that my presence would quickly remedie all this, and bring the Bowle to it's old bias, he presently gave order, that there should be no more Prorogations granted unto me, and that I should be commanded to give an account of that which I had done. They put me to it, and I did it; more willingly resigning up my Office, then I tooke it upon me; for I found my state therby much impawned, and my house much wasted and consumed. He thought that my presence should have beene the only remedie to give him content, and that he might the better injoy all things to his owne liking; but it fell out farre otherwise, for by my presence, his expence increased, and wee had the better meanes to make it rise. Hee was much troubled herewith, and knew not in the world how to mend himselfe; and conceiving with himselfe, that nothing would worke us better to his will then rigour, then to put us to our shifts, that we might come Cap in hand, crouching unto him, and that with our armes acrosse, and teares in our eyes, we should come and cry him mercy, and intreat his favour; he treated with his Colleagues and fellow Officers, to banish us the Court; and so accordingly it was notified unto us. I began to cast up my recknings, and made this account with my selfe; This Lord Judge takes himselfe to bee Guzman banished

such a great man, that he thinkes, he does me a great favour, in putting mee to maintaine his House, and procure his pleasure, selling him that for a song, which I have bought with so many affronts, and scraped together with such a deale of toyle.

Againe, it will do me no good to stay here, if I may not have free leave to make the best of mine owne Commodities. It will be the lesser evill (thought I with my selfe) to obey this banishment, and to be packing, then to tarry here to no purpose. For though it were hard measure that was offred unto us, and did pinch us somewhat ; yet I knew it would wring him much more, nay gall him to the very heart. For, though we lost one of our owne eyes, yet we had put out both his. For he mist of his marke ; he had taken the wrong Sow by the eare, and all went kim-kam, cleane contrary to his expectation. So this poore silly asse, thinking to bang us, had made a Cudgell for his owne sides. Besides, at the end of that yeere, those ten yeeres were to be expired, wherein I was to give my Creditors satisfaction.

All these things had I laid together, and thorowly weigh'd them with my selfe. I knew likewise that my Mother was alive ; so on the sudden I hired a Coach for our owne persons, and two Carts, for to carry our stuffe, and our people, leaving the Court and the Courtiers to themselves, bidding them farewell for ever. Thinking with my selfe, that those that came from Peru, flush with their gold and silver, would prove a great deale more profitable for us. And so we went quietly along to Sevill.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VI

Guzman de Alfarache and his Wife come to Sevill; Hee findes his Mother to be now somewhat ancient, and well strucken in yeeres. His Wife gets her away to Italy with one of the Captaines of the Gallies, leaving him alone to himselfe, and exceeding poore. Where-upon, he fals to his old trade of theeving

FOR that they, who escape out of some great danger, as oft as they thinke there-upon, it seemeth still unto them, that they are yet scarce free from the perill they were in; I did often call my life to remembrance, but never to amendment; and more particularly, that of my late lewd courses, the bad estate wherein I found my selfe, the little honour that I had to mine owne credit, and the small, or no respect at all which I bare towards my God, all the while that my feete walked in these evill steps. I beganne to wonder at my selfe that I was become such a beast, as amongst men, none could be greater. For none of all those, that are created on earth, would ever have permitted that which I did winke at; making my selfe a living, out of my wives lewd and filthy gaine, putting her into the occasion of sinning, giving her tacit licence to trade, nay, expressely commanding her to turne Whore: And which is as bad, (if not worse then all the rest) that I should require from her, my food, my raiment, and the maintaining of my house, whilest I my selfe ledde an idle kinde of life, holding (like the sluggard) my thumbs under my girdle. It is a fearefull and terrible thing, that I should thinke my selfe to be an honest man, and to have honour in mee, being so farre from it, and so deprived of true good.

Guzman discourseth of those Wittols, that willingly make their Wives turne Whores

That for to have crownes to play, I should crowne my selfe with infamy ; and that by not using these armes of mine, to labour for my living, I should blot those Armes of my Ancestors, and the noblenesse of that house, whereof I was descended ; Losing that, which is one of the hardest things to be gotten : to wit, a good name, and opinion in the world ; That I should prophane so holy a Misterie ; That I should use it in that ill and vile manner, that being I should have made it to serve as a meanes of my salvation, I made it the high-way to bring mee to hell, and onely for food and apparell, to nourish, and cloath this miserable carkasse ; That I should oppose my selfe to such perill, when as behinde my backe, and even face to face, they might have put an affront upon mee, obliging mee thereby rather to lose my life, then to indure such dishonour ; That a man should not be able to do more then he can do ; that he should know it, and dissemble it, either out of his too much love, or his too much griefe, or that he may not proclaime himselfe a Cuckold to the world : I do not so much wonder at this. And this may not onely not be a Vice, but a Vertue, and a goodnesse, in case hee consent not there-unto, nor affoord any favour or entrance into it. But to doe as I did, who did not onely take pleasure therein, but as if it had been necessary for mee so to doe, did (as they say) cast my Cloake over it ; I doe not well know, whether I were blind, or mad, or bewitcht, that I did not consider better there-upon ; or if I did, that I did not use some good remedie against it, but did further it all that I could. O foole, foole that I was ! and give me leave heere to be-foole my selfe a thousand times, that I was so wretchlesse as I was ; that I did not so much as once dreame on this mischiefe, and seeke to prevent it ; knowing, how incompatible companions these two are, *honra, y muger guitarrera ;* Honestie, and a woman that playes and sings to her Instrument ; and that I did not weigh, what hurt it had done others, and that it might likewise ruine her and me, besides the dishonour that must thereby redound to us both. Men, for to oblige their Mistresses unto them, are wont to bestow

Musicke in a Woman, a bewitching thing

musicke on them under their windowes, and to sing unto them in the streetes; but my Wife was such a one, that shee made these men to fall in love with her, by going abroad to sing and play at their houses. And it is a cleere case, that such graces are appetible in their owne nature, and much desired. CHAPTER VI

Now then, if men were invited, nay, incited there-unto, why should they not desire, and seek after my Wife? What wit or judgement hath that man in the world, who wil make show of his treasure to theeves? What quiet sleepes can hee take? with what ease can hee rest, living (as hee cannot choose) in a continuall feare of being robb'd? How was it possible, that I should be such an Asse, that since I had given my selfe over to such shame and reproach, which haply might be occasioned by my too much weaknesse, I should (for mine owne private interest) incurre another farre greater? To wit, to fall in company, into the commendation of my Wife, extolling to the skies, in the presence of those that pretended love unto her, those lovely qualities, and commendable parts that were in her, intreating also her, nay, sometimes commanding her, that shee should discover and make show of some illicit part of her person, as her brest, armes, feet, and likewise (but I will heere hold my peace for shame, for I blush to thinke on it) that they might see whether her flesh were fat, plumpe, and soft; white, browne, or ruddy? So that all grew worse and worse with me. For that which heretofore I did hate and abhorre with my heart, and was as it were a death unto me to indure it, was now by use and custome become easie and familiar unto me, and I grew at last to take great delight in it. That I should consent, that she should receive Visits, and that I my selfe should bring Customers to my house, and leaving them with her, should get mee out of doores, and walke abroad; and above all, that I should faine simplicitie, and make myselfe ignorant, as if there were no such matter in the winde; and that I should thinke withall, that they did verily beleeve, that this was a good and lawfull thing, being indeed a most depraved and wicked Act? That I

should set her a-worke to sollicite Commissions, and to follow businesses at such great Ministers houses, as had a minde unto her, and desired nothing more, then that shee should come unto them, and that I should make, as if I knew nothing, so slight reckoning of that infamie, which returning with them, or without them, she brought home with her? That they making her so many feasts and banquets, giving her so many Jewels, so many Crownes, and so many costly Gownes, that they could thinke, that I should beleeve, that they bestow'd all these things upon her for nifles in a bagge, for meere smoke, for her faire lookes, for very pure love, and honest affection, simply and plainely, without any doubling, or other by-pretension? What can I answere for my selfe? Or what can bee expected from mee, who not onely gave way thereunto, but did also worke for her to runne that course? That fellow had good reason to say that he did, who seeing how well I began to thrive in Madrid, himselfe being then in prison, hee said in the presence of my selfe, and others. You see in what case I am heere; it is now some three yeeres since that I was apprehended for a Thiefe, a Forger, an Adulterer, a Slanderer, a Murderer, and a thousand other crimes, which they laid to my charge; all which being heaped upon mee, I sinke under the burthen of them, and am ready to perish for want of food: whereas Señor Guzman, onely by giving his Wife leave to take her liberty, lives free, takes his ease, and growes rich.

What a Prisoner said to Guzman

What think'st thou, could I think, when I heard this? O accursed riches, accursed ease, accursed freedome, and accursed also bee that day, wherein I consented to any such thing, whether it were for love, necessitie, favour of great Persons, or any other interest of mine owne. But because the end may be knowne, which that man must come to, who gaines by such ungodly meanes, and that ye may see the unfortunate successe of such base delights and pleasures, I will recount my mis-fortunes unto you, and intertaine you with the discourse of my sharpe and bitter life, which was as ill bestowed on mee, as it was ill imployed by mee.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER VI

We traveld to Sevill (as they say) *al passo del buey*: with the foot of an Oxe; That is, faire and softly, and with a great deale of leisure. For my Wife was afraid of the jogging of the Coach, least it should make her little foysting-Dogge sicke, which she carried along with her in her lap, in which was all her happinesse, it was her onely jewell, and her dearest delight. For one of these fizzling-curres is a maine piece of a Ladies Essence, and the proper passion of a Gentle-woman. Nor can they any more goe without them, then a Physician without his Gloves and his Ring, an Apothecarie without a Chesse-boord, a Barber without a Gitterne, a Miller without a Kit, or a Spanish Don, without a Tooth-pick.

Proverb

Guzman leaves Madrid, and goes for Seuill

When we were come thither, out of the desire that we had to draw profit from those that returned from Peru, and to see our house to become such another, as the Contractation house for the Indies; whither, and from whence, barres of gold and silver dayly come, and goe; and that it might bee all built of Plate, and pav'd with Gold; mee thought it seemed unto mee, that I saw them already entring in at my doores, their backes bowing under them with the burthen of their Barres, so massie is that kinde of metall; and that their strong-sowne pockets were ready to rip and rend in sunder, with the weight of their double Pistolets, and Royals of eight, and all to offer them up to that their Idol, my Wife.

The foolish conceits, which vaine men flatter themselves withall

With this golden conceit, and glorious imagination, I sought to revenge my selfe upon him that had banisht us the Court; and said with my selfe; O thou Traytor; Thou thought'st to put a tricke upon mee; but if any bee coozen'd it is thy selfe; for all fell out to us for the best. The affront that thou offered'st me, hath lighted on thine owne head. I am now comming into the Country of Cucaña, or the Land of Xanxa, where is Gods plenty of all things, and where the streetes are strowed with Silver, where wee shall be no sooner arrived, but they shall come forth to receive us with a rich Canopy of State, where we shall all live like Kings.

THE THIRD BOOKE

With these, and the like thoughts, I call'd to remembrance, whatsoever had succeeded there unto me, in that my first departure from Sevill. S. Lazaro his Church would not out of my minde ; I saw the Fountaine where I drunke ; the Stone, whereon I slept in the Church-Porch ; the steppes, by which I went up and downe ; I saw his Sacred Temple, and that holy Chappell, where I so devoutly said my prayers ; And though I was farre off from it, I saluted the Patron thereof in this manner :

O glorious Saint ; when I tooke my leave of thee, I went away with teares afoot, poore, all alone, and a child. Now I returne to see thee rich, attended, merry, and a married man.

Then was represented unto me from the very beginning all the discourse of my life, ripping it up even to that very instant. I remembred my selfe of my Hostesse that kept a victualing house by the High-way side, and of the Inne, where they gave me that good froyze of Egges, and the Muleter of Cantillana ;[1] but I had now left that on the right hand. I entred by that Royall Causey, we turn'd about by the Field, rounding the Citie, till we came to the Inne where our Carts were, where, of necessitie my people were to stay ; And for that all those were steps which I had often troden, when I was a boy, and that place was wel known unto me, because I was there bred and born, my bloud began to rise as cheerefully, as if I had seene mine owne Mother. We lodged there at night, but not very well. But in the morning I rose up with the Sun, for to seeke out a new Lodging, and to free my goods from that Magazine, as also to make inquirie, if any one could tell me tidings of my Mother. But for all the good diligence therein used by me, all was to no end ; I could heare no newes of her, no, not a word. I thought I should have found all things as I left them ; but they were so farre from being *in statu, quo priùs*, in the same case, wherein they were before, that there was not so much as a shadow, or any memoriall thereof remaining. For some were

[1] Touching these things, see the first Part, Chap. 3. and 5.

altered, others absent, and most of them dead, insomuch that there was scarce one stone left upon another, whereby a man might be able to say; This is still the same Sevill. I forbore for the present to make any farther search after her, deferring it till some fitter season, in regard of the great haste that I had at that time to accommodate my selfe; and going about to see how I could fit my selfe, I might perceive a bill, newly set up over the doore of a certaine house, that was to be let in the *Barrios*[1] of St. Bartholmew, being within the precincts of the said Parish. I made meanes to see it, I viewd it, I lik't it then well, I hyred it for some moneths, and paying my Rent before-hand, I caus'd all my stuffe to be carryed thither.

We rested our selves some two dayes, eating and sleeping our fill, till my Grace began to thinke with her selfe, that it was not fit, that she should come to so noble a Citie as that was, and so much famoused thorowout the whole world, to mue her selfe up within doore, and not once offer to walke abroad. I got me to the *Gradas*;[2] for her, I had hyred a Squire, to usher her thorow the streets, for that these kinde of people are best acquainted with them; and that she might goe see those things, that she had most minde to, without roving up and downe at randome, or losing of her selfe, or without asking which was the way to such, or such a place. And so for fifteene dayes together, she never folded up her Mantle. For every morning and evening, she duly all that while walked abroad, and was never weary, nor fully satisfied with seeing such Greatnesses, as did offer themselves every where to her view. For albeit, although that she was in Madrid, she liked it very well, and so well, that she then thought, that that Court had the advantage of all other habitations of the world for it's State and Majestie, the greatnesse and great number of their Dukes, Marquesses, Condes, and other

[1] A Ward. A libertie. A street. A neighbourhood.

[2] *Gradas de Sevilla.* A place like our Exchange in London, where men meet to walke, and talke.

Titulados, for it's concourse of Embassadours from all forraine parts for the good Trading, that is in it, for their temperate carriage, their discretion in generall, and their libertie without comparison, for the earth affords not a freer place to live in : Yet she found in Sevill, the savour of a Citie, another I know not what, other Greatnesses, though not in the same qualitie, for there wanted Kings there to keepe their Courts, nor so many *Grandes* and men of Title, at least in quantitie ; yet had they great store of wealth amongst them, and were in no lesse esteeme ; for silver was there as common amongst the vulgar sort, as Copper money in other places, and they made such small reckning of it, that they spent it farre more freely.

Within a few dayes after we came thither, Lent was come, and we saw the Holy Weeke in that manner, as it is there solemnized, wee saw the liberall almes that were there, and at that time bestowed on the poore, the store of Waxe which was spent in Taper-lights. My wife was strooken with wonder, and as a woman besides her selfe, not well imagining how this could possibly be : so farre did it out-strip in workes, that which had beene uttered of it in words.

Now in this meane time, which was not long after my arrivall in this Citie, I had, by the great care that I had taken, and by some circumstances, got to the knowledge of my mother, and if I may so say, had found her out by the tracke of her bloud. For my wife entring into speech with some other faire Gentle-women, that were of her acquaintance, as they were discoursing of divers things, falling by the way upon her, she came to know, that shee kept company with a handsome young Wench, to whom she was suspected to be Mother, for the good usage, wherewith she treated her, and for the due respect which she bare unto her. But in truth it was not so ; for shee had no other childe but my selfe. But the true cause thereof only was this ; that seeing she was left thus all alone, poore, and growing now old, she had bred her up of a little Girle, to doe her service hereafter, whom she now made profit

Guzman heares newes of his Mother, and how she got her living

of, whereby they made a shift to live as well as they could. I, when I had notice of her, was very instant with her, to have her come live with mee ; but I could not winne her to it, being wondrous loth to leave this young Wench, as well for that she had bred her up ; as also, for that she was unwilling to have any difference with a daughter in Law, which, her discretion told her, could not well be avoyded. And as oft as I intreated her thereunto, she would still answer me, *Que dos tocas en un fuego, nuncà ençienden lumbre à derechas.* That two white Kerchiefs in one Kitchen, did never yet make good fire : Themselves being apter to kindle one another, then to kindle it. For the sorrow is not so great which a woman suffers, when she lives alone, by, and of her selfe, as is the torment which she indureth, when she is inforced to keepe Company contrary to her liking. And seeing that there was never yet any daughter in Law, that could live peaceably and lovingly with her Mother in Law, she was of the minde, that my wife would live more merrily alone by her selfe with me, and rest better contented with it, then if she should live with her. But in the end, the love of a sonne prevailed so farre with her, that I had perswaded her to yeeld to my desire. Shee was my Mother, I desired to cherish her, and to make much of her, and that she might now take her ease in her old age. For albeit to mee she did still represent her selfe with the selfe-same beauty, and the same freshnesse of colour, and clearenesse of skinne, with the which I left her, when I parted from her ; yet was she now so quite altered from that shee was, that it was hard to say, This is shee. I found her leane, old, tawny, toothlesse, her face (like an old Apple-John) all shriveled, and altogether another kinde of creature. I saw in her the ruines of Time ; and how yeeres consume everything. Where-upon, turning my selfe about to my Wife, and looking wistly upon her, I told her ; This faire face of thine must run the like Fortune one day ; beauty will not last for ever : And if at any time a woman chance to escape that deformitie, which age layeth upon her ; yet at least shee must fall at last into the hands of death, which will

CHAPTER VI

Proverbe

A mother in Law, and a daughter in Law, seldome agree well together

Beauties frailty

disfigure even the yongest body, and claw all the flesh from the bones. I did figure the like unto my selfe. But as well in this, as in all other those good considerations, which had offred themselves unto me, I did just as he doth, who comes to drinke in an Inne, that stands in the High-way, who as soone as he has drunke, sets downe the glasse, and goes his way. They stayd but a little while with mee; I kept them still going, but never proffer'd them a chaire to sit downe and rest themselves; for those that I had in my house, were occupied and taken up by Appetite, and Sensualitie.

Guzman unsettled in his good resolutions

At my earnest intreatie, the Mother and Daughter in Law came to house together. My Mother, you knew her well inough before, though not by sight, yet by report, and those famous things you had heard of her.[1] She was able to over-master the best of them, not any of them all that could goe beyond her for her wit, and her understanding; as well because these things were so naturally and truely her owne; as also, for that shee had beene schooled and trained up in them; and above all, having the advantage of so many yeeres experience.

The instructions of the Mother in Law, to her daughter in Law

She gave my wife very good counsell, advising her, that she should not admit into her company the young men of that street wherein she dwelt, but (like the Fox) should fetch her prey farther off; for besides the infamie and dishonour that she should get thereby, she told her; that they are *Como agua de por San Juan*; *quitan el provecho, y ellos no lo dan*; Like unto your Midsummer raine, which quits all profit, and yeelds no gaine. They will rather draw from you, then bring any benefit to you. They dine and sup still at home, and when they know not what to doe, or how otherwise to bestow their time, then will they come to our house, and looke to be entertained by us in good conversation; there will they stay all that evening; *Tres neçios en plata, y un majadero en menudos*; Three fooles in one dish, and a block-head cut out in Sippets. Having no other ground for their acquaintance, but this weake

Proverb

Proverb

[1] See the first book, the first Part, Chap. 1. and 2.

foundation, that they are (forsooth) of the same street or Parish, wherein you dwell. CHAPTER VI

Of your Court Pages, your Students at Law, and your Universitie young Frie, she read the like Lecture unto her; telling her, that they were like unto Crowes, which would smell out flesh a farre off, and were good for nothing else but to pecke at it, and when they had done, get them gone. Pages Students Schollers

Shee wisht her to set a Crosse upon her doore, to keepe all married men out; for, from no enemie that she had, could she receive greater harme. For wives that are jealous, commit a thousand outrages, and cause millions of inconveniences to come upon you. And when they cannot come to mischiefe you, and worke their will upon you themselves (for not one amongst a thousand of them, but will scratch out your eyes, if shee doe but imagine, you draw the custome from their Mill) they will get them to this, or that Judge, and with foure teares, two sighes, one wry mouth, and a wringing of the hands, they will put all the Towne in an uprore, and utterly overthrow your credit. In a word, she gave in this kinde, many true, wholsome, and sound instructions, as one that from the very wombe of her Mother, proceeded Doctresse in her Art, had all her Lessons that she had learn'd, at her fingers ends, and knew how to make use of them. She carried her alwayes along with her, whither-soever she went, omitting no station, that she did not goe unto; no Feast, that she did not visit, nor no street, that she did not walke thorow. Married men Jealous wives, their condition

When they then came home, they would one while returne with Tassel-gentles, amorous Knights, like Amadis de Gaule, that would easily be man'd, and quickly brought to stoope to the Lure; and other-whiles with fierce Mastiffes, roaring Boyes, and ruffian-like Swaggerers, such as would sweare and drinke, and throw the house out at the Windowes; And out of these my Mother did cull, and picke out such, as she thought would make most for our profit: for, having traded so long as she had done in that Countrie, shee knew Kinde Lovers. Rough hewne Hacksters

which tracke to take, there was not that path, which she had not beaten; nor that thing which she did not know; and knowing all, she knew best how to goe beyond them all.

Young Gallants

For your beardlesse yong Gallants, and Sattin-cheekt boyes, shee would not have her to have any thing to do with them; nor to be beholding to them for so much as a sticke of fire, which is a common courtesie betwixt neighbour and neighbour. For such as these will not sticke to tell you, that their penny is as good silver as yours; their Sugar-pellets, are as sweet as your Conserves; that their gay cloathes, their curl'd Locks, and strong Perfumes, deserve your person, and that you should kindely (without any other retaliation) entertaine their love: And they will also thinke (being well conceited of themselves) that you should rather woo them, then they you; and that you should make them a curt'sie, and cry, I thanke you Sir. She tooke a great deale of paines with her in these, and the like; but above all, shee bid her take heed, that she held no commerce or correspondence with those of the Place of San Francisco, and that she should be afraid how she did meddle with them; for if she once begin to have any thing to doe with

Lawyers and their Clerkes

your Officers of the Courts of Justice; as your Clerkes, and Registers, the whole rabble of them will runne in upon you, even to those that write at the Deske, and will copie you out a sheete for a groat. And being they follow the Law, they thinke, that all that is yours, is theirs, and that of right it belongs unto them. For if you once fall into their hands, there is no scaping from them; for either by faire meanes, or by foule; by intreaties, or by threatnings, being so absolute, and so dissolute, as they are, (I meane some of them) they exercise more Tyrannies, and more cruelties, then Totila, or Dionysius, as if there were not a God for them, as well as for other folkes.

The Fleete was not come; the Citie was in great want; their purses were shut, and our mouthes open; and we were ready to dye for hunger. We fell a selling, and then a eating; and which was worse, we paid a great rent, and

had little commings in. All went ill with us, wee had brawling and scolding at home, and the poore Maid that was in our house, she paid for it; off goes her Kerchiefe, and with it her haire, tugging her thereby upon every light or slight occasion, keeping a great deale of stirre about toyes and trifles, that were not worth the talking of. There was not that Rogue, or base Raskall, but would dare to doe us wrong, and not sticke to gybe and Fleare at us; one saluting mee in scorne, with the stile, of Señor Don Fulano, and another with that of Don Cutano.[1] My Wife liv'd in a continuall feare, and was now growne weary, and sicke of the Mother-in-Law; For in regard that with me, shee had liv'd so long at her owne libertie, and had taken so much head, and now finding her selfe some-what restrain'd of it, and that she could no longer bee Mistresse of her owne will; and that if the one did but speake, the other would begin to grumble; of every gnat, they made a Cammell; and of Mole-hils, Mountaines. And such a cruell storme and tempest would arise between them, that because I would not be Stickler betweene them, or seeme to take one part more then another, I would take my Cloake, and throwing it on my shoulders, when I saw these Dolfines once begin to play above water, and hye me (with all the haste I could) out of the house, and get mee abroad, leaving them together by the eares, tugging one anothers head-geare off; fight Dogge, fight Beare, take them off who would, for mee. For I would have nothing to doe with them.

Proverb

The Mother-in-Law, and Daughter in Law, fall together by the eares

My Wife hereat was so mad, and grew so angry with me, that I would not shew my selfe on her side, that by little and little she grew to hate mee; that whether it were right or wrong, she thought it fit, that Man and Wife, seeing God had joyn'd us together, we should cleave each to other; or whether with, or without reason, I had great reason to take her part against my Mother: but that on the other side I held not to be so lawfull.

Guzmans wife begins to hate her husband

[1] *Don Fulano, y Cutano*: Words of scorne, men not deigning to call us by our owne name. Intimating that we are base fellowes, and not worthy to be made any reckoning of. Covarruvias.

Guzmans wife goes away with a Captaine of the Neapolitane Gallies

Whereupon her hate grew to that height, and she did so abhorre my company, that meeting with an occasion by meanes of a Captaine of the Gallies of Naples, that lay there in the rode, she exchanged my love for his. And gathering all the money together she was able to make, and those Jewels of Gold and Silver, which we were stored with at that time, she hoysed sayle, and went for Italy, I not knowing then for the present, what was become of her.

Proverb

I have heard it spoken, That he is a Mad-man, or a Foole, that will seeke after his Wife, when she is once gone : And that a man should make a golden Bridge, for a flying enemy :[1] And be glad, that he can be so rid of him.

Proverb

I thought with my selfe, That I should better be alone,[2] then ill accompanied. For, although it be true, that I gave way to all her desires, and so had all my maintenance by that meanes ; whereas otherwise I should have wanted meat to put in my mouth ; and cloathes, to put on my backe ; yet I grew weary of it, because every one had one fling or other at me.

The force of use

See the force of use ; for being that I was alwayes bred up to basenesse, and was ever accustomed to heare affronts, when I was a child, and afterwards when I grew some-what bigger, I could the better beare them, when I came to be a man.

My Wife was gone from me, and therein she did me a favour ; for besides that I was now free from that obligation of giving way, that she should leade that kinde of life, which she did ; I was likewise free from that dayly sinne, which might have layen upon my conscience ; For I did not cast her off ; but she for to satisfie her owne wilfull humour, absented her selfe from me. And it was impossible, that I should follow her, and hunt her out, for the hazzard that I should runne, if I should returne backe againe into Italy. These difficulties therefore offering themselves unto me, I ledde a retyred life with my Mother. And not having where-withall handsomely to maintaine

[1] *Al enemigo hazer la puente de plata por donde huyesse.*
[2] *Mejor solo, que mal accompañado.*

our selves, we fell a selling such houshold-stuffe as was left. CHAPTER VI
But there beeing more dayes in the yeere, then wee had implements in the house, all was gone within a very short time. Saint John, and Corpus Christi, hapned to me all on a day.[1] I had now brought both ends together: I wanted goods to sell, and money to buy. I found my selfe out of reparations, not having where-withall to cloath my backe, nor to feede my belly; nor any thing else, whereby to gaine a penny, unlesse I should fall againe to my old trade. I got mee forth a nights into those streetes, where there were divers turnings, or crosse-wayes, and when I had made my purchase, I would come home laden with two or three Cloakes, such as I could compasse with least trouble, and perill to my person.

Guzman sels all he hath

Proverb

Guzman fals to stealing of Cloakes

The next morning, one of these two courses I tooke with them, that I turn'd them in a trice either into Mandillians, Doublets, and Hose, altering the propertie of them, or else ridde my hands otherwise of them as handsomely as I could. But commonly when I had chang'd the fashion of them, in the duske of the Evening, I would get me unto the *Gradas*, and there barter them away, either for other Ware, or ready money, as others did.

This kinde of trading my Mother was not so well pleas'd with, shee did not like well of it; as well, for that she had never us'd it in all her life; as also, for that she would not willingly now in her old Age, runne the hazzard of so foule an affront.

His Mother and he part

Where-upon, shee resolved with her selfe, once more to open shop, and see what good she could doe by her old Trade; shee, and the young Wench, (which she liv'd withall before) being agreed to become partners, and equally to share all gaines betweene them. O how glad was shee, when shee saw my Mother come within her doores, how did she hugge and imbrace her, as if shee had brought in the Indies with her; or were the onely Physician to recover the sicke and decayed estate of her low-brought fortunes, having no such utterance of her Ware, nor nothing the like

She followes her old course; and he his

[1] *San Juan, y Corpus Christi, cayeron para mi, en Un dia.*

doings now, as when shee liv'd with her! I (my Mother being now gone from mee) quickly brought my selfe acquainted with some other good fellowes, with whom I might merrily passe my life, till fortune should change, and the times grow better. These my Camerades, I fitted them with invention, plotted their businesses for them, assisted them in all occasions with my person, went along with them to the Townes and Villages neere adjoyning. And whatsoever else we did chance to light upon by the way, wee did never likely misse, in some of the backe Courts belonging to their houses, a good Buck of Cloathes, which together with their Flasket, wee made to vanish and dis-appeare in an instant.

Theeves, and their cunning carriage

We had in the Suburbs, and the *Triana*, certaine knowne houses, places of purpose for receit, where, without entring into the Citie, wee did pitch our Pikes, and make a Stand. There did we dry our cloathes, and being cleane washt, and handsomely folded up, by little and little wee convay'd them into the Citie, one while through the gates, another while over the walles, after mid-night was past, when the Justice had done walking the Round, and was retyred home. For those garments of Cloth and of Silke, which by our industrie we had purloyned heere and there, as we could come to lay hands on them, we had knowne Brokers for them, to whom we sold them at a reasonable good price, losing little or nothing of what they were worth, which being once delivered up into their hands, they well knew that they would passe for currant, as goods that had beene gotten in a just warre, and were their crafts-masters in altering the forme and fashion of them, to the end that they might not be knowne, for feare of after-claps. For we had no other obligation, but to give them good wares for their money, dry, and well-conditioned, putting it within the doores of their houses free from taxe and tallage, and all other paiments, leaving them to bee freely injoyed by them. Your cleane white linnen had quicke dispatch, in regard of the good conveniencie that was offered us to come easily by it; as also for that it was very good chaffer, to

trafficke away with strangers. And in this manner did we maintaine our selves bravely, and went well and cleere away with it. CHAPTER VI

One time (I remember) in the Winter, there was such a continued raine without intermission, that none did dare to goe out of doores; so that the owners of those houses, keeping themselves within, all commoditie of visiting them was taken away from us; whereby money beganne to grow scant with us. It was my hap at that time, as I was passing along through a certaine street, that I espide all the fore-part of a house quite falne downe to the ground. I askt whose house that was? They told mee it was a Gentle-womans that was a Widdow. I went, and sought her out, and desired her, That seeing there was no body dwelt in her house, she would give mee leave to goe in, and lodge there, promising her to looke carefully unto it. She (good Woman) being afraid lest the whole house should come tumbling downe about my eares, told mee; That I were best take heed what I did, least the house should chance to fall. As for that (I answered againe,) it made no great matter, for that there was an upper roome which (as I conceiv'd) was strong, and sure inough, where-into I might safely retire my selfe: telling her besides; That such as were poore (as I was) had no cause of feare, or losse; life being to them rather a burthen, then otherwise; and was the thing, which of all other, they could best spare. Where-upon, very willingly she gave me leave so to doe. And I presently, without any more adoe, got mee in, and within some foure dayes after, there was not a doore, which I had not unhindged, nor a locke, which I had not ripped off.

Guzman robs a Widdow of her Tyle-stones; and how

The next day after, I got me into the street of San Salvador; and there I caus'd it to bee openly cry'de at the Crosse, that whosoever would buy foure or five thousand Tyle-stones, he should repaire unto me; for I had authority to sell them unto them. At that time, there was not a Tyle to be got in all the whole Towne for any money. Anon after came posting unto mee three or foure Masons and Brick-layers, and happy was he that could come first, all of

them earnestly striving, which of them should have the bargaine out of each others hands, and were ready to goe together by the eares about it.

Well, they came to agreement with mee for five *Maravedis* a Tyle ; and bringing them to the house, I made show of them unto them ; telling them that I was the *Mayor-domo*, or Steward of the house, and that my Mistresse was minded to pull it quite downe to the ground, and build it all new after another manner. Besides these of mine, which I made my selfe Master of for the time, I shewd them others of our next neighbours, joyning house to house with us, being so neere the other, as they seemed to be fellowes, which likewise they were to have away with them. They gave me six hundred Royals in good ready coyne, upon condition, that I should make up my tale of Tyles, to the full number of five thousand ; telling me, that the next day they would come and fetch them away.

When I had my money, I hasted away to the Mistresse of the house, and said unto her ; that it was great pittie, that she had given leave to her *Mayor-domo*, to make sale of all the doores, and tyles that covered her houses. Whereupon she grew into a great rage, and kept a foule coyle about it, saying, She had no *Mayor-domo*, nor yet knew, who had any such authoritie to doe it. Thereupon I told her ; That your Worship then may know, who it is that takes this upon him ; I have beene already commanded to get me out of the house, and that I must have nothing to doe there any more. Wherefore I must be inforced to looke out a lodging else-where. For to morrow very early, those that have bought the Tyles, will come to carry them away. Your Worship may be pleased to send some body thither, or to take the paines to goe your selfe, and then you shall see what hath passed. This said, I tooke my leave of her ; and the next day following, standing aloofe off, leaning against the corner of a Wall, I kept my selfe close, to see the stirre that would bee about this businesse ; and I can assure you, it was sport alone, and was able to make as many as beheld it, to breake their hearts with laughing,

to see how busie the Tylers were, in untyling the house, and how the poore Gentlewoman bestirr'd her selfe, to defend her owne. In conclusion, shee exhibited a Complaint against the poore Tyler, and did not only take away the Tyles from him, but also made him pay the price of her doores and lockes. This caus'd me for some few dayes to keepe my selfe close within doores, having a good fire, and laughing in my sleeve, till the storme was over-past, and that they had given over looking after me.

Guzman picks a Gentlemans Pocket

One day, there was a great feast in San Augustin; and because such kinde of meetings made for us, I got me thither. Where I perceiv'd, that a Gentleman had good store of money loose in his left Pocket, on that side where his Rapyer hung. Now, when he came into a place, where there was a great presse of people, and that there was much thrusting and crowding one another, I did gently lift up his Hangers, and thrusting in my hand, did nimbly dive to the bottome, letting not so much as one Royall escape my fingers. But the unquiet motion of those that were about me, hindred my hand, being so full as it was, to carry it away cleanly, by meanes whereof a great deale of it fell downe upon the ground. And for that the Cloyster was pav'd, it make a great gingling; With that I let all goe, and putting my hand into my Pocket, in a trice I tooke out my Handkerchiefe, and crying to the people, that they would for Gods sake give backe, and make a little roome, for that in pulling forth my Handkerchiefe, I had shed all my money. All very kindely did as I desired them; and the good honest Gentleman, whom I had thus robd, moved out of charity, hearing the pittious moane that I made, crying out, that I was with these moneys to pay my Merchant, stooped downe with me to the ground, and holpe me to gather it up, till I had all to the last Royall. I gave him thankes for his paines, and getting out of the throng, I went home well contented. This was that Knife that cut my throat; this poore little theft, was my finall perdition and utter undoing; being the last that I did, and for the which I paid dearer then all the rest. For

albeit heretofore I had beene taken in the like manner, yet, for all those stormes, I arrived at last in a safe Haven. With money I could negociate what I list my selfe ; and there, and in every place, there is no other talke, then how a man may make a shift to live, and to get where-withall to maintaine his port ; this was, is, and will be the practice as long as the world is the world ; Judges have hands to take ; and Malefactors money to give. Every man (you know) would faine live by his place. But now those Trumps would doe mee no good, for I had renounced them long agoe. When I was flush of money, I would seeke to furnish my selfe afresh, before they were spent, for preventions-sake. I would make new provision ; for as long as I could out of mine owne abilitie, supply my necessities and wants, I did not seeke after incumbrances, or to draw sorrow upon my selfe. I had in a corner some Purses, that I had cut, and some pretty little strange pieces, that I had met withall. I made choyse of one that I lik't best of, and caus'd it to be handsomely trim'd up, and putting into it sixe Crownes, in three Doblones of gold, fifty Royals in Plate, a silver Thimble, and foure Rings ; I carryed it to my Mother, and shew'd her every thing particularly by it selfe, using therein a great deale of leisure, pawsing well betweene every parcell : I likewise did set downe the same in writing unto her, to the end that she might learne it without booke, and not misse one letter of the lesson that I had taught her : for a good memorie is all in all ; and that which in this businesse did most of all import us. And having well instructed her in that which she was to doe, when shee was to come afterwards to repetitions, I got me to the Cell of a certaine famous Preacher, who was a good man, and a holy, and reputed and reverenced of all men, as if he had beene some Saint, and said unto him ;

Guzman craftily coozens a Preacher, and gets a good almes, and how he did it

Reverend Father, I am a poore stranger in this place, I am come hither to this Citie, and am at this present in great want and necessitie ; I desire to accommodate my selfe, if I could light upon some honest house, where I might live peaceably and quietly for my soules health ; this is the only

thing that I desire in this world ; as for any set wages, I shall not stand much upon that. For so as I may have honest cloathes to my backe, (I care not how meane, so they be whole,) and some set Commons, (though never so poore) to passe over this miserable life, I should well content my selfe there-withall, without either hope, or desire of any farther profit. And albeit I am in this wretched estate as you see, and that I am nothing but rags ; in so much that for lacke of decent and seemely cloathes (being so ill clad as I am) I shall not happely light upon any, that will take me into his service ; and albeit I could for the present be able to helpe my selfe, and supply this my necessitie by an occasion, that is now offred unto me to relieve my wants, yet I hold it better to suffer penurie, and to relie upon a hopefull expectation of Gods helping hand (who will at one time or other pittie the distressed state of the poore) then by offending his divine Majestie, in usurping upon the goods of my neighbour. God forbid that other mens Purses should free mee from my corporall labour, leaving to my selfe a guiltie and condemning conscience. CHAPTER VI

I got me this morning out of my lodging, for to seeke some worke, whereby I might gaine me bread to put in my mouth, and it was my good hap to finde this Purse in the midst of the street : I tooke it up, and went to looke what was in it. And when I perceiv'd it was money, I presently shut the Purse, fearing lest mine owne weaknesse might draw me to doe an unlawfull Act. I shall intreat your Fatherhood, to take it into your hands, and being that you are next Sunday to preach, that you wil publish the same to the people. It may be, that the Owner thereof may be present there, or by others report chance to heare of it, who peradventure may have as much, if not more need of it then I have. Much good may it doe him with it, for I will not injoy any other goods, save only such, as his divine Majestie may be best served by me.

The honest Frier, when he had heard me out, and saw the heroicall disposition that was in me, tooke me to be rather a Saint, then a man. And he did so much honour

and reverence me for it, that there only was wanting the kissing of my garment : and in a heavenly kinde of language, he thus spake unto me :

My deare brother ; give hearty thankes to almighty God, that hee hath conferr'd upon you so cleere an understanding, and the knowledge of that little esteeme which we are to make of the goods of this world, and assure your selfe, that he, that hath communicated unto you this his holy Spirit, will (as he hath promised in his holy Word) provide for you, and minister such things unto you, as his divine wisdome shall thinke fit and needfull for you. He, who to the poore least little Wormes, and all your small fleshlesse and bloudlesse Vermine (as your Ants, Flyes, Caterpillers, and the like hurtfull creeping things, that crawle upon the earth) is not wanting, but careth for them, shall much more be mindefull of you, and supply you with all those things, that he shall see you stand in need of : not only freeing you from these your present miseries, but farther increasing your joyes, and his blessings upon you. This action of yours, is a supernaturall and divine worke, which strikes admiration into men, and stirres up those Angelicall spirits of heaven, to sing forth a thousand Hymnes of praise and thankes-giving, that such a noble creature was borne for the glory of God, and the good of the world. This is his gift, and none but his, acknowledge it, and magnifie his praise by speaking good of his holy Name, and persevering in vertue.

I shall doe as you would have me, and see you returne againe unto mee some day in the next weeke ; for I hope in God, I shall bee able to doe you much good, and procure some favour to be shewne unto you.

When this good man had made an end of these his holy words, my heart there-with (me thought) was quite pierced thorow, and began to bleed within me ; for considering the greatnesse of his Sanctitie and sinceritie ; and on the contrary, of my roguerie and villanie, who by such vile and wicked meanes, should goe about to make him the instrument of my thefts ; and the more to colour the businesse,

I let fall a few feigned teares ; this holy Frier, thought I had shed them for Gods sake, and there-upon began likewise himselfe to grow somewhat tender.

This matter rested thus till the next Sunday following, which was All Saints day ; and when he came to preach, he spent the greatest part of his Sermon in this businesse of mine, indearing that Act so much the more, for that it had proceeded from a subject so much necessited ; and did exaggerate it so to the height, that he moved all those that were there to compassion, and made them the willinger to doe me good. So they repaired unto him with their almes, which they powred forth in a plentifull manner.

On Munday morning, my Mother came to the *Portaria*,[1] and askt for that holy Father ; saying, that she was to speake with him about an earnest piece of businesse. The Porter, who perceived how desirous shee was to come to the speech of him, went in to call him, and presently brought him unto her. Whom she no sooner saw, but taking hold of his hands, and his Habit, kneeling downe before him, and offring to kisse his feet, told him ; That the Purse was hers, desiring him for Gods sake, that she might have it againe. She acquainted him with all the outward markes of it, as also with the particular and remarkeable pieces that were in it, as one that had well studied the Case. Where-upon the Frier, without any more adoe, did deliver it unto her, knowing the tokens to be true.

When my Mother had the purse in her owne hands, shee opened it, and taking out one of those three Doblones that were in it, she gave it to this holy Father to bestow upon me for the finding of it : As also foure Royals, for two Masses to bee said for the Soules in Purgatorie ; and for that purpose shee re-commended them unto him. Thus did shee recover her purse, and brought it presently home unto me, not wanting so much as a pins-head of all that was in it ; for I had likewise of purpose wrapt some of those pieces in little parcels of paper, that it might the sooner

[1] *Portaria* in your religious houses, is that gate or Porters lodge, belonging to the Convent. Covarruvias.

seeme to be some womans purse, who use such kinde of fiddling and fooling with their money.

After this businesse was thus over-past, about some two dayes after, upon Wednesday towards the Evening, I went to visit my Frier; who against my comming thither, had provided mee a Coffer full of cloathes, which might very well out-weare ten yeeres, and spending money besides for some dayes. He gave it mee with a cheerefull countenance, and willed mee to returne againe unto him the next day: For hee had something else to say unto mee, and hee did not doubt, but it should bee much for my good. I did so; repairing unto him at the time appointed: Then did he aske mee, whether I could write or no? I inform'd him of my sufficiencie in that kinde. Whereupon he told me, that there was a certaine Gentlewoman, whose Husband was in the Indies, who did much desire to have such a one as I was, to follow her businesse, and to have a care to husband her estate both in the Citie, and in the Country, and to bee true and faithfull in those things that she should commit to my charge; and that therefore I should deale plainely with him, and truely tell him, whether I could like of this course or no? for that, according to my answere, he should seeke, or not seeke to settle mee there, as hee saw I stood affected.

I (after that I had given him thankes) said unto him; My good father, that which appertaines to my personall paines, to my sollicitude, diligence, and fidelitie, wherewith I ought to serve her, this I am able to tender unto you; but I must tell you withall, that I am not of this Countrey, nor have any knowne acquaintance in these parts. And therefore, if this Gentle-woman shall put her goods into my hands, and that I must have the disposing of them, she will expect that some body shall bee bound for my truth; but I am not able to give her any securitie; and this is likely to be the onely rub that I know. I leave it therefore to your fatherly consideration, what is to be done in this case, craving your advice therein. He told mee, that he would bee my Surety; and that if that were all that I stood upon,

that stoppe should not damme up the way, wishing me not to forgoe so fayre an offer. I accepted it very willingly. For I saw, that by this meanes, my businesse was in a good forwardnesse, and would finde legges to goe well on with it. For there is not any thing, that doth sooner deceive a just and an honest-minded man, then the simulated sanctitie of a wicked and counterfet Rogue. CHAPTER VI

CHAPTER VII

Guzman de Alfarache, being preferr'd to a Gentlewomans service, robs her; Upon this theft hee is apprehended, and condemned to the Gallies during life

SO great is the force of Custome, as well in the roughnesse of troubles and afflictions, as in the smooth waters of happinesse and prosperitie, that some ease in the miserable, doth lighten the loade, and doth in some sort helpe to make them seeme more facill in their sufferance; but the greater burthen lights upon those that have liv'd well and happily; there is no griefe to this; comfort hardly takes hold on them: Fortune cannot doe a man more harme, then when she hath invested him with a habit of Happinesse, to dis-robe him thereof, and that disgracefully: for this un-expected privation makes it the more insupportable. Of Custome, and the force thereof

This Custome is that uncontrouled Lord, that prescribes, and proscribes Lawes at his pleasure; infirming some, and confirming others; ratifying this, and dis-annulling that. He (like a powerfull Prince) prohibits heere, and establisheth there; and consequently, to that side, where-unto he leanes, he carries all after him, as well in the pursuit of Vice, as

in the practice of Vertue. So that, if he apply himselfe to goodnesse, he easily runneth the danger of losing it ; and adhering to that which is evill, it will hardly afterwards be rooted out. There is no force that can subdue it ; but hath power and command over all humane actions.

Some have called Custome a second Nature ; but experience teacheth us, that its power is greater then that of Nature ; For Custome will overthrow Nature with her little finger. She is no body in her hands : if shee affect sowre and bitter things, with such artifice doth shee conserve and sweeten them ; that as if they were not bitter at all, she makes them to become sweet and pleasant. But if she clap in close with Truth, and linke her selfe in League with her, she is then the mightiest Monarch that is, and her Fort is inexpugnable. Who but she makes the poore Shepheard to live alone by himselfe in the solitarie fields, in the depth of the low Vallies, and on the tops of high Mountaines, amidst Bushes, and Thornes, Woods, and Rocks, opposing himselfe against the unmercifulnesse and cruelty of a sharp and rigorous Winter, suffering terrible Stormes, continuall Raines, bitter Windes, and piercing Ayres ? And in the Summer, a parching, and scorching Sunne, which doth as it were rost, and sindge the Trees, burne Stones, and melt Metals ? And its force being so great, that it tameth the fiercest and wildest beasts, and those that are most venemous, bridling their fury, and allaying their poison, Time at last overcommeth Custome ; it is he, and none but he, that works upon it, and to him onely it is subject.

Custome must yeeld to Time

For comparing Custome with Time, her long and strong prescriptions are but as Spiders webs, made to catch an Elephant : For, if Custome be powerfull, Time is prudent and wise. And as Wit goes beyond Strength ; so Time subdueth Custome. After night, comes day ; after light, darknesse : They tread one upon the heeles of another ; and the shadow that followes after the body, and growing greater and greater, contests with him for superioritie. The fire wageth warre with the Ayre ; the Earth, with the

Water, and all the Elements goe together by the eares, and are at a perpetuall enmitie one with another. The Sunne generates the Gold, it gives it its essence, and its life. In like manner, Time pursues, prosecutes, and fortifies Custome. It makes and it marres, working wisely with silence, according to the self-same order, as she is wont by continued drops, to hollow the hardest stone. CHAPTER VII

Custome is of others, not ours ; but Time is our owne. It is hee that discovereth the thread, manifesting what is most secret, and by the fire of occasion, maketh an essay and tryall of his Art. By experience, hee teacheth us the quilates and aloy of that gold, and sheweth us the end where-unto his pretensions tend ; And declar'd himselfe at last to bee one, that never tooke any pitie of me. For, in a very short space, he made that publike, which I had laboured with all diligence to keepe hid and secret. All that which hath been said, was verified truely of my selfe in its proper termes and cases. O how often treating of my businesses, trading of my wares, putting money out to use, framing nets to catch fooles, by raising of my prices, selling my commodities farre dearer to him that went upon trust, then him that paid ready money, carrying alway my Beads in my hand, my countenance compos'd, and still the same ; with a Truely, and a Verily in my mouth (from whence never any truth yet came) I did openly (according to my old Custome) coozen and steale from as many as I had to doe withall ! but Time did discover all my rogueries.

The common course of Tradesmen

How often, and by how many, have I beene heard to say ; I promise you Sir, that it stood me in more, I cannot affoord it you at that price, I vow and protest unto you, that I get not a Royall by you, in all this whole parcell of Wares that you have bought of me. I may goe shut up my shop, if I make many such markets. And if I have let you have it better cheape than I could affoord it ; it is because I am to make some payment of moneys, and if it were not for that, you should not have them at this rate. And the same course I tooke in a thousand other things of the like nature, not having any other use then for moneys, more

Guzman delivers some things worthy our consideration, but to be avoyded by us

then from their hands to mine, to gaine a hundred in a hundred.

How often likewise, when I was in my prosperitie, during this my good fortune, and studying dayly to grow greater and greater (onely that I might get my selfe a good opinion in the world, meerely for vaine-glory, and not for the love of God : for I did not so much as dreame upon him, nor thinke upon any thing else, save onely to be well thought of, and to have the peoples eyes upon me, who taking me to be a charitable minded man, and a giver of almes, would gather there-upon, that I was a man of a good Conscience, and that I had a care of my soules health, and therefore might the better trust me) did I cause a great number of poore, morning after morning to come to my doore, and keeping them there two or three houres, that there might be good notice taken of them, and seene over and over by those that past along by my house, did I afterwards send away with (God hee knowes) a poore slender almes, whilest with that *no nada*, that thing of nothing, which they received from me, I did gaine my selfe a good reputation, which like a stalking horse, I made use of, the better to get other mens goods into my hands ? How often have I divided a loafe of bread in twaine, (when I was no whit hungry, but as full as my belly could hold) and of that which remained, as if it were a thing to be lost, or to be cast away to the dogges, did I part in a thousand pieces, and bestow it afterwards on the poore ? Nor did I give it unto those, who, I knew had most need of it ; but to those, by whose mouthes, I knew, it would be most spoken of, and divulged to the world. And how often (having a bloudy heart, and a damnable intention, being naturally cowardly, timorous, and feeble) did I pardon, and put up injuries, putting them in publike to Gods account, mine owne thoughts secretly condemning me, did I in secret dissemble them, not sticking to say in publike, God be thanked for it ; when as I was truly inwardly offended, and that no other thing in the world did hinder my revenge, but that I was fearefull, and found my selfe unable to put it in execution ? But

the coales thereof were alive, and did burne within my soule, whose flames I had much adoe to suppresse. How often at other times, did I shew my selfe an abstinent and orderly faster, not for any other thing in the world, then to seeme to bee such a one, and that I might spend lesse, and spare the more? But when I did eate at another mans cost, or spend upon another mans Purse, I did then swallow downe my victuals like a Cormorant, then I had a Wolfe in my belly, and was still afraid, that I should never have enough. I did continually visit the Churches, I would often both goe and send to the Prisons, only to get my selfe credit amongst the Officers there, and such other Ministers as belonged unto them, and not for to doe any good offices for the Prisoners, or any gratefull worke unto God. But rather to the end, that if it should be my ill hap at one time or other to come thither, being formerly knowne by them, they might use me the more kindely, and beare me the better respect If I repaired to the Hospitals, if I went upon Pilgrimage, if I did frequent places of Devotion, kissing, nay, gnawing as it were the Altars, out of a hungry zeale; if I would not lose a Sermon, nor a Jubilee, nor any publike devotion, all those steps that I trod, and all that paines that I tooke, were only directed to the getting me a good name, to the intent that under the colour thereof, I might the better coozen my neighbour, and take his cloake from off his backe.

Moreover, I must not forget to tell you, that divers things were now and then told me, and those very secret ones, touching such, or such a person; the which were kept so close, that afterwards, when I did chance to talke with those persons, whom they concerned, counselling them to leave off such and such courses, or rather correcting and reproving them for it, they imagined of me, that I had come to the knowledge of them by some divine revelation. And so by indirect wayes, and a seeming kinde of holinesse in mee, I gave them to understand their faults; by which meanes, I got my selfe a great deale of reputation, especially amongst the women, who after these things, and Gypsies,

runne as swift as the winde : being facill in beleeving, and nimble in publishing. Out of whose mouthes, my praise and commendation went spreading it selfe abroad.

Many a time and oft, when some poore body was willing to use my helpe, making especiall choyse of me, as one that was well esteemed and reputed of all men, I would stand in the open street with a Dish in my hand, publikely begging Almes for him, of those that I was acquainted withall : and having got a pretty round summe of money, I gave him the least part of it, and kept the rest to my selfe. I lickt up the Creame, and left him the Whey.

When I was minded to doe some notable villanie, the first thing that I went about, for the better effecting of such a businesse, was to get me a very faire and goodly large Jesuiticall cloake, where-with to cover it ; and for the better dissembling of it, I would put on all the gestures of outward Sanctity, as submission, mortification, and good example ; having the true turning up of the white of mine eye, a sober looke, a grave utterance, seldome spetting, but when I was to speake to the purpose, a broad-woking Hat, a little Band, and a lesse paire of Breeches. And with this kinde of habit, and posture, I bore the Ball before me, and tript up the heeles of all those that stood in my way. Which if in nothing else, yet was it plainly to be seene in this ; that I had there-with so easily deceived this holy man, this good honest Frier, that wisht me so well, nay had already done so well for me. Nor did I only doe him this harme alone, but a greater mischiefe followed upon the necke of it. That he by my meanes lost that good opinion, which the world had of him : But say hee had not lost it ; and admit, that hee kept it whole and sound, as before ; yet, what a villanous instrument was I, and what just cause had I given of prejudicing, and that in no meane measure, the credit and reputation of so honest and innocent a creature as he was ?

Well, he had now placed me with this Gentle-woman, being verily perswaded of me, that I would doe her all true and faithfull service, as he might very well presume by those

particular Actions, which I had made shew of unto him of this my rare and singular (shall I say knaverie, or) perfection ? Well, what so e're I was, I am sure he tooke mee to be a very honest man. He gave his word for me, and trusted me with much of his owne : I could not lacke any thing, if it lay in his power to pleasure me, so good an opinion had he conceived of me. She willingly (upon his recommendation) receiv'd me into her service. Shee trusted me with her wealth and her familie. Shee had ordained a very good lodging for me, provided a delicate soft bed for me, and all other necessaries that were fitting for mee. Shee used mee in all things else, not as a servant, but as a Kinsman, and as such a one, for whose sake, she did verily beleeve, that God would throw many favours upon her. Sometimes she would intreat me, to say an Ave-Mary for the health and good successe of her Husband. I made answer to all her demands, as if I had beene some Oracle, and with such a deale of mortification, that I made her many times to shead teares. By this meanes I came to coozen her, to rob her, and which was worst of all, to injure her, by wronging her house. For you shall understand, that this Gentle-woman had a certaine faire white slave (none I wisse of these blacke Moores, but a handsome well-favoured Wench) to her Maid-servant, whom for a long time, I tooke to bee free-borne, and she likewise seemed to be a good, and holy creature. But in very truth, she was such a one, that she and I might very well shake hands ; of us both, there was never a barrell better Herring : Well, were she better or worse then my selfe, be she what she will be, let it suffice you, she and I had tumbled together upon one bed. I know not how we did smell out one another, that in so short a time, we had growne to be so well acquainted. For within some few dayes that I had beene in the house, there was no ho with her, I could not keepe her out of my Chamber, would I never so faine, but she would come in whether I would or no. To all the rest of the servants, she seemed to be a Saint, and looked as though butter would not have melted in her mouth ; but

Guzman entertained into service by a Gentle-woman

Guzman lies with his Mistresses maid

with me she shewd her selfe most loose and dissolute, as if she had beene bred up in some Brothell house, or trained to this geare in the publike Stewes, yet stil carryed her selfe with that wisdome and discretion, that none of the house, except my selfe, no not her Mistresse could come to know, or the least way to suspect, that there was any such secret businesse betweene us. Besides, she did so cherish me, and make so much of me, that my Chest was never without good store of Collations, and other sweet-meates. So that my Chamber, was like a Comfit-makers shop. She furnished me with a great deale of fine Linnen, as white as the curd, neatly folded up, neat and sweet it was. And her Mistresse was glad to see it; for she tooke us both to be Saints. She likewise gave me money to spend, not knowing whence she had it, nor how she came by it, or from whose hands she received it.

I had a glimpse of some things: but because I would not fall from those good tearmes wherein I stood, I would not be too curious in the search of them; as well that I might not lose her company, while I continued there; as also that I might thereby oblige her the more unto me: I went intertaining her with faire words, and good hopes, telling her, that when time should serve, I would seeke to redeeme her out of her captivitie, and afterwards make her my Wife. This seasoned the pot, made her rowze up her spirits, and like a Spaniell, to wait diligently upon mee, and to serve mee in any thing that she thought would please me. For, considering the love which I feigned to beare unto her, (though she were a crafty subtill Wench) she did evermore make sure account of me, as if I were not a free-man, and shee a Slave. And yet not so free, as you thinke neither, having a Wife (for ought I knew to the contrary) still alive.

My Mistris knew nothing concerning her owne estate and wealth, nor did finger any other moneys, then what I gave her. All things that were in the Citie, went through my hands; I likewise had the command of all her stocke abroad in the Country, and did take and gather in all the

fruits and profits thereof. For my designe was, to make a reasonable good round booty, and so get mee gone, to seeke out a new world. I had a great minde to goe to the Indies, and did but watch for an opportunitie to imbarke my selfe, howsoever it should afterwards fall out with mee. But I could not handsomely put this blow home. For my Mistris fore-seeing her certaine ruine, for that her Farmers and Tenants had told her, that they had paid in their rents to me; the Shepheards, that I had sold her flockes; the Baylife of her Vine-yards, that I had convaid all her Wines out of their Vaults and Sellars, where they were wont to be kept; and that of all this one-pennyworth thereof was not come to her purse; she resolved with her selfe to communicate this matter in private onely to one Gentleman that was her neere kinsman. She then acquainted him with all that had passed, and what an ill account I had made her, intreating him to apply some convenient remedy for the same. Hee, without speaking so much as a word thereof unto mee, when as I was going one evening to cast up my reckning, and to devise with my selfe, how I might make cleane worke of all that my Mistris had, not thinking (God wot) on any such thing, being devoyd of all care, and free from the least suspition of any such matter, the weather being hot, and my selfe very drowzie, I fell fast asleepe. CHAPTER VII

Now, whilest I was thus taking my rest, and thinking no body any harme, an Alguazil comes in suddenly upon mee, takes hold on mee, and without telling me why, or wherefore; (for that (said he) I should know hereafter at better leisure) hee carried mee away to prison. The businesse was thus carried, that neither our house, nor the street, should bee in a hurry and tumult, by any stirre or coyle that I should make, when I should come to know by whose order I was apprehended, and committed. I went along very sad and heavy, and knew not in the world what to thinke of it; one while devising with my selfe, whether this my Commitment were by vertue of some *Requisitoria*, or Commission come out of Italy? Whether it were at the suite of my Creditors in Castile? Or for some of my new Guzman arrested and carried to Prison

thefts, that I had so lately committed in that Citie, which perhaps for want of good carriage, were now come to light? And albeit every one of these had weight inough to presse downe my heart, and to make it sinke under so many, and such heavy burthens; yet did it grieve me more then all the rest, that I should now lye no more at racke and manger, as I was wont to doe; and that together with my good name, I should likewise lose my credit and estimation, and that men would not trust me, as they had done heretofore. But what remedie but patience? But seeing it was no better, God bee thanked it was no worse. For this misfortune befell mee just at such a time when as my Crowne was shaven, and had not any thing worth the speaking, that was to be found either about me, or at home in my lodging. For in regard that my Mother was a single woman, and liv'd alone by her selfe, by a little and a little, I carried all that I had scrap't together, to her, and she kept it for mee. Afterwards they broke open my Chest, but found nothing in it, but a Bull of the last yeere, and a few of old ragges. Where-upon, they came to prison to take an account of mee; giving them so bad a one, as might well bee presumed from such a one as I was, who would alwayes receive, but never pay.

I did not give them such a Bead-roll, as they doe, that pray upon their Beads. They laid great sums to my charge, but could meet with nothing but Blankes. They made strict inquisition to finde them out; They looked heere, and they looked there, but they could not light upon any thing, for I had not so much as one farthing of it in my custodie. When they saw that, they got them to the Frier, and gave him a large account of the case how it stood with them.

He (like a wise man) did neither condemne, nor absolve me, till he should heare, what I could say for my selfe, that hee might the better judge thereof, when hee had heard both parties. Hee came to the prison to visit mee, and talking with me about this businesse, I deny'de all, and stood stiffely to it; affirming, that they had suborn'd

false witnesses against me ; and that I was as innocent as the child that was new borne ; and that no man knew lesse thereof then I did. And therefore my hope was in God, and that hee would helpe mee ; and that, as he had freed Joseph and Susanna ; so would he defend the justnesse of my cause, and would not suffer the uprightnesse of my dealing to perish : Acknowledging withall, that this, and much more chastisement my sinnes had deserved, for many other my former offences, which I had committed against his divine Majestie.

The good religious man knew not what to doe, nor to which of us hee should give most credit. Hee was much perplexed within himselfe, and stood doubtfull to which side hee should leane. But for the present, hee inclined to that part that was falling, seeking to support the weakest. He gave me comfortable words, promising his best care and paines in my defence, recommending my businesses unto God, who would (when he saw fit) free mee out of my troubles, and afford me his helping hand. Hee tooke his leave of me ; from thence he went to the Escrivanos office, for to *abonar*, and make good my Cause, desiring him for charities-sake, that hee would have an especiall care of it, and looke well into it, telling him that he was verily perswaded, that I was a religious honest man, one that feared God, and was a Saint upon earth.

But when the Escrivano heard him lash out so farre into my commendation, laughing heartily thereat, hee pull'd forth some Processes, that had been put in against me, and making a relation unto him of the particular points therein contained, laying there before him, what a lewd kinde of fellow I was ; the thefts that I had committed ; and the coozening tricks that I had used ; the poore Frier was ashamed of himselfe. There-upon, this good holy Father, with all the sinceritie and simplicitie in the world, up and told him, what had past betwixt him and mee, and by what meanes hee came to the first knowledge of mee, and how, and for what cause, hee gave mee so much trust and credit ; not thinking (good man) thereby, to doe mee any harme ;

but did onely tell him this, that he might bee the better perswaded of me, and that he himselfe had some reason to speake for me, and to doe me all the lawfull favour he could.

When the Escrivano had heard this Tale, hee grew Hart-angry, and his soule was vexed at this my villany, to see that I had no more grace with me, but to make so grave a person a stale for my roguery; and that I should put so grosse a jest upon so good a man. He was herewith so incensed against me, and his choller did rise in that abound-ance, that if hee had had the Law in his owne hands, I had presently beene hang'd out of the way, without any more adoe. He left the Office, and went presently to the Teniente, or Deputy Lieutenant, to whom hee made a large relation of all the whole matter, and set it downe all under his owne hand, and finding himselfe as much affronted with this wrong I had done the Fryer, and that the parties aggrieved had past over all their power unto him to prose-cute it for them, as if it had beene his owne cause, they laid more and more to my charge, forming another new processe against me of farre greater aggravation then the former; and commanding me stricter imprisonment, willing the Jaylor to put me downe into the dungeon.

This unfortunate day did not catch me so naked, that I wanted money to be able to draw out my thread to its length, and to wage Law with them. But the Prison is of the nature and qualitie of fire; it consumeth all that come unto it, converting it into its owne proper substance. Large experiences had I made thereof, and by my account I found it to be a Winde-Mill, and a May-game for children. There is not any one that comes thither, but is a Miller, and grinds there; crying out, that his imprisonment is but for a thing of nothing, a toy, a trifle; when, as some-time it so falleth out, that they are committed thither for three or foure murders, for a robbery upon the Highway, or for some other the like foule and odious offences. It is a place where fooles set up their rest, a forced tryall of a mans patience, a deare-bought experience, a too late

What a Prison is

repentance, a proovall of a mans friends, and a revenge- CHAPTER
ment of his enemies, a confused Common-wealth, a short VII
Hell, a long Death, a haven of Sighs, a vally of Teares, a house of Mad-men, a very Bedlame, where every one cryes out, and loves to heare himselfe talke of his owne foolish and wilde prankes. And all of them being guilty, not a man of them that will confesse he is faulty, nor that his crime is any thing heinous.

They that are prisoners, are like unto your Grapes on a Vine Bower, which as soone as they waxe ripe, there is not a sprigge or bough of them which is not laden with Waspes, who insensibly (they having no feeling of it) sucke all the juice and sweetnesse out of them, leaving onely the Caskes and Husks of them empty, hanging upon the Arbour ; And as are the Grapes, so is the swarme ; if great and more, the more Waspes ; if few and small, the lesse. As it is with this Vine, and its Grapes ; so is it with those that are led to Prison.

The Officers and Ministers, that belong there-unto, come thicke and three-fold about him, clinging so close unto him, and sucking so hard from him, that they never leave him, till they have drawne him dry, and taken all his pyth and substance from him. And when the poore Prisoner hath not longer where-withall to feede their hungry maw, and that they have squeez'd all his sweetnesse out of him, they fly away from him, and forget him, as if there had never beene any such man, leaving him to himselfe poore, and comfortlesse. And this is as it were but a flea-biting, and a little evill, in comparison of a greater, which is too usual and common amongst them. For if the prisoner be poore, and have no money, they presently pronounce sentence against him, leaving him starke naked, and undone.

Touching Jaylors, and Keepers of Prisons

As soone as they consigne and deliver him over to the Master Keeper, or head-Jaylor, who hath the keeping and disposing of the upper-Wards, and the best lodgings, they give him that intertainment as his purse shall deserve. For that Keeper or Jaylor does like him that buyes ; who has no respect to the qualitie of him that sels, but to the

thing that he selleth : so to him it matters not, whether the prisoner be more one, then another ; Noble, or base ; Gentleman, or Clowne ; all is one for that : He lookes onely unto that which he gives him. When his Commitment is not a matter of importance, nor meriting corporall punishment, and is not of that heinous nature, as murder, theft, the foule sinne, and other such like, they leave him at large to take the pleasure of the prison, alwayes provided, that they pay him well for this his liberty. I was well us'd at the first, (for my cause was not criminall) and handsomely lodg'd, before that I had given securitie either to satisfie, or answer to that debt, wherewithall I was charged. By this time they all knew me, and all of us understood one another well inough, we were all Camerades, and hayle fellow, well met, one with another. I gave them content, and stayd below amongst them, talking and passing away the time with them, but had evermore an eye, to see if I could safely get to the doore, and stood still, watching an opportunitie, when I might conveniently doe it, and so give them the slip.

The fashion of Attourneys, and Sollicitours, and the like Officers of your Courts of Justice

But upon my first apprehending, as soone as I was come within sight of the prison ; as also, after that I was committed, there presently flockt about mee twenty severall Proctors, Attourneys, and Sollicitours, (who liv'd by the sinnes of the people) who with their pen and Paper, (which they never went without) tooke both my name, and the cause of my imprisonment ; all of them making it a matter of nothing, and an easie suite to goe through with. One of them would tell me, that the Judge was his very good friend, and did favour all the causes that he brought before him ; another, that hee had a great interest in the publike Notary ; a third, that within two houres he would get me bailed ; a fourth, that my businesse was a toy, a meere trifle, a thing of no consideration in the world, and that for sixe Royals, hee would instantly undertake to free mee. Every one of them would make himselfe Master of my cause, saying, that it did properly belong unto him, for that he had accompanied me, and come along with me, from the

time of my Arrest. This man I intertained, for his plea of prevention, being unwilling to crosse that Proverbe; of First come, first serv'd. Where-upon I intreated him, that hee would call such an Escrivano, a friend of mine unto me. Another, for that he was the first that put pen to paper, and had drawne my Petition for mee to the Teniente. But to my selfe, I laught at them all. For I knew them well inough, and the manner of their proceeding. For they onely live by what they can get and wring from a man before-hand; but afterwards you shall not draw them along, with two yoke of Oxen, they will so hang the Arse. And there was one of them that having a Power or Warrant to free a Thiefe, was not ashamed to aske him money for to make his Interrogatories, after that he should be condemned to the Gallies. CHAPTER VII

Thus, all of them striving, which of them should be imploy'd in my businesse, there comes mee rushing in violently thorow the midst of them, a very bold and confident fellow, that thought to rule the rost, and to carry all away before him, one that had beene my Proctor heretofore in criminall causes, and said unto mee; What, Sir, are you heere? I told him, yes. Which question he might have sav'd; for he saw I was sure inough. Then he askt me, What was the cause of my imprisonment? When I had told it him, hee replyde: Tush, Laugh and be merry, Sir, take no care for this, it is a toy, a trifle, I warrant you Sir, wee will take order for this, and therefore let it never trouble you. Have you any money, Sir, that I may carry it to the Escrivano? I will poast presently with a Petition to the Teniente, that you may put in Sureties to answere the matter, and in the meane time to have your libertie to follow your businesse. And if he shall refuse to grant you provision in this Case, we will have a Writ of remove, to bring the matter into the open Hall, and those that assist there in Counsell, shall presently give order for your release. I shall speake to one of them, who is my singular good Lord, and I dare pawne my word to you, that you shall not tarry heere above halfe a day.

When the others heard this, they said, Ha? how now? what's this? is the winde in that doore? Heere is a pretty kinde of forme of framing a Petition withall my heart. Is this the course you meane to take? Wee have beene some twenty of us and upward, these two long houres and better taking paines in this businesse, and will you now take the same out of our hands? Shall the hindermost dogge beare away the Hare? Must he now follow the suite?

My Proctor there-upon, made them this answere; My Masters, had you beene writing and labouring about this businesse these two moneths and more; yet notwithstanding upon my comming unto him, I am the man that must goe thorow with it. For this Gentleman is my very good friend, and I am to dispatch all his businesses. And therefore a Gods name ye may be gone; and let my Clyent alone.

When they heard him say so, they replyde unto him; O what a sweet and seemely manner of negociating is this? What a faire flourish does he make? Where has he washt his hands, that hee should shave us on this fashion, and carry away this cause so cleanely? You may be gone, Sir, and it please you; for this Gentleman knowes reason, and will intertaine him in his cause that he hath most minde to: and therefore what need so many words? In conclusion, one said I; and the other said no; and in the end, they differr'd so long about it, that they grew at last so hot and so angry one with another, that they began to rip up each others faults, and to tell (without any other bodies help) who they were; there was not that spot in their practice, which they did not lay open to view; nor that staine in their life, which they did not discover; shewing how, and in what manner they did coozen the poore prisoners, and picke their money out of their purses. Which was a Dialogue (for those that heard it) of excellent intertainment, and passing good mirth; for that they were truthes, represented to the life. And this (I assure you) is a common Trade amongst them, and this coozening course

they take at all houres, and with all persons, as well prisoners as others.

Now, when this heat was over-past, and all was quiet ; I came to my old Proctor, intreating him to doe what was fitting, and I would see him well contented for his paines. I gave him foure Royals to begin withall : which when he had fingerd, I could see my friend no more in fifteene dayes after. I knew well enough before, what he meant to doe ; and that he had no other errand unto me but this, to lick something from me, though it were never so little, the better to secure the seething of the Pot, against the next day following, and to have where-withall to goe to the Market-place. But I was driven perforce to make choyce of him because I stood in feare of him : Who, for that he was wel acquainted with all my old causes, if I should have refused him, or shewd him any but the least unkindenes, and that he should have taken a stitch there-upon against mee, hee would have discovered the pot of Roses and throwne open the cloake that covered all my knaveries, and would in two houres have heapt upon me a hundred severall accusations. So that partly choosing him, (by refusing the rest) and partly leaving him, (in the poorenesse of his Fee) as wel to have him hold his peace, as to get him to follow my businesse ; for I must have paid some body ; I held it the best course to make him my Proctor, though this were not a businesse that required much following ; but did mainely consist on matter of money. But afterwards when I began to be examined, and thorowly sifted of that my audacious delusion, and imposture, which I had put upon that good Religious Fryer, and that they came to compare cause with cause, then did I need a Proctor.

Now things began to goe on in good earnest ; they call'd mee up, and went about to clap bolts on my legges : but those I redeem'd with my money. I paid the Keeper, who had the keeping of them, and the yong fellow, that was to put them on, had his Fee likewise of me. My Escrivano now often visits me ; my Petitions runne up and downe from place to place ; Give me thus much, sayes my

Sollicitour ; Where is my Fee, quoth my Advocate ? Thus by little and little, like so many Horse-leeches, they went sucking all my bloud from mee, till they had scarce left me one drop. So that now I was like a cluster of Grapes, that was quite dry'de away, and withered to nothing. Yet notwithstanding all these miseries, it is not fit, that I should passe over in silence, that which passed betwixt my Wench, and my selfe. For as much that every morning, as soone as it was day, she rayned downe Manna upon me ; in her I found some helpe, for that she furnished me with all things that were necessary for me ; and when the rigour of my imprisonment was upon me, being sentenced by the Teniente to the Gallyes, she sent me a letter : which, for that it is a pleasant and a witty one, I thought good to make it knowne unto you ; as also, because it is not amisse, to slacken the string, and unbend the bowe, by recounting of something, that may serve for intertainment. Which letter spake after this maner :

To Señor Guzman de Alfarache, my hearts-joy, and my hopes comfort.

A letter of Guzmans wench lamenting his misfortunes

My deare Love ; (though now to my great griefe, a poore condemned Slave) I write these lines to no other end unto thee, save only to perswade thee to cast away sorrowe, and to take comfort unto thee. Let it suffice (sweetheart) that I have none ; and let me alone mourne for thee : for ever since Saint James his day, about two of the clocke in the after-noone, when thou wast first apprehended whilest thou lay'st quietly asleepe, who (hard-hearted as they were) would not let thee take out thy nap, my Soule hath much sorrowed for thee. But that which farther increaseth my affliction, is ; that this sad newes is brought to day to my eares, that the Teniente hath adjudged thee to two hundred stripes, and tenne yeeres continuance in the Gallyes. God lash his shoulders for it with whips of wyer, and the knottiest, and severest scourges of his wrath ; Let him live a slave all the dayes of his life in the Gallies, and then rot, and dye. It well

appeares, that he wishes thee not so well as I doe; nor knowes the bitternes of those teares that I shed for thee. Little does he thinke how deare thy love costs me.

Juliana wishes me to tell thee, that thou shouldst foorth-with appeale from him. Appeale twenty times, and more (if more shall seeme fitting unto thee) and take care for nothing; for (by the grace of God) I doubt not, but all shall goe well inough in the end: And then, this Tyrannicall Teniente shall see (though it grieve him) that thou shalt not for ever remaine a prisoner to his pride: for I sweare and vowe unto thee by this my Mulata[1] *face, that I will make him to remember as long as hee lives, the teares which hee hath drawne from mine eyes; which have beene so many, that I had much adoe to keepe them from the worlds knowledge; And I should have powred them foorth, till they should have growne to be great rivers, had I not feared, I should have beene drowned in them, and so never have injoyed thee more. By the faith that I owe unto thee, I will never cease weeping, till the fountaines of my teares swell so high, that I may come swimming unto thee, and drawe thee out of that dungeon, where-unto my Soule is chayned, and remayneth there prisoner with thee. Juliana can tell thee, how I tore my haire, when I heard this bad newes. By her I have sent thee twenty Royalls, that thou may'st followe thy suite, be as merry as thou may'st, and that thou would'st thinke on me, howbeit I knewe the time, when such ceremonies needed not betweene thee and mee: For had I beene but a minute of an houre from thee, staying no longer away, then while I had put a fewe coles under the pot, thou didst thinke it a thousand yeeres. Remember (my sweet Slave, my pretty Cage-bird) that I both love, and adore thee: And receive this greene girdle from my hands, in token of the good hope which I have, that mine eyes shall quickly see thee set free. And if for to supply thy wants, it were needfull that I should be sold, brand this my face with two hot yrons, and set a Slaves marke in eyther cheeke, and make sale of me in the*

[1] *Mulata*, is a maid-child, that is borne of a Negra, and a fayre man; and so on the contrary. And because it is an extraordinary mixture, they compare such a one to a Mule.

open market: for assure thy selfe, I shall esteeme it the greatest happines that can befall me, that my bondage may worke thy freedome.

Thou tell'st me, that Soto, thy Camarade is ill, and was never well, since the Hang-man dealt so roughly with him, and straind the strings so hard, that he made him change his note; racking as much from him, as there needed no further confession; it grieves me to the very heart, that a man of his spirit, should be so cow'd by such a vile and base fellow, that for very feare, he should be forced to confesse, not only his owne, but other mens faults. Commend me unto him (though unknowne) and tell him, that I am hartily sorry for him; share part of these Conserves with him, which I send you, which (my deare Love) I have made a shift to save for thee.

To morrow is our kneading day, wherein we must mould up our bread, and put the loaves into the Oven; then shall I make thee such a friendly cake, and butter it so finely for thee, that thou shalt not be ashamed to bid thy best friends to the eating of it.

Send me your foule linnen, and shift dayly, that you may keepe your selfe cleane and sweete; For since that these mine armes cannot imbrace thee, they shall tyre and weary out themselves in thy service; as being most willing to doe any thing, that may give thee content. My Mistris sweares that shee will hang thee, because she sayes, you have rob'd her, of you knowe what; but I am sure, you have rob'd another of more then she; of I knowe what, you knowe; To a wise man, a word is sufficient.[1]

Proverb

If Usher Gomez shall come to see thee, talke not with him, or if thou doest, be very circumspect, what thou sayst unto him: For he is a man, that carries two faces under one hood; He seekes to insinuate himselfe into other mens bosomes, only to sift them: And besides, he is a great friend to a cup of wine; And a drunken tongue (which I need not to tell thee) will blab out all it knowes. I advertise thee of all: And because this is for no other end, I heere end: yet never end to pray unto God, that he will preserve thee for me, and that he

[1] *A Buen entendedor, pocas palabras.*

will free thee out of this filthie dungeon. From this thy chamber, about an houre before mid-night, my contemplation (sweet heart) being solely and wholy bestowed on thy best-beloved selfe.

Thy Slave till death.

This wenches oyle maintained the weeke alive, all the time of my troubles, which otherwise would have gone out. For I liv'd at a great charge, my expences were many, and though I had made my harvest, and gathered a great deale together, yet all was melted away, like salt in water, or butter against the fire. My Mother likewise, when she sawe in what bad tearmes my suite stood, told me ; That she was rob'd of all that she had ; but as I did conceive (and I thinke truly) her meaning was to hold that fast which she had, when she saw it was to no purpose to let it goe. Whereupon, I was inforced to doe as the rest did, and to follow the currant. My plea still went on, and I wanted money to maintayne my cause. I could not corrupt the Escrivano, (for I had nothing, where-withall to bribe him) ; The Judge, he was so highly incenst against me, that there was no hope of working him ; My Proctor, hee slept in the busines, and would not stirre a foote ; and my Solicitor fled as far from me, as his legs would carry him. There was now no more juyce in my bunch of grapes, the Wasps were now gone their way, and had left me all alone ; they had pronounced Sentence against me, the effect whereof was, That I should be set upon an Asse, and so ride stript to the waste, round about the Towne, receive so many stripes ; the Cryer proclayming my offence before me ; and this done, to remaine for six yeeres in the Gallyes.

When I saw I must bee made a Gally-slave, and that there was no redemption of this my punishment, I put on a brazen face on the matter, and grew carelesse of any mans either sight, or censure. I playd my part without feare, or shame, as being now the Kings Slave, and out of all other mens reach and danger, they having nothing more to doe with me. Yet was it some comfort unto me, that my *Camarade*

Soto was condemned to the like punishment, and that we should, like a couple of loving Curres, bee ty'de together in one payre of couples. And as wee were fellowes and Companions in one Prison, and in one and the same Dungeon, and had runne both of us one and the same Carreere ; so was I very willing, that there might have beene that good amitie betweene us, and that true love that ought to have beene ; which if he had beene the same man he should have beene, it had gone better both with him and me, then now it did. But (as you shall see hereafter) he played the Traytor with me.

He was a notable squeeze-grape, a huge quaffer, his glasse should bee alway brim-full, and he would up with it *de profundis* ; his usuall draught was a large pint and a halfe : and having drunke liberally before he came to the rack, thinking that would have made him lesse sensible of his paine, he confest at the first, whatsoever they would have him. Seeing I had now receiv'd my doome, and that there was not any remedy, nor the least hope thereof, for my redemption, I was willing to try my fortune ; but I never had her yet to friend : So that it had beene a miracle, if she had not fayl'd me now. I feign'd my selfe sicke for some fifteene dayes, never came out of the dungeon, nor rose from my bed.

Guzman seekes to break prison

At the fifteene dayes end, having provided my selfe of womans apparell, and having shav'd my Beard cleane away with a Razour, putting on those cloathes, casting a Mantle over them, and painting my face, dawbing it first with white, and then giving it a little tincture of Red ; now when night was in, I past thorow the two upper doores, that belonged to the Galleries, and neither of those Porters said a word, but let me passe quietly, yet were they both of them quicke-sighted inough, and had their eyes cleere and sound.

Guzman prevented of his purpose

But when I came downe to the doore that opens to the street, and was ready to put my foot over the threshold, a blinke-ey'de Porter, that had but one eye, (would to God he had beene blinde on the other) claps his arme athwart

the Posterne, kept me backe, lookt upon me, and presently knew me : Whereupon, he shuts to the doore. I had provided my selfe of a good short arming sword, one, that if need had been, would have done the deed, which I carried closely about me, if I should chance to be put to my shifts, and have occasion to use it. But as ill lucke would have it, I bore it about mee at such a time, when as it could doe me no good, nor stand me in any stead in the world. This was such an aggravation of my fault, that my accusation was now made criminall. CHAPTER VII

Well, they turn'd me up stayres, and fulminating a new Processe against me, they condemn'd me to the Gallies, during life. And it was no small courtesie, that they did mee, that they did not make mee ride in those cloathes up and downe the Citie, as they had heretofore done the like disgrace unto others. Guzman condemned during life to the Gallies

I thought to have avoided danger, and fell upon my death.

CHAPTER VIII

Guzman de Alfarache is taken out of the Prison of Sevill, to bee carried to the Port, to be put into the Gallies. Hee recounteth that which befell him on the way ; as likewise in the Gallies

AM a Gally-Slave, and am now come to the end, for which I was ordained, whereunto my lewd courses were the meanes to bring mee. I must now leade that life, as the rest of my fellowes doe, who indure the like fortune. I must pull at a Rope, tugge at an Oare, and content my selfe with such poore fare, as others of my wretched condition are allow'd. I was one of the Band of the Braggards ; *de los, de Dios, es Christo* ; one

of that company, who confesse Christ to bee God, and have no other Cognizance of their Faith ; for their workes march under the Colours, and conduct of the Divell. I put on my white linnen breeches, my colour'd Stockins, my cut Doublet, and my Holland Night-Cap ; all which my kinde and loving *Mulata* had sent me ; living in hope, that in time the Dice would turne, and that she might one day see me againe at libertie. What with the helpe that I had from her, and what with those my fees, that I recovered (as due unto me) from those new Prisoners that came in, I led a fine gentle life, as also the life of a Gentile ; for such is the qualitie of such as I am, when they are admitted into such a famous schoole as that is, where such a deale of Roguery is profest.

I had now got some oyle to my Lampe, some money in my purse, partly out of other mens devotions, and partly out of mine owne indevours ; I did lend upon pawnes, of every single *Royall* I made dayly a *Quarte* [1] profit ; I did filch from those that were fresh men, and newly come in amongst us ; not one of them that scap't my fingers, all that came under my hands paid soundly for it. When they were asleepe, I would play the wagge with them, putting the snuffe of a Candle on the top of their shooe, and holding matches of brimstone under their noses, or rolling a Card, let the smoke runne up into their nostrils, till it were ready to choake them ; and a thousand other the like knavish tricks. For albeit God is there knowne, yet is hee not feared. They have no more respect unto him, then if they were so many Pagans. And for the most part, those that come to the like misery, are Ruffians, and High-way robbers, a brutish and beastly kinde of people. And it must be either a great wonder, or mis-fortune, that such a one as I should come thither ; and when it so falleth out, the reason of it is, because God blindeth their understanding, to the end, that by leading them this way, he may bring them to the acknowledgement of their sinne ; and

The wicked condition of the Gally-Slaves

[1] Eight *Quartos* make a *Royall* : so that he made a halfe-penny and better, of every sixe pence.

that they may in time come to a clearer knowledge of him, learne to serve him, and so be saved.

A Tale of a Ruffian

There was a Ruffian, a notable shaver (in my time whilest I was there) who being condemned to death, and put into the *enfermiria*, or that quarter, where the sicke are cured; whence he was to be taken forth the next day to be executed, seeing some of those that had the guarding of him, playing at three-hand Primera, he rose from his banke, he made to them as well as hee could, crawling along, with his two paire of fetters, and a great chaine; and they asking him, whither he would? Hee told them; I come hither, to passe away the time a while.

The Guards that had the charge of him, told him, that it was fitter that he should betake himselfe to his prayers, and recommend himselfe and his Soule unto God. Whereunto, he answered, I have pray'd already all that I can pray; I have not one prayer more left me. I have no more to doe, then what I have done already; and therefore shuffle, and deale about, and fill out some Wine, and let the cup walke; that we may wash away sorrow, and rid away that care, which is ready to choake my heart. They replyde, it was very late, and that the Taverne doore was shut, and there was no getting in. Goe tell then (said he) the fellow that keepes it, that it is for me, and that's inough; I warrant you, hee will not deny me. And therefore no more words, my Masters, but play on, and follow your sport; for I sweare unto you, that I know not what will become of this businesse, nor what the issue thereof will be.

They dance all to this Tune. Others there are, that will have their Head and Beard neatly trimm'd, that they may seeme the handsomer when they come to the Gallowes, and be said to be proper men, and well-favour'd; and will likewise take order to have a fine cleane starcht-Ruffe, daintily and curiously set; it seeming perhaps unto them that the wearing of that, and the bearing their *Bigotes* high, turn'd up with hot irons, and stiffened with gums, should be their salvation, and bring them to heaven. And as in good Philo-

sophy, mens complexions follow generally the goodnesse, or badnesse of their meats; so may it likewise of the good or bad company that we keepe. Whence grew that Proverbe: *No con quien naces, sino con quien paces.* We must not judge of men by their birth, but by their breeding. It is their conversation, that must give them their denomination.

Proverb

Now I was one of these, and like a barbarous and ill-bred fellow, would faine imploy that little money which I had, in renting one of those *Bodegones* [1] belonging to the Prison; but fearing a day, that they would on the sudden strike up an Alarme, and so I might chance to lose all, I did not doe it; and I thinke I did well in it. For now that wee beganne to make a number of some sixe and twenty Gally-slaves, and were grown so unruly in the Prison, that there was no ho with us; the Keeper was halfe afraid, that wee would make some hole or other in the Meshe, and finde a time to get out of the net; and therefore laboured all that hee could to be discharged of us.

Guzman and the rest of the Gally-Slaves delivered over to the Commissary

One Munday morning wee were called up, and giving every one of us a Testimoniall of his Sentence, wee were all chained one to another: And being thus threaded as it were upon foure chaines, wee were delivered over to the Commissary, who was to convey us by little journeys to the Port, faire and softly, foot after foot, and as we could hale our haltred legges after us; our pace, like our irons, being very heavy.

In this manner went we out of Sevill, to the great griefe and sorrow of our Parents and Kinsfolke, and other our good friends, who went tearing their hayre, as we past along the streetes, and scratching their faces with their nayles, every one according to the love and respect which shee bare unto her friend. And they on the other side, pulling their Hats over their eyes, went along like so many meeke and gentle Lambes, and not with that Lyon-like looke, and haughty carriage, as they were wont heretofore; it was not any braving now, or out-facing of the matter,

[1] *Bodegon* is a poore vittailing house.

that could doe them good. Arrogancie was out of request with them, and would not serve the turne. I cannot deny, but it did touch me for my part to the very quicke, it went to the heart of mee: especially, when I called to minde the merry life that I had led, the good state wherein I had liv'd; if I had had but the grace to keepe my selfe well, while I was well; and to see the misery, where-unto now I was come.

Then did I begin to thinke with my selfe; If this bee so painefull unto mee already; if this chaine doe so much torment me, that I can scarce indure it; if I feele such trouble now, and if this befall me while the wood is greene, what will it doe, when it growes old and dry? What torment will they feele that are condemned for ever to perpetuall paine? Musing upon these things, I past along thorow the streetes of Sevill, for my Mother did not come to accompanie me, nor was she willing to see mee. And I was the onely man amongst them all, that was *Solus cum solo*, left alone to my selfe.

We walkt along very leisurely, which (God wot) was slowly inough, yet as fast as we could conveniently; for when my chaine was slacke, and I was offering to goe forward, my next fellow would oftentimes pull mee backe, which hee could not sometimes doe withall, and sometimes againe would stop of set purpose, as his necessarie occasions did require. Another, he was foundred with going bare-foot, and all the rest ready to sinke, they were so weary. Wee were men sensible of paine, as other men are, and being in that case as we were, none had more cause to sorrow then we; yet amongst our selves our griefes were so equall, that we had but little advantage one of another.

O the wretched and miserable state that we live in, and to how many various and unfortunate chances are wee necessarily obliged! Wee came to a place called Las Cabeças; and as we went on a morning from thence, wee had scarce gone half a League, but that one of our company had espide a farre off, a certaine yong fellow, who was going towards Sevill, with a great many fine little young Pigs,

THE THIRD BOOKE

The Gally-Slaves rob a poore fellow of his Pigges, that he was carrying to Market

and giving the word one from another, wee did presently battell-wise cast our selves into a Wing, as if we had been the Turkish Gallies ; and marshalling our selves after the manner of a halfe Moone, wee did in such an orderly fashion set upon them, that the points of the Hornes meeting as it were before, and in a kinde of circle-wise inclining each to other, wee had shut in the Pigges on a sudden, and incompast them so, that they could not get out from amongst us, and in spight of the young fellowes teeth, doe what he could for his life, every one of us made purchase of a fat Pigge.

The fellow began to cry out aloud, making great exclamations, and intreating the Commissary, that for Gods sake, hee would take order that he might have them againe. But hee seemed to be deafe, and would not heare of that eare, as one that was to have the greatest share in this bootie ; and so wee past on along with our prey, leaving the poore Clowne to goe seeke his remedy else-where. Wee knew the worst of it alreadie, so that our care, and our pitie were much about one.

About noone, when wee came to our Inne where wee were to rest our selves, and with a little sleepe to passe over the heat of the day, the Commissary called to us for the share that hee was to have of this our theft : for, being that he was consenting there-unto, the Accessorie was to have as much as the Principall ; the Assentant, as the Assaylant. Hee commanded one of them to bee rosted for him ; where-upon there arose a great stirre and tumult amongst us, being ready to goe together by the eares, whilest we were arguing the Case, which of us was to part with his Pigge. For amongst us all, there were scarce three of us that had the use of reason.

The Slaves mutine about their Pigs

When I saw the Mutiny, that was amongst them, and that in the carriage of this busines, he might (and that justly) blame me the more, because my understanding was more then theirs : I said unto him ; Master Commissary, my Pigge is heere ready at your service, dispose of it as you please : And if you shall so thinke it fit, seeing heere is Guard sufficient upon us, may it please you to comaund

Guzman offers his to the Commissary

them to unchaine me, and I will take the paines to dresse it for you with mine owne hands : for I have some reliques yet remayning of a good Cooke. He thankefully accepted of this my civill Compliment, and said unto me ; Of all this company, that is heere under my charge, I must truely confesse unto thee, I have, since my first knowledge of thee, observed in thee a certaine kind of noblenes, and free nature, which cannot but proceed from some good blood I therefore thanke you for this your present, and take it kindely at your hands, and shall be very glad to eate it, as you shall order it for me. I was taken from the chayne ; and being recommended to the Guards, I call'd for such things as were necessary ; but because the Inne was ill provided of such things as I would have had, to shewe my Cookerie, I could shew my skill no farther, then in the well rosting of it, with a fewe eggs battered together, and seasoned with a little pepper, and salt : I would have made a pudding in it's bellie, but I wanted necessaries. I minced the liver, and of that, and such other things as I could for the present, I made him sauce to his Pigge, which I knewe well how to doe.

He dresses it for him

At the same time some Travaylours came in, to take their ease, who were not a little sorry to finde us there : for that they were halfe afraid that their eares were scarce sure on their heads amongst such a company of Rogues as we were. The Table whereat they were to sit, was a long planke, neere adjoyning to a bench of stone : they were to eate altogether. The Commissary kindly saluted them, and they him ; and after a fewe Compliments were exchanged betweene them, they sate three in a file, and one of them taking his Port-mantua unto him, and putting it betweene his legges, under the boord, he there likewise lay'd his *Alforjas*, or wallet, wherein he had Cheese, a Bottle of Wine, and a peice of a Gammon of Bacon ; and that he might the better take it out, he did thrust his Port-mantua a little forward, leaving the *Alforjas* in the midst betweene his legges. I, when I saw that he was so warie, began to suspect, that it was not without cause, and calling

THE THIRD BOOKE

to the Hostesse for a Knife, I closely clapt it in betweene my arme, and my sleeve: And puting a great earthen Jarre full of water, underneath the boord, and in it, a Bottle of Wine; that the Commissary might have it fresh and coole, when hee should call for it; as oft as I stoopt downe to powre out his wine, by little and little, I fell to fingering of the Port-mantua, till at last, having made a shift to undoe all the Buttons, and giving it a gentle slash close where the Chaine ranne along, that made all fast, I nimbly tooke out two litle bundles, but somwhat weighty withall, which I presently convay'd very handsomely into my Gally-sloppes, where there was Sea-roome inough for them; and afterwards buttoning it up just in the same fashion as it was before, it was close and well, and not any signe to be seene of this theft that I had made.

Guzman filches two Fardles out of a Travailours Port-mantua: And the maner how

When they had made an end of their dinner, the Cloth was taken away, and having paid their reckoning, away went these Travailours; and we like-wise began to provide to be packing: for we also were to be gone. Soto, my *Camerade*, was fastned to another Chayne, somwhat farther off from mee, then I could have wish't it, which did not a little grieve me, because this distance did hinder our more private talke; but before they brought me back againe to my Chayne, I came unto him, and secretly delivered unto him those two bundles, desiring him to keepe them safe for mee, till we should meete with some better occasion, to knowe what was in them. He received them with a great deale of joy, and killing his Pigge unknowne to any, he thrust them both into the body of it, placing the intralls before the mouth of the wound, as well, that the bundles might not droppe out, as also to hide them thereby the better out of sight.

Soto Guzmans Companion a notable Thiefe

Soto his cunning in the cleanly convayance of this theft

Now when they were going to put me to the Chayne, I intreated the Commissary to doe me the favour, that I might be filed next to this my old friend and acquaintance. He willingly granted my request; so one was taken out of that file, and he and I were ranked together, that other and my selfe exchanging places.

CHAPTER VIII

We went lazily on along, as the fashion is, and as we were pacing these our leisurely steps, I rounded Soto softly in the eare, and said unto him; How now (my Camarade) what hast thou done with that which I gave thee to keepe? How hast thou dispos'd of it? But he, as if hee had not knowne mee, or had not given him any such thing at all, made so strange of it, that hee made me to suspect, that according to the custome of that Country, hee had drunke a cup too much, and so might happely have forgot it. Where-upon, I went putting him in minde, when and where I gave it him. But hee still denyde any such deliverie. And in the end grew some-what hot and angry with me, asking mee, whether I were drunke, or well in my wits, that I should demand any such thing of him, or make him beleeve, that I had delivered him either this, or that? I understand you not, I neither know you, nor it, nor have anything of yours, and therefore all that I can say unto you, is; That for mee you must goe looke it. Nothing I had of you, and nothing are you like to get from mee.

You cannot imagine, nor am I able to expresse the great both anger, and sorrow that I had, that I should be so unthankefully dealt withall, and receive such hard measure from one, to whom I had done so many good offices, and lov'd so truely, as I did him. For, there was not that morsell of meat, that went downe my throat, whereof he had not his share; nor that money in my purse, whereof I did not divide halfe with him. And my purpose was, that he should likewise share with mee in this. But that hee should thus breake the bonds of friendship, and deny, (and that so insolently, and impudently) that I had ever given him any such thing; this was it that troubled me; this was it that vext mee to the very heart.

Soto becomes an enemy to Guzman

He was a man of an ill condition, his concoction was not good, and hee was so moved upon these words of mine, and so out of all patience, that in a thundring voice he beganne to bolt out oathes and blasphemies, insomuch that the Commissarie was inforced to correct him with a Cudgell. I, relying on the favour he had shewne me, intreated him

How Guzman cryes quittance with Soto

to beare with him, because he was angry, and in choller, which was the cause of this his intemperancie. And he being desirous to know the cause of this his distemperature ; I began to apprehend with my selfe, that Soto would reserve all this for him ; and I made this reckoning with my selfe ; If I shall acquaint the Commissarie with that which had past betweene us, it may bee, that though I should not have all, yet at least, some part of the bootie might fall to my share.

This thiefe (thought I) shall not carry it away so ; hee shall not have all the thankes, and laugh at me when he has done. I will not bee thus gull'd by him. And therefore I resolved with my selfe, to acquaint him with the whole successe of the businesse, who, I presumed, would not be a little glad of it, out of the greedy and covetous desire that he would have to take that bone from us, which we two strove for.

Hereupon (being informed by me) he commanded Soto, that he should presently give him that which I had given him. He stoutly denies, that hee had any thing of me. The guards are will'd to search him ; they doe so ; and when they had done the utmost of their diligence, they could finde no such thing about him, nor any the least signe or token thereof. Where-upon I gathered, that he had done as I did, delivering the same over to some other body, to keepe it safe for him.

I told the Commissary, that there was no question to be made of it, but that he had secretly convay'd it away to some one or other of this our company, for that really and truly he received it of me, who gave the same unto him with mine owne hands. When he saw, that neither by faire meanes, nor by foule, by perswasions, nor threatnings, nor any other course that hee tooke with him, he could be brought to manifest the truth, and to bring these things to light ; the Commissary commanded they should take him aside, and put him to the Racke, till they should make him to confesse. And for that they had no other instruments there, save Cords, they applide them to those his

lower parts ; and when upon their twisting, they began to straine some-what hard upon the flesh, which was too delicate and sensible to indure any torture, being likewise a faint-hearted fellow, and of little or no courage, hee forth-with confessed, whither he had convayed them. Thereupon, they presently tooke his Pigge from him, (so that he lost that too by the bargaine) and taking out the intrals to see what was there, they quickly lighted on the two little bundles, in either of which was a *Rosario*, or set of Beads of the perfectest, and the daintiest pure Corall, that ever mine eyes saw ; every Bead at both ends, having his Cap of Gold, which was much graced by the neat cutting and inameling that was bestowed upon them, which (it should seeme) were sent as tokens to two severall persons.

The Commissary makes no more adoe, but presently claps them up in his pocket, promising to befriend me for it, and to give mee, what I my selfe should aske for them. Soto was herewith so madded, and so extremely incensed against me, that they were forced to change our chaines, and set us farther asunder then before ; for though we were thus divided, and parted each from other, they did afterwards fall to manacling of him, fastning both his wrists together with bolts of iron, because when he came where any stones were, he would take them up, and throw them at me.

In this troublesome manner we came at last unto the Gallies, just upon the very nicke, when they were calking, and rigging, and making all ready to put forth to Sea, and to goe in chase. And before they brought us aboord, they carried us to a Prison, where wee past over that night, with the like incommoditie and trouble, as at other times. Nay rather, it was worse with us now, then heretofore, for that the Prison was little, and cramm'd as full as ever it could hold. But be it better, or bee it worse, such as it was, wee were forced to take all in good part, and to make as good shift as we could. For we could not doe as we would, nor make choise of any place to our liking.

The Commissary had talkt in the meane while with the

Kings Officers; who came with those other of the Gallies, and the Kings Alguazil; and having now assigned and appointed us our Bankes, where wee were to sit and rowe, they gave the Commissary a discharge for the delivering so many Slaves into their hands, who told mee, that he would come and see me; and that he would stand my very good friend; so he betooke him to his Mule, and from that day forward, I did never more set eye on him.

Now, before that they tooke us out of Prison, to leade us along to the Gallies, they had ordered how wee should bee divided, and it fell out, that wee were to goe sixe and sixe in a fyle; in which division, it was my ill lucke (thankes to my sinnes, that laid this punishment upon me) to have Soto to be my Camerade.

This done, they presently delivered us over to certaine Moorish Slaves, who with their halfe Pikes came to guard us along, and tying our hands with tough thongs, which they had brought with them for that purpose, away we goe with them. We come aboord the Gally, where-into being entred, wee were willed to retire our selves to the poope, till that the Captaine and the Masters-Mate should come, and call us out one by one, placing every man in this, or that other Banke, as they thought fit; now, when they were come amongst us, they went walking up and downe on the *Coursey*, or the Gallerie-like space, on both sides whereof, the Slaves Bankes are placed: and whilest they were looking on the bankes, and advising with themselves where it were fittest to dispose of us; the other Gally-slaves began to set out their throats, and to cry out aloud unto them, desiring that they would disperce us amongst them; some complaining that they had an unprofitable member amongst them; others, that all in their Banke were weake and feeble persons, unable to doe any service.

But the Captaine, and the Masters-Mate, not giving eare to their clamours; but governing themselves by their owne discretion, having considered what was fittest to be done, placed us heere and there, as they saw cause: in which partition it fell to my lot, to be ranked in the second

Banke, just before the Cooke-roome, neere unto the Masters-Mates Cabin, at the foot of the Mast; having placed Soto in the *Patrone*, or Masters Banke. It griev'd me very much, that he was seated so neere unto me, in regard of the late quarrell that had beene betweene us; for wee could never afterwards indure one another; and he, me lesse, then I could him; for he was a malitious minded man, and had intertained in his heart a deep hatred against me; though I (for my part) never did deny him my friendship, nor was ever wanting unto him, whensoever he had occasion to use me: but he, like the Commissary, would have all to himselfe, if I should have let him alone. And all he should have had, and that with a very good will, if I had but once thought, that hee would have cry'de quits with mee, and paid mee home in mine owne coyne. When they had brought mee to the Banke, those that were there, bade mee welcome; in requitall whereof, I could have wisht, that I had beene able to say unto them; Excuse me, that I cannot come.

What Guzman indured in the Gallies

They installed me in my seat; and put on the Kings Robes upon me, two Shirts, two paire of linnen Breeches, a colour'd Wastecoat, and a red Cap. I was scarce warme in my seat, when a base under-Barber comes unto mee, a better Shaver, then a Cutter, and with his Razor, makes my head and Beard as bare as my hand, which I tooke to heart, for the great account I made thereof. But recollecting my spirits, I beganne to comfort my selfe, that this was the fortune of the world, and that others, that had beene in farre higher place, had falne into farre greater miseries.

I removed my eyes from those that were before mee, and looked towards those that were behinde me: not considering so much with my selfe how many were more happy, but how many were more wretched then I was. O this looking downeward is a comfortable thing to a man in misery. And albeit, it be true, that there is not any life almost so miserable, as that of a Gally-Slave, yet was it not halfe so bad as that which I indured with my first Wife.

And it was some comfort besides unto mee, that I was not a lone man in this my afflictions, but had many fellowes that suffered the like torment.

A yong fellow that belonged to the Alguazil, made presently towards mee, to clappe fetters on my feet, and manacles on my hands, chaining mee, and other my companions, that sate together on the same Banke, so fast, and so sure, that wee could not stirre from thence. Then did they give mee my allowance, which was sixe and twenty ounces of Bisket; it so fell out, that that day was (as we call it) *dia de Caldero*, the Caldron day, for the boiling of flesh, and making of pottage: And because I was but a new-comer, and was unprovided of a woodden dish, I tooke my part of those mammocks that were shared amongst us, with one of my fellowes that sate by mee. I would not offer to soke my Bisket in it, but chew'd it downe dry, as all your fresh-men doe at the first, till time had taught mee the use of my armes.

The paine we were put to for the present was little or nothing; for the Gallies being then a trimming, and a calking, wee that were the ghing, the base rout, and raskalitie of the Gallies, serv'd as then for no other use, but to row towards the shore, when wee were so commanded, and to make provision of boughes, or something else for shade, lest the heate of the Sunne should melt the tallow. All the cloathes that I brought aboord with mee into the Gally, I made show of them, and sold them; which yeelded mee some money, though not much, adding that, to that other little summe, which I brought with me, when I came out of Prison. Nor did I know in the world, how, or where I might secretly lay it up, and keepe it safe, either to relieve mee in such necessities as usually offer themselves, or to imploy it in some one thing or other, that I might have a penny in my purse at a pinch. And for that I had neither Coffer, Chest, nor so much as a Deske, that had a Locke and Key to it, where I might safely lay it up, it did somewhat trouble me, not being able to devise with my selfe, what I were best to doe with it. To carry it still about mee,

were to runne the hazzard of beeing robb'd, or coozen'd of it by my owne Camerades : And to commit it to another bodies keeping, I had already too late experience of the ill correspondence in that kinde.

All I saw, was ill, it concern'd me to looke well unto it, and to be-thinke my selfe, how I should dispose of it. At last (after long consideration) I resolved with my selfe, that I could not give it a better or more secret place, then to clappe it in my bosome, and to lay it as neere to my heart as I could possibly bring it. Others put their hearts there, where they put their treasure : but I tooke a cleane contrary course, putting my treasure where my heart was.

Well, I got me a needle and thread, and clapping my Thimble on my finger, I fell to worke, and made mee up a little Purse, about the bignesse of a Wax-kernell, which being strongly sowed, and quilted with many a sure stitch upon that part of my shirt, which toucht upon my heart, I bare it there, never suffering it to be out of my sight ; and having still an eye upon it, that it might bee the safer from its friends, and my enemies, who would bee ever and anon leering that way, casting a sheepes eye towards it ; but hee, whose mouth watered most at it, and had a months minde to be doing with it, was a notable famous Thiefe, that was my Camerade, and sate next unto mee, who could never come to filch it from mee, neither at mid-night, nor at any other time, so surely did I guard it on that side. Yet was hee not wanting to doe his best ; for, when he perceiv'd that I was asleepe, hee would goe groping heere and there, visiting every part about mee with his hand ; and for that the roomes were but few, and the houshold-stuffe that belong'd unto them, not much, they were easily and quickly runne over. Hee had past over in a trice, a little Satchell that I had by my side, my Gabardine, and my Breeches, and was come now at last to my Waste-coat, which I might more properly have termed my Soule : for that with its warmth, it did vivifie, and quicken the bloud, whereby it sustained it selfe, and was kept alive. Wee both labour'd hard, hee to robbe, I to keepe. He was not so crafty, but I was as

carefull. And if at any time I did strip my selfe naked, I would order the businesse so, that it should be impossible for him to take it from under mee, unlesse he tooke mee away with it. Hee continued a long time in this his care to come by it, watching all opportunities to rob me of it.

Now, in the meane while, forasmuch as I did consider with my selfe, that wheresoever a man lives, hee had need of an Angell of guard to attend him upon all occasions; I beganne to bethinke my selfe whom I should make choyse of to bee my Protector. And after that I had thorowly thought there-upon, I could not finde out any fitter for my turne, then the Masters-Mate. For albeit it be true, that the Captaine, as Lord, and chiefe Commander of all the rest, is to bee accounted the onely Protector of us all; yet, out of his authoritie and greatnesse of his Place, hee will not trouble himselfe with this raskall rabble.

They are for the most part principall persons, and men of qualitie; they will not vouchsafe to looke so low; they reckon not of such poore snakes as we be, nor take any notice who, or what we are. And I was the willinger to make this choyce, for that the Masters-Mate was my neere neighbour, his Cabbin was close by my Banke, by meanes whereof, I might the easier and more conveniently serve him. And so much the rather was I desirous to settle upon him, because hee carried the Cudgell, and had the possession of the salt Eele, which hee distributed amongst us, either more or lesse, according as he favour'd, or dis-favour'd; paying some soundly, and letting others goe scot-free.

Thus by little and little, I went scruing my selfe into his service, getting more ground still upon him, and striving to out-strip the rest: As well in my attendance at his boord, as in having him to bed; I trickt up his Cabin, brusht his Cloathes, kept them neat and handsome, lookt to his linnen, and was in every other respect so diligent about him, that within a few dayes I was the onely man in his eye. Nor did I account it as a small favour, that hee would

deigne mee a good looke : It seeming unto mee, as oft as hee lookt upon mee, that hee had bestow'd a Bull (I meane not the Pizzle) upon mee, and a free Indulgence from stripes, and that hee did thereby absolve mee both *à culpa, et pœna* : From my fault, and the punishment thereof. But therein I was deceived ; for that they beeing naturally severe and cruell, and that commonly such kinde of sterne and austere men are put into such places, they never have an eye to consider courtesies, not seeking to requite good, but to punish ill. CHAPTER VIII

They are a people, that will not acknowledge any thankfulnesse, because all that wee doe for them, they thinke to bee due unto them. A nights I did ridde the Dandruffe out of his head, rubb'd his feet, fann'd his face, destroyed the Gnats, and waited on him with that observance and punctualitie, that the greatest Prince in the world could not bee better served. And if they serve their Prince for love, I did the like to the Masters-Mate for feare ; lest the Hoope of a Hogs-head, or an Eeles tayle should twine it selfe about my shoulders, which kinde of weapons they never goe without. And howbeit it bee true, that this manner of service is not so perfect, nor so noble as the other ; yet feare makes men to take more heed. And now and then when I saw hee was waking, and had no minde to sleepe, I would entertaine him with a merry Fable, or pleasant Historie, to passe away the time the better. And I was never unprovided of a company of witty jests, and fine conceits, to make his Worship laugh : It being no small comfort to mee, to see him looke cheerefully. I grew in grace with him, and was very happy in this particular ; yet am I so much privie to mine owne worth, that it was no more then my good service did deserve. So that now, hee would not that any other, save my selfe, should serve him in those things, which gave him the greatest content. And I had more especiall reason to esteeme of this his favour towards mee, in regard that hee had a Gally-slave, before hee entertained me, that attended on his Person. Whom, though hee used well, yet hee went dayly pyning and

consuming away, that hee was very sorry to see it. For, though hee led a better life then the rest, and that hee lov'd him so well, that he fed him from his owne trencher, and bestow'd the best morsels upon him; yet was he like your Gaeta-colts, which the better you feed them, the worse they prove.

One day, when wee were both together with him, waiting at the table, he said unto mee; I prethe (Guzman) tell mee (for thou art a Scholler, and an understanding fellow) what should bee the reason, that Fermin being, at his first comming into the Gallies, of a very able body, strong, fat, and lusty, and I having sought to continue him still in the same state, by entertaining him into my service, and doing other friendly Offices for him, not eating that good morsell, whereof hee hath not a part, should, the more I make of him, fall (as thou seest) the more away? Whereunto I made answere; Sir, for to give resolution to this your question, it will be needfull for me to relate unto you another case, like unto this, of a new Christian, who had past thorow the hands of the Holy-House, or (as we commonly call it) the Inquisition.

A short tale of a new Christian that had one of the Inquisition to his neighbour

This man was rich, and powerfull, liv'd honourably, and in a plentifull fashion, led a merry life, waxed plump, and fat, had all things neate and handsome about him, and tooke much content in the house wherein he dwelt. Now it so fell out, that one of the Inquisitors came and tooke a house, that was the very next doore to his; who, for no other reason in the world, save only that he was so neere a neighbour unto him, grewe so meager, and so leane thereupon, that within a very short time, he was brought so lowe, and pined so fast away, that he was nothing but skinne and bone. So that to both these, I shall give Solution, by another the like accident, which I shall deliver for truth unto you, and thus it was:

A Storie of the King of Granada, and his Favourite Buferiz

Muley Almançor (who was King of Granada) had a great *Privado*, or principall favourite of his, who was called *el Alcayde Buferiz*; a very wise man, punctuall, trusty, and having many other good parts, worthy the great love that

his Lord and Master bare unto him ; for the which his King lov'd him so dearely, as also for the trust and confidence that he had in him ; (for there was not any difficulty in the world, which he would not wade thorow, so as it might make for his Majesties service). And for that those, that deserve these kinde of honours, are evermore envy'd by those that are unworthy of them, there were not some wanting, who, hearing the King speake of his love and affection towards this his Favourite, said unto him ; Sir, that your Majestie may see, whether that bee true or no, for which you so much commend your Alcayde ; would you be pleased to make proofe of him in some busines of importance, and wherein there is some difficultie ; and then shall you finde, whether he be that maner of man, that you take him to bee : For by the diligence that he shall use therein, your Majestie shall truly knowe, whether his heart be with you or no. The King liked exceeding well of this motion, and said ; I will not only command him in a busines that is difficult, but such a one, as is impossible to be effected. And causing him forth-with to be called in, he said unto him ; Alcayde, I have a thing to give you in charge, which you must accomplish out of hand, upon paine of my displeasure, and the losse of my favour ; And this is it ; I shall deliver over unto you, a good fat Weather, which you shall keepe at home in your owne house, you shall give the same allowance of meat, as he was wont to have heretofore, and more, if more hee will eate ; and within a Moneth, you must returne him back unto me, poore, and leane as a rake. CHAPTER VIII

This poore Moore, whose desire was never other, then to serve his King, and punctually to performe whatsoever hee should bee pleased to commaund him ; howbeit he did beleeve, that he should never be able to bring such an impossibilitie as this, to passe ; was not therewith dismayed a whit, but readily, and with a cheerfull countenance receiving the Weather, he caused it to be carryed home to his house, according as the King had commaunded : And there sitting downe, and devising with himselfe, how he

might bring this busines about, and give satisfaction to his Masters desire ; hee began to set his wits a-worke, and at last lighted upon a strange, yet a naturall conceit, which, he presumed, would make much for his purpose, and cumply with the Kings commaund.

Hee caused two woodden Cages to bee made out of hand, both strongly barr'd, and of equall bignesse, the which, he gave order should be placed very neere each to other ; in one of the which he puts me the Weather, and in the other hard by him, a Wolfe : To the Weather, he gave his full allowance ; but the Wolfe, he kept so short, that he was still exceeding hungry ; And being almost famished for want of meate, he did labour all that he could (thrusting his legges within the grates) to reach at the Weather, and to try if hee could come at him, and eate him. The fearefull Weather, being much troubled, and sorry at the heart, to see himselfe so neere his mortall enemy, although he did eate that which they gave him, he did thrive so ill with it, out of the continuall feare that he was in, that he did not only not waxe fat, but pin'd away, till he was pure skinne and bone. By this course that he had taken with him, he returned at the time apoynted, the Weather back againe to his King, not failing in that he was commaunded, nor falling from his accustomed grace and favour.

Now that I may apply this Story to the purpose wee have in hand ; It seemeth unto mee, that Fermin is growne leane and feeble, by beeing so neere about you, and by living in that grace and favour with you, as he doth : And it is only the feare which he hath of you, whom he so much desires to serve, that makes him to thrive no better then he does.

The Masters-Mate was so well pleased with this Tale of mine, because it fell out so pat to the purpose, that he presently gave order to have me removed from my Banke, receiving me into his service, and giving me the charge of his Wardrobe, and of his Table, for that hee had alwaies found me suitable to his desires. Nor, (for all this favour that he shewed unto mee, which was very great in releasing

me from the obligation of a Slave, and exercising such duties, as were required in the Galley) would I forbeare (for mine owne pleasure) to come sometimes amongst them, and to doe as they did ; but would now and then, of mine owne accord, fall to my labour, that I might not bee to seeke, if out of necessity I should chance to be put unto it.

The exercises of your Gally-slaves

There did I learne to knit Stockins, to make false Dice, as your Highmen, and your Low-men, setting two Aces one against another, or two Sixes on one Dye, for your Coggers and Cheaters, who for the use that they made of them, would pay well for them. I likewise there learn'd to make Buttons, both of Silke, and of haire ; as also dainty delicate Tooth-picks, of divers sundry inventions, and colours, and neatly guilded ; which none in the Galley could do besides my selfe. My poyze being put into this ballance ; that is, standing upon these even termes, we were forced to goe with our Galley to Cadiz, for Masts, and Main-yards, Sayles, Pitch, Tarre, Tallowe, and the like necessaries ; and this Voyage was the first, wherein I was put to any paines : For, being so much friended by the Masters-Mate, as I was, they did not force me to doe any more worke, then what I would my selfe.

And for that this did not seeme to me, to bee a matter of any great labour, that I might not shewe my selfe an idle spectator, or that I did seeke to avoyd paines-taking, especially, being that wee were not to give the chase, or forced to betake our selves to flight ; where, and in which cases, we were to rowe for our lives, and to tugge with all the strength and force that we had, at the Oare ; And for that, when we were once in the Port, and had a good Haven to friend, we did usually lye quiet, and were never whipt, and had our intertainements, and pastimes, presuming that between Port, and Port, especially being so neere, there needed not the sinewes of an Oxe, to hale and pull ; I would needs set my selfe to the Oare, only to try what manner of thing it was : But it was not so slight and easie a thing, as I tooke it to be : for (because we were forced to goe towing the Masts, and Main-yards) when wee came

to cast Anchor, I was nothing but wearines and sweat, because I would not leave my Oare, nor give occasion to others to murmur, by withdrawing my hand from that, which for mine owne pleasure I had voluntarily undertaken. And this was the only, and sole cause, why so soone, and so soundly, (after I had had my Master to bed) I fell asleepe, falling like a stone, flat to the ground; giving very good signes and tokens thereof to my Camerades, who heard me now to doe that, which they had never heard me doe before; to wit, to snort like a yong sucking Pigge. That Traytour of mine owne Banke, was the first (as being neerest unto me) that heard me rout; and calling softly to another of my fellowes that was his Consort, one that was his very good friend, and whom he might best trust, acquainted him with his desire, and the good occasion that was now offered, to robbe me of that little money that I had. They joyn'd both together, as well in the manner of sharing it, as of taking it from me. Which they had gone cleare away with, if I had not had the Alcalde to friend. They tooke it as easily from mee, as they could wish; passing it presently from Banke to Banke, to the further end of the Galley; perswading themselves, that because it was night, and not perceived by any, both of them stiffely denying it, they should, without any more adoe, carry away the prey and devide the spoyle between them.

Guzman rob'd by the Gally-Slaves

Now, when it was day, they all began to wake, and I amongst the rest, got up, heavie of sleepe, but light of purse: for that weight which I was wont to feele lying upon my heart, I felt no more; and it did much trouble me, that it did not trouble me. I lookt about, and found my money gone; I was strooke as dead as a doore-nayle; death was in my face, and I knew not what to doe. If I held my peace, I should heare no more newes of it, but must give it for lost; and if I should speake thereof, I should roast all my part thereof (as the Proverb is) upon my finger, and put all in mine eye, that I should get by the bargaine. Now was I put out of the possession of that which I had injoyed so long; Whereupon I said with my selfe; If he that hath

taken it from me, will give me no thankes for it, much lesse shall I reape any benefit from him ; better it were notwithstanding, that he should keepe it, that has it, for it may be, that at some time or other, he will not be wanting to make some acknowledgement thereof ; and he at last may come to be punished, who did mee this wrong : at least, he will eate his meate with sorrow, when hee sees he shall reape no profit by it. But this Counsaile did not please mee. CHAPTER VIII

Now, when the Masters-Mate was ready to rise, I brought him his cloathes and while he was making himselfe ready, I made him a long relation of my mis-fortune, making him (to my cost) to knowe, and to touch, as it were with the hande the miserie of those men, who having purst up a few pence with a great deale of labour and paines-taking, earning it very hardly, are, either by mischance, or by a pilfering hand, deprived thereof in an instant : Telling him moreover, that I had brought those moneys from Sevill, amongst which, I had likewise put those other, which I had made of my cloathes that I sold, when I came aboord the Galley, which I kept as charily as I could for my life, that I might there-with either relieve my necessities, when occasion should serve, or else imploy it on some one thing or other, that might yeeld me profit. And as I was opening my minde thus unto him, I likewise opened my bosome, and shew'd him the false stuffing, wherein I had put it, the mold, or indented marke whereof these Theeves had left behinde them, being for all the world, such a kinde of print, as a Hare leaves in her Forme, when she is newly gone out of it.

It seemed to the Masters-Mate, that this that I told him, was an evident truth, and giving credit unto me, strengthened the more in his beliefe by this empty Forme, where the Hare was us'd to sit, as also, out of the love that hee bare unto me, he commaunded the two fore-Bankes, and six other that were in the rere, to be had in *Coram nobis* ; whereupon, the Alguazils servant, comming amongst them with a good Ropes end, (which your Sea-faring men call a salt Eele) gave every one of them fifty sound blowes apiece, which made the wheales to bunch out upon their backs, leaving

The manner of the beating of your Gally-Slaves

the skinne clinging close unto them : Examining first every one by himselfe, whether he had seene or heard of this stolne money ? And after they had beene well lasht, they washt them with salt, and tart Vineger, rubbing their wounds there-with, leaving their backes and sides so rent and torne, as if they had not beene men.

When this theft hapned, there was by chance a Gypsie that was not then asleepe, when my purse was stolne, and when his turne came to receive his payment, hee confest, that hee had seene his Companion, the night before, rise from his owne Banke, and to goe to mine, but why, or wherefore he knew not.

When that Slave perceiv'd that hee spake of him, and that hee had charg'd him in this maner, he started up on his feet, and said ; That he was intangled in that chaine, which belonged to the other Banke, and that hee had sprained his foot thereby, it being wrung and wrenched by it, and that hee was faine, (for to give himselfe ease) to clamber over thither, to dis-intangle himselfe. But because this reason was too weake to hold water, and carried not that fairenesse with it, as to bee taken for a just excuse, and much lesse with those, who knew well inough on which foot hee halted, they tooke him presently to taske, and had many more stripes bestowed upon him then any of the rest. And the Masters-Mate was so angry with the Alguazils servant, because hee did not lay them on so soundly as hee would have him, that hee gave order, that hee should presently have as many bestow'd upon him ; besides a great many more which hee himselfe with his owne hand laid upon him with the Hoope of a Hogs-head. And in this his cholericke humour, (for he was now mightily moved) hee forth-with commanded, that they should take the delinquent in hand againe, and baste him as long as they could stand over him ; who (poore man) had more then inough before. But when hee saw that hee must goe to this geare againe, he then began to thinke with himselfe, that the Masters-Mate would never give him over, till hee had confest the truth, and therefore held it to bee his best

course, to deale plainely and truely with him, who had the money, by what meanes they came by it, and the plot that they had laid to get it from mee, excusing himselfe the best that hee could, as that he had no purpose of himselfe to doe it, and that he had never entred into the businesse, had he not otherwise been drawne into it. CHAPTER VIII

Well, hee was well lasht afterwards for his offence, and my money was returned backe unto mee, which I received with a very good-will from my Masters hand, advising mee withall, that I should imploy it, making profit thereof, for hee should bee well pleased with any thing that were for my good. Guzman recovers his lost money

My good fortune (like froth) beganne to increase more and more, in regard that I gave my Master such good content. And the Gallies beeing to goe forth, which were to joyne with those of Naples, upon a certaine imployment at Sea, I got mee a-shore, having a Souldiour of guard to bee my keeper, and to looke to my safe returne, where I imployed all that little money that I had, in matters of victuallage, which presently from my setting forth from thence would double the cost, and it succeeded well with me. Out of that gaines, (with my Masters leave) I made mee a sute after the fashion of an old Gally-slave, or one that had beene of ancient standing amongst them, Hose and Wastecoat of black Buckram, listed and welted handsomely in the seames, which (it being then the Summer season) was cooler and fresher for me, and fitter for my turne.

Now (thinking upon my former mis-fortunes) I beganne to have a glimpse of that light, which they injoy, who follow Vertue, and protesting with a firme resolution, and settled constancie, rather to dye, then doe a base action; I did onely study, how I might serve my Master, how I might please his humour, and give him all content, how I might keepe his cloathes, his Cabbin, and his table cleane and neat.

And as I was thinking and considering on these things, I said one night with my selfe; Guzman, thou seest heere

THE THIRD BOOKE

Guzman discourses, and tels us, that it is onely Vertue and Goodnesse, that brings a man to Heaven

the top of that Mountaine of miseries, where-unto thy filthy sensualitie hath brought thee : now art thou come to the highest part of it, and must either make a speedy leape downe to the bottomlesse pit of hell, or which thou mayst more easily doe, by lifting up thy armes, take hold on Heaven. Thou seest now the care that thou hast to serve thy Master, for feare of a few stripes, which being given to day, are not felt to-morrow. Thou doest watch late, rise up early, thou art diligent, carefull, and sollicitous in seeking out new Inventions, where-with to delight him, and to purchase his favour, which when thou hast obtained, is but of a man, and a Masters-Mate. And this is the most thou canst make of him.

Now thou well knowest, and canst not be ignorant of it, for thou hast beene a profest Student, and hast studied that point ; how much lesse God requires at thy hands, and how much more he hath to conferre upon thee, and how farre a greater friend hee is, then any man can be unto thee.

Rouze up thy selfe therefore, and awake from this heavy sleepe, which oppresseth thy soule ; Returne home unto thy selfe ; and consider, that though it be true, that thy sinnes have brought thee hither, yet so apply this thy punishment unto thee, and lay it so neere to thy heart, that thou mayst make good use of it, and that it may turne to thy good. Thou hast sought after a stocke to imploy it for thy profit ; seeke now to obtaine eternall happinesse, and lay out all that thou hast, that thou maist buy it. For it is a Jewell of inestimable worth, it cannot be valued. These thy troubles, these thy miseries which thou indurest, this thy care which thou takest to serve this thy Master, put it all to Gods account, and bee as diligent in serving him. Charge him also with that, which thou art to lose hereafter, and hee will beare the burthen of that charge ; hee will lessen thine, and adde it to his owne account. With this thou maist buy grace, which if here-tofore it bore no price with thee, (for even the best deservings of all the Saints that ever were, cannot raise such a stocke, whereby to be able to buy it, till their merits meet with those of our

Saviour Christ) now make much of it ; and the rather seeing that Christ, that he may communicate this his grace unto us, is willingly become our brother. CHAPTER VIII

What brother did ever forsake a good and a loving brother ? Serve him but with a sigh, with a teare, or with a true heart-sorrow, grieving for thy sinnes ; and being angry and offended with thy selfe, that thou hast offended so good a brother : And so by giving him that which thou hast, hee will joyne thy stocke with his owne, and making it of an infinit price, not by thine, but his merits, thou shalt enjoy life everlasting.

In this discourse with my selfe, and in other, which rose out of this, I spent a great part of the night, showring downe teares in aboundance, and waxing now heavy with the griefe for my sinnes, I fell asleepe ; and when I awakt, I found my selfe another manner of man then I was before. I had cast off my old heart, and put on a new one in its place. I gave thankes unto God for this my regeneration, and that hee had renued his spirit aright in me, humbly beseeching him, that he would uphold me with his holy hand, and strengthen mee with his grace. Guzmans conversion

Presently upon this, I treated of the frequent Confession of my sinnes, and of the reformation of my life, and of the cleansing of my conscience ; in which good deliberation, I continued many dayes ; but I was flesh and bloud. I did still stumble, almost at every step, and now and then tooke a fall. But for any proceeding in my accustomed evill actions, I was much amended, and went from that time forward reforming my former course of life. Howbeit, for that I had exercised my selfe so much in my fore-passed ill deportments, I was still pointed at with the finger for a wicked man, which name I could never claw off, but did sticke close unto me. For this is an evill, that followes evill men ; that even those good actions which they doe, leave a jealousie and suspition behinde them, and occasion, as it were, scandall to such as see them. For, though we doe them never so well, and with an upright heart, yet are wee held to bee but Hypocrites. We have a common Proverbe amongst

us ; *Que se sacan por las Visperas, los dias Santos* : That by the Vespers, we come to know the Feasts of the Saints. So they, by my precedent actions, would judge of the future.

Proverb

But to give the world leave to censure things as they list, let him that would faine know whether hee stand in the state of grace, or no, and live in Gods love and favour, looke, and consider with himselfe, how God worketh with him, and he shall easily come to know it. Use thy best endevours ; doe that, which (as a good Christian) thou art bound to doe : so shall thy workes bee acceptable in his sight, and thou shalt know (like Abel) that God is well pleased with this thy sacrifice, and that hee hath set his eyes upon thee.

Marke and observe, whether hee uses thee no worse, then hee uses himselfe ; for this is a sure and infallible signe, that thy Lord loves thee, when of the same bread that hee eateth ; of the same cloathes which hee weareth ; of the same table, where hee takes his meales ; of the same seat, whereon he sitteth ; of the same Wine, whereof he drinketh ; of the same bed, whereon he lyeth ; he makes no difference betweene thee and him, but is as it were all one. What did God injoy ? What did God love ? What did God suffer ? Troubles.

Troubles, the signes of Gods love towards us

Now then, when God shall share these with thee, hee shewes that hee loves thee. Thou art his Minion, he feasts thee, and makes much of thee ; Be thou so wise as to receive these things thankefully, and to make profit of them. Nor doe thou thinke, that God refuses to give thee thine owne hearts desire, thy pleasures, thy contentments, riches, and large possessions, or what else may delight thee, for that he is close fisted, niggardly, or covetous ; for if thou art willing to see the worth of these worldly comforts, turne but thine eye aside, and looke upon those that possesse them in greatest aboundance. But who are these ? Even Moores, Infidels, and Heretiques. But God runnes a contrary course with his friends, with those that are his elected, and best beloved children ; the cherishments, and

blandishments, that he bestowes upon them, are poverty, afflictions, and persecutions. O had I but knowne so much heretofore, as I doe now, and that God would have been pleased to have inlightened my understanding, that I might have truely seene, and lookt into my former errours, I might have benefited my selfe in another kinde of manner, then I did at that time.

I am the willinger to deliver this unto you, for that when I made this Discourse with my selfe, I did doe it truly, and with all my heart. And albeit I am not worthy to merit thereby any reward, (being so great a sinner as I am) yet notwithstanding, this little crumme, this poore drop, this small sparke, had its reward at that very instant, that slender repentance of mine, that my resolution (though weake) to doe good, and that good beginning which I had put my selfe into, was not without its paiment.

As soone as I had re-gained my moneys, new persecutions and new troubles beganne to grow upon mee. Would to God that I had beene so considerate, as I ought to have beene. He stript mee of that contentment, wherein I now liv'd ; and hee beganne to touch mee to the quicke, and to beat me with many stripes. That small shade of Ivy, (which like Jonas Gourd, did keepe mee from the scorching of the Sunne) was lost, and quite taken from mee ; it was dry'de up, and withered, there was a worme bred in the root of it, which had wasted and consumed it ; so that I was forced to lye open to the heates, suffering new calamities, and new troubles, and such as I never thought on, without any cause given by mee, or any the least signe of offence, having no way deserved such hard measure. But stay thy Pen, and ingeniously confesse, that such miseries and afflictions as these, are that hidden treasure in the field, so highly commended unto us. And since thou hast patiently heard me hitherto, for thine owne pleasure, heare mee now another while for mine ; and hearken a little to the remainder of my misfortunes, where-unto I shall give an end, in the next ensuing Chapter.

THE LIFE OF GUZMAN

CHAPTER IX

Guzman de Alfarache prosecutes that which hapned unto him in the Gallies: And by what meanes he came to be freed from thence

A short Story of a Painter, with its application

HERE was a famous Painter, who was so excellent in his Art, that he had not his fellow in all the world. Upon the fame and report of whose admirable pieces of worke, there came a Gentleman to his house, and going into the roome, where hee drew his pictures, hee agreed with him, that he should paint for him in a Table, a very faire and beautifull Horse, with rich furniture, and gracefully set forth, who being loose, should seeme to runne away as fast as his legges could carry him. The Painter performed this piece of worke with all possible perfection, and shew'd therein the utmost of his skill. And having fully finisht it, he placed it there where the colours might soonest grow dry.

Now, when the Gentleman came to see how this his worke went forward, and to know how farre hee had proceeded therein, the Painter made haste to shew it him, telling him hee had already ended it. And for that, when hee set forth this Table a drying, the Painter did not greatly care (as a thing that was nothing materiall) to set it after this, or that other manner, more one then another: So that the horse stood (as hee had then placed the Table) with his feet upward, and his Saddle downeward.

The Gentleman, when hee lookt upon it, it seeming unto him not to bee the same, which hee had be-spoken, said unto him; Sir, the Horse that I wisht you to make me, was to be drawne running away; and this rather seemes to lye tumbling on the ground. The discreet Painter, mildly made answere; It seemeth, Sir, that you have no great

insight in painting; the Picture is the same, that you pretend, if your Worship will bee but pleased to turne the Table. Whereupon, that part that was downe-ward, was turned upward; Which done, the Gentleman viewing it againe, rested very well contented there-with, as well for the goodnesse of the workmanship, as that thereby he was taught to know his owne errour.

If wee consider the handy-workes of God, they will oftentimes seeme unto us like this Horse, that lyes tumbling and wallowing on the ground; but if we shall but turne this Table, wrought by the pensill of that supreme Artizan, that painted to the life both Heaven and earth, beautifying the one with Sunne, Moone, and Starres; the other, with all variety of colours, in flowers, fruites, and the like; we shall finde, that this is the piece that wee would have, and that the worke is done to it's full perfection.

Troubles (as I told you a little before) seeme harsh and sharp unto us: we have not (no more then had this ignorant Gentleman) the true discerning of them aright; there are fewe that understand them as they should; but when he that sends them unto us, shews that mercy unto us, which is laid up in them, then we shall see them in their true shape and colours, and shall take great pleasure and delight in them.

Amongst all the Slaves that were in the Galley, there was none of them like unto me, either in their good usage, or in the knowledge of giving such good content as I did, to my Master. But the pinne in Fortunes wheele slipt out, and up came I in such a strange kinde of manner, as the like was never seene.

It hapned at that time, that there came a Gentleman into our Galley, who bare our Captaines name, and was also of kinne unto him, to learne experience, and to see some service. He was rich, well clad, better behav'd, and ware about his neck a massie chaine of gold. Soldier-like, being just such another for all the world, as I was us'd to have heretofore. He dieted in the Poope; he had a good garnish of Plate; and servants, that waited upon him,

well and handsomly suited : But it so fell out, that the very next day after his imbarking, there were eighteene linkes of his chaine missing, which were no lesse worth, then fifty Crownes. Sure, some of his owne servants must needes have them : for there were none, that came into the Poope-roome, but such as were knowne persons, and free from all suspicion : Yet notwithstanding, for the better cleering of this doubt, all the Captaines servants were put to the lash, yet for all that, was there no newes to be heard of them, they could never heare of them more, nor get any the least inckling thereof in the world, nor is it knowne till this day who stole them, or what became of them.

And for the better excusing hereafter of the like misfortune, the Captaine came to his kinseman, and told him, that his best and surest course was, that for the time that he stay'd there, he should commit the charge of his apparell, and Jewels, to some trusty Galley-Slave, who might take care of them and keepe them neate and handsome ; assuring him, that what-soever hee should deliver to any one of their custodies, they durst as well be hang'd, as not give him a true account of it, and that there should not bee so much as a haire missing, of any thing that he should trust them withall.

This Gentleman liked very well of his counsaile ; and making afterwards inquirie, who in all the Galley might be the fittest man for him, and the most sufficient, I was the only man they made choyce of, as being recommended unto them, for the good satisfaction that I would give him in my understanding, my diligencie in attending his person, and for my cleanliness about my selfe, as also any thing that was my masters. When the Gentleman had heard of these my good qualities, and how I was likewise able to intertaine him with witty jests, and merry conceits, hee thought the time long, till hee might see me in the Poope. So in all haste, they called the Masters-Mate unto them, and being intreated to part with me, he could not deny them their request, although it griev'd him much, for the good service that hee received from mee ; They clapt a long

chaine to my legge, which I trailed after mee ; and I was no sooner come unto him, but he was very glad to see me, and spake very kindely unto me : and I thinke the rather, for that my feature, my face, and my actions, were answerable to that which he had heard of me. It did somwhat grieve him, to see mee (like a Monky) ty'd thus to a chaine, and to drawe it after mee. He intreated the Captaine, that hee would favour me so farre, that I might walke up and downe with one only fetter ; which was graunted : By which meanes, I was inabled to doe him the quicker and nimbler service, as well when he sate without at his meales, as when he was within his Cabbin, as also, in going to and fro in the Gally, when occasion was offred. I had an Inventorie delivered unto me, of all his apparell and Jewels ; whereof, I still gave him a very good accompt ; But that which he and I, had least affiance in, and were most jealous of, was, of his owne servants : For now that I had the charge of his *recamera*, his Wardrobe, or whatsoever else was appertaining unto him, they might easily excuse themselves of such things, as they could steale cleanly from me. They cabbin'd with the Chaplaine, neere to the maine Mast ; and the Gentleman, he had his cabbin within the Poope ; and I, in a little Dispense, or Pantrie, where I kept some *regalos*, and dainties, besides other necessary provision. CHAPTER IX

I liked very well of my service, though I tooke a great deale of paines, but it was a pleasure unto me, and gave me much content, that I had now the power, by those things that past thorow my hands, to performe many kindnesses toward such Slaves as were my friends and acquaintance : and albeit I was willing to have done the like towards Soto, my old Camerade, yet I could not get within him, nor come to fasten any kindnes upon him ; I wish't his good as mine owne, but he did me all the spight that he could, discrediting and disgracing me, telling some things truly of me, and inventing other-some, like unto those, at what time we were taken, and committed to prison, defaming me, as much as did lye in him, broaching whatsoever hee knew of me, not leaving any one thing un-ript up, for the manifesting

of his malice, and my shame : so that, albeit I, for mine owne part, were privy to my selfe, how much I was now reformed ; yet those that heard him thus exclaime against me, would make interpretation of them, as they stood affected, and comment upon them, as they themselves listed. And though God, at that instant, should have given mee the power to have wrought Miracles, they would not have stik't to have said, that I had done them in Belzebub's name.

Soto, was the knife, that sought to cut my throat ; the point, or edge thereof, was still towards me : yet never did any man heare me speake so much as one foule word of him, or ever open my mouth against him, or make show of any the least choller, at this his abusing me ; I made no reckoning of it, but let it passe as lightly as I could, all my whole care being now taken up, in the diligent atending of my new Master, and in doing him all faithfull service, that I might procure his love and good liking towards me ; hoping it might one day so fall out, that either by him, or by some other, in recompence of my good service, I might chance to purchase my liberty.

When he came out of his Cabbin, I was stil at hand to receive him ; when he set his feet to come downe the ladder, I lent him my hand, at his entering, and returning out of the Cock-Boate ; I made him Tooth-picks for his Table, putting them upon a plate, when he sate downe to his meate ; which, being many, and marvailous curious, hee would often send for tokens to his friends. His Trencher-plates, and those his other vessels for the cooling of his wine, his Cups, and his Glasses, were so cleanly kept, so neate, and so in every point as they should be, that it was a pleasure to the eye to behold them. His bottles of Wine, and his jarrs of water, fresh and sweet ; the wooll of the Mattresses whereon he lay, kept unknotty, and soft ; his whole bedding so well look't to, that there was not a Flea to be found in it, nor any the like troublesom vermin : so as my leasure would give me leave, it was my daily exercise, to goe a hunting after them, stopping those holes and chinkes, where there

was any the least suspition of their breeding, that my Master might not only be free from Fleas, and *Chinches*, but the bad sent which they have with them.

So great was my diligence, and so pleasing the whole manner of my proceeding with him, that my Master had now left off conversing with his other servants, and would at large discourse with mee of grave and weighty matters; but dealt therein with mee as your Distillers use to doe; he did Limbecke me, and squeeze what hee could from mee; and when hee had exhausted from mee that juice and substance, which was for his turne, and as much as hee desired at that time to draw from me, he would pause awhile upon the matter, or to speake more plainely, was halfe jealous of mee, that I was not so complete, and perfect as I should bee, nor had not that true touch and rellish, which properly appertaineth to your purer distillations. And all for the smacke of one Herbe, which was that evill report, which Soto had given of mee. But his virulent tongue could not make mee wrong Vertue: I went as fast on in doing well, as he did in speaking ill: as well, that my actions might give him the lye, as also for that I now minded no other thing, then to runne on still in that good resolution, which I had proposed to my selfe.

When I waited on him at Table, I would out now and then with a merry Tale, or some odde conceited jest or other. And a-nights, or at other such times as hee was disposed to take a nap, I would chat one thing or other to him, that I might keepe him still cheerefull and merry. And the rather, for that of late hee was growne some-what melancholly, upon a Letter that hee had received but a few dayes before from a grave personage, to whom hee was much obliged, who all his life-time could never be drawne himselfe to marry, and was now wonderfull instant with this Gentleman my Master that hee would get him a Wife. Perceiving therefore how sadde hee was, I made bold to aske him the reason, why hee was so pensive. He told it me; and did likewise aske my advice, what hee were best to doe

in this case ? I told him ; Me thinkes (Sir) that the fittest answere, which is to bee given to such a one, who hath beene so averse from marriage himselfe, and would now inforce others there-unto, at least seeke to perswade them unto it, is, That you are well content to doe so, if hee will give you one of his daughters to Wife. My Master was well pleased with the counsell I gave him, resolving with himselfe to take that course which I had prescribed unto him. And continuing talke till it was dinner time, he will'd mee to tell him, being I had beene twice married, how I liked that kinde of life.

Touching Marriage

I told him, Sir, a good and peaceable marriage, where love, and condition of the parties stand upon equall termes, it is a glory ; it is an enjoying both of earth and Heaven ; it is a state for those, who make choise thereof, out of a desire to be saved thereby, of so great perfection, and of such exceeding both content, and comfort, that for to treat of such a subject, it will require the relation of such a tongue, as hath tasted the true happinesse thereof. But for my selfe, who made Matrimony a matter of money, and more for pleasure, then propagation, as I did, I know not what to say unto it ; I have deservedly paid the price of that sinne, by this my present punishment, which I now indure.

Worthy Wives, who are they?

There are some women (I must confesse) who by their wisedome, and discreet carriage, have reduced to very good order and conformitie, as perverse and wicked men, as any are in the world.

Wicked wives, and which are they?

And there are other some againe, that will make the best tempered, and the holyest men alive, to lose all patience, though he be able to suffer never so much. Look but upon Job's wife, and see into what a desperate humour she would faine have put her Husband ; how did she persecute him, and how much did it import him, to have recourse unto God, and onely to defend himselfe more from her, then from all other his persecutions, and afflictions ?

Opinions of Marriage

And therefore three friends being together in conversation ; the one said ; Happy is that Man, that hath the

good hap to match with a good Wife. But more happy (said the other) who buries her quickly, if shee prove untoward. And the third said ; Most happy is hee, that hath neither t'one nor t'other. How much an importunate Wife and of an ill condition, doth torment and vexe a man, let that Provenzall tell it you, who being quite wearied and tyred out with a shrewd Wife, and being unable any longer to indure her harsh behaviour, and not knowing in the world, how to correct these her malignant humours, that he might without scandall rid himselfe of her, hee was resolved to goe and make merry with his Wife and all his Family, at a house that hee had in the Countrey, that was not farre off, it lying in his way, to passe by the skirt of a Mountaine, adjoyning close upon Rodanus, a great and swift River ; which in that very part of it, for that it was narrow, and past along betweene two Mountaines, was very deepe, and ranne with a furious Currant. Hee tooke order that the Mule which his Wife was to ride on, had not for three dayes before, one drop of water given her ; so that, when she came to the place afore-said, and that she saw the water, there was no holding of her backe, but hastning downe the hanging of the Hill, from one ridge to another, shee got to the River ; from whence, it being impossible to turne her about, and to get up againe against the steepinesse of the Cliffe, nor being able with all the force she had, to reyne her in, they both rushed into the River, where the woman was drowned, and the Mule with much adoe escaped ; but came out so weake, and so weary, that she was scarce able to stand upon her legges.

A Tale teaching a man how to be rid of a bad Wife

For those which never knew what marriage meant, and yet desire to bee informed what manner of thing it is, I may for a patterne set before their eyes, that which passed with those Thrushes the Summer following that they were hatcht, and ready to fly abroad and shift for themselves. There was a great Shole of them gathered together, as if all the Thrushes in the world had joyn'd in one muster, and were such a cloud of them, when they were upon their wings, that they seemed to darken the ayre, and by their

A Tale of certain Thrushes

interposition betwixt the Sunne and the Earth, to make an Eclipse.

And when all this jolly company were assembled, and met together, they rais'd their Campe, and marched away together, to seeke out some better place to live in, (for that yeere, their owne Countrey failed them of that plenty, which it was wont to afford them ;) so at last they entred into a very goodly Countrey, that was full of Gardens and Orchards, and fresh Fields, where there were many pleasant Fruits, and other delicate feeding for them ; where they were very willing to set up their rest, it seeming unto them, to bee a place not onely of much recreation and delight, but of sufficient sustenance and maintenance for them. But when the Inhabitants of that Countrey saw how they flocked together, they spred their nets, made ginnes, and pit-fals for them, and by little and little went taking and destroying of them.

The poore Thrushes, seeing themselves thus persecuted, and that they could not safely feed there, nor rest in quiet, they sought out another place that might make better for their purpose, which they found as pleasant, and as plentifull as the former ; but they tasted heere of the same sauce, as they did there ; which made them likewise to fly for feare from that danger which hung over their heads.

Thus did they travell up and downe from place to place, till that they being in a manner almost all destroy'd, those few that were left alive, agreed to returne home to their owne Countrey. When their fellow-Thrushes that stayd at home, saw them returne so faire, and fat, they said unto them ; O how happy are you, and how wretched are we ? Wee stayd heere behinde, and you see how weake, and how poore wee be ; but you are come home in that good case, your feathers so smooth, and so sleeke, that it is a pleasure to looke upon them ; and your bodies so plumpe, and so well fed, that yee can scarce fly, yee be so fat ; whereas we through pure hunger, are scarce able to stand upon our legges, and when we are on our wings, are ready through faintnesse to fall to the ground.

Where-unto these welcome-home Travellers returned this answere : The eyes of your consideration reach no farther, then to this our fatnesse ; but if you would be pleased to weigh with your selves, how many of us went from hence, and how few of us are returned home alive, you would rather rest contented with your poore, but secure fare ; then with this our fatnesse, and full feeding, so full of dangers.

They who looke onely on the pleasures of Marriage, and goe no farther, where they may see scarce ten of ten thousand to come off cleere, and escape the danger of it, will thinke better of a single life, then of Marriage ; and that it is farre better and safer to be alone, then ill accompanied.

Whilest we were in this Discourse, dinner was serving in, and the cloth being laid, I waited as I was wont to doe ; having my eyes still fixed on my Masters hands, that hee might not wagge a finger, but I might bee in readinesse to apprehend and execute his thoughts. But whilest I was thus watchfull about my Master, Soto was not sleeping in the meane while to worke me a mischiefe.

Soto his malice towards Guzman.

His plot to disgrace him

And when he saw all his former malice could not worke mee out of favour, nor doe mee any harme, with sheere money hee went about to purchase out his revenge upon mee. He grew into a League of friendship with my Masters Page, such another Bird as himselfe, for that bribes had corrupted him, and private interest drawne him to be thus dishonest towards me. He promised him a dainty fine payre of Stockins of his owne knitting, and told him, that he would bestow them upon him, if (as he waited at the Table) he could handsomely steale a piece of Plate from thence, and hide it in some secret place in my Pantry, that I might not know of it. For, in so doing, he should effect two good things. First, he should gaine a good paire of Stockins by the bargaine. And secondly, himselfe, and his other fellow servants, should by this meanes be received againe into favour, and I cast out.

The Page did not like amisse of this motion ; and taking occasion that day to goe downe, he tooke up a Silver Plate,

which (by lifting up a little boord) he hid in one of the sides of the Gallie.

Now when the cloth was taken away, going to gather up my Plates (as my manner was) that I might make them cleane, finding one of them wanting, I made diligent search for it; and when I had searcht every corner, and could not finde it, I presently gave notice, that I mist such a Plate; to the end that some diligence might be used, for the sooner recoverie of it, with those his servants that appertained to the Poope.

Hatred, what effects it produceth

The Captaine and my Master did beleeve what was truth at the first; but because my enemy Soto bare witnesse against mee, it was voiced out amongst them, that my selfe, abusing the favour that I had with my Master, had stolne it, and convayd it away, that I might lay the fault upon others, and so goe away with it my selfe. This roguish Page, did put a helping hand here-unto, and did all that he could to disgrace me; So that now the doores beganne to be set open to suspition, and had made some little entrance; and stepping farther in by degrees, my Master was often earnest with mee, to confesse the truth, before the businesse should grow fouler. But because I knew mine owne innocencie, and that I was as cleere thereof, as the child that is new borne, I could give him no other satisfaction save good words.

Then this Traitor the Page stood up, and said; Me thinkes, Sir, it were not amisse that you would cause his Dispence, or Pantry to be searcht. For it is not possible, but that hee must hide it some where or other there-abouts. For, being that I had not gone out of the Poope, it was very likely they might finde it in my lodging. This course tooke best, and was of all very well liked, and approved: And so getting them downe, and rummaging all that little roome; first this place, and then that, they lighted upon it at last where the Page had put it; and taking it forth, they came up with great joy, and proclaim'd, that now they had found it, and that I had hid it there; for that it was not possible, that any body else should doe it.

CHAPTER IX

Now, because this carried with it a show of truth, and that they had caught me in the Negative, this confirmed them in their suspition, and this crime was laid to my charge.

The Captaine commanded the Alguazils servant, to give me fifty stripes ; from the which my Master did free me, intreating my pardon, for that it was the first fault that I had committed ; advising me withall, that if hereafter I be taken with the like, I should be soundly punisht, and pay both for the old, and the new. After this, I held not up my head any more, my heart was never truely merry, nor did I injoy my selfe, as before ; not for that which was past ; but fearing that which was to come ; Thinking with my selfe, that he, that had done me this wrong, would (having scap't this so well) watch his time to doe me a greater mischiefe. And being jealous of some farther foule play, I earnestly besought both the Captaine, and my Master, that they would quit me of this charge, and that I might have their good will to deliver over those things that were in my custodie to some other, and I should take it from them as a favour, that they would returne mee back againe, laden with my irons, to my Banke. They thought, that the ground of all this, was the desire that I had to goe backe againe to serve my old Master, the Masters-Mate : And howbeit I did importune them very hard, and was very instant with them ; they, for the same reason, were more earnest and urgent upon mee ; and that I should (though it griev'd me) serve and attend there all the dayes of my life. Miserable man that I am (said I) I know not in the world what to doe, nor how to defend my selfe from Traytors ; who, it seemeth, have set themselves against me, onely of purpose to undoo me.

Argo's eyes are not sufficient to keepe a man from the malice of his enemies

I did all that I could possibly doe for my life, no man living could be more carefull, watching (like Argo's) with a hundred eyes, whatsoever was committed to my charge, not neglecting those things that were scarce worth the looking after, being but trifles, and not to bee reckoned of : yet all this my care would not serve my turne ; it hath

done mee, you see, no good ; I was now in my rising, but Heaven hath thought it fit that I must first fall.

One evening, as my Master was comming forth, I went out (as I was wont to doe) to receive him as he was to ascend the stayres. I gave him my hand ; he comes up : I tooke off his Cloake, his Sword, and his Hat, and gave him his Sea-Gowne, and Cap, which was of greene Damaske ; for these things I had still in a readinesse.

When I had done, I carried downe those other things, putting them in their right place. That very night, not knowing, how, who, or by what meanes (unlesse it were the Divels doing, for I could not conceive otherwise of it) that the Hat being falne downe from the place where it hung, I found it without a Band, which was set with gold Buttons. Whip, Sir John, it was gone in a trice ; so that in the morning, when I saw how it lay, and the Hat-band gone, I stood like a man amaz'd.

Well, I search't as diligently for it, as if my life had layne upon it ; but to no purpose in the world. The Hat-band would not appeare, nor was there any signe, or marke thereof, how it should be gone.

When I told my Master of it ; Ah (said he) now I know thee to be a thiefe ; I wot well what thou art, and why thou doest it. But set your heart at rest, it shall not serve your turne, for the Hat-band must not be so lost ; I shall make you fetch it out, and yet faile of your purpose besides. I know your fetch well inough. Doest not thou thinke, that ever since the Plate was missing, I have lookt into your water, and found out the disease thou art sicke of, and that thou goest seeking new occasions, that thou mayst be quit of my service ? But thou shalt serve me still in spite of thy teeth, if it be but to vexe thee the more, and thou shalt have a thousand bastonado's walke daily about thy shoulders : Nor shalt thou ever serve any other Master in the Galley, but my selfe ; And in case I should go hence, I will so farre befriend you, that thou shalt be rank't like a Rogue, according as thy Villanies deserve, and thy lewd and naughty dealings, since my good usage towards thee,

will not make thee leave of, to be that which thou art, and ever wilt be Guzman de Alfarache ; that's inough, I need say no more unto thee.

I know not what to say unto thee, nor to indeare the griefe that I conceived here-upon. Finding my selfe cleere and innocent, and yet charged with a just (as they would have it) and lawfull crime, I reply'de not so much as one word, nor had I the power to speake ; And if I should have sought to justifie my selfe, had it beene Gospel, that I should have delivered unto them, comming out of my mouth, no more credit would have beene given unto it, then to Mahomet. I therefore was silent, and held my peace. For, when words will not profit a man, it were better that his tongue should be dumbe, and his heart tell its griefes unto God. Inwardly to my selfe, I gave his Majestie thankes for this my affliction, beseeching him, that he would free mee from this mans hands ; for I knew not, wherein I had offended him. For I was so truely become another man, and so quite altred from that I was before, that I would rather suffer my selfe to be torne in a thousand pieces, then to commit any the least crime in the world.

When they had used many diligences, and saw that by no meanes they could bring this Hat-band to light ; the Captaine commanded the Alguazils man, that hee should beat it out of mee, and never give mee over, till I had confest the Theft.

I was presently taken up, they did what they could, and I indured it as well as I could. They would have mee to acknowledge that, which I never knew, whilest I with my soule powr'd forth such prayers, as I knew ; invocating heaven, that that torment and bloud, which those cruell stripes did draw from mee, might bee joyned with those innocent droppes, and undeserved tortures, which my good God both suffered, and shed for me, and that they might bee available for mee to salvation ; seeing that there was now no way but one with me : For dye I must under these their tyrannous hands, if they did not leave off the sooner. They saw all of them in what a pittifull case I was, and there

was nothing else wanting betwixt mee and my death, but the breathing forth of my Spirit. And albeit it seemed to my Master, that my crueltie, in suffering my selfe thus to be whipt, was greater then his, in commanding it to be done ; yet at last taking compassion upon me, and pittying the great torment that I was put to, caused me to be taken away.

Then did they chafe my body with Salt, and Wine Vineger, which was of greater torment unto me, then the other. The Captaine would have had them to have given me as much more upon my belly, saying ; Little doe you know, Sir, the condition of these Theeves, who are of like nature to your Foxes ; they will counterfet themselves to be almost dead, and will lye, as if there were no life in them ; but if you let them alone, and suffer them to take breath, they will runne from you, like so many yong Colts : And other some are so hardy, that for a piece of sixe pence, they will let you flea the skin from off their backes. But let this Dogge assure himselfe, hee shall not carry it away so ; for I will never give him over, till I have either the Hat-band, or his life. He commanded me to be carried away from thence to my *Despensilla*, or little Pantry, where they did lye at mee (I know not how often) with perswasions and admonitions, ever and anon notifying unto mee, that I should either deliver up the Hat-band, or arme my selfe with patience ; for it was resolved, that I must be beaten to death, rather then I should injoy what I had stolne. But, as no man can restore that which hee never had ; no more could I cumply with that which they commanded me.

Then I knew what it was to be a Gally-slave ; and how that the love, which some made show to beare unto mee, and the good lookes that they gave mee, proceeded onely from the pleasure that they tooke in my merry jests, and witty conceits, and not for mine owne sake. And the greatest griefe that I did feele in these my miseries, was not so much for the paine which I did indure, nor for the false witnesse that was given against mee, as that all of them did verily beleeve, that I did justly deserve this punishment, and therefore tooke no pitie of me.

DE ALFARACHE

CHAPTER IX

Some few dayes (after this my rubbing and being washt with Salt and Vineger) past over my head, when lo, they came a-fresh upon me, commanding me to make restitution of the Hat-band ; and because I would not or (to speake more truely) could not give it them, they pull'd mee out of the Pantry, being very weake and ill, fastening Cords to the wrests of mine arme, and haling me up with a pully, I hung (I know not how long) in the ayre, which was a terrible torment unto mee, where I thought, I should have breath'd my last. For my heart was so afflicted, that I had scarce any feeling that there was any such thing in my body, and my breath began to faile me. At last, they let me downe, not to give me ease, but to lay me downe upon my backe athwart the Cannon, that lyes betweene the Fore-castle, and hinder Decke ; where when my belly lay fit for their purpose, they laid thereon such cruell blowes, as if it had beene for some heinous crime, charging the Officer to be-labour me even to the death.

But the Captaine, beginning now to feare, that I was ready to give up the Ghost, and that hee should bee accountable to the King for mee, if I should through this his cruell usage perish in my punishment, hee held it the better option of the two, rather to lose the Hat-band, then me. Where-upon hee commanded they should take me away, and carry me to my wonted lodging, there to be cured.

When I began to recover, and had got a little strength, they yet thought themselves not sufficiently revenged of me ; for they had still this stedfast beliefe of me, that I was such a notable Villaine, and such a stubborn Rogue, that I would rather suffer all that rigour of this their whipping and scourging of me, then lose the interest of this my supposed theft : Insomuch, that they commanded the Masters Mate, that he should never pardon me, when I did offend, but that he should be very carefull to punish still in me, those sinnes that were veniall, as if they had beene mortall :

And he, who could not otherwise choose but fulfill his Captaines command (for he durst not for his life doe otherwise) did chastise me with unaccustomed crueltie, one while

for that I did not get mee to sleepe at my due houres; another-while, for that I did not wake in time; if to supply my other wants, I did sell my allowance, sparing the meat out of my belly, to relieve my necessities, I was sure to be lasht for it; using me so extremely ill, that I was weary of my life, and did desire with all my heart, that I were out of this wretched world. And, that they might have the better colour to doe as they did, and that they might picke occasion to pay mee soundly, and yet save themselves harmelesse; they committed to my charge the trouble of the *Corulla* [1]; with protestation, that if any thing therein should be wanting, I should be sure to pay well for it. I was likewise upon all occasions, like the rest of the Gally-Slaves, put to tugge at the Oare; my Banke was the hindermost, and therefore the more painfull, as being subject to the inclemency of the weather; in Summer, to heates; and in Winter to colds; being still ty'de to have a care to keepe up the Beake of our Gally in the windes mouth, and to goe snugge and tyte. To my custody, were committed all the iron implements that were aboord her; as likewise the Cables, to cast or weigh Anchor, as need should require. When we did sayle with the winde, I was faine to looke to the fore-sayle, as also to the sheate that was to the Larboord; sayle, or not sayle, I had something still to doe, either before, or behinde. I did spinne all the Hempe, whereof your smaller cordage, and lesser Ropes were made, which were spent and imployed on the Gallies. It was put to my account to tye up the Yards, to ruffle the Sayles, to dry them, and then deliver them to the Ship-boyes, to hoyse the Fore-sayle, and see every thing fit about it. I did mend those ends of the sayles that were torne and rent with the winde, I did patch and lengthen out those that were grown too short; I did strengthen the old tacklings with odde ends, that I had in store for that purpose; but the Cables I supplyde still with new stuffe: I did helpe the Gunners to plant their Ordnance, remove their Carriages, and to winde

[1] The Italian will have this to signifie *tutta la roba del Rey*. The French renders it, *Connille*.

and turne their Artillerie, as they would have it. The care was laid upon me, to stop the touch-holes, and to see them well cover'd, that no wet should come at them ; to looke to the scouring sticks, and the Spoones to powre in the powder, to the Rammers, the Spunges, and the Lin-stocks that belonged to the Artillerie. And when the Master-Mates man was out of the way, or otherwise occupied, it was injoyned me to sweepe and make cleane the Gally, and to bee the common Swabber, causing the Ship-boyes to bring Mats and Rushes, to make Maps where-withall to rub it, keeping it alwayes neat and cleane from all kinde of filthinesse. And of old ends of Ragges, or of Flax and Tow, to make wads and wisps for those that go to the Long-house (you know what I meane) and this was the utmost of all miseries, and that went most against my stomake, as being of all others the meanest and the basest Office ; for being to serve them with these, for so beastly (that I may not give it a worse word, for feare of turning thy stomake) a piece of businesse, I must first be forced to kisse it, before I give it into their hands, so that by an Attourney, I must kisse, you know what.

He, that should have so many things committed to his charge as I had, and had not been accustomed unto them, it must have been almost impossible for him not to have failed in the performance of them ; but through the great care that I alwayes tooke, I did study to doe all things well, and did seldome or never misse in doing of my dutie, and with use, they grew every day lesse difficult then other. Even from hence also would Fortune have throwne mee downe if she could ; but because her force cannot extend it selfe against the goods of the minde ; and that adversitie makes men wise and prudent ; I still bare up stoutly, and continued firme and constant, withstanding all the power that she could make against me. And as hee that is rich, and lives happily, is evermore afraid of falling ; so on the contrarie, was I in good hope of rising, because it was impossible for me to fall any lower. And as my minde gave me, so it fell out.

Soto, my Camerade, came not to the Gallies, either to give Almes, or to preach Faith in Christ to the Infidels. It was his sins that had brought him thither ; for he had been the greatest, and most notorious thiefe, that ever was heard of in his time, either in all Italy, or in Spaine. He had sometimes beene a Souldier, and knew every part of the Countrey, as one that had travell'd it to and fro many a time. Hee perceiving that our Gallies did sayle along the Mediterranean, and that we went touching now and then upon the coast of Barbary, seeking reprizals, it entred into his imagination to treat with some Moores, and other Gally-slaves, that were of his faction, to make purchase of this our Gally, and to goe sheere away with it. For which purpose, he and they were already provided of some weapons, which they had hid in by-corners, and under their Bankes, to make use of them, when time should serve. But because he could not bring this his designe to passe, without having me to bee of his Party, in regard of the place that I had in my Banke, where I was behinde at his backe ; and for that the ordering of the Tacklings and Cables were committed wholly to my charge, he thought fit to make me acquainted with this his intention, casting and considering with himselfe, that this businesse would be better welcome to no man then my selfe, as well for that I was condemned to serve there as a Slave all the dayes of my life ; as also, that I might free my selfe from that Hell, where-into they had thrust me, and did so severely punish me. Soto would have broken the Ice himselfe, and did much desire to conferre with mee about it, but hee could not finde the meanes. Where-upon, he sent a Messenger unto mee, (one that hee might trust) desiring my reconciliation, and favour, and that I would joyne with him for the better effecting of our freedome from this cruell bondage and slavery wherein we now lived. I returned him answere, that this was not a businesse so easily to be undertaken as hee supposed ; but ought to bee well weigh'd and thought upon, before we did resolve thereon ; for we must needs runne a very great hazzard in the undergoing thereof ; for that there was no

medium betwixt these two ; either to come off cleere, or to lose our lives. To the Moore, who had brought me this message, my Counsell did not seeme amisse ; Telling me, that he would goe with my answere to Soto, and finde a time to come againe unto me, and talke farther of it. CHAPTER IX

In the Interim, while these messages past to and fro, I consulted with my selfe ; and for that I had put on a full resolution, not to doe any thing that was infamous, or ill, no not for any profit or benefit that should accrue thereby unto me, I knew that it was now no time for mee to advise farther with them ; as well, for that I saw how they were resolved ; as also for feare, if I should fall off from them, or otherwise misse of their purpose, they might chance to disclose me, and suborne some false witnesses against me, the better to excuse and save themselves : Giving out, that I, to free my selfe from the misery, wherein I liv'd, had incited them there-unto. Well, I gave them good words, and made my selfe to be of their party, they beeing resolved to put this their plot in execution upon Saint John Baptists day, betimes in the Morning.

Now, when the Eve was come, and that one of the Souldiers was going to untrusse a point, when he came to me for some Ockame to wipe his posteriors, I rose up, and whispering him in the eare, secretly said unto him, Sir, tell your Captain, that it imports both his life, and his honour, to heare two words from me, which tend to his Majesties service : and therefore let him presently give order that I may bee brought to him into the Poope. He did so, and the Captaine forthwith commanded me to come before him, where, in his presence, I revealed unto him this their conspiracy : whereat he blest himselfe, and would scarce give credit unto it ; it seeming unto him, that I had invented this of mine own head, that I might be eased of those troublesome labours, and great miseries which I indured, and that by this meanes, I might procure some mercede or favour from him. But when I told him, where he should find their Weapons, and who, and how they were brought thither, hee rendred many thankes unto God, that hee had delivered

him from so great a danger ; promising, that he would see me well rewarded for my labour.

He commanded one that was Captaine of a Squadron, that hee should make diligent search about those Bankes, which I had pointed forth unto him, and looking there for their weapons, at last they lighted upon them. Presently there-upon, was a Processe fulminated forth against all the Offendours : And because the next day following was a great Festivall day, and very solemnely observed by us, their punishment was deferr'd till the next day following. God, (and my good fortune) who was well pleased with this my service, and did guide these businesses of mine, by his owne divine hand, would needs have it fall out so luckily for mee, that opening a Chest to hang out the Streamers that belonged to the Maine-Mast, the Misne, and other fitting places for them, as well in acknowledgement of their thankfulnesse unto God, as the honour and solemnitie of that day, they found therein a nest of Rats, and amongst other trinkets my Masters Hat-band.

Soto conceiving how the world was like to goe with him, was very desirous to have his ghostly Father come to him, that (like a good Christian) he might make confession of his sinnes, and craving pardon and forgivenesse at my hands, for the false witnesses, that he had suborned against me about the Hat-band, he did together declare, how, and wherefore hee had done it, and howbeit he had made show to be reconciled unto me, and to enter into a new League of friendship with me, yet his purpose and resolution was, when they had made themselves Masters of the Gally, to have stab'd me, his hatred being such towards mee, that nothing could satisfie it, but my death. From whose revengefull hand, my good God, that day, was so gracious unto me, as to free me from this his implacable malice.

Soto, and one of his Companions, who were the Ring-leaders of this rebellion, were condemned to be drawne in pieces with foure Gallies ; and five other to bee hang'd : Which sentence was executed. And as many as were found to have a finger in this businesse, were confined to the

Gallies for terme of life, being first publikely whipt, passing from Gally to Gally, till they had rounded the whole Fleete. As for the Moores, most of them had their noses and their eares cut off, that by this marke, they might be knowne, where ever they came, to be Rogues upon record. CHAPTER IX

This exemplary Justice having past upon these Offenders ; when all was ended, and things settled as before, the Captaine sends for mee, and highly extolling the goodnesse of my nature, my innocencie, and my loyaltie, craving pardon of me for my former ill usage, hee commanded my irons to bee strooke off, and gave me leave to goe at libertie up and downe the Gally, till his Majesties Royall *Scedula* should be sent for my absolute discharge. For so the Captaine had supplicated for me ; and being consulted on by the Councell of Warre, the Petition was signed ; which was no sooner sent downe, but I was set at liberty.

And heere (gentle Reader) doe I put a full point to these my mis-fortunes. I have given thee a large account of my lewd life ; it is truely summ'd up unto thee. What it was hereafter, thou shalt see in my third and last Part, if God shall give me life : and that I doe not first exchange this transitorie one, for one that is eternall, which is the hope and life of the faithfull.

FINIS